BOCCACE'S TALES:

OR,

The Quintessence of *Wit*, *Mirth*, *Eloquence*, and *Conversation*;

Framed in *Ten Days*, of an Hundred curious Pieces, by Seven Honorable Ladies, and Three Noble Gentlemen.

Preserved to Posterity by that Renowned

JOHN BOCCACIO,

The first Refiner of *Italian* Prose:
And now Translated into *English*.

The Fourth Edition.

LONDON,
Printed by *E. Cotes*, and are to be sold by *Joseph Cranford* at the *Kings-head* in St. *Pauls-church-yard*, 1657.

THE MODELL OF Wit, Mirth, Eloquence, and Converſation.

Framed in Ten Dayes, of an hundred curious Peeces, by ſeven Honourable Ladies, and three Noble Gentlemen.

Preſerved to Poſterity by that Renowned *John Boccacio*, the firſt Refiner of *Italian* Proſe: And now tranſlated into *Engliſh*.

The Fourth Edition.

LONDON,
Printed by *E. Cotes*, in *Alderſgate-Street*. 1657.

To the Right Honourable, Sir *Phili*
Herbert, Knight of the Bath at the Coronation of our Soveraign Lord King *James*, Lord Baron of *Sherland*, Earl of *Montgomery*, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter.

THE Philosopher *Zeno* (Right honourable, and m most worthily esteemed Lord) being demanded on time, by what means a man might attain to happ neisse, made answer: *By resorting to the dead, and having fa miliar conversation with them.* Intimating thereby, Th *reading of ancient and modern Histories, and endeavouring t learn such good instructions, as have been observed in our Prede cessors.* A question also was moved by great King *Ptolem* to one of the learned wise Interpreters: In what occasion a King should exercise himself? Whereto thus he replyed *To know those things which formerly have been done; and to rea Books of those matters which offer themselves daily, or are fitte for our instant affairs. And lastly, in seeking those things what soever, that make for a Kingdoms preservation, and the correctio of evil manners or examples.*

Upon these good and warrantable grounds (most noble Lord) beside many more of the same nature (which I omi to avoid prolixity) I dare boldly affirm, that such as ar exercised in the reading of Histories, although they seem but young in years, and slenderly instructed in worldly matters: yet gravity and gray-headed age speaketh ma turely in them, to the no mean admiration of common and vulgar judgement. As contrary wise, such as are ignoran of things done and past, before themselves had any being, cont nue still in the estate of children, able to speak or be have themselves no otherwise; and, even within the bounds of their Native Countreyes (in respect of knowledge or manly capacity) they are no more than well-seeming dumb Images.

In due consideration of the precedent allegations, and upon the command, as also most noble encouragement of your Honour from time to time; this volume of singular and exquisite Histories, varied into so many and exact natures,

ppeareth in the worlds view, under your noble patronage, to be safely shielded from foul mouth'd slander and detraction, which is too easily thrown upon the very best deserving labours.

I know (most worthy Lord) that many of them have long since been published before, as stoln from the first Originall Author, and yet not beautified with his sweet style and elocution of phrase, neither savouring of his singular morall applications. For as it was his full scope and aim by discovering all vices in their ugly deformities, to make their mortall enemies (the sacred vertues) to shine the cleerer, being set down by them and compared with them: so every true and upright judgement, in observing the course of these well carried Novels, shall plainly perceive that there is no spare made of reproof in any degree whatsoever, where sinne is embraced, and grace neglected; but the just deserved shame and punishment thereon inflicted; that others may be warned by their example. In imitation of witty *Æsop*, who reciteth not a Fable but graceth it with a judicious morall application, as many other worthy Writer have done the like.

For instance let me here insert one. A poor man having a Pikestaffe on his shoulder, and travailing through a Countrey Village, a great *Mastive* Cur ran mainly at him, so that hardly he could defend him from himself. At the length, it was his chance to kill the Dog: for which the owner immediately apprehending him, and bringing him before the Judge, alleadged; That he had slain his servant, which defended his life, house, and goods, and therefore challenged satisfaction. The Judge leaning more in favour to the Plaintiff, as being his friend, neighbour and familiar, than to the justice of the cause; reproved the poor fellow very sharply, and peremptorily commanded him to make satisfaction, or else he would commit him to prison. That were injustice, replyed the poor man, because I killed the Dog in defence of my own life, which deserveth much better respect than a million of such Curres. Sirra, sirra, said the Judge, then you should have turned the other end of your staffe, and not the pike, so the Dogs life had been saved, and your own in no danger. True Sir (quoth the fellow) if the Dog would have turn'd his tail, and bit me with that, and not his teeth, then we both had parted quietly.

I know your Honour to be so truely judicious, that your self can make the moral allusion, both in defence of my poor pains, and acceptation of the same into your protection; with most humble submission of my self, and all my uttermost endeavours, to be alwayes at your service.

The Table.

The First Day governed by Madam *Pampinea*.

1. Novell.

Messire Chappelet du Prat, by making a false confession, beguiled an holy religious man, and after died. And having during his life been a very bad man, at his death was reputed to be a Saint, and called S. Chappelet.

2. Novell. *Abraham a Jew, being admonished or advised by a friend of his, named Jehannot de Chevigny travailed from Paris to Rome: and beholding there the wicked behaviour of men in the Church, returned to Paris again, where (nevertheless) he became a Christian.*

3. Novell. *Melchizedech a Jew, by recounting a tale of three Rings to the great Soldan, named Saladine, prevents a great danger which was prepared for him.*

4. Novell. *A Monk committed an offence worthy punishment, freed himself from the pain to be inflicted on him, by wittily reprehending the Abbot of the very same fault.*

5. Novell. *The Lady Marquesse of Moniferrat, with a banquet of Hens, and divers other excellent speeches beside, represented the fond love of the King of France.*

6. Novell. *An honest plain meaning man, simply and conscionably, reprehended the malignity, hypocrisie, and misdemeanour of many Religious persons.*

7. Novell. *Bergamino, by telling a Tale of a skilfull man, named Primasso, and of an Abbot of Clugni, honestly checkt a new kind of covetousness in Master Can de la Scala.*

8. Novell. *Guillaume Bourtier, with a few queint and familiar words, checked the miserable covetousnesse of Signior Herminio de Grimaldi.*

9. Novell. *How the King of Cyprus was wittily reprehended, by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gascoigne, and became vertuously altered from his vicious disposition.*

10. Novell. *Master Albert of Bullen, honestly made a Lady to blush, that did thing to have done as much to him, because she perceived him to be amorously affected towards her.*

The

The II. day governed by Madam *Philomena.*

The first Novell.

Martellino counterfeiting to be lame of his members, caused himself to be set upon the body of Saint *Arrigo*, where (in jesting manner) he made shew of his sodain recovery: but when his dissimulation was discovered, he was well beaten, being afterwards taken prisoner, and in great danger of being hanged, and yet escaped in the end.

2. Novell. *Rinoldo de Este*, after he was robbed by Theeves, arrived at *Chasteau Guillaume*, where he was friendly lodged by a fair Widow, and recompensed likewise for all his losses: returning afterward safe and well home unto his own house.

3. Novell. *Three young Gentlemen, being brethren, and having spent all their lands and possessions vainly, became poor. A Nephew of theirs (falling almost into as desperate a condition) became acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to be the King of Englands daughter, and made him her husband in marriage, recompensing all his Unkles losses, and seating them again in good estate.*

4. Novell. *Landolpho Ruffolo, falling into poverty, became a Pirate upon the Seas, and being taken by the Genewayes, hardly escaped drowning. Which yet never the lesse he did, upon a little chest or coffer full of very rich Jewels, being carried thereon to Corfu, where he was well entertained by a good woman, and after returned richly home to his own house.*

5. Novell. *Andrea de Piero, travailing from Perusa to Naples, to buy horses, was (in the space of one night) surprized by three admirable accidents: out of all which with a rich Ring, he fortunately escaped.*

6. Novell. *Madam Beritola Caraualla, was found in a strange Island with two Goats, having lost her two sons and thence travailed into Lunigiana: where one of her sons became servant to the Lord thereof, and was found a little over-familiar with his Masters daughter, who therefore caused him to be imprisoned. Afterward when the Country of Sicily rebelled against King Charles, the aforesaid son chanced to be known by his mother, and was*

married to his masters daughter. And his brother being found likewise, they returned to great estate and credit.

7. Novell. The Soldan of Babylon sent one of his daughters to be joyned in marriage with the King of Cholcos; who by divers accidents (in the space of four years) hapned into the custody of nine men, and in sundry places. At length, being restored back to her Father, she went to the said King of Cholcos, as a maid, and as at first she was intended to be his wife.

8. Novell. Count d' Angiers being falsly accused, was banished out of France, and left his two Children in England, in divers places. Returning afterward (unknown) through Scotland, he found them advanced to great dignity. Then repairing in the habit of a Servitor, into the King of France his Army, and his innocency made publikely known; he was reseated in his former honourable degree.

9. Novell. Bernardo a Merchant of Geneway, being deceived by another Merchant, named Ambrosio; lost a great part of his goods: and commanding his innocent wife to be murthered, she escaped, and in the habit of a man, became servant to the Soldan. The deceiver being found at last, she compassed such means, that her Husband Bernardo came into Alexandria, and there after due punishment inflicted on the false deceiver, she resumed the garments again of a woman, and returned home with her Husband to Geneway.

10. Novell. Pagamino da Monaco, a roving Pirate on the seas, carried away the wife of Signior Ricciardo Chinzica, who understanding where she was, went thither; and falling into friendship with Pagamino, demanded his wife of him, whereto he yeelded, provided, that she would willingly go away with him; she denyed to part thence with her Husband: and Signior Ricciardo dying, she became the wife of Pagamino.

The III. Day governed by Madam *Neiphila*.

The first Novell.

Massetto di Lamporecchio, by counterfeiting himself dumb, became a Gardiner in a Monastery of Nunnes, where he had familiar conversation with them all.

2. Novell.

2. Novell. *A Querry of the ſtable belonging to Agilulffo King of the Lombards, found the means of acceſſe to the Queens bed, without any knowledge or conſent in her. This being ſecretly diſcovered by the King, and the party known, he gave him a mark, by ſhearing the hair of his head. Whereupon, he that was ſo ſhorn, ſheared likewiſe the heads of all his fellowes in the lodging, and ſo eſcaped the puniſhment intended to him.*

3. Novell. *Under colour of confeſſion, and of a moſt pure conſcience, a fair young Gentlewoman being amorouſly affected to an honeſt man, induced a devout and ſolemn religious Friar, to adviſe her in the means (without his ſuſpicion or perceiving) how to enjoy the benefit of her friend, and bring her deſires to effect.*

4. Novell. *A young Scholar named Felice, inſtructed Puccio di Rinieri, how to become rich in a very ſhort time. While Puccio made experience of the inſtruction taught him, Felice obtained the favour of his daughter.*

5. Novell. *Ricciardo ſurnamed the Magnifico, gave a horſe to Signior Franceſco Vergilliſi, upon condition, that by his leave and licenſe, he might ſpeak to his wife in his preſence; which he did, and ſhe not returning him any anſwer, made anſwer to himſelf on her behalf, and according to his anſwer, ſo the effect followed.*

6. Novell. *Ricciardo Minutolo, fell in love with the wife of Philippello Fighinolfi, and knowing her to be very jealous of her husband, gave him to underſtand, that he was greatly enamoured of his wife, and had appointed to meet her privately in a bathing houſe on the next day following: where ſhe hoping to take him tardy with his cloſe compacted Miſtreſſe, found her ſelf to be deceived.*

7. Novell. *Theobaldo Eliſei, having received an unkind repulſe by his beloved, departed from Florence, and returning thither (a long while after) in the habit of a Pilgrim, he ſpake with her, and made his wrongs known unto her. He delivered her Father from the danger of death, becauſe it was proved, that he had ſlain Theobaldo: he made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wiſely enjoyed his hearts deſire.*

8. Novell. *Fernando, by drinking of a certain kinde of powder, was buried for dead: and by the Abbot who was enamoured of his wife, was taken out of his grave, and put into a dark prison, where they made him beleeve that he was in Purgatory: afterward, when time came that he should be raised to life again, he was made to keep a childe which the Abbot got by his wife.*

9. Novell. *Iuliet of Narbona, cured the King of a Fistula: in recompence whereof, she requested to enjoy in marriage, Bertrand the Count of Rousillion. He having married her against his will, despising her, went to Florence, where he loved a young Gentlewoman. Iuliet by a cunning policy compassed the means (in stead of his chosen friend) to lie with her own Husband, by whom she had two sonnes; which afterward being made known, the Count accepted her again for his wife.*

10. Novell. *The chaste resolved continency of Seriétha, Daughter to Siwalde King of Denmark, being sued unto by many worldy persons that loved her, would not look any man in the face, till the time she was married.*

The IV. Day governed by *Philostratus*.

The first Novell.

Tancrede, Prince of Salern, caused the amorous friend of his Daughter to be slain, and sent her his heart in a cup of Gold: which afterward she steeped in an impoysoned water, and then drinking it so dyed.

2. Novell. *Fryer Albert made a young Venetian Gentlewoman beleeve, that god Cupid was faln in love with her, and he resorted sundrie times unto her, in disguise of the same god: afterward, being frighted by the Gentlewomans kindred and friends, he cast himself out of her Chamber window, and was hidden in a poor mans house. On the day following, in shape of a wild or savage man, he was brought upon the Rialto of S. Mark, and being there publikely known by the Brethren of his Order, he was committed to prison.*

3. Novell.

3. Novell. *Three young Gentlemen affecting three Sisters, fled with them into Candy. The eldest of them (through jealousie) becometh the death of her Lover. The second, by consenting to the Duke of Candy, saveth her life. Afterward her own friend killeth her, and flieth away with the elder sister. The third couple, both man and woman, are charged with her death, being cast into prison, confesse the fact: but corrupting the keepers with mony, escaped thence to Rhodes, and there died poor.*

4. Novell. *Gerbino, contrary to the former plighted faith to Gulielmo, fought with the King of Thunis, to take away his daughter. She being slain by them that had the possession of her, he likewise slew them; and afterward had his own head smitten off, by the command of Gulielmo.*

5. Novell. *Isabellaes three Brethren, slew a Gentleman that secretly loved her. His ghost appearing to her, shewed her in what place they had buryed his body, &c.*

6. Novell. *Andreana falling in love with Gabriello, she declared a dream of hers to him, and he another of his unto her; whereupon Gabriello fell downsodainly dead, &c.*

7. Novell. *Fair Simonida affecting Pasquino, and walking with him in a pleasant Garden, it fortuned, that Pasquino rubbed his teeth with a leaf of Sage; and immediately fell down dead. Simonida being brought before the bench of Justice, and charged with the death of Pasquino, she rubbed her teeth likewise with one of the leaves of the same Sage, as declaring what she saw him do, and thereon she dyed also in the same manner.*

8. Novell. *Ieronimo affecting Silvestra, went by the earnest entreaty of his mother to Paris. Returning back, he found his Love Silvestra married. By secret means he got into her house, and dyed upon the bed by her. His body being to be buried, she likewise died upon his coarse.*

9. Novell. *Messer Gulielmo having slain Messer Gulielmo Guardastagno whom he imagined to love his wife, gave her his heart to eat. Which she knowing afterward, threw her self out of an high window to the ground: and being dead was then buried with her friend.*

10 Novell. *A Physitians wife, had a Lover of her maids, supposing him to be dead, in a chest; by reason that he had drunk a sleeping water. Two Lumbard Usurers stealing away the Chest, carried it to their own house, &c.*

The V. Day governed by Madam *Fiammetta.*

The first Novell.

CHynon, by falling in Love, became wise, and by force of Arms, winning his fair Lady Iphigenia on the Seas, was afterward imprisoned at Rhodes. Being delivered by one named Lisimachus, with him he recovered his Iphigenia again, and fair Cassandra, even in the middest of their marriage. They fled with them into Candy, where after they had married them, they were called home to their own dwelling.

2. Novell. *Fair Constance of Liparis, fell in love with Martuccio Gomitto: and hearing that he was dead, desperately she entered into a Bark, which being transported by the winds to Susa in Barbary, from thence she went to Thunis, where she made her self known to him, and he being in great authority, as a privy Counseller to the King: he married the said Constance, and returned shortly home with her, to the Island of Liparis.*

3. Novell. *Pedro Bocamazzo escaping away with a young Damosell which he loved, named Angelina, met with theeves in his journey. The Damosell flying fearfully into a Forrest, by chance arrived at a Castle. Pedro being taken by the theeves, happened afterward to escape from them, &c.*

4. Novell. *Ricciardo Manardy, was found by Messer Lizio Valbonna, as he sate fast asleep, at his Daughters Chamber window, having his hand fast in hers, and she sleeping in the same manner. whereupon they are joyned together in marriage, and their long loyall love mutually recompensed.*

5. Novell. *Guidotto of Cremona, departing out of this mortall life, left a Daughter of his with Jacomino of Pavia.*

Pavia. Giovanni di Severino, and Menghino da Minghole, fell both in love with the young Maiden, and fought for her; who being afterward known to be the Sister to Giovanni, she was given in marriage to Menghino.

6. Novell. Guion di Procida, being found familiarly conversing with a young Damosell, which he loved, and had been given (formerly) to Frederigo, King of Sicily: was bound to a stake to be consumed with fire. From which danger (nevertheless) he escaped, being known by Don Rogiero de Oria, Lord Admirall of Sicily, and afterward married the Damosell.

7. Novell. Theodoro falling in love with Violenta, the Daughter to his Master, named Amarigo, and she conceiving with child by him; was condemned to be hanged. As they were leading him to the Gallowes, beating and misusing him all the way: he hapned to be known of his own Father, whereupon he was released, and afterward enjoyed Violenta in marriage.

8. Novell. Anastasio a Gentleman of the Family of the Honesti, by loving the Daughter to Signior Paulo Traversario, lavishly wasted a great part of his substance, without receiving any love of her again. By perswasion of some of his kindred and friends, he went to a Country dwelling of his, called Chiasso, where he saw a Knight desperately pursue a young Damosell, whom he slew, and afterward gave her to be devoured by his Hounds. Anastasio invited his friends, and hers also whom he so dearly loved, to take part of a dinner with him, who likewise saw the same Damosell so torn in pieces: which his unkind love perceiving, and fearing, lest the like ill fortune should happen to her, she accepted Anastasio to be her husband.

9. Novell. Frederigo of the Alberghi Family, loved a Gentlewoman, and was not requited with like love again. But by bountifull expences, and over liberall invitations he wasted all his lands and goods, having nothing left him, but a Hawk or Faulcon. His unkind Mistresse happeneth to come visit him, and he not having any other food for her dinner, made a dainty dish of his

Faulcon

Faulcon for her to feed on. Being conquered by this exceeding kind courteſie; ſhe changed her former hatred towards him, accepting him as her Husband in marriage, and made him a man of wealthy poſſeſſions.

10 Novell. *Pedro di Vinciolo went to ſup at a friends houſe in the City. His wife (in the mean) had a young man whom ſhe loved, at ſupper with her. Pedro returning home on a ſodain, the young man was hidden under a Coop for Hens. Pedro in excuſe of his ſo ſoon coming home, declareth, how in the houſe of Herculano (with whom he ſhould have ſupt) a friend of his wives was found, which was the reaſon of the Suppers breaking off. Pedroes wife reproving the error of Herculanoes wife, an Aſſe (by chance) treads on the young mans fingers that lay hidden under the Hen coop. Upon his crying out, Pedro ſteppeth thither, ſees him, knowes him, and findeth the fallacy of his wife; with whom (nevertheleſſe) he groweth to agreement, in regard of ſome imperfection in himſelf.*

The end of the Table.

THE DECAMERON,

Containing an Hundred Pleasant Novelles.

Wherein, after the demonstration made by the Authour, upon what occasion it hapned, that the persons (of whom we shall speake hereafter) should thus meete together to make so quaint a narration of Novels: He declareth unto you, that they first begin to devise and conferre under the government of Madam Pampinea, and of such matters as may be most pleasing to them all.

The Induction of the Authour, to the following Discourses.

GRACIOUS Ladies, so often as I consider with my selfe, and observe respectively, how naturally you are enclined to compassion; as many times doe I acknowledge, that this present worke of mine, will (in your judgement) appeare to have but a harsh and offensive beginning, in regard of the mournefull remembrance it beareth at the very entrance of the last Pestilentiall mortallity, universally hurtfull to all that beheld it, or otherwise came to knowledge of it. But for all that, I desire it may not be so dreadfull to you, to hinder your further proceeding in reading, as if none were to looke thereon, but with sighes and teares. For, I could rather wish, that so fearefull a beginning, should seeme but as an high and steepie hill appeares to them, that attempt to travell farre on foote, and ascending the same with some difficulty, come afterward to walke upon a good-

ly even plaine, which causeth the more contentment in them, because the attayning thereto was hard and painefull. For even as pleasures are cut off by griefe and anguish; so sorrowes cease by joyes most sweete and happie arriving.

After this briefe molestation; briefe I say, because it is contained within small compasse of writing, immediately followed the most sweete and pleasant taste of pleasure, whereof (before) I made promise to you. Which (peradventure) could not be expected by such a beginning, if promise stood not thereunto engaged. And indeede, if I could well have conveyed you to the center of my desire, by any other way, than so rude and rockie a passage as this is, I would gladly have done it. But because without this Narration, we could not demonstrate the occasion how and wherefore the matters happened, which you shall reade in the ensuing Discourses: I must set them downe (even as constrained thereto by meere necessity) in writing after this manner.

The yeere of our blessed Saviours Incarnation, 1348. that memorable mortality happened in the excellent City, farre beyond all the rest in *Italy*, which plague, by operation of the superiour bodies, or rather for our enormous iniquities, by the just anger of God was sent upon us mortalls. Some few yeares before, it tooke beginning in the Easterne parts, sweeping thence an innumerable quantity of living soules: extending it selfe afterward from place to place West-ward, untill it seized on the sayd City. Where neither humane skill or providence, could use any prevention, notwithstanding it was clensed of many annoyances by diligent Officers thereto deputed: besides prohibition of all the sickely persons enterance, and all possible provision dayly used for conservation of such as were in health, with incessant Prayers and supplications of devoute people, for the asswaging of so dangerous a sickenesse.

About the beginning of the yeere, it also began in very strange manner, as appeared by divers admirable effects; yet not as it had done in the East Countries, where Lord or Lady being touched therewith, manifest figues of inevitable death followed thereon, by bleeding at the nose. But here it began with young children, male and female, either under the armepits, or in the groine by certaine swellings, in some to the bignesse of an Apple, in others like an Egge, and so in divers greater or lesser, which (in their vulgar Language) they termed to be a Botch or Byle. In very short time after those two infected parts were growne mortiferous, and would disperse abroad indifferently, to all parts of the body, whereupon, such was the quality of the disease, to shew it selfe

ſelfe by blacke or blew ſpots, which would appeare on the armes of many, others on their thighes, and every part elſe of the body: in ſome great and few, in others ſmall and thicke.

Now, as the Byle (at the beginning) was an aſſured ſigne of neere approaching death; ſo prooved the ſpots likewiſe to ſuch as had them: for the curing of which ſickeneſſe it ſeemed, that the Phyſitians councell, the vertue of Medicines, or any application elſe, could not yeeld any remedy: but rather it plainely appeared, that either the nature of the diſeaſe would not endure it, or ignorance in the Phyſitians could not comprehend from whence the cauſe proceeded, and ſo by conſequent, no reſolution was to be determined. Moreover, beſide the number of ſuch as were skilfull in Art, many more both women and men, without ever having any knowledge in Phyſicke, became Phyſitians: ſo that not onely few were healed, but (well-neere) all dyed, within three dayes after the ſayd ſignes were ſeene; ſome ſooner, and others later, commonly without either Feaver, or any other accident.

And this peſtilence was yet of farre greater power or violence; for, not onely healthfull perſons ſpeaking to the ſicke, comming to ſee them, or ayring cloathes in kindneſſe to comfort them, was an occaſion of enſuing death: but touching their garments, or any foode whereon the ſicke perſon fed, or any thing elſe uſed in his ſervice, ſeemed to transferre the diſeaſe from the ſicke to the ſound, in very rare and miraculous manner. Among which matter of marvell, let me tell you one thing, which if the eyes of many (as well as mine owne) had not ſeene, hardly could I be perſwaded to write it, much leſſe to beleeve it, albeit a man of good credit ſhould report it. I ſay, that the quality of this contagious peſtilence was not onely of ſuch efficacie, in taking and catching it one of another, either men or women: but it extended further, even in the apparent view of many, that the cloathes, or any thing elſe wherein one dyed of that diſeaſe, being toucht, or lyen on by any beaſt, farre from the kinde or quality of man, they did not onely contaminate and infect the ſayd beaſt, were it Dogge, Cat, or any other; but alſo it dyed very ſoone after.

Mine owne eyes (as formerly I have ſayd) among divers other, one day had evident experience hereof: for ſome poore ragged cloathes of linnen and wollen, torne from a wretched body dead of that diſeaſe, and hurled

in the open ſtreete; two Swine going by, and (according to their naturall inclination) ſeeking for foode on every dunghill, toſſed and tumbled the cloathes with their ſnouts, rubbing their heads likewiſe upon them; and immediately, each turniug twice or thriſe about, they both fell downe dead on the ſayd cloathes, as being fully infected with the contagiō of them: which accident and other the like, if not farre greater, begat divers feares and imaginations in them that beheld them, all tending to a moſt inhumane and uncharitable end; namely, to flye thence from the ſicke, and touching any thing of theirs, by which meanes they thought their health ſhould be ſafely warranted.

Some there were, who conſidered with themſelves, that living ſoberly, with abſtinence from all ſuperfluity; it would be a ſufficient reſiſtance againſt all hurtfull accidents. So combining themſelves in a ſociable manner, they lived as ſeparatiſts from all other company, being ſhut up in ſuch houſes, where no ſicke body ſhould bee neere them. And there for their more ſecurity, they uſed delicate viands and excellent wines, avoyding luxury, and refuſing ſpeech to one another, not looking forth at the windowes, to heare no eryes of dying people, or ſee any coarſes carryed to buriall; but having Muſicall inſtruments, lived there in all poſſible pleaſure. Others, were of a contrary opinion, who avouched, that there was no other Phyſicke more certaine, for a diſeaſe ſo deſperate, than to drinke hard, be merry among themſelves, ſinging continually, walking every where, and ſatisfying their appetites with whatſoever they deſired, laughing and mocking at every mournefull accident, and ſo they vowed to ſpend day and night: for now they would goe to one Taverne, then to another, living without any rule or meaſure; which they might very eaſily doe, becauſe every one of them, (as if he were to live no longer in this World) had even forſaken all things that he had. By meanes whereof, the moſt part of the houſes were become common, and all ſtrangers might doe the like (if they pleaſed to adventure it) even as boldly as the Lord or owner, without any let or contradiction.

Yet in all this their beaſtly behaviour, they were wiſe enough, to ſhun (ſo much as they might) the weake and ſickely: In miſery and affliction of our City, the venerable authority of the Lawes, as well Divine as Humane, was even deſtroyed, as it were, through want of the lawfull Miniſters of them. For they being all dead, or lying

ſicke

ſicke with the reſt, or elſe lived ſo ſolitary, in ſuch great neceſſity of ſervants and attendants, as they could not execute any Office, whereby it was lawfull for every one to doe as he liſted.

Betweene theſe two rehearſed extremities of life, there were other of more moderate temper, not being ſo daintily dyeted at the firſt, nor drinking ſo diſſolutely as the ſecond; but uſed all things ſufficient for their appetites, and without ſhutting up themſelves, walked abroad, ſome carrying ſweete Noſe-gayes of flowers in their hands; others odoriferous herbes, and other divers kindes of Spiceries, holding them to their Noſes, and thinking them moſt comfortable for the Braine, becauſe the Ayre ſeemed to be much infected by the noyſome ſmell of dead carkaſes, and other hurtfull ſavours. Some other there were alſo of more inhumane minde (howbeit peradventure it might be the ſureſt) ſaying, that there was no better Phyſicke againſt the Peſtilence, nor yet ſo good, as to flye away from it: which argument mainely moving them, and caring for no body but themſelves, very many both men and women, forſooke the City, their owne Houſe, their Parents, Kindred, Friends, and Goods, flying to other mens dwellings elſe-where. As if the wrath of God in puniſhing the ſins of men with this Plague, would fall heavily upon none, but ſuch as were encloſed within the City wals; or elſe perſwading themſelves, that not any ſhould there be left alive, but that the finall ending of all things was come.

Now albeit theſe perſons in their diverſity of opinions dyed not all, ſo undoubtedly they did not all eſcape; but many among them becomming ſicke, and making a generall example of their flight and folly, among them that could not ſtirre out of their beds, they languiſhed more perplexedly than the other did. Let us omit, that one Citizen fled after another, and one neighbour had not any care of another, Parents nor kindred never viſiting them, but utterly they were forſaken on all ſides: this tribulation pierced into the hearts of men, and with ſuch a dreadfull terrour, that one Brother forſooke another, the Uncle the Nephew, the Siſter the Brother, and the Wife her Husband: nay, a matter much greater, and almoſt incredible; Fathers and Mothers fled away from their owne Children, even as if they had no way appertained to them. In regard whereof, it could be no otherwiſe, but that a countleſſe multitude of men and women fell ſicke; finding no Charity among their friends, except a very few, and ſubject to the avarice of ſervants, who attended them conſtrainedly, (for

great and unreasonable wages) yet few of those attendants to be found any where too. And they were men or women but of base condition, as also of grosser understanding, who never before had served in any such necessities, nor indeede were any way else to be imployed, but to give the sicke person such things as he called for, or to awaite the houre of his death; in the performance of which service, oftentimes for gaine, they lost their owne lives.

In this extreame calamity, the sicke being thus forsaken of Neighbours, Kindred and Friends, standing also in such neede of servants; a custome came up among them, never heard before, that there was not any woman, how Noble, Young, or Faire so ever she was, but falling sicke she must of necessity have a man to attend her were he young or otherwise; respect of shame or modesty no way prevailing, but all parts of her body must be discovered to him, which (in the like urgency) was not to be seene by any but women: whereon ensued afterward, that upon the parties healing and recovery, it was occasion of further dishonesty; which many being more modestly curious of, refused such disgracefull attending, chusing rather to dye, than by such helpe to be healed. In regard whereof, as well through the want of convenient remedies, (which the sick by on meanes could attaine unto) as also the violence of the contagion, the multitude of them that dyed night and day, was so great, that it was a dreadfull sight to behold, and as much to heare spoken of. So that meere necessity (among them that remained living) begat new behaviours, quite contrary to all which had beene in former times, and frequently used among the City inhabitants.

The custome of precedent dayes (as now againe it is) was, that Women, Kindred, Neighbours and Friends, would meete together at the deceased parties house, and there, with them that were of neerest alliance, expresse their hearts sorrow for their friends losse. If not thus, they would assemble before the doore, with many of the Citizens and Kindred, and (according to the quality of the diceased) the Cleargie met there likewise, and the dead body was carried (in comely manner) on mens shoulders with funerall Pompe of Torch-light, and Singing to the Church appointed by the diceased. But these seemely orders; after the fury of the Pestilence began to encrease, they in like manner altogether ceased, and other new customes came in their place; because not onely people dyed, without having any women about them, but infinites also past out of this life, not having any witnesse, how, when, or in what manner they departed.

departed. So that few or none there were, to deliver outward shew of sorrow and grieving: but insteed thereof, divers declared idle joy and rejoycing, a use soone learned of immodest women, having put off all fœminine compassion, yea, or regard of their owne welfare.

Very few also would accompany the body to the grave, and they not any of the neighbours, although it had beene an honourable Citizen, but onely the meanest kinde of people, such as were Grave-makers, Coffin-bearers, or the like, that did these services onely for money, and the Biere being mounted on their shoulders, in all haste they would runne away with it, not perhaps to the Church appointed by the dead, but to the neerest at hand, having foure or sixe poore Priests following, with lights or no lights, and those of the fillest; short service being sayd at the Buriall, and the body unreverently throwne in the first open grave they found. Such was the pittifull mercy of poore people, and divers who were of better condition, as it was most lamentable to behold; because the greater number of them, under hope of healing, or compelled by poverty, kept still within their house weake and faint, thousands falling sicke dayly, and having no helpe, or being succoured any way with foode or physicke, all of them dyed, few or none escaping.

Great store there were, that dyed in the streetes, by day or night, and many more besides, although they dyed in their houses; yet first they made it knowne to their neighbours, that their lives perished, rather by the noysome smell of the dead, and putrified bodies, than by any violence of the disease in themselves. So that of these and the rest, dying in this manner everywhere, the neighbours observed one course of behaviour, (moved thereto no lesse by feare, that the smell and corruption of dead bodies should harme them, than charitable respect of the dead) that themselves when they could, or being assisted by some bearers of coarses, when they were able to procure them, would haste the bodies (already dead) out of their houses, laying them before their doores, where such as passed by, especially in the mornings, might see them lying in no meane numbers. Afterward, Bieres were brought thither, and such as might not have the helpe of Bieres, were glad to lay them on Tables: and Bieres have beene observed not onely to bee charged with two or three dead bodies at once, but many times it was seene also, that the Wife with the Husband, two or three Brethren together; yea, the Father and Mother, have thus beene carried a long to the grave upon one biere.

Moreover, oftentimes it hath beene seene, that when two

Prieſts went with one Croſſe to fetch the body; there would follow (behind) three or foure bearers with their Bieres, and when the Prieſt intended the buriall but of one body, ſixe or eight more have made up the advantage, and yet none of them being attended by any ſeemely company, lights, teares, or the very leaſt decency; but it plainely appeared, that the very like account was then made of men or women, as if they had beene dogges or ſwine. Wherein might manifeſtly be noted, that that which the naturall courſe of things could not ſhew to the wiſe, with rare and little loſſe, to wit, the patient ſupport of miſeries and misfortunes, even in their greateſt height: not onely the wiſe might now learne, but alſo the very ſimpleſt people; and in ſuch ſort, that they ſhould alwayes be prepared againſt all infelicities whatſoever.

Hallowed ground could not now ſuffice, for the great multitude of dead bodies, which were dayly brought to every Church in the City, and every houre in the day; neither could the bodies have proper places of buriall, according to our ancient cuſtome: wherefore, after that the Churches and Church-yards were filled, they were conſtrayned to make uſe of great deepe ditches, wherein they were buried by hundreds at once; ranking dead bodies along in graves, as Merchandizes, are layd along in ſhips, covering each after other, with a ſmall quantity of Earth, and ſo they filled at laſt up the whole ditch to the brim.

Now, becauſe I would wander no further in every particularity, concerning the miſeries happening in our City: I tell you, that extremities running on in ſuch manner as you have heard; little leſſe ſpare was made in the Villages round about; wherein (ſetting aſide encloſed Caſtles, which were now filled like to ſmall Cities) poore labourers and husband-men, with their whole Families, dyed moſt miſerably in out-houſes, yea and in the open fields alſo; without any aſſiſtance of phyſicke, or helpe of ſervants; and likewiſe in the highwayes, or their ploughed lands, by day or night indifferently, yet not as men, but like bruite beaſts.

By meanes whereof, they became lazie and ſlothfull in their dayly endevours, even like to our Citizens; not minding nor medling with their wonted affaires, but, as a waiting for death every houre, imployed all their paines, not in caring any way for themſelves, their Cattle, or gathering the Fruits of the Earth, or any of their accuſtomed labours; but rather waſted and conſumed, even ſuch as were for their inſtant ſuſtenance. Whereupon, it fell ſo out, that their Oxen, Aſſes, Sheepe, and Goates, their Swine, Pullen, yea their very Dogges,

Dogges, the trueſt and faithfulleſt ſervants to men, being beaten and baniſhed from their houſes, went wildly wandring abroad in the fields, where the corne grew ſtill on the ground without gathering, or being ſo much as reapt or cut. Many of the foreſayd beaſts (as endued with reaſon) after they had paſtured themſelves in the day time, would returne full fed at night home to their houſes, without any government of Heardſmen, or any other.

How many faire Palaces! How many goodly Houſes! How many Noble habitations, filled before with Families of Lords and Ladies, were then to be ſeene empty without any one there dwelling, except ſome ſilly ſervants? How many Kindreds, worthy of memory! How many great inheritances! And what plenty of riches, were left without any true ſucceſſours? How many good men? How many worthy Women? How many Valiant & comely young men, whom none but *Galen*, *Hippocrates*, and *Æſculapius* (if they were living) could have beene reputed any way unhealthfull; were ſeene to dine at morning with their Parents, Friends, and familiar confederates, and went to ſup in another world with their Predeceſſors?

It is no meane breach to my braine, to make repetition of ſo many miſeries; wherefore, being willing to part with them as eaſily as I may: I ſay that our City being in this caſe, voyde of inhabitant, it came to paſſe (as afterward I underſtood by ſome of good credit) that in the venerable Church of S. *Maryla Nenſue*, on a Tueſday morning, there being then no other perſon, after the hearing of Divine Service, in mourning habets (as the ſeaſon required) returned thence ſeaven diſcreete young Gentlewomen, all allied together, either by friendſhip, neighbour-hood, or parentage: She among them that was moſt entred into yeares, exceeded not 28. and the youngeſt was no leſt than 18. being of Noble deſcent, faire forme, adorned with exquiſite behaviour and gracious modeſty.

Their names I could report, if juſt occaſion did not forbid it, in regard of the occaſions following by them related, and becauſe times hereafter ſhall not taxe them with reproofe; the lawes of pleaſure being mote ſtraited now adayes (for the matters before revealed) than at that time they were; not onely to their yeares but to many much riper. Neither will I likewiſe miniſter matter to raſh heads (over-ready in cenſuring commendable life) any way to impaiſe the honeſty of Ladies, by their idle detracting ſpeeches. And therefore, to the end that what each of them ſaith, may be comprehended without confuſion; I purpoſe to ſtile them by

wholly agreeing, or (in part) conformable to their qualities. The first, and most aged, we will name *Pampinea*: the second, *Fiametta*; the third, *Philomena*; the fourth, *Emilia*; the fift, *Lauretta*; the sixt, *Neiphila*, and the last we terme (not without occasion) *Elissa* or *Elisa*. All of them being assembled at a corner of the Church, not by any deliberation formerly appointed, but meerely by accident, and fitting as it were in a round ring: after divers sighs severally delivered, they conferred on sundry matters answerable to the sad qualitie of the time, and within a while after, Madam *Pampinea* began in this manner:

The Ladies, you may (no doubt as well as I) have heard, that no injury is offered to any one, by such as make use but of their owne right. It is a thing naturall for every one which is borne in this World, to aide, conserve, and defend her life so long as she can; and this right hath beene so powerfully permitted, that although it hath sometimes happened, that (to defend themselves) men have beene slaine without any offence: yet Lawes have allowed it to be so, in whose solicitude lieth the best living of all mortalls. How much more honest and just is it then for us, and for every other wel-disposed person, so seeke for (without wronging any) and to practise all remedies that wee can, for the conservation of our lives? When I well consider, what we have here done this morning, and many other already past (remembring withall, what likewise is proper and convenient for us: I conceive (as all you may doe the like) that every one of us hath a due respect of her selfe, and then I marvaile not, but rather am much amazed (knowing none of us to be deprived of a Womans best judgement (that we seeke not after some remedies for our selves, against that, which every one among us, ought (in reason) to feare.

Here we meete and remaine (as it seemeth to me) in no other manner, than as if wee would or should be witnesses, to all the dead bodies at rest in their grave; or else to listen, when the Religious Sisters here dwelling (whose number now are well-neare come to be none at all) sing Service at such houres as they ought to doe; or else to acquaint all commers hither (by our mourning habits) with the qualitie and quantitie of our hearts miseries. And when we part hence, we meet with none but dead bodies, or sick persons, transported from one place to another; or else we see running thorow the City (in most offensive fury) such as by authoritie of publike Lawes) were banished hence, onely for their bad and brutish behaviour

haviour in contempt of those Lawes, because now they know, that the executours of them are dead and sick. And if not these, more lamentable spectacles present themselves to us, by the base rascalitie of the Citie; who being fatted with our blood, tearme themselves Grave-makers; and in meere contemptible mockeries of us, are mounted on Horse-backe, gallopping every where, reproaching us with our losses and misfortunes, with lewd and dishoneſt songs: so that wee can heare nothing else but such and such are dead, and such and such lie a dying; here hands wringing, and every where most pittifull complayning.

If wee returne home to our houses (I know not whether your case be answerable to mine) when I can finde none of all my Family, but only my poore waiting Chamber-maid; so great are my feares, that the very haire of my head declareth my amazement, and whersoever I go or sit downe, me thinkes I see the Ghosts and Shadowes of deceased friends, not with such lovely lookes, as I was wont to behold them, but with most horrid and dreadfull regards, newly stolne upon them I know not how. In these respects, both here, elſe-where, & at home in my house, me thinkes I am alwayes ill, and much more (in mine owne oppinion) than any other body, not having meanes or place of retirement, as all we have, and none to remaine here but onely we.

Moreover, I have often heard it said, that in carrying or departing, no distinction is made in things honeſt or dishoneſt; onely appetite will be served, and be they alone or in company by day or night, they do whatsoever their appetite desireth: not secular persons onely, but such as are recluses, and shut up within Monasteries, breaking the Lawes of obedience, and being addicted to pleasures of the flesh, are become lascivious and dissolute, making the World beleeve that whatsoever is convenient for other women, is no way unbeseeming them, as thinking in that manner to escape.

If it be so, as manifestly it maketh shew of it selfe; What doe we heare? What stay we for? And whereon doe we dreame? Why are we more respectleſſe of our health, than all the rest of the Citizens? Repute wee our selves leſſe precious than all the other? Or doe we beleeve, that life is linked to our bodies with stronger chaines than to others, and that therefore we should not feare any thing that hath power to offend us? We erre therein, and are deceived. What brutishneſſe were it in us, if we should urge any

any such beleefe? So often as we call to mind, what and how many gallant young men and women, have beene devoured by this cruell pestilence; wee may evidently observe a contrary argument.

Wherefore, to the end, that by being over-scripulous and careless, we fall not into such danger, whence when we would (perhaps) wee cannot recover our selves by any meanes: I thinke it meete (if your judgement therein shall jumpe with mine) that all of us as we are (at least, if wee will doe as divers before us have done, and yet daily endeavour to doe) shunning death by the honest example of others, make our retreat to our country houses, wherewith all of us are sufficiently furnished, and thereto delight our selves as best we may, yet without transgressing (in any act) the limits of reason. There shall we heare the pretty birds sweetly singing, see the hills and plaines verdently flowring, the Corne waving in the field, like the billowes of the Sea, infinite store of goodly trees, and the Heavens more fairely open to us, than here wee can behold them. And although they are justly displeased, yet will they not there deny us better beauties to gaze on, than the walles in our City (emptied of inhabitants) can afford us.

Moreover, the Ayre is much fresh and cleare, and generally, there is far greater abundance of all things whatsoever, needfull at this time for preservation of our health, and lesse offence or molestation than we finde here.

And although Country people die, as well as here our Citizens do, the griefe notwithstanding is so much the lesse, as the houses and dwellers there are rare, in comparison of them in our city. And beside, if we will observe it, here we forsake no particular person, but rather we may terme our selves forsaken: in regard that our Husbands, Kindred, and Friends, either dying, or flying from the dead, have left us alone in this great affliction, even as if we were no way belonging unto them. And therefore, by following this counsell, we cannot fall into any reprehension; whereas if we neglect and refuse it, danger, distresse, and death (perhaps) may ensue thereon.

Wherefore, if you thinke good, I would allow it for well done, to take our waiting women, with all such things as are needfull for us, and (as this day) betake our selves to one place, to morrow to another, taking there such pleasure and recreation, as so sweet a season liberally bestowed on us. In which manner we may remaine, till we see (if death otherwise prevent us not) what end the gracious Heavens have reserved for us. I would have you also to consider, that

in

it is no leſſe ſeemely for us to part hence honeſtly, then a great number of other women to remaine here immodeſtly.

The other Ladies and Gentlewomen, having heard Madam *Pampinea*, not onely commended her counſell, but deſiring alſo to put it in execution; had already particularly conſulted with themſelves, by what meanes they might inſtantly depart from thence. Nevertheleſſe, Madam *Philomena*, who was very wiſe, ſpake thus:

Albeit faire Ladies, the caſe propounded by Madam *Pampinea*, hath beene very well delivered, yet (for all that) it is againſt reaſon for us to ruſh on, as we are over-ready to do. Remember that we are all Women, and no one among us ſo childiſh, but may conſider, that when we ſhall be ſo aſſembled together, without providence or conduct of ſome man, we can hardly governe our ſelves. We are fraile, offenſive, ſuſpitious, weake ſpirited and fearefull: in regard of which imperfections, I greatly doubt (if we have no better direction then our owne) this ſocietie will ſooner diſſolve it ſelfe, and (parchance) with leſſe honour to us, than if wee never had begun it. And therefore it ſhall be expedient for us, to provide before we proceede any further. Madam *Eliza* hereon thus replyed.

Moſt true it is, that men are the chiefe or head of women, and without their order, ſildome times doe any matters of ours ſort to recommendable end. But what meanes ſhall we make for men? We all know well enough, that the moſt part of our friends are dead, and ſuch as are living, ſome be diſperſed here, others there, into divers places and companies, where we have no knowledge of their being, and to accept of ſtrangers would ſeeme very inconvenient: wherefore as wee have ſuch care of our health, ſo ſhould wee be as reſpective withall, in ordering our intention, that whereſoever we aime at our pleaſure and contentment, reproofe and ſcandall may by no meanes purſue us.

While this diſcourſe thus held among the Ladies, three young Gentlemen came forth of the Church (yet not ſo young, but the youngeſt had attained to five and twentie yeares:) in whom neither malice of the time, loſſe of friends, or kindred, nor any fearefull conceit in themſelves, had the power to quench affection, but (perhaps) might a little coole it in regard of the queazie ſeaſon. One of them called himſelfe *Pamphilus*, the ſecond *Philoſtratus*, and the laſt *Dioneus*. Each of them was very affable and well conditioned, and walked abroad (for their greater comfort in ſuch a time of tribulation) to try if they could meet with

their faire friends, who (happily) might all three be among these seaven, and the rest kin unto them in one degree or other. No sooner were these Ladies espied by them, but they met with them also in the same advantage, whereupon Madam *Pampinea* (amiably smiling) said:

See how graciously Fortune is favourable to our beginning, by presenting our eyes with three so wise and worthy young Gentlemen, who will gladly be our guides and servants, if we doe not disdaine them the office. Madam *Neiphile* began immediatly to blush, because one of them had a Love in the company, and said, Good Madam *Pampinea*, take heede what you say, because of mine owne knowledge) nothing can be spoken but good of them all, and I thinke them all to bee absolutely sufficient to a farre greater imployment then is here intended: as being well worthy to keepe company, not onely with us, but them of more faire and precious esteeme than we are. But because it appeareth plainely enough, that they beare affection to some here amongst us, I feare, if wee should make the motion, that some dishonour or reproofe may ensue thereby, and yet without blame either in us or them. That is nothing at all, answered Madam *Philomena*, let me live honestly, and my Conscience not checke me with any crime; speak then who can to the contrary; God and truth shall enter armes for me. I wish that they were as willing to come, as all we are to bid them welcome: for truly (as Madam *Pampinea* said) we may very well hope, that Fortune will be furtherous to our purposed journey.

The other Ladies hearing them speak in such manner, not onely were silent to themselves, but all with one accord and consent said, that it were well done to call them and to acquant them with their intention entreating their company in so pleasant a voyage. Whereupon, without any more words, Madam *Pampinea* mounting on her feete (because one of the three was her Kinsman) went towards them, as they stood respectively observing them, and (with a pleasing countenance) giving them a gracious salvation, declared to them their deliberation, desiring (in behalfe of all the rest) that with a brotherly, and modest minde, they would vouchsafe to beare them company.

The Gentlemen imagined at the first apprehension that this was spoken in mockage; but when they better perceived what her words tended to solemne earnest, they made answer, That they were all heartily ready to doe them any service. And without any further delaying, before they departed thence, tooke order for their aptest furnishing with all convenient

convenient neceſſaries, and ſent word to the place of their firſt appointment. On the morrow, being Wedneſday, about breake of day, the Ladies, with certaine of their attending Gentlewomen, and the three Gentlemen, having three ſervants to waite on them, left the Citie to begin their journey, & having travelled about a leagues diſtance, arrived at the place of their firſt purpoſe of ſtay, which was ſeated on a little hill, diſtant (on all ſides) from any high way, plentifully ſtored with faire ſpreading Trees, affording no meane delight to the eye. On the top of all, ſtood a ſtately Palace, having a large and ſpacious Court in the middeſt, round engirt with Galleries, Hals, and Chambers, every one ſeperate alone by themſelves, and beautified with Pictures of admirable cunning. Nor was there any want of Gardens, Medowes, and other moſt pleaſant walkes, with Wells and Springs, of faire running waters, all encompaſſed with Branching Vines, fitter for curious and quaffing Bibbers, than Women ſober, and ſingularly modeſt.

This Pallace, the company found fully fitted and prepared, the beds in the chambers made & daintily ordred, thickly ſtrewed with varietie of flowers, which could not but give them the greater contentment. *Dioneus*, who (above the other) was a pleaſant young gallant, and full of infinite wittie conceits, ſaid; Your wit (faire Ladies) hath better guided us hither, than our providence: I know not how you have determined to diſpoſe of your cares; as for mine owne, I left them at the Citie gate, when I came thence with you: and therefore let your reſolution be, to ſpend the time here in ſmiles and ſinging, (I meane, as may fitteſt agree with your dignitie) or elſe give me leave to go ſeeke my ſorrowes again, and ſo to remaine diſcontented in our deſolate City. Madam *Pampinea* having in like manner ſhaken off her ſorrowes, delivering a modeſt and baſhfull ſmile, replyed in this manner:

Dioneus, well have you ſpoken, it is fit to live merrily, and no other occaſion made us forſake the ſicke and ſad Citie. But, becauſe ſuch things as are without meane or meaſure, are ſubject to no long continuance: I, who began the motion, whereby this ſocietie is thus aſſembled, and aime at the long laſting thereof, doe hold it very convenient, that we ſhould all agree, to have one chiefe Commander among us, in whom the care and providence ſhould conſiſt, for direction of our merriment, performing honour and obedience to the parſon, as to our Patron and ſole

sole Governour. And because every one may feele the burthen of solicitude, as also the pleasure of commanding, and consequently have a semble taste of both whereby no envie may arise on any side, I could wish that each one of us (for a day onely) should feele both the burthen and honour, and the person so to be advanced, shall receive it from the election of us all. As for such as are to succeed, after him or her that hath had the dayes of dominion; the party thought fit for succession must be named so soone as night approacheth. And being in this eminency (according as he or shee shall please) he may order and dispose how long the time of his rule shall last, as also of the place and manner, where best we may continue our delight.

These words were highly pleasing to them all, and by generall voice, Madam *Pampinea* was chosen Queene for the first day. Whereupon Madam *Philomena* ran presently to a Bay-tree, because shee had often heard what honour belonged to those branches and how worthy of honour they were, that rightfully were crowned with them, plucking off divers branches, she made of them an apparant and honorable Chaplet, placing it (by generall consent) upon her head; and this so long as their companie continued, manifested to all the rest, the signall of Dominion and Royall greatnesse.

After that Madam *Pampinea* was thus made Queene, she commanded publicke silence, and causing the Gentlemens three servants, and the wayting women also (being foure in number) to be brought before her, thus she began: Because I am to give the first example to you all, whereby proceeding on from good to better, our company may live in order and pleasure, acceptable to all, and without shame to any; I create *Parmeno* (servant to *Dioneus*) Master of the Houshold, he taking the care and charge of all our traine, and for whatsoever appertaineth to our Hall service. I appoint also, that *Silisto* servant to *Pamphilus*, shall be our Dispenser and Treasurer, performing that which *Parmeno* shall command him. Likewise that *Tindaro* serve a Groomes of the Chamber, to *Philostratus* his Master, and the other two, when his fellowes impeached by their offices, cannot be present *Misia* my Chamber-maid, and *Lisciska* belonging to *Philomena*, shall serve continually in the Kitchin, and diligently make ready such Viands, as shall be delivered them by *Parmeno*. *Chimera*, waiting-woman to *Lauretta*, and *Stratilia* appertaining to *Fiammetta*, shall have the charge and government of the

Ladies

Ladies Chambers, and preparing all places where we ſhall be preſent. Moreover, we will and command every one of them (as they deſire to deſerve our grace) that whereſoever they go or come, or whatſoever they heare or ſee; they eſpecially reſpect to bring us tydings of them. After ſhe had ſummarily delivered them theſe orders, very much commended of every one, ſhe aroſe fairely, ſaying: Here we have Gardens, Orchards, Medowes, and other places of ſufficient pleaſure, where every one may ſport & recreate themſelves: but ſo ſoone as the ninth houre ſtriketh, then all to meete here againe, to dine in the coole ſhade.

This jocund company having received licence from their Queene to diſport themſelves, the Gentlemen walked with the Ladies into a goodly Garden, making Chaplets and Noſegayes of divers flowers, and ſinging ſilently to themſelves. When they had ſpent the time limited by the Queene, they returned into the houſe, where they found that *Parmeno* had effectually executed his office: for, when they entred into the hall, they ſaw the Tables covered with delicate white Napery, and the glaſſes looking like ſilver, they were ſo tranſparantly cleere, all the roome beſide ſtrewed with Flowers of Iuniper. When the Queene, and all the reſt had waſhed, according as *Parmeno* gave order, ſo every one was ſeated at the Table; the Viands (delicately dreſt) were ſerved in and excellent wines plentifully delivered, none attending but the three ſervants, and little or no lowd Table-talke paſſing among them.

Dinner being ended, and the Table withdrawne (all the Ladies, and the Gentlemen likewiſe, being skilfull both in ſinging and dancing, and playing on inſtruments artificially (the Queene commanded, that divers Inſtruments ſhould be brought, and as ſhe gave charge) *Dioneus* tooke a Lute, and *Fiametta* a *Viall de gamba*, and began to play an excellent dance. Whereupon, the Queene with the reſt of the Ladies, and the other two young Gentlemen (having ſent their attending Servants to dinner) paced forth a dance very majeſtically. And when the dance was ended, they ſung ſundry excellent Canzonets, outwearing ſo the time, until the Queen commanded them all to reſt, becauſe the houre did neceſſarily require it. The Gentlemen having their Chambers far ſevered from the Ladies, curiuoſly ſtrewed with flowers, and their beds adorned in exquiſite manner, as thoſe of the Ladies were not a jot inferiour to them, the ſilence of the night beſtowed ſweet reſt on them all. In the morning the Queene and all the reſt being riſen, accounting over much ſleepe to be very hurtfull, they walked abroad into a goodly Meadow.

dow, where the grasse grew verdantly, and the beames of t
Sunne heated not over-violently, because the shades of fa
spreading Trees, gave a temperate calmenesse, coole a
gentle winds fanning their sweet breath pleasingly amo
them. All of them being there set downe in a round rit
and the Queene in the middest, as being in the place of t
eminency, she spake in this manner.

You see (faire company) that the Sunne is highly mou
ted, the heate (elsewhere) too extreame for us, and therefo
here is our fittest refuge, the ayre being so coole, delica
and acceptable, and our folly well worthy reprehension,
we should walke further, and speed worse. Here are Tabl
Cards and Chesse, as your dispositions may be addicted.
if mine advice might passe for currant, I would admit no
of those exercises, because they are too troublesome both
them that play, and such as looke on. I could rather wis
that some quaint discourse might passe among us, a tale or
ble related by some one, to urge the attention of all the re
And so wearing out the warmth of the day, one pretty N
vell will draw on another, untill the Sunne bee low
declined, and the heates extremitie more diminisht
to solace our selves in some other place, as to our mind
shall seeme convenient. If therefore what I have sayd
acceptable to you (I purposing to follow in the same cour
of pleasure) let it appeare by your immediate answer; for,
the Evening I thinke we can devise no exercise more co
modious for us.

The Ladies and Gentlemen allowed of the motion,
spend the time in telling pleasant tales: whereupon th
Queene said: Seeing you have approved mine advice,
grant free permission for this day, that every one shall re
late, what to him or her is best pleasing. And turning he
selfe to *Pamphilus* (who was seated on her right hand) gav
him favour, with one of his owne Novells, to begin the re
creation, which he not daring to deny, and perceiving gent
all attention prepared for him, thus he began.

*Messire Chappelet du Prat, by making a false confession, be
guiled an holy Religious man, and after dyed. And having (du
ring his life time) beene a very bad man, at his death, was repute
for a Saint, and called Saint Chappelet.*

The

The first Novell.

Wherein it is contained, how hard a thing it is, to distinguish good-nesse from hypocrisie; and how (under the shadow of holinesse) the wickednesse of one man, may deceive many.

IT is a matter most convenient (deare Ladies) that a man ought to begin whatsoever he doth, in the great and glorious name of him, who was the Creator of all things. Wherefore, seeing that I am the man appointed, to begin this your invention of discoursing Novelties: I intend to begin also with one of his wonderfull workes. To the end, that this being heard, our hope may remaine on him, as the thing onely permanent and his name for ever to be praysed by us. Now as there is nothing more certaine, then that even as temporall things are mortall and transitorie, so are they both in and out of themselves, full of sorrow, anguish, anguish, and subject to infinite dangers: So in the same manner we live mingled among them, seeming as part of them, and cannot (without some error) continue or defend our selves, if God by his speciall grace and favour, give us not strength and good understanding. Which power we may not beleeve, that eyther it descended to us, or liveth in us by any merites of our owne; but of his onely most gratious benignitie. Moved nevertheless, and entreated by the intercessions of them, who were (as we are) mortals; and having diligently observed his commandements, are now with him in eternall blessednesse. To whom (as to advocates and to procurators, informed by the experience of our frailtie) we are not to present our prayers in the presence of so great a Judge; but onely to himselfe, for the obtaining of all such things as his wisedome knoweth to be most expedient for us. And well may we credit, that his goodnesse is more fully inclined towards us, in his continuall bountie and liberalitie; than the subtiltie of mortall eye, can reach into the secret of so divine a thought: and sometimes therefore we may be beguiled in opinion, by electing such and such as our intercessors before his Majesty, who perhaps are farre off from him, or driven into perpetuall exile as unworthy to appeare in so glorious a presence. For he from whom nothing can be hidden, more regardeth the sincerittie of him that prayeth, than ignorant devotion, committed to the trust of a heedlesse intercessor, and such

prayers

prayers have alwayes gracious acceptation in his sight. ...btful
manifestly will appeare by the Novell which I inten... debts
relate; manifestly (I say) not as in the Iudgement of G... e the
but according to the apprehension of men. ...peop

There was one named, *Musciatto Francesi*, who from ...d wit
ing a most rich and great Merchant in *France*, was becom... nke h
Knight, and preparing to go into *Tuscany*, with Mouns... om h
Charles without Land, Brother to the King of *France* (... ving
was desired and incited to come thither by Pope *Boniface*... nt,
found his affaires greatly intricated heere and there... o oft
oftentimes the matters of Merchants fall out to be) ... se ho
that very hardly he should sodainely unintangle th... Fren
without referring the charge to divers persons. And... ane,
all he tooke indifferent good order, onely he remai... gue)



doubtfu...

btfull, whom he might ſufficiently leave, to recover debts among many *Burgundians*. And the rather was his e, the more herein, becauſe he knew the *Burgundians* to people of bad nature, rioters, brablers, full of calumny, d without any faithfulneſſe: ſo that he could not be- nke himſelfe of any man, how wicked ſoever he was, in om he might repoſe truſt to meet with their lewdneſſe. ving a long while examined his thoughts upon this nt, at laſt he remembred one Maſter *Chappalet du Part*, o oftentimes had reſorted to his houſe in *Paris*. And be- uſe he was a man of little ſtature, yet handſome enough, French not knowing what this word *Chappelet*, might ane, eſteeming he ſhould be called rather (in their gue) *Chappell*; imagined, that in regard of his ſmall ſta- e, they termed him *Chappelet*, and not *Chappell*, and ſo by name of *Chappelet* he was every where knowne, and by or none acknowledged for *Chappell*.

his Maſter *Chappelet*, was of ſo good and commendable e; that, being a Notary, he held it in high diſdaine, that of his Coutractes (although he made but few) ſhould found without falſhood. And looke how many ſoever dealt withall, he would be urged and required thereto, ering them his paines and travaile for nothing, but to be uired otherwiſe than by money; which proved to be his ch larger recompencing, and returned to him the farre ater benefit, He tooke the onely pleaſure of the world, beare falſe witneſſe, if he were thereto entreated, and ftentimes) when he was not requeſted at all. Likewiſe cauſe in thoſe times, great truſt and beleefe was given an oath, he maketh no care or conſcience to be perju- d: greatly advantaged himſelfe by Law ſuites, in regard t many matters relyed upon his oath, and delivering truth according to his knowledge.

He delighted (beyond meaſure) and addicted his beſt ſtu- es, to cauſe enmities and ſcandalls betwixt kindred and ends, or any other perſons, agreeing well together: and e more miſchiefe he could procure in this kinde, ſo much e more pleaſure and delight tooke he therein. If he re called to kill any one, or to doe any other villanous ede, he never would make deniall, but goe to it very llingly; and divers times it was well knowne, that many re cruelly beaten, yea ſlaine by his hands. He was a oſt horrible blaſphemer of God and his Saints, upon the ry leaſt occaſion, as being more addicted to choller than y other man could be. Never would he frequent the hurch, but baſely contemned it, with the Sacraments and religious

religious rites therein administred, accounting them vile and unprofitable things: but very voluntarily visite Tavernes, and other places of dishoneſt acc which were continually pleaſing unto him, to ſatisfie luſt and inordinate lubricity. He would ſteale both in like and private, even with ſuch a conſcience, as if it given to him by nature ſo to doe. He was a great glu and a drunkard, even till he was not able to take any m being alſo a continuall gameſter, and carrier of falſe D to cheate with them the very beſt Friends he had.

But why doe I waſte time in ſuch extent of words. W it may ſuffice to ſay, that never was there a worſe borne; whoſe wickedneſſe was for long time ſupport by the favour, power, and Authority of Monſieur *Muſc* ſo, for whoſe ſake many wrongs and injuries were pati ly endured, as well by private perſons (whom hee wo abuſe notoriouſly) as others of the Court, betweene wh he made no difference at all in his vile dealing. T Maſter *Chappelet*, being thus remembered by *Muſci* (who very well knew his life and behaviour) he perſ ly perſwaded himſelfe, that this was a man apt in all ſpects, to meete with the trechery of the Burgundia whereupon, having ſent for him, thus he began.

Chappelet, thou knoweſt how I am wholly to retreate ſelfe from hence, and having ſome affaires among Burgundians, men full of wickedneſſe and deceite; I bethinke my ſelfe of no meeter a man than *Chappelet*, recover ſuch debts as are due to me among them. And eauſe it falleth out ſo well, that thou art not now hind by any other buſineſſe; if thou wilt undergoe this o for me, I will procure thee favourable Letters from Court, and give thee a reaſonable Portion in all thou eoverſt. Maſter *Chappelet*, ſeeing himſelfe idle, and gre after wordly goods, conſidering that Mounſieur *Muſci* (who had beene alwayes his beſt buckler) was now to part from thence, without any dreaming on the matter, conſtrained thereto (as it were) by neceſſity, ſet do his reſolution, and anſwered, that he would glady doe

Having made their agreement together, and recei from *Muſciatto* his expreſſe procuration, and alſo Kings gracious Letters; after that *Muſciatto* was gone his journey, Maſter *Chappelet* went to *Diſon*, where he unknowne (well-neere) of any. And there (quite from naturall diſpoſition) began benignely and graciouſly recovering the debts due; which courſe he took the rat becauſe they ſhould have a further feeling of him in

d. Being lodged in the house of two Florentine bre-
ren, that lived on their monies usance, and (for *Moun-*
, Musciattoes sake) using him with honour and respect:
fortuned that he fell sicke, and the two brethen sent
r Physitions to attend him, allowing their servants to
diligent about him, making no spare of any thing,
nich gave the best likelihood of restoring his health.
t all their paines prooved to no purpose, because he be-
g now growne aged, and having lived all his life time
ry disorderly, fell day by day, (according to the Physi-
s judgement) from bad to worse, as no other way appea-
d but death, whereat the brethren greatly grieved.

Upon a day, neere the Chamber, where the sicke man
y, they entred into this communication: What shall we
e (quoth the one to the other) with this man? We are
uch hindered by him; for to send him away (sicke as he
) we shall be greatly blamed thereby, and it will be a
anifest note of our weake wisedome, the people know-
g that first of all we gave him entertainement, and have
lowed him physicall attendance, and he not having any
ay injured or offended us, to let him be suddenly expul-
(our house (sicke to death as he is) it can be no way for
r credit.

On the other side, we are to consider also, that he hath
eene so bad a man, as he will not now make any confessi-
n thereof, neither receive the blessed Sacrament of the
hurch; and dying so without confession, there is no Churh
at will accept his body, but it must be buried in pro-
hane ground, like to a Dog: And yet if he would confesse
imselfe, his sinnes are so many and monstrous, as the like
se also may happen, because there is not any Priest or
eligious person, that can or will absolve him. And being
ot absolved, he must be cast into some ditch or pit; and
hen the people of the Towne, as well in regard of the ac-
ount we carry here, (which to them appeareth so little
leasing, as we are dayly pursued with their worst words)
s also coveting our spoyle and overthrow, upon this will
ry out and mutiny against us; *Behold these Lombard dogs, which*
we use to be received into the Church, why should we suffer them to
live here among us? In furious madnesse will they come up-
n us, and our house, where (peradventure) not contented
with robbing us of our goods, our lives will remaine in
heir mercy and danger; so that, in what sort soever it
happen, this man dying here, must needes be banefull to us.

Master *Chappelet*, who (as we have formerly sayd) was
odged neere to the place where they thus conferred, ha-
ving

ving a subtle attention (as oftentimes we see sicke perso
to be possessed withall) heard al these speeches spoken
him, and causing them to be called unto him, thus he spa

I would not have you to be any way doubtfull of me; a
ther that you should receive the least damage by me;
have heard what you have sayd, and am certaine, that
will happen according to your words, if matters, shou
fall out as you conceite; but I am minded to deale othe
wise. I have committed so many offences against our Lo
God, in the whole current of my life; that now I inte
one action at the houre of my death, which I trust w
make amends for all. Procure therefore I pray you, th
the most holy and religious man that is to be found (
there be any one at all) may come unto me, and refer
the case then to me, for I will deale in such sort for y
and my selfe, that all shall be well, and you no way d
contented.

The two Brethren, although they had no great hope
his speeches, went to a Monastery of Gray-Friars, and r
quested; that some one holy and learned man, might co
to heare the confession of a *Lombard*, that lay very weal
and sicke in their house. And one was granted unto the
being an aged and religious Frier, a great read master
the Sacred Scripture, a very venerable person, who bei
of good and sanctified life, all the Cittizens held him
great respect and esteeme, and on hee went with them
their house. When he was come up into the Chamb
where Master *Chappelet* lay, and being there seated dow
by him; he began first to comfort him very lovingly; d
manding also of him, how many times he had beene
confession? Whereto Master *Chappelet* (who never h
beene shrived in all his life time) thus replyed.

Holy Father, I alwayes used (as a common custome)
be confessed once (at the least) every weeke, albeit som
times much more often; but true it is, that being falne in
this sickenesse now eight dayes since I have not bee
confest, so violent hath beene the extremity of my weal
nesse. My sonne (answered the good old man) thou ha
done well, and so keepe thee hereafter in that minde: b
I plainely perceive, seeing thou hast so often confessed th
selfe, that I shall take the lesse labour in urging questio
to thee.

Master *Chappelet* replyed: Say not so good Father, f
albeit I have beene so oftentimes confessed, yet am I wi
ling now to make a generall confession, even to all sinn
committing to my rememberance, from the very day

my birth, untill this instant houre of my shrift. And therefore I intreat you (holy Father) to make no respect of my sickenesse, for I had rather be offensive to mine owne flesh than by favoring or allowing it ease, to hazard the perdition of my soule, which my Redeemer bought with so precious a price.

These words were highly pleasing to the holy Fryer, and seemed to him as an argument of a good conscience: wherefore, after he had much commended this forwardnesse in him, he began to demand of him if he had never offended with any Woman? Whereunto Master *Chappelet* (breathing forth a great sight) answered:

Holy Father, I am halfe ashamed to tell you the truth in this case, as fearing least I should sinne in vaine-glory. Whereto the Confessor replied; Speake boldly sonne, and feare not, for in telling the truth, be it in confession or otherwise, a man can never sinne. Then sayd Master *Chappelet*, Father, seeing you give me so good an assurance, I will resolve you faithfully herein. I am so true a Virgin-man in this matter, even as when I issued forth of my Mothers wombe. O sonne (quoth the Frier) how happie and blessed of God art thou? Well hast thou lived, and therein hast thou not meanely merited, having had so much libertie to do the contrary if thou wouldest, wherein very few of us can answer for our selves.

Afterward, he demanded of him how much displeasing to God he had beene in the sinne of Gluttony? When (sighing againe greatly) he answered: Too much, and too often, good Father. For, over and besides the Fasts of our Lent season, which every yeare ought to be duely observed by devout people, I brought my selfe to such a customary use, that I could fast three dayes in every weeke, with Bread and Water. But indeede (holy Father) I confesse, that I have drunke water with such a pleasing appetite and delight (especially in praying, or walking on pilgrimage) even as greedy drunkards doe, in drinking good Wine. And many times I have desired such Sallades of such hearbes, as Women doe gather abroad in the open fields, and feeding onely upon them, without coveting after any other kinde of sustenance, hath seemed much more pleasing to me, than I thought to agree with the nature of Fasting, especially when as it swerveth from devotion, or is not done as it ought to be.

Sonne, sonne, replied the Confessour, these sinnes are naturall, and very light, and therefore I would not have thee to charge thy conscience with them, more than is needefull. It appeneth to every man (how holy soever he be) that after he hath fasted overlong, feeding will be welcome to him, and drinking good drinke after his travell. O Sir, (said Ma-

ſter (*Chappelet*) never tell me this to comfort me; for w
you know, and I am not ignorant therein, that ſuch thi
as are done for the Service of God, ought all to be perf
med purely, and without any blemiſh of the minde; w
otherwiſe is done, ſavoureth of ſinne. The Frier being w
contented with theſe words, ſaid: It is not amiſſe that th
underſtandeſt it in this manner, and thy conſcience th
purely cleared, is no little comfort vnto me. But tell me n
concerning Avarice, haſt thou ſinned therein, by deſir
more than was reaſonable, or withholding from others, ſu
things as thou oughteſt not to detaine? Wherein Maſ
Chappelet anſwered. Good Father, I would not have you
imagine, becauſe you ſee me lodged here in the houſe of t
Vſurers, that therefore I am of any ſuch diſpoſition. I
truely Sir, I came hither to no other end, but onely to chaſt
and admoniſh them in friendly manner, to cleanſe th
mindes from ſuch abhominable profit. And aſſuredly,
ſhould have prevailed therein, had not this violent ſickn
hindred mine intention. But underſtand (holy Father) th
my Parents left me a rich man, and immediatly after
Fathers death, the greater part of his goods I gave away
Gods ſake, and then, to ſuſtaine mine owne life, and to he
the poore members of Ieſus Chriſt, I betooke my ſelfe t
meane eſtate of Merchandiſe, deſiring none other than h
neſt gaine thereby, & evermore whatſoever benefit came
me, I imparted halfe thereof to the poore, converting m
owne ſmall portion about my neceſſary affaires, which th
other part would ſcarſely ſerve to ſupply: yet alwayes G
gave thereto ſuch a mercifull bleſſing, that my buſine
daily thrived more & more, ariſing ſtill from good to bet
Well haſt thou done therein, good Sonne, ſaid the Conf
ſour: but how oftentimes haſt thou beene angry? Oh
(ſayd Maſter *Chappelet*) therein I aſſure yee, I have of
tranſgreſſed. And what man is able to forbeare it; behold
the daily actions of men to be ſo diſhoneſt? No care of k
ping Gods Commandements, nor any feare of his dread
judgements. Many times in a day, I have rather wiſhed
ſelfe dead than living, beholding youth purſuing idle va
ties, to ſweare and forſweare themſelves, tipling in T
vernes, and never haunting Churches, but rather affect
the worlds follies, than any ſuch duties as they owe to G
Alas Sonne (quoth the Frier) this is a good and holy an
and I can impoſe no penance on thee for it. But tell me, h
not rage or furie at any time ſo over-ruled thee, as to co
mit murther or manſlaughter, or to ſpeake evill of any m
or to doe any ſuch kinde of injurie? Oh Father (anſwe
Maſter *Chappelet*) you that ſeeme to be a man of God, h
care you uſe any ſuch vile words? If I had had the

least thought, to doe any such act as you speake, doe you thinke that God would have suffered me to live? These are deeds of darkenesse, fit for villaines and wicked livers, of which hellish crew, when at any time I have happened to meete with some one of them, I have said; Goe, God convert thee.

Worthy, and charitable words replyed the Frier: but tell me Sonne, Didst thou ever, beare false witnesse against any man, or hast spoken falsely, or taken ought from any one, contrary to the will of the owner? Yes indeede Father, said Master *Chappelet*, I have spoken ill of another, because I have sometime seene one of my neighbours, who with no meane shame of the world, would doe nothing else but beate his wife: and of him once I complayned to the poore mans Parents, saying, he never did it but when he was overcome of drinke. Those were no ill words, quoth the Frier; but I remember you said, that you were a Merchant; Did you ever deceive any, as some Merchants use to doe? Truly Father, answered Master *Chappelet*, I thinke not any, except one man, who one day brought me money which he owed me for a certaine peece of cloath I sold him, and I put it into a purse without accounting it. About a moneth afterward, I found that there were foure small pence more then was due to me: and never happening to meete with the man againe, after I had kept them the space of a whole yeare, I then gave them away unto foure poore people, for Gods sake.

A small matter, said the Frier, and truly paid backe againe to the owner, in bestowing them on the poore. Many other questions he demanded of him, whereto still he answered in the same manner: but before he proceeded to absolution, Master *Chappelet* spake thus: I have yet one sinne more, which I have not revealed to you: when being urged by the Frier, to confesse it, he sayd; I remember, that I should afford one day in the weeke, to cleanse the house of my soule, for better entertainement to my Lord and Saviour, and yet I have done no such reverence to the Sunday, or Sabbath, as I ought to have done. A small fault Sonne, replied the Frier. Oh no (quoth Master *Chappelet*) doe not terme it a small fault, because Sunday being a holy day, is highly to be reverenced: for as on that day, our blessed Lord arose from death to life. But (quoth the Confessour) hast thou done nothing else on that day? Yes, said he, being forgetfull of my selfe, once I did spet in Gods Church. The Frier smiling said: Alas Sonne, that is a matter of no moment; for we that are Religious persons, doe use to spet there every day. The more is your shame, answered Master *Chappelet*, for no place ought to be kept more pure and cleane then the sacred Temple, wherein our daily sacrifices are offered up to God.

In this manner he held on an houre and more, uttering the like transgressions as these; and at last he began to sigh very passionately, and to shed a few teares, as one that was skilfull enough in such dissembling prankes: whereat the Confessour being much moved, said: Alas Sonne, what ailest thou? O Father (quoth *Chappelet*) there remaineth yet one sinne more upon my conscience, whereof I never at any time made confession, so shamefull it appeareth to me to disclose it; and I am partly perswaded, that God will never pardon me for that sinne. How now Sonne? said the Frier, never say so, for if all the sinnes that ever were committed by men, or shall be committed so long as the world endureth, were onely in one man, and he repenting them, and being so contrite for them, as I see thou art; the grace and mercy of God is so great, that upon penitent confession, he will freely pardon him, and therefore spare not to speake it boldly. Alas Father (said *Chappelet* still in pretended weeping) this sinne of mine is so great, that I can hardly beleeve (if your earnest prayers doe not assist me) that ever I shall obtaine remission for it. Speake it Sonne, said the Friar, and feare not, I promise that I will pray to God for thee.

Master *Chappelet* still wept and sighed, and continued silent, notwithstanding all the Confessors comfortable perswasions; but after hee had held him a long while in suspence, breathing forth a sigh, even as if his very heart would have broken, he said; Holy Father, seeing you promise to pray to God for me, I will reveale it to you: Know then, that when I was a little boy, I did once curse my Mother; which he had no sooner spoken, but hee wrung his hands, and grieved extraordinarily. Oh good Sonne, said the Frier: doth that seeme so great sinne to thee? Why, men doe daily blaspheme our Lord God, and yet nevertheless upon their heartie repentance, he is alwayes ready to forgive them; and wilt not thou beleeve to obtaine remission for a sinne so ignorantly committed? Weepe no more deare Sonne, but comfort thy selfe and rest resolved, that if thou wert one of them, who nailed our blessed Saviour to his Crosse; yet being so truly repentant, as I see thou art, he would freely forgive thee. Say you so Father? quoth *Chappelet*. What my owne deare Mother? that did beare me in her wombe nine moneths, day and night, and afterwards fed me with her breasts a thousand times, can I be pardoned for cursing her? O no, it is too hainous a sinne, and except you pray to God very instantly for me, he will not forgive me; for I feare it comes neare to be a sinne unpardonable.

When the Religious man perceived, that nothing more was to be confessed by Master *Chappelet*. he gave him absolution, and his owne benediction beside, reputing him to be a most

moſt holy man, as verily beleeving all that he had ſaid. And who would not have done the like, hearing a man to ſpeake in this manner, and being upon the very point of death? Afterward, he ſaid unto him, Maſter *Chappelet*, by Gods Grace you may be ſoone reſtored to health, but if it ſo come to paſſe, that God doe take your bleſſed and well diſpoſed ſoule to his mercy, will it pleaſe you to have your body buried in our Convent? Whereto Maſter *Chappelet* anſwered; I thanke you Father for your good motion, and ſorry ſhould I be, if my friends did burie me any where elſe, becauſe you have promiſed to pray to God for me; and beſide, I have alwayes carried a religious devotion to your Order. Wherefore I beſeech you, ſo ſoone as you are come home to your Convent, prevaile ſo much by your good meanes, that the holy Euchariſt, conſecrated this morning on your high Altar, may be brought unto me: for although I confeſſe my ſelfe utterly unworthy, yet I purpoſe (by your reverend permiſſion) to receive it, as alſo your holy and laſt unction, to this end, that having lived a grievous ſinner, I may yet (at the laſt) die a Chriſtian. Theſe words pleaſed the good old man, and he cauſed every thing to be performed, according as Maſter *Chappelet* had requeſted.

The two brethren, who much doubted the diſſembling of *Chappelet*, being both in a ſmall partition, which ſundered the ſicke mans Chamber from theirs, heard and underſtood the paſſage of all, betweene him and the ghoſtly Father, being many times ſcarſely able to refraine from laughter, at the fraudulent courſe of his confeſſion. And often they ſaid within themſelves, what manner of man is this, whom neither age, ſickneſſe, nor terrour of death ſo neare approaching, and ſenſible to his owne ſoule, nor that which is much more, God, before whoſe judgement he knowes not how ſoone he ſhall appeare, or be ſent to a more fearefull place; none of theſe can alter his wicked diſpoſition, but that he will needs die according as he hath lived? Notwithſtanding ſeeing he had ſo ordered the matter, that he had buriall freely allowed him, they cared for no more.

After that *Chappelet* had received the Communion, and the other Ceremonies appointed for him; weakeneſſe encreaſing upon him more and more, the very ſame day of his goodly confeſſion, he died (not long after) towards the evening. Whereupon the two brethren tooke order, that all needefull things ſhould be in a readineſſe, to have him buried honorably; ſending to acquaint the Fathers of the Convent therewith, that they might come to ſay their *Vigills*, according to precedent cuſtome, and then on the morrow to fetch the body. The honeſt Frier that had confeſſed him, hearing he was dead, went to the Prior of the

Convent, and by ſound of the houſe Bell, cauſed all the brethren to aſſemble together, giving them credibly to underſtand, that Maſter *Chappelet* was a very honeſt man, as appeared by all the parts of his confeſſion, and made no doubt, but that many miracles would be wrought by his ſanctified body, perſwading them to fetch it thither with all devout ſolemnitie and reverence: whereto the Prior, and all the credulous Brethren preſently condeſcended very gladly.

When night was come, they went to viſit the dead body of Maſter *Chappelet*, where they uſed an eſpeciall and ſolemne *Vigill*, and on the morrow, apparelled in their richeſt Coapes and Veſtments, with Bookes in their hands, and the Croſſe borne before them, ſinging in the forme of a very devoute proceſſion, they brought the body pompeouſly into their Church, accompanied with all the people of the Towne, both men and women. The Father Confeſſor, aſcending up into the Pulpit, preached wonderfull things of him, and the rare holineſſe of his life, his faſts, his virginitie, ſimplicitie, innocency, recounting alſo (among other eſpeciall obſervations) what *Chappelet* had confeſſed, as this moſt great and grievous ſin, and how hardly he could be perſwaded, that God would grant him pardon for it. Whereby he tooke occaſion to reprove the people then preſent, ſaying; And you (accurſed of God) for the leaſt and trifling matter hapning, will not ſpare to blaſpheme God, his bleſſed Mother, and the whole Court of heavenly Paradiſe: Oh, take example by this ſingular man, this Saint-like man, nay a very Saint indeede.

Many additions more he made, concerning his faithfulneſſe, truth and integritie; ſo that by the vehement aſſeveration of his words, (whereto all the people there preſent gave credible beliefe) he provoked them unto ſuch zeale and earneſt devotion; that the Sermon was no ſooner ended, but (in mightie crowds and throngs) they preſſed about the Biere, kiſſing his hands and feet, and all the garments about him were torne in peeces, as precious Reliques of ſo holy a perſon, and happy they thought themſelves, that could get the ſmalleſt piece or ſhred of any thing that came neare to his body: and thus they continued all the day, the body lying ſtill open, to be viſited in this manner.

When night was come, they buried him in a goodly Marble tombe, erected in a faire Chappell purpoſelly; and for many dayes after following, it was moſt ſtrange to ſee, how the people of the Countrey came thither on heapes, with holy Candles and other offerings, with Images of wax faſtened to the Tombe, in ſigne of Sacred and ſolemne Vowes, to this new created Saint. And ſo farre was ſpread the

the fame and renowne of his ſanctitie, devotion, and integritie of life, maintained conſtantly by the Fathers of the Convent; that if any one fell ſicke, in neede, diſtreſſe, or adverſitie, they would make their Vowes to no other Saint but him: naming him (as yet to this day they doe) S. *Chappelet*, affirming upon their Oathes, that infinite miracles were there daily performed by him, and eſpecially on ſuch, as came in devotion to viſite his ſhrine.

In this manner lived and died Maſter *Chappelet du Prat*, who before he became a Saint, was as you have heard: and I will not deny it to be impoſſible, but that he may be at reſt among other bleſſed bodies. For although hee lived lewdly and wickedly, yet ſuch might be his contrition in the lateſt extremitie, that (queſtionleſſe) he might finde mercy. But becauſe ſuch things remaine unknowne to us, and ſpeaking by outward appearance vulgar judgement will cenſure otherwiſe of him, and thinke him to be rather in perdition, than in ſo bleſſed a place as Paradiſe. But referring that to the Omnipotents appointment, whoſe clemencie hath alwayes beene ſo great to us, that he regards not our errours, but the integritie of our faith, making (by means of our continuall Mediator) of an open enemy, a converted ſonne and ſervant. And as I began in his name, ſo will I conclude, deſiring that it may evermore be had in due reverence, and refer we our ſelves thereto in all our neceſſities, with this ſetled aſſurance, that he is alwayes ready to heare us. And ſo he ceaſed.

Abraham a Iew being admoniſhed or adviſed by a friend of his, named Iohannot de Chevigny, *travelled from* Paris *unto* Rome: *And beholding there the wicked behaviour of men in the Church returned backe to* Paris *againe, where yet (never-theleſſe) he became a Chriſtian.*

The ſecond Novell.

Wherein is contained and expreſſed, the liberalitie and goodneſſe of God, extended to the Chriſtian Faith.

THe Novell recited by *Pamphilus* was highly pleaſing to the company, and much commended by the Ladies: & after it had bin diligently obſerved among them, the Queen commanded Madam *Neiphila* (who was ſeated neareſt to *Pamphilus*) that, in relating another of hers, ſhe ſhould follow on in the paſtime thus begun. She being no leſſe gracious in countenance, than merrily diſpoſed; made anſwer that ſhe would obey her charge, and began in this manner.

Pamphilus hath declared to us, by his Tale, how the goodneſſe of God regardeth not our errors, when they proceede from things which we cannot diſcerne. And I intend to approve by mine, what argument of infallible

truth, the same benignitie delivereth of it selfe, by enduring patiently the faults of them, that (both in word and worke) should declare unfained testimony of such gracious goodnesse, and not to live so dissolutely as they doe. To the end, that others illuminated by their light of life, may beleeve with the stonger constancy of minde.

As I have heretofore heard (Gracious Ladies) there lived a wealthy Merchant in *Paris*, being a Mercer or seller of Silkes, named *Iehannot de Chevigny*, a man of faithfull, honest and upright dealing; who held great affection and friendship with a very rich Iew, named *Abraham*, that was a Merchant also, and a man of very direct conversation. *Iehannot* well noting the honestie and loyall dealing of this Jew, began to have a religious kinde of compassion in his soule, much pittying that a man so good in behaviour, so wise and discreete in all his actions, should be in danger of perdition thorow want of faith. In which regard, lovingly he began to intreate him, that he would leave the errors of his Iewish beliefe, and follow the truth of Christianitie, which he evidently saw (as being good and holy) daily to prosper and enlarge it self, whereas on the contrary, his profession decreased, and grew to nothing.

The Jew made answer, that he beleeved nothing to be so good and holy, as the Jewish Religion, and having bin borne therein, therein also he purposed to live and die, no matter whatsoever being able to remove him from that resolution. For all this stiffe denyall, *Iehannot* would not give him over; but pursued him still day by day, reitterating continually his former speeches to him: delivering infinite excellent and pregnant reasons, that Merchants themselves were not ignorant, how farre the Christian faith excelled the Jewish falshoods. And albeit the Jew was a very learned man in his owne Law, yet notwithstanding the intire amitie he bare to *Iehannot*, or (perhaps) his words fortified by the blessed Spirit were so prevailant with him, that the Jew felt a pleasing apprehension in them, though as yet his obstinacie stood farre off from conversion. But as he thus continued strong in opinion, so *Iehannot* left not hourely to labour him: insomuch, that the Jew being conquered by such earnest and continuall importunitie, one day spake to *Iehannot*, saying.

My worthy friend *Iehannot*, thou art extreamely desirous that I should convert to Christianitie, and I am well contented to doe it; onely upon this condition: That first I will journey to Rome, to see him whom thou sayest, is Gods generall Vicar here on earth, and to consider on the course of his life and manners, and likewise of his Colledge

ledge of Cardinals. If he and they doe appeare such men to me, as thy speeches affirme them to be, and thereby I may comprehend that thy Faith and Religion is better than mine, as with no meane paines thou indevoureſt to perſwade me, I will become a Chriſtian as thou art: but if I finde it otherwiſe, I will continue as I am, a Jew.

Iohannet hearing theſe words, became exceeding ſorrowfull, and ſaid within himſelfe; I have loſt all the paines which I did thinke to be well employed, as hoping to have this man converted here. For, if he goe to the Court of Rome, and behold there the wickedneſſe of the Prieſts lives, farewell all hope in me, of ever ſeeing him to become a Chriſtian. But rather, were he already a Chriſtian, without all queſtion he would turne a Jew. And ſo going nearer to *Abraham*, he ſaid, Alas, my loving friend, why ſhouldeſt thou undertake ſuch a tedious travell, and ſo great a charge, as thy journey from hence to Rome will coſt thee? Conſider, that to a rich man (as thou art) travell by Land or Sea is full of dangers. Doeſt thou not thinke, that here are Religious men enow, who will gladly beſtow Baptiſme upon thee? To me therefore it plainely appeareth, that ſuch a voyage is to no purpoſe. If thou ſtandeſt upon any doubt or ſcruple, concerning the faith whereto I wiſh thee; where canſt thou deſire conference with greater Doctours, or men more learned in all reſpects, than this famous Citie doth afford thee, to reſolve thee in any queſtionable caſe! Thou muſt thinke that the Prelates are ſuch there, as here thou ſeeſt them to be; and yet they muſt needs be in much better condition at Rome, becauſe they are neare to the principall Paſtor. And therefore, if thou wilt credit my counſell, reſerve this journey to ſome time more convenient, when the Iubilee of generall Pardon happeneth, and then (perchance) I will beare thee company, and goe along with thee as in vowed Pilgrimage.

Whereto the Jew replyed: I beleeve *Iohannet* that all which thou haſt ſaid may be ſo. But, to make ſhort with thee, I am fully determined (if thou wouldeſt have me a Chriſtian, as thou inſtantly urgeſt me to be) to goe thither, for otherwiſe, I will continue as I am. *Iohannet* perceiving his ſetled purpoſe, ſaid: Goe then in Gods name. But perſwaded himſelfe, that he would never become a Chriſtian, after he had ſeene the Court of Rome: nevertheleſſe, he counted his labour not altogether loſt, in regard he beſtowed it to a good end, and honeſt intentions are to be commended.

The Jew mounted on horſe-backe, and made no lingering in his journey to Rome: where being arrived, he was very honorably entertained by other Jewes dwelling in

Rome. And during the time of his abiding there (without revealing to any one the reason of his comming thither) very heedfully he obserued the manner of the Popes life, of the Cardinals, Prelates, and all the Courtiers. And being a man very discreet and judicious, he apparantly perceiued both by his owne eye, and further information of friends; that from the higheſt to the loweſt (without any reſtraint, remorſe of conſcience, ſhame, or feare of punishment) all ſinned in abhominable luxurie, and not naturally onely, but in foule Sodomy, ſo that the credit of Strumpets and Boyes was not ſmall, and yet might be too eaſily obtained. Moreover, drunkards, belly-gods, and ſervants of the paunch, more than of any thing elſe (even like brutiſh beaſts after their luxury) were every where to bee met withall. And upon further obſervation, he ſaw all men ſo covetous and greedy of Coine, that every thing was bought and ſold for ready money, not onely the bloud of men, but (in plaine termes) the faith of Chriſtians, yea, and matters of diuineſt qualities, how, or to whomſoever appertayning, were it for Sacrifices, or Benefices, whereof was made no meane merchandize, and more Brokers were there to be found (than in *Paris* attending upon all Trades) of manifeſt Symonie, under the nice name of Negotiation, and for gluttony, not ſuſtentation: even as if God had not knowne the ſignification of vocables, nor the intentions of wicked hearts, but would ſuffer himſelfe to be deceived by the outward names of things, as wretched men uſe to doe.

Theſe things, and many more (fitter for ſilence, than for publication) were ſo deepely diſpleaſing to the Jew, being a moſt ſober and modeſt man; that he had ſoone ſeene enough, reſolved on his returne to *Paris*, which very ſpeedily he performed. And when *Iehannot* heard of his arrivall, crediting much rather other newes from him, than ever to ſee him a converted Chriſtian, he went to welcome him, and kindly they feaſted one another. After ſome few dayes of reſting, *Iehannot* demanded of him; what he thought of our holy Father the Pope, and his Cardinals, and generally of all the other Courtiers? Whereto the Jew anſwered; It is ſtrange *Iehannot* that God ſhould give them ſo much as he doth. For I will truly tell thee, that if I had beene able to conſider thoſe things, which there I have both heard and ſeene: I could then have reſolved my ſelfe, never to have found in any Prieſt, either ſanctity, devotion, good worke, or example of honeſt life: But if a man deſire to ſee luxury, avarice, gluttony, and ſuch wicked things, yea, worſe, if worſe may be, and held in generall eſtimation of all men let him but goe to Rome, which I thinke rather to be the forge of damnable actions, than any way leaning to grace

or goodneſſe. And, for ought I could perceive, me thinkes your chiefe Paſtour, and (conſequently) all the reſt of his dependants, doe ſtrive ſo much as they may (with all their engine art and endevour) to bring to nothing, or to baniſh quite out of the world, Chriſtian Religion, whereof they ſhould be the ſupport and foundation.

But becauſe I perceive, that their wicked intent will never come to paſſe, but contrariwiſe, that your faith enlargeth it ſelfe, ſhining every day much more cleare and ſplendent: I gather thereby evidently, that the bleſſed Spirit is the true ground and defence thereof, as being more true and holy than any other. In which reſpect, whereas I ſtood ſtiffe and obſtinate againſt the good admonitions, and never minded to become a Chriſtian: now I freely open my heart unto thee, that nothing in the world can or ſhall hinder me, but I will be a Chriſtian as thou art. Let us therefore preſently goe to the Church, and there (according to the true cuſtome of your holy faith) helpe me to be baptized.

Iehannot, who expected a farre contrary concluſion than this, hearing him ſpeaking with ſuch conſtancie; was the very gladdeſt man in the world, and went with him to the Church of *Noſtre Dame* in Paris, where he requeſted the Prieſts there abiding, to beſtow Baptiſme on *Abraham*, which they joyfully did, hearing him earneſtly to deſire it. *Iehannot* was his Godfather, and named him *Iohn*, and afterward, by learned Divines he was more fully inſtructed in the grounds of our faith, wherein he grew of great underſtanding, and led a very vertuous life.

Melchiſedech, a Iew, by recounting a Tale of three Rings to the great Soldan, named Saladine, *prevented a great danger which was prepared for him.*

The third Novell.

Whereby the Author, approving the Chriſtian Faith, ſheweth how beneficiall a ſodaine and ingenious anſwer may fall out to be, eſpecially when a man finds himſelfe in ſome evident danger.

MAdam *Neiphila* having ended her Diſcourſe which was well allowed of by all the company; it pleaſed the Queene, that Madam *Philomena* ſhould next ſucceed in order, who thus began.

The Tale delivered by *Neiphila*, maketh me remember a doubtfull caſe, which ſometime happed to another Iew. And becauſe that God, and the truth of his holy Faith, hath beene already very well diſcourſed on: it ſhall not ſeeme unfitting (in my poore opinion) to diſcend from [illegible] accidents of men. Wherefore, I will declare [illegible] you, which being attentively heard and conſidered, may

make you much more circumspect, in answering to divers questions and demands, than (perhaps) otherwise you would be, Consider then (most worthy assembly) that like as folly and dulnesse, many times hath overthrowne some men from place of eminency, into most great and grievous miseries: even so, discreet sense and good understanding, hath delivered many out of irkesome perils, and seated them in safest securitie. And to prove it true, that folly hath made many fall from high authoritie, into poore and despised calamitie, may be avouched by infinite examples, which now were needelesse to remember: But, that good sense and able understanding, may prove to be the occasion of great desolation, without happy prevention, I will declare unto you in very few words, and make it good according to my promise.

Saladine, was a man so powerfull and valiant, as not onely his valour made him Soldan of Babylon, and also gave him many signall victories, over Kings of the Sarazens, and of Christians likewise. Having in divers Warres, and other magnificent employments of his owne, wasted all his treasure (and by reason of some sodaine accident happening to him) standing in neede to use some great some of money, yet not readily knowing where or how to procure it; he remembred a rich Jew named *Melchisedech*, that lent out mony to use or interest in the Citie of *Alexandria*. This man he imagined best able to furnish him, if he could be won to doe it willingly: but he was knowne to be so gripple and miserable, that hardly any meanes would draw him to it. In the end, constrained by necessitie, and labouring his wits for some apt device whereby he might have it: he concluded, though he might not compell him to doe it, yet by a practise shadowed with good reason to ensnare him. And having sent for him, entertained him very familiarly in his Court, and sitting downe by him, thus began.

Honest man, I have often heard it reported by many, that thou art very skilfull, and in cases concerning God, thou goest beyond all other of these times: wherefore, I would gladly be informed by thee, which of these three Lawes or Religions, thou takest to be truest; that of the Jew, the other of the Sarazen, or that of the Christian? The Jew, being a very wise man, plainely perceived, that *Saladine* sought to entrap him in his answer, and so to raise some quarrell against him. For, if he commended any one of these Lawes above the other, he knew that *Saladine* had what he aimed at. Wherefore, bethinking himselfe to shape such an answer, as might no way trouble or entangle him: summoning all his senses together, and considering, that dallying with the Soldane might redound to his no meane danger, thus he replied. My

My Lord, the question propounded by you, is faire and worthy, and to answer my opinion truly thereof, doth necessarily require some time of consideration, if it might stand with your liking to allow it: but if not, let me first make entrance to my reply, with a prettie tale, and well worth the hearing. I have oftentimes heard it reported, that (long since) there was a very wealthy man, who (among other precious Iewels of his owne) had a goodly ring of great valew: the beautie and estimation whereof, made him earnestly desirous to leave it as a perpetuall memory and honour to his successours, Whereupon, he willed and ordained, that he among his male children, with whom this Ring (being left by the Father) should be found in custodie after his death; he, and none other, was to be reputed his heire, and to be honoured and reverenced by all the rest, as being the prime and worthiest person. That Sonne, to whom this Ring was left by him, kept the same course to his posteritie, dealing (in all respects) as his predecessors had done; so that (in short time) the Ring (from hand to hand) had many owners by Legacie.

At length, came to the hand of one, who had three sonnes, all of them goodly and vertuous persons, and very obedient to their Father: in which regard, he affected them all equally, without any difference or partiall respect. The custome of this Ring being knowne to them, each one of them (coveting to beare esteeme above the other) desired (as he could best make his meanes) his Father, that in regard he was now growne very old, he would leave that Ring to him, whereby he should be acknowledged for his heire. The good man, who loved no one of them more than the other, knew not how to make his choise, nor to which of them he should leave the Ring: yet having past his promise to them severally, he studied by what meanes to satisfie them all three, Wherefore, secretly having conferred with a curious and excellent Goldsmith, he caused two other Rings to be made, so really resembling the first made Ring, that himselfe (when he had them in his hand) could not distinguish which was the right one.

Lying upon his death-bed, and his Sonnes then plying him by their best opportunities, he gave to each of them a Ring. And they (after his death) presuming severally upon their right to the inheritance and honour, grew to great contradiction & square: each man producing then his Ring, which were so truly all alike in resemblance, as no one could know the right Ring from the other. And therefore, suite in Law to distinguish the true heire to his Father, continued long time, and so it doth yet to this very day. In like manner my good Lord, concerning those three

three Lawes given by God the Father, to three such people as you have propounded: each of them doe imagine that they have the heritage of God, and his true Law, and also duely to performe his Commandements, but which of them doe so indeede, the question (as of the three Rings) is yet remaining.

Saladine well perceiving, that the Iew was too cunning to be caught in his snare, and had answered so well, that to doe him further violence, would redound unto his perpetuall dishonour; resolved to reveale his neede and extremitie, and try if he would therein friendly stead him. Having disclosed the matter, and how he purposed to have dealt with him if he had not returned so wise an answer; the Iew-dent him so great a summe of money as he demanded, and *Saladine* repaied it againe to him justly, giving him other gifts beside: respecting him as his speciall friend, and maintaining him in very honorable condition, neare unto his owne person.

A Monke having committed an offence, deserving to be very grievously punished, freed himselfe from the paine to be inflicted on him by wittily reprehending his Abbot, with the very same fault.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein may be noted, that such men as will reprove those errours in others, which remaine in themselves, commonly are the Authors of their owne reprehension.

SO ceased Madam *Philomena*, after the conclusion of her Tale: when *Dioneus* sitting next unto her, (without tarrying for any other command from the Queene, knowing by the order formerly begun, that he was to follow in the same course) spake in this manner.

Gracious Ladies, if I faile not in understanding your generall intention, we are purposely assembled here to tell Tales; and especially such as may please our selves. In which respect, because nothing should be done disorderly, I hold it lawfull for every one (as our Queene decreed before her Dignitie) to relate such a Novelltie, as in their owne judgement may cause most contentment. Wherefore having heard that by the good admonitions of *Iehannot de Chevigny*, *Abraham* the Iew was advised to the salvation of his soule, and *Melchisedic* (by his witty understanding) defended his riches from the traines of *Saladine*: I now purpose to tell you in few plaine words, without feare of receiving any reprehension, how cunningly a Monke compassed his deliverance, from a punishment intended towards him.

There was in the Country of *Lunigiana* (which is farre distant-

ſiſtant from our owne) a Monaſtery, which ſometime was better furniſhed with holineſſe and Religion, than now alayes they are: wherein lived (among divers others) a young Novice Monke, whoſe hot and luſtie diſpoſition (being in the vigour of his yeares) was ſuch, as neither faſts nor Prayers had any great power over him. It chanced on a Faſting day about high noone, when all the other Monkes were aſleepe in their Dormitaries or Dorters; this frolicke Frier was walking alone in their Church, which ſtoode in a very ſolitary place, where ruminating on many matters by himſelfe, he eſpied a prettie handſome Wench (ſome Husbandmens daughters in the Countrey, that had beene gathering roots and hearbes in the field) upon her knees before an Altar; whom he had no ſooner ſeene, but immediatly he felt effeminate temptations, and ſuch as ill ſitted with his profeſſion.

Laſcivious deſire; and no religious devotion, made him draw neare her, and whether under ſhrift (the onely cloake to compaſſe carnall affections) or ſome other as cloſe conference to as pernicious and vile a purpoſe, I know not: but ſo farre he prevailed upon her frailtie, and ſuch a bargaine paſſed betweene them, that from the Church, he won her to his Chamber, before any perſon could perceive it. Now, while this young luſtie Monke (tranſported with over-fond affection) was more careleſſe of his dalliance, than he ſhould have beene: the Lord Abbot being newly ariſen from ſleepe, and walking ſoftly about the Cloyſter; came to the Monkes Dorter doore, where hearing what noyſe was made betweene them, and a feminine voyce more ſtrange than he was wont to heare; he laid his eare cloſe to the Chamber doore, and plainely perceived, that a woman was within. Wherewith being much moved, he intended ſodainely to make him open the doore; but (upon better conſideration) hee conceived it farre more fitting for him, to returne backe to his owne Chamber, and to tarry till the Monke ſhould come forth.

The Monke, though his delight with the Damſell was extraordinary, yet feare and ſuſpition followed upon it; for, in the very height of all his wantonneſſe, he heard a ſoft treading about the doore. And prying thorow a ſmall crevice in the ſame doore, perceived apparantly, that the Abbot himſelfe ſtood liſtening there, and could not be ignorant but that the maide was with him in the Chamber. As after pleaſure enſueth paine, for the veniall Monke knew well enough (though wanton heate would not let him heed it before) that moſt grievous puniſhment muſt be inflicted on him, which made him ſad beyond all meaſure: Nevertheleſſe, without diſcloſing his diſmay to the young

Maiden,

Maiden, he began to consider with himselfe on many meanes, whereby to finde out one that might best fit his turne. And suddenly conceited an apt stratagem, which sorted to such effect that he would have it: whereupon, seeming satisfied for that season, he told the Damsell, that (being carefull of her credit) as he had brought her in unseene of any, so he would free her from thence againe, desiring her to tarry there (without making any noyse at all) untill such time as he returned to her.

Going forth of the Chamber, and locking it fast with the key, he went directly to the Lord Abbots lodging, and delivering him the sayd key (as every Monke used to doe the like, when he went abroad out of the Convent) setting a good countenance on the matter, boldly sayd; I have not yet brought in all my part of the wood, which lieth ready cut downe in the Forrest; and having now convenient time to doe it, if you please to give me leave, I will goe and fetch it. The Abbot perswading himselfe, that he had not beene discovered by the Monke, and to be resolved more assuredly in the offence committed: being not a little jocund of so happy an accident, gladly tooke the key, and gave him leave to fetch the wood.

No sooner was he gone, but the Abbot began to consider with himselfe, what he were best to doe in this case, either (in presence of all the other Monkes) to open the Chamber doore, that so the offence being knowne to them all, they might have no occasion of murmuring against him, when he proceeded in the Monkes punishment; or rather should first understand of the Damsell herselfe, how, and in what manner she was brought thither. Furthermore, he considered that she might be a woman of respect, or some such mans daughter as would not take it well, to have her disgraced before all the Monkes. Wherefore he concluded, first to see (himselfe) what she was, and then (afterward) to resolve upon the rest. So going very softly to the Chamber, and entring in, locked the doore fast with the key, when the poore Damsell thinking it had beene the gallant young Monke; but finding it to be the Lord Abbot, she fell on her knees weeping, as fearing now to receive publike shame, by being betrayed in this unkinde manner.

My Lord Abbot looking demurely on the Maide, and perceiving her to be faire, feate, and lovely; felt immediatly (although hee was old) no lesse spurring on to fleshly desires, than the young Monke before had done; whereupon hee beganne to conferre thus privately with himselfe. Why should I not take pleasure when I may freely have it? Cares and molestations I endure every day, but seldome finde such delights prepared for mee.

This

This is a delicate sweete young Damsell, and here is no eye that can discover mee. If I can enduce her to doe as I would have her, I know no reason why I should gainesay it. No man can know it, or any tongue blaze it abroad; and sinne so concealed, is halfe pardoned. Such a faire fortune as this is, perhaps hereafter will never befall mee; and therefore I hold it wisedome, to take such a benefit when a man may enjoy it.

Vpon this immodest meditation, and his purpose quite altered which hee came for; hee went nearer to her and very kindly (began to comfort her, desiring her to forbeare weeping: and (by further insinuating speeches) acquainted her with his amorous intention. The Maide, who was made neither of iron nor diamond, and seeking to prevent one shame by another, was easily wonne to the Abbots will, which caused him to embrace and kisse her often.

Our lustie young novice Monke, whom the Abbot imagined to be gone for wood; and had hid himselfe aloft upon the roofe of the Darter, where, when he saw the Abbot enter alone into the Chamber, he lost a great part of his former feare, promising to himselfe a kinde of perswasion, that somewhat would ensue to his better comfort; but when he beheld him lookt into the Chamber, then his hope grew to undoubted certaintie. A little chinke or crevice favoured him, whereat hee could both heare and see, whatsoever was done or spoken by them: so, when the Abbot thought hee had staide long enough with the Damsell, leaving her still there, and locking the doore fast againe, he returned thence to his owne Chamber.

Within some short while after, the Abbot knowing the Monke to be in the Convent, and supposing him to be latereturned with the wood, determined to reprove him sharpely, and to have him closely imprisoned, that the Damsell might remaine soly to himselfe. And causing him to be called presently before him, with a very stearne and angry countenance, giving him many harsh and bitter speeches, commanded, that hee should bee clapt in prison.

The Monke very readily answered, saying; My good Lord, I have not yet beene so long in the Order of Saint Benedict, as to learne all the particularities hereto belonging. And beside Sir, you never shewed me or any of my brethren, in what manner we young Monkes ought to use women, as you have done for our custome of Prayer and Fasting. But seeing you have so lately therein instructed me, and by your owne example how to doe it: I here solemnly promise you, if you please to pardon mee but this one

error,

error, I will never faile therein againe, but daily follow what I have seene you doe.

The Abbot, being a man of quicke apprehension, perceived instantly by this answer; that the Monke not onely knew as much as he did, but also had seene (what was intended) that he should not. Wherefore, finding himself as faultie as the Monke, and that he could not shame him but worthily had deserved as much himselfe, pardoning him, and imposing silence on eithers offence: they conveyed the poore abused Damsell forth of their doores, she purposing (never after) to transgresse in the like manner.

The Lady Marquesse of Montferrat, *with a Banquet of Hennes, and divers other gracious speeches beside, represt the fond love of the King of* France.

The fift Novell.

Declaring, that wise and vertuous Ladies, ought to hold their chastitie in more esteeme, than the greatnesse and treasures of Princes: and that a discreet Lord should not offer modesty violence.

THe Tale reported by *Dioneus*, at the first hearing of the Ladies, began to rellish of some immodestie, as the bashfull bloud mounting up into their faces, delivered by apparent testimony. And beholding one another with scarse pleasing lookes, during all the time it was in discourse: no sooner had he concluded: but with a few milde and gentle speeches, they gave him a modest reprehension, as meaning to let him know that such tales ought not to be told among women. Afterward, the Queene commanded Madam *Fiammetta*, (sitting on a banke of flowers before her) to take her turne as next in order, and she smiling with such a Virgin blush, as very beautifully became her, began in this manner:

It is no little joy to me, that we understand so well (by the discourses already past) what power consisteth in the delivery of wise and ready answers; And because it is a great part of sense and judgement in men, to affect women of better birth and qualitie than themselves, as also an admirable foresight in women, to keepe off from being surprised in love, by Lords going beyond them in degree, a matter offereth it selfe to my memory, well deserving my speech and your attention, how a Gentlewoman should defend her honour in that kind, when importunitie laboureth to betray.

The Marquesse of *Montferrat* was a worthy and valiant Knight, who being Captaine Generall for the Church, the necessary service required his company on the Seas, in the goodly Army of the Christians against the Turkes. Upon a day, in the Court of King *Philip*, sirnamed the one-eyed King (who likewise made preparation in France, for a royall

ll assistance to that expedition) as many speeches were de-
vered, concerning the valour and manhood of this Mar-
uesse: it fortuned, that a Knight was then present, who
new him very familiarly, & he gave an addition to the for-
er commendation, that the whole world contained not a
ore equall couple in marriage, than the Marquesse and his
ady. For, as among all knights, the Marquesse could hard-
y be paraleld for armes and honours; even so his wife, in
omparison of all other Ladies, was scarcely matchable for
eautie. Which words were so weighed in the apprehension
f King *Philip*, that so sodainely (having as yet never
eene her) he began to affect her very earnestly, conclu-
ing to embarke himselfe at *Gennes* or *Genova*, there to set
orward on the intended voyage, and journying thither
y Land, he would shape some honest excuse to see the La-
y Marquesse, whose Lord being then from home, opinion
erswaded him over fondly, that hee should easily obtaine
he issue of his amorous desire.

When he was come within 2 dayes journey, where the Lady Marquesse then lay; he sent her word that she should expect his company on the morrow at dinner. The Lady being singularly wise and judicious, answered the messenger, that she reputed the Kings comming to her, as an extraordinary grace and favour, and that he should be most heartily welcome. Afterward, entring into further consideration with herselfe, what the King might meane by his private visitation, knowing her husband to be from home, and it to be no meane barre to his apter entertainement: at last she discreetly conceited (and therein was not deceived) that babling report of her beautie and perfection might thus occasion the Kings comming thither, his journey lying else a quite contrary way. Notwithstanding, being a Princely Lady, and so loyall a wife as ever lived, she intended to give her best entertainement: sommoning the chiefest Gentlemen in the Countrey together, to take due order (by their advice) for giving the King a gracious Welcome. But concerning the dinner, and service to his Table, that remained onely at her owne disposing.

Sending presently abroad, and buying all the Hens that the Countrey afforded, she commanded her Cookes, that onely of them (without any other provision beside) they should prepare all the services that they could devise. On the morrow the King came according to his promise, and was most honourably welcomed by the Lady, who seeming in his eye (farre beyond the Knights speeches of her) the fairest creature that ever he had seene before; whereat he mervelled not a little, extolling her perfections to be peereleesse, which much the more enflamed his affections,

and

and (almost) made his desires impatient. The King being withdrawne into such Chambers, as orderly were prepared for him, and as beseemed so great a Prince: the houre of dinner drawing on, the King and the Lady Marquesse were seated at one Table, and his attendants placed at other Tables, answerable to their degrees of honour.

Plentie of dishes being served in, and the rarest Wines that the Countrey yeelded; the King had more minde to the faire Lady Marquesse, then any meate that stood on the Table. Nevertheless, observing each service after other, and that all the Viands (though variously cooked, and in divers kindes) were nothing else but Hennes onely, he began to wonder; and so much the rather, because he knew the Countrey to be of such qualitie, that it afforded all plenty both of Fowles and Venison: beside, after the time of his comming was heard, they had respite enough, both for hawking and hunting; and therefore it encreased his marvell the more, that nothing was provided for him, but Hennes onely: wherein to be the better resolved, turning a merry countenance to the Lady, thus he spake. Madam, are Hennes onely bred in this Countrey, and no Cockes? The Lady Marquesse, very well understanding his demand, which fitted her with an apt opportunitie, to thwart his idle hope, and defend her owne honour; boldly returned the King this answer. Not so my Lord, but women and wives, howsoever they differ in garments and graces one from another; yet notwithstanding, they are all here as they are in other places.

When the King heard this reply, he knew well enough the occasion of his Henne dinner, as also, what vertue lay couched under her answer; perceiving apparently, that wanton words would prove but in vaine, and such a woman was not easily to be seduced; wherefore, as he grew enamored on her inconsideratly, so he found it best fitting for his honour, to quench this heate with wisedome discreetly. And so, without any more words, or further hope of speeding in so unkingly a purpose, dinner being ended, by a sudden departing, he smoothly shadowed the cause of his comming, and thanking her for the honour she had done him, commending her to her chaste disposition, and posted away with speed to *Gennes*.

An honest plaine meaning man, (simply and unfictionably) reprehended the malignitie, hypocrisie, and misdemeanour of many Religious persons.

The sixt Novell.

Declaring, that in few, discreete, and well placed words, the covetted craft of Churchmen may be justly reproved, and their hypocrisie honestly discovered.

Madam

MAdam *Æmilia* sitting next to the gentle Lady *Fiammetta*, perceiving the modest chastisement, which the vertuous Lady Marquesse had given to the King of *France*, was generally graced by the whole Assembly; began (the Queene thereto appointing her;) in these words. Nor will I conceale the deserved reprehension, which an honest simple lay-man, gave to a covetous holy Father, in very few words; yet more to be commended, then derided.

Now long since (worthy Ladies) there dwelt in our owne native City, a Frier Minor, an Inquisitor after matters of faith; who, although he laboured greatly to seeme a sanctified man, and an earnest affecter of Christian Religion, (as all of them appeare to be in outward shew;) yet he was a much better Inquisitor after them that had their purses plentiously stored with money, than of such as were slenderly grounded in Faith. By which diligent continued care in him, he found out a man more rich in purse, then understanding; and yet not so defective in matters of faith, as misguided by his owne simple speaking, and (perhaps) when his braine was well warmed with wine, words fell more foolishly from him, than in better judgement they could have done.

Being on a day in company, (very little differing in qualitie from himselfe) he chanced to say; that he had beene at such good wine, as God himselfe did never drinke better. Which words (by some Sichophant then in presence) being carried to this curious Inquisitor, and he well knowing, that the mans faculties were great, and his bagges woln up full with no meane abundance: *Cum gladijs & fustibus*, with Booke, Bell, and Candle, he raised an hoast of execrations against him, and the Sumner cited him with a solemne Processe to appeare before him; understanding sufficiently, that this course would sooner get money from him, than amend any misbeliefe in the man; for no further reformation did he seeke after.

The man comming before him, he demanded, if the accusation intimated against him, was true or no? Whereto the honest man answered, that he could not deny the speaking of these words, and declared in what manner they were uttered. Presently the Inquisitor, most devoutly addicted to S. *Iohn* with the golden beard, said; What? Dost thou make our Lord a drinker, a glutton, a belly-god, or a Taverne haunter, as thou, & other drunkards are? Being an hypocrit as thou art, thou thinkest this to be but a slight matter, because it may seeme so in thy owne opinion: but I tell thee plainly, that it deserveth fire & faggot, if I should proceede in justice to inflict it on thee: with these and other such like threatning words, as also a very sterne and angry countenance,

countenance, he made the man beleeve himselfe to be Epicure, and that he denyed the eternitie of the soul whereby he fell into such a trembling feare, as doubtless indeede, least he should be burned; that to be more merrily dealt withall, he rounded him in the eare, and by secret meanes, so annointed his hands with Saint *Johns* gold grease (a very singular remedy against the Disease Pestiential in covetous Priests, especially Friars Minors, that dare touch no money) as the case became very quickly altered.

This soveraigne Vnction was of such vertue (though *Galen* speakes not a word thereof among all his chiefe medicines) and so farre prevailed, that the terrible threatning words of fire and faggot, became merely frozen and gracious language blew a more gentle and calmer aire the Inquisitor delivering him an hallowed Crucifix, crediting him a Souldier of the Crosse (because he had paid Crosses good store for it,) and even as if he were to travell under that Standard to the holy Land; so did he appoint him a home-paying pennance, namely, to visite him three every weeke in his Chamber, and to annoint his hands with the selfesame yellow unguent, and afterward, to heare Masse of the holy Crosse, visiting him also at dinner time, which being ended, to doe nothing all the rest of the day but according as he directed him.

The simple man, yet not so simple, but seeing that the weekely greazing the Inquisitors hands, would in time graspe away all his gold, grew weary of this annointing, and began to consider with himselfe, how to stay the course of this chargeable pennance. And comming one morning (according to his injunction) to heare Masse, in the Gospell he observed these words; *You shall receive an hundred for one, and so possesse eternall life*; which saying he, kept perfect in his memory: and as he was commanded, at dinner time he came to the Inquisitor, finding him among his fellowes) seated at the Table. The Inquisitor presently demanded of him whether he had heard Masse that morning, or no? Yes replyed the man very readily. Hast thou heard any thing therein (quoth the Inquisitor) whereof thou art doubtfull, and desirest to be further informed? Surely Sir, answered the plaine meaning man, I make do doubt of any thing I have heard, but doe beleeve all constantly: onely one thing troubleth me much, and maketh me very compassionate of you and of all these holy Fathers your Brethren, perceiving what wofull and wretched estate you will be, when you shall come into another world. What words are these, quoth the Inquisitor? And why art thou moved to such compassion of us? O good Sir, said the man, doe you remember

words in the Gopel this morning, You ſhall receive an hundred for one? Thats very true, replied the Inquiſitor, but what moveth thee to urge thoſe words?

I will tell you Sir, anſwered the plaine fellow, ſo it might pleaſe you not to be offended. Since the time of my reſorting hither, I have daily ſeene many poore people at your doore, and (out of your abundance) when you and your Brethren have fed ſufficiently, every one hath had a good meſſe of Pottage: now Sir, if for every diſhfull given, you are ſure to receive an hundred againe, you will be meerely drowned in Pottage. Although the reſt (ſitting at the Table with the Inquiſitor) laughed heartily at the jeſt; yet he found himſelfe toucht in another nature, having hypocritically received for one poore offence, above three hundred pieces of gold, and not a mite to be reſtored againe. But fearing to be further diſcloſed, yet threatning him with another Proceſſe in law, for abuſing the words of the Goſpell, he was content to diſmiſſe him for altogether, without any more golden greaſing in the hand.

Bergamino, *by telling a tale of a skilfull man, named* Primaſſo, *and of an Abbot of Clugni; honeſtly checked a new kinde of covetouſneſſe in M.* Can de la Scala.

The ſeventh Novell.

Approving, that it is much unfitting for a Prince, or great perſon to be covetous, but rather to be liberall to all men.

THe courteous demeanour of Madam *Æmilia*, and the quaintneſſe of her diſcourſe, cauſed the Queene, and the reſt of the company, to commend the invention of carrying the Croſſe, and the golden ointment appointed for pennance. Afterward *Philoſtratus*, who was in order to ſpeake next, began in this manner.

It is a commendable thing (faire Ladies) to hit a But that never ſtirreth out of his place: but it is a matter much more admirable, to ſee a thing ſuddenly appearing, and ſeldome or never frequented before, to be as ſuddenly hit by an ordinary Archer. The vicious and polluted lives of Prieſts, yeeldeth matter of it ſelfe in many things, deſerving ſpeech and reprehenſion, as a true But of wickneſſe, and well worthy to be ſharpely ſhot at. And therefore, though that honeſt meaning man did wiſely, in touching Maſter Inquiſitor to the quicke, with the hypocriticall charitie of Monkes and Friers, in giving ſuch things to the poore, as were more meet for Swine, or to be worſe throwne away; yet I hold him more to be commended, who by occaſion of a former tale, and which I purpoſe to relate) pleaſantly reproved Maſter *Can da la Scala*, a Magnifico and mightie Lord, for a ſuddaine and unaccuſtomed covetouſneſſe appearing in him, figuring by

by other men, that which he intended to say of him, i manner following.

Master *Can de la Scala*, as fame ranne abroad of him in t places, was beyond the infinite favours of Fortune towar him) one of the most notable and magnificent Lords th ever lived in Italy, since the dayes of *Frederick* the seco Emperour. Hee determining to procure a very solem assembly at Verona, and many people being met ther from divers places, especially Gentlewomen of all degree suddenly (upon what occasion I know not) his minde al tred, and he would not goe forward with his intentio Most of them he partly recompenced which were com thither, and they dismissed to depart at their pleasure; on onely man remained unrespected, or in any kinde sort se away, whose name was *Bergamino*, a man very pleasant dispoſed, and so wittily ready in speaking and answering as none could easily credit it, but such as heard h m; and al though his recompence seemed over-long delaied, yet h made no doubt of a beneficiall ending.

By some enemies of his, Master *Can de la Scala* was incen sed, that whatsoever he gave, or bestowed on him was as ill imployed and utterly lost, as if it were thrown into the fire, and therefore he neither did or spake an thing to him. Some few dayes being passed over, and *Ber gamino* perceiving, that he was neither called, nor any ac count made of, notwithstanding many manly good parts i him; observing beside, that he found a shrewd consumptio in his purse, his Inne, horses, and servants, being charge- ble to him; he began to grow extreamely malancholly, an yet he attended in expectation day by day, as thinking i farre unfitting for him to depart before he was bidde farewell.

Having brought with him thither three goodly rich gar- ments, which had beene given him by sundry Lords, for hi more sightly appearance at this great meeting; the impor tunate Host being greedy of payment, first he delivered hi one of them, and yet not halfe the score being wiped off the second must needs follow; and beside, except he mean to leave his lodging, he must live upon the third so long a it would last, till he saw what end his hopes would sort too. It fortuned, during the time of living thus upon the last re fuge, that he met with Master *Can* one day at dinner, whe hee presented himselfe before him, with a discontente countenance: which Master *Can* well observing, more to di staste him, than take delight in any thing that could come from him, he sayd: *Bergamino*, how cheerest thou Thou art very melancholly, I pray thee tell us why? *Ber gamino* suddenly, without any premeditation, yet seemin

as if he had long considered thereon, reported this Tale.

Sir, I have heard of a certaine man, named *Primasso*, one skilfully learned in the Grammar, and (beyond all other) a very witty and ready versifier: in regard whereof, he was so much admired, and farre renowned, that such as never saw him, but onely heard of him, could easily say, this is *Primasso*. It came to passe, that being once at *Paris*, in poore estate, as commonly he could light on no better fortune (because vertue is slenderly rewarded, by such as have the greatest possessions) he heard much fame of the Abbot of *Clugni*, a man reputed (next to the Pope) to be the richest Prelate of the Church. Of him he heard wonderfull and magnificent matters, that he alwayes kept an open and hospitable Court, and never made refusall of any (from whence soever hee came or went) but they did eate and drinke freely there; provided, that they came when the Abbot was set at the Table. *Primasso* hearing this, and being an earnest desirer to see magnificent and vertuous men, he resolved to goe see the rare bounty of the Abbot, demanding how far he dwelt from *Paris*? Being answered, about some three leagues thence. *Primasso* made account, that if he went on betimes in the morning, he should easily reach thither before the houre for dinner.

Being instructed in the way, and not finding any to walke along with him; fearing, if he went without some furnishment, and should stay long there for his dinner, hee might (perhaps) complaine of hunger: he therefore carried three loaves of bread with him, knowing that hee could meete with water every where, albeit he used to drinke but little. Having aptly conveyed his bread about him, hee went on his journey, and arrived at the Lord Abbots Court, in indifferent while before dinner time: wherefore entring into the great Hall, and so from place to place, beholding the great multitude of Tables, bountifull preparation in the Kitchin, and what admirable provision there was for dinner, he said to himselfe; Truely this man is more magnificent than fame hath made him, because shee speakes too sparingly of him.

While thus he went about, considering on all these things very respectively, hee saw the Master of the Abbots Household (because then it was the houre of dinner) command water to be brought for washing of hands; so every one sitting downe at the Table, it fell to the lot of *Primasso*, to sit directly against the doore, whereat the Abbot must enter into the Hall, The custome in this Court was such, that no manner of foode should be served to any of the Table, untill such time as the Lord Abbot was himselfe set: whereupon, every thing being fit and ready, the Master of the hou-

hold went to tell his Lord, that nothing now wanted b
his onely presence.

The Abbot comming from his Chamber to enter th
Hall, looking about him, as he was wont to doe; the fir
man he saw was *Primasso*, who being but in homely habit
and he having not seene him before to his remembrance,
present bad conceite possessed his braine, that he never sa
an unworthier person, saying within himselfe: See ho
I give my goods away to be devoured. So returning back
to his Chamber againe commanded the doore to be mad
fast, demanding of every man neere about him if they kne
the base knave that sate before his entrance into the Hal
and all his servants answered no. *Primasso* being extreame
hungry, with travelling on foote so farre, and never used
fast so long; expecting still when meate should be served i
and that the Abbot came not at all: drew out one of h
loaves which he brought with him, and very heartily fell
feeding.

My Lord Abbot, after he had stayed within an indiffe
rent while, sent forth one of his men, to see if the poo
fellow was gone, or no. The servant told him, that he
stayed there, and fed upon dry bread, which it seemed he
had brought thither with him, Let him feede on his own
(replyed the Abbot) for he shall taste of none of mine th
day. Gladly would the Abbot, that *Primasso* should ha
gone thence of himselfe, and yet held it scarcely honest
his Lordship, to dismisse him by his owne command. *Pri*
masso having eaten one of his loaves, and yet the Abbot w
not come; began to feede upon the second: the Abbot si
sending to expect his absence, and answered as he was b
fore. At length, the Abbot not comming, and *Primasso* h
ving eaten up his second loafe, hunger compeld him to b
gin with the third.

When this newes was carried to the Abbot, sodainely h
brake forth, and sayd: What new kinde of needy trick
hath my braine begot this day? Why doe I grow disdain
full against any man whatsoever? I have long time allow
my meate to be eaten by all commers that did please to vi
me, without exception against any person, Gentleman, Ye
man, poore or rich, Merchant or Minstrill, honest man
knave, never refraining my presence in the Hall, by base
contemning one poore man. Beleeve me, covetousnesse
one mans meate, doth ill agree with mine estate and c
ling. What though he appeareth a wretched fellow to m
He may be of greater merit than I can imagine, and d
serve more honour than I am able to give him.

Having thus discoursed with himselfe, he would nee
understand of whence, and what he was, and finding him

be *Primasso*, come onely to see the magnificence which hee heard reported of him, knowing also (by the generall fame noysed every where of him) that he was reputed to bee a learned, honest, and ingenious man: he grew greatly ashamed of his owne folly, and being desirous to make him amends, strove many wayes how to doe him honour. When dinner was ended, the Abbot bestowed honourable garments on him, such as beseemed his degree and merit, and putting good store of money in his purse, as also giving him a good horse to ride on, left it at his owne free election, whether he would stay there still with him, or depart at his pleasure. Wherewith *Primasso* being highly contented, yeelding him the heartiest thankes he could devise to doe, returned to *Pavia* on horse-backe; albeit he came poorely thither on foote.

Master *Can de la Scala*, who was a man of good understanding, perceived immediately what *Bergamino* meant by this morall, and smiling on him, sayd: *Bergamino*, thou hast honestly expressed thy vertue and necessities, and justly reproved mine avarice, niggardnesse and base folly. And trust me *Bergamino*, I never felt such a fit of covetousnesse come upon me, as this which I have declared unto thee, and I will banish from me, with the same correction as thou hast taught me. So having payed the Host all his charges, redeeming also his robes or garments, mounting him on a good Gelding, and putting plenty of Crownes in his purse, he referd it to his owne choise to depart, or dwell there still with him.

Guillaume Bourſier, *with a few quaint and familiar words, checks the miſerable covetouſneſſe of Signior* Herminio de Grimaldi.

The eight Novell.

Which plainely declareth, that a covetous Gentleman, is not worthy of any honour or reſpect.

MAdam *Lauretta*, ſitting next to *Philoſtratus*, when ſhe had heard the witty conceit of *Bergamino*; knowing that ſhe was to ſay ſomewhat, without injunction or command, pleasantly thus began.

This laſt diſcourſe (faire and vertuous company) inducеth me to tell you, how an honeſt Courtier reprehended in like manner (and nothing unprofitably) baſe covetouſneſſe in a Merchant of extraordinary wealth. Which Tale, although (in effect) it may ſeeme to reſemble the former; yet perhaps it will prove no leſſe pleaſing to you, in regard it ſorted to as good an end.

It is no long time ſince, that there lived in *Genes* or *Genewai*, a Gentleman named Signior *Herminio de Grimaldy*, who (as every one well knew) was more rich in inheritan-

ees, and ready summes of currant money, than any other knowne Citizen in *Italy*. And as he surpassed other men in wealth, so did he likewise excell them in wretched Avarice, being so miserably greedy and covetous, as no man in the world could be more wicked that way; because, not only he kept his purse lockt up from pleasuring any, but denyed needfull things to himselfe, enduring many miseries onely to avoyde expences, contrary to the *Geneweyes* generall custome who alwayes delighted to be decently cloathed, and to have their dyet of the best. By reason of which most miserable basenesse, they tooke away from him the Sir name of *Grimaldi*, whereof he was in right descended, and called him Master *Hetmini* the covetous Mizer, a nickname very notably agreeing with his gripple Nature.

It came to passe, that in this time of his spending nothing but multiplying dayly by infinite meanes, that a civill honest Gentleman (a Courtier of ready wit, and discoursive in Languages) came to *Geneway*, being named *Guillaume Bousier*. A man very farre differing from divers Courtiers in these dayes, who for soothing shamefull and graceless manners in such as allow them maintenance, are called and reputed to be Gentlemen, yea speciall favorites: where much more worthily, they should be accounted as knaves and villaines, being borne and bred in all filthinesse, and skilfull in every kinde of basest behaviour, not fit to come in Princes Courts. For, whereas in passed times, they spent their dayes and paines in making peace, when Gentlemen were at warre or dissention, or treating of honest marriages betweene friends and familiars, and (with loving speeches) would recreate disturbed mindes, desiring none but commendable exercises in Court, & sharply reproving disordered life or ill actions in any, albet with little recompence: these now starts now adayes imploy all their paines in detractions, forging questions and quarrels betweene one another, making no spare of lies and falshoods. Nay which is worse, they will doe this in the presence of any man, upbraiding him with injuries, shames, and scandals, (true, or not true) upon the very least occasion. And by false and deceitfull flatteries and villanies of their owne inventing, they make Gentlemen to become as vile as themselves. For which detestable qualities, they are better beloved and respected of their misdemeanored Lords, and recompenced in more bountifull manner, than men of vertuous carriage and desert. Which is an argument sufficient, that goodnesse is gone up to heaven and hath quite forsaken these loathed lower Regions, where men are drowned in the mud of all abominable vices.

But returning where I left (being led out of my way by just and a religious anger against such deformity) this Gentle-

tleman

tleman, Master *Guillaume Bourſier*, was willingly ſeene, and gladly welcommed by all the beſt men in *Geneway*. Having remained ſome few dayes in the citty, and amongſt other matters, heard much talke of the miſerable covetouſneſſe of Maſter *Herminio*, he grew very deſirous to have a ſight of him. M. *Herminio* had already underſtood, that this gentleman, Mr. *Guillaume Bourſier* was vertuouſly diſpoſed, and having in him ſome ſparkes of notable nature, gave him very good words, and gracious entertainement, diſcourſing with him on divers occaſions. In company of other *Genewayes* he brought him to a new erected houſe of his, a building of great beauty; where, after he had ſhewed him all the variable rarieties, he began thus. M. *Guillaume* no doubt but you have heard & ſeene many things, and you can inſtruct me in ſome quaint conceite or device, to be fairely figured in painting, at the entrance into the Hall of my houſe. M. *Guillaume* hearing him ſpeak ſo ſimply, returned this anſwere: Sir, I cannot adviſe you in any thing, ſo rare or unſeene as you ſpeake of: but how to ſneeze (after a new manner) upon a ful and overcloyed ſtomacke, to avoyd baſe homours that ſtupifie the braine, or other matters of the like quality. But if you would be taught a good one indeede, and had a diſpoſition to ſee it fairely effected, I could inſtruct you in an excellent Embleme, wherewith (as yet) you never came acquainted.

Maſter *Herminio* hearing him ſay ſo, and expecting no ſuch anſwere as he had; ſayd, Good Maſter *Guillaume*, tell me what it is, and on my faith I will have it fairely painted. Whereto Maſter *Guillaume* ſuddenly replyed; Doe nothing but this ſir: Paint over the Portall of your Halls entrance, the lively Picture of Liberality, to bid all your friends better welcome, than hitherto they have beene. When Maſter *Herminio* heard theſe words, he became poſſeſſed with ſuch a ſudden ſhame, that his complection changed from the former paleneſſe, and anſwered thus: Maſter *Guillaume*, I will have your advice ſo truly figured over my gate, and ſhe ſhall give ſo good welcome to all my gueſts, that both you and all theſe Gentlemen ſhall ſay, I have both ſeene her and am become reaſonably acquainted with her. From that time forward, the words of Maſter *Guillaume* were ſo effectuall with Signior *Herminio*, that he became the moſt bountifull and beſt houſe-keeper, which lived in his time in *Geneway*: no man more honouring and friendly welcoming both ſtrangers and Citizens, that he continually uſed to do.

The King of Cyprus was wittily reprehended, by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gaſcoigne, and became vertuouſly altered from his vicious diſpoſition. The ninth Novell.

Giving all men to underſtand, that Iuſtice is neceſſary in a King above all things.

THe last command of the Queene, remained upon Madam *Elissa*, or *Eliza*, who (without any delaying) thus began. Young Ladies, it hath often beene seene, that much paine hath beene bestowed, and many reprehensions spent in vaine, till a word happening at adventure, and perhaps not purposely determined, hath effectually done the deed: as appeareth by the Tale of Madam *Lauretta*, and another of my owne, wherewith I intend briefely to acquaint you, approving that when good words are discreetly observed, they are of soveraigne power and vertue.

In the dayes of the first King of *Cyprus*, after the Conquest made in the holy Land by *Godfrey* of *Bullen*, it fortuned that a Gentlewoman of *Gascoigne*, travelling in pilgrimage to visit the sacred Sepulcher in *Jerusalem*, returning home againe, arrived at *Cyprus*, where she was vilanously abused by certaine base wretches. Complayning thereof without any comfort or redresse, she intended to make her moane to the King of the Countrey. Whereupon it was told her, that therein she should but loose her labour, because he was womanish and faint-hearted; that not onely he refused to punish with justice the offences of others, but also suffered shamefull injuries done to himselfe. And therefore such as were displeased by his negligence, might easily discharge their spleene against him, and doe him what dishonour they would.

When the Gentlewoman heard this, despairing of any consolation, or revenge for her wrongs, she resolved to checke the Kings deniall of justice, and comming before him weeping, spake in this manner. Sir, I presume not into your presence, as hoping to have redresse by you, for divers dishonorable injuries done unto me; but, as full satisfaction for them, doe but teach me how you suffer such vile abuses, as daily are offered to your selfe. To the end, that being therein instructed by you, I may the more patiently beare mine owne; which (as God knoweth) I would bestow on you very gladly, because you know so well how to endure them.

The King, who (till then) had beene very bad, dull, and sloathfull, even as sleeping out his time of government, began to revenge the wrongs done to this Gentlewoman very severely, and (thence forward) became a most sharpe Justice, for the least offence offered against the honour of his Crowne, or to any of his subjects besides.

Master Albert *of Bullen, honestly made a Lady to blush, that thought to have done as much to him, because she perceived him to be amorously affected towards her.*

The tenth Novell.

Wherein is declared, that honest love agreeth with people of all ages.

After

After that Madam *Eliza* sate silent, the last charge and labour of like employment, remained to the Queene her selfe; whereupon she began thus to speake: Honest and vertuous young Ladies, like as the starres (while the aire is faire and cleare) are the adorning and beautie of heaven, and flowers (while the Spring time lasteth) doe graciously embellish the Meadowes; even so sweet speeches and pleasing conferences, to passe the time with commendable discourses, are the best habit of the minde, and an outward beautie to the body: which ornaments of words, when they appeare to be short and sweet, are much more seemely in women, than in men; because long and tedious talking when it may be done in lesser time, is a greater blemish in women than in men.

Among us women, this day, I thinke few or none have therein offended, but as readily have understood short and pithy speeches, as they have beene quicke and quaintly delivered. But when answering suteth not with understanding, it is generally a shame in us, and all such as live; because our moderne times have converted that vertue, which was within them who lived before us, into garments of the body, and she whose habits were noted to be most gaudy, fullest of imbroyderies and fantasticke fashions: she was reputed to have most matter in her, and therefore to be more honoured and esteemed. Never considering, that whosoever loadeth the backe of an Asse, or puts upon him the richest bravery; he becommeth not thereby a jot the wiser; or meriteth any more honour than an Asse should have. I am ashamed to speake it, because in detecting other, I may (perhaps) as justly taxe my selfe.

Such imbroydered bodies, tricked and trimmed in such boasting bravery, are they any thing else but as Marbell Statues, dumbe, dull, and utterly insensible? Or if (perchance) they make an answer, when some question is demanded of them; it were much better for them to be silent. For defence of honest devise and conference among men & women, they would have the world to thinke, that it proceedeth but from simplicitie, and precise opinion, covering their owne folly with the name of honesty: as if there were no other honest woman, but she that conferres onely with her Chambermaide, Laundresse, or Kitchin-woman: as if nature had allowed them, (in their owne idle conceit) no other kinde of talking.

Most true it is, that as there is a respect to be used in the action of other things; so time and place are necessarily to be considered, and also whom we converse withall; because sometimes it happeneth, that a man or woman, intending (by a word of jest and merriment) to make another body

bluſh or be aſhamed: not knowing what ſtrength of wit remaineth in the oppoſite, doe convert the ſame diſgrace upon themſelves. Therefore, that we may the more adviſedly ſtand upon our owne guard, and to prevent the common Proverbe, *That women (in all things) make choiſe of the worſt*: I deſire that this dayes laſt Tale, which is to come from my ſelfe, may make us all wiſe. To the end, that as in gentleneſſe of minde we conferre with other; ſo by excellency in good manners, we may ſhew our ſelves not inferiour to them.

It is not many yeares ſince (worthy aſſembly) that in *Bulloigne* there dwelt a learned Phyſitian, a man famous for skill, and farre renowned, whoſe name was Maſter *Albert*, and being growne aged, to the eſtimate of threeſcore and ten yeares: he had yet ſuch a ſprightfull diſpoſition, that though naturall heate and vigour had quite ſhaken hands with him, yet amorous flames and deſires had not wholly forſaken him. Having ſeene (at a Banquet) a very beautifull woman, being in the eſtate of widdowhood, named (as ſome ſay Madam *Margaret de Chiſolieri*, ſhee appeared ſo pleaſing in his eye; that his ſences became no leſſe diſturbed, than as if he had beene of farre younger temper, and no night could any quietneſſe poſſeſſe his ſoule, except (the day before) he had ſeene the ſweet countenance of this lovely widdow. In regard whereof, his daily paſſage was by her doore, one while on horſebacke, and then againe on foot; as beſt might declare his plaine purpoſe to ſee her.

Both ſhe and other Gentlewomen, perceiving the occaſion of his paſſing and repaſſing; would privately jeſt thereat together, to ſee a man of ſuch yeares and diſcretion, to be amorouſly addicted, or over-ſwayed by effeminate paſſion. For they were partly perſwaded, that ſuch wanton Ague fits of Love, were fit for none but youthfull apprehenſions, as beſt agreeing with their cheerefull complexion. Maſter *Albert* continuing his daily walkes by the widdowes lodging; it chanced upon a Feſtivall day, that ſhee (accompanied with divers other women of great account) being ſitting at her doore; eſpied Maſter *Albert* (far off) comming thitherward, and a reſolved determination among themſelves was ſet downe, to allow him favourable entertainement, and to jeſt (in ſome merry manner) at his loving folly, as afterward they did indeede.

No ſooner was he come neare, but they all aroſe, and courteouſly invited him to enter with them, conducting him into a goodly Garden, where readily was prepared choiſe of delicate wines and banqueting. At length among other pleaſant and delightfull diſcourſes, they demanded of him, how it was poſſible for him, to be amorouſly affe-

&ted

ded towards so beautifull a woman, both knowing and seeing how earnestly she was solicited by many gracious, gallant, and youthfull spirits, aptly suting with her yeares and desires? Master *Albert* perceiving, that they had drawne him in among them, onely to scoffe and make a mockerie of him; set a merry countenance on the matter and honestly thus answered.

Beleeve me Gentlewoman (speaking to the widdow her selfe) it should not appeare strange to any of wisedome and discretion, that I am amorously inclined, and especially to you, because you are well worthy of it. And although those powers, which naturally appertaine to the exercises of Love, are bereft and gone from aged people; yet good will thereto cannot be taken from them, neither judgement to know such as deserve to be affected: for, by how much they exceede youth in knowledge and experience, by so much the more hath nature made them meet for respect and reverence. The hope that incited me (being aged) to love you, that are affected of so many youthfull Gallants, grew thus. I have often chanced into divers places, where I have seene Ladies and Gentlewomen, being disposed to a Collation, or rere-banquet after dinner, to feede on Lupines, and young Onions or Leekes; and although it may be so, that there is little or no goodnesse at all in them; yet the heads of them are least hurtfull, and most pleasing in the mouth. And you Gentlewomen generally (guided by unreasonable appetite) will hold the heads of them in your hands, and feede upon the blades or stalkes: which not onely are not good for any thing, but also are of very bad savour. And what know I (Lady) whether among the choise of friends, it may fit your fancy to doe the like? For, if you did so, it were no fault of mine to be chosen of you, but thereby were all the rest of your suters the sooner answered.

The widdowed Gentlewoman, and all the rest in her company, being bashfully ashamed of her owne and their folly presently said. Master *Albert*, you have both well and worthily chastised our overbold presumption, and beleeve me Sir, I repute your love and kindnesse of no meane merit, comming from a man so wise and vertuous: And therefore (mine honour reserved) command my uttermost, as alwayes ready to doe you any honest service. Master *Albert* arising from his seate, thanking the faire widdow for her gentle offer, tooke leave of her and all the company; and she blushing, as all the rest were therein not much behinde her, thinking to checke him, became chidden her selfe; whereby (if we be wise) let us all take warning.

The Sunne was now somewhat farre declined, and the heate

heats extremity well worne away : when the Tales of the seaven Ladies and three Gentlemen were thus finished; whereupon their Queene pleasantly said. For this day (faire company) there remaineth nothing more to be done under my regiment, but onely to bestow a new Queene upon you, who (according to her judgement) must take her turne, and dispose what next is to be done, for continuing our time in honest pleasure. And although the day should endure till darke night; in regard, that when some time is taken before, the better preparation may be made for occasions to follow; to the end also, that whatsoever the new Queene shall please to appoint may bee the better fitted for the morrow: I am of opinion, that at the same houre as we now cease, the following dayes shall severally begin. And therefore, in reverence to him that giveth life to all things and in hope of comfort by our Second Day; Madam *Philomena*, a most wise young Lady shall governe as Queen this our Kingdome.

So soone as she had thus spoken, arising from her seate of dignitie, and taking the Lawrell crowne from off her owne head; she reverently placed it upon Madam *Philomenaes*; she first of all humbly saluting her, and then all the rest, openly confessing her to be their Queene, made gracious offer to obey what she commanded. *Philomena*, her cheekes delivering a scarlet tincture, to see her selfe thus honored as their Queene, and well remembring the words, so lately uttered by Madam *Pampinea*; that dulnesse or neglect might not be noted in her, tooke cheerefull courage to her, and first of all, she confirmed the officers, which *Pampinea* had appointed the day before; then she ordained for the morrowes provision, as also for the supper so neare approaching, before they departed away from thence, and then thus began.

Lovely Companions, although that Madam *Pampinea*, more in her owne courtesie, then any matter of merit remaining in me, hath made me your Queene : I am not determined to alter the forme of our intended life, not to be guided by mine owne judgement, but to associate the same with your assistance. And because you may know what I intend to doe, and so (consequently) adde or diminish at your pleasure; in very few words, you shall plainely understand my meaning. If you have well considered on the course, which this day hath beene kept by Madam *Pampinea*, me thinkes it hath beene very pleasing and commendable; in which regard, untill by overtedious continuation or other occasions of irkesome offence, it shall seeme injurious, I am of the minde, not to alter it. Holding on the order then as we have begun to doe, we will depart from

hence

hence to recreate our selves a while, and when the Sunne groweth towards setting, we will sup in the fresh and open ayre: afterward, with Canzonents and other pastimes, we will out-weare the houres till bed time. To morrow morning, in the fresh and gentle breath thereof, we will rise and walk to such places, as every one shall find fittest for them, even as already this day we have done; untill due time shall summon us hither againe, to continue our discoursive Tales, wherein (mee thinkes) consisteth both pleasure and profit, especially by discreet observation.

Very true it is that some things which Madam *Pampinea* could not accomplish, by reason of her small time of authoritie, I will begin to undergoe, to wit, in restraining some matters whereon we are to speake, that better premiditation may passe upon them. For, when respite and a little leasure goeth before them, each discourse will savour of the more formalitie; and if it might so please you, thus would I direct the order. As since the beginning of the world, all men have beene guided (by Fortune) thorow divers accidents and occasions: so beyond all hope and expectation, the issue and successe hath beene good and successefull, and accordingly should every one of our arguments be chosen.

The Ladies, and young Gentlemen likewise; commended her advice, and promised to imitate it; onely *Dioneus* excepted, who when every one was silent, spake thus. Madam, I say as all the rest have done, that the order by you appointed, is most pleasing and worthy to be allowed. But I intreate one speciall favour for my selfe, and to have it confirmed to mee, so long as our company continueth; namely, that I may not be constrained to this Law of direction, but to tell my Tale at libertie, after my owne minde, and according to the freedome first instituted. And because no one shall imagine, that I urge this grace of you, as being unfurnished of discourses in this kinde, I am well contented to be the last in every dayes exercise.

The Queene, knowing him to be a man full of mirth and matter, began to consider very advisedly, that he would not have mooved this request, but onely to the end, that if the company grew wearied by any of the Tales recounted, he would shut up the dayes disport with some mirthfull accident. Wherefore willingly, and with consent of all of the rest he had his suite granted. So, arising all, they walked to a Christall river, descending downe a little hill into a valley, graciously shaded with goodly trees; where washing both their hands and feete, much pretty pleasure passed among them, till supper time drawing neare, made them returne home to the Palace. When supper

was

was ended, bookes and instruments being lade before them, the Queene commanded a dance, and that Madam *Æmilia*, assisted by Madam *Lauretta* and *Dioneus*, should sing a sweete ditty. At which command, *Lauretta* undertooke the dance, and led it, *Æmilia* singing this song ensuing.

The Song.

So much delight my beauty yeeldes to me,
That any other Love,
To wish or proove;
Can never suite it selfe with my desire.

Therein I see upon good observation,
What sweete content due understanding lends:
Old or new thoughts cannot in any fashion
Rob me of that, which mine owne soule commends.
What objects then,
('mongst infinites of men)
Can I never finde
to possesse my minde,
And plant therein another new desire?
So much delight, &c.

But were it so, the blisse that I would chuse,
Is, by continuall sight to comfort me:
So rare a presence never to refuse,
Which mortall tongue or thought, what ere it be
Must still conceale,
Not able to reveale,
Such a sacred sweete,
For none other meete,
But hearts inflamed with the same desire.
So much delight, &c.

The Song being ended, the Chorus whereof was answered by them all, it passed with generall applause: and after few other dances, the night being well run on, the Queene gave ending to this first dayes Recreation. So, lights being brought, they departed to their severall Lodgings, to take their rest till the next morning.

The end of the first Day.

The Second Day.

Wherein, all the discourses are under the government of Madam Philomena: *Concerning such men or women as (in divers accidents) have beene much molested by Fortune, and yet afterward (contrary to their hope and expectation) have had a happy and successfull deliverance.*

Already

ALready had the bright Sunne renewed the day every where with his ſplendant beames, and the birds ſate merrily ſinging on the blooming branches, yeelding teſtimony thereof to the eares of all hearers; when the ſeaven Ladies and the three Gentlemen (after they were riſen) entred the Gardens, and there ſpent ſome time in walking, as alſo making of Noſegayes and Chaplets of flowers. And even as they had done the day before, ſo did they now follow the ſame courſe; for after they had dined, in a coole and pleaſing ayre, they fell to dancing, and then went to ſleepe awhile, from which being awaked, they tooke their places (according as it pleaſed the Queene to appoint) in the ſame faire Meddow about her. And ſhe being a goodly creature, and highly pleaſing to behold, having put on her Crowne of Lawrell, and giving a gracious countenance to



the whole company; commanded Madam *Neiphila* that her tale ſhould begin this dayes delight. Whereupon ſhe, without returning any excuſe or deniall began in this manner.

Martellino counterfeiting to be lame of his members, cauſed himſelfe no be ſet on the body of Saint Arriguo, *where he made ſhew of his ſudden recovery; but when his diſſimulation was diſcovered, he was well beaten, being afterward taken priſoner, and in great danger of being hanged and ſtrangled by the necke, and yet he eſcaped in the end.*

The firſt Novell.

Wherein it is ſignified, how eaſie a thing it is, for wicked men to deceive the world under the ſhadow and colour of miracles; and that ſuch trechery (oftentimes) redoundeth to the harme of the deviſer.

FAire Ladies, it hath happened many times, that hee who ſtriveth to ſcorne and floute other men, and eſpecially in occaſions deſerving to be reſpected, proveth to mocke himſelfe with the ſelfe ſame matter, yea, and to his no meane danger beſide. As you ſhall perceive by a Tale, which I intend to tell you, obeying therein the command of our Queene, and according to the ſubject by her enjoyned. In which diſcourſe you may firſt obſerve, what great miſchance happened to one of our Citizens, and yet afterward, how, (beyond all hope) he happily eſcaped.

Not long ſince, there lived in the Citie of *Trevers*, in *Almaine* or *Germaine*, named *Arrigue*, who being a poore man, ſerved as a Porter, or Burden bearer for mony, whereany man pleaſed to employ him. And yet notwithſtanding his poore and meane condition, he was generally reputed to be of good and ſanctified life. In which regard whether it were true or no, I know not) it happened that when he dyed (at leaſt as the men of *Trevers* themſelves affirmed) in the very inſtant houre of his departure, all the Bells in the great Church of *Trevers*, (not being pulled by the helpe of any man) began to ring: which being accounted for a miracle, every one ſayd; that this *Arrigue* had beene, and was a Saint. And preſently all the people of the City ran to the houſe where the dead body lay, and carryed it (as a ſanctified body) in the great Church, where people, halt, lame, and blind, or troubled with any other diſeaſes, were brought about it, even as if every one ſhould forth-with be holpen, onely by their touching the body.

It came to paſſe that in ſo great a concourſe of people, as reſorted thither from all parts; three of our Citizens went to *Trevers*, one of them being named *Stechio*, the ſecond *Martellino*, and the third *Marquiſo*, all being men of ſuch condition as frequented Princes Courts, to give them delight by

by pleasant and counterfetted qualities. None of these men having ever beene at *Trevers* before, seeing how the people crowded thorow the streets, wondered greatly thereat: but when they knew the reason why the throngs ran on heapes in such sort together, they grew as desirous to see the Shrine, as any of the rest, Having ordered all affaires at their lodging, *Marquiso* said; It is fit for us to see this Saint, but I know not how we shall attaine thereto, because (as I have heard) the place is guarded by Germaine Souldiers, and other warlike men, commanded thither by the Governor of this Citie, least any outrage should be there committed: And beside, the Church is so full of people, as we shall never compasse to get neare. *Martellino* being also as forward in desire to see it, presently replyed. All this difficultie cannot dismay me, but I will goe to the very body of the Saint it selfe. But how? quoth *Marquiso*. I will tell thee, answered *Martellino*. I purpose to goe in the disguise of an impotent lame person, supported on the one side by thy selfe, and on the other by *Stechio*, as if I were not able to walke of my selfe: And you two thus fastning me, desiring to come neare the Saint to cure me; every one will make way, and freely give you leave to goe on.

This devise was very pleasing to *Marquiso* and *Stechio*, so that (without any further delaying) they all three left their lodging, and resorting into a secret corner aside. *Martellino* so writhed and mishaped his hands, fingers, and armes, his legges, mouth, eyes, and whole countenance, that it was a dreadfull sight to looke upon him, and whosoever beheld him, would verily have imagined, that he was utterly lame of his limbes, and greatly deformed in his body. *Marquiso* ond *Stechio*, seeing all sorted so well as they could wish, tooke and led him towards the Church, making very pittious moane, and humbly desiring (for Gods sake) of every one that they met, to grant them free passage, whereto they charitably condescended.

Thus leading him on, crying; Beware there before, and give way for Gods sake, they arrived at the body of Saint *Arrigus*, that (by his helpe) hee might be healed. And while all eyes were dilligently observing, what miracle would be wrought on *Martellino*; he having sitten a small space upon the Saints body and being sufficiently skilfull in counterfeiting, began first to extend forth the one of his fingers next his hand, then his arme, and so (by degrees) the rest of his body. Which when the people saw, they made such a wonderfull great noyse in prayse and commendation of Saint *Arrigus*, even as if it had thundred in the Church.

Now it chanced by ill fortune, that there stood a *Florentine* neare to the body, who knew *Martellino* very perfectly,

ly, but appearing so monstrously mishapen, when he was brought into the Church, he could take no knowledge of him. But when he saw him stand up and walke, he knew him then to be a man indeede; whereupon he said: How commeth it to passe, that this fellow should be so miraculously cured, that never truly was any way impotent? Certaine men of the City hearing these words, entred into further questioning, demanding, how he knew that the man had no such imperfection? Well enough (answered the Florentine) I knew him to be as direct in his limbes and body, as you; I, or any of us all are: but indeede, he knowes better how to dissemble counterfeit trickes, than any man else that ever I saw in all the dayes of my life.

When they heard this, they discoursed no further with the Florentine, but pressed on mainely to the place where *Martellino* stood, crying out aloud, Lay hold on this Traytor, a mocker of God, and his Saints, that had no lameneſſe in his limbes; but to make a mocke of our Saint and us, came hither in false and counterfeit manner. So laying hands upon him, they threw him against the ground, and plucking him by the haire of his head, and tearing the garments from his backe, spurning him with their feete, and beating him with their fists, that many were much ashamed to see it.

Poore *Martellino* was in pittifull case, crying out for mercy, but no man would heare him; for, the more he cryed, the more still they did beate him, as meaning to leave no life in him: which *Stechio* and *Marquiso* seeing, considered with themselves, that they were likewise in a desperate case; and therefore, fearing to be as much misused, they cryed out among the rest, Kill the counterfeiting Knave, lay on loade, and spare him not; nevertheleſſe, they took care how to get him out of the peoples hands, as doubting least they would kill him indeed, by their extreame violences

Suddenly *Marquiso* bethought him how to doe it, and proceeded thus. All the Sergeants for Justice standing at the Church doore, hee ran with all possible speede hee could to the *Potestates* Lievetenant, and said unto him: Good my Lord Justice, helpe me in an hard case; yonder is a villaine that hath cut my purse, I desire that he may bee brought before you, that I may have my money againe. He hearing this, sent for a dozen of the Sergeants, who went to apprehend unhappy *Martellino*, and recover him from the peoples furie, leading him on with them to the Palace, no meane crowds thronging after him, when they heard that he was accused to be a Cutpurse. Now durst they meddle no more with *Martellino*, but assisted the Officers; some of them

them charging him in like manner that he had cut their purſes alſo.

Vpon theſe clamours and complaints, the *Proteſtates* Lievetenant (being a man of rude qualitie) tooke him ſuddenly aſide, and examined him of the crimes wherewith he was charged. But *Martellino*, as making no account of theſe accuſations, laughed and returned ſcoffing anſwers. Whereat the Iudge waxing much diſpleaſed, delivered him over to the Strappado, and ſtood by himſelfe, to have him confeſſe the crimes impoſed on him, and then to hang him afterward. Being let downe to the ground, the Iudge ſtill demanded of him, whether the accuſations againſt him were true, or no? Affirming, that it nothing availed him to deny it: whereupon he thus ſpake to the Iudge. My Lord, I am here ready before you, to confeſſe the truth; but I pray you demand of all them that accuſe mee, when and where I did cut their purſes, and then I will tell you that, which (as yet) I have not done, otherwiſe I purpoſe to make you no more anſwer.

Well (quoth the Iudge) thou requireſt but reaſon; and calling divers of the accuſers, one of them ſaid; that he loſt his purſe eight dayes before, another ſaid ſix, another foure, and ſome ſaid the very ſame day. Which *Martellino* hearing, replyed. My Lord, they all lie in their throats, as I will plainely prove before you. I would God I had never ſet foote within this City, as it is not many houres ſince my firſt entrance, and preſently after my arrivall, I went (in evill houre I may ſay for mee) to ſee the Saints body, where I was thus beaten as you may behold. That all this is true which I ſay unto you, the Seigneurie Officer that keepes your booke of preſentations will teſtifie for me, as alſo the Hoſt where I am lodged. Wherefore good my Lord, if you finde all no otherwiſe, then I have ſaid, I humbly intreate you, that upon theſe bad mens reports, and falſe informations, I may not be thus tormented, and put in perill of my life.

While matters proceeded in this manner, *Marquiſe*, and *Stechio*, underſtanding how roughly the *Proteſtates* Lievetenant dealt with *Martellino*, and that he had already given him the Strappado; were in heavie perplexitie, ſaying to themſelves; wee have carried this buſineſſe very badly, redeeming him out of the Fryingpan, and flinging him into the fire. Whereupon, trudging about from place to place, and meeting at length with their Hoſt, they told him truly how all had happened, whereat he could not refraine from laughing. Afterward, he went with them to one Maſter *Alexander Agolante*, who dwelt in *Trevers*, and was in great credit with the Cities chiefe Magiſtrate, to whom he related

ted the whole Discourse; all three earnestly entreating him, to commisserate the case of poore *Martellino*.

Master *Alexander*, after he had laughed heartily at this hot peece of service, went with him to the Lord of *Trevers*; prevayling so well with him, that he sent to have *Martillino* brought before him. The messengers that were for him, found him standing in his shirt before the Iudge, very shrewdly shaken with the Strappado, trembling and quaking pittifully. For the Iudge would not heare any thing in his excuse; hating him (perhaps) because he was a Florentine: flatly determined to have him hanged by the neck, and would not deliver him to the Lord, untill in meere despight he was compeld to doe it.

The Lord of *Trevers*, when *Martellino* came before him, and had acquainted him truly with every particular: Master *Alexander* requested, that hee might bee dispatched thence for Florence, because he thought the halter to bee about his necke, and that there was no other helpe but hanging. The Lord smiling (a long while) at the accident, and causing *Martellino* to be handsomely apparrelled, delivering them also his Passe, they escaped out of further danger, and tarried no where, till they came unto *Florence*.

Rinaldo de Este, *after he was robbed by Theeves, arrived at Castleau Guillaume, where he was friendly lodged by a faire Widdow, and recompenced likewise for all his losses; returne after safe and well home unto his owne house.*

The second Novell.

Whereby we may learne, that such things as sometimes seeme hurtfull to us, may turne to our benefit and commodity.

MVch meriment was among the Ladies, hearing this Tale of *Martellinos* misfortune, so familiarly reported by Madam *Neiphila* and of the men, it was best respected by *Philostratus*, who sitting neerest unto *Neiphila*, the Queen commanded his Tale to be the next, when presently he began to speake thus.

Gracious Ladies, I am to speake of universall occasions, mingled with some misfortunes in part, and partly with matters leaning to love, as many times may happen to such people, that trace the dangerous pathes of amorous desires, or have not learned perfectly, to say Saint *Iulians Pater Noster*, having good beds of their owne, yet casually meete with worser Lodging.

In the time of *Azze*, Marqueese of *Ferrara*, there was a Merchant named *Rinaldo de Este*, who being one day at *Bologna*, about some especiall businesse of his owne; his occasions there ended, and riding from thence towards *Verona*, he fell in company with other horsemen, seeming to bee

Mer-

Merchants like himſelfe, but indeede were Theeves, men of moſt bad life and converſation; yet he having no ſuch miſtruſt of them, rode on, conferring with them very familiarly. They perceiving him to be a Merchant, and likely to have ſome ſtore of money about him, concluded betweene themſelves to rob him, ſo ſoone as they found apt place and opportunitie. But becauſe hee ſhould conceive no ſuch ſuſpition, they rode on like modeſt men, talking honeſtly and friendly with him, of good parts and diſpoſition appearing in him, offering him all humble and gracious ſervice, accounting themſelves happy by his company, as he returned the ſame courteſie to them, becauſe he was alone, and but one ſervant with him.

Falling from one diſcourſe to another, they began to talke of ſuch prayers, as men (in journey) uſe to ſalute God with all: and one of the Theeves (they being three in number) ſpake thus to *Rinaldo*. Sir, let it be no offence to you that I deſire to know, what prayer you moſt uſe when thus you travell on the way? Whereto *Rinaldo* replyed in this manner. To tell you true Sir, I am a man groſſe enough in ſuch Divine matters, as medling more with Merchandize, then I doe with Bookes. Nevertheleſſe, at all times when I am thus in journey, in the morning before I depart my Chamber, I ſay a *Pater noſter*, and an *Ave Maria* for the ſoules of the father and mother of Saint *Julian*; and after that, I pray God and Saint *Julian* to ſend mee a good lodging at night. And let me tell you Sir, that very oftentimes heretofore, I have met with many great dangers upon the way, from all which I ſtill eſcaped, and evermore (when night drew on) I came to an exceeding good lodging. Which makes me firmely beleeve than Saint *Julian* (in honour of whom I ſpeake it) hath begged of God ſuch great grace for me; and me thinkes, that if any day I ſhould faile of this prayer in the morning: I cannot travell ſecurely, nor come to a good lodging. No doubt then Sir (quoth the other) but you have ſaid that prayer this morning? I would be ſorry elſe, ſaid *Rinaldo*, ſuch an eſpeciall matter is not to be neglected.

He and the reſt, who had already determined how to handle him before they parted, ſaid within themſelves: Looke thou haſt ſayd thy prayer, for when we have thy money, Saint *Julian* and thou ſhift for thy lodging. Afterward, the ſame man thus againe conferd with him. As you Sir, ſo I have ridden many journeyes, and yet I never uſed any ſuch prayer, although I have heard it very much commended, and my lodging hath proved never the worſer. Perhaps this very night will therein reſolve us both, whether of us two ſhall be the beſt lodged, you that have ſayd

the

the Prayer, or I that never used it at all. But I must not deny, that in stead thereof, I have made use of some verses as *Dirupista*, or the *Intemerata*, or *De profundis*, which are (as my Grandmother hath often told me) of very great vertue and efficacie.

Continuing thus in talke of divers things, winning way and beguiling the time, still waiting when their purpose should sort to effect: it fortuned, that the Theeves seeing they were come neare to a Towne, called *Casteau Guillaume*, by the foord of a River, the houre somewhat late, the place solitary, and thickely shaded with Trees, they made their assault; and having robd him, left him there on foote, stript into his shirt, saying to him. Goe now and see, whether thy Saint *Iulian* will allow thee this night a good lodging, or no, for our owne we are sufficiently provided; so passing the River away they rode. *Rinaldoes* servant, seeing his Master so sharpe assayled, like a wicked villaine, would not assist him in any sort but giving his horse the spurres, never left gallopping, untill hee came to *Casteau Guillaume*, where he ented upon the point of night, providing himselfe of a lodging, but not caring what became of his Master.

Rinaldo remaining there in his shirt, bare-foote and bare-legged, the weather extreamely cold, and snowing incessantly, and not knowing what to doe, darke night drawing on, and looking round about him for some place where to abide that night, to the end he might not die with cold; he found no helpe at all there for him, in regard that (no long while before) the late warre had burnt and wasted all, and not so much as the least Cottage left. Compelled by the colds violence, his teeth quaking and all his body trembling, he trotted on towards *Casteau Guillaume* not knowing whether his man was gone thither or no, or to what place else: but perswaded himselfe, that if he could get entrance, there was no feare of finding succour. But before he came within halfe a mile of the towne, the night grew extreamely darke, and arriving there so late, he found the gates fast lockt, and the Bridges drawne up, so that no entrance might be admitted.

Grieving greatly hereat, and being much discomforted, rufully went spying about the walls, for some place wherein to shrowd himselfe, at least, to keepe the snow from falling upon him. By good hap, he espied an house upon the wall of the Towne, which had a terrace jutting out as a Penthouse, under which he purposed to stand all the night, and then to get him gone in the morning. At length, hee found a doore in the wall, but very fast shut, and some small straw lying by it, which he gathered together, and

sitting

sitting downe thereon very pensively; made many sad complaints to Saint *Iulian*, saying: This was not according to the trust he reposed in her. But Saint *Iulian*, taking compassion upon him, without any over-long tarrying; provided him of a good lodging, as you shall heare how.

In this towne of *Casteau Guillaume*, lived a young Lady, who was a widdow, so beautifull and comely of her person, as seldome seene a more lovely creature. The Marquesse *Alfo* most dearely affected her, and (as his choisest Iewell of delight) gave her that house to live in, under the terrace whereof poore *Rinaldo* made his shelter. It chanced the day before, that the Marquesse was come thither, according to his frequent custome, to weare away that night in her company, she having secretly prepared a Bath for him, and a costly supper beside. All things being ready, and nothing wanting but the Marquesse his presence: suddenly a Post brought him such Letters, which commanded him instantly to take horsebacke, and word he sent to the Lady, to spare him for that night, because urgent occasions c lled him thence, and he rode away immediatly.

Much discontented was the Lady at this unexpected accident, and not knowing how to spend the time, resolved to use the Bath which shee had made for the Marquesse, and (after supper) betake her selfe to rest, and so she entred into the Bath. Close to the doore where poore *Rinaldo* sate, stood the Bath, by which meanes, she being therein, heard all his quivering moanes, and complaints, seemiug to bee such, as the Swanne singing before her death: whereupon, she called her Chambermaide, saying to her. Goe up above and looke over the terrace on the wall downe to this doore, and see who is there, and what he doth. The Chambermaide went up aloft, and by a little glimmering in the aire, she saw a man sitting in his shirt, bare on feet and legges, trembling in manner before rehearsed. She demanding of whence, and what he was; *Rinaldoes* teeth so trembled in his head, as very hardly could he forme any words, but (so well as he could) told her what he was, and how he came thither: most pittifully intreating her, that if shee could afford him any helpe, not to suffer him to starve there to death with cold.

The Chamber-maide, being much moved to compassion, returned to her Lady and told her all, shee likewise pitying his distresse, and remembring she had the key of that doore, whereby the Marquesse both entred and returned, when he entended not to be seene of any, sayd to her maid. Goe and open the doore softly for him; wee have a good supper, and none to helpe to eate it, and if he be a man likely, we can allow him one nights lodging too. The

Chamber-

Chambermaid, commending her Lady for this charitable kindneſſe, opened the doore, and ſeeing he appeared as halfe frozen, ſhe ſaid unto him, Make haſte good man, get thee into this Bath, which yet is good and warme, for my Lady her ſelfe came but newly out of it. Whereto very gladly hee condeſcended, as not tarrying to bee bidden twiſe; finding himſelfe ſo ſingularly comforted with the heate thereof, even as if he had beene reſtored from death to life. Then the Lady ſent him garments, which lately were her deceaſed husbands, and fitted him ſo aptly in all reſpects, as if purpoſely they had beene made for him.

Attending in further expectation, to know what elſe the Lady would command him; he began to remember God and Saint *Iulian*, heartily thanking her, for delivering him from ſo bad a night as was threatned towards him, and bringing him to ſo good entertainement. After all this, the Lady cauſing a faire fire to be made in the neareſt chamber beneath, went and ſate by it her ſelfe, demanding how the honeſt man fared. Madam, anſwered the Chambermaide, now that he is in your deceaſed Lords garments, he appeareth to be a very goodly Gentleman, and queſtionleſſe) is of reſpective birth and breeding, well deſerving this gracious favour which you have afforded him. Goe then (quoth the Lady) and conduct him hither, to ſit by this fire, and ſup here with me, for I feare he hath had but a ſorry ſupper. When *Rinaldo* was entred into the Chamber, and beheld her to be ſuch a beautifull Lady, accounting his fortune to exceede all compaſſion, he did her moſt humble reverence, expreſſing ſo much thankefulneſſe, as poſſibly he could, for this her extraordinary grace and favour.

The Lady fixing a ſtedfeſt eye upon him, well liking his gentle language and behaviour, perceiving alſo, how fitly her deceaſed husband apparell was formed to his perſon, and reſembling him in all familiar reſpects, he appeared (in her judgement) farre beyond the Chambermaides commendations of him; ſo praying him to ſit downe by her before the fire, ſhe queſtioned with him, concerning this unhappy nights accident befalne him, wherein he fully reſolved her, & ſhe was the more perſwaded, by reaſon of his ſervants comming into the Towne before night, aſſuring him that he ſhould be found for him early in the morning.

Supper being ſerved into the Table, and he ſeated according as the Lady commanded; ſhe began to obſerve him very conſiderately; for he was a goodly man, compleate in all perfection of perſon, a delicate pleaſing countenance, a quicke alluring eye, fixed and conſtant, not wantonly gadding, in the joviall youthfullneſſe of his time, and

trueſt

trueſt temper for amorous apprehenſion; all theſe were as battering Engines againſt a Bulwarke of no ſtrong reſiſtance, and wrought ſtrangely upon her flexible affections. And though ſhe fed heartily, as occaſion conſtrained, yet her thoughts had entertained a new kinde of diet, digeſted onely by the eye; yet ſo cunningly concealed, that no motive to immodeſty could be diſcerned. Her mercy thus extended to him in miſery, drew on by Table diſcourſe) his birth, education, Parents, friends, and allies; his wealthy poſſeſſions by Merchandize, and a ſound ſtabilitie in his eſtate, but above all (and beſt of all) the ſingle and ſole condition of a batchelor; an apt and eaſie ſteele to ſtrike fire, eſpecially upon ſuch quick taking tinder, and in a time favoured by Fortune,

No imbarment remained, but remembrance of the Marqueſſe, and that being ſummoned to her more adviſed conſideration, her youth and beautie ſtood up as conſcious accuſers, for blemiſhing her honour and faire repute, with lewde and luxurious life farre unfit for a Lady of her degree, and well worthy of generall condemnation. What ſhould I further ſay? Vpon a ſhort conference with her Chamber-maide, repentance for ſinne paſt, and ſolemne promiſe of a conſtant converſion, thus ſhee delivered her minde to *Rinaldo*.

Sir, as you have related your fortunes to me, by this your caſuall hapning hither, if you can like the motion ſo well as ſhe that makes it; my deceaſed Lord and Husband living ſo perfectly in your perſon; this houſe and all mine is yours; and of a widdow, I will become your wife, except (unmanly) you deny me. *Rinaldo* hearing theſe words, and proceeding from a Lady of ſuch abſolute perfections, preſuming upon ſo proud an offer, and condemning himſelfe of folly if he ſhould refuſe it, thus replyed. Madam, conſidering that I ſtand bound for ever hereafter, to confeſſe that you are the gracious preſerver of my life, and I no way able to returne requitall; if you pleaſe to ſhadow mine inſufficiencie and to accept me and my faireſt fortunes to do you ſervice: let me die before a thought of deniall, any way to yeeld you the leaſt diſcontentment.

Here wanted but a Prieſt to joynt their hands, as mutuall affection already had done their hearts, which being ſealed with infinite kiſſes, the Chambermaide called up Frier *Roger* her Confeſſor, and wedding and bedding were both affected before the bright morning. In briefe, the Marqueſſe having heard of the marriage, did not miſlike it, but confirmed it by great and honorable gifts. And having ſent for his diſhoneſt Servant, he diſpatched him (after ſound reprehenſion) to *Ferrara*, with Letters to *Rinaldos* Father and Friends,

Friends, and all the accidents that had befalne him. More-over, the very same morning, the three Theeves that had robbed, and so ill intreated *Rinaldo*, for another fact by them the same night committed, were taken, and brought to the Towne of *Chasteau Guillaume*, where they were hanged for their offences, and *Rinaldo* with his wife rode to *Ferrara*.

Three young Gentlemen, being Brethren, and having spent all their Lands and possessions vainely, became poore. A Nephew of their (falling almost into as desperate a condition) became acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to be the King of Englands Daughter, and made him her Husband in marriage, recompencing all his Vncles losses, and seating them again in good estate.

The third Novell.

Wherein is declared the dangers of prodigalitie, and the manifold mutabilities of Fortune.

THe fortunes of *Rinaldo de Este*, being heard by the Ladies and Gentlemen, they admired his happinesse, and commended his devotion to Saint *Iulian*, who (in such extreame necessitie) sent him so good succour. Nor was the Lady to be blamed, for leaving base libertie, and converting to the chaste embraces of the marriage bed, the dignitie of womens honour, and eternall disgrace living otherwise. While thus they discanted on the happy night betweene her and *Rinaldo*, Madam *Pampinea* sitting next to *Philostratus*, considering, that her Discourse must follow in order, and thinking on what she was to say; the Queene had no sooner sent out her command, but she being no lesse faire than forward, began in this manner.

Ladies of great respect, the more we conferre on the accidents of Fortune, so much the more remaineth to consider on her mutabilities, wherein there is no neede of wonder, if discretly we observe that all such things as wee fondly tearme to be our owne, are in her power, and so (consequently) change from one to another, without any stay or arrest (according to her concealed judgement) or setled order (at least) that can be knowne to us. Now, although these things appeare thus daily to us, even apparently in all occasions, and as hath beene discerned by some of our precedent Discourses; yet notwithstanding, seeing it pleaseth the Queene that our arguments should aime at these ends, I will adde to the former Tales another of my owne, perhaps not unprofitable for the hearers, nor unpleasing in observation.

Sometime heretofore, there dwelt in our Citie, a Knight named Signior *Theobaldo*, who (according as some doe report) issued from the Family of *Lamberti*, but others derive him

him of the *Agolanti*; guiding (perhaps) their opinion herein, more from the traine of Children, belonging to the ſaid *Theobaldo* (evermore equall to that of *Agolanti*) than any other matter elſe. But ſetting aſide from which of theſe two houſes he came, I ſay, that in his time hee was a very wealthy Knight, and had three ſonnes; the firſt being named *Lamberto*, the ſecond *Theobalao*, and the third *Agolanti*, all goodly and gracefull youthes: howbeit, the eldeſt had not compleated eighteene yeares, when Signior *Theobaldo* the Father deceaſed, who left them all his goods and inheritances. And they, ſeeing themſelves rich in ready moneyes and revenewes, without any other governement than their own voluntary diſpoſition, kept no reſtraint upon their expences, but maintained many ſervants, and ſtore of unvalnable Horſes, beſides Hawkes and Hounds, with open houſe for all commers; and not onely all delights elſe fit for Gentlemen, but what vanities beſide beſt agreed with their wanton and youthfull appetites.

Not long had they runne on this race, but the Treaſures left them by their Father, began to diminiſh, and their Revenewes ſufficed not, to ſupport ſuch laviſh expences, as they had begun: but they fell to engaging and pawning their inheritances, ſelling one to day, another to morrow, ſo that they ſaw themſelves quickly come to nothing, and then poverty opened their eyes, which prodigalitie had before cloſed up. Hereupon, *Lamberto* (on a day) calling his brethren to him, ſhewed them what the honours of their Father had beene, to what height his wealth amounted, and now to what ebbe of poverty it was falne, onely thorow their inordinate expences. Wherefore hee counſelled them, (as beſt he could) before further miſery inſulted over them, to make ſale of the ſmall remainder that was left, and then to betake themſelves unto ſome other abiding, where fairer Fortune might chance to ſhine upon them.

This advice prevailed with them: and ſo, without taking leave of any body, or other ſolemnitie than cloſeſt ſecrecie, they departed from *Florence*, not tarrying in any place untill they were arrived in *England*. Comming to the City of *London*, and taking there a ſmall houſe upon yearely rent, living on ſo little charge as poſſible might be, they began to lend out money at uſ: wherein Fortune was ſo favourable to them, that (in few yeares) they had gathered a great ſumme of money: by meanes whereof it came to paſſe, that one while one of them, and afterward another returned backe again to *Florence*: where, with thoſe ſummes a great part of their inheritances were

redeemed, and many other more brought beſide. Linkin themſelves in marriage, and yet continuing their uſance in England, they ſent a Newphew of theirs thither, name *Aleſſandro*, a young man, and of faire demeanour, maintaine their ſtocke in employment: while they thre remained ſtill in *Florence*, and growing forgetfull of thei former miſery, fell againe into as unreaſonable expence as ever, never reſpecting their houſhold charges, becauſ they had good credit among the Merchants, and the mo nies ſtill ſent from *Aleſſandro*, ſupporting their expence divers yeares.

The dealings of *Aleſſandro* in England grew very great for he lent out much money to many Gentlemen, Lords and Barons of the Land, upon engagement of their Ma nors, Caſtles, and other revenewes: from whence he de rived immeaſurable benefit. While the three Brethre held on in their laviſh expences, borrowing money when they wanted untill their ſupplies came from Eng land, whereon (indeede) was their onely dependance: fortuned, that (contrary to the opinion of all men) war happened betweene the King of England, and one of hi ſonnes, which occaſioned much trouble in the Countre by taking part on either ſide, ſome with the ſonne, a other with the Father. In regard whereof, thoſe Caſtl and places, pawned to *Aleſſandro*, were ſuddenly ſeize from him, nothing then remaining, that turned him a profit. But living in hope day by day, that peace wou be concluded betweene the Father and the Sonne, he ne ver doubted, but all things then ſhould be reſtored to hi both the principall and intereſt, and therefore he wou not depart out of the Countrey.

The three Brethren at *Florence*, bounding within no l mits their diſordered ſpending, borrowed daily more a more. And after ſome few yeares, the Creditors ſeeing effect of their hopes to come from them, all credit be loſt with them, and no repayment of promiſed dues, th were impriſoned, their Lands and all they had, not ſuf fing to pay the moitie of Debts, but their bodies remain in priſon for the reſt, their wives and young children b ing ſent thence, ſome to one Village, ſome to another, that nothing now was to be expected, but poverty a miſery of life for ever.

As for honeſt *Aleſſandro*, who had awaited long ti for peace in England, perceiving there was no likelihoo of it; and conſidering alſo, that (beſide his tarrying the in vaine to recover his dues) he was in danger of his li without any further deferring, he ſet away for *Italy*. came to paſſe, that as he iſſued forth of *Bruges*, he ſaw

you

young Abbot alſo journeying thence, being clothed in white, accompanied with divers Monkes, and a great traine before conducting the needfull carriage. Two ancient Knights, kinſmen to the King, followed after; with whom *Aleſſandro* acquainted himſelfe, as having formerly knowne them, and was kindly accepted into their company. *Aleſſandro* riding along with them courteouſly requeſted to know, what thoſe Monkes were that rode before, and ſuch a traine attending on them? Whereto one of the Knights thus anſwered.

He that rideth before is a young gentleman, and our Kinſman, who is newly elected Abbot of one of the beſt Abbyes in England, and becauſe he is more young in yeares, than the degrees of ſuch a dignitie doe allow, we travell with him to Rome, to intreat our Holy Father, that his youth may be diſpenſed withall, and he confirmed in the ſaid dignitie; but he is not to ſpeake a word to any perſon. On rode this new Abbot, ſometimes before his Traine, and otherwhiles after, as we ſee great Lords uſe to doe, when they ride upon the high wayes.

It chanced on a day, that *Aleſſandro* rode ſomewhat neere to the Abbot, who ſtedfaſtly beholding him, perceived that he was a very comely young man, ſo affable, lovely, and gracious, that even in his firſt encounter, he had never ſeene any man before that better pleaſed him. Calling him a little cloſer, he began to conferre familiarly with him, demanding what he was, whence hee came, and whither he travelled. *Aleſſandro* imparted freely to him all his affaires, in every thing ſatisfying his demands, and offering (although his power was ſmall) to doe him all the ſervice he could.

When the Abbot had heard his gentle anſwers, ſo wiſely and diſcretly delivered, conſidering alſo (more particularly) his commendable carriage, hee tooke him to be (at the leaſt) a well-borne Gentleman, and farre differing from his owne loggerheaded traine Wherefore taking compaſſion on his great misfortunes, hee comforted him very kindly, willing him to be of good cheere, and to live alwayes in good hope. For if he were vertuous and honeſt, he ſhould ſurely attaine to the ſeate from whence Fortune had throwne him, or rather be exalted much higher. Intreating him alſo that ſeeing he journied towards *Tuſcany*, as he himſelfe did the like, to continue ſtill (if he pleaſed) in his company. *Aleſſandro* moſt humbly thanked him for ſuch gracious comfort; proteſting, that he would be alwayes ready to doe whatſoever hee commanded.

The Abbot riding on, with newer crotchets in his

braine than he had before the sight of *Alessandro*, it fortuned, that after divers dayes of travell, they came to a small countrey Village, which afforded little store of Lodging, and yet the Abbot would needs lye there. *Alessandro*, being well acquainted with the Host of the house, willing him to provide for the Abbot and his people, and then to lodge him where he thought it meetest. Now before the Abbots comming thither, the Harbenger that marshalled all such matters, had provided for his Traine in the Village, some in one place, and others elsewhere, in the best manner that the Towne could yeeld. But when the Abbot had supt, a great part of the night being spent, and every one elseat his rest; *Alessandro* demanded of the Host what provision he had made for him, and how he should be lodged that night?

In good sadnesse Sir (quoth the Host) you see that my house is full of Guests, so that I and my people must glad sleepe on the tables, and benches: Nevertheless, neere adjoyning to my Lord Abbots Chamber, there are certaine Corne-lofts, whither I can closely bring you, and make shift therewith a slender Pallet-bed, it may serve for one night, in stead of a better. But mine Hoste (quoth *Alessandro*) how can I passe thorow my Lords Chamber, which is so little that it would not allow lodging for any of his Monkes? If I had remembred so much (sayd the Host) before the Curtaines were drawne, I could have lodged his Monkes in the Cornelofts, and then both you and I might have slept where now they doe. But feare you not, my Lords Curtaines are close drawne, he sleepeth (no doubt) soundly, and I can conveigh you thither quietly enough, without the least disturbance to him, and a Pallet-bed shall be fitted there for you. *Alessandro* perceiving that all this might easily be done, and no dis-ease offered the Abbot, accepted it willingly, and went thither without any noyse at all.

My Lord Abbot, whose thoughts were so busied about amorous desires, that no sleepe at all could enter his eyes, heard all this talke betweene the Host and *Alessandro*, and also where he was appointed to lodge, he said thus with himselfe. Seeing Fortune hath fitted me with a propitious time, to compasse the happinesse of my hearts desire; I know no reason why I should refuse it. Perhaps I shall never have the like offer againe, or ever be enabled with such an opportunitie. So, being full intended to prosecute his intention, and perswading himselfe also, that the silence of the night had bestowed sleepe on all the rest, with a low and slender voyce he called *Alessandro*, assuring him to come and lye downe by him, which (after some

few faint excuſes) he did, and putting off his cloathes, lay downe by the Abbot, being not a little proud of ſo gracious a favour.

The Abbot, laying his arme over the others body, began to imbrace and hugge him; even as amorous friends (provoked by earneſt affection) uſe to doe. Whereat *Aleſſandro* very much marvelling, and being an *Italian* himſelfe, fearing leaſt this folly in the Abbot, would convert to foule and diſhoneſt action, ſhrunke modeſtly from him. Which the Abbot perceiving, and doubting leſt *Aleſſandro* would depart and leave him, pleaſantly ſmiling, and with baſhfull behaviour baring his ſtomacke, hee tooke *Aleſſandroes* hand, and laying it thereon, ſaid; *Aleſſandro*, let all bad thoughts of beaſtiall abuſe be farre off from thee, and feele here, to reſolve thee from all ſuch feare. *Aleſſandro* feeling the Abbots breſt, found there two pretty little mountaines, round, plumpe, and ſmooth, appearing as if they had beene of poliſhed Ivory; whereby he perceived, that the Abbot was a woman: which, ſetting an edge on his youthfull deſires, made him fall to embracing, and immediately he offered to kiſſe her; but ſhe ſomewhat rudely repulſing him, as offended, ſaid,

Aleſſandro, forbeare ſuch boldneſſe, upon thy lives peril, and before thou further preſume to touch me, underſtand what I ſhall tell thee. I am (as thou perceiveſt) no man, but a woman; and departing a Virgin from my Fathers houſe am travelling towards the Popes holineſſe, to the end that he ſhould beſtow me in marriage. But the other day, when firſt I beheld thee, whether it proceeded from thy happineſſe in fortune, or the fatall houre of my owne felicity for ever, I know not; I conceived ſuch an effectuall kinde of liking towards thee, as never did a woman love a man more truely than I doe thee, having ſworne within my ſoule to make thee my Husband before any other; and if thou wilt not accept me as thy wife, ſet a locke upon thy lips concerning what thou haſt heard, and depart to thine owne bed againe.

No doubt, but that this was ſtrange newes to *Aleſſandro*, and ſeemed meerely as a miracle to him. What ſhee was, he knew not, but in regard of her traine and company, he reputed her to be both noble and rich, as alſo ſhe was wonderfull faire and beautifull. His owne fortunes ſtood out of future expectation by his kinſmens overthrow, and his great loſſes in England; wherefore, upon an opportunity ſo fairely offered, he held it no wiſedome to returne refuſall, but accepted her gracious motion, and referred all to her diſpoſing. She ariſing out of her bed, called him to a little bed ſtanding by, where hung a faire Cruci-

fixe upon the wall; before which, and calling him to witneſſe, that ſuffered ſuch bitter and cruell torments on his Croſſe, putting a ring on his finger, there ſhe faithfully eſpouſed him, refuſing all the world to be only his; which being on either ſide confirmed, by an holy Vow, and chaſte kiſſes; ſhe commanded him backe to his Chamber, and ſhe returned to her bed againe, ſufficiently ſatisfied with her loves acceptation, and ſo they journied on till they came to Rome.

When they had reſted themſelves there ſome few dayes, the ſuppoſed Abbot, with the two Knights, and none elſe to accompany but *Aleſſandro*, went before the Pope, and having done him ſuch reverence as beſeemed, the Abbot began to ſpeake in this manner.

Holy Father (as you know much better than any other) every one that deſireth to live well and vertuouſly, ought to ſhunne (ſo farre as in him lieth) all occaſions that may induce to the contrary. To the end therefore that I (who deſire nothing more) than to live within the compaſſe of a vertuous converſation, may perfect my hopes in this behalfe: I have fled from my Fathers Court, and am come hither in this habite as you ſee, to crave therein your holy and fatherly furtherence. I am daughter to the King of England, and have ſufficiently furniſhed my ſelfe with ſome of his Treaſures, that your Holineſſe may beſtow me in marriage; becauſe my unkinde Father, never regarding my youth and beauty (inferiour to few in my native Countrey) would marry me to the King of *North-Wals*, an aged impotent, and ſickly man. Yet let me tell your ſanctity, that his weakeneſſe hath not ſo much occaſioned my flight as feare of mine owne youth and frailty; when being married to him, in ſtead of loyall and unſtained life, lewd and diſhoneſt deſires might make me to wander, by breaking the divine Lawes of wedlocke, and abuſing the royall blood of my Father.

As I travelled hither with this vertuous intention, our Lord, who onely knoweth perfectly, what is beſt fitting for all his creatures; preſented mine eyes, (no doubt in his meere mercy and goodneſſe) with a man meete to be my husband, which (pointing to *Aleſſandro*) is this young Gentleman ſtanding by me, whoſe honeſt, vertuous, and civill demeanour, deſerveth a Lady of farre greater worth, although (perhaps) Nobility in blood be denied him, and may make him ſeeme not ſo excellent, as one derived from Royall deſcent. Holy and religious vowes have paſſed betweene us both, and the Ring on his finger is the firme pledge of my faith and conſtancie, never to ac-

cept

cept any other man in marriage, but him only, although my Father or any elſe doe diſlike it. Wherefore (holy Father) the principall cauſe of my comming hither, being already effectually concluded on, I deſire to compleat the reſt of my Pilgrimage, by viſiting the ſanctified places in this City, whereof there are great plenty: And alſo, that ſacred marriage, being contracted in the preſence of God onely, betweene *Aleſſandro* and my ſelfe, may by you be publikely confirmed, and in an open congregation. For ſeeing God hath ſo appointed it, and our ſoules have ſo ſolemnely vowed it, that no diſaſter whatſoever can altar it: you being Gods Vicar here on earth, I hope will not gaineſay, but confirme it with your fatherly benediction, that we may live in Gods feare and dye in his favour.

Perſwade your ſelves (faire Ladies) that *Aleſſandro* was in no meane admiration, when he heard, that his wife was daughter to the King of England, unſpeakeable joy (queſtionleſſe) wholly overcame him: but the two Knights were not a little troubled and offended, at ſuch a ſtrange and unexpected accident; yea, ſo violent were their paſſions, that had they bin any where elſe, than in the Popes preſence, *Aleſſandro* had felt their fury, and (perhaps) the Princeſſe her ſelfe too. On the other outſide, the Pope was much amazed at the habit ſhe went diſguiſed in, and likewiſe at the election of her husband; but perceiving there was no reſiſtance to be made againſt it, he yeelded the more willingly to ſatisfie her deſire. And therefore having firſt comforted the two Knights, and made peace betweene them, the Princeſſe, and *Aleſſandro*, hee gave order for the reſt that was to be done.

When the appointed day for the ſolemnitie was come, he cauſed the Princeſſe (cloathed in moſt rich and royall garments) to appeare before all the Cardinalls and many other great perſons then in preſence, who were come to this worthy feaſt, which he had cauſed purpoſely to be prepared, where ſhe ſeemed ſo faire and goodly a Lady, that every eye was highly delighted to behold her, commending her with no meane admiration. In like manner was *Aleſſandro* greatly honoured by the two Knights, being moſt ſumptuous in appearance, and not like a man that had lent money to uſury, but rather of very royall qualitie, the Pope himſelfe celebrating the marriage betweene them, which being finiſhed, with the moſt magnificent pompe that could be deviſed, he gave them his benediction, and licenced their departure thence

Aleſſandro, his Princeſſe and her traine thus leaving *Rome*, they would needs viſite *Florence*, where the newes of this accident was (long before) noyſed, and they received by

the Citizens in royall manner. There did she deliver the three brethren out of prison, having first payed all their debts, and re-seated them againe (with their wives) in their former inheritances and possessions. Afterward departing from *Florence*, and *Agolanto*, one of the Vncles travailing with them to *Paris*; they were there also most honourably entertained by the King of *France*. From whence the two Knights went before for *England*, and prevailed so successefully with the King, that he received his daughter into grace and favour, as also his Sonne in law her husband, to whom he gave the order of Knighthood, and (for his greater dignitie) created him Earle of *Cornewall*.

And such was the noble spirit of *Alessandro*, that hee pacified the troubles betweene the King and his sonne, whereon ensued great comfort to the Kingdome, winning the love and favour of all the people; and *Agolanto* (by the meanes of *Alessandro*) recovered all that was due to him and his brethren in *England*, returning richly home to *Florence*, Count *Alessandro* (his kinsman) having first dubd him Knight. Long time he lived in peace and tranquility, with the faire Princesse his wife, proving to be so absolute in wisedome, and so famous a Souldier; that (as some report) by assistance of his Father in law he conquered the Realme of *Ireland*, and was crowned King thereof.

Landolpho Ruffolo, *falling into poverty, became a Pirate on the Seas, and being taken by the Genewayes, hardly escaped drowning: Which yet (neverthelesse) he did, upon a little Chest or Coffer, full of very rich Jewels, being carried thereon to Corfu, where he was well entertained by a good woman; And afterward, returned richly home to his owne house.*

The fourth Novell.

Whereby may be discerned, into how many dangers a man may fall, through a covetous desire to enrich himselfe.

MAdam *Lauretta*, sitting next to Madam *Pampinea*, and seeing how triumphantly shee had finished her discourse; without attending any thing else, spak thus. Gracious Ladies, wee shall never behold (in mine opinion) a greater act of Fortune, than to see a man so suddenly exalted, even from the lowest depth of povertie, to a Royall estate of dignitie; as the discourse of Madam *Pampinea* hath made good, by the happy advancement of *Alessandro*. And because it appeareth necessary, that whosoever discourseth on the subject proposed, should no way vary from the very same termes; I shall not shame to tell a tale, which, though it containe farre greater mishapes than the former,

may

may ſort to as happy an iſſue, albeit not ſo noble and magnificent. In which reſpect, it may (perhaps) merit the leſſe attention, but howſoever that fault ſhall be found in me, I meane to diſcharge my owne duty.

Opinion hath made it famous for long time, that the Sea coaſt of *Rhegium* to *Gajeta*, is the onely delectable part of all *Italy*, wherein, ſomewhat neere to *Salerne*, is a ſhore looking upon the Sea, which the inhabitants there dwelling, doe call the coaſt of *Malfie*, full of ſmall Townes, Gardens, Springs, and wealthy men, trading in as many kindes of Merchandizes, as any other people that I know. Among which Townes, there is one, named *Ravello* wherein (as yet to this day there are rich people) there was (not long ſince) a very wealthy man, named *Landolpho Ruffolo*, who being not contented with his riches, but covetting to multiply them double and treble, fell in danger, to looſe both himſelf and wealth together.

This man (as other Merchants are wont to doe) after he had conſidered on his affaires, bought him a very goodly Ship, lading it with divers ſorts of Merchandizes, all belonging to himſelfe onely, and making his voyage to the Iſle of *Cyprus*. Where he found, over and beſide the Merchandizes he had brought thither, many Ships more there arrived, and all of them laden with the ſame commodities, in regard whereof, it was needfull for him, not onely to make a good Mart of his goods; but alſo was further conſtrained (if he meant to vent his commodities) to ſell them away (almoſt) for nothing, endangering his utter deſtruction and overthrow. Whereupon grieving exceedingly at ſo great a loſſe, not knowing what to doe, and ſeeing, that from very abundant wealth, he was like to fall into as low povertie: he reſolved to dye, or to recompence his loſſes upon others, becauſe he would not returne home poore, having departed thence ſo rich.

Meeting with a Merchant, that bought his great Shippe of him; with the money made thereof, and all his other Merchandizes, hee purchaſed another, being a lighter veſſell, apt and proper for the uſe of a Pirate, arming and furniſhing it in ample manner, for roving and robbing upon the Seas. Thus hee began to make other mens goods his owne, eſpecially from the Turkes, hee tooke much wealth, Fortune being alwayes ſo favourable to him, that hee could never compaſſe the like by trading. So that, within the ſpace of one yeare hee had robd and taken ſo many Gallies from the Turke, that he found himſelfe well recovered, not onely of all his loſſes by Merchandize, but like wiſe his wealth was wholly redoubled. Finding his loſſes to be very liberally requited, and

having now ſufficient, it were folly to hazard a ſecond fall: wherefore conferring with his owne thoughts, and finding that he had enough, and needed not to covet after more: he fully concluded, now to returne home to his owne houſe againe, and live upon his goods thus gotten.

Continuing ſtill in feare of the loſſe he had ſuſtained by traffique, and minding never more to imploy his money that way, but to keepe this light veſſell, which had holpen him to all his wealth: he commanded his men to put forth their Oares, and ſhape their courſe for his owne dwelling. Being aloft in the higher Seas, darke night over-taking them, and a mightie winde ſuddenly comming upon them: it not onely was contrary to their courſe, but held on with ſuch impetuous violence, that the ſmall veſſell, being unable to endure it, made to land-ward ſpeedily, and in expectation of a more friendly wind, entred a little port of the Sea, directing up into a ſmall Iſland, and there ſafely ſheltred it ſelfe. Into the ſame port which *Landolpho* had thus taken for his refuge entred (ſoone after) two great Charrackes of *Genewayes*, lately come from *Conſtantinople*. When the men in them had eſpied the ſmall Barke, and lockt up her paſſage from getting forth; underſtanding the Owners name, and that report had famed him to be very rich, they determined (as men evermore addicted naturally, to covet after money and ſpoyle) to make it their owne as a prize at Sea.

Landing ſome ſtore of their men, well armed with Croſſe-bowes and other weapons, they tooke poſſeſſion of ſuch a place, where none durſt iſſue forth of the ſmall Barke, but endangered his life with their Darts and Arrowes. Entring aboard the Barke, and making it their owne by full poſſeſſion, all the men they threw over-board, without ſparing any but *Landolpho* himſelfe, whom they mounted into one of the Carrackes: leaving him nothing but a poore ſhirt of Maile on his backe, and having rifled the Barke of all her riches, ſunke it into the bottome of the Sea. The day following, the rough windes being calmed, the Carrackes ſet ſaile againe, having a proſperous paſſage all the day long: but upon the entrance of darke night, the winds blew more tempeſtuouſly than before, and ſweld the Sea in ſuch rude ſtormes, that the two Carrackes were ſundred each from other, and by violence of the tempeſt it came to paſſe that the Carracke wherein lay poore miſerable *Landolpho* (beneath the Iſle of *Cephalonia*) ran againſt a rocke, and even as a glaſſe againſt a wall, ſo ſplit the Carracke in peeces, the goods and merchandize floating on the Sea, Cheſts, Coffers, Beds, and ſuch like other things, as often happeneth in ſuch lamentable accidents.

Now

Now notwithstanding the nights obscurity, and impetuous violence of the billowes, such as could swimme, made shift to save their lives by swimming. Others caught hold on such things, as by Fortunes favour, floated neerest to them, among whom, distressed *Landolpho*, desirous to save his life, if possible it might be, espied a Chest or Coffer before him, ordained (no doubt) to be the meanes of his safety from drowning. Now although the day before, he had wished for death infinite times, rather than to returne home in such wretched poverty; yet, seeing how other men strove for safetie of their lives by any helpe, were it never so little, he took advantage of this favour offered him, and the rather in a necessitie so urgent. Keeping fast upon the Coffer so well as he could, and being driven by the winds and waves, one while this way, and anon quite contrary, he made shift for himselfe till day appeared; when looking every way about him, seeing nothing but clouds, the seas, and the Coffer, which one while shrunke from under him, and another while supported him, according as the windes and billowes carried it: all that day and night thus he floated up and downe, drinking more than willingly he would, but almost huger starved thorow want of foode. The next morning, either by the appointment of heaven or power of the windes, *Landolpho* who was (well-neere) become a Spunge, holding his armes strongly about the Chest, as we have seene some doe, who (dreading drowning) take hold on any the very smallest helpe; drew neare unto the shore of the Iland *Corfu*, where (by good fortune) a poore woman was scowring dishes with the salt water and sand, to make them (house-wife-like) neate and cleane.

When she saw the Chest drawing neare her, and not discerning the shape of any man, she grew fearefull, and retyring from it, cryed out aloud. He had no power of speaking to her; neither did his sight doe him the smallest service; but even as the waves and windes pleased, the Chest was driven still nearer to the Land, and then the woman perceived that it had the forme of a Coffer, and looking more advisedly, beheld two armes extended over it, and afterward, she espyed the face of a man, not being able to judge, whether he were alive, or no. Mooved by charitable and womanly compassion, shee stept in among the billowes, and getting fast hold on the hayre of his head, drew both the Chest and him to the Land, and calling forth her daughter to helpe her, with much adoe shee unfolded his armes from the Chest, setting it upon her daughters head, and then between them *Landolpho* was led into the Towne, and there conveyed into a warme Stove, where quickly he recovered (by her paines) his strength, benummed with extreame cold.

Good

Good wines and comfortable broathes ſhe cherifhed him withall, that his ſences being indifferently reſtored, hee knew the place where he was; but not in what manner he was brought thither, till the good woman had ſhewed him the Coſer that had kept him floating upon the waves, and (next under God) having ſaved his life. The Cheſt ſeemed of ſuch ſlender weight, that nothing of any value could be expected in it, eyther to recompence the womans great paines and kindneſſe beſtowed on him, or any matter of his owne benefit. Nevertheleſſe, the woman being abſent, he opened the Cheſt, and found innumerable precious ſtones therein, ſome coſtly and curious ſet in gold, and others not fixed in any mettall. Having knowledge of their great worth and value (being a Merchant, and skil'd in ſuch matters) he became much comforted, praying God for his good ſucceſſe, and ſuch an admirable meanes of deliverance from danger.

Then conſidering with himſelfe, that (in a ſhort time) he had beene twice well buffeted and beaten by Fortune, leaſt a third miſhap might follow in like manner, he conſulted with his thoughts, how he might ſafely order the buſineſſe, and bring ſo rich a booty (without peril) to his owne home. Wherefore, wrapping up the Iewels in very unſightly colours, that no ſuſpition at all ſhould bee conceived of them, he ſayd to the good woman, that the Cheſt would not doe him any further ſervice; but if ſhe pleaſed to lend him a ſmall ſacke or bagge, ſhe might keepe the Coſer, for in her houſe it would divers wayes ſtead her. The woman gladly did as he deſired, and *Landolpho* returning her infinite thankes, for the loving kindneſſe ſhe had offered him, throwing the ſacke on his neck, paſſed by a Barke to *Brundufium*, and from thence to *Tranium*, where Merchants in the Citie beſtowed good garments on him, he acquainting them with his diſaſterous fortunes, but not a word concerning his laſt good ſucceſſe.

Being come home in ſafety to *Ravello* he fell on his knees and thanked God for all his mercies towards him. Then opening the ſacke and viewing the Iewels at more leaſure than formerly he had done, he found them to be of ſo great eſteemation, that ſelling them but at ordinary and reaſonable rates, he was three times richer, than when he departed firſt from his houſe. And having vented them all, he ſent a great ſumme of money to the good woman at *Cerſu*, that had reſcued him out of the Sea, and ſaved his life in a danger ſo dreadfull. The like he did at *Tranium*, to the Merchants that newly cloathed him; living richly upon the remainder, and never adventuring more to the Sea, but ended his dayes in wealth and honour.

Andrea

Andrea de Piero, *travelling from* Perouſe *to* Naples *to buy Horſes, was (in the ſpace of one night) ſurpriſed by three admirable accidents, out of all which he fortunately eſcaped, and with a rich Ring, returned home to his owne houſe.*

The fift Novell.

Comprehending, how needfull a thing it is, for a man that travelleth in affaires of the World, to be provident and well adviſed, and carefully to keepe himſelfe from the deceitfull allurements of Strumpets.

THe precious Stones and Iewels found by *Landolpho*, maketh me to remember (ſayd Madam *Fiametta*, who was next to deliver her diſcourſe) a Tale, containing no leſſe perils, than that reported by Madam *Lauretta*: but ſomewhat different from it, becauſe the one happened in ſundry yeares, and this other had no longer time, than the compaſſe of one poore night, as inſtantly I will relate unto you.

As I have heard reported by many, there ſometime lived in *Perouſe* or *Perugia*, a young man named *Andrea de Piero*, whoſe profeſſion was to trade about Horſes, in the nature of a Horſe-courſer, or Horſe-maſter, who hearing of a good Faire or Market (for his purpoſe) at *Naples*, did put five hundred Crownes of gold in his purſe, and journeyed thither in the company of other Horſe-courſers, ariving there on a Sunday in the evening. According to inſtructions given him by his Hoſt, he went the next day into the Horſe-market, where he ſaw very many Horſes that he liked, cheapning their prizes as he went up and downe, but could fall to no agreement; yet to manifeſt that he came purpoſely to buy, and not as a cheapner onely, oftentimes (like a ſhallow-brainde trader in the world) hee ſhewed his purſe of gold before all paſſengers, never reſpecting who or what they were that obſerved his folly.

It came to paſſe that a young *Sicilian* wench (very beautifull, but at comn and of whoſoever would, & for ſmall hire) paſſing then by, & (without his perceiving) ſeeing ſuch ſtore of gold in his purſe; preſently ſhe ſayd to her ſelfe: why ſhould not all thoſe crownes be mine; when the foole that owes them, can keepe them no cloſer? And ſo ſhe went on. With this young wanton there was (at the ſame time) an old woman (as commonly ſuch ſtuffe is alwayes ſo attended) ſeeming to be a *Sicilian* alſo, who ſo ſoone as ſhe ſaw *Andrea*, knew him, and leaving her youthfull commodity, ranne to him, and embraced him very kindly. Which when the younger Laſſe perceived, without proceeding any further, ſhee ſtayed to ſee what would enſue thereon. *Andrea* conferring with the old Bawde, and knowing her (but not for any ſuch creature) declared himſelfe

very

very affable to her; she making him promise, that she would come and drinke with him at his lodging. So breaking off further speeches for that time, she returned to her young *Cammerado*; and *Andrea* went about buying his Horses, still cheapning good store, but did not buy any all that morning.

The Punke that had taken notice of *Andrea's* purse, upon the old womans comming backe to her) having formerly studied, how she might get all the gold, or the greater part thereof) cunningly questioned with her, what the man was, whence he came, and the occasion of his businesse? wherein she fully informed her particularly, and in as ample manner as himselfe could have done; That she had long time dwelt in *Sicily* with his Father, and afterward at *Perouse*; recounting also at what time she came thence, and the cause which now had drawne him to *Naples*. The witty young housewife, being thorowly instructed, concerning the Parents and kindred of *Andrea*, their names, quality, and all other circumstances thereto leading; began to frame the foundation of her purpose thereupon, setting her resolution downe constantly, that the purse and gold was (already) more than halfe her owne.

Being come home to her owne house, away she sent the old Pandresse about other businesse, which might hold her time long enough of employment, and hinder her returning to *Andrea* according to promise, purposing not to trust her in that serious peece of service. Calling a young craftie Girle to her, whom she had well tutoured in the like ambassages, when evening drew on, she sent her to *Andreas* lodging, where (by good fortune) she found him sitting alone at the doore, and demanding of him, if he knew an honest Gentleman lodging there, (whose name was *Signior Andrea Piero*; he made her answer that himselfe was the man. Then taking him aside, she sayd. Sir, there is a worthy Gentlewoman of this City, that would gladly speak with you, if you please to vouchsafe her so much favour.

Andrea, hearing such a kind of salvation, and from a gentlewoman, named of worth; began to grow proud in his owne imaginations, and to make no meane estimation of himselfe: As (undoubtedly) that he was an handsome proper man, and of such carriage and perfections, as had attracted the amorous eye of this Gentlewoman, and induced her to like and love him beyond all other, *Naples* not containing a man of better merit. Whereupon he answered the Maid, that he was ready to attend her Mistresse, desiring to know, when it should be, and where the Gentlewoman would speake with him? So soone as you please Sir, replyed the Damosell, for she tarryeth your comming in her owne house.

Instantly

Instantly *Andrea* (without leaving any direction of his departure in his lodging, or when he intended to returne againe) said to the Girle: Goe before, and I will follow. This little Chamber-commodity, conducted him to her Mistresses dwelling, which was in a streete named *Marpelsus*, a title manifesting sufficiently the streetes honesty: but he, having no such knowledge thereof, neither suspecting any harme at all, but that he went to a most honest house, and a gentlewoman of good respect; entred boldly, the Mayde going in before, and guiding him up a faire paire of stayres, which he having more than halfe ascended, the cunning Queane gave a call to her Mistresse, saying; *Signior Andrea* is come already, whereupon, she appeared, at the stayres-head, as if she had stayd there purposely to entertaine him. She was young, very beautifull, comely of person, and rich in adornements, which *Andrea* well observing, and seeing her descend two or three steps, with open armes to embrace him, catching fast hold about his necke; hee stood as a man confounded with admiration, and shee contained a cunning kind of silence, even as if shee were unable to utter one word, seeming hindred by extremity of joy at his presence, and to make him effectually admire her extraordinary kindnesse, having teares plenteously at command, intermixed with sighes and broken speeches, at last thus shee spake.

Signior Andrea, you are the most welcome friend to me in the world; sealing this salutation with infinite sweet kisses and imbraces: whereat (in wonderfull amazement) he being strangely transported, replyed; Madam, you honour me beyond all compasse of merit. Then taking him by the hand, she guided him, thorough a goodly Hall, into her owne Chamber, which was delicately embalmed with Roses, Orenge flowers, and all other pleasing smells, and a costly bed in the middest, curtained round about, very artificiall Pictures beautifying walls, with many other ornaments, such as those Countries are liberally stored with all. He being meerely a novice in these kindes of wanton carriages of the World, and free from any base or degenerate conceit; firmely perswaded himselfe, that (questionles) she was a Lady of no meane esteeme, and hee more than happy, to be thus respected and honored by her. They both being seated on a curious Chest at the beds feet, teares cunningly trickling downe her cheekes, and sighes intermedled with inward sobbings, breathed forth in sad, but very semely manner, thus she began.

I am sure *Andrea*, that you greatly marvell at me, in gracing you with this solemne and kind entertainement, and why

why I should so melt my selfe in sighes and teares, at a man that hath no knowledge of me, or perhaps seldome or never heard any speeches of me: but you shall instantly receive from me matter to augment your greater marveile, meeting here with your owne Sister, beyond all hope or expectation in either of us both. But seeing heaven hath beene so gracious to me, to let me see one of my brethren before I dye (though gladly I would have seene them all) which is some addition of comfort to me; and that which (haply) thou hast never heard before, in plaine and truest manner, I will reveale unto thee.

Piero, my Father and thine, dwelt long time (as thou canst not choose but to have understood) in *Palermo*, where, through the bountie, and other gracious good parts remaining in him, he was much renowned, and to this day, is no doubt remembred, by many of his loving Friends and Well-willers. Among them that most intimately affected *Piero*, my mother (who was a Gentlewoman, and at that time a widdow) did deerest of all other love him; so that forgetting the feare of her Father, or Brethren, yea, and her owne honour, they became so privately acquainted, that I was begotten, and am here now such as thou seest me. Afterward occasions so befalling our Father, to abandon *Palermo*, and returne to *Perouse*, he left my mother and me his little daughter, never after (for ought that I could learne) once remembring either her or me: so that (if he had not beene my Father) I could have much condemned him, in regard of his ingratitude to my mother, and love which hee ought to have showne mee as his child, being borne of no Chamber-maide, neither of a City sinner; albeit I must needes say, that she was blame worthy, without any further knowledge of him (mooved onely thereto by most loyall affection) to commit both her selfe and all the wealth she had, into his hands: but things ill done, & so long time since, are more easily controuled, than amended.

Being left so young at *Palermo*, and growing (well neere) to the stature as now you see me; my Mother (being wealthy) gave me in marriage to one of the *Gergentes* Family, a Gentleman, and of great revenewes, who in his love to me and my mother, went and dwelt at *Palermo*: where falling into the *Guelphes* Faction, and making one in the enterprize with *Charles* our King; it came to passe, that they were discovered to *Frederike* King of *Arragon*, before their intent could be put in Execution: Whereupon, wee were enforced to flie from *Sicily*, even when my hope stood fairely, to be the greatest Lady in all the Island. Packing up then such few things as we could take with us (few I may well call them, in regard of our wealthy possessions,

both.

both in Pallaces, Houſes and Lands, all which wee were conſtrained to forgoe:)we made our recourſe to this City, where wee found King *Charles* ſo benigne and gracious to us, that recompencing the greater part of our loſſes, he beſtowed Lands and Houſes on us here, beſide a continuall large penſion to my husband your brother in Law, as hereafter himſelfe ſhall better acquaint you withall. Thus came I hither, and thus remaine here, where I am able to welcome my brother *Andrea*, thankes more to Fortune, than any friendlineſſe in him. With which word ſhe embraced & kiſſed him many times, ſighing & weeping as ſhe did before

Andrea hearing this Fable ſo artificially delivered, compoſed from point to point with ſuch likely proteſtations, without faltering or failing in any one words utterance; and remembring perfectly for truth, that his Father had formerly dwelt at *Palermo*; knowing alſo (by ſome ſenſible feeling in himſelfe) the cuſtome of young people, who are eaſily conquered by affection in their youthfull heate; ſeeing beſide the teares, trembling ſpeeches, and earneſt embracings of this cunning commoditie; he tooke all to be true by her thus ſpoken, and upon her ſilence thus replyed. Lady, let it not ſeeme ſtrange to you, that your words have raiſed meruaile in me, becauſe I had no knowledge of you, even no more than if I had never ſeene you: never alſo having heard my Father ſpeak either of you or your mother (for ſome conſiderations beſt knowne unto himſelfe:) or if at any time he uſed ſuch language, either my youth then or defective memory ſince, hath utterly loſt it: But truly, it is no little joy and comfort to me, to finde a ſiſter here where I had no ſuch expectation, and where alſo my ſelfe am a meere ſtranger. For to ſpeak my minde of you and the perfections appearing in you, I know not any man of how great repute or quality ſoever, but you may well beſeeme his acceptance, much rather than mine, that am but a meane Merchant. But faire Siſter, I deſire to be reſolved in one thing to wit; by what meanes you had underſtanding of my being in the City? whereto ſhe returned him this anſwer.

Brother, a poore woman of this City, whom I employ ſometimes in houſhold occaſions, came to me this morning, and (having ſeene you) told me, that ſhee dwelt a long while with our Father, both at *Palermo* and *Perouſe*. And becauſe I held it much better beſeeming my condition, to have you viſite me in mine owne dwelling, than I to come ſee you at a common Inne, I made the bolder to ſend for you hither. After which words, in very orderly manner, ſhee enquired of his chiefeſt kindred and friends, calling them readily by their proper names, according to her former inſtructions. Whereto *Andrea* ſtill made her anſwer confirming

firmely thereby his beleefe of her the more ſtrongly, and crediting whatſoever ſhe ſayd, farre better than before.

Their conference having long time continued, and the heate of the day being ſomewhat extraordinary, ſhe called for *Greeke* wine, and banqueting ſtuffe, drinking to *Andrea*, and he pledged her very contentedly. After which, hee would have returned to his lodging, becauſe it drew neare ſupper time; which by no meanes ſhe would permit, but ſeeming more than halfe diſpleaſed ſhe ſayd. Now I plainely perceive brother, how little account you make of me, conſidering, you are with your owne Siſter, whom (you ſay) you never ſaw before, and in her owne houſe, whither you ſhould alwayes reſort when you come to this Citie; and would you now refuſe her, to goe and ſup at a common Inne? Beleeve me brother you ſhall ſup with me, for although my Husband is now from home, to my no little diſcontentment: yet you ſhall finde Brother, that his wife, can bid you welcome, and make you good cheere beſide.

Now was *Andrea* ſo confounded with this extremity of courteſie, that he knew not what to ſay, but onely thus repiyed. I love you as a Siſter ought to be loved, and accept of your exceeding kindneſſe: but if I returne not to my lodging, I ſhall wrong mine Hoſt and his gueſts too much, becauſe they will not ſup untill I come. For that (quoth ſhe) we have a preſent remedy, one of my ſervants ſhall goe and give warning, whereby they ſhall not tarry your comming: Albeit, you might doe me a great kindneſſe to ſend for your friends, to ſup with us here, where I aſſure yee, they ſhall finde that your Siſter (for your ſake) will bid them welcome, and after ſupper, you may all walke together to your Inne. *Andrea* anſwered, that he had no ſuch friends there; as ſhould be ſo burthenous to her: but ſeeing ſhee urged him ſo farre, he would ſtay to ſup with her, and referred himſelfe ſolely to her diſpoſition.

Ceremonious ſhew was made, of ſending a ſervant to the Inne, for not expecting *Andreas* preſence at Supper, though no ſuch matter was performed; but, after divers other diſcourſings, the table being covered, and varietie of coſtly viands placed thereon, downe they ſate to feeding, with plentie of curious Wines liberally walking about, ſo that it was darke night before they aroſe from the tables. *Andrea* then offering to take his leave, ſhe would (by no meanes ſuffer it, but told him, that *Naples* was a City of ſuch ſtrict Lawes and Ordinances, as admitted no night-walkers, although they were Natives, much leſſe ſtrangers, but puniſhed them with great ſeverity. And therefore, as ſhe had formerly ſent word to his Inne, that they ſhould not expect his comming to ſupper, the like had ſhe done concerning his

his bed, intending to give her Brother *Andrea* one nights lodging, which as easily she could affoord him, as she had done a Supper. All which this new caught Woodcock verily crediting, & that he was in company of his owne Sister *Fiordeliza* (for so did she cunning stile her selfe, and in which beleefe he was meerely deluded) hee accepted the more gladly her gentle offer, and concluded to stay there all that night.

After supper, their conference lasted very long, purposely dilated out in length, that a great part of the night might therein be wasted: when leaving *Andrea* to his Chamber, and a Lad to attend, that hee should lacke nothing, shee with her women went to their lodgings, and thus our Brother and supposed Sister were parted. The season then being somewhat hot and soultry, *Andrea* put off his hose and doublet, and being in his shirt alone, layed them underneath the beds boulster, as seeming carefull of his money. But finding a provocation to the house of Office, he demanded of the Lad where hee might find it; who shewed him a little doore in a corner of the Chamber, appointed him to enter there. Safely enough he went in, but chanced to tread upon a board, which was fastned at neither end to the joynts whereon it lay, being a pit-fall mode of purpose, to entrap any such coxcombe, as would be trained to so base a place of lodging, so that both he and the board fell downe together into the draught; yet such being his good fortune, to receive no harme in the fall (although it was of extraordinary height) onely the filth of the place, (it being over full) had fowly myred him.

Now for your better understanding the qualitie of the place, and what ensued thereupon, it is not unnecessary to describe it, according to a common use observed in those parts. There was a narrow passage or entrie, as often we see reserved betweene two houses, for eitheis benefit to such a needfull place; and boards loosly lay upon the joynts, which such as were acquainted withall, could easily avoide any perill, in passing to or from the stoole. But our so newly created Brother, not dreaming to finde a Queane to his Sister, receiving so foule a fall into the vault, and knowing not how to helpe himselfe, being so sorrowfull beyond measure; cryed out to the boy for light and ayde, who intended not to give him any. For the crafty wag, (a meete attendant for so honest a Mistresse) no sooner heard him to be fallen, but presently hee ranne to enforme her thereof, and she as speedily returned to the Chamber, where finding his cloathes under the beds head, she needed no instruction for search of his pockets. But having found the gold which *Andrea* indiscreetly carried alwayes about him,

as thinking it could no where else be so safe: This was all she aymed at, and for which she had ensnared him, faigh-ning her selfe to be of *Palermo*, and Daughter to *Piero* of *Perouse*, so that not regarding him any longer, but making fast the house of Office doore, there she left him in that mi-serable taking.

Poore *Andrea* perceiving, that his calls could get no an-swer from the Lad; cryed out louder, but all to no purpose: when seeing into his owne simplicitie, & understanding his errour, though somewhat too late, he made such meanes constrainedly, that he got over a wall, which severed that foule sinke from the worlds eye; and being in the open streete, went to the doore of the House, which then hee knew too well to his cost, making loud exclaimes with rapping and knocking, but all as fruitelesse as before. Sor-rowing exceedingly, and manifestly beholding his misfor-tune; Alas (quoth he) how soone have I lost a Sister, and five hundred Crownes besides? With many other words, loud calls, and beatings upon the doore without intermissi-on; the neighbours finding themselves disturbed, and un-able to endure any such ceaselesse vexation, rose from their beds, and called to him, desiring him to be gone and let them rest. A maide also of the same house, looking forth at the window, and seeming as newly raised from sleepe, called to him, saying. What noyse is that beneath? Why Virgin (answered *Andrea*) know you not me? I am *Andrea*, brother to your Mistresse *Fiordeliza*. Thou art a drunken knave replied the maide, more full of drinke then wit: goe sleepe, goe sleepe, and come againe to morrow; for I know no *Andrea de Piero*, neither hath my Mistresse any such Bro-ther. Get thee gone good man, and suffer us to sleepe I pre-thee. How now (quoth *Andrea*) dost thou not understand what I say? Thou knowest that I supt with thy Mistresse this night; but if our Sicilian kindred be so soone forgot, I prethee give me my cloathes which I left in my Chamber, and then very gladly will I get me gone. Hereat the maide laughing out aloud, said, Surely the man is mad, or walk-eth the streets in a dreame: and so clasping fast the Win-dow, away she went and left him.

Now could *Andrea* assure himselfe, that his gold and cloathes were past recovery, which moving him to the more impatience, his former intercessions being converted into furie, and what he could not compasse by faire intreates, he intended to winne by outrage and violences: so that tak-ing up a great stone in his hand, he layed upon the doore very powerfull stroakes. The neighbours hearing this molestation still, admitting them not the least respite of rest, reputed him for a troublesome fellow, and that he

he uſed thoſe counterfeit words, onely to diſturbe the Miſtreſſe of the houſe, and all that dwelled neere about her; looking againe out at their windowes, they altogether began to rate and reproove him, even like to ſo many bawling Curres, barking at a ſtrange dogge paſſing through the ſtreete. This is ſhamefull villany (quoth one) and not to be ſuffered, that honeſt women ſhould thus bee moleſted in their houſes, with fooliſh idle words, and at ſuch an unſeaſonable time of the night. For Gods ſake (good man) be gone, and let us ſleepe, if thou haſt any thing to ſay to the Gentlewoman of the houſe, come to morrow in the day time; and no doubt but ſhe will make thee ſufficient anſwer.

Andrea, being ſomewhat pacified with theſe ſpeeches, a ſhagge-hair'd ſwaſh-buckler, a grimme viſaged Ruffian (as ſeldome bawdy houſes are without ſuch ſwaggering Champions) not ſeene nor heard by *Andrea*, all the while of his being in the houſe; rapping out two or three terrible Oathes, opening a Caſement, and with a ſterne dreadfull voyce, demanded, who durſt keepe that noyſe beneath? *Andrea* fearefully looking up, and (by a little glimmering of the Moone) ſeeing ſuch a rough fellow, with a blacke beard, ſtrowting like the quills of a Porcupine, and patches on his face, for hurts received in no honeſt quarrels, yawning alſo and ſtretching, as angry to have his ſleepe diſturbed: trembling and quaking, anſwered; I am the Gentlewomans Brother of the houſe. The Ruffian interrupting him, and ſpeaking more fiercely than before; ſealing his words with horrible Oathes, ſaid Sirra, Raſcall, I know not of whence, or what thou art; but if I come downe to thee, I will ſo bumbaſt thy prating Coxcombe, as thou waſt never ſo beaten in all thy life, like a drunken ſlave and beaſt as thou art, that all this night wilt not let us ſleepe. And ſo he clapt to the window againe.

The neighbours well acquainted with the Ruffians rude conditions, ſpeaking in gentle manner to *Andrea*, ſayd. Shift for thy ſelfe (good man) in time, and tarry not for his comming downe to thee, except thou art weary of thy life: Be gone therefore, and ſay thou haſt a friendly warning. Theſe words diſmaying *Andrea*, but much more the ſterne oathes and ugly ſight of the Ruffian, incited alſo by the neighbours counſell, whom he imagined to adviſe him in charitable manner: it cauſed him to depart thence: taking the way homeward to his Inne, in no meane affliction and torment of minde, for the monſtrous abuſe offered him, and loſſe of his money. Well he remembred the paſſages, whereby the day before the Girle had guided him, but the loathſome ſmell about him, was ſo extreamely

offenſive

offensive to himselfe, that desiring to wash him at the Seas side, he strayed too farre wide on the contrary hand, wandring up the street called *Ruga Gatellana.*

Proceeding on still, even to the highest part of the Citie, he espied a Lanthorne and light, as also a man carrying it, and another man with him in company, both of them coming towards him. Now, because he suspected them two of the Watch, or some persons that would apprehend him, hee stept aside to shunne them, and entred into an old house hard by at hand. The other mens intention was to the very same place; and going in without any knowledge of *Andreaes* being there, one of them layd downe divers instruments of Iron which hee had brought thither on his backe, and had much talke with his fellow concerning those Engines. At last one of them said; I smell the most abhominable stinke that ever I felt in all my life. So, lifting up the Lanthorne, hee espied poore pittifull *Andrea*, closely couched behinde the wall. Which sight somewhat affrighted him, he yet boldly demanded, what, and who he was? Whereto *Andrea* answered nothing, but lay still, and held his peace. Neerer they drew towards him with their light, demanding how he came thither, and in that filthy manner.

Constraint having now no other evasion, but that (of necessitie) all must out, he related unto them the whole adventure, in the same sort as it had befalne him. They greatly pittying his misfortune, one of them said to the other: Questionlesse, this villanie was done in the house of *Scarabone Buttasucco.* And then turning to *Andrea*, proceeded thus. In good faith poore man, albeit thou hast lost thy money, yet art thou much beholden to Fortune, for falling (though in a foule place) yet in a succesfull manner, and entring no more backe into the house. For beleeve me friend, if thou haddest not falne, but quietly gone to sleepe in the house, that sleepe had beene thy last in this world, and with thy money, thou hadst lost thy life likewise. But teares and lamentations are now helpelesse, because as easily thou maist plucke the Starres from the firmament, as get againe the least doit of thy losse. And for that shaghaird Slave in the house, he will be thy deaths-man, if he but understand that thou makest any enquirie after thy money. When he had thus admonished him, he began also in this manner to comfort him. Honest fellow, we cannot but pittie thy present condition: wherefore if thou wilt friendly associate us, in a businesse as we are instantly going to effect, thy losse hath not beene so great, but on our words, we will warrant thee, that thine immediate gaine shall far exceede it. What will not a man (in desperate extremity)

both

both well like and allow of, especially when it carryeth apparance of present comfort? so fared it with *Andrea*, hee perswaded himselfe, worse than had already happened, could not befall him; and therefore he would gladly adventure with them.

The selfe same day preceding this diasterous night to *Andrea*, in the cheefe Church of the Citie, had beene buried the Archbishop of *Naples*, named *Signor Phillippo Minutulo*, in his richest pontificall Robes and Ornaments, and a Ruby on his finger valued to be worth five hundred duckets of gold: this dead body they purposed to rob and rifle, acquainting *Andrea*, with their whole intent, whose necessitie (coupled with a covetous desire) made him more forward than well advised, to joyne with them in this sacriligeous enterprize. On they went towards the great Church. *Andreas* unsavorie perfume much displeasing them, where the one sayd to his fellow: Can we devise no ease for this foule and noysome inconveniences? The very smell of him will be a meanes to betray us. There is a Well-pit hard by, answered the other, with a pulley and bucket descending downe into it, and there we may wash him from his filthinesse. To the Well-pit they came, where they found the rope and pulley hanging ready, but the bucket for safetie was taken away, whereon they concluded, to fasten the rope about him, and so let him downe to the Well-pit, and when he had washed himselfe, he should wagge the rope; and they would draw him up againe, which accordingly they forthwith performed.

Now it came to passe, that while hee was thus washing himselfe in the Well-pit, the Watch of the Citie walking the round, and finding it to be a very hot and sweltring night, they grew dry and thirstie, and therefore went to the Well to drinke. The other two men, perceiving the Watch so neere unto them, left *Andrea* in the pit to shift for himselfe, running away to shelter themselves. Their flight was not discovered by the Watch, but they comming to the Well-pit, *Andrea* remained still in the bottome, and having cleansed himselfe so well as he could, he sate wigging the rope, expecting when he should be haled up. This danbe signe the Watch discerned not, but sitting downe by the Wells side, they laid downe their Bills and other weapons, tugging to draw up the rope, thinking the Bucket was fastened thereto, and full of water. *Andrea* being haled up to the pits brim, left holding the rope any longer, catching fast hold with his hands for his better safety: & the Watch at the sight hereof being greatly affrighted, as thinking they had dragged up a Spirit; not daring to speak one word, ran away with all the haste they could make.

Andrea

Andrea hereat was not a little amazed, so that if he had not taken very good hold on the brim: he might have falne to the bottome, and doubtlesse there his life had perished. Being come forth of the Well, and treading upon Billes and Halberts, which he well knew his companions had not brought thither with them; his marvell so much the more increased, ignorance and feare still seizing on him, with silent bemoaning his many misfortunes, away thence wandred, but he wist not whither. As he went on, he met his two fellowes, who purposely returned to drag him out of the Well, and seeing their intent already performed, desired to know who hath done it: wherein *Andrea* could not resolve them, rehearsing what he could, and what weapons he found lying about the Well. Whereat they smiled, as knowing, that the Watch had haled him up, for feare of whom they left him, and so declared to him the reason of their returne.

Leaving off all further talke, because now it was about midnight, they went to the great Church, where finding their enterance to be easie: they approaching neare the Tombe, which was very great, being all of Marble; and the cover stone weightie, yet with crowes of Iron and other helpes they raised it so high, that a man might without perill passe into it. Now began they to question one another, which of the three should enter into the Tombe. Not I, said the first; so said the second: No nor I, said *Andrea*. Which when the other two heard, they caught fast hold of him, saying. Wilt not thou goe into the Tombe? Be advised what thou saiest, for, if thou wilt not goe in, we will so beat thee with one of these Iron crowes, that thou shalt never goe out of the Church alive.

Thus poore *Andrea* is still made a propertie, and Fortune (this fatall night) will have no other foole but hee, as delighting in his hourely disasters. Feare of their fury makes him obedient, into the grave hee goes, and being within, thus consults with himselfe. These cunning companions suppose me to be simple, and make me enter the Tombe, having an absolute intention to deceive me. For, when I have given them all the riches that I finde here, and when I am ready to come forth for mine equall portion: away will they runne for their owne safetie, and leaving me here, not only shall I lose my right among them, but must remaine to what danger may follow after. Having thus meditated, he resolved to make sure of his owne share first, and remembring the rich Ring whereof they had told him: forthwith he tooke it from the Archbishops finger, finding it indifferently fit for his owne. Afterward he tooke the Crosse, Mitre, rich garments, Gloves and all, leaving

leaving him nothing but his shirt, giving them all these severall parcells, protesting that there was nothing else. Still they pressed upon him, affirming that there was a Ring, urging him to search diligently for it; yet still he answered, that he could not finde it, and for their longer tarrying with him, seemed as if he searched very carefully, but all appeared to no purpose.

The other two fellowes, as cunning in craft, as the third could be, still willed him to search, and watching their aptest opportunitie: tooke away the proppes that supported the Tombe-stone, and running thence with their got bootie, left poore *Andrea* mewed up in the grave. Which when he perceived and, saw this misery to exceede all the rest, it is farre easier for you to guesse at his griefe, than I am any way able to expresse it. His head, shoulders, yea all his utmost strength he employeth, to remove that over-heavy hinderer of his libertie: but all his labour being spent in vaine, sorrow threw him in a swoond upon the Bishops dead-body, where if both of them might at that instant have bin observed, the Archbishops dead body, and *Andrea* in griefe dying, very hardly had beene distinguished. But his senses regaining their former offices, among his silent complaints, consideration presented him with choise of these two unavoidable extremities: Die starving must hee in the Tombe with putrifaction of the dead body; or if any man came to open the grave, then must he be apprehended as a sacrilegious theefe, and so be hanged according to the lawes in that case provided.

As he continued in these strange afflictions of mind, sodainly he heard a noise in the Church of divers men, who (as he imagined) came about the like businesse, as he and his fellowes had undertaken before; wherein he was not a jot deceived, albeit his feare the more augmented. Having opened the Tombe, and supported the stone, they varied also among themselves for entrance, and an indifferent while contended about it. At length, a Priest being one in the company, boldly sayd; Why, how now you white-liver'd Rascals? What are you affraid of? Doe you thinke he will eate you? Dead men cannot bite, and therefore I my selfe will goe in. Having thus spoken, he prepared his entrance to the Tombe in such order, that hee thrust in his feete before, for his easier descending downe into it.

Andrea sitting upright in the Tombe, and desiring to make use of this happy opportunitie, caught the Priest fast by one of his legges, making shew as if he meant to dragge him downe. Which when the Priest felt; he cryed out aloud, getting out with all the hast he could make, and all

his companions, being well neere frighted out of their wits, ranne away amaine, as if they had beene followed by a thousand divels. *Andrea* little dreaming on such fortunate successe, made meanes to get out of the grave, and afterward forth of the Church, at the very same place where he entred.

Now began day-light to appeare, when he (having the rich Ring on his finger) wandred on he knew not whether: till comming to the Sea side, he found the way directing to the Inne, where all his company were with his Host, who had beene very carefull for him. Having related his manifold mischances, his Host friendly advised him with speed to get him out of *Naples*. As instantly he did, returning home to *Perouse*, having adventured his five hundred Crownes on a Ring, wherewith he purposed to have bought Horses, according to the intent of his journey thither.

Madam Beritola Caracalla, *was found in an Iland with two Goates, having lost her two Sonnes, and thence travelled into Lunigiana: where one of her Sonnes became servant to the Lord thereof, and was found over-familiar with his Masters daughter, who therefore caused him to be imprisoned. Afterward when the Countrey of Sicely rebelled against King* Charles, *the aforesaid Sonne chanced to be knowne by his mother, and was married to his Masters daughter. And his brother being found likewise, they both returned to great estate and credit.*

The Sixt Novell.

Herein all men are admonished, never to distrust the powerfull hand of heaven, when Fortune seemeth to be most adverse against them.

THe Ladies and Gentlemen also, having smiled sufficiently at the severall accidents which did befall the poore Traveller *Andrea*, reported at large by Madam *Fiammetta*; the Lady *Æmilia* seeing her Tale to be fully concluded, began (by commandement of the Queene) to speake in this manner.

The diversitie of changes and alterations in Fortune, as they are great, so must they needes be grievous; and as often as we take occasion to talke of them, so often do they awake and quicken our understandings, avouching that it is no easie matter to depend upon her flatteries. And I am of opinion, that to heare them recounted, ought not any way to offend us, be it of men wretched, or fortunate: because, as they instruct the one with good advise, so they animate the other with comfort. And therefore, although great occasions have beene already related, yet I purpose to tell a Tale, no lesse true than lamentable; which albeit

it sorted to a successefull ending, yet notwithstanding, such and so many were the bitter thwartings, as hardly can I beleeve, that ever any sorrow was more joyfully sweetned.

You must understand then (most gracious Ladies) that after the death of *Fredericke* the second Emperour, one named *Manfred*, was crowned King of *Sicily*, about whom, lived in great account and authoritie, a *Neapolitane* Gentleman called *Henriet Capece*, who had to Wife a bountifull Gentlewoman, and a *Neapolitane* also, named Madam *Beritola Caracalla*: This *Henriet* held the government of the Kingdome of *Sicily*, and understanding that King *Charles* the first, had wonne the battell at *Beneventum*, and slaine King *Manfred*, the whole Kingdome revolting also to his devotion, and little trust to be reposed in the *Sicillians*, or he willing to subject himselfe to his Lords enemies; provided for his secret flight from thence. But this being discored to the *Sicillians* he and many more, who had beene loyall servants to King *Manfred*, where suddenly taken and imprisoned by King *Charles*, and the sole possession of the Iland confirmed to him.

Madam *Beritola* not knowing (in so sudden and strange an alteration of State affaires) what was become of her Husband, fearing also greatly before, those inconveniences which afterward followed; being overcome with many passionate considerations, having left and forsaken all her goods, going aboard a small Barke, with a Sonne of hers, aged about some eight yeares, named *Geoffrey*, and growne great with child with another, she fled thence to *Lapary*, where she was brought to bed of another Sonne, whom she named (answerable both to his and her hard fortune,) *The poore expelled.*

Having provided her selfe of a Nurse, they altogether went aboard againe, setting saile for *Naples* to visite her Parents; but it chanced quite contrary to her expectation, because by stormie windes and weather, the Vessell being bound for *Naples*, was hurried to the Ile of *Ponza*, where entring into a small Port of the Sea, they concluded to make their aboade, till a time more furtherous should further their voyage.

As the rest, so did Madam *Beritola* goe on shore in the Iland, where having found a seperate and solitary place, fit for her silent and sad meditations, secretly by her selfe shee sorrowed for the absence of her Husband. Resorting daily to this her sad exercise, and continuing there her complaints, unseene by any of the Marriners, or whosoever else: there arrived suddenly a Galley of Pyrates, who seazing on the small Barke, carried it and all the rest in it away with them. When *Beritola* had finished her woefull

complaints, as daily ſhe was accuſtomed to doe, ſhe returned backe to her children againe; but finding no perſon there remaining, whereat ſhe wondered not a little: immediately ſuſpecting what had happened indeede) ſhee ſent her lookes on the Sea, and ſaw the Galley, which as yet had not gone farre, drawing the ſmaller veſſell after her. Hereby plainely ſhe perceived, that now ſhe had loſt her children, as formerly ſhe had done her husband; being left there poore, forſaken, and miſerable, not knowing when, where or how to finde any of them againe; and calling for her Husband and children, ſhe fell downe in a ſwound upon the ſhore.

Now was not any body neere, with cold water or any other remedy to helpe the recovery of her loſt powers; wherefore her ſpirits might the more freely wander at their owne pleaſure: but after they were returned backe againe, and had won their wonted offices in her body, drowned in teares, and wringing her hands, ſhe did nothing but call for her children and husband, ſtraying all about in hope to finde them, ſeeking in caves, dens, and every where elſe, that preſented the very leaſt glimpſe of comfort. But when ſhe ſaw all her paines ſort to no purpoſe, and darke night drawing ſwiftly on, hope and diſmay raiſing infinite perturbations, made her yet to be ſomewhat reſpective of her ſelfe, and therefore departing from the Sea-ſhore, ſhee returned to the ſolitary place, where ſhe uſed to ſigh and mourne alone by her ſelfe.

The night being over-paſt with infinite feares and affrights, and bright day ſaluting the world againe, with the expence of nine houres and more, ſhee fell to her former fruitleſſe travels. Being ſomewhat ſharpely bitten with hunger, becauſe the former day and night ſhe had not taſted any foode: ſhe made therefore a benefit of neceſſitie, and fed on the greene herbes, ſo well as ſhe could, notwithout many piercing afflictions; what ſhould become of her in this extraordinary miſery. As ſhe walked in theſe penſive meditations, ſhe ſaw a Goate enter into a Cave, and (within a while after) come forth againe, wandring along thorow the woods. Whereupon ſhe ſtayed, and entred where ſhee ſaw the beaſt iſſue forth, where ſhe found two young Kids, yeaned (as it ſeemed) the ſelfeſame day; which ſight was very pleaſing to her, and nothing in that diſtreſſe could more content her.

As yet ſhee had milke freſhly running in both her breaſts, by reaſon of her ſo late delivery in child-bed; wherefore ſhe lay downe unto the two young Kids, and taking them tenderly in her armes, ſuffered each of them to ſucke a teate, whereof they made not any refuſall, but tooke them

as lovingly as their dammes, and from that time forward, they made no diſtinguiſhing betweene their damme and her.

Thus this unfortunate Lady, having found ſome company in this ſolitary deſart, fed on herbes and roots, drinking faire running water, and weeping ſilently to her ſelfe, ſo often as ſhe remembred her husband, children, and former dayes paſt in much better manner. Here ſhee reſolved now to live and die, being at laſt deprived both of the Damme and younger Kid alſo, by their wandering further into the neere adjoyning woods, according to their naturall inclinations; whereby the poore diſtreſſed Lady became more ſavage and wilde in her daily conditions, than otherwiſe ſhe would have beene.

After many moneths were over-paſſed, at the very ſame place where ſhe tooke landing; by chance there arrived another ſmall Veſſell of certaine *Piſans*, which remained there divers dayes. In this Barke was a Gentleman, named *Conrado de Marcheſi Maleſpini*, with his holy and vertuous wife, were returned backe from a Pilgrimage, having viſited all the ſanctified places that then were in the Kingdome of *Apulia*, and now were bound homeward to their owne abiding. This Gentleman, for the expelling of melancholly perturbations, one eſpeciall day amongſt other, with his wife, ſervants, and wainting hounds, wandred up into the Iland, not farre from the place of Madam *Beritolaes* deſert ſolitary dwelling. The hounds queſting after game, at laſt happening on the two Kids where they were feeding and (by this time) had attained indifferent growth; and finding themſelves thus purſued by the hounds, fled to no other part of the wood, than to the cave where *Beritola* remained, and ſeeming as if they thought to be reſcued, onely by her, ſhee ſuddenly caught up a ſtaffe, and forced the hounds thence to flight.

By this time, *Conrado* and his wife, who had followed cloſely after the hounds, was come thither, and ſeeing what had hapned, looking on the Lady, who was become blacke, ſwarthy, meager, and hairy, they wondred not a little at her, and ſhe a great deale more at them. When (upon her requeſt *Conrado* had checkt back his hounds, they prevailed ſo much by earneſt entreaties, to know what ſhee was, and the reaſon of her living there; that ſhe intirely related her qualitie, and ſtrange determination for living there. Which when the Gentleman had heard, who very well knew her husband, compaſſion forced teares from his eyes and earneſtly hee laboured by kinde perſwaſions, to alter ſo cruell a deliberation; making an honorable of-

fer, for conducting her home to his owne dwelling, where ſhee ſhould remaine with him in noble reſpect, as if ſhe were his owne Siſter, without parting from him till fortune ſhould ſmile as fairely on her, as ever ſhe had done before.

When theſe gentle offers could not prevaile with her, the Gentleman left his wife in her company, with her, ſaying, that he would goe fetch ſome foode for her; and becauſe her garments were rent and torne, he would bring her other of his wives, not doubting but to winne her thence with them, His wife abode there with *Beritola*, very much bemoaning her great diſaſters: and when both viands and garments were brought, by extremitie of interceſſion, they cauſed her to put them on, and alſo to feede with them, albet ſhe proteſted, that ſhe would not depart thence into any place, where any knowledge ſhould be taken of her. In the end, they perſwaded her to goe with them into *Lunigiana*, carrying alſo with her the two young Goates and their damme, which were then in the Cave, altogether, prettily playing before *Beritola*, to the great admiration of *Conrado* and his wife, as alſo the ſervants attending on them.

When the windes and weather grew favourable for them, Madam *Beritola* went aboard with *Conrado* and his Wife, being followed by the two young Goates and their Damme; and becauſe her name ſhould be knowne to none but *Conrado*, and his Wife onely, ſhe would be ſtiled no otherwiſe but the Goatherdeſſe. Merrily, yet gently blew the gale, which brought them to enter the River of *Maira*, where going on ſhore, and into their owne Caſtle, *Beritola* kept company with the wife of *Conrado*, but in a mourning habite; and a waiting Gentlewoman of theirs, honeſt, humble, and very dutifull, the Goates alwayes familiarly keeping them company.

Returne we now to the Pyrates, which at *Ponſa* ſeized on the ſmall Barke, wherein Madam *Beritola* was brought thither, and carried thence away, without any ſight or knowledge of her. With ſuch other ſpoiles as they had taken, they ſhaped their courſe for *Geneway*, and there (by conſent of the Patrons of the Galley) made a diviſion of their booties. It came to paſſe, that (among other things) the Nurſe that attended on *Beritola*, and the two Children with her, fell to the ſhare of one *Meſſer Gaſparino d'Oria*, who ſent them together to his owne houſe, there to be employed in ſervice as ſervants. The Nurſe weeping beyond meaſure for the loſſe of her Lady, and bemoaning her own miſerable Fortune, whereinto ſhe was now faine with the two young Ladies; and after long lamenting, which ſhe found utterly fruitleſſe and to none effect, though ſhe was

uſed

tiſed as a ſervant with them, and being but a very poore woman, yet was ſhe wiſe and diſcreetly adviſed. Wherefore, comforting both her ſelfe and them ſo well as ſhe could, and conſidering the depth of their diſaſter, ſhe conceited thus, that if the children ſhould be knowne, it might redound to their greater danger, and ſhe be no way advantaged thereby.

Hereupon, hoping that Fortune (early or late) would altar her ſterne malice and that they might (if they lived) regaine once more their former condition, ſhe would not diſcloſe them to any one whatſoever, till ſhe ſhould ſee the time aptly diſpoſed for it. Being thus determined, to all ſuch as queſtioned her concerning them, ſhe anſwered that they were her own children, naming the eldeſt not *Geoffery*, but *Iehannet de Procida*. As for the youngeſt, ſhe cared not greatly for changing his name, and therefore wiſely informed *Geoffery* upon what reaſon ſhe had altered his name, and what danger he might fall into, if he ſhould otherwiſe be diſcovered; being not ſatisfied with thus telling him once, but remembring him thereof very often, which the gentle youth (being ſo well inſtructed by the wiſe and carefull Nurſe) did very warily obſerve.

The two young Ladies, very poorely garmented but much worſe hoſed and ſhodde, continued thus in the houſe of *Gaſparino*, where both they and the Nurſe were long time employed about very baſe and drudging offices, which yet they endured with admirable patience. But *Iehannet*, aged already about ſixteene yeares, having a loftier ſpirit, than belonging to a ſlaviſh ſervant, deſpiſing the baſeneſſe of his ſervile condition; departed from the drudgery of *Meſſer Gaſparino*; and going aboard the Gallies which were bound for *Alexandria*, fortuned into many places, yet none of them affording him any advancement. In the end, about three or foure yeares after his departure from *Gaſparino*, being now a brave young man, and of very goodly forme: he underſtood, that his father (whom he ſuppoſed to be dead) was as yet living, but in captivity, and priſoner to King *Charles*. Wherefore diſpairing of any ſucceſſefull fortune, he wandred here and there, till he came to *Lunigiana*, and there (by ſtrange accident) he became ſervant to *Meſſer Conrado Maleſpino*, where the ſervice proved well liking to them both.

Very ſildome times he had a ſight of his Mother, becauſe ſhe alwayes kept company with *Conradoes* wife; and yet when they came in view of each other, ſhe knew not him; nor he her, ſo much yeares had altered them both from what they were wont to be, and when they ſaw each other laſt. *Iehannot* being thus in the ſervice of *Meſſer Conrado*, it fortuned that a daughter of his, named *Sophia*, being the

widdow of one *Messer Nicolas Grignam*, returned home to her fathers house. Very beautifull and amiable shee was, young likewise, aged but little above sixteene; growing wonderfull amorous of *Iehannot*, and he of her, in extraordinary and most fervent manner: which love was not long without full effect, continuing many moneths before any person could perceive it: which making them to build on the more assurance, they began to carry their meanes with lesse discretion than is required in such nice cases, and which cannot be two providently managed.

Vpon a day, he and shee walking to a godly Wood plentifully furnished with spreading Trees: having out-gone the rest of their company, they made choise of a pleasant place, very daintily shaded and beautified with all sorts of flowers. There they spent some time in amorous talking, beside some other sweet imbraces, which though it seemed overshort to them, yet was so unadvisedly prolonged, that they were on a sudden surprized, first by the mother, and next by *Messer Conrado* himselfe; who grieving beyond measure, to be thus treacherously dealt with-all, caused them to be apprehended by three of his servants, and (without telling them any reason why) led bound to another Castle of his, and fretting with extremitie of rage, concluded in his minde, that they should both shamefully be put to death.

The mother of this regardlesse daughter, having heard the angry words of her husband, and how hee would bee revenged on the faultie; could not endure that he should be so severe: wherefore, although she was likewise much afflicted in minde, and reputed her daughter worthy (for so great an offence) of all cruell punishment, yet shee hasted to her displeased husband, and began to intreate, that hee would not runne on in such a furious spleene, now in his aged yeares to be the murtherer of his owne child, and soile his hands in the blood of his servant. Rather he might finde out some milde course for the satisfaction of his anger, by committing them to close imprisonment, there to remaine and mourne for their folly committed. The vertuous and religious Lady alledged so many commendable examples, and used such plenty of moving perswasions, that she quite altered his minde, from putting them to death, and he commanded onely that they should separately bee imprisoned, with little store of food, and lodging of the uneasiest, untill he should otherwise determine of them; and so it was done. What their life now was in captivitie and continuall teares, with stricter abstinence than was needfull for them, all this I must commit to your consideration.

Iehannot and *Spina* remaining in this comfortlesse condition,

dition, and an whole yeare being now out-worne, yet *Conrado* keeping them thus ſtill impriſoned it came to paſſe, that *Don Pedro* King of *Arragon*, by the meanes of *Meſſer John de Procida*, cauſed the Iſle of Sicily to revolt, and tooke it away from King *Charles*; whereat *Conrado* (he being of the *Ghibbilne* faction) not a little rejoyced. *Iehannot* having intelligence thereof, by ſome of them that had him in cuſtody, breathing forth a vehement ſigh, ſpake in this manner. Alas poore miſerable wretch as I am that have already gone begging through the world above foureteene yeares, in expectation of nothing elſe but this opportunitie: and now it is come, muſt I be in priſon, to the end, that I ſhould never more hope for any future happineſſe? And how can I get forth of this priſon, except it bee by death onely? How now replyed the Officer of the Guard? What doth this buſineſſe of great Kings concerne thee; What affaires haſt thou in Sicily?

Once more *Iehannot* ſighed extreamely, and returned him this anſwer. Me thinkes my heart (quoth hee) doth cleave in ſunder, when I call to minde the charge which my Father had there; for although I was but a little boy when I fled thence yet I can well remember that I ſaw him Governour there, at ſuch time as King *Manfred* lived. The Guard purſuing on ſtill his purpoſe, demanded of him what, and who his Father was? My Father (replyed *Iehannot*) I may now ſecurely ſpeake of him, being out of the perill which neerely concerned me, if I had beene diſcovered; he was then named (and ſo ſtill if he be living) *Henriet Capece*, and my name is *Geoffrey*, and not *Iehannot*; and I make no doubt, but if I were freed from hence, and might be returned home to Sicily, I ſhould (for his ſake) be placed in ſome authoritie.

The honeſt man of the Guard, without ſeeking after any further information, ſo ſoone as he could compaſſe any leaſure, reported all to *Meſſer Conrado*, who having heard theſe newes (albeit he made no ſhew thereof to the Revealer) went to Madam *Beritola*, graciouſly demanding of her if ſhe had any ſonne by her husband, who was called *Geoffrey*. The Lady replyed in teares, that if her eldeſt ſonne were yet living, he was ſo named, and aged about 22. yeares. *Conrado* hearing this, imagined this ſame to be the man; conſidering further withall, that if it fell out to prove ſo he might have the better meanes of mercy, and cloſely concealing his daughters ſhame, joyfully joyne them in marriage together.

Hereupon, hee ſecretly called *Iehannot* before him, examining him particularly of all his paſſed life, and finding (by moſt manifeſt arguments) that his name was truly

Geoffrey, and the eldeſt ſonne of *Henriet Capete*, he ſpake thus to him. *Iehannot*, thou knoweſt how great the injuries are that thou haſt done me and my deare daughter; gently intreating thee (as became an honeſt ſervant) that thou ſhouldeſt alwayes have beene reſpective of mine honour, and all that appertaine unto me. There are many noble Gentlemen, who ſuſtaining the wrong that thou haſt offered mee, they would have procured thy ſhamefull death, which pittie and compaſſion will not ſuffer in me. Wherfore ſeeing (as thou informeſt me) that thou art honourably derived both by father and mother, I will give end to all thy anguiſhes, even when thy ſelfe art ſo pleaſed, releaſing thee from that captivitie where in I have ſo long kept thee, and in one inſtant, reduce thine honour and mine into compleate perfection. As thou knoweſt my daughter *Spina*, whom thou haſt embraced as a friend) although farre unfitting for thee, and her) is a widdow, and her marriage is both great and good; what her mannerrs and conditions are, thou indifferently knoweſt, and art not ignorant of her father and mother: concerning thine owne eſtate, as now I purpoſe not to ſpeake any thing. Therefore, when thou wilt, I am determined, that whereas thou haſt immodeſtly affected her, ſhe ſhall become thy honeſt wife, and accepting thee as my ſonne, to remaine with me ſo long as you both pleaſe.

Impriſonment had ſomewhat miſhapen *Iehannot* in his outward forme, but not impaired a jot of his noble ſpirit; much leſſe the true love which he bare his friend. And although moſt earneſtly he deſired that which now *Conrade* had ſo frankely offered him, and was in his power onely to beſtow on him; yet could he not cloud any part of his greatneſſe, but with a reſolved judgement, thus replyed. My Lord, affectation of rule, deſire of wealthy poſſeſſions, or any other matter whatſoever, could never make me a Traitor to you or yours; but that I have loved doe love, and for ever ſhall love your beauteous daughter: if that be treaſon, I doe freely confeſſe it, and will die a thouſand deaths before you, or any elſe ſhall enforce me to deny it, for I hold her highly worthy of my love. If I have beene more unmannerly with her than became me, I have committed but that errour, which evermore is ſo attendant upon youth; that to deny, is to deny youth alſo. And if reverend age would but remember, that once he was young, and meaſure others offences by his owne, they would not bee thought ſo great as you (and many more) account them to be, mine being committed as a friend, and not as an enemy. What you make offer of ſo willingly, I have alwayes deſired; and if I had thought it would have beene granted, long

ſince

since I had most humbly requested it: and so much the more acceptable would it have beene to me, by how much the further off it stood from my hopes. But if you be so forward as your words doe witnesse, then feede me not with any further fruitlesse expectation; but rather send mee backe to prison, and lay as many afflictions on me as you please. For my endeared love to your daughter *Spina* maketh me to love you the more for her sake, how hardly soever you intreate me, and bindeth me in the greater reverence to you, as being the Father of my fairest friend.

Messer Conrado hearing these words, stood as confounded with admiration, reputing him to be a man of loftie spirit, and his affection most fervent to his Daughter, which was not a little to his liking. Wherefore, embracing him, and kissing his cheeke, without any longer dallying, he sent in like manner for his Daughter. Her restraint in prison, had made her lookes meager, pale, and wanne, and very weake was she also of her person, farre differing from the Woman she was wont to be before her affection to *Jehannet*. There in presence of her father, and with free consent of either, they were contracted as man and wife, and the espousals agreed on according to custome. Some few dayes after, (without any ones knowledge of that which was done) having furnished them with all things fit for the purpose, and time aptly serving; that the mothers should be partakers in this joy, he called his wife, and Madam *Beritola*, to whom first he spake in this manner.

What will you say Madam, if I cause you to see your eldest Sonne, not long since marryed to one of my Daughters? Whereunto *Beritola* thus replyed, My Lord, I can say nothing else unto you but that I shall be much more obliged to you, than already I am; and the rather, because you than already I am; and the rather, because you will let me see the thing which is dearer than mine owne life; and rendering it unto me in such manner as you speake of, you will recall backe some part of my former lost hopes: and with these words the teares streamed abundantly from her eyes. Then turning to his wife, hee said: And you deare Love, if I shew you such a Sonne in law, what will you thinke of it? Sir (quoth she) what pleaseth you, must and shall satisfie me, be he gentleman or begger. Well said Madam, answered *Messer Conrado*. I hope shortly, to make you both joyfull. So when the amorous couple had recovered their former feature, and honourable garments prepared for them, privately thus hee said to *Geoffry*; Beyond the joy which already thou art inriched withall, how would it please thee to meete with thine owne mother here? I cannot beleeve Sir (replyed *Geoffrey*) that her grievous misfortunes

tunes have ſuffered her to live ſo long; and yet, if heaven hath beene ſo mercifull to her, my joyes were incomparable, for by her gracious counſell, I might well hope to recover no meane happineſſe in Sicily. Soone after, both the mothers were both ſent me, who were tranſported with unſpeakable joy, when they beheld the ſo lately married couple: being much amazed what inſpiration had guided *Meſſer Conrado* to this extraordinary benignitie, in joyning *Iohannot* in marriage with *Spina*.

Hereupon, Madam *Beritola* remembring the ſpeeches betweene her and *Meſſer Conrado*, began to obſerve him very advisedly; and by a hidden vertue which long had ſilently ſlept in her, and now with joy of ſpirit awaked, calling to minde the lineatures of her ſonnes infancie, without awaiting for any other demonſtration, ſhe folded him in her armes with earneſt affection. Motherly joy and pitty now contended ſo violently together, that ſhee was not able to utter one word, the ſenſitive vertues being ſo cloſely combined, that (even as dead) ſhe fell downe in the armes of her ſonne. And he wondering greatly thereat, making a better recollection of his thoughts, remembred that hee had before ſeene her in the Caſtle, without any other knowledge of her. Nevertheleſſe, by meere inſtinct of nature, whoſe power in ſuch actions declares it ſelfe to bee highly predominate; his very ſoule aſſured him, that ſhee was his Mother, and blaming his underſtanding, that he had not before beene better adviſed, he threw his armes about her, and wept exceedingly.

Afterward, by the loving paines of *Conradoes* wife, as alſo her daughter *Spina*, Madam *Beritola* (being recovered from her paſſionate traunce, and her vitall ſpirits executing their Offices againe) fell once more to the embracing of her Sonne, kiſſing him infinite times, with teares and ſpeeches of motherly kindneſſe hee likewiſe expreſſing the ſame dutifull humanitie to her. Which ceremonious courteſies being paſſed over and over, to no little joy in all the beholders, beſide repetition of their ſeverall misfortunes: *Meſſer Conrado* made all knowne to his friends, who were very glad of this new alliance made by him, which was honoured with many ſolemne feaſtings. Which being all concluded, *Geoffrey* having found out fit place and opportunitie, for conference with his new created Father, without any ſiniſter oppoſition, began as followeth.

Honorable Father, you have raiſed my contentment to the higheſt degree, and have heaped alſo many gracious favours on my Noble Mother; but now in the finall concluſion, that nothing may remaine uneffected, which conſiſteth in your power to performe: I would humbly intreat

you

you to honour my Mother with your company, at a Feast of my making, where I would gladly also have my Brother present *Messer Gasparino d Oria* (as I have heretofore told you) questing as a common Pyrat on the Seas, tooke us and sent us home to his house as slaves, where (as yet) he detaineth him. I would likewise send into Sicily, who informing himselfe more amply in the state of the Country, may understand what is become of *Henriet* my Father, and whether he be living or no. If hee be alive, then to know in what condition he is: and being secretly instructed in all things, then to returne backe againe to you.

This motion made by *Geoffrey*, was so pleasing to *Conrado*, that without any reference or further leysure, hee dispatched thence two discreet persons, the one to *Geneway* and the other to *Sicily*: he which went for *Geneway*, having met with *Gasparino*, earnestly entreated him (on the behalfe of *Conrado*) to send him the *Poore expelled*; and his Nurse recounting every thing in order; which *Conrado* had told him, concerning *Geoffrey* and his mother. When *Gasperino* had heard the whole discourse, he mervailed greatly thereat, and sayd; True it is, that I will doe any thing for *Messer Conrado*, which may be to his love and liking, provided that it lye in my power to performe; and (about some foureteene yeeres since) I brought such a Lad as you seeke for, with his mother, home to my house, whom I will gladly send unto him. But you may tell him from me, that I advise him from over-rash crediting the Fables of *Iohannot*, that now termes himselfe by the name of *Geoffrey*, because he is a more wicked boy then hee taketh him to be; and so did I finde him.

Having this spoken, and giving kinde welcome to the Messenger, secretly he called the Nurse unto him, whom hee heedfully examined concerning this case. She having heard the rebellion in the Kingdome of Sicily; and understanding withall that *Henriet* was yet living, joyfully threw off all her former feare, relating every thing to him orderly, & the reasons moving her to conceale the whole businesse, in such manner as she had done. *Gasparino* well perceiving, that the report of the Nurse, and the message received from *Conrado*, varied not in any one circumstance, began the better to credit her words. And being a man most ingenious, making further inquisition into the businesse, by all the possible meanes that he could devise; and finding every thing to yeeld undoubted assurance, ashamed of the vile & base usage wherein he had so long time kept the Lad, & desiring (by his best meanes) to make him amends, he had a beautifull daughter aged about thirteene yeares, and knowing what manner of man he was, his Father *Henriet* also yet living, he gave her to him in marriage, with a bountifull & honorable dowry

The joviall dayes of feasting being past, he went aboard a Galley with the *Poore expelled*, his Daughter, the Ambassadour, and the Nurse, departing thence to *Lerecy*, where they were nobly welcommed by *Messer Conrado*, and his Castle being not farre from thence, with an honourable traine they were conducted thither, and entertained with all possible kindnesse. Now concerceming the comfort of the Mother, meeting so happily with both her Sonnes, the joy of the brethren and mother together; having also found the faithfull Nurse, *Gasperino* and his daughter, in company now with *Conrado* and his wife, friends, familiars, and all generally in a jubilee of rejoycing: it exceedeth capacitie in mee to expresse it, and therefore I referre it to your more able imagination.

In the time of this mutuall contentment, to the end that nothing might bee wanting to compleate and perfect this universall joy, our Lord, a most abundant bestower where he beginneth, added long wished tydings concerning the life and good estate of *Henry Capece*. For even as they were feasting, and the concourse great of worthy guests; both Lords and Ladies, the first service was scarsely set on the Tables, but the Ambassador which was sent to Sicily, arrived there before them. Among many other important matters, he spake of *Henriet*, who being so long a time detained in prison by King *Charles*, when the commotion arose in the Citty against the King; the people (grudging at *Henriets* long imprisonment) slew the Guard, and set him at libertie. Then as capitall enemie to King *Charles*, hee was created Captaine Generall, following the chase, and killing the French.

Now by this meanes, he grew great in the grace of King *Pedro*, who replanting him in all the goods and honours which he had before, with very high and eminent authoritie. Hereunto the Ambassador added, that he was entertayned with extraordinary grace, and delivery of publike joy and exaltation when his Wife and Sonne were known to be living, of whom no tydings had at any time beene heard, since the houre of his surprizall. Moreover, that a swift winged Barke was now sent thither (upon the happy hearing of this newes) well furnished with noble Gentlemen, to attend till their returning backe. We needs to make no doubt concerning the tydings, brought by this Ambassadour, nor of the Gentlemens welcome, thus sent to Madam *Beritola* and *Geoffrey*; who before they would sit downe at the Table, saluted *Messer Conrado* and his kinde Lady (on the behalfe of *Henriet*) for all the great graces extended to her and her Sonne, with promise of any thing, lying in the power of *Henriet*, to rest continually at their command.

The

The like they did to *Signior Gaſperino* (whoſe liberall favours came unlooked for) with certaine aſſurance, that when *Henriet* ſhould underſtand what he had done for his other Sonne, the *Poore expelled*, there would be no defaylance of reciprocall courteſies.

As the longeſt joyes have no perpetuitie of laſting, ſo all theſe graceſull ceremonies had their concluſion, with as many ſighes and teares at parting, as joyes abounded at their firſt encountring. Imagine then, that you ſee ſuch aboard, as were to have no longer abiding, Madam *Beritola Geffrey* with the reſt; as the *Poore expelled*, the ſo late married Wives, and the faithfull Nurſe bearing them company. With proſperous windes they arrived in *Sicily*, where the Wife Sonnes, and Daughters, were joyfully met by *Henriet* at *Palermo* and with ſuch honorable pompe, as a caſe ſo important equally deſerved. The Hiſtories make further mention, that there they lived (a long while after) in much felicitie, with thankefull hearts (no doubt) to heaven, in acknowledgement of ſo many great mercies received.

The Soldan of Babylon ſent one of his Daughters, to be joyned in marriage with the King of Cholcos, *who by divers accidents (in the ſpace of foure yeares) happened into the cuſtodie of nine men, and in ſundry places. At length, being reſtored backe to her Father ſhe went to the ſaid King of* Cholcos, *as a Mayd, and as at firſt ſhe was intended to be his wife.*

The ſeventh Novell.

A lively demonſtration, that the beauty of a Woman (oftentimes) is very hurtfull to her ſelfe, and the occaſion of many evils, yea, and of death, to divers men.

PEradventure the Novell related by Madam *Æmillia*, did not extend it ſelfe ſo farre in length, as it mooved compaſſion in the Ladies mindes, hearing the hard fortune of *Beritola* and her Children, which had incited them to weeping: but that it pleaſed the Queene (upon the Tales concluſion) to command *Pamphilus*, to follow next in order with his diſcourſe; and he being thereto very obedient, began in this manner.

It is a matter of no meane difficulty (vertuous Ladies) for us to take intire knowledge of every thing we doe, becauſe as oftentimes hath beene obſerved) many men, imagine if they were rich, they ſhould live ſecurely, and without any care. And therefore, not onely have their prayers and interceſſions aymed at that end, but alſo their ſtudies and daily endevours, without refuſall of any paines or perills, have not meanely expreſſed their hourely ſolicitude. And although it hath hapened accordingly to them, and their covetous deſires fully accompliſhed; yet at length

they

they have mit with such kind of people, who likewise thirsting after their wealthy possessions, have bereft them of life, being their kinde and intimate friends, before they attained to such riches. Some other being of low and base condition, by adventuring in many skirmishes and fought ten battels, trampling in the blood of their brethren and friends, have beene mounted to the soveraigne dignitie of Kingdomes (beleeving that therein consisted the truest happinesse) but bought with the deerest price of their lives. For, beside their infinite cares and feares wherewith such greatnesse is continually attended, at their royall Tables, they have drunke poyson in a Golden pot. Many other in like manner (with most earnest appetite) have coveted beautie and bodily strength, not foreseeing with any judgement, that these wishes were not without perill; when being endued with them, they either have beene the occasion of their death, or such a lingering lamentable estate of life, as death were a thousand times more welcome to them.

But, because I would not speake particularly of all our fraile and humane affections, I dare assure ye, that there is not any one of these desires to be elected among us mortals; with entire foresight or providence; warrantable against their ominous issue. Wherefore, if we would walke directly, wee should dispose our wills and affections, to be guided onely by him, who best knoweth what is needfull for us, and will bestow them at his good pleasure. Nor let me lay this blamefull imputation upon men onely for offending in many things through our lavish desire: because you your selves (gracious Ladies) sinne highly in one, as namely, in coveting to be beautifull. So that it is not sufficient for you, to enjoy those beauties bestowne on you by Nature; but you practise to increase them by the rarities of Art. Wherefore, let it not offend you, that I tell you the hard fortune of a faire Sarazine, to whom it hapned by strange adventures, that within the compasse of foure yeares, nine severall times she was married, and onely for her beauty.

It is now a long time since there lived a Soldane in Babylon, named *Beminedab*, to whom (while he lived) many things happened, answerable to his owne desires. Among divers other Children both male and female, hee had a daughter called *Alathiella*, and she (according to the common voyce of every one that saw her) was the faireſt Lady then living in all the world. And because the King of *Colcos* had wonderfully assisted him, in a most valiant foughten battell against a mightie Armie of Arabians, who on a Soldaine had assayled him; he demanded his faire daughter in marriage, which likewise was kindly granted to him.

Where-

Whereupon a goodly and well-armed Sip was prepared for her, with all furnishment of all necessary provision, and accompanied with an honorable traine both of Lords and Ladies, as also most costly and sumptuous accoustrements, commending her to the mercy of heaven, in this manner was she sent away.

The time being propitious for their parting thence, the Marriners hoysed their sailes, leaving the port of *Alexandria*, and sayling prosperously many dayes, together. When they had past the Countrey of *Sardinia*, and (as they imagined) were well neare to their journeyes end; sodainly arose boysterous and contrary windes, which were so impetuous beyond all measure, and so tormented the Ship wherein the Lady was; but the Marriners seeing no signe of comfort, gave over all hope of escaping with life. Nevertheless, as men most expert implacable dangers, they laboured to their utmost power, and contended with infinite blustring tempest, for the space of two daye, and nights together, hoping the third day would prove more favourable. But therein they saw themselves deceived, for the violence continued still, increasing in the night time more and more, being not any way able to comprehend either where they were, or what course they tooke, neither by Marinall judgement, or any apprehension else whatsoever, the heavens where so clouded, & the nights darkneſse so extreame.

Being (unknowne to them) neere the Isle of *Majorica*, they felt the Shippe to split in the bottome: by meanes whereof, perceiving now no hope of escaping (every one caring for himselfe, and not any other) they threw forth a Squisse on the troubled waves, reposing more confidence of safetie that way, than abiding any longer in the broken ship. Howbeit such as were first descended downe, made stout resistance against all other followers, with their drawne weapons; but safetie of life so farre prevailed, that what with the tempests violence, and over-lading of the Squisse, it sunke to the bottome, and all perished that were therein. The Ship being thus split, and more than halfe full of water, tossed and tormented by the blustring winds, first one way and then another: was at last driven into a strond of the Isle *Majorica*, no other person therein remaining but onely the Lady and her women, all of them (through the rude tempest and their owne conceived feare) lying still, as if they were more than halfe dead. And there within a stones cast of the neighbouring shore, the ship (by the rough surging billowes) was fixed fast on the sands, and so continued all the rest of the night, without any further molestation of the winds.

When day appeared, and the violent stormes were more mildly appeased, the Lady who seemed well neere dead,

dead, lifted up her head, and began (weake as ſhe was) to call firſt one, and then another: but ſhe called in vaine, for ſuch as ſhe named were farre enough from her. Wherefore hearing no anſwer, nor ſeeing any one, ſhe wondred greatly, her feares encreaſing then more and more. Rayſing her ſelfe ſo well as ſhe could, ſhe beheld the Ladies that were of her company, and ſome other of her women, lying ſtill without any ſtirring: whereupon, firſt jogging one and then another, and calling them ſeverally by their names; ſhe found them bereſt of underſtanding; and, even as if they were dead; their hearts were ſo quayled, and their feare ſo over-ruling, which was no meane diſmay to the poore Lady her ſelfe. Nevertheleſſe, neceſſity now being her counſellor, ſeeing herſelfe thus all alone, and not knowing in what place ſhe was, ſhe uſed ſuch meanes to them that were living that (at the laſt) they came to better knowledge of themſelves. And being unable to gueſſe what was become of the men and Marriners, ſeeing the Ship alſo driven on the ſands, and filled with water, ſhe began with them to lament moſt grievouſly: and now it was about the houre of mid day, before they could diſcry any perſon on the ſhore, or any to pittie them in ſo urgent a neede.

At length, noone being paſt, a Gentleman named *Bajazeth*, attended by divers of his followers on horſeback, and returning from a Countrey houſe belonging to him, chanced to ride by on the ſands. Vpon ſight of the Ship lying in that caſe, he imagined truely what had hapned, and commanded one of his men to enter aboard it, which (with ſome difficultie) he did, to reſolve his Lord what remained therein. There he found the faire young Lady, with ſuch ſmall ſort of company as was left her, fearefully hidden under the prow of the Ship. So ſoone as they ſaw him, they held up their hands, wofully deſiring mercy of him: but he perceiving their Lamentable condition, and that he underſtood not what they ſayd to him, their affliction grow the greater, labouring by ſignes and geſtures, to give him knowledge of their misfortune.

The ſervant gathering what hee could by their outward behaviour, declared to his Lord what he had ſeene in the Shippe; who cauſed the woman to be brought on ſhore, and all the precious things remaining with them; conducting them with him to a place nor farre off, wherewith food and warmth he gave them comfort. By the rich garments which the Lady was cloathed withall, hee reputed her to be a Gentlewoman well derived, as the great reverence done to her by the reſt, gave him good reaſon to conceive. And although her lookes were pale and wan, as alſo her perſon mightily altered, by the tempeſtuous violence

of

of the Sea: yet notwithſtanding, ſhe appeared faire and lovely in the eye of *Bajaſeth*, whereupon forthwith he determined, that if ſhe were not married hee would enjoy her as his owne in marriage: or if hee could not winne her to be his wife, (at leaſt) ſhe ſhould be his friend, becauſe ſhee remained now in his power.

Bajaſeth was a man of ſterne lookes, rough and harſh both in ſpeech and behaviour; yet cauſing the Lady to be honourably uſed divers dayes together, ſhe became thereby well comforted and recovered. And ſeeing her beautie to exceede all compariſon, he was afflicted beyond meaſure, that he could not underſtand her, nor ſhe him, whereby he could not know of whence or what ſhe was. His amorous flames encreaſing more and more; by kinde courteous, and affable actions, he laboured to compaſſe what he aymed at. But all his endeavours proved to no purpoſe, for ſhe refuſed all familiar privacie with him, which ſo much the more kindled the furie of his fire. This being well obſerved by the Lady, having now remained there a moneth and more, and collecting by the cuſtomes of the Countrey; that ſhe was amongſt Turkes; and in ſuch a place, where although ſhe were knowne, yet it would little advantage her; beſide, long protraction of time would provoke *Bajaſeth* by faire meanes or force to obtaine his will: ſhe propounded to her ſelfe (with magnanimitie of ſpirit) to tread all misfortune under her feete, commanding her women (whereof ſhe had but three now remaining alive) that they ſhould not diſcloſe what ſhee was, except it were in ſome ſuch place, where manifeſt ſignes might yeeld hope of regaining their libertie. Moreover, ſhe admoniſhed them ſtoutly to defend their honour and chaſtitie; affirming, that ſhe had abſolutely reſolved with herſelfe that never any other ſhould enjoy her, but her entended husband: wherein her woman did much commend her, promiſing to preſerve their reputation, according as ſhe had commanded.

Day by day, were the torments of *Bajaſeth* wonderfully augmented, yet ſtill his kinde offers ſcornefully refuſed, and he as farre off from compaſſing his deſires as when he firſt began to move the matter: wherefore, perceiving that all faire courſes ſerved to no effect, hee reſolved to compaſſe his purpoſe by craft and ſubtiltie, reſerving rigorous extremitie for his finall concluſion. And having once obſerved, that wine was very pleaſing to the Lady, ſhe never being uſed to drinke any at all, becauſe (by her Countries Law) it was forbidden her: and no meane ſtore having beene lately brought to *Bajaſeth* in a Barke of *Geneway*: he reſolved to ſurprize her by meanes thereof, as a chiefe miniſter

miniſter of Venus, to heate the cooleſt blood. And ſeeming now in his outward behaviour, as if he had given over his amorous purſuite, and which ſhe ſtrove by all her beſt endeavours to withſtand: one night, after a very Majeſticke and ſolemne manner, he prepared a delicate & ſumptuous ſupper, whereto the Lady was invited: & he had given order that he who attended on her Cup, ſhould ſerve her with many wines, compounded & mingled together; which he accordingly performed, as being cuning enough in ſuch occaſions. *Alothiella* miſtruſting no ſuch trechery intended againſt her, and liking the Wines pleaſing taſte extraordinarily; dranke more than ſtood with her precedent modeſt reſolution, and forgetting all her paſſed adverſities, became very frolicke and merry: ſo that ſeeing ſome women dance after the manner obſerved there in *Majorica*, ſhe alſo fell to dancing according to the *Alexandrian* cuſtome. Which when *Bajaſeth* beheld, he imagined the victory to be more than halfe wonne, and his hearts deſire very neere the obtaining: plying her ſtill with wine upon wine, and continuing this revelling the moſt part of the night.

At the length, the invited gueſts being all gone, the Lady retired to her chamber, attended on by none but *Bajaſeth* himſelfe, and as familiarly as if he had beene one of her women, ſhe no way contradicting his bold intruſion, ſo farre had wine over-gone her ſences, and prevailed againſt all modeſt baſhfulneſſe. Theſe wanton embracings, ſtrange to her that had never taſted them before, yet pleaſing beyond meaſure, by reaſon of his trecherous advantage; afterward drew on many more of the like carowſing meetings, without ſo much as thought of her paſſed miſeries, or thoſe honorable and chaſt reſpects, that ever ought to attend on Ladies.

Now, Fortune envying thus their ſtollen pleaſures, and that ſhe, being the purpoſed wife of a potent King, ſhould thus become the wanton friend of a much meaner man, whoſe onely glory was their ſhame; altered the courſe of their too common paſtimes, by preparing a farre greater infelicitie for them. This *Bajaſeth* had a Brother, aged about five and twenty yeeres, of moſt compleate perſon, in the very beuvty of his time, & freſh as the ſweeteſt ſmelling Roſe, he being named *Amurath*. After he had once ſeene this Lady (whoſe faire feature pleaſed him beyond all womens elſe) ſhe ſeemed in his ſodaine apprehenſion, both by her outward behaviour and civill apparancie, highly to deſerve his very beſt opinion, for ſhe was not meanely entered into his favour. Now he found nothing to his hinderance, in obtaining the heighth of his hearts deſire, bnt onely the ſtrict cuſtodie and guard, wherein his brother *Bajaſeth* kept

kept her: which rayſed a cruell conceite in his minde, wherein followed (not long after) as cruell an effect.

It came to paſſe, that at the ſame time; in the Port of the Citie, called *Caffa*, there lay then a Ship laden with Merchandize, being bound thence for *Smyrna*, of which ſhip two *Geneway* Merchants (being brethren) were the Patrons & Owners, who had given direction for hoyſing the ſayles to depart thence when the winde ſhould ſerve. With theſe two *Geneweyes Amurah* had covenanted, for himſelfe to goe aboard the ſhip the night enſuing, and the Lady in his company. When night was come, having reſolved with himſelfe what was to be done: in a diſguiſed habite he went to the houſe of *Bajazeth*, who ſtood not any way doubtful of him, and with certaine of his moſt faithfull Confederates (whom he had ſworne to the entended action) they hid themſelves cloſely in the houſe. After ſome part of the night was everpaſt, he knowing the ſeverall lodgings both of *Bajazeth* and *Alathiella*, ſlew his brother ſoundly ſleeping; and ſeizing on the Lady, whom hee found awake and weeping, threatned to kill her alſo, if ſhe made any noyſe. So being well furniſhed with the greater part of worldly Iewels belonging to *Bajazeth*, unheard or undeſcried by any body, they went preſently to the Port, and there (without any further delay) *Amurath* and the Lady were received into the Ship, but his companions returned backe againe; when the Mariners, having their ſayles ready ſet, and the wind aptly fitting for them, lanched forth merrily into the maine.

You may well imagine, that the Lady was extraordinarily afflicted with griefe for her firſt misfortune; and now this ſecond chancing ſo ſodainly, muſt needs offend her in greater manner: but *Amurath* did ſo kindly comfort her with milde, modeſt, & manly perſwaſions, that all remembrance of *Bajazeth* was quickly forgotten, and ſhe became converted to lovely demeanor, even when Fortune prepared a freſh miſery for her, as not ſatisfied with thoſe whereof ſhe had taſted already, The Lady being unequalled for beauty (as I ſaid before) her behaviour alſo in ſuch exquiſite and commendable kind expreſſed; the two brethren owners of the Ship, become ſo deepely enamored of her, that forgetting all their moſt ſerious affaires, they ſtudied by all poſſible meanes, to be pleaſing & gracious in her eye yet with ſuch a careful cariage, that *Amurah* ſhould not ſee nor ſuſpect it.

When the Brethren had imparted their loves extreamity each to other, & plainely perceived, that though they were equally in their fiery torments, yet their deſires were utterly contrary: they began ſeverally to conſider, that gaine gotten by Merchandize, admitted an equall diviſion, but this purchaſe was of a different quality, pleading the title

of

of a sole possession, without any partner or intruder. Fearefull and jealous were they both, least eather should aym at the others intention, yet willing enough to shake hands, in ridding *Amurath* out of the way, who onely was the hinderer of their hopes. Whereupon they concluded together that on a day when the ship sayled on very swiftly, and *Amurath* was sitting upon the Decke, studiously observing how the Billowes combated each with other, and not suspecting any such treason in them towards him: stealing softly behinde him, suddainely they threw him into the Sea, the ship floating on above halfe a Leagues distance, before any perceived his fall into the Sea.

When the Lady heard thereof, and saw no likely meanes of recovering him againe, she fell to her wonted teares and lamentations: but the two Lovers came quickly to comfort her, using kinde words and pithy perswasions (albeit she understood them not, or at the most very little) to appease the violence of her passions; and to speake uprightly, she did not so much bemoane the losse of *Amurath*, as the multiplying of her owne misfortunes, still one succeeding in the necke of another. After divers long and well delivered Orations, as also very faire and courteous behaviour, they had indifferently pacified her complaynings: they began to discourse and commune with themselves, which of them had most right and title to *Alathsella*, and consequently ought to enjoy her. Now that *Amurath* was gone, each pleaded his priviledge to be as good as the others, both in the ship, Goods and all advantages else whatsoever hapning: which the elder brother absolutely denyed, alleaging first his proprietie of birth, a reason sufficient, whereby his younger ought to give his place: Likewise his right and interest both in the ship and goods, to be more than the others, as being heire to his father, and therefore in justice to bee highest preferred. Last of all, that his strength onely threw *Amurath* into the Sea, and therefore gave him the full possession of his prize, no right at all remaining to his brother.

From temperate and calme speeches they fall to frownes and ruder Language, which heated their blood in such violent manner, that forgetting brotherly affection, and all respects of Parents or friends, they drew forth their Ponyards, stabbing each other so often and desperately, that before any in the ship had the power or meanes to part them, both of them being very dangerously wounded. the younger brother fell downe dead: the elder being in little better case, by receiving so many perilous hurts remained (nevertheless) living. This unhappy accident displeased the Lady very highly seeing her selfe thus left

left alone, without the helpe or counsell of any body; and fearing greatly, least the anger of the two Brethrens Parents and friends, should now be layd to her charge, and thereon follow severity of punishment. But the earnest entreaties of the wounded surviver, and their arrivall at *Smyrna* soone after, delivered him from the danger of death, gave some ease to her sorrow, and there with him she went on shore.

Remayning there with him in a common Inne, while he continued in the Chirurgians cure, the fame of her singular and much admired beautie was soone spread abroad throughout all the Citie, and amongst the rest, to the hearing of the Prince of *Ionia*, who lately before (on very urgent occasions) was come to *Smyrna*. This rare rumour made him desirous to see her, and after he had seene her, she seemed farre fairer in his eye, than common report had noysed her to be, and suddenly grew so enamored of her, that she was the onely Idea of his best desires. Afterward, understanding in what manner she was brought thither, he devised how to make her his owne, practising all possible meanes to accomplish it: which when the wounded Brothers Parents heard of, they not onely made tender of their willingnesse therein, but also immediately sent her to him: a matter most highly pleasing to the Prince, and likewise to the Lady her selfe; because she thought now to be freed from no meane perill, which otherwise the wounded Merchants friends might have inflicted upon her. The Prince perceiving, that beside her matchlesse beautie, she had the true character of Royall behaviour, greeved the more, that he could not be further informed of what Countrey she was. His opinion being so stedfastly grounded, that (lesse than Noble) she could not be, was a motive to set a keener edge on his affection towards her, yet not to enjoy her as in honourable and loving complement onely, but as his espoused Lady and Wife. Which appearing to her by apparent demonstrations, though entercourse of speech wanted to confirme it; remembrance of her so many sad disasters and being now in a most noble and respected condition, her comfort enlarged it self with a setled hope, her feares grew free from any more molestations, and her beauties became the onely theame and argument of private and publike conference in all *Natolia*, that (well-neere) there was no other discourse, in any Assembly whatsoever.

Hereupon the Duke of Athens, being young, goodly, and valiant of person, as also a neere Kinsman to the Prince, had a desire to see her; and under colour of visiting his noble Kinsman, (as oftentimes he had done) attended with an honorable traine, to *Smirna* he came being there most

royally

royally welcommed, and bounteously feasted. Within few dayes of his there being, conference passed between them, concerning the rare beautie of the Lady: the Duke questioning the Prince, whether she was of such wonder, as fame had acquainted the world withall? Whereto the Prince replyed; Much more (Noble kinsman) than can be spoken of, as your owne eyes shall witnesse, without crediting any words of mine. The Duke soliciting the Prince thereto very earnestly, they both went together to see her, and she having before heard of their comming, adorned her selfe the more Majestically, entertaining them with ceremonious demeanor (after her Countries custome) which gave most gracious and unspeakable acceptation.

At the Princes affable motion, she sate downe between them, their delight being beyond expression, to behold her, but abridged of much more felicity, because they understood not any part of her Language, so that they could have no other conference, but by lookes and outward signes onely, and the more they beheld her the more they marvelled at her rare perfections, especially, the Duke, who hardly credited that she was a mortall creature. This not perceiving, what deepe carowses of amorous poyson his eyes dranke downe by the meere sight of her, yet thinking thereby onely to be satisfied, he lost both himselfe and his best sences, growing in love (beyond all measure) with her. When the Prince and he were parted from her, and he was at his owne private amorous meditations in his Chamber, he reputed the Prince farre happier than any man else, by the enjoyning of such a peerelesse beauty.

After many intricate and distracted cogitations, which molested his braines, incessantly, regarding more his lovs wanton heate, than reason, kindred, and honourable hospitalitie, he resolutely determined (whatsoever ensued thereupon) to bereave the Prince of his faire felicity, that none but himself might possesse such a treasure, wch he esteemed to be the height of all happinesse. His courage being conformable to his bad intent, with all hast it must be put in execution; so that equitie, justice, and honesty, being quite abandoned, nothing but subtle stratagems were now his meditations. On a day according to a fore-compacted trechery which he had ordered with a Gentleman of the Princes Chamber, who was named *Churiacy*, he prepared his horses to be in readines, and dispatched all his affaires else for a sodaine departure. The night following, he was secretly conveyed by *Churiacy* and a friend of his with him (being both armed into the Princes chamber, where he while the Lady was soundly sleeping) stood at a gazing window towards the Sea, naked in his shirt to take the coole

cool air, because the season was exceeding hot. Having formerly instructed his friend what was to be done, very softly they stept to the Prince, and running their weapons quite thorow his body, immediately they threw him forth of the window.

Here you are to observe, that the Palace was seated on the Sea shore, and very high, and the window whereat the Prince stood looking forth, was directly over divers houses, which the long continuance of time, and incessant beating on by the surges of the Sea, had so defaced and ruinated them, as seldome they were visited by any person; whereof the Duke having knowledge before, was the easier perswaded that the falling of the Princes body in so vast a place, could neither be heard nor discryed by any. The Duke and his companion, having thus executed what they came for, proceeded yet in their cunning a little further, casting a strangling cord about the neck of *Curiacy*, seemed as if they hugged and embraced him, but drew it with so main strength that he never spake word after, and so threw him downe after the Prince.

This done, and plainly perceiving that they were not heard or seen, either by the Lady, or any other: the Duke took a light in his hand, going over the bed, where the Lady lay most sweetly sleeping; whom the more he beheld, the more he admired and commended; but if in her garments she appeared so pleasing, what did she now in a bed of such state and Majesty? Being no way daunted with his so late committed sinne, but swimming rather in surfet of joy, his hands all bloody, and his soul much more ugly; he layd him down on the bed by her, bestowing infinite kisses and embraces on her, she supposing him to be the Prince all this while, not opening her eyes to be otherwise resolved. But this was not the delight he aimed at, neither did he think it safe for him, to delay time with any longer tarrying there: Wherefore, having his agents at hand fit and convenient for the purpose, they surprised her in such sort, that she could not make any noise or outcry, and carrying her through the same false posterne, whereat themselves had entred, laying her in a Princely litter; away they went with all possible speed, not tarrying in any place, untill they were arrived near *Athens*. But thither he would not bring her, because himselfe was a married man, but rather to a goodly Castle of his owne, not distant farre from the City; where he caused her to be kept very secretly (to her no little grief and sorrow) yet attended on, and served in most honourable manner.

The Gentlemen usually attending on the Prince, having waited all the next morning till noone, in expectation of

his rising, and hearing no stirring in the Chamber, did thrust at the doore, which was but onely closed together, and finding no body there, they presently imagined, that he was privately gone to some other place, where (with the Lady whom he so dearely affected) he might remaine some few dayes for his more contentment, and so they rested verily perswaded. Within some few dayes following, while no other doubt came in question, the Princes Foole, entering by chance among the ruined houses, where lay the dead bodies of the Prince and *Churiacy*: tooke hold of the Cord about *Churiacyes* neck, and so went along dragging it after him. The dead body being knowne to many, with no meane mervaile how hee should be murthered in so vile manner; by gifts and faire perswasions they won him to bring them to the place where he found it. And there (to the no little griefe of the whole Citie) they found the Princes body also, which they caused to be interred with all the Majestick pompe that might be.

Upon further inquisition, who should commit so horrid a deed, perceiving likewise that the Duke of Athens was not to be found, but was closely gone: they judged (according to the truth) that he had his hand in this bloody businesse, and had carried away the Lady with him. Immediately, they elected the Princes brother to be their Lord and Soveraigne, inciting him to revenge so horrid a wrong, and promising to assist him with their utmost power. The new chosen Prince being assured afterwards, by other more apparent and remarkable proofes, that his people informed him with nothing but truth: sodainely, and according as they had concluded, with the helpe of neighbours, kindred and friends, collected from divers places; he mustered a good and a powerful army, marching on towards Athens, to make warre against the Duke.

No sooner heard hee of this warlike preparation made against him, but he likewise levied forces for his owne defence, and to his succour came many great States: among whom, the Emperour of *Constantinople* sent his son *Constantine*, attended on by his Nephew *Emanuell*, with Troopes of faire and towardly force, who were honorably welcomed and entertained by the Duke, but much more by the Duchesse, because she was their sister in Law.

Military provision thus proceeding on dayly more and more, the Dutchesse making choyse of a fit and convenient houre, tooke these two Princes with her to a withdrawing Chamber; and there in floods of teares flowing from her eyes, wringing her hands, and sighing incessantly, she recounted the whole History, occasion of the warre, and how dishonorably the Duke dealt with her about this strange woman,

woman, whom he purposed to keepe in despight of her, and thinking that she knew nothing thereof; and complayning very earnestly unto them, entreated that for the Dukes honour, and her comfort, they would give their best assistance in this case.

The two young Lords knew all this matter, before she thus reported it to them; and therefore, without staying to listen to her any longer, but comforting her so well as they could, with promise of their best imployed paines: being informed by her, in what place the Lady was so closely kept, they tooke their leave, and parted from her. Often they had heard the Lady much commended, and her incomparable beauty highly extolled, yea even by the Duke himselfe; which made them the more desirous to see her: wherefore earnestly they solicited him to let them have a sight of her, and he (forgetting what happened to the Prince, by shewing her so unadvisedly to him) promised to grant their request. Causing a very magnificent dinner to be prepared in a goodly garden, at the Castle where the Lady was kept; on the morrow, attended on by a small traine, away they rode to dine with her.

Constantine being seated at the Table, he began (as one confounded with admiration) to observe her judiciously, affirming secretly to his soule that he had never seene so compleat a woman before; & allowing it for justice, that the Duke or any other whatsoever, if (to enjoy so rare a beauty) they had committed treason, or any mischiefe else besides, yet in reason they ought to be held excused. Nor did he bestow so many lookes upon her, but his praises infinitely surpassed them, as thinking hee could not sufficiently commend her, following the Duke step by step in affections; for being now growne amorous of her, and remembrance of the intended warre, utterly abandoned; no other thoughts could come nearer him but how to bereave the Duke of her, yet concealing his love, and not imparting it to any one.

While his fancies were thus amorously set on fire, the time came, that they must make head against the Prince, who already was marching within the Dukes dominions: wherfore the Duke, *Constantine*, and all the rest, according to a counsell held among them, went to defend certaine of the Frontiers, to the end that the Prince might passe no further. Remaining there divers dayes together, *Constantine* (who could thinke on nothing else but the beautifull Lady) considering with himselfe, that while the Duke was now so farre from her, it was an easie matter to compasse his intent: Hereupon, the better to colour his present returne to Athens, he seemed to be surprized with a sudden extreame sickenesse, in regard whereof (by the Dukes free license and

leaving all his power to his coſen *Emanuel*) forthwith he journyed back to *Athens*. After ſome conference had with his ſiſter, about her diſhonourable wrongs endured at his hands only by the Lady, he ſolemnly proteſted, that if ſhe were ſo pleaſed he would aid her powerfully in the matter, by taking her from the place where ſhe was, and never more afterward to be ſeen in that Country any more.

The Dutcheſſe being faithfully perſwaded, that he would do this only for her ſake, and not in any affection he bare to the Lady, anſwered, that it highly pleaſed her; alwayes provided that it might be performed in ſuch ſort, as the Duke her husband ſhould never underſtand that ever ſhe gave conſent thereto; which *Conſtantine* ſware unto her by many deep oathes, whereby ſhee referred all to his owne diſpoſition. *Conſtantine* hereupon prepared in a readineſſe a ſubtile Bark, ſending it in an evening, neere to the Garden where the Lady reſorted, having firſt informed the people which were in it, fully what was to be done. Afterwards, accompanyed with ſome other of his attendants, he went to the Palace, to the Lady, where he was gladly entertained, not only by ſuch as waited on her, but alſo by the Lady her ſelfe.

Leading her along by the arm towards the Garden, attended on by two of her ſervants, and two of his owne; ſeeming as if he was ſent from the Duke to conferre with her; they walked alone to a Port opening on the Sea, which ſtanding ready open, upon a ſign given by him to one of his compliices, the Bark was brought cloſe to the ſhore; and the Lady being ſodainly ſeized on, was immediately conveyed into it; and he returning back to her people with his ſword drawne, ſaid, Let no man ſtirre, or ſpeak a word, except he be willing to loſe his life; for I intend not to rob the Duke of his fair friend, but to expell the ſhame and diſhonour that he hath offered to my ſiſter; no one being ſo hardy as to returne him any anſwer. Aboard went *Conſtantine* with his conſorts, and ſitting neer to the Lady; who wrung her hands, and wept bitterly; he commanded the Mariners to launch forth, flying away on the wings of the winde, till about the break of day following, they arrived at *Meſſa*. There they took landing, and repoſed on ſhore for ſome few dayes, *Conſtantine* labouring to comfort the Lady, even as if ſhe had been his owne ſiſter, ſhe having good cauſe to curſe her infortunate beauty.

Going aboord the Bark againe, within few dayes they came to *Setalia*, and there fearing the reprehenſion of his Father, and leſt the Lady ſhould be taken from him, it pleaſed *Conſtantine* to make his ſtay, as in a place of no mean ſecurity. And (as before) after much kind behaviour

our used towards the Lady, without any merits in her selfe to redresse the least of all these great extremeties, she became more milde and affable, for discontentment did not a jot quail her.

While occurrences passed on in this manner, it fortuned that *Osbech* the King of Turkie (who was in continuall war with the Emperour) came by accident to *Lajazzo*, and hearing there how lasciviously *Constantine* spent his time in *Setalia*, with a Lady which he had stolne, being but weake and slenderly guarded; in the night with certaine well provided ships, his men and he entred the towne, and surprized many people in their beds, before they knew of their enemies coming, killing such as stood upon their defence against them, (among whom was *Constantine*,) and burning the whole Towne, brought their booty and prisoners aboord their Ships, wherewith they returned back to *Lajazzo*. Being thus come to *Lajazzo*, *Osbech* who was a brave and gallant young man, upon a review of the pillage, found the fair Lady, whom he knew to be the beloved of *Constantine*, because she was found lying on his bed. Without any further delay, he made choise of her to be his wife, causing his nuptials to be honourably solemnized, and many months he lived there in great joy with her.

But before occasions grew to this effect, the Emperour made a confederacy with *Bassiza*, King of *Cappadocia*, that he should descend with his forces one way upon *Osbech*, and he would assault him with his power, on the other. But he could not so well bring this to passe, because the Emperour would not yeeld to *Bassiza* in any unreasonable matter he demaunded. Nevertheless, when he understood what had happened to his son (for whom his grief was beyond all measure) he granted the King of *Cappadocias* request; soliciting him with all instancy, to be the more speedy in assaylying *Osbech*. It was not long, before he heard of this conjuration made against him: and therefore he speedily mustered up all his forces, ere he would be encompassed by two such potent Kings, and marched on to meet the King of *Cappadocia*, leaving his Lady and Wife (for her safety) at *Lajazzo*, in the custody of a true and loyall servant of his.

Within a short while after, he drew near the Campe belonging to the King of *Cappadocia*, where boldly hee gave him battle, chancing therein to bee slaine, his Army broken and discomfited: by meanes whereof, the King of *Cappadocia*, remaining Conquerour, marched on towards *Lajazzo*, every one yeelding him obeysance all the way as he went. In the meane space, the servant to *Osbech*, who was named *Artic-*

ebus, and with whom the faire Lady was left in guard; although he was aged, yet seeing she was so extraordinarily beautifull, he fell in love with her, forgetting the solemne vowes he had made to his Master. One happinesse he had in this case to helpe him, namely, that he understood and could speake her Language: a matter of no meane comfort to her, who constrainedly had lived divers yeares together, in the state of a deafe or dumbe Woman, because every where else they understood her not, nor she them, but by shewes and signes.

This benefit of familiar conference, began to embolden his hopes, elevate his courage, and make him seeme more youthfull in his owne opinion, than any abilitie of body could speake unto him, or promise him in the possession of her, who was as farre beyond him, and so unequall to bee enjoyed by him, yet to advance his hopes a great deale higher, Newes came, that *Osbech* was vanquished and slaine, and that *Bassano* made every where great havocke of all: whereon they concluded together, not to tarry there any longer, but storing themselves with the goods of *Osbech*, secretly they departed thence to *Rhodes*. Being seated there in some indifferent abiding, it came to passe that *Antiochus* fell into a deadly sicknesse, to whom came a *Cyprian* Merchant, one much esteemed by him, as being an intimate friend and kind acquaintance, and in whom he reposed no small confidence. Feeling his sicknesse to encrease more and more upon him daily, he determined not onely to leave such wealth as he had to this Merchant, but the faire Lady likewise. And calling them both to his bed side, he spake in this manner.

Deare Love, and my most worthily respected friend, I perceive plainely and infallibly, that I am now drawing neare unto my end, which much discontenteth me; because my hope was to have lived longer in this world, for the enjoying of your kind and most esteemed company. Yet one thing maketh my death very pleasing and welcome to mee; namely, that lying thus in my bed of latest comfort in this life, I shall expire and finish my course in the armes of those two persons, whom I most affected in all this world, as you my ever-deareſt friend, and you faire Lady, whom (since the very first sight of you) I loved and honoured in my soul. Irkesome and very grievous it is to me, that (if I die) I shall leave you here a stranger, without the counsell and helpe of any body: and yet much more offensive would it become, if I had not such a friend as you here present, who (I am faithfully perswaded) will have the like care and respect of her (even for my sake) as of my selfe, if time and allotted my longer tarrying here. And therefore (worthy

thy friend) moſt earneſtly I deſire you, that if I die, all mine affaires and ſhe may remaine to your truſtie care, as being (by my ſelfe) abſolutely commended to your providence, and ſo to diſpoſe both of the one and the other, as may beſt agree with the comfort of my ſoule. As for you (choiſe beautie) I humbly intreate, that after my death you would not forget me, to the end, I may make my vaunt in another world, that I was affected here by the faireſt Lady that ever Nature framed. If of theſe two things you will give me aſſurance, I ſhall depart from you with no meane comfort.

The friendly Merchant, and likewiſe the Lady, hearing theſe words, wept both bitterly: and after hee had given over ſpeaking, kindly they comforted him, with promiſes and ſolemne Vowes, that if he died, all ſhould be performed which he had requeſted. Within a ſhort while after, he departed out of this life, and they gave him honorable buriall, according to that Countrey cuſtome. Which being done, the Merchant diſpatching all his affaires at *Rhodes*, was deſirous to returne home to *Cyprus*, in a Carracke of the Catelans then there being: moving the Lady in the matter, to underſtand how ſhe ſtood inclined, becauſe urgent occaſions called him thence to *Cyprus*. The Lady made anſwer, that ſhe was willing to paſſe thither with him, hoping for the love he bare to deceaſed *Antiochus*, that he would reſpect her as his ſiſter. The Merchant was willing to give her any contentment, but yet reſolved her, that under the title of being his Siſter, it would be no warrant of ſecuritie to them both. Wherefore he rather adviſed her, to ſtile him as her husband, and he would terme her his Wife, and ſo he ſhould be ſure to defend her from all injuries whatſoever.

Being aboord the Carracke, they had a Cabine and ſmall bed conveniently allowed them, where they ſlept together, that they might the better be reputed as man and wife; for, to paſſe otherwiſe, would have beene very dangerous to them both. And queſtionleſſe, their faithfull promiſe made at *Rhodes* to *Antiochus*, ſickneſſe on the Sea, and mutable reſpect they had of each others credit, was a conſtant reſtraint to all wanton deſires, and a motive rather to incite Chaſtitie, than otherwiſe, and ſo (I hope) you are perſwaded of them: But howſoever, the windes blew merrily, the Carracke ſailed luſtily, and (by this time) they are arrived at *Baffa*, where the *Cyprian* Merchant dwelt, and where ſhee continued a long while with him, no one knowing otherwiſe, but that ſhe was his wife indeed.

Now it fortuned, that there arrived alſo at the ſame *Baffa* (about ſome ſpeciall occaſions of his) a Gentleman whoſe name was *Antigonus*, well ſtept into yeares, and better ſto-

red with wisdom than wealth: because by medling in many matters, while he followed the service of the King of *Cyprus*, Fortune had been very adverse to him. The ancient Gentleman, passing (on a day) by the house where the Lady lay, and the Merchant being gone about his businesse into *Armenia*: he chanced to see the Lady at a window of the house, and because she was very beautifull, hee observed her the more advisedly, recollecting his senses together, that (doubtlesse) he had seen her before, but in what place he could not remember. The Lady herself likewise, who had so long time been Fortunes tennis-ball, & the term of her many miseries drawing now neer an ending: began to conceive (upon the very first sight of *Antigonus*) that she had formerly seen him in *Alexandria*, serving her father in place of great degree Hereupon a sodain hope perswaded her, that by the advice and furtherance of this Gentleman, she could recover her wonted royal condition: and opportunity now aptly fitting her, by the absence of her pretended Merchant-husband, she sent for him, requesting to have a few words with him.

When he was come into the house, she bashfully demanded of him, if he was not named *Antigonus* of *Famagosta*, because she knew one like him so called? He answered that he was so named: saying moreover, Madam, me thinks, I should know you, but I cannot remember where I have seen you, wherefore I would intreat (if it might stand with your good liking) that my memory might bee quickned with better knowledg of you. The Lady perceiving him to be the very man indeed, weeping unceasantly, she threw her arms about his neck, and soon after asked *Antigonus* (who stood as one confounded with marvail) if he had never seen her in *Alexandria*. Upon these words *Antigonus* knew her immediately to be *Alathiella*, daughter to the great Soldane, who was supposed (long since) to bee drowned in the Sea: and offering to doe her such reverence as became him, she would not permit him, but desired that he would be assistant to her, and willed him also to sit down a while by her.

A goodly chair being brought him, in very humble manner he demanded of her, what had become of her in so long a time, because it was verily beleeved throughout all *Aegypt*, that she was drowned in the Sea. I would it had been so, answered the Lady, rather then to lead such a life as I have done; and I think my father himself would wish it so, if ever he should come to the knowledg thereof. With these words the tears rained down her fair cheeks: wherefore *Antigonus* thus spake unto her. Madam, discomfort not your self before you have occasion; but (if you bee so

pleased

pleased) relate your passed accidents to mee, and what your course of life hath been: perhaps, I shall give you so friendly advise as may stand you in stead, and no way be injurious to you.

Fetching a sigh, even as if her heart would have split in sunder, thus she replyed. Ah *Antigonus*, me thinkes when I look on thee, I seem to behold my royall Father, and therefore moved with the like religious zeal and charitable love, as in duty I owe unto him: I will make known to thee, what I rather ought to conceal and hide from any person living. I know thee to be honourable, discreet, and truly wise; though I am a frail, simple, and weak woman, therefore I dare discover to thee, rather then any other that I know, by what strange and unexpected misfortunes, I have lived so long obscurely in the world. And if in thy great and grave judgment (after the hearing of my many miseries) thou canst any way restore me to my former estate, I pray thee do it: but if thou perceive it impossible to be done, as earnestly likewise I entreat thee, never to reveal to any living person, that either thou hast seen me, or heard any speech of me. After these words, the tears still streaming from her fair eyes, she recounted the whole passage of her late mishaps, even from her shipwrack in the sea of *Majorica*, untill that very instant hour; speaking them in such harsh manner as they hapned, and not sparing any jot of them.

Antiochus being moved to much compassion, declared how he pitied her by his tears; and having been silent an indifferent while, as considering in his sence what was best to be done, thus he began. Mada, seeing you have past through such a multitude of misfortunes, yet undiscovered, what, and who you are: I will render you as blamelesse to your Father, and estate you as fairly in his love, as at the houre when you parted from him; and afterward make you wife to the King of *Cholchos*. She demanding of him, by what means possibly this could be accomplished, briefly hee made it known to her, how, and in what manner he would perform it.

To cut off further tedious circumstances, forthwith hee returned to *Famagosta*, and going before the King of the countrey, thus he spake to him. Sir, you may (if you will be pleased) in an instant, do me an exceeding honour, who have been impoverished by your service, and also a deed of great renown to your self, without any much matter of expence and cost. The King demanding how. *Antigonus* thus answered. The fair daughter of the Soldane, so generally reported to be drowned, is arrived at *Beffa*, and to preserve her honour from blemishing, hath suffered many

crosses and calamities: being at this instant in very poore estate, yet desirous to visit her father. If you please to send her home under my conduct, it will be great honour to you, and no mean benefit to me, which kindnesse will for ever be thankfully remembred by the Soldane. The King in Royall magnificence, replyed suddainly, that hee was highly pleased with these good tidings; and having sent honourably for her from *Baffa*, with great pomp she was conducted to *Famagosta* and there most graciously welcomed both by the King and Queen, with solemne triumphs, banquets, and revelling, performed in most Majesticke manner.

Being questioned by the King and Queen, concerning so large a time of strange misfortunes; according as *Antigonus* had formerly instructed her, so did she shape the form of her answers, and satisfied (with honour) all their demands. So, within few dayes after, upon her request, with an honourable train of Lords and Ladies, she was sent and conducted all the way by *Antigonus*, untill she came to the Soldans Court.

After some dayes of her reposing there, the Soldane was desirous to understand, how she could possibly live so long in any Kingdome or Province whatsoever, and yet no knowledge to be taken of her. The Lady, who perfectly retained by heart, and had all her lessons at her fingers ends, by the wary instruction which *Antigonus* had given her, answered her father in this manner: Sir, about the 20 day after my departure from you, a very terrible and dreadfull tempest overtooke us, so that in the dead time of the night, our ship being split in sunder upon the sands, near to a place called *Verna*; what became of all the men that were aboord, I neither knew, nor ever heard of.

Only I remember, then, when death appeared, and I being recovered from death to life, certain Peasants of the Country comming to search the ship so wrackt, I was first with two of my women brought safely on shore.

No sooner were we there, but certain rude shag haird villains set upon us, carrying away from me both my women, then hailing me along by the hair of my head: neither tears nor interceſſions could draw any pity from them. As thus they dragd me in a spacious wood: four horsemen on a sodain came riding by, who seeing how dishonourably the villains used me, rescued me from them, and forced them to flight. But the four horsemen seeming (in my judgement) to be persons of power and authority, letting them go, came to me; urging sundry questions to me, which neither

I understood, nor they mine answers. After many deliberations held among themselves, setting me upon one of their horses, they brought me to a Monasterie of religious women, according to the custome of their Law: and there, whatsoever they did or said I knew not, but I was benignly welcomed thither, and honoured of them extraordinarily; where (with them in Devotion) I dedicated my selfe to the Goddesse of chastity, who is highly reverenced among the women of the Countrey, and to her religious service they are wholly addicted.

After I had continued some time among them, and learned a little of their language; they asked me, of whence, and what I was. Reason gave me so much understanding, to be fearfull of telling them the truth, for fear of expulsion from among them, as an enemy to their Law and Religion, wherefore I answered (according as necessity urged) that I was daughter to a Gentleman of *Cyprus*, who sent me to be married in *Candie*; but our fortunes (meaning such as had the charge of me) fell out quite contrary to our expectations, by losses, shipwrack, and other mischances, adding many matters more beside, only in regard of fear, and yeelding obediently to observe their customes.

At length she that was in chiefest preheminence among these women (whom they termed by the name of their Lady Abbesse) demanded of me, whether I was willing to bide in that condition of life, or to return home again into *Cyprus*: I answered, that I desired nothing more. But she being very carefull of mine honour, would never repose confidence in any that came for *Cyprus*, till two honest Gentlemen of *France*, who hapned thither about two moneths since, accompanied with their wives, one of them being a neer kinswoman to the Lady Abbesse. And she well knowing that they travelled in Pilgrimage to *Ierusalem*, to visit the holy Sepulcher, where (as they beleeve) that he whom they held for their God was buried, after the Iews had put him to death; recommended me to their loving trust, with speciall charge, for delivering me to my Father in *Cyprus*. What honourable love and respect I found in the company of those Gentlemen and their wives, during our voyage back to *Cyprus*, the History would be over-tedious in reporting, neither is it much materiall to your purpose, because your demand is to another end.

Sailing along prosperously in our ship, it was not long before we arrived at *Baffa*, where being landed, and not knowing any person, neither what I should say to the Gentlemen, who only were carefull for delivering me to my Father, according as they were charged by the reve-

rend

rend Abbesse: it was the will of heaven doubtlesse (in pity and compassion of my passed disasters) that I was no sooner come on shore at *Baffa*, but I should there happily meet with *Antigonus*, whom I called unto in our Countrey Language, because I would not bee understood by the Gentlemen and their wives, requesting him to acknowledg me as his daughter. Quickly hee apprehended mine intention, accomplishing what I requested, and (according to his poore power) most bounteously feasted the Gentlemen and their wives, conducting me to the King of *Cyprus*, who received me royally, and sent me home to you, with so much honour, as I am no way able to relate. What else remaineth to be said, *Antigonus* who hath oft heard the whole story of my misfortunes, at better leisure will report.

Antigonus then turning to the Soldane, said: My Lord, as she hath often told me, and by relation both of the Gentlemen and their wives, shee hath delivered nothing but truth. Only she hath forgotten somewhat worth the speaking, as thinking it not fit for her to utter, because indeed it is not so convenient for her. Namely how much the Gentlemen and their wives (with whom shee came) commended the rare honesty, and integrity of life, as also the unspotted vertue wherein she lived, among those chaste religious women, as they constantly (both with teares and solemn protestations) avouched to me, when kindly they resigned their charge to me. Of all which matters, and many more beside, if I should make discourse to your Excellency, this whole day, the night ensuing, and the next dayes full extendure, are not sufficient to acquaint you withall. Let it suffice then that I have said so much, as (both by the reports, and mine own understanding) may give you faithfull assurance, to make your Royall vaunt, of having the fairest most, vertuous and honest Ladie to your daughter, of any King or Prince whatsoever.

The Soldane was joyfull beyond all measure, welcomming both him and the rest in most stately manner, oftentimes entreating the Gods very heartily, that he might live to requite them with equall recompence, who had so graciously honoured his daughter: but above al the rest the King of *Cyprus*, who sent her home so Majestically. And having bestown great gifts on *Antigonus*, within a few dayes after, he gave him leave to return to *Cyprus*: with thankefull favours to the King, as well by Letters, as also by Ambassadors expressely sent, both from himselfe and his daughter.

When as this businesse was fully finished, the Soldane desiring to accomplish what formerly was intended and begun

begun; namely, that she might be wife to the King of *Colchos*; he gave him intelligence of all that had hapned; writing moreover to him, that (if he were so pleased) hee would yet send her in Royall manner to him. The King was exceeding joyfull of these glad-tidings, and dispatching a worthy train to fetch her, she was conveyed thither very pompously; and she who had been imbraced by so many, was received by him as an honest virgin, living long time after with him in much joy and felicity. And therefore it hath been said as a common Proverb: The mouth wel kist comes not short of good Fortune, but is still renewed like the Moon.

The Count D. Angiers *being falsly accused, was banished out of* France, *and left his two children in* England *in divers places. Returning afterward (unknowne) through* Scotland, *he found them advanced unto great dignity. Then repairing to the habit of a Servitour, into the King of* France *his Army, and his innocency made publickly known, he was reseated in his honourable degree.* vell.

The Eight Novell.

Whereby all men may plainly understand, that loyalty faithfully kept to the Prince (what perills soever do ensue) doth yet nevertheless renowne a man, and bring him to far greater honour.

THe Ladies sighed very often hearing the variety of woefull miseries hapning to *Alathiella*: but who knoweth, what occasion moved them to those sighes? Perhaps there were some among them, who rather sighed they could not be so often married as she was, rather then for any other compassion they had of her disasters. But leaving that to their own construction, they smiled merrily at the last speeches of *Pamphilus*: and the Queen perceiving the Novell to be ended, she fixed her eye on Madam *Eliza*, as signifying thereby, that she was next to succeed in order; which she joyfully imbracing, spake as followeth. The field is large wherein all this day we have walked, and there is not any one here so wearied with running the former races, but nimbly would adventure on as many more, so copious are the alterations of fortune, in sad repetition of her wonderfull changes; and among the infinity of her various courses, I must make addition of another, which I trust will no way discontent you.

When the Roman Empire was translated from the French to the Germans, mighty dissention grew between both the Nations, insomuch, that it drew a dismall and a lingring

warre. In which respect, as well for the safety of his own Kingdome, as to annoy and disturb his enemies; the King of *France* and one of his sonnes, having congregated the forces of their own Dominions, as also of their friends and confederates, they resolved manfully to encounter their enemies. But before they would adventure any rash proceeding, they held it as the chiefest part of policy and royall providence, not to leave the State without a Chief or Governour. And having had good experience of *Gualtier*, Count *D'Angers*, to be a wise and worthy Lord, singularly expert in Military Discipline, and faithfull in all affairs of the Kingdome (yet fitter for ease and pleasure, than laborious toyle and travell:) he was elected Lieutenant Governour in their stead, over the whole kingdome of France, and then they went on their enterprize.

Now beganne the Count to execute the office committed to his trust, by orderly proceeding, and with great discretion, yet not intring into any businesse, without consent of the Queene and her faire daughter in Law: who although they were left under his care and custodie, yet (notwithstanding) he honoured them as his superiours, and as the dignitie of their qualitie required. Here you are to observe, concerning Count *Gualtier* himselfe, that he was a most compleate person, aged little above fortie yeares, as affable and singularly conditioned, as any noble man possibly could be, nor did those times afford a Gentleman, that equalled him in all respects. It fortuned that the King and his sonne being busie in the aforenamed warre, the wife and Lady of Count *Gualtier* died in the meane while, leaving him onely a sonne and a daughter, very yong and of tender yeares, which made his own home the lesse welcome to him, having lost his deare love, and second selfe.

Hereupon, hee resorted to the Court of the said Ladies the more frequently, often conferring with them, about the weightie affaires of the Kingdome: in which time of serious interparlance, the Kings sonnes wife, threw many affectionate regards upon him, conveying such conspiring passions to her heart (in regard of his person and vertues) that her love exceeded all capacitie of government. Her desires ourstepping all compasse of modestie, or the dignitie of her Princely condition, throwes off all regard of civill and sober thoughts, & guids her into a Labyrinth of wanton imaginations. For, she regards not now the eminencie of his authoritie, his gravitie of yeares, and those parts that are the true conducts to honour: but lookes upon her owne loose and lascivious appetite, her young, gallant, and over-ready yeelding nature, comparing them with the want of a wife, and likely hope thereby of her sooner prevailing; supposing,

that

that nothing could bee her hinderance, but onely bashfull shamefastnesse, which she rather chose utterly to forsake and set aside, then to faile of her hot enflamed affection, and therefore she would needs be the discoverer of her own disgrace.

Upon a day, being alone by her selfe, and the time seeming sutable to her intention, she sent for the Count, under the colour of some other important conference with him. The Count *D'Angiers*, whose thoughts were quite contrary to hers, immediatly went to her, where they both sitting down together on a beds side in her Chamber, according as formerly she had plotted her purpose; twice he demanded of her, upon what occasion she had sent for him. She sitting a long time silent, as if she had no answer to make him, pressed by the violence of her amorous passions, a Vermillion tincture leaping up into her face, yet shame enforcing tears from her eyes, with words broken and halfe confused, at last she began to deliver her minde in this manner.

Honorable Lord, and my dear respected Friend, being so wise a man as you are, it is no difficult matter for you to know, what a frail condition is imposed both on men and women, yet (for divers occasions) much more upon the one, than the other. Wherefore desertfully, in the censure of a just and upright Judge, a fault of divers conditions (in respect of the person) ought not to be censured with one and the same punishment. Beside, who will not say, that a man or woman of poore and mean estate, having no other help for maintenance, but laborious travell of their bodies, should worthily receive more sharp reprehension, in yeelding to amorous desires, or such passions as are incited by love, than a wealthy Lady whose living relieth not on her pains or cares, neither wanteth any thing that she can wish to have? I dare presume, that you your selfe will allow this to be equall and just. In which respect, I am of the minde, that the fore-named allegations, ought to serve as a sufficient excuse, yea, and to the advantage of her who is so possessed, if the passions of love should over-reach her: alwayes provided, that she can plead in her owne defence, the choise of a wise, and vertuous friend, answerable to her owne condition and quality, and no way to be taxt with a servile or vile election.

These two speciall observations, allowable in my judgment, and living now in me, seizing on my youthfull bloud and years, have found no mean inducement to love, in regard of my husbands farre distance from me, medling in the rude uncivill actions of war, when he should rather be at home in more sweet imployment. You see Sir, that these Orators advance themselves here in your presence, to acquaint

quaint you with the extremity of my over-commanding agony: and if the same power hath dominion in you, which your discretion (questionlesse) cannot be void of; then let me intreat such advice from you, as may rather help, than hinder my hopes. Beleeve it then for truth Sir, that the long absence of my husband from me, the solitary condition wherein I am left, ill agreeing with the hot bloud running in my veins, and the temper of my earnest desires, have so prevailed against my strongest resistances, that not only so weak a woman as I am, but any man of much more potent might, (living in ease and idlenesse as I do) cannot withstand such continuall assaults, having no other help but flesh and bloud.

Nor am I so ignorant, but publick knowledge of such an error in me, would be reputed a shrewd taxation of honestly: whereas (on the otherside) secret carriage, and heedfull managing such amorous affairs, may passe for currant without any reproach. And let me tell you noble Count, that I repute love highly favourable to me, by guiding my judgment with such moderation, to make election of a wise, worthy, and honourable friend, fit to enjoy the grace of a farre greater Lady then I am, and that first letter of his name, is the Count *D'Angeirs*. For if error have not misled mine eye, as in love no Lady can be easily deceived, for person, perfections, and all parts most to be commended in a man, the whole Realm of *France* containeth not your equall. Observe beside, how forward Fortune sheweth her selfe to us both in this case, you to be destitute of a wife, as I am of a husband; for I account him as dead to me, when he denies me the duties belonging to a wife. Wherefore, in regard of the unfained affection I bear you, and compassion which you ought to have of a Royall Princesse, even almost sick to death for your sake, I earnestly entreat you, not to deny me your loving society, but pitying my youth and fiery affections (never to be quenched but by your kindnesse) I may enjoy my hearts desire.

As shee uttered these words, the tears streamed abundantly downe her fair cheeks, preventing her of any further speech: so that dejecting her head into her bosome, overcome with the predominance of her passion, she fell upon the Counts knee, whereas else she had falne upon the ground. When he like a loyall and most honourable man, sharply reprehended her fond and idle love: And when she would have embraced him about the neck to have kissed him; he repulsed her roughly from him, protesting upon his honourable reputation, that rather than he would so wrong his Lord and master, he would endure a thousand deaths.

The

The Lady seeing her desire disappointed, and her fond expectation utterly frustrated: grew instantly forgetfull of her intemperate love, and falling into extremity of rage, converting her former gentle and loving speeches, into this rash and ruder language. Villaine (quoth she) shall the longing comforts of my life, be abridged by thy base and scornfull deniall? Shall my destruction be wrought by thy most currish unkindnesse, and all my hoped joyes be defeated in a moment? Know Slave, that I did not so earnestly desire thy sweet embracements before, but now as deadly I hate and despise them; which either thy death or banishment shall pay for. No sooner had she thus spoken, but tearing her hair, and rending her garments in pieces, she ran about like a distracted woman, crying out aloud, Help, help, the Count *D'Angiers* will forcibly dishonour me, the lusty Count will violate my honour.

D'Angiers seeing this, and fearing more the malice of the over credulous Court, than either his owne conscience, or any dishonourable act by him committed, beleeving likewise, that her slanderous accusation would be credited, above his true and spotlesse innocency: closely he conveyed himself out of the Court, making what hast he could, home to his owne house, which being too weak for warranting his safety upon such pursuit as would be used against him, without any further advice or counsell, he seated his two children on horse-backe, himselfe also being but meanly mounted, thus away thence he went to *Calice*.

Vpon the clamour and noise of the Lady, the Courtiers flocked thither, and, as lies soon winne beleef in hasty opinions, upon any silly or shallow surprize: so did her accusation passe for currant, and the Counts advancement being envied by many, made his honest carriage (in this case) the more suspected. In haste and madding fury, they ran to the Counts houses, to arrest his person, and carry him to prison: but when they could not find him, they rased his goodly buildings downe to the ground, and used all shamefull violence to them. Now, as ill newes seldome wants a speedy messenger; so, in lesse space than you will imagine, the King and *Dolphin* heard thereof in the Camp, and were therewith highly offended, that the Count had a sodain and severe condemnation, all his progeny being sentenced with perpetuall exile, and promises of great and bountifull rewards, to such as could bring his body alive or dead.

Thus the innocent Count, by his over-hasty and sodain flight, made himselfe guilty of this foul imputation; and arriving at *Calice* with his children, their poore and homely

habit,

habits, hid them from being known and thence they crost over into *England*, staying no where untill he came to *London*. Before he would enter into the City, he gave divers good advertisements to his children, but especially two precepts above all the rest. First, with patient soules to support the poore condition, whereto Fortune (without any offence in him or them) had thus dejected them. Next, that they should have most heedfull care, at no time to disclose from whence they came, or whose children they were, because it extended to the perill of their lives. His sonne being named *Lewes*, and now about nine years old, his daughter called *Violenta*, and aged seven years, did both observe their fathers direction, as afterwards it did sufficiently appeare. And because they might live in the safer security, he thought it for the best to change their names, calling his Son *Perotto*, and his Daughter *Gianetta*, for thus they might best escape unknown.

Being entred into the City, and in the poore estate of beggers, they craved every bodies mercy and almes. It came to passe that standing one morning at the Cathedrall Church-doores, a great Lady of *England* being then wife to the Lord high Marshall, comming forth of the Church, espyed the Count and his children there begging. Of him shee demanded what Countrey-man he was? and whether those children were his owne, or no? The Count replyed, that he was born in *Piccardy*, and for an unhappy fact committed by his eldest Son, (a stripling of more hopefull expectations than proved) he was enforced, with those his two other children, to forsake his countrey. The Lady being by nature very pitifull, looking advisedly on the young Girle, began to grow in good liking of her; because she was beautifull, whereupon she said. Honest man, thy daughter hath a pleasing countenance, and (perhaps) her inward disposition may prove answerable to her outward good parts: if thou wilt be content to leave her with me, I will entertaine her, and upon her dutifull carriage, if she live to such yeares as may require it, I will have her honestly bestowne in marriage. This motion pleased the Count, who willingly delivered his Daughter to the Lady.

She being thus happily bestown, he minded to tarry no longer in *London*; but, in his wonted begging manner, travelling through the Countrey with his son *Perotto*, at length he came into *Wales*: but not without much pain and travell, being never used before, to journey so farre on foot. There dwelt another Lord, in office of Marshallship to the King of *England*, whose power extended over those parts: a man of very great authority, keeping a most noble and bountifull house, which they termed the *Presidents of Wales his Court*; whereto the Count and his son oftentimes resor-

ted,
Di
divers
youth
such l
them,
is no
the P
please
when
mans
Th
Count
father
him; y
it of t
daugh
good a
onger
passed
o on
n wh
hile i
His
f *Gia*
ears,
he fa
ouse
at ob
learly
refern
er Fa
him
ourab
ed.
nowi
e the
at so
nditi
ing t
The
ly so
em b
for
celle
pical
iad a
abou
mely

ted, as finding there good reliefe and comfort.

On a day, one of the Presidents sons, accompanyed with divers other Gentlemens children, were performing certaine youthfull sports and pastimes, as running, leaping, and such like, wherein *Peretto* presumed to make one among them, excelling all the rest in such commendable manner, as none of them came any thing neere him. Divers times the President had taken notice thereof, and was so well pleased with the Lads behaviour, that hee enquired of whence hee was? Answer was made, that hee was a poore mans Son, that every day came for an almes to his gate.

The President being desirous to make the boy his, the Count frankely gave his Son to the Noble-man: albeit fatherly affection urged some unwillingnesse to part so with him; yet necessity and discretion found it best for the benefit of them both. Being thus eased of care for his sonne and daughter, and they (though in different places) yet under good and worthy government; the Count would continue no longer in *England*: but, as best he could procure the means, passed over into *Ireland*, arrived at *Stanford*, became servant to an Earl of that Country, a Gentleman professing Armes, in whom he attended as a Serving man, and lived a long while in that estate very painfully.

His daughter *Violenta*, clouded under the borrowed name of *Gianetta*, dwelling with the Lady at *London*, grew so in years, beauty, comlinesse of person, and was so graceful in the favour of her Lord and Lady, yea, of every one in the house beside, that it was wonderfull to behold. Such as not observed her usuall carriage, and what modesty shined clearly in her eyes, reputed her well worthy of honourable preferment; in regard, the Lady that had received her of her Father, not knowing of whence, or what she was; but as himself had made report, intended to match her in honourable marriage, according as her vertues worthily deserved. But *God* the just rewarder of all good endeavours, knowing her to be noble by birth, and (causeleſſe) to suffer for the sinnes of another, disposed otherwise of her; and that so worthy a Virgin might be no mate for a man of ill conditions, no doubt ordained what was to be done, according to his own good pleasure.

The noble Lady, with whom *Gianetta* dwelt, had but one only sonne by her husband, and he most dearly affected of them both, as well in regard he was to be their heir, as also for his vertues and commendable qualities, wherein he excelled many young Gentlemen. Endued he was with heroical valour, compleat in all perfections of person, and his mind answerable to his outward behaviour, exceeding *Gianetta* about six years in age. He perceiving her to be a fair and comely maiden, grew to affect her so entirely, that all

things

things else he held contemptible, and nothing pleasing his eie but she. Now, in regard her parentage was repu poor, he kept his love concealed from his parents, not d ring to desire her in marriage; for loath he was to lo their favour, by disclosing the vehemency of his affliō which proved a greater torment to him, than if it had bee openly knowne.

It came to passe, that love over-awed him in such for as he fell into a violent sickenesse, and store of Physitia were sent for, to save him from death, if possible it mig be. Their judgements observing the course of his sickn yet not reaching to the cause of the disease, made a doub full question of his recovery; which was so displeasing t his Parents, that their grief and sorrow grew beyond mea sure. Many earnest entreaties they moved to him, to kno the occasion of his sickenesse, whereto he returned no o ther answer, but heart-breaking sighes, and incessant tea which drew him more and more into weakenesse body.

It chanced on a day, a Physitian was brought unto hi being young in years, but well experienced in his practi and as he made triall of his pulse, *Gianetta* (who by h mothers command attended on him very diligently) upo some speciall occasion entred into the chamber; which w the young gentleman perceived, and that she neither spak word, nor so much as looked towards him, his heart gre great in amorous desire, and his pulse did beat beyond th compasse of ordinary custome; whereof the Physitian ma good observation, to note how long that fit would contin No sooner was *Gianetta* gone forth of the Chamber, b the pulse immediately gave over beating, which persu ded the Physitian, that some part of the disease had n discovered it selfe apparently.

Within a while after, pretending to have some speci with *Gianetta*, and holding the Gentleman still by the ar the Physitian caused her to be sent for, and immediat she came. Vpon her very entrance into the chamber, the pu began to beat again extreamly, and when she departed presently ceased. Now was he thorowly perswaded, th he had found the true effect of his sickenesse, when tak the Father and Mother aside, thus he spake to them, you be desirous of your sonnes health, it consisteth not Physitian or Physicke, but in the mercy of your maid *Gianetta*; for manifest signes have made it kn to me, that he loveth the Damosell very dearly: yet (a ought as I can perceive, the maid doth not know it,) if you have respect of his life, you know (in this ca what is to be done. The Nobleman and his Wife hear

this, became somewhat satisfied, because there remained a remedy to preserve his life: but yet it is was no mean griefe to them, if it should so succeed, as they feared, namely, the marriage between this their Son and *Gianetta*.

The Physitian being gone, and they repairing to their sick Son, the Mother began with him in this manner. Son, I was alwaies perswaded, that thou wouldest not conceale any secret from me, or the least part of thy desires especially, when without enjoying them, thou must remain in the danger of death. Full well art thou assured, or in reason oughtest to be, that there is not any thing for thy contentment, be it of what quality soever, but it should have been provided for thee, and in as ample manner as for my own self. But now though thou hast wandred so far from duty, and hazarded both thy life and ours, it commeth so to passe, that heaven hath been more mercifull to thee, than thou wouldest be to thy self, or us. And to prevent thy dying of this disease, a dream this night hath acquainted me with the principall occasion of thy sickneſſe, to wit, extraordinary affection to a young maid, in some such place as thou hast seen her. I tel thee Son it is a matter of no disgrace to love, & why art thou ashamed to manifest as much, as being so apt and convenient for thy youth? For if I were perswaded, thou couldst not love, I should make the lesse esteem of thee. Son, be not dismaied, but freely discover thy affection. Expell those disastrous drouping thoughts, that have indangered thy life by this long lingering sickneſſe. And let thy soule be faithfully assured, that thou canst not require any thing to be done, remaining within the compasse of my power, but I will perform it; for I love thee as dearly as mine own life. Set therefore aside this nice conceit of shame and feare, revealing the truth boldly to me, if I may stead thee in thy love; resolving thy self unfaignedly, that if my care stretch not to compasse thy content, account me for the most cruell Mother living, and utterly unworthy of such a Son.

The young Gentleman having heard these protestations made by his Mother, was not a little ashamed of his own folly but recollecting his better thoughts together, and knowing in his soul, that no one could better further his hopes, than she, forgetting all his former fear, he returned her this answer; Madam, and my dearly affected Mother, nothing hath more occasioned my loves so strict concealment, but an especiall error, which I find by daily proof in many, who being grown to yeers of grave discretion, do never remember that they themselves have been young. But because herein I find you to be both discreet and wise, I will only affirme what you have seen in me to be true, but also will confesse, to whom it is; upon condition, that the effect of your promise

may

may follow it, according to the power remaining in you, whereby you only may secure my life.

His Mother, desirous to be resolved, whether his confession would agree with the Phyſitians words, or no, and reserving another intention to her selfe: bad him fear nothing, but freely discover his whole desire, and forthwith she doubted not to effect it. Then Madam (quoth he) the matchlesse beauty, and commendable qualities of your Maid *Gianetta*, to whom (as yet) I have made no motion to commiserate this my languiſhing extremity, nor acquainted any living creature with my love: the concealing of these afflictions to my selfe, hath brought me to this desperate condition: and if some means be not wrought, according to your constant promise, for the full enjoying of my longing desires, assure your selfe (most Noble Mother) that the date of my life is very short.

The Lady well knowing, that the time now rather required kindest comfort, then any severe or sharp reprehension, smiling on him, said: Alas deare Son, wast thou sick for this? Be of good cheare, and when thy strength is better restored, then referre the matter to me. The young Gentleman being put in good hope by his Mothers promise, began (in short time) to shew apparent signes of well-forwarded amendment, to the mothers great joy and comfort, disposing her self daily to prove how in honour she might keep promise with her Son.

Within a short while after, calling *Gianetta* privately to her, in gentle manner, and by the way of pleasant Discourse, she demanded of her whether she was provided of a Lover, or no: *Gianetta* being never acquainted with any such questions; a scarlet Dye covering all her modest countenance, thus replied. Madam, I have no need of any Lover, and very unseemly were it, for so poore a Damosell as I am, to have so much as a thought of Lovers, being banished from my friends and kinsfolke, and remaining in service as I doe.

If you have none (answered the Lady) we will bestow one on you, which shall content your mind, and bring you to a more pleasing kind of life; because it is farre unfit, that so faire a Maid as you are, should remaine destitute of a Lover. Madam, said *Gianetta*, considering with my selfe, that since you received me of my poore Father, you have used me rather like your Daughter, than a Servant; it becommeth me to doe as pleaseth you. Notwithstanding, I trust (in regard of mine own good and honour) never to use any complaint in such a case: but if you please to bestow a husband on me, I purpose to love and honour him only, and not any other. For, of all the inheritance left me

me by my Progenitors nothing remaineth to me but honourable honesty, and that shall bee my Legacy so long as I live.

These words were of a quite contrary complexion to those which the Lady expected from her, and for effecting the promise made unto her Son: howbeit, (like a wise and Noble Lady) much she inwardly commended the Maides answers, and said unto her. But tell me *Gianetta*, what if my Lord the King (who is a gallant youthfull Prince, and you so bright a beauty as you are) should take pleasure in your Love, would ye deny him? Sodainly the Maid returned this Answer: Madam, the King perhaps might enforce me, but with my free consent, he shall never have any thing of me that is not honest. Nor did the Lady dislike her Maids courage and resolution, but breaking off all her further conference, intending shortly to put her project in proof, saying to her Son, that when he was fully recovered, he should have private accesse to *Gianetta*, whom she doubted not, but would be tractable enough to him: for shee held it no meane blemish to her honour, to move the Maid any more in the matter, but let him compasse it as hee could.

Farre from the young Gentlemans humor was this Answer of his Mother, because he aimed not at any dishonourable end: true, faithfull, and honest love was the sole scope of his intention, foule and loathsome lust he utterly defied; whereupon he fell into sicknesse againe, rather more violently than before. Which the Lady perceiving, revealed her whole intent to *Gianetta*, and finding her constancy beyond common comparison, acquainted her Lord with all she had done, and both consented (though much against their minds) to let him injoy her in honourable marriage: accounting it better, for preservation of their onely sons life, to match him farre inferiour to his degree, than by denying his desire, to let him pine and dye for her love.

After great consultation with kindred and friends, the match was agreed upon, to the no little joy of *Gianetta*, who devoutly returned infinite thanks to heaven, for so mercifully respecting her dejected poore estate, after the bitter passage of so many miseries, and never terming her self any otherwise, but the Daughter to a poore *Piccard*. Soon was the young Gentleman recovered and married, no man alive so well contented as he, and setting down an absolute determination, to lead a loving life with his *Gianetta*.

Let us now convert our looks to Wales, to *Perotto*, being left there with the other Lord Marshall, who was the President of that Countrey: On he grew in years, choicely respected by his Lord, because he was most comely of person

and

and forward to all valiant attempts: so that in Tourneys, Justs, and other actions of Armes, his like was not to be found in all the Iſland, being named only *Perotto* the valiant *Piccard*, and ſo was he famed far and neere. As God had not forgotten his Siſter, ſo in mercy he became mindfull of him, for, a contagious mortality happning in the Country, the greater part of the People perilhed thereby, the reſt flying thence into other parts of the Land, whereby the whole Province became diſpeopled and deſolate.

In the time of this Plague and dreadfull viſitation, the Lord Preſident, his Lady, Sons, Daughters, Brothers, Nephews, and Kindred dyed, none remaining alive, but one onely Daughter marriageable, a few of the houſhold ſervants, beſide *Perotto*; whom (after the ſickneſſe was more mildly aſſwaged) with counſell and conſent of the Country people, the young Lady accepted to be her husband, becauſe he was a man ſo worthy and valiant; and of all inheritance left by her deceaſed Father, ſhe made him Lord and ſole commander. Within no long time after the King of *England* underſtanding that His Preſident of *Wales* was dead, and Fame liberally relating the vertues, valour, and good parts of *Perotto* the Piccard, he created him Preſident thereof, and to ſupply the place of his deceaſed Lord. Theſe fair fortunes within the compaſſe of ſo ſhort a time, fell to the two innocent children of the Count *D. Angiers* after they were left by him as loſt.

Eighteen yeers were now fully over-paſt, ſince the Count D. *Angiers* fled from *Paris*, having ſuffered (in miſerable ſort) many hard and lamentable adverſities; and ſeeing himſelfe now to be grown aged, he was deſirous to leave *Ireland*, and to know (if he might) what was become of both his children. Hereupon, perceiving his wonted form to be ſo altered, that ſuch as formerly had converſed moſt with him, could now not take any knowledge of him, and feeling his body (through long labour and exerciſe endured in ſervice) more luſty than in his idle youthfull yeers, eſpecially when he left the Court of *France*, he purpoſed to proceed in his determination. Being very poore and ſimple in apparel, he departed from the Iriſh Earle his Maſter, with whom he had continued long in ſervice, to no advantage or advancement, and croſſing over into *England*, travailed to the place in *Wales*, where he left *Perotto*, and where he found him to be Lord Marſhall and Preſident of that countrey, luſty and in good health, a man of goodly feature, and moſt honorably reſpected and reverenced of the people.

VVell may you imagine, that this was no ſmall comfort to the poore aged Counts heart, yet would he not make himſelf known to him, or any other about him, but referred his

his joy to a further enlarging and diminishing, by sight of the other limb of his life, his deerly affected daughter *Gianetta*, denying rest to his body in any place, untill such time as he came to *London*. Making there secret enquiry concerning the Ladie with whom he had left his daughter, he understood that a young Gentlewoman, named *Gianetta*, was married to that Ladies only Son, which made addition of joy to his soul, accounting all his passed adversities of no value, both his children being living, and in so high honour.

Having found her dwelling, and (like a kinde Father) being earnestly desirous to see her; he dayly resorted neere to the house, where Sir *Roger Mandevile* (for so was *Gianettas* husband named) chancing to see him, being moved to compassion, because he was both poore and aged: commanded one of his men, to take him into the house, and to give him some food, for Gods sake, which (accordingly) the servant performed. *Gianetta* had divers children by her husband, the eldest being about eight yeeres of age, yet all of them so faire and comely as could be. As the old Count sate eating his meate in the Hall, the children came all about him, embracing, hugging, and making much of him, even as if Nature had truely instructed them that this was their aged (though poor) Grandfather; and he as lovingly receiving these kind relations from them, wisely and silently kept all to himself, with sighes, tears, and joyes intermixed together. Insomuch that the children would not part from him, though their Tutor and Master called them often, which being told to their Mother she came forth of the neer adjoining Parlour, and threatned to beat them, if they would not do what their Master commanded them.

Then the children began to cry, saying, that they would tarry still by the good old man, because hee loved them better than their Master did; whereat both the Lady and the Count began to smile. The Count, like a poor begger, and not as father to so great a Lady, arose, and did her humble reverence, because she was now a noble woman, conceiving wonderfull joy in his soul, to see her so fair and goodly a creature: yet could she take no knowledge of him; age, want and misery had so mightily altered him; his head all white, his beard without any comely form, his garments so poor, and his face so wrinkled, lean and meager, that he seemed rather some Carter than a Count. And *Gianetta* perceiving that when her children were fetcht away, they returned again to the old man, and would not leave him, she desired their Master to let them alone.

While thus the children continued making much of the

good old man, Lord *Andrew Mandeville*, Father to Sir *Roger*, came into the Hall, as being so willed to do by the childrens Schoolemaster. He being a hastie-minded man, and one that ever despised *Gianetta* before, but much more since her marriage to his son, angerly said, Let them alone with a mischief, and so befall them, their best company ought to be with beggers, for so they are bred and born by the Mothers side: and therefore it is no marvell, if like will to like, a beggers brats to keep company with beggers. The Count hearing these contemptible words, was not a little grieved thereat; and although his courage was greater than his poor condition would permit him to expresse; yet he clouded all injuries with noble patience, hanging down his head, and shedding many a salt tear, endured this reproach, as he had done many, both before and after.

But honourable Sir *Roger*, perceiving what delight his children took in the poor mans company; albeit hee was offended at his Fathers harsh words, by holding his wife in such base respect; yet favoured the poor Count so much the more, and seeing him weep, did greatly compassionate his case, saying to the poor man, that if he would accept of his service, he willingly would entertain him. Whereto the Count replyed, that very gladly he would imbrace his kind offer: but he was capable of no other service, save only to be an horse-keeper, wherein he had imployed the most part of his time. Hereupon more for pleasure and pity, then for any necessity of his service, he was appointed to the keeping of an horse, which was only for his daughters saddle, and daily after he had done his diligence about the Horse, he did nothing else but play with the children. While fortune pleased thus to dally with the poor Count D' *Angiers*, and his children: it came to passe, that the King of *France* (after divers leagues of truces passed between him and the *Germanes*) dyed, and next after him his son the Dolphin was crowned King, and it was his wife who had wrongfully caused the Counts banishment. After expiration of the last leagne with the *Germans*, the wars began to grow much more fierce and sharp, and the King of *England*, (upon request made to him by his new brother of *France*) sent him very honourable supplies of his people, under the conduct of *Perotto*, his lately elected President of *Wales*, and Sir *Roger Mandeville*, son to his other Lord high Marshall; with whom also the poor Count went, and continued a long while in the Camp as a common souldier, where yet like a valiant Gentleman (as indeed he was no lesse) both in advice and actions, he accomplished many more notable matters, than was expected

expected to come from him.

It so fell out, that in the continuance of this war, the Queen of *France* fell into a grievous sickness, and perceiving her self to be at the point of death, shee became very penitently sorrowfull for all her sins, earnestly desiring that she might be confessed by the Arch-bishop of *Roane*, who was reputed to be an holy & vertuous man. In the repetition of her other offences, she revealed what great wrong she had done to the Count *D'Angiers*, resting not so satisfied, with disclosing the whole matter to him alone; but also confessed the same before many other worthy persons, and of great honor, entreating them to work so with the King, that (if the Count were yet living, or any of his children) they might be restored to their former honour againe. It was not long after, but the Queen left this life, and was most royally entered, when her confession being disclosed to the King, after much sorrow for so injuriously wronging a man of so great valour and honour: Proclamation was made throughout he Camp, and in many other parts of *France* beside, that whosoever could produce the Count *D'Angiers*, or any of his children, should richly be rewarded for each one of them; in regard he was innocent of the foul imputation, by the Queens owa confession; and for his wrongfull exile so long he should be exalted to his former honor with far greater favors, which the King frankly would bestow upon him. When the Count (who walked up and down in the habit of a common Servitor) heard this Proclamation, forthwith hee went to his Master Sir *Roger Mandevile*, requesting his speedy repair to Lord *Perotto*, that being both assembled together, hee would acquaint them with a serious matter concerning the Proclamation published by the King. Being by themselves alone in the Tent, the Count spake in this manner to *Perotto*. Sir, S. *Roger Mandevile* here, your equall competitor in this military service is husband to your naturall sister, having as yet never received any dowrie with her, but her inherent unblemishable vertue and honour. Now because she may not stil remain destitute of a competent dowry: I desire that Sir *Roger* and none other, may enjoy the royall reward promised by the King. You Lord *Perotto*, whose true name is *Lewes*, manifest your self to be nobly borne, and son to the wrongfully banished Count *D'Angiers*: avouch moreover, that *Violanta* shadowed under the borrowed name of *Gianetta*, is your own sister; and deliver me up as your Father, the long exiled Count *D. Angiers*. *Perotto* hearing this beheld him more advisedly, and began to know him: then the tears flowing abundantly from his eyes, he fell at his feet, and often imbracing him, said: My dear and

noble Father, a thousand times more deerly welcome to your Son *Lewes*.

Sir *Roger Mandeville* hearing first what the Count had said, and seeing what *Perotto* afterward had performed, became surprized with such extraordinary joy and admiration that hee knew not how to carry himselfe in this case. Nevertheless, giving credit to his words, and being somewhat ashamed, that he had not used the Count in much more respective manner, and remembring beside, the unkind language of his furious father to him: he kneeled down, humbly craving pardon, both for his fathers rudeness and his owne, which was curteously granted by the Count, embracing him lovingly in his arms.

When they had a while discourse their severall fortunes, sometime in tears, and then again in joy; *Perotto* and Sir *Roger*, would have the Count to be garmented in better manner, but in no wise he would suffer it; for it was his only desire that Sir *Roger* should be assured of the promised reward, by presenting him in the Kings presence, and in the homely habit which he did wear, to touch him with the more sensible shame, for his rash beleef, and injurious proceeding. Then Sir *Roger Mandeville*, guiding the Count by the hand, and *Perotto* following after, came before the King, offering to present the Count and his children, if the reward promised in the Proclamation might be performed. The King immediately commanded, that a reward of inestimable value should be produced; desiring Sir *Roger* upon the sight thereof, to make good his offer, for forthwith presenting the Count and his children. Which he made no longer delay of, but turning himselfe about, delivered the aged Count, by the title of his servant, and presenting *Perotto* next, said, Sir, here I deliver you the Father and his Son; his Daughter who is my wife, cannot so conveniently be here now, but shortly, by the permission of heaven, your Majesty shall have a sight of her.

When the King heard this, stedfastly hee looked on the Count; and notwithstanding his wonderfull alteration both from his wonted feature and form: yet, after he had very seriously viewed him, he knew him perfectly; and the tears trickling down his cheeks partly with remorseful shame, and joy also for his so happy recovery, hee took up the Count from kneeling, kissing and embracing him very kindly, welcoming *Perotto* in the selfe same manner. Immediately also he gave command that the Count should be restored to his honors, apparell, servants, horses and furniture, answerable to his high estate and calling, which was as speedily performed. Moreover the King greatly honoured Sir *Roger Mandevile*, desiring to be made acquainted with all their passed fortunes. When

VVhen Sir *Roger* had received the royall reward, for thus surrendring the Count and his Son, the Count calling him to him, said, Take that Princely remmeration of my Soveraign Lord and King, and commending me to your unkind Father, tell him your children are no beggers brats, neither basely born by their mothers side. Sir *Roger* returning home with his bountifull reward, soon after brought his Wife and Mother to *Paris*, and so did *Perotto* his wife, where in great joy and triumph they continued a long while with the noble Count; who had all his goods and honors restored to him in a far greater measure than ever they were before: his Sons in Law returning home with their Wives into *England*, left the Count with the King at *Paris*, where he spent the rest of his dayes in great honour and felicity.

Bernardo, *a Merchant of* Geneway, *being deceived by another Merchant, named* Ambroginolo, *lost a great part of his goods. And commanding his innocent Wife to be murthered, she escaped, and (in the habit of a man) became servant to the Soldane. The deceiver being found at last, she compassed such means, that her Husband* Bernardo *came into* Alexandria, *and there after due punishment inflicted on the false deceiver, she resumed the garments again of a woman, and returned home with her Husband to* Geneway.

The ninth Novell.

Wherein is declared, that by an over-liberall commending the chastity of women, is falleth out (oftentimes) to bee very dangerous, especially by the means of treacherers, who yet (in the end) are justly punished for their treachery.

MAdam *Elisa* having ended her compassionate discourse, which indeed had moved all the rest to sighing; the Queen, who was faire, comely of stature, and carrying a very majestieall countenance, smiling more familiarly than the other, spake to them thus. It is very necessary, that the promise made to *Dioneus*, should carefully bee kept, and because now there remaineth none, to report any more Novels, but only he and my self: I must deliver mine, and he (who takes it for an honour) to be the last in relating his own last, let him be for his own deliverance. Then pausing a little while, thus she began againe, Many times among vulgar people, it hath passed as a common Proverb: that the deceiver is often trampled on, by such as he hath deceived. And this cannot shew it self (by any reason) to be true, except such accidents as await on treachery, do really make a just discovery thereof. And therefore according to the course of this day observed, I

am the woman that must make good what I have said for the approbation of that Proverbe: no way I hope distastfull to you in the hearing, but advantageable to preserve you from any such beguiling. There was a fair and goodly Inne in *Paris*, much frequented by many great *Italian* Merchants, according to such variety of occasions and businesse, as urged their often resorting thither. One night among many other, having had a merry supper together, they began to discourse on diverse matters, and falling from one relation to another; they communed in very friendly manner, concerning their wives, left at home in their house. Quoth the first, I cannot well imagine what my wife is now doing, but I am able to say for my selfe that if a pretty female should fall into my company: I could easily forget my love to my wife, and make use of such an advantage offered.

A second replyed; And trust mee, I should do no lesse, because I am perswaded, that if my wife be willing to wander, the law is in her owne hand, and I am far enough from home: dumbe walles blab no tales, and offences unknowne are seldome or never called in question. A third man was apt to censure, with his former fellowes of the levy; and it plainly appeared, that all the rest were of the same opinion, condemning their wives over-rashly, and alleaging, that when husbands strayed so far from home, their wives had wit enough to make use of their time.

Onely one man among them all, named *Bernardo Lomellino*, and dwelling in *Geneway*, maintaining the contrary; boldly avouching, that by the especiall favour of Fortune, he had a wife so perfectly compleat in all graces and vertues, as any Lady in the world possibly could be, and that *Italy* scarsely contained her equall. But she was goodly of person, and yet very young, quick, quaint, milde, and courteous, and not any thing appertaining to the office of a wife, either for domestick affaires, or any other imployment whatsoever, but in woman-hood she went beyond all other. No Lord, Knight, Esquire, or gentleman, could be better served at his Table, than himselfe daily was, with more wisedome, modesty and discretion. After all this, he praised her for riding, hawking, hunting fishing, fowling, reading, writing, enditing, and most absolute keeping his Books of accounts, that neither himselfe, or any other Merchant could therein excell her. After infinite other commendations, he came to the former point of their argument, concerning the easie falling of women into wantonnesse, maintaining (with a solemne oath) that no woman possibly could be more chast and honest than she: in which respect, he was verily perswaded, that if he

stayed

ſtayed from her ten yeers ſpace, yea (all his life time) out of his houſe; yet never would ſhe falſifie her faith to him, or be lewdly allured by any other man.

Amongſt theſe Merchants thus communing together, there was a young proper man, named *Ambroginolo* of *Placentia*, who began to laugh at the laſt praiſes which *Bernardo* had uſed of his Wife, and ſeeming to make a mockerie thereof, demanded, if the Emperour had given him this priviledge above all other married men? *Bernardo* being ſomewhat offended, anſwered: No Emperour hath done it, but the eſpeciall bleſſing of heaven, exceeding all the Emperours on the earth in grace, and thereby I have received this favour; whereto *Ambroginolo* preſently thus replyed. *Bernardo*, without all queſtion to the contrary, I beleeve that what thou haſt ſaid, is true; but (for ought I can perceive) thou haſt ſlender judgement in the Nature of things: becauſe if thou didſt obſerve them well, thou couldſt not be of ſo groſſe underſtanding. For, by comprehending matters in their true kinde and nature, thou would'ſt ſpeak of them more correctly than thou doeſt. And to the end, thou mayeſt not imagine, that we who have ſpoken of our Wives, doe think any otherwiſe of them, than as well and honeſtly as thou canſt of thine, nor that any thing elſe did urge theſe ſpeeches of them, or falling into this kinde of diſcourſe, but onely by a naturall inſtinct and admonition, I will proceed familiarly, a little further with thee, upon the matter already propounded.

I have evermore underſtood, that man was the moſt noble creature, formed by God to live in this World, and woman in the next degree to him: but man, as generally is beleeved, and as is diſcerned by apparent effects, is the moſt perfect of both. Having then the moſt perfection in him, without all doubt, he muſt be ſo much the more firme and conſtant. So in like manner, it hath been, and is univerſally granted, that women are more various and mutable, and the reaſon thereof may be approved by many naturall circumſtances, which were needleſſe now to make any mention of. If a man then be poſſeſſed of the greater ſtability, and yet cannot containe himſelfe from condeſcending, I ſay not to one that entreats him, but to deſire any other that may pleaſe him; and beſide, to covet the enjoying of his owne pleaſing contentment (a thing not chancing to him once in a month, but infinite times in a dayes ſpace:) What can you then conceive of a fraile woman, ſubject (by nature) to entreaties, flatteries, gifts, perſwaſions, and a thouſand other inticing meanes, which a man (that is affected to her) can uſe? Doeſt thou thinke then that ſhe hath any power to containe? Aſſuredly,

though thou shouldest rest so resolved, yet cannot I be of the same opinion. For I am sure thou beleevest, and must needs confesse it, that thy Wife is a woman made of flesh and blood, as other women are: if it be so, she cannot be without the same desires, and the weaknesse or strength as other women have to resist naturall appetites as her owne are. In regard whereof, it is meerely impossible (although she be most honest (but she must needs doe that which other women doe: for there is nothing else possible, either to be denyed or affirmed to the contrary, as thou most unadvisedly hast done.

Bernardo answered in this manner. I am a Merchant, and no Philosopher, and like a merchant I mean to answer thee. I am not to learne, that these accidents by thee related, may happen to fooles, who are voide of understanding or shame: but such as are wise, and endued with vertue, have alwayes such a precious esteem of their honour, that they will containe those princip'es of constancy, which men are meerely careless of, and I justifie my wife to be one of them. Beleeve me *Bernardo*, replyed *Ambrosiuolo*, if so often as thy wives mind is addicted to wanton folly, a badge of scorne should arise on thy forehead, to render testimony of her female frailty, I beleeve the number of them would be more, than willingly you would wish them to be. And among all married men in every degree, the notes are so secret of their wives imperfections, that the sharpest sight is not able to discerne them; and the wiser sort of men are willing not to know them; because shame and losse of honour is never imposed, but in cases evident and apparent.

Perswade thy selfe *Bernardo*, that what women may accomplish in secret, they will rarely faile to doe: or if they abstaine, it is through feare and folly. Wherefore, hold it for a certaine rule, that that woman is onely chast, that never was solicited personally, or if she endured any such suite, either she answered yea, or no. And albeit I know this to be true, by many infallible and naturall reasons, yet could I not speak so exactly as I doe, if I had not tryed experimentally, the humors and affections of divers women. Yea, and let me tell thee more *Bernardo*, were I in private company with thy wife howsoever thou presumest to think her to be, I should account it a matter of no impossibility, to finde in her the self same frailty,

Bernardos blood now began to boyle, and patience being a little put downe by choler, thus he replyed. A combate of words requires over-long continuance, for I maintaine the matter which thou denyest, and all this sorts to nothing in the end. But seeing thou presumest, that all women

men are so apt and tractable, and thy selfe so confident of thine owne power: I willingly yeeld (for the better assurance of my wives constant loyalty) to have my head smitten off, if thou canst win her to any such dishoneſt act, by any meanes whatsoever thou canst use unto her; which if thou canst not doe, thou shalt onely loſe a thousand Duckets of Gold. Now began *Ambroginolo* to be heated with these words, answering thus *Bernardo*, If I had won the wager I know not what I should doe with thy head, but if thou be willing to stand upon the proofe, pawn downe 5 thousand Duckets of Gold, (a matter of much leſſe value than thy head) against a thousand Duckets of mine, granting me a lawfull limited time, which I require to be no more than the space of three months, after the day of my departing hence. I will stand bound to goe for *Geneway*, and there win such kind consent of thy wife, as shall be to mine owne content. In witneſſe whereof, I will bring back with me such private and especial tokens, as thou thy selfe shall confeſſe that I have not failed. Provided, that thou doe first promiſe upon thy faith, to abſent thy selfe from thence during my limited time, and be no hinderance to me by thy Letters, concerning the attempt by me undertaken.

Bernardo said, be it a bargaine, I am the man that will make good my five thousand Duckets; and albeit the other Merchants then present, earneſtly laboured to break the wager, knowing great harme must needs enſue thereon: yet both the parties were so hot and fiery, as all the other men spake to no effect, but writings was made, sealed, and delivered under either of their hands, *Bernardo* remaining at *Paris*, and *Ambroginolo* departing for *Geneway*. There he remained some few dayes, to learne the streets name where *Bernardo* dwelt, as also the conditions and qualities of his wife, which scarcely pleaſed him when he heard them; because they were farre beyond her Husbands relation, and she reputed to be the onely wonder of women; whereby he plainly perceived, that he had undertaken a very ille enterpriſe, yet would he not give it over so, but proceeded therein a little further.

He wrought such means, that he came acquainted with a poore woman, who often frequented *Bernardoes* houſe, and was greatly in favour with his wife; upon whoſe poverty he so prevailed, by earneſt perſwaſions, but much more by large gifts of money, that he won her to further him in this manner following. A fair and artificiall Cheſt he caused to be purpoſely made, wherein himselfe might be aptly contained & so conveyed into the houſe of *Bernardoes* Wife, under the colour of a formall excuſe; that the poore woman

should be absent from the City two or three dayes, and she must keep it safe till she returne. The Gentlewoman inspecting no guile, but that the Chest was the receptacle of all the womans wealth; would trust it in no other roome, than her owne bed-chamber, which was the place where *Ambroginolo* most desired to be.

Being thus conveyed into the Chamber, the night going on a pace, and the Gentlewoman fast a sleep in her bed, a lighted Taper stood burning on the Table by her, as in her husbands absence she ever used to have: *Ambroginolo* softly opened the Chest, according as cunningly he had contrived it, and stepping forth in his socks made of cloth, observed the situation of the Chamber, the paintings, pictures, and beautifull hangings, with all things else that were remarkable, which perfectly he committed to his memory, going neer to the bed, he saw her lye there sweetly sleeping and her young Daughter in like manner by her, she seeming then as compleat and pleasing a creature, as when she was attired in her best bravery. No especiall note or mark could he discrie, whereof he might make credible report, but onely a small wart upon her left pappe, with some few hairs growing thereon, appearing to be as yellow as Gold.

Sufficient had he seen and durst presume no further; but taking one of the Rings, which lay upon the Table, a purse of hers, hanging by on the wall, a light wearing Robe of silk, and her girdle, all which he put into the Chest, and being in himselfe, closed it fast as it was before. so continuing there in the Chamber two severall nights, the Gentlewoman neither mistrusting or missing any thing. The third day being come, the poor woman, according as formerly was concluded, came to have home her Chest againe, and brought it safely into her owne house; where *Ambroginolo* comming forth of it satisfied the poore woman to her owne liking, returning (with all the forenamed things) as fast as conveniently he could to *Paris*.

Being arrived there long before his limited time, he called the Merchants together, who were present at the passed words and wager; avouching before *Bernardo* that he had won his five thousand Duckets, and performed the taske he undertooke. To make good his protestation, first he described the forme of the Chamber, the curious pictures hanging about it, in what manner the bed stood, and every circumstance else beside. Next he shewed the severall things, which he brought away thence with him, affirming that he had received them of her selfe. *Bernardo* confessed, that his description of the Chamber was true, and acknowledged moreover, that these other things did belong

to

to his wife: But (quoth he) this may be gotten by corrupting some servant of mine, both for intelligence of the Chamber, as also of the Ring, Purse, and what else is beside; all which suffice not to win the wager, without some more apparent and pregnant token. In troth, answered *Ambroginolo*, me thinks these should serve for sufficient proofs; but seeing thou art so desirous to know more: I plainely tell thee, that fair *Geneura* thy wife, hath a small round wart upon her left pappe, and some few little golden hairs growing thereon.

When *Bernardo* heard these words, they were as so many stabs to his heart, yea, beyond all compasse of patient sufferance, and by the changing his colour, it was noted manifestly, (being unable to utter one word) that *Ambroginolo* had spoken nothing but the truth. Within a while after, he said; Gentlemen, that which *Ambroginolo* hath said is very true, wherefore let him come when hee will, and he shall be paid; which accordingly he performed on the very next day, even to the utmost penny, departing then from *Paris* towards *Geneway* with a most malicious intention to his wife: Being come neer to the City, he would not enter it, but rode to a Country house of his standing about ten miles distant thence. Being there arrived, he called a servant, in whom he reposed especiall trust, sending him to *Geneway* with two Horses, writing to his Wife, that he was returned, and she should come thither to see him. But secretly he charged his servant, that so soone as he had brought her to a convenient place, he should there kil her without any pitty or compassion, and then returne to him againe.

When the servant was come to *Geneway*, and had delivered his Letter and message, *Geneura* gave him most joyfull welcome, and on the morrow morning mounted on Horse-back with the servant, rode merrily toward the Country house; diverse things she discoursed on by the way, till they descended into a deep solitary valley, very thickly beset with high and huge spreading Trees, which the servant supposed to be a meet place, for the execution of his Masters command. Suddenly drawing forth his Sword, and holding *Geneura* fast by the arm, he said, Mistresse, quickly commend your soule to God, for you must dye, before you may forward passe any further. *Geneura* seeing the naked sword, and hearing the words so peremptorily delivered, fearfully answered; Alas dear friend, mercy for Gods sake; and before thou kill me, tell me wherein I have offended thee, and why thou must kill me? Alas good mistresse, you have not offended me, but in what occasion you have displeased your Husband, it is utterly unknown to me; for he hath strictly commanded me, without respect of pity

or compassion, to kill you by the way as I bring you, and if I doe it not, he hath sworne to hang me by the necke. You know good Mistresse, how much I stand obliged to him, and how impossible it is for me, to contradict any thing that he commandeth. God is my witnesse, that I am truely compassionate of you, and yet (by no means) may I let you live.

Geneura kneeling before him weeping, wringing her hands, thus replyed. Wilt thou turne Monster, and be a murtherer of her that never wronged thee, to please another man, and on a bare command? God, who truely knoweth all things, is my faithfull witnesse, that I never committed any offence, whereby to deserve the dislike of my Husband, much lesse so harsh a recompence as this is. But flying from mine owne justification, and appealing to thy manly mercy, thou maist (were thou but so well pleased) in a moment satisfie both thy Master and me, in such manner as I will make plain and apparent to thee. Take thou my garments, spare me only thy doublet, and such a bonnet as is fitting for a man, so returne with my habit to thy Master, assuring him, that the deed is done. And here I swear to thee, by that life which I enjoy but by thy mercy, I will so strangely disguise my selfe, and wander so farre off from these Countries, as neither he or thou, nor any person belonging to these parts, shall ever heare any tidings of me.

The servant, who had no great good will to kill her, very easily grew pitifull, took off her upper garments, and gave her a poore ragged doublet, a silly Chapperone, and such small store of money as he had, desiring her to forsake that Country, and so left her to walke on foot out of the valley. When he came to his master, and had delivered him her garments, he assured him, that he had not only accomplished his command, but also was most secure from any discovery: because he had no sooner done the deed, but foure or five very ravenous Wolves, came presently running to the dead body; and gave it buriall in their bellies: *Bernardo* soon after returning to *Geneway*, was much blamed for such unkind cruelty to his wife; but his constant avouching of her treason to him (according then to the Countries custome) did cleare him from all pursuit of Law.

Poore *Geneura* was left thus alone and disconsolate, and night stealing fast upon her, she went to a silly village neer adjoyning, where (by the means of a good old woman) she got such provision as the place afforded, making the doublet fit to her body, and converted her petticoate to a pair of breeches, according to the Mariners fashion: then cutting her hair, and quaintly disguised like unto a Saylor, she went to the Sea coast. By good fortune, she met there with a

a Gentleman of *Catalogna*, whose name was signior *Encharatcho*, who came on land from his Ship, which lay hulling there about *Albagie*, to refresh himselfe at a pleasant Spring. *Encharatcho* taking her to be a man, as she appeared no otherwise by her habit; upon some conference passing between them, she was entertained into his service, and being brought aboard the Ship, she went under the name of *Sicurano da Finale*. There she had better apparell bestown on her by the Gentleman, and her service proved so pleasing and acceptable to him, that he liked her care and diligence beyond all comparison.

It came to passe within a short while after, that this Gentleman of *Catalogna* sayled (with some charge of his) into *Alexandria*, carrying thither certain Falcons, which he presented to the Soldan, who oftentimes welcomed this Gentleman to his table, where he observed the behaviour of *Sicurano*, attending on his Masters Trencher, and therewith was so highly pleased; that he requested to have him from the Gentleman, who (for his more advancement) willingly parted with his so lately entertained servant. *Sicurano* was so ready and discreet in his dayly services, that he grew in as great grace with the Soldan, as before he had done with *Encharatcho*.

At a certaine season in the year, as customary order (there observed) had formerly been, in the City of *Acres* which was under the Soldans subjection, there yeerely met a great assembly of Merchants, as Christians, Moores, Jewes, Sarazens, & many other Nations besides, as at a common Mart or Fayre. And to the end, that the Merchants (for the better sale of their goods) might be there in the safer assurance, the Soldane used to send thither some of his ordinary Officers, and a strong guard of Souldiers beside, to defend them from all injuries, and molestation, because he reaped thereby no meane benefit. And who should be now sent about this businesse, but his new elected favorite *Sicurano*, because she was skilfull and perfect in the Languages?

Sicurano being come to *Acres*, as Lord and Captaine of the Guard for the Merchants, and for the safety of their Merchandizes, she discharged her office most commendably, walking with her train through every part of the Faire, where she observed a worthy company of Merchants *Sicilians*, *Pisans*, *Genowayes*, *Venetians*, and other *Italians*, whom the more willingly she noted, in remembrance of her native Country. At one especiall time among other, chancing into a Shop or Booth belonging to the Venetians, she espied (hanging up with other costly wares) a Purse and a Girdle, which sodainly she remembred to be sometime her owne; whereat she was not a little abashed in her minde.

minde. But without making any such outward shew, covertly she requested to know whose they were, and whether they should be sold, or no.

Ambroginolo of *Placentia*, was likewise come thither, and great store of Merchandizes he had brought with him, in a Carrack appertaining to the Venetians, and he hearing the Captaine of the Guard demand whose they were, stepped forth before him, and smiling, answered: that they were his, but not to be sold; yet if he liked them gladly he would bestow them on him. *Sicurano* seeing him smile, suspected lest himselfe had (by some unfitting behaviour) been the occasion thereof: and therefore, with a more setled countenance, he said: Perhaps thou smilest because I that am a man, professing Armes, should question after such womanish toyes. *Ambroginolo* replyed, My Lord, pardon me I smile not at you, or at your demand, but at the manner how I came by these things.

Sicurano, upon this answer, was tenne times more desirous than before, and said: if Fortune favoured thee in friendly manner, by the obtaining of these things: if it may be spoken, tell me how thou hadst them. My Lord (answered *Ambroginolo*) these things (with many more besides) were given me by a Gentlewoman of *Geneway*, named Madam *Genevra*, the wife to one *Bernardo Lomellino*, in a recompence of one nights lodging with her, and she desired me to keep them for her sake. Now, the main reason of my smiling, was the remembrance of her husbands folly, in waging five thousand Dockets of Gold, against one thousand of mine, that I should not obtaine my will of his wife, which I did, and thereby won the wager. But he, who better deserved to be punished for his folly than she, who was but sick of all womans disease, returning from *Paris* to *Geneway*, caused her to be slain, as was reported by himselfe.

When *Sicurano* heard this horrible lye, immediately she conceived, that this was the occasion of her husbands hatred to her, and all the hard haps which she had since suffered: whereupon, she reputed it for more than a mortall sinne, if such a villaine should passe without due punishment. *Sicurano* seemed to like well this report, and grew in to such familiarity with *Ambroginolo*, that (by her perswasions) when the Fair was ended, she took him higher with her into Alexandria, and all his VVares along with him, furnishing him with a fit and convenient shop, where he made great benefit of his Merchandizes, trusting all his moneys in the Captaines custody, because it was the safest course for him, and so he continued there with no meane contentment.

Much did she pity her husbands perplexity, divising by what good and warrantable means she might make known her

her innocencie to him; wherein her place and authority did greatly ſtead her, and ſhe wrought with divers gallant Merchants of *Genoway* that then remained in Alexandria, and by vertue of the Soldans friendly letters beſide, to bring him thither upon an eſpeciall occaſion. Come he did, albeit in poore and meane order, which ſoone was better altered by her appointment, and he very honourably (though in private) entertained by divers of her worthy friends, till time did favour what ſhe further intended.

In the expectation of *Bernardoes* arrival, ſhe had ſo prevailed with *Ambroginolo*, that the ſame tale which he formerly told to her, he delivered againe in preſence of the Soldan, who ſeemed to be well pleaſed with it. But after ſhe had once ſeen her husband, ſhe thought upon her more ſerious buſineſſe; providing her ſelf of an apt opportunity, when ſhe entreated ſuch favour of the Soldan, that both the men might be brought before him; where if *Ambroginolo* would not confeſſe (without conſtraint) that which he had made his vaunt of concerning *Bernardoes* wife, he might be compelled thereto perforce.

Sicuranes word was a Law with the Soldan, ſo that *Ambroginolo* and *Bernardo* being brought face to face, the Soldan with a ſterne and angry countenance, in the preſence of a moſt Princely Aſſembly, commanded *Ambroginolo* to declare the truth, upon perill of his life, by what means he won the wager of the five thouſand golden Duckets he received of *Bernardo*. *Ambroginolo* ſeeing *Sicurano* there preſent, upon whoſe favour he wholly relied, yet perceiving her looke likewiſe to be as dreadfull as the Soldans, and hearing her threatning him moſt grievous torments except he revealed the truth indeed; you may eaſily gueſs in what condition he ſtood at that inſtant.

Frownes and fury he beheld on either ſide, and *Bernardo* ſtanding before him, with a world of witneſſes, to heare his lie confounded by his owne confeſſion, and his tongue to deny what it had before ſo conſtantly avouched. Yet dreaming on no other pain or penalty, but reſtoring back the five thouſand Duckets of gold, and the other things by him purloyned, truely he revealed the whole forme of his fallhood. Then *Sicurano* according as the Soldane had formerly commanded him, turning to *Bernardo*, ſaid. And thou, upon the ſuggeſtion of this foule lie, what didſt thou to thy wife? Being (quoth *Bernardo*) overcome with rage, for the loſs of my money, & the diſhonour I ſuppoſed to receive by my wife; I cauſed a ſervant of mine to kill her, and as he credibly avouched, her body was devoured by ravenous Wolves in a moment after.

Theſe things being ſpoken and heard, in the preſence of the

the Soldane, and no reason (as yet) made knowne, why the case was so seriously urged, and to what end it would succeed: *Sicurano* spake in this manner to the Soldane. My gracious Lord, you may plainly perceive, in what degree that poore Gentlewoman might make her vaunt, being so well provided both of a loving friend, and a husband. Such was the friends love, that in an instant, and by a wicked lye, he robbed her both of renowne and honour, and bereft her also of her husband. And her husband, rather crediting falshood, than the invincible truth, whereof he had faithfull knowledg, by long and very honourable experience, caused her to be slain, and made food for devouring Wolves. Beside all this, such was the good will and affection borne to that woman, both by friend and husband, that the longest continuer of them in their company, makes them alike in knowledge of her. But because your great wisdome knoweth perfectly what each of them have worthily deserved: if you please (in your ever-knowne gracious benignitie) to permit the punishment of the deceiver, and pardon the party so deceived; I will procure such means, that he shall appear here in your presence, and theirs.

The Soldane being desirous to give *Sicurano* all manner of satisfaction, having followed the course so industriously: bad him to produce the woman, and he was well contented. Whereat *Bernardo* stood much amazed, because he verily beleeved that she was dead. And *Ambroginolo* foreseeing already a preparation for punishment, feared, that the repayment of the money would not now serve his turne: not knowing also, what he should further hope or suspect, if the woman her selfe did personally appeare, which hee imagined would be a miracle. *Sicurano* having thus obtained the Soldanes permission, in tears, humbling her selfe at his feet, in a moment she lost her manly voice and demeanour, as knowing that she was now no longer to use them, but must truely witnesse what she was indeed, and therefore thus spake:

Great Soldane, I am the miserable and unfortunate *Geneura*, that for the space of six whole yeers have wandred through the world, in the habit of a man, falsly and most maliciously slandered, by the villanous Traytor *Ambroginolo*, and by this unkind cruel husband, betrayed to his servant to be slaine, and left to be devoured by savage beasts. Afterward, desiring such garments as better fitted for her, and shewing her breasts, she made it apparent before the Soldand and his assistance, that she was the very same woman indeed. Then turning her selfe to *Ambroginolo*, with more than manly courage, she demanded of him, when, and where it was, that he lay with her, as (villanously) he was not

ashamed

ashamed to make his vaunt? But hee, having already acknowledged the contrary, being stricken dumb with shamefull disgrace, was not able to utter one word.

The Soldane who had alwaies reputed *Sicurano* to bee a man, having heard and seen so admirable an accident, was so amazed in his mind, that many times he was very doubtfull whether this was a dream, or an absolute relation of truth. But, after he had more seriously considered thereon, and found it to be reall and infallible: with extraordinary gracious praises, he commended the life, constancy, condition, and vertues of *Genevra*, whom (till that time) he had alwaies called *Sicurano*. So committing her to the company of honourable Ladies, to be changed from her manly habit; he pardoned *Bernardo* her husband (according to her request formerly made) although he had more justly deserved death: which likewise himself confessed, and falling at the feet of *Genevra*, desired her (in tears) to forgive his rash transgression, which most lovingly she did, kissing and embracing him a thousand times.

Then the Soldane strictly commanded, that on some high and eminent place of the City, *Ambroginolo* should be bound, and impaled on a stake, having his naked body nointed all over with honey, and never to be taken off, untill of it self it fell in pieces, which according to the sentence, was presently performed. Next, he gave expresse charge, that all his money and goods should be given to *Genevra*, which was valued above ten thousand double Duckets. Forthwith a solemn feast was prepared, wherein much honour was done to *Bernardo*, being the husband of *Genevra*: and to her, as to a most worthy woman, and matchlesse wife, hee gave in costly Jewells, as also vessells of gold, and silver plate, so much as did amount to above ten thousand double Duckets more.

When the feasting was finished he caused a Ship to be furnished for them, granting them licence to depart for *Genevay* when they pleased; whither they returned most richly and joyfully, being welcommed home with great honour, especially Madam *Genevra*, whom every one supposed to be dead: and alwaies after, so long as she lived, she was most famous for her manifold vertues. But as for *Ambroginolo*, the very same day that he was impaled on the stake, anointed with hony, and fixed in the place appointed, to his no mean torment: he not only died, but likewise was devoured to the bare bones by Flies, Waspes, and Hornets, whereof the Countrey notoriously aboundeth. And his bones in full form and fashion, remained strangely black for a long time after, knit together by the sinewes, as a witnesse to many thousands of people, which afterward beheld

beheld the Carkasse of his wickednesse, against so good and vertuous a woman, that had not a thought of evill towards him. And thus was the Proverb truly verified, that shame succeedeth after ugly sin, and the deceiver is trampled and trod, by such as himself hath deceived.

Pagamino da Monaco a roving Pyrate on the Seas, carrieth away the fair wife of Signior Ricciardo de Chinzica, *who understanding where she was, went thither; and falling into friendship with* Pagamino, *demanded his wife of him; wherein he yeelded. Provided, that she would willingly go away with him. She denied to part thence with her Husband, and* Signior Ricciardo *dying, she became the wife of* Pagamino.

The tenth Novell.

Wherein old men are wittily reprehended, that will match with younger women than is fit for their yeare, and insufficient, never considering what afterward may happen to them.

Every one in this honest and gratious assembly, most highly commended the Novell recounted by the Queen; but especially *Dioneus*, who remained to finish that dayes pleasure with his own Discourse, and after many praises of the former Tale were past, Thus hee began. Faire Ladies, part of the Queens Novell hath made an alteration of my mind, from that which I intended to proceed next withall, and therefore I will report another. I cannot forget the unmanly indiscretion of *Bernardo*, but much more the base arrogance of *Ambroginolo*, how justly deserved shame fell upon him, as well it may happen to all other, that are so vile in their own opinions, as he apparently approved himself to be. For, as men wander abroad in the world, according to their occasions in diversitie of Countries and observations of the peoples behaviour; so are their humors as variously transported. And if they find women wantonly disposed abroad, the like judgement they give of their Wives at home; as if they had never knowne their birth and breeding, or made proofe of their loyall carriage towards them. Wherefore, the Tale that I purpose to relate, will likewise condemne all the like kind of men, but more especially such as think themselves endued with more strength then Nature meant to bestow on them, foolishly beleeving, that they can cover their own defects by fabulous demonstrations, and thinking to fashion other of their own complexions, that are meerly strangers to such grosse follies.

Know then, that there lived in *Pisa* (some hundred years before *Tuscany* and *Liguria* embraced the Christian Faith) a Judge better stored with wisedome and ingenuity,

ty, than corporall abilities of the body, named Signior *Riccardo Cinthica*. He being more than halfe perſwaded, that he could content a woman with ſuch ſatisfaction as he daily beſtowed on his ſtudies, being a widdower & extraordinary wealthy, laboured with no mean pains, to enjoy a fair and youthful wife in marriage: both which qualities hee ſhould have conſidered as good counſell to himſelf, as he gave to others, reſorting to him for advice. Upon this his amorous and diligent inquiſition, it came ſo to paſſe, that a worthy Gentlewoman, called *Bertolomea*, one of the faireſt and choiſeſt young maids in *Piſa*, whoſe youth did hardly agree with his age; but muck was the motive of this marriage, and no expectation of mutuall contentment. The Iudge being married, and the bride brought ſolemnly home to his houſe, we need make no queſtion of brave delicate cheer and banqueting, well furniſhed by their friends on either ſide: and other matters were now hammering in the Iudges head, for though he could pleaſe all his Clients with counſel, yet now ſuch a ſuit was commenced againſt himſelf, and in Beauties Court of continuall Requeſts, that the Iudge failing in plea for his owne defence, was often non-ſuited by lack of anſwer; yet hee wanted not good Wines, Drugs, and all ſorts of reſtoratives to comfort the heart, and increaſe good blood: but all availed not.

But well fare a good courage, where performance faileth, he could liberally commend his paſſed joviall dayes, and make a promiſe of as fair felicities yet to come; becauſe his youth would renew it ſelfe like to the Eagle, and his vigor be in as full force as before. But beſides all theſe idle allegations, he would needs inſtruct his wife in an Almanack or Kalender, which he had (formerly) bought at *Ravenna*, and wherein he plainly ſhewed her, that there was not one day in the year, but it was dedicated to ſome Saint or other. In reverence of whom, and for their ſakes, he approved by divers arguments and reaſons, that a man and his wife ought to abſtain from bedding together. Adding withall, that thoſe Saints dayes had their Feaſts and Faſts, beſides the four ſeaſons of the yeer, the vigils of the Apoſtles, and a thouſand other holidayes, with Fridayes, Saturdayes, and Sundayes, in honour of our Lords reſt, and all the holy time of Lent; as alſo certain obſervations of the Moone, and infinite other exceptions beſide; thinking perhaps, that it was as convenient for men to refrain from their wives converſation, as hee did often time from ſitting in the Court. Theſe were his daily documents to his young wife, wherewith (poore ſoule) ſhe became ſo tired, as nothing could be more irkſome to her;

and

and very carefull he was, leſt any ſhould teach her what belonged to working-dayes, becauſe he would have her know none but holidayes. It came to paſſe, that the ſeaſon waxing extreamly hot, Signior *Ricciardo* would goe to recreate himſelfe at his houſe in the Country neere to the blacke Mountain, where for his fair wives more contentment, hee continued divers dayes together. And for her further recreation, he gave order to have a day of fiſhing: he going aboard a ſmall Pinnace among the Fiſhers, and ſhe in another, conſorted with divers other Gentlewomen, in whoſe company ſhe was very well pleaſed. Delight made them launch further into the Sea, then either the Iudge was willing they ſhould have done, or agreed with their own ſafety. For ſuddainly a Galliot came upon them, wherein was one *Pagamino* a famous Pyrate, who eſpying the two Pinnaces, made preſently to them, and ſeized on that wherein the women were. When he beheld there ſo fair a young woman, he coveted after no other purchaſe, but mounting her into his Galliot, in the ſight of Signior *Ricciardo*, who by this time was fearfully landed, he carried her away with him. When Signior Iudge had ſeen this theft (he being ſo jealous of his wife, as ſcarſely he would let the air breath on her) it were needleſſe to know whether he was not offended, or no. He made great complaint at *Piſa*, and in other places beſide, what injury he had ſuſtained by thoſe Pyrates in carrying away his wife from him: but all in vain, he neither (as yet) knew the man, nor what was become of him. *Pagamino* perceiving what a beautifull woman ſhe was, made the more precious eſteem of his purchaſe, and being himſelfe a Batchelour, intended to keep her as his owne, comforting her with kind and pleaſing ſpeeches, not uſing any ill demeanour to her, becauſe ſhe wept and lamented grievouſly. But when night came, her husbands Kalender falling from her girdle, and all the faſts and feaſts quite out of her remembrance, ſhee received ſuch courteſies from *Pagamino*, that before they could arrive at *Monaco*, the Iudge and his Law cauſes were almoſt out of memory; ſuch was his affable behaviour to her, and ſhe began to converſe with him in more friendly manner, and he entreated her, as if ſhe had been his eſpouſed wife.

VVithin a ſhort while after, report had acquainted the Iudge, where, and how his wife was kept from him: whereupon he determined not to ſend, but rather to go himſelfe in perſon, and to redeem her from the Pyrate, with what ſums of money he could demand. By ſea he paſſed to *Monaco*, where he ſaw his wife, and ſhee him, as (ſoon after) ſhe made known to *Pagamino*. The next morning Signior

or *Ricciardo* meeting with *Pagamino*, made means to be acquainted with him, and within leſſe then an houres ſpace, they grew into familiar conference; *Pagamino* yet pretended not to know him, but expected what iſſue this talke would ſort to. VVhen time ſerved, the Iudge diſcourſed the occaſion of his comming thither, deſiring him to demand what ranſome he pleaſed, and that hee might have his wife home with him. VVhereto *Pagamino* anſwered.

My Lord Iudge, you are welcome hither, and to anſwer you briefly, very true it is, that I have a young Gentlewoman in my houſe, whom I neither know to be your wife, or any mans elſe whatſoever: for I am ignorant both of you and her, albeit ſhe hath remained a while here with me. If you be her husband, as you ſeem to avouch, I will bring her to you, for you appear to be a worthy Gentleman, and (queſtionleſſe) ſhe cannot chuſe but know you perfectly. If ſhe do confirm that which you have ſaid, and bee willing to depart hence with you: I ſhall reſt well ſatisfied, and will have no other recompence for her ranſome (in regard of your grave and reverend years) but what your ſelf ſhall pleaſe to give me. But if it fall out other than you have affirmed, you ſhall offer me great wrong in ſeeking to take her from me; becauſe I am a young man, and can as well maintain ſo fair a wife, as you, or any man elſe that I know. Beleeve it certainly, replyed the Iudge, that ſhe is my wife, and if you pleaſe to bring me where ſhe is, you ſhall ſoon perceive it: for ſhe will preſently caſt her arms about my neck, and I durſt adventure the loſſe of her if ſhee deny to doe it in your preſence. Come on then, ſaid *Pagamino*, and let us delay the time no longer.

VVhen they were entred into *Pagamino's* houſe, and ſate downe in the Hall, he cauſed her to be called, and ſhe being readily prepared for the purpoſe) came forth of her Chamber before them both, where friendly they ſate converſing together; never uttering any word unto Signior *Ricciardo*, or knowing him from any other ſtranger, that *Pagamino* might bring into the houſe with him. VVhich when my Lord the Iudge beheld, (who expected to find a farre more gracious welcome) hee ſtood as a man amazed, ſaying to himſelf. Perhaps my extraordinary grief and melancholy ſuffered by me ſince the time of her loſſe, hath ſo altered my wonted complexion, that ſhee is not able to take knowledge of me. VVherefore going neerer to her, he ſaid, Fair Love, deerly have I bought your going on filhing, becauſe never man felt the like afflictions as I doe ſince the day when I loſt you: but by this your uncivill ſilence, you ſeem as if you did not know me. VVhy dearеſt love, ſeeſt thou not that I am thy husband *Ricciardo*, who

who am come to pay what ransome this Gentleman shall demand, even in the house where now we are, so to convey thee home again, upon his kind promise of thy deliverance, after the payment of thy ransome?

Bertolomea turning towards him, and seeming as if shee smiled to her self, thus answered: Sir, speak you to mee? Advise your self well, lest you mistake me for some other; for mine owne part, I never saw you till now. How now, quoth *Ricciardo*? Consider better what you say, look more circumspectly on mee, and then you will remember, that I am your loving husband, and my name is *Ricciardo di Cinzica*. You must pardon me Sir, replyed *Bertolomea*, I know it is not so fitting for a modest woman to stand gazing in the faces of men: and let me look upon you never so often, certain I am, that (till this instant) I have not seen you. My Lord Iudge conveyed in his miud, that thus she denied all knowledg of him, as standing in fear of *Pagamino*, and would not confesse him in his presence. VVherefore he entreated of *Pagamino*, to afford him so much favour, that he might speake alone with her in her chamber. *Pagamino* answered that he was well content, provided, that he would not kisse her against her will. Then he requested *Bertolomea*, to go with him alone into her chamber, there to hear what he could say, and to answer him as she found occasion. VVhen they were come together into the chamber, and none there present but he and she, Signior *Ricciardo* began in this manner. Heart of my heart, life of my life, the sweetest hope that I have in this world; wilt thou not know thine owne *Ricciardo*, who loveth thee more then he doth himself? VVhy art thou so strange? Am I so disfigured, that thou knowst me not? Behold me with a more pleasing eye, I pray thee.

Bertolomea smiled to her self, and without suffering him to proceed any further in speech, returned to him this answer. I would have you to understand Sir, that my memory is not so oblivious, but I know you to be Signior *Ricciardo di Cinzica*, and my husband by title, but during the time that I was with you, it very ill appeared that you had any knowledge of me. For if you had been so wise and considerate, as (in your own judgment) the world reputed you to be, you could not be void of so much apprehension, but did apparently perceive, that I was young, fresh, and cheerfully disposed; and so (by consequent) meet to know matters requisite for such young women beside allowance of food and garments, though bashfulnesse and modesty forbid to utter it. But if studying the Lawes were more welcome to you then a wife, you ought not to have married, and you lose the worthy reputation of a Iudge, when you

you fall from that venerable profession, and make your self a common proclaimer of Feasts and Fasting dayes, Lenten seasons, Vigils, and solemnities due to Saints, which prohibit the houshold conversation of husbands and wives.

Here am I now with a worthy Gentleman, that entertaineth me with very honourable respect, and here I live in this Chamber, not so much as hearing of any feasts or fasting dayes; for, neither Fridayes, Saturdayes, Vigills of Saints, or any lingering of Lent, enter at this doore: but here is honest and civill conversation, better agreeing with a youthfull disposition then those harsh documents wherewith you tutor'd me. Wherefore my purpose is to continue here with him, as being a place surable to my mind and youth, referring feasts, vigills, and fasting dayes, to a more mature and stayed time of age; when the body is better able to endure them: and the mind may be prepared for such ghostly meditations: depart therefore at your owne pleasure, and make much of your Calender, without enjoying any company of mine, for you hear my resolved determination.

The Iudge hearing these words, was overcome with exceeding grief, and when she was silent, thus hee began: Alas dear Love, what an answer is this? Hast thou no regard of thine own honour, thy Parents and friends? Canst thou rather affect to abide here, for the pleasures of this man, and so sin capitally, then to live at *Pisa* in the state of my wife? Consider dear heart, when this man shall wax weary of thee, to thy shame, and his own disgrace, he will reject thee. I must and shall love thee for ever, and when I die, I leave thee Lady and commandresse of all that is mine. Can an inordinate appetite, cause thee to bee careless of thy honour, and of him that loves thee as his own life? Alas, my fairest hope, say no more so, but returne home with me; and now that I am acquainted with thy inclination, I will endeavour hereafter to give thee better contentment. Wherefore (deer heart) do not denie mee, but change thy mind, and goe with me, for I never saw merry day since I lost thee.

Sir (quoth she) I desire no body to have care of mine honour, beside my self, because it cannot be here abused. And as for my Parents, what respect had they of me, when they made me your wife? If then they could be so careless of me; what reason have I to regard them now? And whereas you taxe me, that I cannot live here without capitall sin, far is the thought hereof from me, for, here I am regarded as the wife of *Pagamino*, but at *Pisa*, you reputed mee not worthy your society: because by the point of the Moon, and the quadratures of Geometrie the Planets held

conjunction

conjunctiō between you & me, whereas here I am subiect to noſuch conſtellations: you ſay beſide, that hereafter you will ſtrive to give me better contentment than you have done; ſurely in mine opinion it is no way poſſible, becauſe our complexions are ſo different, as ice is from fire, or gold from droſs. As for your allegation, of this Gentlemans reiecting me, when his humour is ſatisfied; if it ſhould prove to be ſo, what fortune ſoever ſhall betide me, never will I make any means to you, what miſeries or miſadventures may happen to me; but the world will afford mee one reſting place or other, and more to my contentment, than if I were with you. Therefore I tell your again to live ſecured from all offence to holy Saints, and not to injure their feaſts, faſts, vigils, and other ſeaſons, here is my demourance, and from hence I purpoſe not to depart.

Our Iudge was now in a wofull perplexity, and confeſſing his folly, in marrying a wife ſo young, and far unfit for his age and ability: being half deſperate, ſad, and diſpleaſed, he came forth of the chamber, uſing diuers ſpeeches to *Pagamino*, whereof hee made little or no account at all; and in the end, without any other ſucceſs, left his wife there, and returned home to *Piſa*. There further afflictions fell upon him, becauſe the people began to ſcorn him, demanding daily of him, what was become of his gallant young wife, making hornes, with ridiculous poſtures at him, whereby his ſenſes became diſtracted, ſo that he ran raving about the ſtreets, and afterwards died in miſerable manner. Which news came no ſooner to the eare of *Pagamino*, but, in the honourable affection he bare to *Bertolmea*, he married her, with great ſolemnities, baniſhing all feaſts, vigils, and Lents from his houſe, and living with her in much felicity. Wherefore (fair Ladies) I am of opinion, that *Bernardo* of *Geneway*, in his diſputation with *Ambroginolo*, might have ſhewn himſelf a great deal wiſer, and ſpared his raſh proceeding with his wife.

This Tale was ſo merrily entertained among the whole company, that each one ſmiling upon another, with one conſent commended *Dioneus*, maintaining that hee ſpake nothing but the truth, and condemning *Bernardo* for his crueltie. Vpon a generall ſilence commanded, the Queen perceiving that the time was now very far ſpent, and every one had delivered their ſeverall Novells, which likewiſe gave a period to her Royalty: ſhe gave the Crowne to Madam *Neiphila*, pleaſantly ſpeaking to her in this order. Hereafter, the government of this poor people is committed to your truſt and care, for with the day concludeth my dominion. Madam *Neiphila* bluſhing at the honour that was done unto her, her cheeks appea-

appeared of a vermilion tincture, her eyes glittering with graceſull deſires, and ſparkling like the morning ſtar. And after the modeſt murmur of the Aſſiſtants was ceaſed, and her courage in cheerfull manner ſetled, ſeating her ſelf higher then ſhe did before, thus ſhe ſpake.

Seeing it is ſo, that you have elected me your Queen; to vary ſomewhat from the courſe obſerved by them that went before me, whoſe government you have all ſo much commended: by approbation of your counſell, I am deſirous to ſpeak my mind concerning what I would have to be next followed. It is not unknown to you all, that to morrow ſhall be friday, and Saturday the next day following, which are dayes ſomewhat moleſtuous to the moſt part of men, for preparation of their weekly food and ſuſtenance. Moreover, Friday ought to be reverendly reſpected, in remembrance of him, who dyed to give us life, and endured his bitter paſſion as on that day, which makes me to hold it fit and expedient, that we ſhould mind more weighty matters, and rather attend our prayers and devotions, than the repetitions of Tales or Novels. Now concerning Saturday, it hath been a cuſtome obſerved among women, to bath and waſh themſelves from ſuch immundicities as the former weeks toil hath impoſed on them. Beſide, it is a day of Faſting, in honour of the enſuing Sabbath, whereon no labour may be done, but the obſervation of holy exerciſes.

By that which hath been ſaid, you may eaſily perceive, that the courſe which we have hitherto continued, cannot be proſecuted in one and the ſame manner: wherefore, I would adviſe, and doe hold it an action well performed by us, to ceaſe for theſe few dayes, from recounting any other Novells. And becauſe we have remained here four days already, except we would allow the enlargiug of our company, with ſome other friends, that may reſort unto us: I think it neceſſary to remove from hence, and take our pleaſure in another place, which is already by me determined. When we ſhall be there aſſembled, and have ſlept on the diſcourſes formerly delivered, let our next argument be ſtill the mutabilities of Fortune, but eſpecially to concern ſuch perſons, as by their wit and ingenuity, induſtrioufly have attained to ſome matter earneſtly deſired, or elſe recovered again after the loſſe. Hereon let us ſeverally ſtudy and premeditate, that the hearers may receive benefit thereby, with the comfortable maintenance of our harmleſſe recreations; the priviledge of *Diœum* alwayes reſerved to himſelf.

Every one commended the Queens deliberation, concluding that it ſhould be accordingly proſecuted, and there-

upon the Master of the houshold was called to give him order for that evenings Table-service, and what else concerned the time of the Queens royalty, wherein he was sufficiently instructed: which being done, the company arose, licensing every one to doe what they liked. The Ladies and Gentlemen walked to the Garden, and having sported there a while; when the houre of supper came, they sate down, and fared very daintily. Being risen from Table, according to the Queens command, Madam *Æmilia* led the dance, and the ditty following, was sung by Madam *Pampinea*, being answered by all the rest, as a Chorus.

The Song.

And if not I, what Lady else can sing,
Of those delights, which kind contentments bring?
Come, come, sweet Love, the cause of my chief good,
Of all my hopes, the firm and full effect;
Sing we together, but in no sad mood,
Of sighes or tears, which joy doth countercheck:
Stolne pleasures are delightfull in the taste,
But yet Loves fire is oftentimes too fierce;
Consuming comfort with ore-speedy haste,
Which into gentle hearts too far doth pierce.
And if not I, &c.

The first day that I felt this fiery heat,
So sweet a passion did possesse my soul,
That though I found the torment sharp and great;
Yet still me thought 'twas but a sweet controul.
Nor could I count it rude, or rigorous,
Taking my wound from such a piercing eye:
As made the pain most pleasing, gracious,
That I desire in such assaults to die.
And if not I, &c.

Grant then great God of love, that I may still
Enjoy the benefit of my desire;
And honour her with all my deepest skill,
That first enflam'd my heart with holy fire.
To her my bondage is free liberty,
My sicknesse health, my tortures sweet repose;
Say she the word, in full felicity,
All my extreams join in an happy close.
Then if not I, what Lover else can sing,
Of those delights which kind contentment bring?

After this Song was ended, they sung divers other beside, and having great variety of instruments, they played to them as many pleasing dances. But the Queen considering that the meet hour for rest was not yet come, with their lighted

lighted Torches before them, they all repaired to their Chambers; ſparing the other dayes next ſucceeding, for thoſe reaſons by the Queen alledged, and ſpending the Sunday in ſolemn devotion.

The third Day.

Upon which day, all matters to be diſcourſed on do paſſe under the Regiment of Madam Neiphila *: concerning ſuch perſons as (by their wit and induſtry) have attained to their long wiſhed deſires, or recovered ſomething, ſuppoſed to be loſt.*

The Induction to the enſuing Diſcourſes.

THE morning put on a vermillion countenance, and made the Sunne to riſe bluſhing red, when the Queen (and all the fair company) were come abroad forth of their chambers; the Seneſhall or great Maſter of the Houſhold, having (long before) ſent all things neceſſary to the place of their next intended meeting. And the people which prepared there every needfull matter, ſuddainly when they ſaw the Queen was ſetting forward, charged all the reſt of their followers, as if it had been preparation for a Camp; to make haſt away with the carriages, the reſt of the Family remaining behind, to attend upon the Ladies and Gentlemen.

With a mild, Majeſtick, and gentle pace, the Queen rode on, being followed by the other Ladies, and the three young Gentlemen, taking the way towards the Weſt; conducted by the muſical notes of ſweet ſinging Nightingales, and infinite other pretty Birds beſide, riding in a tract not much frequented, but richly abounding with fair herbs and flowers; which by reaſon of the Suns high mounting, began to open their boſome, and fill the freſh Air with their odoriferous perfumes. Before they had travelled two mile miles diſtance, all of them pleaſantly converſing together, they arrived at another goodly Palace, which being ſomewhat mounted above the plain, was ſeated on the ſide of a little riſing hill.

When they were entred thereinto, and had ſeen the great Hall, the Parlors, and beautifull chambers, every one ſo ſtupendiouſly furniſhed, with all convenient commodities to them belonging, and nothing wanting that could be deſired; they highly commended it, reputing the Lord thereof for a moſt worthy man, that had adorned it in ſuch Princely manner. Afterward, being deſcended lower, and noting the moſt ſpacious

& pleaſant court the cellars ſtored with the choiſeſt wines, and delicate ſprings of waters every where running, their praiſes then exceeded more & more. And being weary with beholding ſuch variety of pleaſures, they ſate down in a fair Gallery, which took the view of the whole Court, it being round engirt with trees and flowers, whereof the ſeaſon then yeelded great plenty. And then came the diſcreet Maſter of the Houſhold, with divers ſervants attending on him, preſenting them with comfits, and other Banqueting, as alſo very ſingular wines, to ſerve in ſtead of breakefaſt.



Having thus repoſed themſelves a while, a Garden gate was ſet open to them, coaſting on one ſide the Palace, and round encloſed with high mounted walls. VVhereinto when they were entred, they found it to be a moſt beautifull Garden, ſtored with all varieties that

that possibly could be deviſed; and therefore they obſerved it the more reſpectively. The walkes and allies were good and ſpatious, yet directly ſtraight as an arrow, environed with ſpreading vines, whereon the grapes hung in copious cluſters; which being come to their full ripeneſſe, gave ſo rare a ſmel throughout the Garden, with other ſweet ſavors intermixed among, that they ſuppoſed to feel the freſh ſpiceries of the East.

It would beſide require much time, to deſcribe all the varities of this place, deſerving much more to be commended, than my beſt faculties will afford me. In the midſt of this Garden was a ſquare plot, after the reſemblance of a meadow, flouriſhing with high graſſe, herbs, and plants, beſide a thouſand diverſities of flowers, as if by the Art of planting they had been there deputed. Round was it, circled with very verdant Orenge and Cedar trees, their branches plenteouſly ſtored with fruit both old and new, as alſo the flowers growing among them, yeelding not only a rare aſpect to the eye, but alſo a delicate ſavour to the ſmell.

In the midſt of this Meadow, ſtood a Fountaine of white marble, whereon was engraven moſt admirable workmanſhip, and within it (I know not whether it were by a naturall vein, or artificiall) flowing from a figure, ſtanding on a Columne in the midſt of the Fountaine, ſuch aboundance of water, and ſo mounting up towards the Skies, that it was a wonder to behold. For after the high aſcent, it fell down again into the wombe of the Fountain, with ſuch a noiſe and pleaſing murmur, as the ſtream that glideth from a mill. VVhen the receptacle of the Fountain did overflow the bounds, it ſtreamed along the meadow, by ſecret paſſages, and channells, very fair and artificially made, returning again into every part of the meadow, by the like wayes of cunning conveyance, which allowed it a full courſe into the Garden, running ſwiftly thence down towards the plaines; but before it came thither, the very ſwift current of the ſtream did drive two goodly Mils, which brought in great benefit to the Lord of the ſoil.

The ſight of this Garden, the goodly grafts, plants, trees, herbes, frutages, and flowers, the Springs, Fountains, and pretty rivolets ſtreaming from it, ſo highly pleaſed the Ladies and Gentlemen, that among other infinite commendations, they ſpared not to ſay, if any Paradiſe remained on the earth to be ſeen, it could not poſſibly be in any other place, but onely was contained within the compaſſe of this Garden. With no mean pleaſure and delight they walked round about it, making Chaplets of flowers, and other fair branches of the trees, continually hearing the Birds in me-

lodious notes, eechoing and warbling one to another, even as if they envied each others felicities.

But yet another beauty (which before had not presented it selfe to them) on a suddaine they perceived divers creatures in many parts of the garden. In one place Conies tripping about; in another place Hares; in a third part Goats browsing on the herbes, and little young Hindes feeding every where: yet without strife or warring together, but rather living in such a Domestick and pleasing kind of company, even as if they were appointed to instruct the most noble of all creatures, to imitate their sociable conversation.

When their senses had sufficiently banqueted on those severall beauties, the tables were sodainly prepared about the Fountaine; where first they sung six Canzonets; and having paced two or three dances, they sate downe to dinner, according as the Queen ordained, being served in very sumptuous manner, with all kinde of costly and delicate viands, yet not any babling noise among them. The Tables being withdrawne, they played againe upon their instruments, singing and dancing gracefully together, till, in regard of the extreame heate, the Queene commanded to give over, and permitted such as were so pleased, to take their ease and rest. But some, as not satisfied with the places pleasures, gave themselves to walking, others fell to reading the lives of the Romans; some to the Chesse, and the rest to other recreations.

But after the dayes warmth was more mildly qualified, and every one had made benefit of the best content: they went (by order sent from the Queen) into the Meadow where the Fountaine stood, and being set about it, as they used to doe in telling their Tales (the argument appointed by the Queen being propounded) the first that had the charge imposed, was *Philostratus*, who began in this manner,

Massetto di Lamporechio, *by counterfeiting himselfe to be dumbe, became a Gardiner in a Monastery of Nunnes, where he had familiar conversation with them all.*

The first Novell.

Wherein is declared, that Vioginity is very hardly to be kept in all places.

MOst worthy Ladies, there wants no store of men and women, that are so simple, as to credit for a certainty, that so soone as a young virgin hath the veile put on her head, and the black Cowle given to cover her withall, she is no longer a woman, nor more sensible of feminine affections, than as if in turning Nun, she became converted to a stone. And if (perchance) they heare some matters

contrary

contrary to their former perſwaſion; then they grow ſo furiouſly offended, as if one had committed a moſt foul and enormous ſinne, directly againſt the courſe of Nature And the torrent of this opinion hurries them on ſo violently, that they will admit no leiſure to conſider, how (in ſuch a ſcope of liberty) they have power to doe what they liſt, yea beyond all means of ſufficient ſatisfying, never remembring how potent the priviledge of idleneſſe is, eſpecially when it is backt by ſolitude. In like manner, there are other people now, who verily beleeve, that the Spade and Pickax, groſſe feeding and labour, doe quench all ſenſuall and fleſhly concupiſcence, yea in ſuch as till and husband the ground, by making them dull, blockiſh, and (almoſt) meere ſenſeleſſe of underſtanding. But I will approve (according as the Queen hath commanded me, and within the compaſſe of her direction) by a ſhort and pleaſant Tale how greatly they are abuſed by errour, that build upon ſo weak a foundation.

Not farre from *Alexandria*, there was a great and goodly Monaſtery, belonging to the Lord of thoſe parts, who is termed the Admirall. And therein, under the care and truſt of one woman, divers virgins were kept as recluſes, or Nuns, vowed to chaſtity of life; out of whoſe number, the Soldane of Babylon (under whom they lived in ſubjection) at every three yeers end, had uſually three of theſe virgins ſent him. At the time whereof I am now to ſpeak, there remained in the Monaſtery, no more but eight religious Siſters onely, beſide the Lady Abbeſſe, and an honeſt poore man, who was a Gardiner, and kept the Garden in a moſt commendable and fit order.

His wages being ſmall, and he not well contented therewith, would ſerve there no longer: but making his accounts even with the *Fac-totum* or Bayliffe belonging to the houſe, returned thence to the village of *Lamporechio*, being a native of the place. Among many other that gave him welcome home, was a young Hebrew Pezant of that country, ſturdy, ſtrong, and yet comely of perſon, being named *Maſſet*. But becauſe he was borne not farre off from *Lamporechio*, and had there been brought up all his younger dayes, his name of *Maſſet* (according to their vulgar ſpeech) was turned to *Maſſetto*, and therefore he was uſually called and known by the name of *Maſſetto* of *Lamporechio*.

Maſſetto, falling in talke with the honeſt poore man, whoſe name was *Lurco*, demanded of him what ſervices he had done in the monaſtery, having continued there ſo long a time? Quoth *Lurco*, I laboured in the Garden, which is very fair and great; then I went to the Foreſt to fetch home wood, and cleft it for their Chamber fuell, drawing

up all their water beſide, with many other toilſome ſervices elſe: but the allowance of my wages was ſo little, as it would not pay for the ſhooes I wore. And that which was worſt of all, they being all young women, I think the Devill dwels among them, for a man cannot doe any thing to pleaſe them. When I have been buſie at my worke in the garden, one would come and ſay put this here, put that there; and others would take the dibble out of my hand, telling me, that I did not performe any thing well, making me ſo weary of their continuall trifling, as I have left all buſineſſe, given over the Garden, and what for one moleſtation, as alſo many other; I intended to tarry no longer there, but came away as thou ſeeſt. And yet the *Fac-totum* deſired me at my departing, that if I knew any one who would undertake the aforeſaid labours, I would ſend him thither, as (indeed) I promiſed to doe: but let me fall ſick and dye before I help to ſend them any.

When *Maſſetto* had heard the words of *Lurco*, he was ſo deſirous to live among the Nunnes, that nothing elſe now hammered in his head: for he meant more ſubtilly then poore *Lurco* did, and made no doubt to pleaſe them ſufficiently. Then conſidering with himſelfe, how beſt he might bring his intent to effect, which appeared not eaſily to be done. He would queſtion no further therein with *Lurco*, but onely demanded other matter of him, ſaying: Introth thou didſt well *Lurco*, to come away from ſo tedious a dwelling, had he not need to be more than a man that is to live with ſuch women? It were better for him to dwell among ſo many devils, becauſe they underſtand not the tenth part that womens wily wits can dive into.

After their conference was ended, *Maſſetto* began to beat his brains how he might compaſſe to dwell among them, and knowing that he could well enough perform all the labours whereof *Lurco* had made mention: he cared not for any loſſe he could ſuſtaine thereby, but onely ſtood in doubt of his entertainment, becauſe he was too young and ſprightly. Having pondered on many imaginations, he ſaid to himſelfe. The place is farre enough diſtant hence, and none there can know me; if I have wit ſufficient, cleanly to make them beleeve that I am dumbe, then (queſtionleſſe) I ſhall be received. And reſolving to proſecute this determination, he took a ſpade on his ſhoulder, and without revealing to any body whither he went, in the diſguiſe of a poore labouring Countryman, he travelled to the Monaſtery.

When he was there arrived, he found the great gate open, and entering in boldly, it was his good hap to eſpy the *Fac totum* in the court, according as *Lurco* had given deſcription of him. Making ſigns before him, as if he were both

dumbe

dumbe and deaf; he manifested, that he craved an Almes for Gods sake, making shew, beside, that if need required, he could cleave wood, or doe any reasonable kind of service. The *Fac-totum* gladly gave him food, and afterward shewed him divers knotty logs of wood, which the weak strength of *Lurco* had left uncloven; but this fellow being more active and lusty, quickly rent them all to pieces. Now it so fell out, that the *Fac-totum* must needs goe to the Forrest, and took *Massetto* along with him thither: where causing him to fell divers trees, by signes he bad him to lade the two Asses therewith, which commonly carried home all the wood, and so drive them to the Monastery before him, which *Massetto* knew well enough how to doe, and performed it very effectually.

Many other servile Offices were there to be done, which caused the *Fac-totum* to make use of his paines divers other dayes beside; in which time, the Lady Abbesse chancing to see him, demanded of the *Fac-totum* what he was? Madam (quoth he) a poore labouring man; who is both deaf and dumbe, came to crave an almes the other day, the which in charity I could doe no lesse but give him; for which he hath done many honest services about the house. It seems beside, that he hath pretty skill in Gardening, so that if I can perswade him to continue here, I make no question of his able services: for the old silly man is gone, and we have need of such a stout fellow, to doe the businesse belonging to the Monastery, and one fitter for the turne comes seldome hither. Moreover, in regard of his double imperfections, the Sisters can sustain no impeachment by him. Wherefore the Abbesse answered, saying, By the faith of my body, you speak but the truth: understand then if he have any knowledge in Gardening, and whether he will dwell here or no: which compasse so kindly as you can. Let him have a new paire of shooes, fill his belly daily full of meate, flatter and make much of him, for we shall find him worke enough to doe. All which, the *Fac-totum* promised to fulfill sufficiently.

Massetto, who was not farre off from them all this while, but seemed seriously busied about sweeping and making clean the Court, heard all these speeches; and being not a little joyfull of them; said to himselfe: If once I come to worke in your Garden, let my proof yeeld praise of my skill and knowledge. When the *Fac totum* perceived, that he knew perfectly how to undergoe his businesse, and had questioned him by signes, concerning his willingnesse to serve there still and received the like answer also, of his dutifull readinesse thereto, he gave him order to worke in the Garden, because the season did now require it; and to leave all other affairs for the Monastery, attending

now only the Gardens preparation.

As *Massetto* was thus about his Garden emploiment, the Nunnes began to resort thither, and thinking the man to be dumbe and deafe indeed, were the more lavish of their language, mocking and flowting him very immodestly, as being perswaded, that he heard them not. And the Lady Abbesse, thinking he might as well be an Eunuch, as deprived both of hearing and speaking, stood the lesse in fear of the Sisters walkes, but referred them to their owne care and providence. On a day, *Massetto* having laboured somewhat extraordinarily, lay downe to rest himselfe a while under the trees, and two delicate young Nunnes, walking there to take the aire, drew neer to the place where he dissembled sleeping, and both of them observing his comelinesse of person, began to pitty the poverty of his condition, but much more the misery of his great defects. Then one of them, who had a little livelier spirit than the other, thinking *Massetto* to be fast a sleep, began in this manner.

Sister (quoth she) if I were faithfully assured of thy secrecie, I would tell thee a thing which I have often thought on, and it may (perhaps) redound to thy profit. Sister, replyed the other Nun, speak your minde boldly, and beleeve it (on my Mayden-head) that I will never reveale it to any creature living. Encouraged by this solemne answer, the first Nun thus prosecuted her former purpose, saying. I know not Sister, whether it hath entered into thine understanding or no, how strictly we are here kept and attended, never any man daring to adventure among us, except our good and honest *Fac totum*, who is very aged; and this dumbe fellow maimed, and made imperfect by nature, and therefore not worthy of the title of a man. Ah Sister, it hath oftentimes bin told me, by Gentlewomen comming hither to visite us, that all other sweets in the world are mockeries, to the incomparable pleasures of man and woman, of which we are barred by our unkind parents, binding us to perpetuall chastity, which they were never able to observe themselves.

A Sister of this house once told me, that before her turne came to be sent to the Soldane, she fell in frailty with a man that was both lame and blind, and discovering the same to her Ghostly Father in confession; he absolved her of that sinne; affirming, that she had not transgessed with a man, because he wanted his rationall and understanding parts. Behold Sister, here lyes a creature, almost formed in the selfe-same mold, dumbe and deafe, which are two the most rationall and understanding parts that doe belong to any man, and therefore no man, wanting them. If folly and frailty should be committed with him (as many times

since

since he came hither it hath run in my mind) he is by Nature sworne to such secrecy, that he cannot (if he would) be a blabbe thereof. Beside, the Lawes and constitution of our Religion doth teach us, that a sin so assuredly concealed, is more than halfe absolved.

Ave Maria Sister (said the other Nun) what kinde of words are these you utter? Doe you not know, that we have promised our virginity to God? Oh Sister (answered the other) how many things are promised to him every day, and not one of a thousand kept or performed? If we have made him such a promise, and some of our weaker-witted Sisters doe performe it for us, no doubt but he will accept it in part of payment. Yea, but Sister, replyed the second Nun again, there is another danger lying in the way: If we prove to be with child, how shall we do then? Sister (quoth our couragious wench) thou art afraid of harme before it happen: if it come so to passe, let us consider on it then: thou art but a Novice in matters of such moment, we are provided of a thousand meanes, whereby to prevent conception. Or if they should fail, we are so surely fitted, that the world shall never know it. Let it suffice, our lives must not be by any so much as suspected, our Monastery questioned, or our Religion rashly scandalized. Thus she schooled her younger Sister in wit, albeit as forward as she in will, and longed as desirously, to know what kind of creature man was.

After some other questions, how this intention of theirs might be safely brought to full effect: the sprightly Nun that had wit at will, thus answered. You see Sister (quoth she) it is now the houre of Midday, when all the rest of our Sisterhood are quiet in their Chambers, because wee are then allowed to sleep for our earlier rising to morning Mattins. Here are none in the Garden now but our selves, and while I awake him be you the watch, and afterward follow me in my fortune, for I will valiantly lead you the way. *Massetto* immitating a Dogges sleep, heard all this conspiracie intended against him, and longed as earnestly till she came to awake him. Which being done, he seemed very simple and sottish, and she chearing him with flattering behaviour into the close Arbour they went which, the Sunnes bright eye could not pierce into, and there I leave it to the Nunnes owne approbation, whether *Massetto* was a man rationall, or no. Ill deeds require longer time to contrive, than act; and both the Nunnes having been with *Massetto* at this new forme of confession, were enjoyned (by him) such an easie and silent penance, as brought them the oftner to shrift, and made him to prove a very perfect Confessour.

Desires obtained, but not fully satisfied, doe common

ly urge more frequent acceſſe, than wiſdome thinks expedient, nor can continue without diſcovery. Our two joyfull Nunnes, not a little proud of their private ſtolne pleaſures, ſo long reſorted to the cloſe Arbour, till another Siſter, who had often obſerved their haunt thither, by means of a little hole in her window; that ſhe began to ſuſpect them with *Maſſetto*, and imparted the ſame to two other Siſters, allthree concluding, to accuſe him before the Lady Abbeſſe. But upon a further conference had with the Offenders, they changed opinion, tooke the ſame oath as the fore women had done; and becauſe they would be free from any taxation at all, they revealed their adventures to the other three ignorants, and ſo fell all eight into one formall confederacy, but by good and warie obſervation, leſt the Abbeſſe her ſelfe ſhould diſcery them; finding poore *Maſſetto* ſuch plenty of Garden-work, as made him very doubtfull in pleaſing them all.

It came to paſſe in the end, that the Lady abbeſſe who all this while imagined no ſuch matter, walking all alone in the garden on a day, found *Maſſetto* ſleeping under an Almond tree, having then very little buſineſſe to doe, becauſe he had wrought hard all the night before. She obſerved him to be an handſome man, young, luſty, well-limbd and proportioned, having a mercifull commiſeration of his dumbeneſſe and deafneſſe, being perſwaded alſo in like manner, that if he were an Eunuch too, he deſerved a thouſand times the more to be pitied. The ſeaſon was exceeding hot, and he lay downe ſo careleſſely to ſleep, that ſomething was noted; wherein ſhe intended to be better reſolved, almoſt falling ſick of the other Nunnes diſeaſe. Having awaked him, ſhe commanded him by ſignes that he ſhould follow her to her chamber, where he was kept cloſe ſo long, that the Nunnes grew offended, becauſe the Gardiner came not to his daily labour.

Well may you imagine that *Maſſetto* was no miſſeproud man now to be thus advanced from the Garden to the Chamber, & by no worſe woman than the Lady Abbeſs her ſelfe: what ſigns, ſhewes, or language he ſpake there, I am not able to expreſſe: only it appeared, that his behaviour pleaſed her ſo well, as it procured his daily repairing hither, and acquainted her with ſubh familiar converſation, as ſhe would have condemned in the Nunnes her daughters, but that they were wiſe enough to keep it from her. Now began *Maſſetto* to conſider he had undertaken a taske belonging to great *Hercules* in giving content to ſo many and by continuing dumbe in this manner, it would redound to his no meane detriment, Whereupon, as he was one night ſitting by the Abbeſſe, the ſtring that retained his tongue from ſpeech, brak on a ſodain, & thus he ſpake.

Hiss

Madame I have often heard it ſaid, that one Cock may doe ſervice to ten ſeverall Hennes, but ten men can very hardly even with all their beſt endeavour, give full ſatisfaction every way to one woman; and yet I am tyed to content nine, which is farre beyond the compaſſe of my power to doe. Already have I performed ſo much Garden and Chamber-worke, that I confeſſe my ſelfe ſtark tired, and can travell no further, and therefore ler me intreat you to licenſe my departure hence, or find ſome means for my better eaſe. The Abbeſſe hearing him ſpeak, who had ſo long been there dumbe, being ſtricken into admiration, and accounting it almoſt a miracle, ſaid. How commeth this to paſſe? I verily beleeved thee to be dumbe,. Madam (quoth *Maſſetto*) ſo I was indeed, but not by Nature; onely I had a long lingring ſickneſſe which bereft me of ſpeech, and which I have not only recovered again this night, but ſhall ever remaine thankfull to you for it.

The Abbeſſe verily credited his anſwer, demanding what he meant in ſaying, that he did ſerve to nine? Madam, quoth he, this were a dangerous queſtion, and not eaſily anſwered before all the eight Siſters. Vpon this reply, the Abbeſſe plainly perceived that not only ſhe had fallen into folly, but all the Nunnes cryed guilty too: wherefore being a woman of ſound diſcretion; ſhe would not grant that *Maſſetto* ſhould depart, but to keep him ſtill about the Nunnes buſineſſe, becauſe the Monaſtery ſhould not be ſcandalized by him. And the *Fac-totum* being dead a little before his ſtrange recovery of ſpeech revealed, and ſome things elſe more neerly concerning them: by generall conſent, and with the good liking of *Maſſetto*, he was created the *Fac-totum* of the Monaſtery.

All the neighbouring people dwelling thereabout, who knew *Maſſetto* to be dumbe, by fetching home wood dayly from the forreſt, and divers imployments in other places, were made to beleeve, that by the Nunnes devout prayers and diſcipline, as alſo the merit of the Saint, in whoſe honour the Monaſtery was built and erected, *Maſſetto* had his long reſtrained Speech reſtored, and was now become their ſole *Fac totum*, having power now to employ others in drudgeries, and eaſe himſelfe of all ſuch labours. And albeit he made the Nunnes to be fruitfull, by encreaſing ſome ſtore of younger ſiſters, yet all matters were ſo cloſe and cleanly carryed, as it was never talkt of till after the death of the Lady Abbeſſe, when *Maſſetto* began to grow in good years, and deſired to returne home to his native abiding, which (within a while after) was granted him.

Thus *Maſſetto* being rich and old, returned home like a wealthy father, taking no care for the nurſing of his children, but bequeathed them to the place where they were bred

bred and borne; having (by his wit and ingenious apprehenſion) made ſuch a benefit of his youthfull yeers, that now he took eaſe in his age.

A Querry of the Stable, belonging to Agilulffo, *King of the Lombardes, found the means of acceſſe to the Queenes bed, without any knowledge or conſent in her. This being ſecretly diſcovered by the King, and the party knowne, he gave him a mark, by ſhearing the hair of his head. Whereupon he that was ſo ſhorne, ſhearing likewiſe all his fellowes in the lodging, and ſo eſcaped the puniſhment intended towards him.*

The ſecond Novell.

Wherein is ſignified, the providence of a wiſe man, when he ſhall have reaſon to uſe revenge. And the cunning means of another, when he compaſſeth craft to defend himſelfe from perill.

WHen the Novell of *Philoſtratus* was concluded which made ſome of the Ladies bluſh, and the reſt to ſmile; it pleaſed the Queen, that Madam *Pampinea* ſhould follow next, to ſeeond the other gone before; when ſhe, ſmiling on the whole aſſembly, began thus. There are ſome men ſo ſhallow of capacity, that they will (nevertheleſſe) make ſhew of knowing and underſtanding ſuch things, as neither they are able to do, nor appertain to them: whereby they will ſometimes reprehend other new errours, and ſuch faults as they have unwillingly committed, thinking thereby to hide their own ſhames, when they make it much more apparent and manifeſt. For proof whereof, fair company, in a contrary kinde I will ſhew you the ſubtill cunning of one, who (perhaps) might be reputed of leſſe reckoning than *Maſſetto*; & yet he went beyond a King, that thought himſelfe to be a much wiſer man.

Agilulffo, King of *Lombardie*, according as his Predeceſſours had done before him, made the principall ſeat of his Kingdome, in the City of *Pavia*, having embraced in marriage *Tendelinga*, the late left widow of *Veteno*, who likewiſe had been King of the *Lombardes*; a moſt beautifull, wiſe & vertuous Lady, but made unfortunate by a miſchance. The occurrences and eſtate of the whole Realme, being in an honourable, quiet and well ſetled condition, by the diſcreet care and providence of the King; a Querrie appertaining to the Queens Stable of Horſe, being a man but of mean and low quality, though comely of perſon, and of equall ſtature to the King; became immeaſureably amorous of the Queen. And becauſe his baſe and ſervile condition, had endued him with ſo much underſtanding, as to know infallibly, that his affection was mounted beyond the compaſſe of conveniency: wiſely he concealed it to himſelfe, not acquainting any one therewith, or daring ſo much, as

to

to discover it either by looks, or any other affectionate behaviour.

And although he lived utterly hopelesse, of ever attaining to his hearts desires; yet notwithstanding, he proudly gloried, that his love had soared so high a pitch, to be enamored of a Queen. And dayly, as the furie of his flame encreased; so his carriage was farre above his fellowes and companions, in the performing of all such serviceable duties, as any way he imagined might content the Queen. Whereon ensued, that whensoever she road abroad to take the ayre, she used ofter to mount on the horse, which this Querrie brought when she made her choice, than any of the other that were led by his fellowes. And this did he esteeme as no mean happinesse to him, to order the stirrope for her mounting, and therefore gave daily his due attendance: so that, to touch the stirrop, but (much more) to put her foot into it, or touch any part of her garments, he thought it the only heaven on earth.

But, as we see it oftentimes comes to passe, that by how much the lower hope declineth, so much the higher love ascendeth; even so fell it out with this poore Querry; for most irkesome was it to him, to endure the heavy waight of his continuall oppressions, not having any hope at al of the very least mitigation. And beinguterly unable to relinquish his love, divers times he resolved on some desperate conclusion, which might give the world an evident testimony, that he dyed for the love he bare to the Queene. And upon this determination, he grounded the successe of his future fortune to dye in compassing some part of his desire, without either speaking to the Queen, or sending any missive of his love, for to speak or write, were meerely in vaine, and drew on a worser consequence than death, which he could bestow on himselfe more easily and when he listed.

No other course now beleaguers his braines, but only for secret accesse to the Queenes bed, and how he might get entrance into her Chamber, under colour of the King, who (as he knew very well) slept many nights together from the Queen. Wherefore to see in what manner, and what the usuall habit was of the King, when he came to keep company with the Queene: he hid himselfe diverse nights in a Gallery, which was between both their lodging Chambers. At length he saw the King come forth of his Chamber, himselfe all alone, with a fair night mantle wrapt about him, carrying a lighted Taper in one hand, & a smal white wand in the other, so went he on to the Queens lodging; and knocking at the doore once or twice with the wand, and not using any word, the doore opened, the light was left without, and he entred the Chamber, where he

he ſtayed not long, before his returning back againe, which likewiſe very diligently he obſerved.

So familiar was he with the Wardrobe, by often fetching and returning the King and Queenes furnitures; that the fellowes to the ſame Mantle which the King wore when he went to the Queen, very ſecretly he conveighed away thence with him, being provided of a light, & the very like wand. Now beſtowes he coſtly bathings on his body, that the leaſt ſent of the ſtable might not be felt about him; and finding a time ſutable to his deſire, when he knew the King to be at reſt in his owne Lodging, all elſe ſleeping in their bed; cloſely he ſteals into the Gallery, where lighting his Taper, with the Tinder purpoſely brought thither, the Mantle folded about him, & the wand in his hand, valiantly he adventures upon his lives perill. Twice he knockt ſoftly at the doore, which a waiting woman immediately opened, and receiving the light, went forth into the Gallery, while the ſuppoſed King was converſing with the Queen.

Alas good Queen, here is a ſin committed, without any filty thought in thee, as (within a while after) it plainly appeared, for, the Querry having compaſſed what he moſt coveted, and fearing to forfeit his life by delay, when his amorous deſire was indifferently ſatisfied; returned back as he came, the ſleepy waiting woman not ſo much as looking on him, but rather glad, that ſhe might get her to reſt again. Scarcely was the Querry ſtept into his bed, unheard or diſcerned by any of his fellowes, diverſe of them lodging both in that and the next Chamber: but it pleaſed the King to viſit the Queen, according to his wonted manner, to the no little marvaile of the drowſie waiting woman, who was never twice troubled in a night before. The King being in bed, whereas alwayes till then, his reſort to the Queen, was altogether in ſadneſſe and melancholy, both comming and departing without ſpeaking one word: now his Majeſty was become more pleaſantly diſpoſed, whereat the Queen began not a little to marvaile. Now truſt me Sir, quoth ſhe, this hath been a long wiſhed, and now moſt welcome alteration, vouchſafing twice in a night to viſite me, and both within the compaſſe of one houre; for it cannot be much more ſince your being here, and now comming againe.

The King hearing theſe words, ſodainly preſumed, that by ſome Counterfeit perſon or other, the Queen had been this night beguiled: wherefore (very adviſedly) he conſidered, that in regard the party was unknowne to her, and all the women about her, to make no outward appearance of knowing it, but rather concealed it to himſelfe. Parte from the indiſcretion of ſome hare-braind men, who preſently

sently would have answered and sworne; I came not hither this night, till now. Whereupon many dangers might ensue, to the dishonour and prejudice of the Queene: beside, her errour being discovered to her, might afterward be an occasion, to urge a wandring in her appetite, and to covet after change again. But by this silence, no shame redounded to him or her, whereas prating, must needs be the publisher of open infamie: yet was he much vexed in his minde, which neither by looks or words he would discover, but pleasantly said to the Queene, Why Madam although I was once here before to night, I hope you mislike not my second seeing you, nor if I should please to come again. No truly Sir, quoth she, I onely desire you to have care of your health. Well, said the King, I will follow your counsell, and now returne to mine owne lodging again, committing my Queen to her good rest.

His blood boiling with rage and distemper, by such a monstrous injury offered him; he wrapt his nightmantle about him, and leaving his Chamber, imagining, that what soever he was, needs he must be one of his owne house: he tooke a light in his hand, and conveyed it into a little Lanthorne, purposing to be resolved in his suspition. No guests or strangers were now in the Court, but only such as belonged to his houshold, who lodged all together about the Escurie and Stables, being there appointed to divers beds. Now this was his conceit, that whosoever had been so lately familiar with the Queen, his heart and his pulse could (as yet) be hardly at rest, but rather would be troubled with apparent agitation, as discovering the guilt of so great an offender. Many Chambers had he passed thorow, where all were soundly sleeping, and yet he felt both their brests and pulses.

At last he came to the lodging of the man indeed, that had so impudently usurped his place, who could not as yet sleep, for joy of his atchieved adventure. When he espied the King come in, knowing well the occasion of his search, he began to waxe very doubtfull, so that his heart and pulse beating extreamly, he felt a further addition of fear, as being confidently perswaded, that there was no other way but death, especially if the King discovered his Agony. And although many considerations were in his brain, yet because he saw the King was unarmed, his best refuge was, to make shew of sleep, in expectation what the King intended to doe. Among them all he had sought, yet could not find any likelihood, whereby to gather a grounded probability; untill he came to this Querrie, whose heart and pulse laboured so strongly, that he said to himselfe, yea marry, this is the man that did the deed.

Nevertheless, purposing to make no appearance of his further

further intention, he did nothing elſe to him, but drawing forth a pair of ſheares which purpoſely he brought thither with him, he clipped away a part of his locks, which (in thoſe times) they uſed to weare very long, to the end that he might the better know him the next morning, and ſo returned back to his lodging again. The Querry, who partly ſaw, but felt what was done to him; perceived plainly (being a ſubtill ingenious fellow) for what intent he was thus marked. Wherefore, without any longer dallying, up he roſe, and taking a pair of ſheares, wherewith they uſed to trim their Horſes; ſoftly he went from bed to bed, where they all lay yet ſoundly ſleeping, and clipt away each mans lock from his right eare, in the ſelfe ſame manner as the King had done his, and being not perceived by any one of them, quietly he laid him downe againe.

In the morning, when the King was riſen, he gave command that before the Palace gates were opened, all his whole Family ſhould come before him, as inſtantly his will was fulfilled. Standing all uncovered in his preſence, he began to conſider with himſelfe, which of them was the man that he had marked: And ſeeing the moſt part of them to have their locks cut, all after one and the ſelfe ſame manner; marvailing greatly, he ſaid to himſelfe. The man whom I ſeek for though he be but of mean and baſe condition, yet it plainly appeareth, that he is of no deject or common underſtanding. And ſeeing, that without further clamour and noyſe, he could not finde out the party he looked for, he concluded, not to win eternall ſhame, by compaſſing a poor revenge: but rather (by way of admonition) to let the offender know in a word; that he was both noted and obſerved. So turning to them all, He ſaid; He that hath done it, let him be ſilent, and do ſo no more, and now depart about your buſineſſe.

Some other turbulent ſpirited man, no impriſonments, tortures, examinations, and interrogations, could have ſerved his turne; by which courſe of proceeding, he makes the ſhame to be publikely knowne, which reaſon requireth to keep concealed. But admit that condigne vengeance were taken, it diminiſheth not one title of the ſhame, neither qualifieth the peoples bad affections, who will laſh out as liberally in ſcandall, and upon the very leaſt babling rumor. Such therefore as heard the Kings words, few though they were, yet truly wiſe; marvelled much at them, and by long examinations among themſelves, queſtioned, but came far ſhort of his meaning; the man only excepted whom indeed they concerned, and by whom they were never diſcovered, ſo long as the King lived, neither did he dare at any time after, to hazard his life in the like action, under the frownes or the favour of Fortune.

Vnder

Vnder colour of confession, and of a most pure conscience, a faire young Gentlewoman being amorously affected to an honest man, induced a devout and solemn religious Friar to advise her in the meanes (without his suspition or perceiving) how to enjoy the benefit of her friend, and bring her desires to their full effect.

The third Novell.

Declaring that the lewd qualities of some persons, oftentimes misguide good people into great and grievous errors.

WHen Madam *Pampinea* sat silent, and the Querries boldnesse equalled with his crafty cunning, and great wisedome in the King had passed amongst them with a generall applause; the Queen turning her selfe to Madam *Philomena*, appointed her to follow next in order, as the rest had done before her: whereupon *Philomena* began after this manner.

It is my purpose, to acquaint you with a notable mockery which was performed (not in jest, but earnest) by a fair gentlewoman, to a grave and devout religious Fryer, which will yeeld so much the more pleasure and recreation, to every secular understander, if but diligently hee or shee doe observe, how commonly those religious persons (at least the most part of them) like notorious fooles, are the inventers of new courses and customes, as thinking themselves more wise and skilfull in all things than any others; yet prove to be of no worth or validity, addicting the very best of all their devices, to expresse their own vileness of minde, and fatten themselves in their styes like to pampered Swine. And assure your selves worthy Ladies, that I doe not tell this tale only to follow the order enjoyned mee, but, also to informe you, that such Saint-like holy Sirs, of whom wee are too opinionate and credulous, may be, yea and are (divers times) cunningly met with withall, in their craftinesse, not only by men, but likewise some of our own sex, as I shall make it apparent to you.

In our own City (more full of craft and deceit, than love or faithfull dealing) there lived not many yeers since, a Gentlewoman of good spirit, highly minded, endued with beauty, and all commendable qualities, as any other woman (by nature) could be. Her name, or any others, concerned in this Novel; I mean not to make manifest, albeit I know them, because some are yet living, and thereby may be scandalized; and therefore it shall suffice to passe them over with a smile. This Gentlewoman, seeing her self to be descended of very great parentage, and (bychance) married to an Artizan, a Cloathyer or Draper, that lived by

the

the making and selling of cloth; She could not (because he was a Tradesman) take downe the height of her mind; conceiving, that no man of mean condition (how rich soever) was worthy to enjoy a Gentlewoman in marriage. Observing that with all his wealth and treasure, hee understood nothing better, than to open skeins of yarne, oversee weaving, fill shuttles, lay webbes in his Looms, or dispute with his Spinsters, about their businesse.

Being thus overswayed with her proud opinion, she would no longer be embraced or regarded by him in any manner, saving onely because she could not refuse him, but would finde some other for her better satisfaction, who might seem more worthy of her respect, than the Draper her husband did. Hereupon she fell so deeply in love with a very honest man of our City also, and of indifferent yeers, as what day she saw him not, she could take no rest the night ensuing. The man himselfe knew nothing hereof, and therefore was the more careleſſe: and she being curious, nice, yet wisely considerate, durst not let him understand it, neither by any womans close conveyed message, nor yet by Letters, as fearing the perils which happen in such cases: but her eye observing his daily walks and resorts, gave her notice of his ofeen conversing with a religious Pryar, who albeit he was a fat and corpulent man, yet notwithstanding, because he seemed to leade a sanctimonious life, and was reported to be a most honest man; she perswaded her selfe, that he might be the best means between her and her friend.

Having considered with her selfe, what course was best to be observed in this case; upon a day apt and convenient, she went to the Convent where he kept, and having caused him to be called, she told him, that if his leysure so served very gladly would she be confessed, and onely had made her choyce of him. The holy man seeing her to be a Gentlewoman (as indeed she was) willingly heard her; and when she had confessed what she could, she had yet another matter to acquaint him withall, and thereupon thus began.

Holy Father, it is no more than convenient that I should have recourse to you, to be assisted by your helpe and counsell, in a matter which I will impart unto you, I know, that you are not ignorant of my parents and husband, of whom I am affected as deerely as his life, for proofe whereof, there is not any thing that I can desire, but immediately I have it of him, he being a rich man, and may very sufficiently afford it. In regard whereof, I love him equally as my selfe, and (setting aside my best endeavours for him) I must tell you one thing quite contrary to his liking and honour; no woman could more worthily deserve

ſerve death, than my ſelfe. Vnderſtanding then (good Father) that there is a man, whoſe name I know not, but he ſeemeth to be honeſt, and of good worth; moreover (if I am not deceived) he reſorteth oftentimes to you, being faire and comely of perſon, going alwayes in black garments of good price and value. This man, imagining (perhaps) no ſuch mind in me, as truely there is, hath often attempted me, and never can I be at my doore, or window, but he is alwayes preſent in my ſight, which is not a little diſpleaſing to me; he watcheth my walkes, and much I marvaile, that he is not now here.

Let me tell you holy Sir, that ſuch behaviours doe many times lay bad imputations upon very honeſt women, yet without ony offence in them. It hath often run in my minde, to let him have knowledge thereof by my brethren; but afterward I conſidered, that men (many times) deliver meſſages in ſuch ſort, as draw on very ungentle anſwers, whereon grow words, and words beget actions. In which regard, becauſe no harm or ſcandal ſhould enſue, I thought it beſt to be ſilent; determining, to acquaint you rather therewith, than any other, as well becauſe you ſeeme to be his friend, as alſo in regard of your office, which priviledgeth you to correct ſuch abuſes, not onely in Friends, but alſo in ſtrangers. Know other women there are, (more is the pity) who perhaps are better diſpoſed to ſuch ſuits than I am, and can both like and allow of ſuch courting, otherwiſe than I can doe; as being willing to embrace ſuch offers, and (haply) loath to yeeld deniall. Wherefore I muſt humbly intreat you good Father (even for our bleſſed Ladies ſake) that you would give him a friendly reprehenſion, and adviſe him to uſe ſuch unmanly means no more hereafter. With which words, ſhe hung down her head in her boſome, cunningly diſſembling, as if ſhe wept, wiping her eyes with her Handkerchiefe, when not a tear fell from them, but indeed were dry enough.

The holy religious man, ſo ſoone as he heard her deſcription of the man, preſently knew whom ſhe meant, and highly commending the Gentlewoman for her good & vertuous ſeeming diſpoſition, beleeved faithfully all that ſhe had ſaid: promiſing her, to order the matter ſo well and diſcreetly, as ſhe ſhould not any more be offended. And knowing her to be a woman of great wealth (after all their uſuall manner, when they caſt forth their fiſhing nets for gaine:) liberally he commendeth Almeſ-deeds, and daily workes of Charity, recounting to her (beſide) his owne particular neceſſities. Then, giving him two peices of Gold, ſhe ſaid: I pray you (good Father) to be mindfull of me, and if he chance to make any deniall, tell him I ſpake it my ſelfe to you; and by the way of a ſad com-

plaint

plaint. Her confession being ended, and penance easie enough enjoyned her, she promised to make her parents bountifull Benefactors to the Convent, and put more money into his hand, desiring him in his Masses, to remember the soules of her deceased friends, and so returned home to her house.

Within a short while after her departure, the Gentleman of whom she had made this Counterfeit complaint, came thither, as was his usuall manner, and having done his duty to the holy Father, they sate downe together privately, falling out of one discourse into another. At the length, the Fryer (in very loving and friendly sort) mildly reproved him for such amorous glaunces, and other pursuites, which (as he thought) he dayly used to the Gentlewoman, according to her owne speeches. The gentleman mervailed greatly thereat, as one that had never seen her, and very seldome passed by the way where she dwelt, which made him the bolder in his answers; wherein the Confessour interrupting him said: Never make such admiration at the matter, neither wast more words in deniall, because they cannot serve thy turne; I tell thee plainly, I heard these words even from her owne selfe, in a very sorrowfull and sad complaint. And though (perhaps) hereafter, thou canst very hardly refraine such follyes; yet let me tell thee so much of her (and under the seale of absolute assurance) that she is the onely woman of the world, who to my judgment, doth abhorre all such base behaviour. In regard therefore of thine owne honour; as also not to vex and prejudice so vertuous a Gentlewoman, I pray thee refrain such idlenes henceforward, and suffer her to live in peace.

The Gentleman being a little wiser than his ghostly Father, perceived immediately, the notable policy of the Woman. VVhereupon, making somewhat bashfull appearance of any error already committed, he said; He would afterward be better advised. So departing from the Fryer he went on directly to passe by the house where the Gentlewoman dwelt, and shee stood alwayes ready on her watch, at a little window, to observe when he would take that way. And seeing him comming, she shewed her selfe so joyfull and gracious to him, as he easily understood, whereto the substance of the holy Fathers chiding tended. And from that time forward, he used dayly though in covert manner (to the no little liking of the Gentlewoman and himselfe) to make his passage through that street, under colour of some important occasions there concerning him.

Soone after, it being plainly discerned on either side, that the one was as well contented with these walkes, as the other could be: she desired to inflame him a little further

further, by a more liberall illuſtration of her affection towards him, when time and place afforded convenient opportunity. To the holy Father again ſhe went, (for ſhe had been too long from ſhrift) and kneeling downe at his feete, intended to begin her confeſſion in tears; which the Fryer perceiving, ſorrowfully demanded of her; what new accident had happened? Holy Father (quoth ſhe) no novell accident, but onely your wicked and ungracious friend, by whom (ſince I was here with you, yea, no longer agoe then yeſterday) I have been ſo wronged, as I verily beleeve that he was borne to be my mortall enemy, and to make me doe ſomething to my diſgrace for ever; and whereby I ſhall not dare to be ſeen any more of you my deare Father. How is this? anſwered the Fryer, hath he not refrained from afflicting you ſo abuſively?

Pauſing a while, and breathing forth many diſſembling ſighs, thus ſhe replyed. No truly, holy Father, there is no likelihood of his abſtaining; for ſince I made my complaint to you, he belike taking it in evill part, to be contraried in his wanton humours, hath (meerely in deſpight) walked ſeaven time in a day by my doore, whereas formerly he never uſed it above once or twice. And well were it (good Father) if he could be content with thoſe walks, and gazing glances which he darts at me: but he growes ſo bold and ſhameleſſe, that even yeſterday, (as I told you) he ſent a woman to me, one of his Pandoraes as it appeared, and as if I had wanted either Purſes or Girdles, he ſent me by her a Purſe and a Girdle. Whereat I grew ſo grievouſly offended, as had it not been for my due reſpect and feare of God, and next the ſacred reverence I beare to you my ghoſtly Father, doubtleſſe I had done ſome wicked deed. Nevertheleſſe, happily I withſtood it, and will neither ſay or doe any thing in this caſe, till firſt I have made it knowne to you.

Then I called to mind, that having redelivered the Purſe and Girdle to his ſhe-meſſenger, which brought them, with looks ſufficient to declare my diſcontentment: I called her back againe, fearing leſt ſhe would keep them to her ſelfe, and make him beleeve that I had received them, (as I have heard ſuch kind of women uſe to doe ſometimes:) and in an anger I ſnatcht them from her, and have brought them to you, to the end, that you may give him them againe; and tell him, I have no need of any ſuch things, thankes be to heaven and my husband, as no woman can be better ſtored then I am. Wherefore good Father, purpoſely am I now come to you, to let him know, that if he will not abſtaine from thus moleſting me, I will diſcloſe it to my Husband, Father, and Brethren, whatſoever befall. For I had rather he ſhould receive the injury,

than

than I to be causelesly blamed for him; wherein good Father tell me, if I doe not well. With many counterfeit sobbes, sighes, and teares, these words were delivered: and drawing forth from under her gown, a very faire and rich Purse, as also a Girdle of great worth she threw them into the Fryers lappe.

He verily beleeving all these false reports, being troubled in his minde thereat beyond measure, tooke the Gentlewoman by the hand, saying: Daughter, if thou be offended at these impudent follies, assuredly I cannot blame thee, nor will any wise man reprove thee for it; and I commend thee for following my counsell. But let me alone for schooling my Gentleman, ill hath he kept his promise made to me; wherefore, in regard of his former offence, as also this other so lately committed, I hope to set him in such a heat, as shall make him leave off from injuring thee. Suffer not thy selfe to be conquered by choler, in disclosing this to thy kindred or husband, because too much harme may ensue thereon. But feare not any wrong to thy self, for I am a true witnes of thy honestie and vertue.

Now began she to be better comforted, and forbearing to play on this string any longer, as wel knowing the covetousnesse of him and his equals, she said: Holy Father some few nights past, me thought in my sleep, that divers spirits of my kindred appeared to me in a vision, who me thought were in very great paines, and desired nothing else but Almes; especially my Godmother, who seemed to be afflicted with such extream poverty, that it was most pitifull to behold. And I am halfe perswaded, that her torments are the greater, seeing me troubled with such an enemy to goodnesse. Wherefore (good Father) to deliver her soule and the others out of those fearfull flames, among your infinite other devout prayers, I would have you to say the forty Masses of S. *Gregory*, as a means for their happy deliverance; and so she put ten duckets into his hand. Which the holy man accepted thankfully, and with good words, as also many singular examples, confirmed her bountifull devotion: and when he had given her his benediction, home she departed.

After that the Gentlewoman was gone, he sent for his friend, whom she so much seemed to be troubled withall; and when he was come, he beholding his holy Father to look discontentedly, thought, that now he should heare some newes from his Mistresse, and therefore expected what he would say. The Fryer, falling into the course of his former reprehensions, but yet in more rough and impatient manner, sharpely checkt him for his immodest behaviour towards the Gentlewoman, in sending her the Purse

and

and Girdle. The Gentleman, who as yet could not gueſſe whereto his ſpeeches tended; ſomewhat coldly and temperately, denyed the ſending of ſuch tokens to her, to the end that he would not be utterly diſcredited with the good man, if ſo be the Gentlewoman had ſhown him any ſuch things. But then the Fryer, waxing much more angry, ſternely ſaid: Bad man as thou art, how canſt thou deny a manifeſt truth? See ſir, theſe are none of your amorous tokens? No, I am ſure you doe not know them, nor ever ſaw them till now.

The Gentleman, ſeeming as if he were much aſhamed, ſaid, Truely Father I doe know them, and confeſſe that I have done ill, and very greatly offended: but now I will ſweare unto you, ſeeing I underſtand how firmely ſhe is affected, that you ſhall never heare any more complaint of me. Such were his vows and proteſtations, as in the end the ghoſtly Father gave him both the Purſe and Girdle: then after he had preached, and ſeverely conjured him, never more to vexe her with any gifts at all, and he binding himſelfe thereto by a ſolemne promiſe, he gave him licenſe to depart. Now grew the Gentleman very jocond, being ſo ſurely certified of his Miſtreſſes love, and by tokens of ſuch worthy eſteem; wherefore no ſooner was he gone from the Fryer, but he went into ſuch a ſecret place, where he could let her behold at her window what precious tokens he had received from her, whereof ſhe was extraordinarily joyfull, becauſe her devices grew ſtill better and better; nothing now wanting but her Husbands abſence, upon ſome journey from the City, for the full effecting of her deſire.

Within a few dayes after, ſuch an occaſion hapned, as her Husband of neceſſity muſt journey to *Genoway*; and no ſooner was he mounted on horſeback, taking leave of her, and all his friends, but ſhe, being ſure he was gone, went with all haſte to her ghoſtly Father; and, after a few fained outward ſhews, thus ſhe ſpake. I muſt now plainly tell you, holy Father, that I can no longer endure this wicked friend of yours; but becauſe I promiſed you the other day, that I would not doe any thing, before I had your counſell therein, I am come now to tell you the juſt reaſon of my anger, and full purpoſe to avoid all further moleſtations.

Your friend I cannot term him, but (queſtionleſſe) a very devill of hell: this morning, before the break of day, having heard (but how, I know not) that my Husband was ridden to *Genoway*: got over the wall into my Garden, and climbing up a tree which ſtandeth

cloſe before my Chamber window, when I was fall aſleep, opened the Caſement, and would have entred in at the window But, by great good fortune, I awaked, and made ſhew of an open out-cry: but that he entreated me, both for Gods ſake and yours, to pardon him this error, and never after he would preſume any more to offend me. When he ſaw (that for your ſake) I was ſilent, he cloſed faſt the window again, departed as he came, and ſince I never ſaw him, or heard any tidings of him. Now judge you, holy Father, whether theſe be honeſt courſes, or no, and to be endured by any civill Gentlewoman, neither would I be ſo patient, but onely in my dutifull reverence to you.

The Ghoſtly Father hearing this, became the ſorrowfulleſt man in the world, not knowing how to make her an anſwer, but onely demanded of her divers times, whether ſhe knew him ſo perfectly that ſhe did not miſtake him for ſome other? Quoth ſhe, I would I did not know him from any other. Alas dear daughter (replyed the Fryer) what can more be ſaid in this caſe, but that it was over-much boldneſſe, and very ill done, and thou ſhewedſt thy ſelfe a worthy wiſe woman, in ſending him away ſo mercifully, as thou didſt. Once more I would intreat thee (dear daughter) ſeeing grace hath hitherto kept thee from diſhonor, and twice already thou haſt credited my counſell, let me now adviſe thee this laſt time. Spare ſpeech, or complaining to any other of thy friends, and leave it to me, to try if I can overcome this unchained devill, whom I took to be much a more holy man. If I can recall him from this ſenſuall appetite, I ſhall account my labour well employed; but if I cannot doe, henceforward (with my bleſſed benediction) I give thee leave to doe even what thy heart will beſt tutor thee to. You ſee Sir (ſaid ſhe) what manner of man he is, yet would I not have you troubled or diſobeyed, onely I deſire to live without diſturbance, which work (I beſeech you) as beſt you may: for I promiſe you, good Father, never to ſolicite you more upon this occaſion. And ſo in a pretended rage ſhe returned back from the ghoſtly Father.

Scarcely was ſhe gone forth of the Church, but incommeth the man that had ſuppoſedly ſo much tranſgreſſed; and the Fryer taking him aſide, gave him the moſt injurious words that could be uſed to a man, as diſloyall, perjured, and a traytor. He who had formerly twice perceived how high the holy mans anger mounted, did nothing but expect what he would ſay; and, like a man extreamly perplexed, ſtrove how to get it from him, ſaying;

saying; Holy Father, how come you to be so heinously offended? What have I done to incense you so strangely, Hear me, dishonest wretch, answered the Fryer, listen what I shall say unto thee. Thou answerest me as if it were a year or two past, since so foule abuses were by thee committed, and they almost quite out of thy remembrance. But tell me, wicked man, where wast thou this morning, before break of the day? Wheresoever I was replyed the Gentleman, me thinks the tydings come very quickly to you. It is true, said the Fryer, they are speedily come to me indeed, and upon urgent necessity.

After a little curbing of his wrath, somewhat in a milder strain, thus he proceeded: Because the Gentlewomans husband is journeyed to *Genoway*, proves this a ladder to your hope, that to embrace her in your arms, you must climbe over the Garden wall, like a treacherous robber in the night season, mount up a tree before her Chamber window, open the Casement, and hoping to compasse that by opportunity, which her spotlesse chastity will never permit. There is nothing in the world, that possibly she can hate more than you; and yet you will love her whether she will or no. Many demonstrations her selfe hath made to you, how retrograde you are to any good conceit of her, and my loving admonishments might have had better successe in you, than as yet they shew of outward appearance. But one thing I must tell you, her silent sufferance of your injuries all this while, hath not been in any respect of you, but at my earnest entreaties, and for my sake. But now she will be patient no longer, and I have given her free license, if ever hereafter you offer to attempt her any more, to make her complaint before her brethren, which will redound to your no meane danger.

The Gentleman, having wisely collected his Lovelesson out of the holy Fathers angry words, pacified the good old man so well as he could, with very solemne promises and protestations, that he should heare (no more) any misbehaviour of his. And being gone from him, followed the instructions given in her complaint, by climbing over the Garden wall, ascending the Tree, and entring at the Casement, standing ready open to welcome him. Thus the Fryers simplicity, wrought on by her most ingenious subtiltie, made way to obtain both their longing desires.

A young Scholar, named Felice, *entrusted* Puccio di Rinieri, *how to become rich in a very short time. While* Puccio *made experience of the instructions taught him,* Felice *obtained the favour of his daughter.*

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is declared, what craft and subtilty some wise wits can devise to deceive the simple, and compasse their owne desires.

AFter that *Philomena* had finished her Tale, she sate still; and *Dioneus* (with faire and pleasing language) commended the Gentlewomans quaint cunning, but smiling at the Confessors witlesse simplicity. Then the Queen, turning with cheerfull looks towards *Pamphilus*, commanded him to continue on their delight, who gladly yeelded, and thus began. Madam, many men there are, who while they strive to climbe from a good estate, to a seeming better, doe become in much worse condition than they were before. As hapned to a neighbour of ours, and no long time since, as the accident will better acquaint you withall.

According as I have heard it reported, neer to Saint *Brancatio*, there dwelt an honest man, and somewhat rich, who was called *Puccio de Rinieri*, and who addicted all his paines and endevours to Alchimy: wherefore, he kept no other family, but onely a widowed daughter, and a servant, and because he had no other Art or exercise, he used often to frequent the market place. And in regard he was but a weak witted man, and a gormand or grosse feeder, his language was the more harsh and rude; like to our common Porters or Scottish men; and his carriage also absurd, boore-like and clownish. His daughter, being named *Monna Isabetta*, aged not above eight and twenty, or thirty yeares; was a fresh, indifferent faire, plumpe, round woman, cherrie-cheek'd, like a Queen-apple; and, to please her Father, fed not so sparingly, as otherwise she would have done; but when she communed or jested with any body, she would talke of nothing, but onely concerning the great virtue in Alchimy, extolling it above all Arts.

Much about this season of the yeare, there returned a young Scholar from *Paris*, named *Felice*, faire of complexion, comely of person, ingeniously witted, and skilfully learned, who (soon after) grew into familiarity with *Puccio*: now because he could resolve him in many doubts, depending on profession of Alchimy, (himself having onely practise, but no great learning) he

he uſed many queſtions to him, ſhewed him very eſpeciall matters of ſecreſie, entertaining him often to dinners and ſuppers, whenſoever he pleaſed to come and converſe with him; and his daughter likewiſe, perceiving with what favour her Father reſpected him, became the more familiar with him, allowing him good regard and reverence.

The young man continuing his reſort to the houſe of *Puccio*, and obſerving the widow to be faire, freſh, and prettily formall; he began to conſider with himſelfe what thoſe things could be, wherein ſhe was moſt wanting; and (if he could) to ſave anothers labour, ſupply them by his beſt endevours. Thus not alwayes carrying his eyes before him, but uſing many back and circumſpect regards, he proceeded ſo farre in his wily apprehenſions, that (by a few ſpaiks cloſe kept together) he kindled part of the ſame fire in her, which became to flame apparently in him. And he very wittily obſerving the ſame, as occaſion firſt ſmiled on him, and allowed him favourable opportunity, ſo did he impart his intention to her. Now albeit he found her plyant enough, to gaine phyſick for her own grief, as ſoon as his; yet the meanes and manner were (as yet) out of all apprehenſion. For ſhee in no other part of the world, would truſt her ſelfe in the young mans company, but onely in her Fathers houſe, and that was a place out of all poſſibility, becauſe *Puccio* (by a long continued cuſtome) uſed to watch well-near all the night, as commonly he did, each night after other, never ſtirring forth of the rooms, which much abated the edge of the young mans appetite. After infinite intricate revolvings, wheeling about his buſied braine, he thought it not altogether an *Herculean* taſk to enjoy his happineſſe in the houſe, and without any ſuſpicion, albeit *Puccio* kept ſtill within dores, and watched as he was wont to doe.

Upon a day as he ſate in familiar conference with *Puccio*, he began to ſpeak unto him in this manner; I have many times noted, kinde friend *Puccio*, that all thy deſire and endevour is, by what meanes thou mayſt become rich, wherein (me thinks) thou takeſt too wide a courſe, when there is a much neerer and ſhorter way, which *Michell Scotus*, and other his aſſociates, very diligently obſerved and followed, yet were never willing to inſtruct other men therein, whereby the myſterie might be drowned in oblivion; and proſecuted by none but onely great Lords, that are able to undergoe it. But becauſe thou art mine

especiall friend, and I have received from thee infinite kinde favours; whereas I never intended, that any man (by me) should be acquainted with so rare a secret; if thou wilt imitate the course as I shall shew thee, I purpose to teach it thee in full perfection. *Puccio* being very earnestly desirous to understand the speedyest way to so singular a mysterie, first began to intreat him (with no mean instance) to acquaint him with the rules of so rich a Science; and afterward sware unto him never to disclose it to any person, except he gave his consent thereto; affirming beside, that it was a raritie not easie to be comprehended by very apprehensive judgements. Well (quoth *Felice*) seeing thou hast made me such a sound and solemne promise, I will make it known unto thee.

Know then friend *Puccio*, the Philosophers doe hold, that such as covet to become rich indeed, must understand how to make the Stone: as I will tell thee how, but mark the manner very heedfully. I doe not say, nor meane, that after the Stone is obtained, thou shalt be even as rich as now thou art; but thou shalt plainly perceive, that the very grossest substances, which hitherto thou hast seen, all of them shall be made pure gold: and such as afterward thou makest, shall be more certaine, than to goe or come with *Ave forth*, as now they doe. Most expedient it is therefore, that when a man will goe diligently about this businesse, and purposeth to prosecute such a singular labour, which will and must continue for the space of 40. nights, he must give very carefull attendance, wholly abstaining from sleep, slumbring, or so much as nodding all that while.

Moreover, in some apt and convenient place of thy house, there must be a forge or furnace erected, framed in decent and formall fashion, and neer it a large table placed, ordered in such sort, as standing upright on thy feet, and leaning the reines of thy back against it; thou maist stand stedfastly in that manner every night, without the least motion or stirring, untill the break of day appeareth, and thine eyes still upon the Furnace fixed, to keep ever in memory, the true order which I have prescribed. So soon as the morning is seen, thou mayst (if thou wilt) walk, or rest a little upon thy bed, and afterward goe about thy businesse, if thou have any. Then goe to dinner attending readily till the evenings approach, preparing such things as I will readily set thee downe in writing, without which there is not any thing to be done; and

then

then returne to the ſame taske againe, not varying a lot from the courſe directed. Before the time be fully expired, thou ſhalt perceive many apparent ſignes, that the Stone is ſtill in abſolute forwardneſſe, but it will be utterly loſt if thou faile in the leaſt of all the obſervances. And when the experience hath crowned thy labour, thou art ſure to have the Philoſophers ſtone, and thereby ſhalt be able to enrich, and work wonders beſide.

Puccio inſtantly replyed: Now truſt me Sir, there is no great difficulty in this labour, neither doth it require any extraordinary length of time: but it may very eaſily be followed and perfo med, and (by your friendly favour, in helping to direct the Furnace and Table, according as you imagine moſt convenient) on Sunday at night next, I will begin my taske. The Scholar being gone, he went to his daughter, and told her all the matter, and what he had determined to do: which ſhee immediately underſtood ſufficiently, and what would enſue on his nightly watching in that manner, returning him anſwer; that whatſoever bee liked and allowed of, it became not her way to miſlike. Thus they continued in this kinde concordance, till Sunday night came. When *Puccio* was to begin his experience, and *Felice* to ſet forward upon his adventure. Concluded it was, that every night the Scholar muſt come to Supper, partly to be a witneſſe of his conſtant performance, but more eſpecially for his owne advantage

The place which *Puccio* had choſen, for his hopefull attaining to the Philoſophers Stone, was cloſe to the Chamber where his daughter lay, having no other ſeparation or diviſion, but an old tottering wall. So that, when the Scholar was playing his prize, *Puccio* heard an unwonted noiſe in the houſe, which he had never obſerved before, neither knew the wall to have any ſuch motion: wherefore, not daring to ſtir from his ſtanding, leſt all ſhould be marr'd in the very beginning, he called to his daughter, demanding what buſie labour ſhe was about? The Widow, being much addicted to ſtumping, according as queſtions were demanded of her, and (perhaps) forgetting who ſpake to her, pleaſantly replyed: Whoop Sir, where are we now? Are the Spirits of Alchimy walking in the houſe, that we cannot lie quietly in our beds.

Puccio marvelling at this anſwer, knowing ſhe never gave him the like before; demanded againe, what ſhe did? The ſubtle wench, remembring that ſhe had

not answered as became her, said: Pardon me Father, my wits were not mine owne, when you demanded such a suddain question; and I have heard you say an hundred times, that when folke goe supperlesse to bed, either they walk in their sleeps, or being awake, talke very idly, as (no doubt) you have discern'd by me. Nay daughter (quoth he) it may be, that I was in a waking dreame, and thought I heard the old wall totter: but I see I was deceived, but now it is quiet and still enough. Talke no more good Father, said she, lest you stirre from your place, and hinder your labour: take no care for me, I am able enough to have a care of my selfe.

To prevent any more of these nightly disturbances, they went to lodge in another part of the house, where they continued out the time of *Puccio*'s paines, with equall contentment to them both, which made her divers times say to *Felice*: You teach my Father the chiefe grounds of Alchimy, while we helpe to waste away his treasure. Thus the Scholar being but poor, yet well forwarded in Learning, made use of *Puccio*'s folly, and found benefit thereby, to keep out of want, which is the bane and overthrow of numberlesse good wits. And *Puccio* dying, before the date of his limited time, because he failed of the Philosphers stone, *Isabetta* joyned in marriage with *Felice*, to make him amends for instructing her Father, by which meanes he came to be her Husband.

Ricciardo *surnamed* the Magnifico, *gave a Horse to Signior* Francesco Virgillifi, *on condition that he might speak to his wife in his presence; which he did: and he not returning him any answer, made answer to himselfe on her behalfe, and according to his answer, so the effect followed.*

The fifth Novell.

Wherein is described the frailty of some women, and folly of such husbands, as leave them alone to their owne disposition.

P*Amphilus* having ended his Novell of *Puccio* the Alchymist, the Queen fixing her eye upon Madam *Eliza*, gave order that she should succeed. She looking somewhat more austerely then any of the rest, not in any spleen, but as it was her usuall manner, thus began: The world containeth some particular people, who beleeve (because they know something) that

that others are ignorant in all things, who for the moſt part, while they intend to make a ſcorne of other men, upon tryall, finde themſelves to carry away the ſcorn. Therefore, I account it no mean folly in them, who (upon no occaſion) will tempt the power of another mans wit or experience. But becauſe all men and women are of my opinion; I meane that you ſhall perceive it more apparently by an accident hapning to a Knight of *Piſtoia*, as you ſhall hear by me related.

In the Towne of *Piſtoia*, bordering upon Florence, there lived not long ſince a Knight, named Signiour *Franceſco*, deſcended of the *linage* or *family* of the *Virgiliſi*, a man very rich, wiſe, and in many things provident; but gripple, covetous, and too cloſe handed, with ut reſpect to his worth and reputation. He being called to the Office of *Podeſta* in the City of Millaine, furniſhed himſelf with all things (in honorable manner) beſeeming ſuch a charge; onely, a comely horſe (for his own ſaddle) excepted, which he knew not by any meanes how to compaſſe, ſo loath he was to lay out money, albeit his credit much depended thereon.

At the ſame time, there lived in *Piſtoia* likewiſe, a young man, named *Ricciardo*, derived of mean birth, but very wealthy, quick witted, and of commendable perſon, alwayes going ſo neat, fine and formall in his apparell, that he was generally termed *the Magnifico*, who had long time affected, yea, and cloſely courted, (though without any advantage or ſucceſſe) the Lady and wife of Signior *Franceſco*, who was very beautifull, vertuous, and chaſte. It ſo chanced, that this *Magnifico* had the very choiceſt and goodlieſt ambling Gelding in all Tuſcany, which he loved dearely, for his faire forme, and other good parts. Upon a flying rumour throughout *Piſtoia*, that he daily made love to the aforeſaid Lady, ſome buſie-body put it into the head of Signior *Franceſco*, that if he pleaſed to requeſt the Gelding, the *Magnifico* would frankly give it him, in regard of the love he bare to his wife.

This baſe-minded Knight, coveting to have the horſe, and yet not to part with any money, ſent to the *Magnifico*, deſiring to buy his faire Gelding of him, becauſe he hoped to have him of free gift. The *Magnifico* hearing of this requeſt, was very joyfull, and thus anſwered; Sir, if you would give me all the wealth which you poſſeſſe in the world, I will not ſell you my horſe, rather I will beſtow him on you as a Gentlemans gift: but yet upon this condition, that before you have him delivered, I may with your licenſe, and in your pre-

ſence, ſpeake a few words to your vertuous Lady, ſo farre off in diſtance from you, as I may not bee heard by any, but onely her ſelfe. Signiour *Franceſco* wholly conducted by his baſe avaricious deſire, and meaning to make a ſcorn at the *Magnifico*, made anſwer, that he was well contented to let him ſpeake with her when he would; and leaving him in the great Hall of the houſe, went forthwith directly to his wives Chamber, and told her how eaſily he might enjoy the horſe, commanding her forthwith to come and heare what he could ſay to her, onely ſhe ſhould abſtaine, and not return him anſwer. The Lady with a modeſt bluſh, much condemned this folly in him, that his covetouſneſſe ſhould ſerve as a cloke to cover any unfitting ſpeeches, which her chaſte eares could never endure to heare. Nevertheleſſe, being to obey her husbands will, ſhe promiſed to doe it, and followed him downe into the Hall, to heare what the *Magnifico* would ſay. Again, he there confirmed the bargain made with her Husband, and ſitting downe in a corner of the Hall, farre enough off from any ones hearing, taking her courteouſly by the hand, thus he ſpake.

Worthy Lady, it ſeemeth to mee, that you are ſo truely wiſe, as no doubt you have long ſince perceived, what unfained affection your beautie (farre excelling) hath compelled me to beare you. Setting aſide thoſe commendable qualities and ſingular vertues gloriouſly ſhining in you, and powerfull enough to make a conqueſt of the ſtouteſt courage: I held it utterly needleſſe to let you underſtand by words, how faithfull the love is I bear you, were it not much more fervent and conſtant, then ever any other man can expreſſe to a woman. In which condition it ſhall ſtill continue, without the leaſt blemiſh, or impaire, ſo long as I enjoy life or motion; yea, and I dare aſſure you, that if in the future world, affection may containe the ſame powerfull dominion, as it doth in this, I am the man born to love you perpetually. Whereby you may reſt confidently perſwaded, that you enjoy not any thing, how poore or precious ſoever it be, which you can ſo ſolemnely account to be your owne, and in the trueſt title of right, as you may my ſelfe, in all that I have, or for ever ſhall be mine.

To confirme your opinion in this caſe by any argument of greater power, let me tell you, that I ſhould repute it as my faireſt and moſt gracious fortune, if you would command me ſome ſuch ſervice, as conſiſteth in

mine

mine ability to perform, and in your courteous favour to accept, yea, if it were to travell thorow the whole world, right willing I am, and obedient. In which regard, faire Madam, if I be so much yours, as you hear I am, I may boldly adventure (and not without good reason) to acquaint your chaste eares with my earnest desires; for on you only depends my happiness, life, and absolute comfort, and as your most humble servant, I beseech you (my dearest good, and sole hope of my soule) that rigour may dwell no longer in your gentlebrest, but Lady-like pity and compassion, whereby I shall say, that as your divine beautie enflamed mine affections, even so it extended such a merifull qualification, as exceeded all my hope, but not the halfe part of your pity.

Admit (miracle of Ladies) that I should die in this distresse: Alas, my death would be but your dishonour; I cannot be termed mine owne murtherer, when the Dart came from your owne eye that did it, and must remaine a witnesse of your rigour. You cannot then chuse but call to minde, and say within your owne soule: Alas, what a sinne have I committed, in being so unmercifull to my *Magnifico*. Repentance then serves to no purpose, but you must answer for such unkinde cruelty. Wherefore to prevent so black a scandall to your beauty, beside, the ceaselesse acclamations which will dog your walks in the day time, and break your quiet sleeps in the night season, with fearfull sights and gastly apparitions, hovering and haunting about your bed; let all these move you to milde mercy, and spill not life when you may save it.

So the *Magnifico* ceasing, with teares streaming from his eyes, and sighes from his heart, he sate still in expectation of the Ladies answer, who made neither long nor short of the matter, neither Tilts nor Tourneying, nor many lost mornings and evenings, nor infinite other such like Offices, which the *Magnifico* (for her sake) from time to time had spent in vaine, without the least shew of acceptation, or any hope at all to winne her love: moved now in this very houre, by these solemne protestations, or rather most prevailing asseverations, shee began to finde that in her, which (before) she never felt, namely Love; And although (to keep her promise made to her husband) she spake not a word, yet her heart heaving, her soul throbbing, sighes intermixing, and complexion altering, could not hide, nor any whit conceale her intended answer to the *Magnifico*, if promise had been no hinderance to

her.

her will. All this while the *Magnifico* sate as mute as she, and seeing she would not give him any answer at all, he could not chuse but wonder thereat, yet at length perceived that it was thus cunningly contrived by her husband. Notwithstanding, observing well her countenance, that it was in a quite contrary temper, another kinde of fire sparkling in her eye, other humors flowing, her pulses strongly beating, her stomach rising, and sighes swelling; all these were arguments of a change, and motives to advance his hope. Taking courage by this ticklish perswasion, and instructing his minde with a new kinde of counsell, he would needs answer himself on her behalfe, and as if she had uttered the words, thus he spake.

Magnifico, and my friend, surely it is a long time since, when I first noted thine affection toward me to be very great, and most perfect, but now I am much more certaine thereof, by thine owne honest and gentle speeches, which content me as they ought to doe. Nevertheless, if heretofore I have seemed cruell and unkinde to thee, I would not have thee think, that my heart was any way guilty of my outward severity, but did evermore love thee, and held thee dearer than any man living. But yet it became me to doe so, as well in fear of others, as for the renown of mine own reputation. But now is the time at hand, to let thee know more cleerly, whether I doe affect thee or no: as a just guerdon of thy constant love which long thou hast, and still dost beare to mee. Wherefore comfort thy self, and dwell on this undoubted hope, because Signior *Francesco* my husband, is to be absent from hence for many dayes, being chosen *Podesta* at *Millaine*, as thou canst not chuse but heare, for it is common through the Countrey.

I know (for my sake) thou hast given him thy goodly ambling Gelding, and so soon as he is gone I promise thee upon my word, and by the faithfull love I beare thee; that I will have further conference with thee, and let thee understand somewhat more of my minde. And because this is neither fitting time nor place to discourse on matters of such serious moment: observe hereafter, as a signall, when thou seest my crimson Skarfe hanging in the window of my chamber, which is upon the Garden side, that evening (so soon as it is night) come to the Garden gate, with wary respect that no eye do discover thee, and there thou shalt finde mee walking, and ready to acquaint thee of other matters, according as I shall finde occasion.

When

When the *Magnifico*, in the perſon of the Lady, had ſpoken thus, then he returned her this anſwer. Moſt vertuous Lady, my ſpirits are ſo tranſported with extraordinary joy, for this your gracious and welcome anſwer, that my ſenſes faile me, and all my faculties quite forſake me, that I cannot give you ſuch thanks as I would. And if I could ſpeak equally to my deſire, yet the ſeaſon ſuites not therewith, neither were it convenient that I ſhould be ſo troubleſome to you. Let me therefore humbly beſeech you, that the deſire I have to accomplish your will (which words availe not to expreſſe) may remaine in your kinde conſideration. And as you have commanded me, ſo I will not faile to performe it accordingly, and in more thankfull manner, then (as yet) I am able to let you know. Now there reſteth nothing elſe to doe, but under the protection of your gracious pardon, I to give over ſpeech, and you to attend your worthy husband.

Notwithſtanding all that he had ſpoken, yet ſhe replyed not one word; wherefore the *Magnifico* aroſe, and returned to the Knight, who went to meet him, ſaying in a loud laughter: How now man? Have I not kept my promiſe with thee? No Sir, anſwered the *Magnifico*, for you promiſed I ſhould ſpeak with your wife, and you have made me talke to a marble ſtatue. This anſwer was greatly pleaſing to the Knight, who although he had an undoubted opinion of his wife; yet this did ſtrengthen his beleefe, and he ſaid: Now thou confeſſeſt thy Gelding to be mine? I doe, replyed the *Magnifico*, but if I had thought, that no better ſucceſſe would have enſued on the bargain, without your motion for the horſe, I would have given him you: and I am ſorry that I did not, becauſe now you have bought my horſe, and yet I have not ſold him. The Knight laughed heartily at this anſwer, and being thus provided of ſo fair a beaſt he rode on his journey to *Millaine*, and there entred into his authority of *Podeſta*.

The Lady remained now in liberty at home, conſidering on the *Magnifico*'s words, and likewiſe the Gelding, which (for her ſake) was given to her husband. Oftentimes ſhe ſaw him paſſe to and fro before her window, ſtill looking when the Flagge of defiance ſhould be hanged forth, that he might fight valiantly under her Colours: The ſtory ſaith, that among many of her much better meditations, ſhe was heard to talke thus idly to her ſelfe. What doe I mean? Wherefore is my youth? The old miſerable man is gone to *Millaine*, and God knoweth when hee comes back again.

again, ever, or never. Is dignity preferred before wedlocks holy duty, and pleasures abroad, more than comforts at home? Ill can age pay youths arrearages, when time is spent, and no hope spared. Actions omitted, are oftentimes repented, but done in due season, they are seldome sorrowed for. Upon these un-Lady like private consultations, whether the window shewed the signall or no, it is no matter belonging to my charge: I say, husbands are unwise to grant such ill advantages, and wives much worse if they take hold of them, onely judge you the best, and so the Tale is ended.

Ricciardo Minutolo *loved the wife of* Philippello Fighinolfi, *and knowing her to be very jealous of her Husband, gave her to understand, that he was greatly enamored of his wife, and had appointed to meet her privately in a Bathing house on the next day following: where shee hoping to take him tardie with his close compacted Mistresse, found her selfe to be deceived by the said* Ricciardo.

The sixth Novell.

Declaring, how much perseverance, and a courragious spirit is availeable in love.

NO more remained to be spoken by Madam *Eliza*, but the cunning of the *Magnifico*, much commended by all the company: the Queen commanded Madam *Fiammetta*, to succeed next in order with one of her Novels, who (smiling) made answer that she would, and began thus. Gracious Ladies, me thinks we have spoken enough already concerning our owne City, which as it aboundeth copiously in all commodities, so it is an example also to every convenient purpose. And as Madam *Eliza* hath done, by recounting occasions happening in another World, so must we now leap a little further off, even so farre as Naples, to see how one of those Saint-like Dames that nicely seems to shun loves allurings, was guided by the good spirit to a friend of hers, and tasted of the fruit before she knew the flowers. A sufficient warning for you to apprehend beforehand what may follow after, and to let you see beside, that when an error is committed, how to be discreet in keeping it from publick shame.

In the City of Naples, it being of great antiquitie, and (perhaps) as pleasantly situated, as any other Citie in all Italy, there dwelt sometime a young Gentleman, of noble parentage, and well known to be wealthy,

wealthy, named *Ricciardo Minutolo*, who (although he had a Gentlewoman of excellent beauty, and worthy the very kindeſt affecting, to his wife, yet his gadding eye gazing elſewhere, he became enamoured of another, which (in generall opinion) ſurpaſſed all the Neapolitane women elſe, in feature, favour, and the choyceſt perfections, ſhe being named Madam *Catulla* wife to as gallant a young Gentleman, called *Philippello. Fighinolfi*, whom moſt dearely he loved beyond all other, for her rare vertue and admired chaſtity.

Ricciardo loving this Madam *Catulla*, and uſing all ſuch meanes whereby the grace and liking of a Lady might be obtained; found it yet a matter beyond poſſibility, to compaſſe the height of his deſire: ſo that many deſperate and dangerous reſolutions beleagred his braine, ſeeming ſo intricate and unlikely to afford any hopefull iſſue, as he wiſhed for nothing more than death. And death as yet being deafe to all his earneſt imprecations, delayed him on in lingring afflictions; and continuing ſtill in ſuch an extream jealouſie of him, as fearing leaſt ſome bird flying in the aire ſhould ſnatch him from her.

Ricciardo not unacquainted with this her jealous humour, as well by credible hearing thereof, as alſo by daily obſervation, began to conſider with himſelfe, that it were beſt for him, to diſſemble amorous affection in ſome other place, and (henceforward) to ſet aſide all hope of ever enjoying the love of Madam *Catulla*, becauſe he was become the ſervant of another Gentlewoman, pretending to performe many worthy actions of Armes, Jouſtes, Tournaments, and all ſuch like noble exerciſes, as he was wont to doe for Madam *Catulla*. So that moſt of the people of Naples, but eſpecially Madam *Catulla*, became verily perſwaded, that his former fruitleſſe love to her was quite changed, and the new elected Lady had all the glory of his beſt endevours, perſevering ſo long in this opinion, as now it paſſed abſolutely for currant. Thus ſeemed he now as a meer ſtranger to her, whoſe houſe before he familiarly frequented, yet as a neighbour gave her the dayes ſalutations, according as he chanced to ſee her or met her.

It came so to passe, that it being now the delightfull Summer season, when all Gentlemen and Gentlewomen used to meet together (according to a custome long observed in that Countrey) sporting along on the Sea Coast, dining and supping there very often, *Ricciardo Minutolo* happened to hear, that Madam *Catulla* (with a company of her friends) intended also to be present there among them; at which time consorted with a seemly traine of his confederates, he resorted thither, and was graciously welcomed by Madam *Catulla* where he pretended no willing long time of tarrying, but that *Catulla* and the other Ladyes were fain to intreat him, discoursing of his love to his new elected Mistresse: which *Minutolo* graced with so solemne a countenance, as it minist'red much more matter of conference, all converting to know what she was.

So farre they walked, and held on this kinde of discoursing, as every Lady and Gentlewoman waxing weary of too long a continued argument, began to separate her selfe with such an associate as she best liked, and as in such walking women are wont to doe; so that Madam *Catulla*, having few females left with her, stayed behinde with *Minutolo*, who suddenly shot forth a word concerning her husband *Philipello*, and of his loving another woman beside her selfe. She that was overmuch jealous before, became so suddenly set on fire to know what she was, of whom *Minutolo* spake, as she sate silent a long while, till being able to continue no longer, she entreated *Ricciardo* even for the Ladies sake, whose love he had so devoutly embraced, to resolve her certainly in this strange alteration of her husband; whereunto thus he answered.

Madam, you have so straightly conjured me, by urging the remembrance of her, for whose sake I am not able to deny any thing you can demand, as I am ready therein to pleasure you. But first you must promise me, that neither you, nor any other person for you, shall at any time disclose it to your husband, untill you have seen by effect, that which I have told you proveth to be true: and when you please, I will instruct you how your selfe shall see it. The Lady was not a little joyfull to be thus satisfied in her hubands folly, and constantly crediting his words to be true, she sware a solemne oath, that no one alive should ever know it. So stepping a little further aside, because no listening ear should heare him, thus he began.

Lady, if I did love you now so effectually as heretofore I have done, I shou'd be very circumspect in utter-

ring

ring any thing which I imagined might distaste you. I know not whether your husband *Philippello*, were at any time offended because I affected you, or beleeved that I received any kindnesse of you: but whether it were so or no, I could never discern it by any outward appearance. But now awaiting for the opportunity of time, which he conceived should afford me the least suspicion, he seeks to compasse that, which (I doubt) hee feares I would have done to him, in plain terms, Madam, to have his pleasure of my wife. And as by some carriages I have observed; within few dayes past hee hath sollicited and pursued his purpose very secretly, by many Ambassages and meanes, as (indeed) I have learned from her selfe, and alwayes she hath returned him such answers as shee received by my direction.

And no longer agoe Madam, than this very morning, before my comming hither, I found a Woman messenger in my house, in very close conference with my wife, when growing doubtfull of that which was true indeed, I called my wife, enquiring what the woman would have with her; and she told me, it was another pursuit of *Philippello Fighinolfi*, who (quoth she) upon such Answers as you have caused me to send him from time to time, perhaps doth gather some hope of prevailing in the end, which makes him still to importune me as he doth. And now he adventureth so far, as to understand my finall intention; having thus ordered his complot, that when I please I must meet him secretly in a house of this City, where he hath prepared a Bath ready for me, and hopeth to enjoy the end of his desire, as very earnestly he hath sollicited me thereto. But if you had not commanded me to hold him in suspence with so many frivolous answers, I should ere this, have sent him such a message as should have been little to his liking.

With patience Madam I endured all before, but now (me thinkes) he proceedeth too farre, which is not any way to be suffered; and therefore I intended to let you know it, that you may perceive how well you are rewarded for the faithfull and loyall love you bare him, and for which I was even at deaths dore. Now, because you may be the surer of my speeches, not to be any lyes or fables, and that you may (if you please) approve the truth by your owne experience, I caused my wife to send him word, that she would meet him to morrow at the Bathing-house appointed, about the houre of noone-day; when people repose themselves in

regard

regard of the heats violence; with which answer the woman returned very jocondly. Let me now tell you, Lady, I hope you have better opinion of my wit, than any meaniug in me, to send my wife thither; I rather did it to this end, that having acquainted you with this treacherous intent, you should supply my wives place, saving both his reputation and your owne, and frustrating his unkinde purpose to me. Moreover, upon the view of his owne delusion, wrought by my wife in meer love to you, he shall see his foule shame, and your most noble care, to keep the rites of marriage between you still unstained.

Madam *Catulla*, having heard this long and unpleasing report, without any consideration, either what he was that told the tale; or what a treason he intended against her: immediately (as jealous persons use to doe) she gave faith to his forgery, and began to discourse many things to him, which imagination had often misguided her in, against her honest minded husband, and inflamed with rage, suddenly replyed; that she would doe according as he had advised her, as being a matter of no difficulty. But if he came, she would so shame and dishonor him, as no woman whatsoever should better schoole him. *Ricciardo* highly pleased therewith, and being perswaded, that his purpose would take the full effect: confirmed the Lady in her determination with many words more; yet putting her in memory, to keep and truely performe her faithfull promise made, without revealing the matter to any living person, as shee had sworne upon her faith.

On the morrow morning, *Ricciardo* went to an ancient woman of his acquaintance, who was the Mistresse of a Bathing-house, and there where he had appointed Madam *Catulla*, that the Bath should be prepared for her, giving her to understand the whole businesse, and desiring her to be favourable therein to him. The woman, who had been much beholding to him in other matters, promised very willingly to fulfill his request, concluding with him both what should be done and said. She had in her house a very darke Chamber, without any window to afford it the least light, which Chamber she had made ready, according to *Ricciardo*'s direction, with a rich Bed therein, so soft and delicate as possibly could be, wherein hee entred so soon as he had dined, to attend the arrivall of Madam *Catulla*. On the same day, as she had heard the speeches of *Ricciardo*, and gave more cre-

dit

dit to them then became her, ſhe returned home to her houſe in wonderfull impatience. And *Philippello* her husband came home diſcontentedly too, whoſe head being buſied about ſome worldly affaires, perhaps he looked not ſo pleaſantly, neither uſed her ſo kindely, as he was wont to doe. Which *Catulla* perceiving, ſhe was ten times more ſuſpicious than before, ſaying to her ſelfe. Now apparent truth doth diſcloſe it ſelfe, my husbands head is troubled now with nothing elſe, but *Ricciardo's* wife, with whom (to morrow) he purpoſeth his meeting; wherein he ſhall be diſappointed, if I live; taking no reſt at all the whole night, for thinking how to handle her husband.

What ſhall I ſay more? On the morrow, at the houre of mid-day accompanyed onely with her Chamber-maid, and without any other alteration in opinion; ſhe went to the houſe where the Bath was promiſed, and meeting there with the old woman, demanded of her, if *Philippello* were come thither as yet or no? The woman, being well inſtructed by *Ricciardo*, anſwered: Are you ſhe that ſhould meet him here? Yes, replyed *Catulla*. Goe in then to him (quoth the woman) for he is not far off before you.

Madam *Catulla* who went to ſeek that which ſhee would not finde, being brought vailed into the darke Chamber where *Ricciardo* was, entred into the Bath, hoping to finde none other there but her husband, and the cuſtome of the Countrey never diſallowed ſuch meetings of men with their wives, but held them to be good and commendable. In a counterfeit voyce he bad her welcome, and ſhe, not ſeeming to be any other then ſhe was indeed, entertained his embracings in as loving manner; yet not daring to ſpeak, leſt he ſhould know her, but ſuffered him to proceed in his owne errour.

Let paſſe the wanton follies paſſing between them, and come to Madam *Catulla*, who finding it a fit and convenient time to vent forth the tempeſt of her ſpleen, began in this manner. Alas! how mighty are the misfortunes of women, and how ill requited is all the loyall love of many wives to their husbands? I, a poor miſerable Lady, who, for the ſpace of eight yeers now fully compleated, have loved thee more dearly then mine owne life, finde now (to my hearts endleſſe grief) how thou waſteſt and conſumeſt thy deſires, to delight them with a ſtrange woman, like a moſt vile and wicked man as thou art. With whom doeſt thou now imagine thy ſelfe to be? Thou art

with her, whom thou haſt long time deluded by falſe blandiſhments, faining to affect her, when thou doateſt in thy deſires elſe-where. I am thine owne *Catulla*, and not the wife of *Ricciardo*, traiterous and unfaithfull man as thou art. I am ſure thou knoweſt my voyce, and I think it a thouſand yeers untill we may ſee each other in the light, to doe thee ſuch diſhonour as thou juſtly deſerveſt, thou dogged, diſdainfull, and villanous wretch. By conceiving to have another woman in thy wanton embraces, thou haſt declared more joviall diſpoſition, and demonſtrations of farre greater kindneſſe, than domeſtick familiarity. At home thou looketſt ſowre, ſullen, or ſurly, often froward, and ſeldome well pleaſed. But the beſt is, whereas thou intendeſt thy husbandry for another mans ground, thou haſt (againſt thy will) beſtowed it on thy owne, and the water hath run a contrary courſe, quite from the current where thou mean dſt it.

What anſwer canſt thou make, devill, and no man? What have my words ſmitten thee dumbe? Thou mayſt (with ſhame enough) hold thy peace, for with the face of a man, and love of an husband to his wife, thou art not able to make any anſwer.

Ricciardo durſt not ſpeak one word, but ſtill expreſſed affable behaviour towards her, beſtowing infinite embraces and kiſſes on her: which ſo much the more augmented her rage and anger, continuing on her chiding thus. If by theſe flatteries and idle follies thou hopeſt to comfort or pacifie mee, thou runneſt quite by as from thy reckoning, for I ſhall never imagine my ſelf halfe ſatisfied, untill in the preſence of my parents, friends and neighbours, I have revealed thy baſe behaviour. Tell me, treacherous man, am not I as fair as the wife of *Ricciardo*? Am I not as good a Gentlewoman born, as ſhe is? What canſt thou more reſpect in her, than is in me? Villaine, monſter, why doſt thou not anſwer me? I will ſend to *Ricciardo*, who loveth me beyond all other women in *Naples*, and yet could never vaunt, that I gave him ſo much as a friendly looke: he ſhall know what a diſhonour thou haſt intended towards him; which both he and his friends will revenge ſoundly upon thee.

The exclamations of the Lady were ſo irkeſome, that *Ricciardo* perceiving, if ſhe continued longer in theſe complaints, worſe would enſue thereon, than could be eaſily remedyed: reſolved to make himſelfe knowne unto her, to reclaime her out of this violent extaſie, and holding her ſomewhat ſtrictly, to prevent her

her escaping from him, he said: Madam, afflict your selfe no further, for, what I could not obtain by simply loving you, subtilty hath better taught me, and I am your *Ricciardo*; which she hearing, and perfectly knowing him by his voyce; she would have leapt out of the Bath, but she could not: and to avoyd her crying out, he laid his hand on her mouth, saying: Lady, what is done, cannot now be undone, albeit you cryed out all your life time. If you exclaime, or make this known openly by any meanes; two unavoydable dangers must needes ensue thereon. The one (which you ought more carefully to respect) is the wounding of your good renowne and honour, because, when you shall say, that by treachery I drew you hither: I will boldly maintain the contrary, avouching, that having corrupted you with gold, and not giving you so much as covetously you desired; you grew offended, and thereon made the out-cry: and you are not to learne, that the world is more easily induced to beleeve the worst, then any goodnesse, be it never so manifest. Next unto this, mortall hatred must arise betweene your husband and me, and (perhaps) I shall as soon kill him, as he me; whereby he can hardly live in any true contentment after. Wherefore, Joy of my life, do not in one moment both shame your selfe, and cause such perill between your husband and me: for you are not the first, neither can be the last, that shall be deceived. I have not beguiled you, to take any honour from you, but onely declared the faithfull affection I beare you, and so shall doe for ever, as being your bounden and most obedient servant; and as it is a long time agoe, since I dedicated my selfe and all mine to your service, so henceforth must I remaine for ever. You are wise enough (I know) in all other things; then shew your selfe not to be silly or simple in this.

Ricciardo uttered these words, tears streaming abundantly downe his cheeks, and Madam *Catalla* (all the while) likewise showred forth her sorrowes equally to his: now, although she was exceedingly troubled in minde, and saw what her owne jealous folly had now brought her to, a shame beyond all other whatsoever: in the midst of her tormenting passions, shee considered on the words of *Ricciardo*, found good reason in them, in regard of the unavoydable evils, whereupon she thus spake: *Ricciardo*, I know not how to beare the horrible injury, and notorious treason used by thee against me, grace and goodnesse having so forsa-

ken

ken me, to let me fall in so foul a manner. Nor becometh it me, to make any noise or out-cry here, whereto simplicity, or rather devillish jealousie, did conduct me. But certain I am of one thing, that I shall never see any one joyfull day, till (by one means or other) I be revenged on thee. Thou hast glutted thy desire with my disgrace; let me therefore goe from thee, never more to look upon my wronged husband, nor let any honest woman ever see my face.

Ricciardo perceiving the extremity of her perplexed minde, used all manly and milde perswasions, which possibly he could devise to doe, to turne the torrent of this high tide, to a calmer course; as by outward shew she made appearance of, untill (in frightfull feares shunning every one she met withall, as arguments of her guiltinesse) she recovered her owne house, where remorse so tortured her distressed soule, that shee fell into so fierce a melancholy, as never left her till shee dyed. Upon the report whereof, *Ricciardo* becomming likewise a Widower, and grieving extraordinarily for his hainous transgression, penitently betooke himselfe to live in a wildernesse, where (not long after) he ended his dayes.

Theobaldo Elisei, *having received an unkinde repulse by his beloved, departed from Florence, and returning thither (a long while after) in the habite of a Pilgrime; he shake with her, and made his wrongs knowne unto her. He delivered her Father from the danger of death, because it was proved, that he had slaine* Theobaldo: *he made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wisely enjoyed his hearts desire.*

The seventh Novell.

Wherein is signified the power of Love, and the diversity of dangers, wherein into men may daily fall.

SO ceased *Fiametta* her discourse, being generally commended, when the Queen, to prevent the losse of time, commanded *Æmilia* to follow next, who thus began. It liketh me best (gracious Ladies) to returne home again to our owne City, which it pleased the former two Discoursers to depart from: And there I will shew you, how a Citizen of ours recovered the kindnesse of his Love, after he had lost it.

Sometime there dwelt in *Florence* a young Gentleman, named *Theobaldo Elisei*, descended of a noble House, who became earnestly enamoured of a Widow, called *Hermelina*,

lina, the daughter to *Aldobrandino Palermini*, well deserving for his vertues and commendable qualities, to enjoy of her whatsoever he could desire. Secretly they were espoused together, but Fortune the enemy to Lovers felicities, opposed her malice against them, in depriving *Theobaldo* of those dear delights which sometime he held in free possession, and making him as a stranger to her gracious favours. Now grew she contemptibly to despise him, not onely denying to hear any message sent from him, but scorning also to vouchsafe so much as a sight of him, causing in him extream griefe and melancholy, yet concealing all her unkindnesse so wisely to himselfe, as no one could understand the reason of his sadnesse.

After he had laboured by all hopefull courses, to obtain that favour of her, which he had formerly lost, without any offence in him, as his innocent soule truely witnessed with him, and saw that all his further endevours were fruitlesse and in vain; he concluded to retreat himself from the World, and not to be any longer irksome in her eye, that was the only occasion of his unhappiness. Hereupon, storing himself with such sums of money as suddenly he could collect together, secretly he departed from *Florence*, without speaking any word to his friends or kindred; except one kinde companion of his, whom he acquainted with most of his secrets, and so travelled to *Ancona*, where he termed himselfe by the name of *Sandoloscio*. Repairing to a wealthy Merchant there, he placed himself as his servant, and went in a ship of his with him to *Cyprus*; his actions and behaviour proved so pleasing to the Merchant, as not onely he allowed him very sufficient wages, but also grew into such association with him, as he gave the most of his affairs into his hands; which he guided with such honest and discreet care, that himselfe (in few years compasse) proved to be a rich Merchant and of famous report.

While matters went on in this successefull manner; although he could not chuse, but still he remembred his cruell Mistresse, and was very desperately transported for her love, as coveting (above all things else) to see her once more; yet was he of such powerfull constancy, as seaven whole yeares together, hee vanquished all those fierce conflicts. But on a day it chanced he heard a song sung in *Cyprus*, which he himselfe had formerly made, in honour of the love he bare to his Mistresse, and what delight he conceived, by being daily in her presence; whereby he gathered, that it was impossible for him to forget her, and proceeded on so desirously.

as he could not live, except he had a sight of her once more, and therefore determined on his returne to *Florence*. Having set all his affaires in due order, taking one of his servants, he passed to *Ancona*, where when he was arrived, he sent his merchandises to *Florence*, in name of the Merchant of *Ancona*, who was his especiall friend, and partner; travailing himselfe alone with his servant in the habit of a Pilgrime, as if he had been newly returned from *Jerusalem*.

Being come to *Florence*, he went to an Inn kept by two brethren, neer neighbours to the dwelling of his Mistresse, and the first thing he did, was passing by her dore, to get a sight of her if he were so happy. But he found the windowes, dores, and all the parts of the house fast shut up, whereby he suspected her to be dead, or else to be changed from her dwelling: wherefore (much perplexed in minde) he went on to the two brothers Inne, finding foure persons standing at the gate, attired in mourning, whereat he marvelled not a little; knowing himselfe to be so transfigured both in body and habite, farre from the manner or common use of his parting thence, as it was a difficult matter to know him: He stept boldly to a Shooe-makers shop neer adjoyning, and demanded the reason of their wearing mourning. The Shooe-maker made answer thus, Sir, those men are clad in mourning, because a brother of theirs, being named *Theobald* (who hath been absent hence a long while) about some fifteen dayes since was slain. And they have heard, by proofe made in the Court of Justice, that one *Aldobrandino Palermini* (who is kept close prisoner) was the murtherer of him, as he came in a disguised habit to his daughter, of whom he was most affectionately enamoured; cannot chuse but let the World know by their outward habits, the inward affliction of their hearts, for a deed so dishonourably committed.

Theobalds wondered greatly hereat, imagining, that some man by like resembling him in shape might be slain in this manner, and by *Aldobrandino*, for whose misfortune he grieved marvellously. As concerning his Mistresse, he understood that she was living, and in good health; and night drawing on apace, hee went to his lodging, with an infinite number of molestations in his minde, where after supper, he was lodged in a Corne-lost with his man. Now by reason of many disturbing imaginations, which incessantly wheeled about his braine, his bed also being none of the best, and his supper (perhaps) somewhat of the

courses;

courtesse; a great part of the night was spent, yet could he not close his eyes together. But lying still broad awake, about the dead time of the night, he heard the treading of divers persons over his head, who descended down a pair of stairs by his Chamber, into the lower parts of the house, carrying a light with them, which he discerned by the chinks and crannies in the wall. Stepping softly out of his bed, to see what the meaning hereof might be, he espyed a fair young woman, who carryed a light in her hand, and three men in her company, descending down the stairs together, one of them speaking thus to the young woman. Now we may boldly warrant our safety, because we have heard it assuredly, that the death of *Theobaldo Elisei*, hath been sufficiently approved by the brethren, against *Aldobrandino Palermini*, and he hath confessed the fact; whereupon the Sentence is already set downe in writing. But yet it behoveth us notwithstanding, to conceal it very secretly, because if ever hereafter it should be known that we are they who murthered him, we should be in the same danger as now *Aldobrandino* is.

When *Theobaldo* had heard these words, he began to consider with himselfe, how many and great the dangers are, wherewith mens mindes may daily be molested. First, he thought on his owne brethren in their sorrow, who buried a stranger in stead of him, accusing afterward (by false opinion, and upon the testimony of as false witnesses) a man most innocent, making him ready for the stroke of death. Next, he made a strict observation in his soule concerning the blinded severity of Law, and the ministers thereto belonging, who pretending a diligent and carefull inquisition for truth, doe oftentimes (by their tortures and torments) hear lies avouched (onely for ease of pain) in the place of a true confession, yet thinking themselves (by doing so) to be the Ministers of Gods Justice, whereas indeed they are the devils Executioners of his wickednesse. Lastly, converting his thoughts to *Aldobrandino*, the imagined murtherer of a man yet living, infinite cares beleaguered his soule, in devising what might best be done for his deliverance.

So soon as he was risen in the morning, leaving his servant behinde him at his lodging, he went (when he thought it fit time) all alone, toward the house of his Mistresse, where finding by good fortune the gate open, he entred into a small Parlour beneath, and where he saw his Mistresse sitting on the ground, wringing her hands, and wofully weeping, which (in meer compassion)

p. ſſion) moved him to weep likewiſe; and going ſome-what neer her, he ſaid, Madam, torment your ſelfe no more, for your peace is not farre off from you. The Gentlewoman hearing him ſay ſo, lifted up her head, and in tears ſpake thus. Good man, thou ſeemeſt to me to be a Pilgrime ſtranger; what doſt thou know either concerning my peace, or mine affliction? Madam (replyed the Pilgrime) I am of *Conſtantinople*, and (doubtleſſe) am conducted hither by the hand of heaven, to convert your tears into rejoycing, and to deliver your Father from death. How is this? anſwered ſhe: If thou be of *Conſtantinople*, and art but new arrived here; Doeſt thou know who we are, either I, or my Father?

The Pilgrime diſcovered to her, even from one end to the other, the hiſtory of her husbands ſad diſaſters, telling her, how many yeers ſince ſhe was eſpouſed to him, and many other important matters, which well ſhe knew, and was greatly amazed thereat, thinking him verily to be a Prophet, and kneeling at his feet, entreated him very earneſtly, that if he were come to deliver her Father *Aldobrandino* from death, to doe it ſpeedily, becauſe the time was very ſhort. The Pilgrime appearing to be a man of great holyneſſe, ſaid: Riſe up Madam, refrain from weeping, and obſerve attentively what I ſhall ſay; yet with this caution, that you never reveal it to any perſon whatſoever. This tribulation whereinto you are falne, (as by revelation I am faithfully informed) is for a grievous ſin by you heretofore committed, whereof divine mercy is willing to purge you, and to make a perfect amends by a ſenſible feeling of this affliction; as ſeeking your ſound and abſolute recovery, leſt you fall into farre greater danger than before. Good man (quoth ſhe) I am burthened with many ſins, and doe not know for which any amends ſhould be made by me; any one ſooner then other: wherefore if you have intelligence thereof, for charities ſake tell it mee, and I will doe ſo much as lyeth in me, to make a full ſatisfaction for it. Madam, anſwered the Pilgrime; I know well enough what it is, and will demand it no more of you, to win any further knowledge thereof then I have already: but becauſe in revealing it your ſelfe it may touch you with the more true compunction of ſoule; let us go to the point indeed, and tell me, Do you remember, that at any time you were married to an Husband, or no?

At the hearing of theſe words, ſhe breathed forth a very vehement ſigh, and was ſtricken with admiration at

at this question, beleeving that not any one had knowledge thereof. Howbeit, since the day of the supposed *Theobaldo*'s buryall, such rumour run abroad, by meanes of such speeches rashly dispersed by a friend of *Theobaldo*'s, who (indeed) knew it; whereupon she returned this answer. It appeareth to me (good man) that divine ordination hath revealed unto you all the secrets of men; and therefore I am determined not to conceale any of mine from you. True it is, that in my younger yeers, being left a Widow, I entirely affected a young Gentleman, who (in secret) was my husband, and whose death is imposed on my Father. The death of him I have the more bemoaned, because (in reason) it did neerly concern me, by shewing my self so savage and rigorous to him before his departure: nevertheless, let me assure you Sir, that neither his parting, long absence from me, or his untimely death, never had the power to bereave my heart of his remembrance.

Madam, said the Pilgrime, the unfortunate young Gentleman that is slain, did never love you; but sure I am, that *Theobaldo Elisei* loved you dearly. But tell me, what was the occasion whereby you conceived such hatred against him? Did he at any time offend you? No truely Sir, quoth she, but the reason of my anger towards him, was by the words and threatnings of a religious Father, to whom once I revealed (under confession) how faithfully I affected him, and what private familiarity had passed between us. When instantly he used such dreadfull threatnings to me, and which (even yet) doe afflict my soule, that if I did not abstain and utterly refuse him, the Devill would fetch me quick to Hell, and cast me into the bottome of his quenchlesse and everlasting fire.

These menaces were so prevailing with me, as I refused all further conversation with *Theobaldo*, in which regard I would receive neither letters nor messages from him. Howbeit, I am perswaded, that if he had continued here still, and not departed hence in such desperate manner as he did, seeing him melt and consume daily away, even as snow by power of the sun-beams: my austere deliberation had been long agoe quite altered. because not at any time (since then) life hath allowed me one merry day, neither did I, or ever can love any man like unto him.

At these words the Pilgrime sighed, and then proceeded on againe thus: Surely Madam, this one only sinne may justly torment you, because I know for a

certainty, that *Theobaldo* never offered you any injury, since the day he first became enamoured of you; and what grace or favour you afforded him, was your own voluntary gift, and (as he took it) no more then in modesty might well become you; for he loving you first, you had been most cruell and unkinde if you should not have requited him with the like affection: If then he continued so just and loyall to you, as (of mine owne knowledge) I am able to say he did; what should move you to repulse him so rudely? Such matters ought well to be considered on before hand: for if you did imagine, that you should repent it as an action ill done, yet you could not doe it, because as he became yours, so were you likewise onely his; and he being yours you may dispose of him at your pleasure, as being truely obliged to none but you. How could you then withdraw your self from him, being onely his, and not commit most manifest theft, a far unfitting thing for you to doe, except you had gone with his consent?

Now Madam, let me further give you to understand, that I am a religious person, and a pilgrime, and therefore am well acquainted with all the courses of their dealing; if therefore I speak somewhat more amply of them, and for your good, it cannot be so unseeming for me to doe it, as it would appear ugly in another. In which respect I will speak the more freely to you, to the end, that you may take better knowledge of them, than (as it seemeth) hitherto you have done. In former passed times, such as professed Religion, were learned and most holy persons; but our religious professors now adayes, and such as covet to be so esteemed, have no matter at all of religion in them, but onely the outward shew and habite. Which yet is no true badge of Religion neither, because it was ordained by religious institutions, that their garments should be made of narrow, plain, and courseſt spun cloth, to make a publick manifestation to the world, that (in meer devotion and religious disposition) by wrapping their bodies in such base clothing, they condemned and despited all temporall occasions. But now adayes they make them large, deep, glistering, and of the finest cloth or stuffes to be gotten, reducing those habites to so proud and pontifical a forme, that they walk Peacock-like, rustling, and strouting with them in the Churches; yea, and in open publick places, as if they were ordinary secular persons, to have their pride more notoriously observed. And as the Angler bestoweth his best cunning, with one line and baite

to

to catch many fishes at one strike; even so doe these counterfeit habite-mongers, by their dissembling and crafty dealing, beguile many credulous widows, simple women, yea and men of weak capacity, to credit whatsoever they shall either doe or say, and herein they do most of all exercise themselves.

And to the end, that my speeches may not savour of any untruth against them; these men which I speake of, have not any habit at all of religious men, but onely the colour of their garments; and whereas they in times past, desired nothing more than the salvation of mens souls; these fresher witted fellows covet after women and wealth, and employ all their pains by their whispering confessions, and figures of painted fearfull examples, to affright and terrifie unsettled and weake consciences, by horrible and blasphemous speeches; yet adding perswasion withall, that their sinnes may bee purged by Almes-deeds and Masses. To the end, that such as credit them in these their daily courses, being guided more by appearance of devotion, than any true compunction of heart to escape severe penances by them enjoyned: may, some of them bring bread, and wine, and others coyne, all of them matter of commodity, benefit, and simply say, these gifts are for the soules of their good friends deceased.

I make not any doubt, but Almes-deeds, and Prayers are very mighty and prevailing meanes, to appease heavens anger for some sinnes committed; but if such as bestow them did either see or know, to whom they give them: they would more warily keep them, or else cast them before Swine, in regard they are altogether so unworthy of them. But come wee now to the case of your ghostly Father, crying out in your ear, that secret marriage was a most grievous sinne: Is not the breach thereof farre greater? Familiar conversation between man and woman, is a concession meerly naturall; but to rob, kill, or banish any one, proceedeth from the mindes malignity. That you did rob *Theobalde*, your selfe hath already sufficiently witnessed, by taking that from him, which with free consent in marriage you gave him. Next, I must say, that by all the power remaining in you you kill'd him, because you would not permit him to remaine with you, declaring your selfe in the very height of cruelty, that he might destroy his life by his owne hands. In which case the Law requireth, that whosoever is the occasion of an ill act committed, he or she is as deep in the faute

as the party that did it. Now concerning his banishment, and wandring seaven yeers in exile thorow the world; you cannot deny, but that you were the onely occasion thereof. In all which three severall actions, farre more capitally have you offended; then by contracting of marriage in such manner.

But let us see, whether *Theobaldo* deserved all these severall castigations, or not. In truth he did not, your selfe have confessed (beside that which I know) that he loved you more dearly than himselfe, and nothing could bee more honoured, magnified and exalted, than daily you were by him, above all other women whatsoever. When he came in any place, where honestly, and without suspicion hee might speake to you: all his honour, and all his liberty, lay wholly committed into your power. Was hee not a noble young Gentleman? Was he (among all those parts that most adorn a man, and appertaine to the very choycest respect) inferiour to any one of best merit in your City? I know that you cannot make deniall to any of these demands. How could could you then by the perswasion of a beast, a foole, a villain, yea, a vagabond, envying both his happinesse and yours, enter into so cruell a minde against him? I know not what error misguideth women, in scorning and despising their husbands: but if they entred into a better consideration, understanding truely what they are, and what nobility of nature God hath endued man withall, far above all other creatures; it would be their highest title of glory, when they are so preciously esteemed of them, so dearly affected by them, and so gladly embraced in all their best abilities.

This is so great a sinne, as the divine Justice (which in an equall ballance, bringeth all operations to their full effect) did not purpose to leave unpunished; but as you enforced against all reason, to take away *Theobaldo* from your selfe: even so your Father *Aldobrandino* without occasion given by *Theobaldo*, is in perill of his life, and you a partaker of his tribulation. Out of which if you desire to be delivered, it is very convenient that you promise one thing which I shall tell you, and may much better be by you performed. Namely, that if *Theobaldo* doe return from his long banishment, you shall restore him to your love, grace, and good acceptation; accounting him in the selfe-same degree of favour and private entertainment, as he was at the first, before your wicked ghostly Father so hellishly incensed you against him.

When

When the Pilgrime had finiſhed his ſpeeches, the Gentlewoman who had liſtned to them very attentively (becauſe all the alledged reaſons appeared to be plainly true) became verily perſwaded, that all theſe afflictions had faln on her and her Father, for the ingratefull offence by her committed, and therefore thus replyed: O thy man and the friend to goodneſſe, I know undoubtedly, that the words which you have ſpoken are true, and alſo I underſtand by your demonſtration, what manner of people ſome of theſe religious perſons are, whom heretofore I have reputed to be Saints, but finde them now to be farre otherwiſe. And to ſpeak truely, I perceive the fault to be great and grievous, wherein I have offended againſt *Theobaldo*, and would (if I could) willingly make amends, even in ſuch manner as you adviſed. But how is it poſſible to be done? *Theobaldo* being dead, can be no more recalled to this life; and therefore, I know not what promiſe I ſhould make, in a matter which is not to be performed. Whereto the Pilgrime without any longer pauſing, thus anſwered.

Madam, by ſuch relations as have been ſhewn to me, I know for a certainty, that *Theobaldo* is not dead, but living, in health, and in good eſtate, if he had the fruition of your grace and favour. Take heed what you ſay Sir (quoth the Gentlewoman) for I ſaw him lie ſlaine before my dore, his body having received many wounds, which I folded in mine armes, and waſhed his face with my brinish tears; whereby (perhaps) that ſcandall aroſe, that flew abroad to my diſgrace. Beleeve me Madam (replyed the Pilgrime) ſay what you will, I dare aſſure you that *Theobaldo* is living, and if you dare make promiſe, concerning what hath been formerly requeſted, and keep it inviolably, I make no doubt, but you your ſelf ſhall ſhortly ſee him. I promiſe it, ſaid ſhe, and binde my ſelf thereto by a ſacred oath, to keep it faithfully: for never could any thing happen to yeeld me the like contentment, as to ſee my Father free from danger, and *Theobaldo* living.

At this inſtant *Theobaldo* thought it to be a very apt and convenient time to diſcloſe himſelfe, and to comfort the Lady, with an aſſured ſignall of hope, for the deliverance of her Father, wherefore he ſaid: Lady, to the end that I may comfort you infallibly in this dangerous perill of your Fathers life, I am to make known an eſpeciall ſecret to you, which you are to keep carefully (as you tender your owne life) from ever being revealed to the world. They were then in a

place of ſufficient privacy, and by themſelves, becauſe ſhe repoſe great confidence in the Pilgrims ſanctity of life, as thinking him none other than he ſeemed to be. *Theobaldo* took out of his purſe a Ring, which ſhe gave him the laſt night of their converſing together; and he had kept with no mean care: and ſhewing it to her ſaid, Doe you know this Ring Madam? So ſoon as ſhe ſaw it, immediately ſhe knew it, and anſwered, Yes Sir, I know the Ring, and confeſſe that I gave it to *Theobaldo*.

Hereupon the Pilgrime ſtood up, and ſuddenly putting off his poor linnen Frock, and the Hood from his head, uſing the Florentine tongue, he ſaid, Tell me Madam, doe you know me? When ſhe had adviſedly beheld him, and knew him indeed to be *Theobaldo*, ſhe was ſtricken into a wonderfull aſtoniſhment being as fearfull of him as ſhe was of the dead body which ſhe ſaw lying in the ſtreet. And I dare aſſure you, that ſhe durſt not go neer him, to reſpect him as *Theobaldo* lately come from *Cyprus*, but (in terrour) fled away from him, as if *Theobaldo* had been newly riſen out of his grave, and came thither purpoſely to affright her; wherefore he ſaid, Be not afraid Madam, I am your *Theobaldo*, in health, alive, and never as yet died, neither have I received any wounds to kill me, as you and my brethren had formerly imagined.

Some better aſſurance getting poſſeſſion of her, as knowing him perfectly by his voyce, and looking more ſtedfaſtly on his face, which conſtantly avouched him to be *Theobaldo*; the teares trickling amaine downe her faire cheeks, ſhe ran to embrace him, caſting her armes about his neck, and kiſſing him a thouſand times, ſaying, *Theobaldo*, my faithfull husband, nothing in the world can be ſo welcome to me. *Theobaldo* having moſt kindly kiſſed and embraced her, ſaid, Sweet wife, time will not now allow us thoſe ceremonious courteſies, which (indeed) ſo long a ſeparation doe juſtly challenge; for I muſt about a more weighty buſineſſe, to have your Father ſafely delivered, which I hope to doe before to morrow night, when you ſhall hear tydings to your better contentment. And queſtionleſſe, if I ſpeed no worſe than my good hope perſwadeth me, I will ſee you again to night, and acquaint you at better leiſure, in ſuch things as I cannot now at this preſent.

So putting on his Pilgrimes habite againe, kiſſing her once more, and comforting her with future good ſucceſſe, he departed from her, going to the priſon where *Aldobrandino* lay, whom he found more penſive,

as

as being in hourely expectation of death, than any hope he had to be freed from it. Being brought neerer to him by the prisoners favour, as seeming to be a man come onely to comfort him: sitting down by him, thus he began: *Aldobrandino*, I am a friend of thine, whom Heaven hath sent to doe thee good in meer pity and compassion of thy innocency. And therefore, if thou wilt grant me one small request, which I am to crave at thy hands, thou shalt heare (without any failing) before to morrow at night, the Sentence of thy free absolution, whereas now thou expectest nothing but death. Whereunto *Aldobrandino* thus answered. Friendly man, seeing thou art so carefull of my safety (although I know thee not, neither doe remember that ere I saw thee till now) thou must needs be some especiall kind friend of mine. And to tell you the truth, I never committed the sinfull deed for which I am condemned to death. True it is, I have other hainous and grievous sins, which (undoubtedly) have thrown this heavy judgement on me, and therefore I am the more willing to undergoe it. Nevertheless, let me thus far assure thee, that I would gladly not only promise something which might be to the glory of God, if he were pleased in this case to have mercy on me; but also would as willingly performe and accomplish it. Wherefore, demand whatsoever thou pleasest, for unfainedly (if I escape with life) I will truly keep promise with thee.

Sir, replyed the Pilgrime, I desire nor demand any thing of you, but that you would pardon the three Brethren of *Theobaldo*, that brought you to this hard extremity, as thinking you to be guilty of their brothers death, and that you would also accept them as your brethren and friends, upon their craving pardon for what they have done. Sir, answered *Aldobrandino*, no man knoweth how sweet revenge is, nor with what heat it is to be desired, but onely the man who hath been wronged. Notwithstanding not to hinder any hope which onely aimeth at Heaven, I freely forgive them, and henceforth pardon them for ever, intending moreover, that if mercy give me life, and cleer me from this bloody imputation, to love and respect them so long as I shall live. This answer was most pleasing to the Pilgrime, and without any further multiplication of speeches, he entreated him to be of good comfort, for he feared not but before the time prefixed he should hear certain tydings of his deliverance.

At his departing from him, he went directly to the Signior, and prevailed so farre, that he spake privately

with a Knight, who was then one of the States chiefest Lords, to whom he said: Sir, a man ought to bestow his best pains and diligence, that the truth of things should be apparently known; especially, such men as hold the place and office as you doe: to the end, that those persons which have committed no foule offence should not be punished, but onely the guilty and hainous transgressors. And because it will be no mean honour to you to lay the blame where it worthily deserveth, I am come hither purposely to inform you in a case of most weighty importance. It is not unknown to you, with what rigour the State hath proceeded against *Aldobrandino Palermini*, and you think verily he is the man that hath slain *Theobaldo Elisei*, whereupon your Law hath condemned him to dye. I dare assure you Sir, that a very unjust course hath been taken in this case, because *Aldobrandino* is falsely accused, as you your self shall confesse before midnight; when they are delivered into your power, that were the murtherers of the man.

The honest Knight, who was very sorrowfull for *Aldobrandino*, gladly gave attention to the Pilgrime, and having conferred on many matters, appertaining to the fact committed: the two brethren who were *Theobalds* Hosts, and their Chamber maid, upon good advice given, were apprehended in their first sleep, without any resistance made in their defence. But when the tortures were sent for, to understand truely how the case went, they would not endure any pain at all, but each aside by himself, and then all together confessed openly, that they did the deed, yet not knowing him to be *Theobalds Elisei*. And when it was demanded of them upon what occasion they did so foul an act, they answered, that they were so hatefull against the mans life, because he would luxuriously have abused one of their wives, when they both were absent from home.

When the Pilgrime had heard their voluntary confession, he took his leave of the Knight, returning secretly to the house of Madam *Hermelina*, and there (because all her people was in their beds) she carefully awaited his return, to hear some glad tydings of her Father, and to make a further reconciliation between her and *Theobalds*, when sitting down by her, he said: Dear Love, be of good cheer, for (upon my word) to morrow you shall have your Father home safe, well, and delivered from all further danger: and to confirm her the more confidently in his words, he declared at large the whole carriage of the businesse. *Hermelina* being wondrously

wondrously joyfull for two ſuch ſudden and ſucceſsfull accidents, to enjoy her husband alive, and in health, and alſo to have her father freed from ſo great a danger; kiſſed and imbraced him moſt affectionately, welcoming him lovingly into her bed, whereto ſo long he had been a ſtranger.

No ſooner did bright day appeare, but *Theobaldo* aroſe, having acquainted her with ſuch matters as were to be done, and once more earneſtly deſiring her, to conceale (as yet) theſe occurrences to her ſelfe. So in his Pilgrims habit, he departed from her houſe, to await convenient opportunity for attending on the buſineſſe belonging to *Aldobrandino*. At the uſuall hour appointed, the Lords were all ſet in the Signiory, and had received full information, concerning the offence imputed to *Aldobrandino*, ſetting him at liberty by publick conſent, and ſentencing the other malefactors with death, who (within a few days after) were beheaded in the place where the murther was committed.

Thus *Aldobrandino* being releaſed to his exceeding comfort, and no ſmall joy of his daughter, kindred and friends; all knowing perfectly, that this had happened by the Pilgrims means, they conducted him home to *Aldobrandino*'s houſe, where they deſired him to continue ſo long as himſelfe pleaſed, uſing him with moſt honourable and gracious reſpect, but eſpecially *Hermelina*, who knew (better than the reſt) on whom ſhe beſtowed her liberall favours, yet concealing all cloſely to her ſelfe.

After two or three dayes were over-paſt, in theſe complementall entercourſings of kindneſſe, *Theobaldo* began to conſider, that it was high time for reconciliation, to be ſolemnly paſt betweene his brethren and *Aldobrandino*. For, they were not a little amazed at his ſtrange deliverance, and went likewiſe continually armed, as ſtanding in feare of *Aldobrandino* and his friends; which made him the more earneſt, for accompliſhment of the promiſe formerly made unto him. *Aldobrandino* lovingly replyed, that he was ready to make good his word. Whereupon, the Pilgrime provided a goodly Banquet, whereat he purpoſed to have preſent *Aldobrandino*, his daughter, kindred, and their wives. But firſt, himſelf went in perſon, to invite them in peace to his banquet, uſing many pregnant and forcible reaſons to them, ſuch as are requiſite in the like diſcordant caſes. In the end they were ſo wiſe and prevailing with them, that they willingly condeſcended, and thought

thought it no diſparagement unto them, for the recovery of *Aldobrandino*'s kindneſſe again, to crave pardon for their great error committed.

On the morrow following, about dinner time, the three brethren of *Theobaldo*'s, attired in their mourning garments, with their wives and friends, came firſt to the houſe of *Aldobrandino*, who purpoſely ſtayed for them; and having laid down their weapons on the ground, in the preſence of all ſuch as *Aldobrandino* had invited as his witneſſes, they offered themſelves to his mercy, and humbly required pardon of him, for the matter wherein they had offended him. *Aldobrandino* ſhedding tears, moſt lovingly embraced them, and (to be brief) pardoned whatſoever injuries he had received. After this, the ſiſters, and wives, all clad in mourning, courteouſly ſubmitted themſelves, and were graciouſly welcommed by Madam *Hermelina*, as alſo divers other Gentlewomen there preſent with her. Being all ſeated at the Tables, which were furniſhed with all ſuch rarities as could be wiſhed for; all things elſe deſerved their due commendation, but onely ſad ſilence, occaſioned by the freſh remembrance of ſorrow, appearing in the habites of *Theobaldo*'s friends and kindred, which the Pilgrime himſelfe plainly perceived to be the onely diſgrace to him and his feaſt. Wherefore, as before he had reſolved when time ſerved to purge away this melancholy, he aroſe from the Table, when ſome (as yet) had ſcarce begun to eat, and thus ſpake.

Gracious company, there is no defect in this Banquet, or more debars it of the honour it might elſe have, but onely the preſence of *Theobaldo*, who having been continually in your company, it ſeems you are not willing to take knowledge of him, and therefore I mean my ſelfe to ſhew him. So, uncaſing himſelf out of his Pilgrims clothes, and ſtanding in his hoſe, and doublet, to their no little admiration, they all knew him, yet doubted whether it were he or no. Which he perceiving, he repeated his brethren, and abſent kindreds names, and what occurrences hapned between them from time to time, beſide the relation of his own paſſed fortunes, inciting teares in the eyes of his brethren, and all elſe there preſent, every one hugging and embracing him, yea, many beſide, who were no kin at all to him, *Hermelina* only excepted: which when *Aldobrandino* ſaw, he ſaid unto her; How now *Hermelina*? Why doſt thou not welcome home *Theobaldo*, ſo kindly as the reſt have done?

She making a modeſt courteſie to her Father, and anſwering ſo loud as every one might hear her, ſaid: There

is

is not any in this assembly that more willingly would give him all expression of a joyfull welcome home and thankfull gratitude for such especiall favours received, than in my heart I could afford to doe, but onely in regard of those infamous speeches noysed out against me, on the day when we wept for him, who was supposed to bee *Theobaldo*, which slander was to my great discredit. Goe on boldly, replyed *Aldobrandino*, doest thou think that I regard any such praters? In the procuring of my deliverance, he hath approved them to be manifest lyers, albeit my selfe did never credit them. Goe then, I command thee, and let me see thee both kisse and embrace him. She who desired nothing more, shewed her selfe not slothfull in obeying her Father, to doe but her duty to her husband. Wherefore being risen, as all the rest had done, but yet in a far more effectuall manner, she declared her unfained love to *Theobaldo*. These bountifull favours of *Aldobrandino*, were joyfully accepted by *Theobaldo*'s brethren, as also to every one there present; so that all former rancour and hatred which had caused heavy variances between them, was now converted to mutuall kindnesse and solemn friendship on every side.

When the feasting dayes were finished, the garments of sad mourning were quite laid aside, and those (becomming so generall a joy) put on, to make their hearts and habits suitable. Now, concerning the man slaine, and supposed to be *Theobaldo*, he was one, that in all the parts of his body, and trueness of complexion so nearly resembled him, as *Theobaldo*'s owne brethren could not distinguish the one from the other: but he was of *Lunigiana*, named *Fatinulo* and not *Theobaldo*, whom the two brethren Inne-keepers maliced, about some idle suspicion conceived, and having slain him, laid his body at the doore of *Aldobrandino*, where by reason of *Theobaldoes* absence, it was generally reputed to be he, and *Aldrobandino* charged to do the deed, by vehement perswasion of the brethren, knowing what love had passed between him and his daughter *Hermelina*. But happy was the Pilgrims return, first to heare those words in the Inne, the meanes to bring the murther to light; and then the discreet carriage of the Pilgrime, untill he plainly approved himself to be truly *Theobaldo*.

Ferando, by drinking a certain kinde of powder, was buried for dead, and by the Abbot, who was enamored of his wife, was taken out of his Grave, and put into a dark Prison, where they made him beleeve, that he was in Purgatory. Afterward, when time came that he should be raised to life again; he was made to keep a childe which the Abbot had got by his wife.

The eight Novell.

Wherein is displayed the apparent folly of jealousie: And the subtilty of some religious carnall minded men, to beguile silly and simple married men.

WHen the long discourse of Madam *Emilia* was ended, not displeasing to any, in regard of the length, but rather held too short, because no exceptions could be taken against it, comparing the rarity of the accidents, and changes together: the Queen turned to Madam *Lauretta*, giving her such a manifest signe, as she knew that it was her turn to follow next, and therefore she tooke occasion to begin thus. Faire Ladies, I intend to tell you a Tale of truth, which (perhaps) in your opinions, will seem to sound like a lie: and yet I heard by the very last relation, that a dead man was wept and mourned for, in stead of another being then alive at the present time. In which respect, I am now to let you know, how a living man was buried for dead, and being raised again, yet not as living, himself, and divers more beside, did beleeve that he came forth of his grave, and ador'd him as a Saint, who was the occasion thereof, and who (as a bad man) deserved justly to be condemned.

In *Tuscany* there was sometime an Abbey, seated, as now we see commonly they are, in a place not much frequented with people, and thereof a Monke was Abbot, very holy and curious in all things else, save onely a wanton appetite to women: which yet he kept so cleanly, that though some did suspect it, yet it was known to very few. It came to passe, that a rich Countrey Franklin, named *Ferando*, dwelt as neer neighbour to the said Abbey, he being a man materiall, of simple and grosse understanding, yet he fell into great familiarity with the Abbot; who made use of this friendly conversation to no other end, but for divers times of recreation: when he delighted to smile at his silly and sottish behaviour.

Upon this his private frequentation with the Abbot, at last he observed, that *Ferando* had a very beautifull woman to his wife, with whom he grew so deeply in-

in love, as he had no other meditations, either by day or night, but how to become acceptable in her favour. Nevertheleſſe, he concealed his amorous paſſions privately to himſelfe, and could plainly perceive, that although *Ferando* in all things elſe was meerly a ſimple Fellow, and more like an Idiot, than of any apprehenſion, yet was he wiſe enough in loving his Wife, keeping her carefully out of all company, as one (indeed) very jealous, leſt any ſhould kiſſe her, but onely himſelf; which drove the Abbot into deſpair, for ever attaining the iſſue of his deſire. Yet being ſubtill, crafty, and cautelous, he wrought ſo on the flexible nature of *Ferando*, that he brought his wife with him divers days to the Monaſtery; where they walked in the goodly Garden, diſcourſing on the beatitudes of Eternall life, as alſo the moſt holy deeds of men and women, long ſince departed out of this life, in marvellous civill and modeſt manner. Yet all theſe were but trains to a further intention, for the Abbot muſt needs be her ghoſtly Father, and ſhe come to be confeſſed by him; which the foole *Ferando* took as an eſpeciall favour, and therefore he gave his conſent the ſooner.

At the appointed time, when the woman came to confeſſion to the Abbot, and was on her knees before him, to his no ſmall contentment, before ſhe would ſay any thing elſe, thus ſhe begun: Sacred Father, if God had not given me ſuch an husband as I have, or elſe had beſtowed on me none at all; I might have been ſo happy, by the meanes of your holy doctrine, very eaſily to have entred into the way, whereof you ſpake the other day, which leadeth to eternall life, and conducts to heavenly bliſſe. But when I conſider with my ſelfe, what manner of man *Ferando* is, and think upon his folly withall; I may well term my ſelfe to be a widow, although I am a marryed wife, becauſe while he liveth, I cannot have any other husband; And yet (as ſottiſh as you ſee him) he is (without any occaſion given him) ſo extreamly jealous of me; as I am not able to live with him, but onely in continuall tribulation and hearts grief. In which reſpect, before I enter into confeſſion, I moſt humbly beſeech you, that you would vouchſafe (in this diſtreſſe) to aſſiſt me with your fatherly adviſe and counſell; becauſe if thereby I cannot attain to a more pleaſing kinde of happineſſe; neither confeſſion, nor any thing elſe, is able to doe me any good at all.

These words were not a little welcome to my Lord Abbot,

Abbot, becauſe (thereby) he halfe aſſured himſelfe that Fortune had laid open the path to his hoped pleaſures. Whereupon he ſaid; Dear daughter, I make no queſtion to the contrary, but it muſt needs be an exceeding infelicity, to ſo faire and goodly a young woman as you are, to be plagued with ſo ſottiſh an husband, braineſicke, and without the uſe of common underſtanding; but yet ſubject to a more helliſh affliction than all theſe, namely jealouſie; and therefore you being in this wofull manner tormented, your tribulations are not onely ſo much the more credited, but alſo as amply grieved for, in which heavy and irkſome perturbations, I ſee not any means of remedy, but onely one, being a kinde of phyſick (beyond all other) to cure him of his jealouſie; which medicine is very familiar to me, becauſe I know beſt how to compound it, alwayes provided, that you can be of ſo ſtrong a capacity, as to be ſecret in what I ſhall ſay unto you.

Good Father (anſwered the Woman) never make you any doubt thereof; for I would rather endure death it ſelfe, than diſcloſe any thing which you enjoyne me to keep ſecret: wherefore I beſeech you Sir to tell me, how, and by what meanes it may be done. If (quoth the Abbot) you deſire to have him perfectly cured of a diſeaſe ſo dangerous and offenſive, of neceſſity he muſt be ſent into Purgatory. How may that be done, ſaid the woman, he being alive? He muſt needs die, anſwered the Abbot, for his more ſpeedy paſſage thither; and when he hath endured ſo much puniſhment, as may expiate the quality of his jealouſie, we have certaine devout and zealous prayers, whereby to bring him back again to life, in as able manner as ever he was. Why then, replyed the woman, I muſt remain of neceſſity in the ſtate of a Widow? Very true, ſaid the Abbot, for a certaine time, in all which ſpace, you may not (by no means) marry againe, becauſe the heavens will therewith be highly offended: but *Feraudo* being reſtored to life again, you muſt repoſſeſſe him as your husband, but never to be jealous any more. Alas Sir (quoth the woman) ſo that he may be cured of his wicked jealouſie, and I no longer live in ſuch an helliſh impriſonment, do as you pleaſe.

Now was the Abbot (well-neer) on the ſtep of his hope, making her conſtant promiſe to accompliſh it: But (quoth he) what ſhall be my recompence when I have done? Father, ſaid ſhe, whatſoever you pleaſe to aſk, if it remain within the compaſſe of my power: but you being ſuch a vertuous and ſanctified man, and I a

woman of ſo mean worth or merit, what ſufficient recompence can I be able to make you? Whereunto the Abbot thus replyed. Faire woman, you are able to doe as much for me, as I am for you, becauſe I doe diſpoſe my ſelfe, to perform a matter for your comfort and conſolation, even ſo ought you to be as mindfull of me, in any action concerning my life and welfare. In any ſuch matter Sir (quoth ſhe) depeding on your benefit ſo ſtrictly you may ſafely preſume to command me. You muſt then (ſaid the Abbot) grant me your love, and the kinde embracing of your perſon; becauſe ſo violent are mine affections, as I pine and conſume away daily, till I enjoy the fruition of my deſires, and none can help mee therein but you.

When the woman heard theſe words, as one confounded with much amazement, thus ſhe replyed, Alas, holy Father! what a ſtrange motion have you made to me, I beleeved very faithfully, that you were no leſſe then a Saint, and is it convenient, that when ſilly women come to aske counſell of ſuch ſanctified men, they ſhould returne them ſuch unfitting anſwer? Be not amazed good woman, ſaid the Abbot, at the motion which I have made unto you, becauſe holineſſe is not thereby impaired a jot in me; for it is the inhabitant of the ſoul, the other is an imperfection attending on the body: but let it be whatſoever, your beautie hath ſo powerfully prevailed on me, that entire love hath compelled me to let you know it. And more may you boaſt of your beauty, than any that ever I beheld before, conſidering it is ſo pleaſing to a ſanctified man, that it can draw him from divine contemplations, to regard a matter of ſo humble an equalitie.

Let me tell you moreover, worthy Woman, that ſee me reverenced here as Lord Abbot, yet am I but as other men are, and in regard I am neither aged, nor miſhapen, me thinks the motion I have made, ſhould be the leſſe offenſive to you, and therefore the ſooner granted. For, all the while as *Forando* remaineth in Purgatory, doe you but imagine him to be preſent with you, and your perſwaſion will the more abſolutely be confirmed. No man can, or ſhall be privy to our cloſe meetings, for I carry the ſame holy opinion among all men, as you your ſelfe conceived of me, and none dare be ſo ſaucie, as to call in queſtion whatſoever I doe or ſay, becauſe my words are oracles, and mine actions more then halfe miracles; doe you not then refuſe ſo gracious an offer. Know there are who would

gladly

gladly enjoy that which is frank and freely offered to you, and which (if you be a wise woman) is meerly impossible to refuse. Richly am I possessed of Gold and Jewels, which shall be all yours, if you please in favour to be mine, wherein I will not be gain-sayed, except your self do deny me.

The Woman having her eyes fixed on the ground, knew not how she should deny him; and yet in plain words to say she consented, she held to be over-base and immodest, and ill agreeing with her former reputation: when the Abbot had well noted this attention in her, and how silent she stood without returning any answer; he accounted the conquest to be more than half his owne: so that continuing on his formall perswasions, he never ceased, but allured her still to believe whatsoever he said. And she much ashamed of his importunity, but more of her flexible yeelding weakness; made answer, that she would willingly accomplish his request; which yet she did not absolutely grant, untill *Ferando* were first sent into Purgatory. And till then (quoth the Abbot:) I will not urge any more, because I purpose his speedy sending thither: but yet, so farre lend me assistance, that either to morrow, or else the next day, he may come hither to discourse with me. So putting a gold Ring on her finger, they parted till the next meeting.

Not a little joyfull was the Woman of so rich a gift, hoping to enjoy a great many more of them, and returning home to her neighbours, acquainted them with wonderfull matters, all concerning the sanctimonious life of the Abbot, a meer miracle of men, and worthy to be truely termed a Saint. Within two days after, *Ferando* went to the Abbey again, and so soon as the Abbot espyed him, he presently prepared for his séding of him into Purgatory. He never was without a certain kind of drug, which being beaten into powder, would work so powerfully upon the brain and all the other vitall sences; as to entrance them with a deadly sleep, and deprive them of all motion, either in the pulses, or in any other part else, even as if the body were dead indeed; in which operation, it would so hold and continue, according to the quantity given and drunk, as it pleased the Abbot to order the matter. This powder or drug, was sent him by a great Prince of the East, and therewith he wrought wonders upon his Novices, sending them into Purgatory when he pleased, and by such punishments as he inflicted on them there, made them (like credulous asses) believe whatsoever himself listed.

So

So much of this powder had the Abbot provided, as ſhould ſuffice forthree days entrancing, and having compounded it with a very pleaſant Wine, calling *Ferando* into his Chamber, there gave it him to drink, and afterward walked with him about the Cloyſter, in very friendly conference together, the ſilly ſot never dreaming on the treachery intended againſt him. Many Monkes beſide were recreating themſelves in the Cloyſter, moſt of them delighting to ſee the follies of *Ferando* on whom the potion began ſo to work, that he ſlept in walking, nodding and reeling as he went, till at the laſt he fell downe, as if he had been dead.

The Abbot pretending great admiration at this accident, called his Monkes about him, all labourtng by rubbing his temples, throwing cold water and vinegar in his face, to revive him again; alledging, that ſome fume or vapour in the ſtomach had thus over-awed his underſtanding faculties, and quite deprived him of life indeed. At length, when by feeling the pulſe, and all their beſt employed paines, they ſaw that their labour was ſpent in vain; the Abbot uſed ſuch perſwaſions to the Monkes, that all beleeved him to be dead: whereupon they ſent for his wife and friends, who crediting as much as the reſt did, were very ſad and ſorrowfull for him. The Abbot (clothed as he was) laid him in a hollow vault under a Tombe, ſuch as there were uſed in ſtead of Graves; his wife returning home again to her houſe, with a young Son which ſhe had by her husband, proteſting to keep ſtill within her houſe, and never more to be ſeen in any company, but onely to attend her young Son, and be very carefull of ſuch wealth as her husband had left unto her.

From the City of *Bologna*; that very inſtant day, a well ſtaid and governed Monke there arrived, who was a neer kinſman to the Abbot, and one whom he might ſecurely truſt. In the dead time of the night, the Abbot and this Monke aroſe, and taking *Ferando* out of the vault, carried him into a dark dungeon or priſon, which he termed by the name of Purgatory, and where he uſed to diſcipline his Monkes, when they had committed any notorious offence, deſerving to be puniſhed in Purgatory. There they took off all his uſuall wearing garments, and cloathed him in the habit of a Monke, even as if he had been one of the houſe; and laying him on a bundle of ſtraw, ſo left him until his ſenſes ſhould be reſtored again. On the day following, late in the evening, the Abbot accompanyed with his truſty Monke, (by way of viſitation)

went

went to see and comfort the supposed widow, finding her attired in black, very sad and pensive, which by his wonted perswasions, indifferently he appeased; challenging the benefit of her promise. She being thus alone, not hindered by her Husbands jealousie, and espying another goodly gold Ring on his finger, how frailty and folly over-ruled her, I know not, she was a weak woman, he a devillish deluding man; and the strongest holds by over long battery and besieging, must needs yeeld at the last, as I fear she did: for very often afterward the Abbot used in this manner to visit her, and the simple ignorant Countrey people, carrying no such illopinion of the holy Abbot, and having seen *Ferando* lying for dead in the vault, and also in the habit of a Monke; were verily perswaded, that when they saw the Abbot passe by to and fro, but most commonly in the night season, it was the ghost of *Ferando*, who walked in this manner after his death, as a just pennance for his jealousie.

When *Ferando*'s senses were recovered againe, and he found himselfe to be in such a darksome place; not knowing where he was, he began to cry and make a noyse. When presently the Monke of *Bologna* (according as the Abbot had tutored) stept into the dungeon, carrying a little waxe Candle in the one hand, and a smarting whip in the other; going to *Ferando*, he stript off his cloathes, and began to lash him very soundly. *Ferando*, roaring and crying, could say nothing else, but, Where am I? the Monke (with a dreadful voyce) replyed: Thou art in Purgatory. How? said *Ferando*; what? Am I dead? Thou art dead (quoth the Monke) and began to lash him lustily againe. Poore *Ferando* crying out for his Wife and little Sonne, demanded a number of idle questions, whereto the Monke still fitted him with as fantasticke answers. Within a while after, he set both foode and wine before him, which when *Ferando* saw, he said; How is this? Doe dead men eat and drink? Yes, replyed the Monke, and this food which here thou seest, thy wife brought hither to the Church this morning, to have Masses devoutly sung for thy soule; and as to other, so must it be set before thee; for such is the command of the Patron of this place.

Ferando having lyen intranced three dayes and three nights, felt his stomach well prepared to eate, and feeding very heartily, still said; O my good Wife, O my loving Wife, long mayst thou live for this extraordinary kindnesse, I promise thee (Sweet heart) while

I was alive, I cannot remember, that ever any foode and wine was halfe so pleasing to me. O my dear Wife, O my hony Wife. Canst thou (quoth the Monke) praise and commend her now, using her so villanously in thy life time? Then did he whip him more fiercely than before, when *Ferando* holding up hi hands, as craving for mercy, demanded wherefore hee was so severely punished? I am so commanded (quoth the Monke) by supream power, and twice every day must thou bee in this sort and kinde thus disciplin'd. Upon what occasion? replyed *Ferando*. Because (quoth the Monke) thou wast most notoriously jealous of thy Wife, she being the very kindest woman to thee, as all the Countrey containeth not her equall. It is too true, answered *Ferando*, I was over-much jealous of her indeed: but had I known that jealousie was such a hatefull sin against Heaven, I never would have offended therein. Now (quoth the Monke) thou canst confesse thy wilfull folly, but this should have been thought on before, and whilest thou wast living in the World. But if the Fates vouchsafe to favour thee so much, as hereafter to send thee to the World once more; remember thy punishment here in Purgatory, and sinne no more in that foul sin of Jealousie. I pray you Sir, tell me, replyed *Ferando*, after men are dead, and put into Purgatory, is there any hope of their ever visiting the World any more? Yes, said the Monke, if the fury of the Fates be appeased. O that I knew (quoth *Ferando*) by what meanes they would be appeased, and let me visit the World once again: I would be the best Husband that ever lived, and never more be jealous, never wrong so good a Wife, nor ever use any unkinde word against her. In the mean while, and till their anger may be qualified; when next my Wife doth send me foode, I pray you work so much that some Candles may be sent me also, because I live here in uncomfortable darkenesse; and what should I doe with food, if I have no light? She sends lights enow, answered the Monke, but they are burnt out on the Altar in Masse time, and thou canst have none other here, but such as I must bring my selfe, neither are allowed, but for the time of thy feeding and correcting.

Ferando breathing forth a vehement sigh, desired to know what he was, being thus appointed to punish him in Purgatory? I am (quoth the Monke) a dead man, as thou art, born in *Sardignia*, where I served a very jealous Master; and because I soothed him in his jealousie, I had this penance imposed on me, and to serve

thee

thee here in Purgatory with meat and drink, and (twice every day) to discipline thy body, untill the Fates have otherwise determined both for thee and me. Why? said *Ferando*, are any other persons here, beside you and I? Many thousands, replyed the *Monke*, whom thou canst neither hear nor see, no more than they are able to do the like by us. But how far, said *Ferando*, is Purgatory distant from our native Countries? About some fifty thousand leagues, answered the *Monke*; but yet passable in a moment, whensoever the offended Fates are pleased: and many *Masses* are daily said for thy soule, at the earnest entreaty of thy wife, in hope of thy conversion, and becoming a new man, hating to be jealous any more hereafter.

In these, and such like speeches, as thus they beguiled the time, so did they observe it for a daily course, sometime disciplining, other whiles eating and drinking, for the space of ten whole moneths together, in the which time, the Abbot seldome failed to visite *Ferando*'s wife, without the least suspicion in any of the neighbours, by reason of their setled opinion, concerning the nightly walking of *Ferando*'s ghost. But as all pleasures cannot bee exempted from some following pain or other, so it came to passe, that *Ferando*'s wife proved to be conceived with childe, and the time was drawing on for her deliverance. Now began the Abbot to consider, that *Ferando*'s folly was sufficiently chastised, and he had been long enough in Purgatory: wherefore the better to countenance all passed inconveniences, it was now thought high time that *Ferando* should be sent to the world again, as set free from the pains of Purgatory, as having paid for his jealousie dearly, to teach him better wisdome hereafter.

Late in the dead time of the night, the Abbot himself entred into the dark dungeon, and in an hollow counterfeited voyce, called to *Ferando*, saying: Comfort thy selfe *Ferando*, for the Fates are now pleased, that thou shalt be released out of Purgatory, and sent to live in the world again. Thou didst leave thy wife newly conceived with childe, and this very morning she is delivered of a goodly son, whom thou shalt cause to be named *Bennet*: because, by the incessant prayers of the holy Abbot, thine own loving wife, and for sweet St. *Bennets* sake, this grace and favour is afforded thee. *Ferando* hearing this, was exceeding joyfull, and returned this answer: For ever honoured be the Fates, the holy Abbot, blessed St. *Bennet*, and my dear beloved Wife, whom I will love for ever, and never more offend her by any jealousie

jealouſie in me: when the next food was ſent to *Ferando*, ſo much of the powder was mingled with the wine, as would ſerve onely for foure houres entrancing, in which time, they clothed him in his owne wearing apparell again, the Abbot himſelf in perſon, and his honeſt truſty *Monke* of *Bologna*, conveying and laying him in the ſame vault under the Tombe, where at the firſt they gave him buriall. The next morning following, about the break of the day, *Ferando* recovered his ſenſes, and thorow divers chinks of the Tombe, deſcryed day-light, which he had not ſeen in ten moneths ſpace before. Perceiving then plainly that he was alive, he cryed out aloud, ſaying: Open, open, and let me forth of Purgatory, for I have been here long enough in conſcience. Thruſting up his head againſt the cover of the Tombe, which was not of any great ſtrength, neither well cloſed together; he put it quite off the Tombe, and ſo got forth upon his feet: at which inſtant time, the *Monks* having ended their morning *Mattins*, and hearing the noyſe, ran in haſt thither, and knowing the voyce of *Ferando*, ſaw that he was come forth of the monument.

Some of them were ancient Signiors of the houſe, and yet but meer Novices in theſe cunning and politique ſtratagems of the Lord Abbot, when he intended to puniſh any one in Purgatory: and therefore, being affrighted, and amazed at this rare accident; they fled away from him, running to the Abbot, who making a ſhew to them as if he were but new come forth of his Oratory, in a kinde of pacifying ſpeeches, ſaid: Peace my dear Sons, be not afraid, but fetch the Croſſe and Holy-water hither; then follow me, and I will ſhew you what miracle the Fates hath pleaſed to ſhew in our Covent: therefore be ſilent, and make no more noyſe: all which was done as he commanded.

Ferando looking pale, (as one) that in ſo long time had not ſeen the light of heaven, and endured ſuch ſtrict diſcipline twice every day, ſtood in a gaſtly amazement by the Tombes ſide, as not daring to adventure any further, or knowing perfectly whether hee was (as yet) truely alive, or no. But when he ſaw the *Monkes* and Abbot comming, with their lighted Torches, and ſinging in a ſolemne manner of Proceſſion, he humbled himſelfe at the Abbots feet, ſaying: Holy Father, by your zealous prayers (as hath been miraculouſly revealed to me) and the prayers of bleſſed St. *Bennet*, as alſo of my honeſt, dear, and loving Wife, I have been delivered from the pains of Purgatory,

tory, and brought hither again to live in this world; for which unspeakable grace and favour, most humbly I thank the well pleased Fates, Saint *Bennet*, your Fatherhood, and my kinde Wife; and will remember all your loves to me for ever. Blessed be the Fates, answered the Abbot, for working so great a wonder in our Monastery. Goe then my good Son, seeing the Fates have been so gracious to thee; Goe (I say) home to thine owne house, and comfort thy kinde Wife, who ever since thy departure out of this life, hath lived in continuall mourning; love, cherish, and make much of her, never afflicting her henceforth with causelesse jealousie. No I warrant you good Father, replyed *Ferando*, I have been well whipt in Purgatory for such folly, and therefore I might be called a stark foole, if I should that way offend any more, either my loving Wife, or any other.

The Abbot causing *Miserere* to be devoutly sung, sprinkling *Ferando* well with Holy water, and placing a lighted Taper in his hand sent him home so to his owne dwelling Village: where when the neighbours beheld him, as people halfe frighted out of their wits, they fled away from him so scared and terrified, as if they had seen some dreadfull sight, or gastly apparition; his Wife being as fearfull of him, as any of the rest. He called to them kindely by their severall names, telling them that he was newly risen out of his grave, and was a man as he had been before. Then they began to touch and feel him, growing into more certain assurance of him, perceiving him to be a living man indeed. Whereupon, they demanded many questions of him; and he, as if he were become far more wiser than before, told them tydings from their long deceased kindred and friends, as if he had met with them all in Purgatory, reporting a thousand lyes and fables to them, which (nevertheless) they beleeved.

Then he also told them what the miraculous voyce had said unto him, concerning the birth of another young Son, whom (according as he was commanded) he caused to be named *Bennet Ferando*. Thus his return to life again, and the dayly wonders reported by him, caused no mean admiration in the people, with much commendation of the Abbots holinesse, and *Ferandoes* happy curing his jealousie.

Juliet of Narbona, *cured the King of France of a dangerous Fistula, in recompence whereof, she requested to enjoy as her husband in marriage,* Bertrand *Count of* Rousillion. *He having married her against his will, as utterly despising her, went to* Florence, *where he made love to a young Gentlewoman.* Juliet *by a quaint and cunning policy, compassed the means (in stead of his chosen new friend) to lie with her owne husband, by whom she conceived, and had two sons; which being afterward made known unto Count* Bertrand, *he accepted her into his favour againe, and loved her as his loyall and honourable Wife.*

The ninth Novell.

Commending the good judgement and understanding of Ladies or Gentlewomen, that are of a quick and apprehensive spirit.

NOw there remained no more (to preserve the priviledge granted to *Dioneus* uninfringed) but the Queen onely, to declare her Novell. Wherefore, when the discourse of Madam *Lauretta* was ended, without attending any motion to be made for her next succeeding, with a gracious and pleasing disposition, she begun to speak; Who shall tell my Tale hereafter, to carry any hope or expectation of a liking, having heard the witty discourse of Madam *Lauretta*? Beleeve me it was very advantageable to us all, that she was not this daye's beginner, because few or none would have any courage to follow after her; and therefore the rest yet remaining, are the more to be feared and suspected.

There lived sometime in the Kingdome of *France*, a Gentleman named *Isnarde*, being the Count of Rousillion: who because he was continually weake, and crazie, kept a Physician daily in his house, who was called Mr. *Gerard* of Narbona. Count *Isnarde* had one onely Son, very young in years, fair and comely, named *Bertrand*; with whom many other children of his age, had their education: and among them, a daughter of the forenamed Physician, called *Juliet*; who, in these tender years, fixed her affection upon young *Bertrand*, with such an earnest resolution, as was most admirable in so young a maiden. Old Count *Isnarde* dying young *Bertrand* fell a Ward to the King, and being sent to Paris, remained there under his royall protection, to the no little discomfort of young *Juliet*, who became afflicted in minde, because she had lost the company of *Bertrand*.

Within some few years after, the Physitian her Father also dyed, and then her desires grew wholly addicted

dicted, to visit Paris her self in person, onely because she would see the young Count, awaiting but time and opportunity to fit her stolen journey thither. But her friends, to whose care she was committed, in regard of her rich dowry, and being left as a fatherlesse orphan: were so circumspect of her walks and behaviour, as she could not by any means escape. Her years made her almost fit for marriage, which so much more encreased her love to the Count, making refusall of many worthy husbands, and laboured by the motions of her friends, yet all denyed, they not knowing any reason for her refusals. By this time the Count was become a gallant Gentleman, and able to make election of his wife, whereby her affections were the more violently enflamed, as fearing lest some other should be preferred before her, and so her hopes be utterly disappointed.

It was noysed abroad by common report, that the King of France was in a very dangerous condition, by reason of a strange swelling on his stomack, which falling of apt and convenient curing, became a Fistula, afflicting him daily with extraordinary pain. nō Chirurgeon or Physitian being found, that could minister any hope of healing, but rather encreased the grief, compelling the King, as despairing of all help, to give over any further advice. Hereof fair *Julier* was very joyfull, as hoping this accident could be the means, not onely of her journey to Paris, but if the disease were no more than she imagined; she could easily cure it, and thereby compasse *Bertrand* to be her husband. Hereupon quickning up her wits, with remembrance of those rules of Art, which (by long practise and experience) she had learned of her skilfull Father, she compounded certain herbs together, such as she knew fitting for that kinde of infirmity, and having reduced her compound into powder, away she rode forthwith to Paris.

Being there arrived, all other serious matters set aside, first she must needs have a sight of Count *Bertrand*, as being the onely Saint that caused her Pilgrimage. Next, shee made means for her accesse to the King, humbly entreating his Majestie, to vouchsafe her the the sight of his Fistula. When the King saw her, her modest lookes did plainly deliver, that she was a fair, comely, and discreet young Gentlewoman, wherefore he would no longer hide it, but laid it open to her view. When she had seen and felt it, presently she put the King in comfort; affirming, that she knew her selfe able to cure his Fistula, saying: Sir, if your Highnesse will referre the matter to me, without any

perill

perill of life, or any the leaſt paine to your perſon, I hope (by the help of Heaven) to make you whole and ſound within eight dayes ſpace. The King hearing her words, began merrily to ſmile at her, ſaying: How is it poſſible for thee, being a young Maiden, to doe that which the beſt Phyſicians in Europe, are not able to performe? I commend thy kindneſſe, and will not remain unthankfull for thy forward willingneſſe: but I am fully determined to uſe no more counſell, or to make any further tryall of Phyſick or Chirurgery. Whereto fair *Juliet* thus replyed: Great King, let not my skill and experience be deſpiſed, becauſe I am young, and a Maiden; for my profeſſion is not Phyſick, neither doe I undertake the adminiſtring thereof, as depending on my own knowledge; but by the gracious aſſiſtance of heaven, and ſome rules of skilful obſervation, which I learned of reverend *Gerard* of Narbona, who was my worthy Father, and a Phyſician of no mean fame, all the while he lived.

At the hearing of theſe words, the King began ſomewhat to admire at her gracious carriage, and ſaid within himſelfe. What know I, whether this Virgin is ſent to me by the direction of Heaven, or no? Why ſhould I diſdain to make proof of her skill? Her promiſe is, to cure me in a ſmall times compaſſe, and without any pain or affliction to me: ſhe ſhall not come ſo far, to return again with the loſſe of her labour, I am reſolved to try her cunning, and thereon ſaid: Fair Virgin, if you cauſe me to break my ſetled determination, and faile of curing me, what can you expect to follow thereon? Whatſoever great King (quoth ſhe) ſhall pleaſe you. Let me be ſtrongly guarded, yet not hindred, when I am to proſecute the buſineſſe: and then if I doe not perfectly heal you within eight dayes, let a good fire be made, and therein conſume my body unto aſhes. But if I accompliſh the cure, and ſet your Highneſſe free from all further grievance, what recompenſe then ſhall remain to me?

Much did the King commend the confident perſwaſion which ſhe had of her owne power, and preſently replyed: Fair beauty (quoth he) in regard that thou art a Maid and unmarried, if thou keep promiſe, and I finde my ſelfe to be fully cured: I will match thee with ſome ſuch Gentleman in marriage, as ſhall be of honourable and worthy reputation, with a ſufficient dowry beſide. My gracious Soveraigne, ſaid ſhe, willing am I, and moſt heartily thankefull withall, that your Highneſſe ſhall beſtow mee in marriage: but I deſire

then, to have ſuch a husband, as I ſhall deſire or demand by your gracious favour, without preſuming to crave any of your Sons, Kindred, or Alliance, or appertaining unto your Royall bloud. Whereto the King gladly granted. Young *Julies* began to miniſter her Phyſick, and within fewer dayes than her limited time, the King was ſound and perfectly cured; which when he perceived, he ſaid unto her: Truſt me, gracious maid, moſt worthily haſt thou won a Husband, name him, and thou ſhalt have him. Royall King (quoth ſhe) then have I won the Count *Bertrand* of Rouſſilion, whom I have moſt entirely loved from my infancy, and cannot (in my ſoule) affect any other. Very loath was the King to grant the young Count, but in regard of his ſolemn paſſed promiſe, and his royall word engaged, which he would not by any meanes break; he commanded, that the Count ſhould be ſent for, and ſpake thus to him.

Noble Count, it is not unknowne to us, that you are a Gentleman of great honour, and it is our royall pleaſure, to diſcharge your Wardſhip, that you may repaire home to your owne houſe, there to ſettle your affairs in ſuch order, as you may be the readier to enjoy a Wife, which we intend to beſtow upon you. The Count returned his Highneſſe moſt humble thanks, deſiring to know of whence, and what ſhe was? It is this Gentlewoman, anſwered the King, who (by the help of Heaven) hath been the meanes to ſave my life. Well did the Count know her, as having very often before ſeen her; and although ſhe was very faire and amiable, yet in regard of her mean birth, which he held as a diſparagement to his Nobility of bloud; he made a ſcorn of her, and ſpake thus to the King, Would your Highneſſe give me a Quackſalver to my Wife, one that deals in drugs and Phyſicary? I hope I am able to beſtow my ſelfe much better than ſo. Why? quoth the King, wouldſt thou have us break our faith; which for the recovery of our health, we have given to this virtuous Virgin, and ſhe will have no other reward, but onely Count *Bertrand* to be her husband? Sir, replyed the Count, you may diſpoſſeſſe me of all that is mine, becauſe I am your Ward and Subject, and any where elſe you may beſtow me: but pardon me to tell you, that this marriage cannot be made with any liking or allowance of mine, neither will I ever give conſent thereto.

Sir, ſaid the King, it is our will that it ſhould be ſo; virtuous ſhe is, faire and wiſe, ſhe loveth thee moſt affectionately,

affectionately, and with her mayst thou lead a more Noble life, than with the greatest Lady in our kingdome. Silent, and discontented stood the Count, but the King commanded preparation for the marriage; and when the appointed time was come, the Count (albeit against his will) received his wife at the Kings hand; she loving him dearly as her own life. When all was done, the Count requested of the King, that what else remained for further solemnization of the marriage, it might be performed in his own Country, reserving to himselfe what else he intended. Being mounted on horseback, and humbly taking their leave of the King, the Count would not ride home to his own dwelling, but into *Tuscany*, where he heard of a war between the *Florentines* and the *Senesi*, purposing to take part with the *Florentines*, to whom he was willingly and honourably welcomed, being created Captaine of a worthy Company, and continuing there a long while in service.

The poor forsaken new married Counteſſe could scarcely be pleased with such dishonourable unkindnesse, yet governing her impatience with no mean discretion, and hoping by her vertuous carriage, to compasse the means of his recall: home she rode to *Rousſilion*, where all the people received her very lovingly. Now, by reason of the Counts so long absence, all things were farre out of order; mutinies, quarrels, and civill dissensions, having procured many dissolute irruptions, to the expence of much blood in many places. But she like a jolly stirring Lady, very wise and provident in such disturbances, reduced all occasions to such civility againe, that the people admired her rare behaviour, and condemned the Count for his unkindnesse towards her.

After that the whole County of *Rousſilion* (by the policy and wisdome of this worthy Lady, was fully re-established) in their ancient liberties, she made choyse of two secret Knights, whom she sent to the Count her husband; to let him understand, that if in displeasure to her he was thus become a stranger to his owne Countrey: upon the returne of his answer, to give him contentment she would depart thence, and by no meanes disturbe him. Roughly and churlishly he replyed; Let her doe as she list, for I have no determination to dwell with her, or neer where she is. Tell her from me, when she shall have this Ring, which you behold here on my finger, and a Sonne in her armes begotten by me; then will I come live with her

and be her love. The Ring he made moſt precious and dear account of, and never took it off from his finger, in regard of a ſpeciall vertue and property, which he well knew to be remaining in it. And theſe two Knights, hearing the impoſſibility of theſe two ſtrict coaditions, with no other favour elſe to be derived from him; ſorrowfully returned back to their Lady, and acquainted her with his unkinde Anſwer, as alſo his unalterable Determination, which well you may conceive, muſt needs be very unwelcome unto her.

After ſhe had an indifferent while conſidered with her ſelfe, her reſolution became ſo undaunted, that ſhe would adventure to practiſe ſuch meanes, whereby to compaſſe thoſe two apparent impoſſibilities, and ſo to enjoy the love of her husband. Having abſolutely concluded what was to be done, ſhe aſſembled all the chiefeſt men of the Countrey, revealing unto them (in mournfull manner) what an attempt ſhe had made already in hope of recovering her Husbands favour, and what a rude Anſwer was thereon returned. In the end, ſhe told them, that it did not ſuit with her unworthineſſe, to make the Count live as an Exile from his owne inheritance, upon no other inducement, but onely in regard of her, wherefore, ſhe had determined between Heaven and her ſoule, to ſpend the remainder of her dayes in Pilgrimages and Prayers, for preſervation of the Counts ſoul and her owne; earneſtly deſiring them to undertake the charge and government of the Countrey, and ſignifying unto the Count, how ſhee had forſaken his houſe, and purpoſed to wander as farre thence, that never would ſhe viſit *Rouſſillon* any more. In the delivery of theſe words, the Lords and Gentlemen wept and ſighed extraordinarily, uſing many earneſt deprecations to alter this reſolve in her, but all was in vaine.

Having taken her ſad and ſorrowfull farewell of them all, accompanyed onely with her Maid, and one of her Kinſmen, away ſhe went, attired in a Pilgrimes habite, yet well furniſhed with money and precious jewels, to avoyd all wants which might befall her in travaile; not acquainting any one whither ſhe went. In no place ſtayed ſhe, untill ſhe was arrived at *Florence*, where hapning into a poor Widows houſe, like a poore Pilgrime, ſhe ſeemed content therewith. And deſiring to hear ſome tyding of the Count, the next day ſhe ſaw him paſſe by the houſe on horſeback, with his company. Now albeit ſhe knew him well enough, yet ſhe

ſhe demanded of the good old Widow, what Gentleman he was? She made anſwer, that he was a ſtranger there, yet a Noble man called Count *Bertrand* of *Rouſſillon*, a virtuous Knight, beloved and much reſpected in the City. Moreover, that he was farre in love with a Neighbour of hers a young Gentlewoman but very poor and mean in ſubſtance, yet of honeſt life, virtuous, and never taxed with any evill report; onely her poverty was the main embarment of her marriage, dwelling in houſe with her mother, who was a wife, honeſt, and worthy Lady.

The Counteſſe having well obſerved her words and conſidering thereon from point to point; debated ſoberly wi h her owne thoughts in ſuch a doubtfull caſe what was beſt to be done. When ſhe had underſtood which was the houſe, the ancient Ladies name, and likewiſe her daughters, to whom her husband was ſo affectionately devoted; ſhe made choyce of a fit and convenient time, when (in her Pilgrimes habite) ſecretly ſhe went to the houſe. There ſhe found the Mother and daughter in poor condition, and with as poor a family: whom after ſhe had ceremoniouſly ſaluted, ſhe told the old Lady, that ſhee requeſted but a little conference with her. The Lady aroſe, and giving her kinde entertainment, they went together into a with-drawing chamber, where being both ſet down, the Counteſſe began in this manner.

Madam, in my poor opinion, you are not free from the frownes of Fortune, no more than I my ſelfe am: but if you were ſo well pleaſed, there is no one that can comfort both our calamities in ſuch manner, as you are able to doe. And beleeve me, anſwered the Lady, there is nothing in the world than can be ſo welcome to me, as honeſt comfort. The Counteſſe proceeding on in her former ſpeeches, ſaid: I have now need (good Madam) both of your truſt and fidelity, whereon if I ſhould rely, and you faile me, it will be your owne undoing, as well as mine. Speak then boldly, replyed the old Lady, and remaine conſtantly aſſured, that you ſhall no way bee deceived by me. Hereupon, the Counteſſe declared the whole courſe of her love, from the very originall to the inſtant, revealing alſo what ſhe was, and the occaſion of her comming thither, relating every thing ſo perfectly, that the Lady verily beleeved her, by ſome reports, which ſhe had formerly heard, and which moved her the more to compaſſion. Now, when all circumſtances were at full diſcovered, thus ſpake the Counteſſe.

Among my other miseries and misfortunes, which have halfe broken my heart in the meer repetition, beside the sad and afflicting sufferance; two things there are, which if I cannot compasse to have, all hope is quite frustrate for ever, of gaining the grace of my Lord and husband. Yet these two things may I obtaine by your helpe, if all be true which I have heard, and you can therein best resolve me. Since my comming to this City, it hath credibly beene told me, that the Count my husband, is deepely in love with your daughter. If the Count (quoth the Lady) love my daughter, and have a wife of his owne, hee must thinke, and so shall surely finde it, that his greatnesse is no priviledge for him, whereby to worke dishonour upon her poverty. But indeed, some appearances there are, and such a matter as you speak of, may be presumed; yet so far from a very thought of entertaining in her or me; as whatsoever I am able to doe, to yeeld you any comfort and content, you shall finde me therein both willing and ready: for I prize my daughters spotlesse poverty at as high a rate, as he can doe the pride of his honour.

Madam, quoth the Countesse, most heartily I thanke you. But before I presume any further on your kindnesse, let me first tell you what faithfully I intend to doe for you, if I can bring my purpose to effect. I see that your daughter is beautifull, and of sufficient years for marriage; and is debarred thereof (as I have heard) onely by lack of a competent dowry. Wherefore Madam in recompence of the favour I expect from you, I will enrich her with so much ready money as you shall think sufficient to match her in the degree of honour. Poverty made the poore Lady very well to like of such a bountifull offer, and having a noble heart, she said: Great Countesse, say wherein am I able to doe you any service, as can deserve such a gracious offer? if the action be honest, without blame or scandall to my poor, yet undetected reputation, gladly I would do it; and it being accomplished, let the requitall rest in your own noble nature.

Observe me then Madam, replyed the Countesse: It is most convenient for my purpose, that by some trusty and faithfull messenger, you should advertise the Count my husband, that your daughter is, and shall be at his command: but that she may remaine absolutely assured, that his love is constant to her, and above all other; she must intreat him, to send her (as a testimony thereof) the Ring which he weareth upon his

his little finger, albeit she hath heard, that he loveth it dearly. If he send the Ring, you shall give it me, and afterward send him word, that your daughter is ready to accomplish his pleasure; but for the more safety and secresie, he must repair hither to your house, where I being in bed in stead of your daughter, faire Fortune may so favour me, that (unknowne to him) I may conceive with childe. Upon which good successe, when time shall serve, having the Ring on my finger, and a childe in my armes begotten by him, his love and liking may be recovered, and (by your means) I continue with my Husband, as every vertuous Wife ought to doe.

The good old Lady imagined, that this was a matter somewhat difficult, and might lay a blamefull imputation on her daughter: Nevertheless, considering what an honest office it was in her, to be the means, whereby so worthy a Countesse should recover an unkind husband, led altogether by lust, and not a jot of cordiall love; she knew the intent to be honest, the Countesse vertuous, and her promise religious, and therefore undertook to effect it. Within few dayes after, very ingeniously, and according to the instructed order, the Ring was obtained, albeit much against the Counts will; and the Countesse in stead of the Ladies vertuous daughter, was embraced by him in bed: the hour proving so auspicious, and *Juno* being Lady of the ascendent, conjoyned with the witty *Mercury*, she conceived of two goodly Sons, and her deliverance agreed correspondently with the just time.

Thus the old Lady, not at this time onely, but at many other meeting besides; gave the Countesse free possession of her husbands pleasures, yet alwayes in such darke and concealed secresie, as it was never suspected, nor known to any but themselves, the Count lying with his owne Wife, and disappointed of her whom he so deerly loved. Alwayes at his uprising in the mornings (which usually was before the break of day, for preventing the least scruple of suspicion) many familiar conferences passed between them, with the gifts of divers faire and costly Jewels; all which the Countesse carefully kept, and perceiving assuredly, that she was conceived with childe, she would no longer be troublesome to the good old Lady, but calling her aside, spake thus to her. Madam, I must needs give thanks to heaven and you, because my desires are amply accomplished, and both time and your deserts doe justly challenge, that I should accordingly

quit you before my departure. In remaineth now in your owne power, to make what demand you please of me, which yet I will not give you by way of reward, because that would seem to be base and mercenary: but onely whatsoever you shall receive of me, is in honourable recompense of fair and virtuous deservings, such as any honest and wel-minded Lady in the like distresse, may with good credit allow, and yet no prejudice to her reputation.

Although poverty might well have tutored the Ladies tongue, to demand a liberall recompense for her pains; yet she requested but an hundred pounds, as a friendly help towards her daughters marriage, and that with a bashfull blushing was uttered too; yet the Countesse gave her five hundred pounds, besides so many rich and costly jewels as amounted to a far greater summe. So she returned to her wonted lodging at the aged Widows house, where first she was entertained at her comming to *Florence*; and the good old Lady, to avoyd the Counts repairing to her house any more, departed thence suddenly with her daughter, to divers friends of hers that dwelt in the Countrey, whereat the Count was much discontented; albeit afterward, he did never hear any more tydings of her or her daughter, who was worthily married to her Mothers great comfort.

Not long after, Count *Bertrand* was recalled home by his people, and he having heard of his wives absence, went to *Rossilion* so much the more willingly. And the Countesse knowing her husbands departure from *Florence*, as also his safe arrivall at his owne dwelling, remained still in *Florence*, untill the time of her deliverance, which was of two goodly Sons, lively resembling the looks of their Father, and all the perfect lineaments of his body. Perswade your selves she was not a little carefull of their nursing, and when she saw the time answerable to her determination, she tooke her journey (unknown to any) and arrived with them at *Montpellier* where she rested for divers dayes, after so long and wearisome a journy.

Upon the day of All Saints, the Count kept a solemne Festivall, for the assembly of his Lords, Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen: upon which Joviall day of generall rejoycing, the Countesse attired in her wonted Pilgrimes weeds, repaired thither, entring into the great Hall where the Tables were readily covered for dinner. Preasing through the throng of people, with her two children in her armes, shee

presumed

presumed to the place where the Count sate, and falling on her knees before him, the tears trickling abundantly downe her cheeks thus she spake.

Worthy Lord, I am thy poor, despised and unfortunate wife; who (that thou mighest return home, and not be an Exile from thine owne abiding) have thus long gone begging through the world. Yet now at length, I hope thou wilt be so honourably-minded, as to perform thine owne two strict imposed conditions, made to the two Knights which I sent unto thee, and which (by thy command) I was enjoyned to doe. Behold here in my arms, not onely one Son by thee begotten, but two Twins, and thy Ring beside. High time is it now, if men of honour respect their promises, and after so long and tedious travell, I should at last be welcommed as thy true wife.

The Count hearing this, stood as confounded with admiration, for full well he knew the King; and both the Children were so perfectly like him, as he was confirmed to be their Father by generall judgement Upon his urging by what possible means this could be brought to passe: the Countesse in presence of the whole assembly, and unto her eternall commendation, related the whole history, even in such manner as you have formerly heard it. Moreover, she reported the private speeches in bed, uttered between himselfe and her, being witnessed more apparently, by the costly jewels there openly shewn. All which infallible proofes proclaiming his shame, and her most noble carriage to her husband he confessed, that she had told nothing but the truth in every point which she had reported.

Commending her admirable constancy, excellency of wit, and sprightly courage, in making such a bold adventure; he kissed the two sweet boyes, and to keep his promise, whereto he was earnestly importuned, by all his best esteemed friends there present, especially the honourable Ladies, who would have no denyall, but by forgetting his former harsh and unkivill carriage towards her, to accept her for ever as his lawfull wife; folding her in his armes, and sweetly kissing her divers times together, he bad her welcome to him as his virtuous, loyall, and most loving wife, and so (for ever after) he would acknowledge her. Well knew he that she had store of better beseeming garments in the house, and therefore requested the Ladies to walk with her to her Chamber, to uncase her of those Pilgrimes weeds, and cloath her in her owne more sumptuous garments, even those which she wore on her wedding day, because

that

that was not the day of his contentment, but onely this; for now he confeſſed her to be his Wife indeed, and now would give the King thanks for her, and now was Count *Bertrand* truely married to the fair *Julies* of *Narbona*.

The wonderfull and chaſte reſolved continency of fair Seriſtha, *daughter to* Siwalde, *King of Denmark, who being ſought and ſued unto by many worthy perſons that did affect her dearly, would not look any man in the face, untill ſuch time as ſhe was married.*

The tenth Novell.

A very worthy preſident for all young Ladies and Gentlewomen, not raſhly to beſtow themſelves in marriage, without the conſent of their Parents and Friends.

DIoneus having diligently liſtened to the Queens ſingular diſcourſe, ſo ſoon as ſhe had concluded, and none now remained but himſelfe, to give a full period unto that dayes pleaſure; without long trifling the time, or expecting any command from the Queen, thus he began. Gracious Ladies, I know that you expect from me ſome quaint Tale, as ſhall be ſuitable to my merry diſpoſition, rather ſavouring of wantonneſſe, than any diſcreet and ſober wiſdome; and ſuch a purpoſe indeed I once entertained. But having well obſerved all your ſeverall Relations, grounded on grave and worthy examples, eſpecially the laſt, ſo notably delivered unto us by the Queen: I cannot but commend faire *Julies* of *Narbona*, in performing two ſuch ſtrange impoſſibilities, and conquering the unkindneſſe of ſo cruell a Husband. If my Tale come ſhort of the precedent excellency, or give not ſuch content, as you (perhaps) expect, accept my good will, and let me ſtand engaged for a better hereafter.

The Annals of Denmarke doe make mention, that the King of the ſaid Countrey, who was firſt ſet downe as Prince, contrary to the ancient cuſtomes and laws obſerved among the Danes, namely *Hanguinus*, had a ſon called *Siwalde*, who ſucceeded him in the eſtates and kingdome, belonging to his famous predeceſſors. That Age, and the Court of that royall Prince, was very highly renowned, by the honour of fair *Seriſtha*, Daughter to the ſaid *Siwalde*; who beſide her generall repute, of being a miracle of Nature, in perfection of beauty, and moſt compleat in all that the heart of man could deſire to note, in a body full of grace, gentleneſſe,

tleneſſe, and whatſoever elſe, to attract the eyes of every one to behold her; ſhe was alſo chaſte, modeſt, and baſhfull, as it were meerly impoſſible to prevaile ſo farre with her, that any man ſhould come to ſpeak with her. For in thoſe dayes marriages were purſued, and ſought by valour, and by the onely opinion which ſtout Warriours conceived of the vittuous qualities of a Lady. Notwithſtauding, never could any man make his vaunt, that ſhe had given him ſo much as a look, or ever any attained to the favour to whiſper a word in her ear. Becauſe, both the cuſtome and will of Parents then (very reſpectively kept in thoſe Northerne parts of the world) of hearing ſuch ſpeak, as deſired their daughters in marriage, grew from offering them ſome worthy ſervices; and thereby compaſſed means to yeeld their contentation, by ſome gracious and kinde anſwers.

But ſhe, who was far off from the deſire of any ſuch follies, referring her ſelfe wholly to the diſpoſition of the King her Lord and Father; was ſo contrary to give any living man an anſwer, that her eye never looked on any one ſpeaking to her, appearing as ſparing in vouchſafing a glance, as her heart was free from a thought of affection. For ſhe had no other imagination, but that Maides both in their choyce and will, ought to have any other diſpoſition, but ſuch as would be pelaſing to their Parents either to grant or deny; according as they were guided by their grave Judgement. In like manner, ſo well had ſhe bridled her ſenſuall appetites, with the curb of Reaſon, Wiſdome, and Providence, ſetting ſuch an extraordinary ſevere and conſtant reſtraint, on the twinkling or motions of her eyes, in abſolute obedience to her Father, as never was ſhe ſeen to turne her head aſide, to lend one look on any man of her age.

A worthy ſight it was to behold the Knights errant, paſſing, and repaſſing to Denmarke, and back againe, labouring to conquer thoſe ſetled eyes, to win the leaſt ſign of grace, or likelyhood of any favor, from her whom they ſo dutiouſly purſued, to ſteal but a ſilly glance, and would have thought it a kind of honorable theft. But this immoveable rock of beauty, although ſhe knew the deſignes of them which thus frequented the Court of the King her Father, and could not pretend ignorance of their endeavour, aiming onely at obtaining her in marriage: yet did not lend any look of her eye, yeelding the leaſt ſignall of the hearts motion, in affecting any thing whatſoever, but what it pleaſed her Father ſhe ſhould doe.

Seriſtha, living in this ſtrange and unuſuall manner, it moved many Princes and great Lords, to come and court her; contending both by all ſignes and words to change her from this ſevere conſtancy, and make known (if poſſible it might be) whether a woman would or could be ſo reſolute, as to uſe no reſpect at all towards them, coming from ſo many ſtrange Countreys, to honour her in the Court of the King her Father. But in theſe dayes of ours, if ſuch a number of gallant ſpirits ſhould come to ask but one look of ſome of our beauties, I am half afraid, that they ſhould finde the eyes of many of our dainty Darlings, not ſo ſparing of their glances, as thoſe of *Seriſtha* were. Conſidering, that our Courtiers of theſe times, are this way emulous one of another, and Women are ſo forward in offering themſelves, that they perform the Office of ſuters, as fearing leſt they ſhould not be ſolicited, yea, though it be in honeſt manner.

The King, who knew well enough, that a Daughter was a treaſure of ſome danger to keep, and growing doubtfull withall leſt (in the end) this ſo obſtinate ſeverity ſhould be ſhaken, if once it came to paſſe, that his Daughter ſhould feel the piercing apprehenſion of love, and whereof (as yet) ſhe never had any experience; he determined to uſe ſome remedy for this great concourſe of lovers, and ſtrange kinde of carriage in the Princeſſe his daughter. For, he apparently perceived that ſuch an excellent beauty as was in *Seriſtha* with thoſe good and commendable cuſtomes, and other ornaments of his Daughters minde, could never attain to ſuch an height of perfection; but yet there would be found ſome ſort of men, ſo wittily acute and ingenious, as to convert and humor a Maid, according to their will, and make a mockery of them, who were (before) of moſt high eſteem. Beſide, among ſo great a troope of Lords, as daily made tender of their amorous ſervice, ſome one or other would prove ſo happy, as at the laſt ſhe would be his Miſtris. And therefore forbearing what otherwiſe he had intended as a finall concluſion of all ſuch follies, calling his Daughter alone to himſelfe in his Chamber, and ſtanding cleer from all other attention, he uſed to her this or the like language.

I know not faire Daughter, what reaſon may move you to ſhew your ſelfe ſo diſdainfull towards ſo many Noble and worthy men, as come to viſit you, and honour my Court with their preſence, offering me their love and loyall ſervice, under this onely prete ce (as I perceive),

perceive) of obtaining you, and compaſſing the happineſſe (as it appeareth in plain ſtrife among them) one day to winne the prize, you being the maine iſſue of all their hope. If it be baſhfull modeſty, which (indeed) ought to attend on all Virgins of your yeers, and ſo vailes your eyes, as (with honour) you cannot look on any thing, but what is your owne, or may not juſtly vouchſafe to ſee: I commend your maidenly continency, which yet nevertheleſſe, I would not have to be ſo ſevere, as (at length) your youth falling into miſlike thereof, it may be the occaſion of ſome great misfortune, either to you, or me, or elſe to us both together: conſidering what rapes are ordinarily committed in thoſe quarters, and the Ladies equall every way to your ſelf; which happening, would preſently be the cauſe of my death.

If it be in regard of ſome vow which you have conſecrated to virginity, and to ſome one of our Gods: I ſeek not therein to hinder your deſignes, neither will bereave the celeſtiall powers, of whatſoever appertaineth to them. Albeit I could wiſh, that it ſhould be kept in a place more ſtraited, and ſeparate from the reſort of men; to the end, that ſo bright a beauty as yours is, ſhould cauſe no diſcords among amorous ſuters, neither my Court prove a Camp deſtined unto the concluſion of ſuch quarrels, or you be the occaſion of reviving ſo many, whoſe ſervice would beſeem a much more needfull place, than to die here by a fond and fooliſh opinion of enjoying a vain pleaſure, yet remaining in the power of another body to grant. If therefore I ſhall perceive, that theſe behaviours in you doe proceed from pride or contempt of them, who endevour to doe you both honour and ſervice, and in ſtead of granting them a gracious look, in arrogancie you keep it from them, making them enemies to your folly and my ſufferance: I ſwear to you, by our greateſt God, that I will take ſuch due order, as ſhall make you feel the hand of an offended Father, and teach you (henceforth) to be much more affable.

Wherefore dear Daughter, you ſhall doe me a ſingular pleaſure, freely to acquaint me with your minde, and the reaſons of your ſo ſtrict ſeverity: promiſing you, upon the word and faith of a King, nay more, of a loving and kinde Father, that if I finde the cauſe to be juſt and reaſonable, I will deſiſt ſo far from hindering your intent, as you ſhall rather perceive my fatherly furtherance. and reſt truely reſolved of my help and favour. Wherefore, fair Daughter, neither bluſh or

diſmay,

dismay, or fear to let me understand your will; for evidently I see, that meer Virgin-shame hath made a rapture of your soule, being nothing else but those true splendors of virtue derived from your Ancestors, and shining in you most gloriously, gracing you with a much richer embellishing, than those beauties bestowed on you by Nature. Speake therefore boldly to your Father, because there is no law to prohibit your speech to him: for when he commandeth, he ought to be obeyed: promising upon mine oath once again, that if your reasons are such as they ought to be, I will not faile to accommodate your fancy.

The wise and virtuous Princesse, hearing the King to alledge such gracious reasons, and to lay so kinde a command on her, making him most low and humble reverence, in signe of dutifull accepting such favour, thus she answered. Royall Lord and Father, seeing that in your Princely Court, I have gathered whatsoever may be termed virtuous in me, and you being the principal Instructer of my life, from whom I have learned those lessons, how Maids (of my age) ought to govern and maintain themselves: you shall apparently perceive, that neither gazing looks, which I ought not to yeeld without your consent, nor pride or arrogancy, never taught me by you, or the Queen my most honourable Lady and Mother, are any occasion of my carriage towards them, which come to make ostentation of their folly in your Court, as if a meer look of *Seristha* were sufficient to yeeld assurance effectually of their desired victory.

Nothing (my most Royall Lord and Father) induceth me to this kinde of behaviour, but onely due respect of your honour and mine owne: and to the end it may not be thought that I belye my selfe, in not eying the affectionate offers of amorous pursuers, or have any other private reserved meaning, than what may best please King *Sinaldo* my Father, let it suffice Sir, that it remaineth in your power onely, to make an apt election and choyce for me: for I never ought, nor will allow the acceptance of any suters kindnesse, so much as by a looke (much lesse then by words) untill your Highnesse shall nominate the man, to be a meet Husband for *Seristha*. It is onely you then (my Lord) that bears the true life-blood of our Ancestors. It is the untainted life of the Queen my Mother, that sets a chaste and strict restraint on mine eyes, from estranging my heart to the idle amorous enticements of young giddy-headed Gentlemen, and have sealed up my soule with no

an absolute determination, rather to make choyce of death, than any way to alter this my warrantable severity.

You being a wise King, and the worthy Father of *Seriſtha*, it is in you to meditate, counsell, and effect, what best shall beseem the designes of your daughter, because it is the vertue of Children, yea, and their eternall glory and renowne, to illustrate the lives and memory of their Parents. It consisteth in you either to grant honest license to such Lords as desire me, or to oppose them with such discreet conditions, as both your selfe may sit free from any further afflicting, and they rest defeated of dangerous dissensions, according as you foresee what may ensue. Which yet (nevertheless) I hold as a matter impossible; if their discord should be grounded on the sole apprehension of their souls; and the onely prevention thereof, is, not to yeeld any signe, glance of the eye, or so much as a word more to one man than another: for such is the setled disposition of your daughters soule, and which she humbly entreateth, may so still be suffered.

Many means there are, whereby to winne the grace of the greatest King, by employing their paines in worthy occasions, answerable unto their yeeres and vertue, if any such sparkles of honour doe shine in their soules; rather than by gaining here any matter of so meane moment, by endevouring to shake the simplicity of a bashfull Maid: Let them clear the Kings High-wayes of Theeves, who make the passages difficult; or let them expell Pyrates from off the Seas, which make our Danish coasts every way inaccessible. These are the Noble means to merite, as may throw deserved recompence upon them, and much more worthily, than making Idols of Ladies-lookes, or gazing for Babies in their wanton eyes. So may you bestow on them what is your owne, granting *Seriſtha* to behold none, but him whom you shall please to give her: for otherwise you know what her absolute resolve is, never hereafter for to looke any living man in the face, but onely you my gracious Lord and Father.

When the King had heard this wise and modest answer of his daughter, he could not otherwise chuse but greatly commend her in his heart; and smiling at the counsell which she gave him, he returned her this answer. Understand mee well, faire daughter; neither am I minded to break your determination wholly,

wholly, nor yet doe I purpoſe to govern my ſelf according to your own fancy. I ſtand indifferently contented, that untill I have otherwiſe purpoſed, you ſhall continue the nature of your ancient cuſtome: yet conditionally, that when I command an alteration of your carriage, you faile not therein to declare your obedience. What elſe remaineth beſide, for ſo ſilly a thing as a Woman is, and for the private pleaſing of ſo many great Princes and Lords, I will not endanger any of their lives, becauſe their parents and friends (being ſenſible of ſuch loſſes) may ſeek revenge, perhaps to their owne ruine, and ſome following ſcourge to my indiſcretion. For I conſider (Daughter) that I have Neighbours who ſcarcely love me, and of whom (in time) I may right my ſelf, having received by their means, great wrongs and injuries. Alſo I make no doubt, but to manage your love-ſute with diſcretion, and ſet ſuch a pleaſing proceeding between them, as neither ſhall beget any hatred in them towards me, nor yet offend them in their affectious purſuite, till Fortune may ſmile ſo favourably upon ſome one man, to reach the height of both our wiſhed deſires.

Siwalde was thus determinately reſolved, to let his Daughter live at her owne diſcretion, without any alteration of her continued ſeverity, perceiving day by day, that many came ſtill to requeſt her in marriage, and he could not give her to them all, nor make his choyce of any one, leſt all the reſt ſhould become his enemies, and fall into quarrell one with another.

Onely this therefore was his ordination, that among ſuch a number of amorous ſuiters, he onely ſhould wear the Lawrell wreath of victory, who could obtaine ſuch favour of *Seriſtha*, as but to look her in the face. This condition ſeemed to be of no meane difficulty, yea, and ſo impoſſible, that many gave over their amorous enterprize: whereof *Seriſtha* was wondrouſly joyfull, ſeeing her ſelfe eaſed of ſuch tedious importunity, dulling her ears with their proffered ſervices, and foppiſh allegations of fantaſtick ſervitude, ſuch as idle-headed lovers doe uſe to proteſt before their Miſtreſſes, wherein they may beleeve them, if they liſt.

Among them that were thus forward in their heat of affection, there was a young Daniſh Lord, named *Ocharus*, the ſon of a Pirate, called *Hebonius*, the ſame man, who having ſtolne the Siſter unto King

Hungarus,

Hunguinus, and sister to *Siwalde*, and affiancing himselfe to her, was slain by King *Haldane*, and by thus killing him, enjoyed both the Lady and the Kingdome of the Gothes also, as her inheritance. This *Ochanus* relying much on his comelynesse of person, wealth, power, and valour, but (above all the rest) on his excellent and eloquent speaking; bestowed his best endevours to obtain *Soritha* notwithstanding the contemptible carriage of the rest towards him: whereupon prevailing for his accesse to the Princesse, and admitted to speak as all the other did, he reasoned with her thus.

Whence may it proceed, Madam, that you being the fairest and wisest Princesse living at this day in all the Northerne parts, should make so small account of your selfe, as to deny that, which with honour you may yeeld to them, as seek to doe you most humble service; and forgetting the rank you hold, doe refuse to daign them recompense in any manner whatsoever, seeking onely to enjoy you in honourable marriage? Perhaps you are of opinion, that the Gods should become slaves to your beauty, in which respect, men are unworthy to crave any such acquaintance of you. If it be so, I confesse my selfe conquered: But if the Gods seek no such association with women, and since they forsook the world, they left this legacy to us men; I think you covet after none but such as are extracted of their blood, or may make vaunt of their neer kindred and alliance to them. I know that many have wished, and doe yet desire you: I know also, that as many have requested you of the King your Father, but the choyce remaineth in your power, and you being ordained the Judg, to distinguish the merit of all your Suters; me thinks you doe wrong to the office of a Judge, in not regarding the parties which are in suit, to sentence the desert of the best and bravest, and so to delay them with no more lingering.

I cannot think Madam, that you are so far out of your selfe, and so chill cold in your affection, but desire of occasions, equall to your virtue and singular beautie, do sometime touch you feelingly, and make you to wish for such a man answerable to the greatnesse of your excellency. And if it should be otherwise (as I imagine it to be impossible) yet you ought to break such designe, onely to satisfie the King your Father, who can desire nothing more, than to have a Son in law, to revenge him on the Tyrant of *Swetia*: who, as you well know was sometime the Murtherer of your Grand-father *Hunguinus*, and also of his Father. If you please to vouchsafe

safe me so much grace and favour, as to make me the man, whom your heart hath chosen to be your Husband; I swear unto you, by the honour of a Souldier, that I will undergoe such service, as the King shall be revenged, you royally satisfied, and my selfe advanced to no mean happinesse, by being the onely fortunate man in the world. Gentle Princesse, the most beautiful daughter to a King, open that indurate heart, and so soften it, that the sweet impressions of love may be ingraven therein; see there the joyfull pursuit of your *Ocharus*, who, to save his life, cannot so much as win one looke from his divine Mistresse.

This niceness is almost meerly barbarous, that I, wishing to adventure my life prodigally in your service, you are so cruell, as not to deigne recompence to this duty of mine, with the least signe of kindnesse that can be imagined. Fair *Seristha*, if you desire the death of your friend and servant *Ocharus*, there are many other means whereby to performe it, without consuming him in so small a fire, and suffer him there to languish without any answer. If you will not look upon me; if my face be so unworthy, that one beam of your bright Sunne may not shine upon it: if a word of your mouth bee too precious for mee; make a signe with your hand, either of my happinesse or disaster. If your hand be envyous of mine ease, let one of your women be set, to pronounce the sentence of life or death; because, if my life be hatefull to you, this hand of mine may sacrifice it to the rigour of your disdaine. But if (as I am rather perswaded) the ruine of your servants, be against your more mercifull wishes; deal so that I may perceive it, and expresse what compassion you have of your *Ocharus*, who coveteth nothing more, then your dayly hearts ease and contentment, with a privilege of honour above other Ladies. All this discourse was heard by *Seristha*, but so little was she moved therewith, as she was farre enough off from returning him any answer, neither did any of the Gentlewomen attending on her, ever hear her use the very least word to any of her amorous sollicitors, nor did she know any one of them, but by speach onely, which drove them all into an utter despair, perceiving no possible means whereby to conquer her.

The Histories of the Northerne Countries doe declare, that in those times, the rapes of women were not much respected; and such as pursued any Lady or Gentlewoman with love, were verily perswaded, that they never made sufficient proofe of their amorous

passions,

passions, if they undertooke not all cunning ſtratagems, with adventure of their lives to all perills whatſoever, for the rape or ſtealth of them, whom they purpoſed to enjoy in marriage. As we reade in the *Gothes* Hiſtory of *Grano*, Son to the King of *Denmarke*, who being impatiently amorous of the daughter to the King of the *Gothes*, and winning the love of the Lady; ſtole her away, before her parents or friends had any notice thereof; by meanes of which rape, there followed a moſt bloody warre between the *Gothes* and the *Danes*. In recompence of which injury, *Sibdagerus*, King of *Norway*, being choſen chief Commander of the *Sweti-ans* and *Gothes*, entred powerfully into *Denmark*, where firſt he violated the Siſter to King *Grano*, and led away her Daughter, whom in like manner he made his ſpouſe as the *Dane* had the Daughter of *Sigtruge*, Prince of the *Gothes*.

I induce theſe brief narrations onely to ſhew, that while *Ocharus* made honeſt and affable means, to win reſpect from *Seriſtha*, and uſed all honourable ſervices to her, as the Daughter of ſo great a Prince worthily deſerved: ſome there were, not halfe ſo conſcientious as he, eſpecially one of the amorous ſutors, who being weary of the ſtrangeneſs of *Seriſtha*, diſſembling to proſecute his purpoſe no further; prevailed ſo farre, that he corrupted one of her Governeſſes, for ſecretly training her to ſuch a place, where the raviſher ſhould lie in ambuſh to carry her away, ſo to enjoy her by policy, ſeeing all other meanes failed for to compaſſe his deſire.

Behold, to what a kinde of fooliſh rage, which giddy headed dullards doe term a naturall paſſion, they are led, who being guided more by ſenſuality than reaſon or diſcretion; follow the brain-ſick motions of their raſh apprehenſions. He which purſueth, and proteſts to love a Lady for her gentility and virtue, knoweth not how to meaſure what love is, neither ſeeth nor conceiveth, how far the permiſſion of his owne endevours extendeth. Moreover, you may obſerve, that never age was ſo groſſe, or men ſo ſimple, but even almoſt from the beginning, avarice did hood-winke the hearts of men, and that (with gold) the very ſtrongeſt Fortification in the world hath been broken, yea, and the beſt barr'd gates laid open. *Seriſtha*, who ſhunned the ſight of all men, and never diſturbed them which kept about her; ſhe who never knew (except ſome naturall ſpark gave light to her underſtanding) what belonged to the embracements of men, muſt

now

now (without dreaming thereon) fall as food to the insatiable appetite of a wretch, who compassed this surprisall of her, to glory in his owne lewdnesse, and made a mock of the Princesses setled constancy.

She, good Lady, following the counsell of her traiterous guide, went abroad on walking, but weakly accompanyed, as one that admitted no men to attend her; which she might have repented very deerly, if heaven had not succoured her innocency, by the help of him who wilted her as well as the ravisher, though their desire were quite contrary; the one to enjoy her by violence, but the other affected rather to die, than to doe the least act that might displease her. No sooner was *Sanitha* arrived at the destined place, where the false Governesse was to deliver her; but behold a second *Paris* came, and seized on her, hurrying her in haste away, before any help could possibly rescue her; the place being far off from any dwelling.

Now the ravisher durst not convey her to his owne abiding, to enjoy the benefit of his purchase; but haled her into a small thicket of trees, where although she knew the evident perill, whereinto her severe continency had now thrown her: yet notwithstanding, she would not lift up her eyes to see what he was that had thus stolne her, so firmly she dwelt upon grounded deliberation, and such was the rigor of her chaste resolve. And albeit she knew a wickednesse (worse than death) preparing for her, who had no other glory than in her virtue, and desire to live contentedly; yet was she no more astouned thereat, than if he had led her to the Palace of the King her Father: perswading her selfe, that violence done to the body, is no prejudice to honour, when the minde is free from consent.

As thus this robber of beauty was preparing to massacre the modesty of the fair Princesse, she refused him with all her power, yea, and defended her selfe so worthily, that he could not get one look of her eye, one kisse of her cheek, nor any advantage whatsoever, crying out shrilly, and strugling against him strongly: her outcries were heard by one, who little imagined that she was so neer, whom he loved more deerly than his own life, namely, *Ocharus*; who was walking accidentally alone in this wood, devising by what meanes he might win grace from his stern Mistresse. No sooner took he knowledge of her, and saw her (in the armes of another) to be ravished; but he cryed out to the thief, saying, Hand off villain, let not such a slave as thou, prophane with an unreverent touch the sacred

honour

honour of so chaste a Princesse, who deserveth to be more royally respected, than thus rudely hurried: Hand off I say, or else I swear by her divine perfections, whom I esteem above all creatures in this world, to make thee die more miserably, than ever any man as yet did.

Whosoever had seen a Lyon or an Ounce rouse himselfe, chafing when any one adventureth to rob him of his prey; and these with fierce eyes, mounted crests, writhed tailes, and sharpned pawes, make against him that durst so molest him. In the like manner did the ravisher shew himselfe, and one while snarling, another while bristling the darted disdainfull looks at *Ocharus*, and speak to him in this manner. Vile and base Sea-thief, as thou art, welcome to thy deserved wages, and just repayment for thy proud presuming. It glads my heart not a little, to meet thee here, where thou shalt soon perceive what good will I bear thee, and whether thou be worthy or not, to enjoy the honour of this Lady, now in mine owne absolute possession. It will also encrease her more ample perswasion of my worth, and plead my merit more effectually in her favour; when shee shall see what a powerfull arme I have, to punish this proud insolence of a Pirate.

This harsh language was so distastfull to *Ocharus*, that like a Bull, made angry by the teeth of some Mastive Dogge, or pricked by the point of a weapon, he ran upon his enemy, and was so roughly welcommed by him, as it could not easily be judged which of them had the better advantage. But in the end Fortune favored most the honest man, and *Ocharus* having overthrowne the robber, he smote the head of him quite from his shoulders, which he presented to her, whom he had delivered out of so great perill, and thus he spake: You may now behold Madam, whether *Ocharus* be a true lover of *Seristha's* vertues, or no, and your knowledge fully resolved at what end his affection aimeth; as also how far his honest desert extendeth, for you both to love him, and to recompense the loyall respect he hath used towards you. Never look on the Villains face, who strove to shame the King your Fathers Court by violation of thievery, the choycest Princesse of the earth, but regard *Ocharus*, who is ready to sacrifice himselfe, if you take as much pleasure in his ruin, as (he thinketh) he hath given you contentment, by delivering you from this Traitor.

Doth it not appear unto you Madam, that I have as yet done enough, whereby to be thought a worthy husband,

Husband, for the royall daughter of Denmarke? Have I not satisfied the Kings owne Ordinance, by delivering his daughter, as already I have done? Will *Geriffha* be so constant in her cruelty, as not to turne her eye towards him, who exposed his life to no meane perill and danger, onely in the defence of her chastity? Then I plainly perceive, that the wages of my devoir, is ranked amongst those precedent services, which I have performed for so hurtfull a beautie. Yet gentle Princesse, let me tell you, my carriage hath been of more importance, than all the others can be, and my merit no way to be compared with theirs; at least, if you please to make accouut of him, who is an unfained lover of your modesty, and devoutly honoureth your virtuous behaviour. And yet Madam, shall I have none other answer from you, but your perpetuall silence? Can you continue so obstinate in your opinion, in making your selfe still as strange to your *Ocharus*, as to the rest, who have no other affection, but onely to the bare outside of beauty. Why then, Royall Lady, seeing (at this instant time) all my labour is but lost, and your heart seemeth much more hardned, in acknowledging any of my honest services: at least, yet let me be so happy, as to conduct you back to the Palace, and restore you to that sacred safety, which wil be mysouls best comfort to behold.

No outward signe of kinde acceptation, did any way expresse it selfe in her, but rather as fearing, lest the commodiousnesse of the place should incite this young Lord, to forget all honest respect, and imitate the other in like basenesse. But he, who rather wished a thousand deaths, than any way to displease his Mistresse, as if he were half doubtfull of her suspicion, made offer of guiding her back to the place, from whence she had before been stolen, where she found her company still staying, as not daring to stirre thence, to let the King know his daughters ill fortune; but when they saw her returne, and in the company of so worthy a Knight, they grew resolved that no violence had been dont unto her.

The Princesse sharply rebuked her women, for leaving her so basely as they had done, gave charge to one of them (because she would not seem altogether negligent and discourteous) that she being gone thence, she should not fail to thank *Ocharus*, for the honest and faithfull service he had done unto her, which she would continually remember, and recompense as it lay in her power. Nevertheless, she advised him withall not to hope of any more

advantage

advantage thereby, than reason should require. For if it were the will of the gods, that she should be his wife, neither she, nor any other could let or hinder it: but if her destiny reserved her for another, all his services would availe to no purpose, but rather to make her the more rigorous towards him.

This gracious answer, thus given him by the Gentlewoman, although it gave some contentment to the languishing Lover, yet he saw no assured signe whereon to settle his resolve, but his hopes vanished away in smoak, as fast as opinion bred them in his brain. And gladly he would have given over all further amorous sollicitings, but by some private perswasions of her message sent him, which in time might so advance his services done for her sake, as would derive far greater favours from her. Whereupon, he omitted no time or place, but as occasion gave him any gracious permission, still plyed her memory, with his manly rescuing her from the Ravisher, sufficient to plead his merit to her Father, and that in (all equity) she ought to be his wife, by right both of honour, and Armes; no man being able to deserve her as he had done.

So long he pursued her in this manner, that his speeches seemed hatefull to her, and devising how to be free from his daily importunities, at length, in the habite of a poore Chamber-maid, she secretly departed out of the Court, wandring into the solitary parts of the countrey; where she entred into a service, and had the charge of keeping Sheep. It may seem strange, that a Kings onely daughter should stray in such sort, and despising Courtly life, betake her self to paines and servility: but such was her resolution: and women delighting altogether in extremes, spare no attempts to compasse their own wills. All the Court was in an uproar for the Ladies losse, the Father in no mean affliction, the Lovers well-neer beside their wits, and every one else most grievously tormented, that a Lady of such worth should so suddenly be gone, and all pursuit made after her, gain no knowledge of her.

In this high tide of sorrow and disaster, what shall we say of the gentle Lord *Ocharus*? What judgement can sound the depth of his wofull extremity? Fearing lest some other thief had now made a second stealth of his divine goddesse; hee must needs follow her again, seeking quite throughout the world, never more returning back to the Court, nor to the place of his owne abiding, untill he heard tydings of his Mistresse, or end his dayes in search of her. No Village, Towne,

Cottage, Caſtle, or any place elſe of note or name, did he leave unſought, but diligently he ſearched for *Seriſtha*, ſtriving to get knowledge, under what habit ſhe lived thus concealed, but all his labour was to no effect: which made him leave the place ſo much frequented; and viſite the ſolitary deſert ſhades, entring into all caves and ruſtick habitations, whereon he could faſten his eye, to ſeek for the loſt treaſure of his ſoule.

On a day, as he wandred along in a valley, ſeated between two pleaſant hills, taking delight to heare the gentle murmur of the rivers, running by the ſides of two neighbouring rocks, planted with all kinde of trees, and very thickly ſpread with moſſe: he eſpyed a flock of ſheep feeding on the graſſe, and not far from them ſate a Maid ſpinning on her diſtaffe; who having got a ſight of him, preſently covered her face with a veil. Love, who ſate as Sentinell both in the heart and eye of the gentle *Norwegian* Lord, as quickly diſcovered the ſubtilty of the fair Shepheardeſſe, inſtructing the ſoule of *Ocharus*, that ſhe hid her face not to be known: whereupon he gathered, that doubtleſſe this was ſhe, for whom he had ſought with ſuch tedious travell, and therefore going directly unto her, thus he ſpake.

Gentle Princeſſe; wherefore do you hide your ſelfe from me? Why do you haunt theſe retreats and deſolate abodes, having power to command over infinite men, that cannot live but by your preſence? What hath moved you Madam, to fly from company, to dwell among deſert rocks, and ſerve as a ſlave, to ſuch as are no way worthy of your ſervice? Why doe you forſake a potent King, whoſe onely Daughter and hope you are; leaving your countrey and royall train of Ladies, and ſo far abaſing your ſelfe, to live in the dejected ſtate of a ſervant, and to ſome ruſtick clowne or peaſant? What reaſon have you, to deſpiſe ſo many worthy Lords that dearly love and honour you, but (above them all) your poor ſlave *Ocharus*, who hath made no ſpare of his owne life for the ſafety of yours, and alſo for the defence of your honour? Royall Maid, I am the ſame man that delivered you from the villain, who would have violated your chaſtity; and ſince then, have not ſpared any paine or travell in your ſearch: for whoſe loſſe, King *Siwalde* is in extreme anguiſh, the *Danes* in mourning habits, and *Ocharus* even at the dore of death, being no way able to endure your abſence.

And

Are you of the minde, worthy Madam, that I have not hitherto deserved so much as one good look or glance of your eye, in recompense of so many good and loyall services? If alas! I am neither ravisher, nor demander of any unjust requests, or else incivill in my motions: I may merit one regard of my Mistresse, I require onely so silly a favour, that her eyes may pay me the wages for all which I have hitherto done in her service. What would you doe Madam, if I were an important sollicitor, and requested farre greater matters of you, in just recompense of my labours? I doe not desire, that you should embrace me. I am not so bold, as to request a kisse of *Seriftha*'s more than immortall lips. Nor doe I covet, that she should any otherwise entreat me, than with such severity as beseemeth so great a Princesse. I ask no more, but onely to elevate your chaste eyes, and grace me with one little looke, as being the man, who for his virtue and loyall affection, hath deserved more than that favour, yea, a much greater and excellent recompense. Can you then be so cruell, as to deny me so small a thing, without regard of the main debt, wherein you stand engaged to your *Ocharus*?

The Princesse perceiving that it availed nothing to conceal her selfe, being by him so apparently discovered; began now to speak (which she had never done before, either to him, or any other of her amorous suiters) answering him in this manner. Lord *Ocharus*, it might suffice you, that your importunity made me forsake my Fathers Court, and causeth me to live in this abased condition, which I purpose to prosecute all my time; or so long (at least) as you, and such as you are, pursue me so fondly as you have presumed to doe. For I am resolved, never to favour you any otherwise, than hitherto I have done; desiring you therefore, that *Seriftha* wanting an Interpreter to tell you her will, you would now receive sooner her own mouth, determining sooner to die, than alter a jot of her intended purpose.

Ocharus hearing this unwelcome answer, was even upon the point to have slain himself: but yet, not to lose the name of a valiant man, or to be thought of an effeminate or cowardly spirit, that a woman should force him to an act, so far unfitting for a man of his rank, he tooke his leave of her, solemnely promising, not to forget her further pursuite, but at all times to obey her so long as he lived, although her command was very hard for him to endure. So he departed

thence, not unto the Court, she being not there, that hil the power to enjoyne his presence: but home to his owne house, where he was no sooner arrived, but he began to wax weary of his former folly: accusing himselfe of great indiscretion, for spending so much time in vain, and in her service who utterly despised him, and all his endevours which he undertook. He began to accuse her of ingratitude, laying over much respect upon her virtue, to have no feeling at all of his loyall sufferings; but meerly made a mockery of his martyrdome. Hereupon, he concluded to give over all further affection, to languish no longer for her sake, who hated him and all his actions.

While he continued in these melancholy passions, the Princesse, who all this while had persisted in such strict severity, as astonished the courages of her stoutest servants; considering (more deliberately) on the sincere affection of *Ocharus*, and that virtue onely made him the friend to her modesty, and not wanton or lascivious appetite; she felt a willing readyneesse in her soul, to gratifie him in some worthy manner, and to recompense some part of his travels. Which to effect, she resolved to follow him (in some counterfeit habite) even to the place of his owne abiding, to try, if easily he could take knowledge of her, whom so lately he saw in the garments of a Shepheardesse. Being thus minded, she went to her Mistresse whom she served, and who had likewise seen Lord *Ocharus* (of whom shee had perfect knowledge) when hee conferred with the Shepherddesse, and enquiring the cause, why he resorted in that manner to her: *Sariftha* returned her this answer.

Mistresse, I make no doubt but you will be somewhat amazed, and (perhaps) can hardly credit which you hear, that she who now serveth you in the poor degree of Shepheardesse, is the onely daughter to *Siwalde* King of the Danes: for whose love, so many great Lords have continually laboured; and that I only attracted hither *Ocharus* the noble Son of valiant *Hebinus*, to wander in these solitary desarts, to find out her that fled from him, and held him in as great disdain, as I did all the rest of his fellow rivals. But if my words may not herein sufficiently assure you, I would advise you to send where *Ocharus* dwelleth, and there make further enquiry of him, to the end that you may not imagine me a lyer. If my speeches doe otherwise prevaile with you, and you remain assured, that I am she, whom your noble neighbour so dearly affecteth, albeit I

nere[st]

never made any account at all of him: then I doe earnestly intreat you, so much to stand my friend, as to provide some convenient means for me, whereby I may passe unknown to the Castle of *Ocharus*, to revenge my selfe upon his civill honesty, and smile at him hereafter, if he prove not so cleerly sighted, as to know her being so neer him, whom he vaunteth to love above all women else.

The good Countrey woman hearing these words, and perceiving that she had the Princesse in her house, of whose speeches she made not any doubt, in regard of her stout countenance, gravity, and fair demeanor; began to relish something in her minde, far differing from matter of common understanding, and therefore roundly replyed in this Kinde of language.

Madam, (for Servant I may no longer call you) I make no question to the contrary, but that you are derived of high birth, having observed your behaviour, and womanly carriage. And so much the more I remain assured thereof, having seen such great honour done unto you, by that worthy Warriour *Ocharus*: wherefore it lyeth not in my power, to impeach your designes, much lesse to talk of your longer service, because you are the Princesse *Seriftha*, whom I am to perform all humble duty unto, as being one of your meanest subjects. And although you were not she, yet would I not presume any way to offend you, in regard of the true and virtuous love, which that good Knight *Ocharus* seemeth to bear you. If my company be needfull for you; I beseech you to accept it: if not, take whatsoever is mine, which may any way stead you; for, to make you passe unknown, I can and will provide sufficiently, even to your owne contentment, and in such strange manner, as *Ocharus* (were he never so cleerly sighted) should be deceived, you being attired in those fashion garments which here in these parts are usually worne.

Seriftha being wondrously joyfull at her answer, suffer'd her to paint, or rather to soil her fair face, with the juyce of divers herbs, and rootes, and cloathed her in such an habite as those Women use to weare that live in the mountains of *Norway*, upon the sea-coast fronting *Great Britaine*. Being thus disguised, confidently shee went, to beguile the eye of her dearest friend, and so to return back againe from him, having afforded him such a secret favour, in requitall of his honourable services; delivering her out of so great a danger, and comming to visite him in so solitary a

life. Nor would she have the womans company any further, than till she came within the sight of *Ocharus* his Castle; where when she was arrived (he being then absent) the mother unto the noble Gentleman gave her courteous welcome; and, notwithstanding her grosse and homely outward appearance, yet she collected by her countenance, that there was a matter of much more worth in her, than to be a woman of base breeding.

When *Ocharus* was returned home, he received advertisement by his Mother concerning the arrivall of this stranger, when as suddenly his soule halfe perswaded him of some kinde courtesie to proceed from his sweet rebell, pretending now some fained excuse, in recompense of all his travels, and passed honest offices, observing all her actions and gestures, her wonted rigour never bending one jot, or gave way to her eye to look upon any man; he grew the better assured, that she was the Daughter to King *Siwalde*. Yet faining to take no knowledge thereof, he bethought himself of a quaint policy, whereby to make tryall, whether secret kindnesse had conducted this Lady thither or no, to conclude his torments, and give a finall end to his grievous afflictions.

Upon a watch-word given to his Mother, he pretended, and so caused it to be noysed through the house, that he was to marry a very honorable Lady; which the constant and chaste Maid verily beleeved; and therefore gave the more diligent attendance (as a newcome servant) to see all things in due decency, as no one could expresse her selfe more ready, because shee esteemed him above all other men. Yet such was the obstinate opinion she conceived of her own preciseneſſe, as she would rather suffer all the flames of love, than expresse the least shew of desire to any man living. Nevertheless, she was inwardly offended, that any other should have the honour to make her vaunt of enjoying *Ocharus*; whom (indeed) she coveted, and thought him onely worthy in her heart, to be Son in law to the King of *Denmark*.

Now, as the Mother was seriously busied in preparing the Castle, for receiving the pretended Bride; she imployed her new Maid (*Seriftha* I mean) as busily as any of all the rest. In the mean while, *Ocharus* was laid upon a bed, well noting all her carriage and behaviour, she having a lighted candle in her hand, without any Candlestick to hold it in. As all the servants (both men and maids) were running hastily from place to

place

place, to carry such occasions as they were commanded, the candle was consumed so neer to *Seriftha*'s fingers, that it burned her hand. She, not to fail a jot in her height of minde, and to declare that her courage was invincible; was so far off from casting away the small snuffe which offended her, that she rather grasp't it the more strongly, even to the enflaming of her owne flesh, which gave light to the rest about their businesse. A matter (almost) as marvellous, as the act of the noble *Romane*, who gave his hand to be burned in presence of the *Tuscan* King, that had besieged *Rome*. Thus this Lady would needs make it apparently known, by this couragious act of hers, that her heart could not be enflamed, nor conquered by all the fires of concupiscence, in suffering so stoutly and couragiously the burning of this materiall fire.

Ocharus, who (as we have already said) observed every thing that *Seriftha* did; perceiving that she spake not one word, albeit her hand burned in such fierce manner, was much astonished at her sprightly minde. And as he was about to advise her, to hurl away the fire so much offending her; Curiosity (meerly naturall unto women) made the Lady lift up her eyes, to see (by stealth) whether her friend had noted her invincible constancy, or no. Whereby *Ocharus* won the honour of his long expected victory; and leaping from off the bed, he ran to embrace her, not with any such fear as he had formerly used, in not daring so much as to touch her; but boldly now clasping his armes about her, he said. At this instant Madam, the King your Fathers decree is fully accomplished, for I am the first man that ever lookt you in the face, and you are onely mine without making any longer resistance. You are the Princely Lady and Wife by me so constantly loved and desired, whom I have followed with such painfull travell, exposing my life to infinite perils in your service: you have seen and lookt on him; who never craved any thing of you, but onely this favour, whereof you cannot bereave me again, because the gods themselves, at such time as I least expected it, have bestown it on me, as my deserved recompense and worthy reward.

In the delivery of these words, he kissed and embraced her a thousand times, she using no great resistance against him, but onely as somewhat offended with her self, either for being so rash in looking on him, or else for delaying his due merit so long; or rather, because with her good will she had faln into the transgression.

she declared no violent or contending motion, as loath to continue so long in his armes; but rather evident signes of hearty contentment, yet in very bashful and modest manner, willing enough to accept his loving kindnesse, yet not wandring from her wonted chaste carriage. He being favourably excused, for the outward expression of his amorous behaviour to her, and certified withall, that since the time freeing her from the wretch, who sought the violating of her chastity, she had entirely respected him, (albeit, to shun suspicion of lightnesse, and to win more assurance, of what she credited sufficiently already, she continued her stiffe opinion against him) yet alwayes this resolution was set down in her soule, never (with her will) to have any other husband but *Ocharus*, who (above all other) had best deserved her, by his generosity, virtue, manly carriage, and valiancy; whereof he might the better assure himself, because (of her owne voluntary disposition) she followed to finde him out, not for any other occasion, but to revenge her self (by this honest Office) for all that he had done or undertaken, to win the grace and love of the King of *Denmarks* daughter, to whom he presented such dutyfull service.

Ocharus, who would not lose this happinesse to be made King of the Northerne Islands, with a thankfull heart, accepted all her excuses. And being desirous to waste no longer time in vain, lest Fortune should raise some new stratagem agianst him, to dispossesse him of so faire a felicity; left off his counterfeit intended marriage, and effected this in good earnest, and was wedded to his most esteemed *Seristha*. Not long had these Lovers lived in the lawfull and sacred rites of marriage, but King *Sivalde* was advertised, that his daughter had given her consent to *Ocharus*, and received him as her noble Husband. The party was not a jot displeasing to him, he thought him to be a worthy Son in Law, and the condition did so sufficiently excuse the match; onely herein lay the errour and offence, that the marriage was solemnized without his knowledge and consent, he being not called thereto, or so much as acquainting him therewith, which made him condemne *Ocharus* of over-bold arrogancy, he being such a great and powerfull King, to bee so lightly respected by his Subjects, and especially in the marriage of his Daughter.

But *Seristha*, who was now metamorphosed from a Maid to a Wife, and had lain a few nights by the side of a Souldier, was become much more valiant and adventu-

rous

rous than she was before. She took the matter in hand, went to her Father, who welcommed her most lovingly, and so pleasing were her speeches, carried with wit and womanly discretion, that nothing wanted to approve what she had done. Matters which he had never known, or so much as heard of, were now openly revealed; how *Ocharus* had delivered her from the Ravisher, what worthy respect hee then used towards her, and what honour he extended to her in the deserts, where she tended her flock as a Shepheardesse, with many other honourable actions beside: that the Kings anger became mildely qualified; and so far he entred into affection, that he would not doe any thing thence-forward, without the counsell and advice of his Son in Law, whom so highly he esteemed, and liked so respectively of him, and his race, that his Queen dying, he marryed with the Sister to *Ocharus*, going hand in hand with the gentle and modest Princesse *Smitha*.

This Novell of *Dioneus*, was commended by all the company, and so much the rather, because it was free from all folly and obscœneneſse. The Queen perceiving, that as the Tale was ended, so her dignity must now be expired; she took the crown of Laurell from off her head, and graciously placed it on the head of *Philostratus*, saying; The worthy discourse of *Dioneus*, being out of his wonted wanton element, causeth me (at the resignation of mine Authority) to make choyce of him as our next Commander, who is best able to order and instruct us all; and so I yeeld both my place and honour to *Philostratus*, I hope with the good liking of all our assistants: as plainly appeareth by their instant carriage towards him, with all their heartyest love and suffrages.

Whereupon *Philostratus*, beginning to consider on the charge committed to his care, called the Master of the houshold, to know in what estate all matters were, because where any defect appeared, every thing might be the sooner remedyed, for the better satisfaction of the company, during the time of his authority. Then returning back to the assembly, thus he began. Lovely Ladies, I would have you to know, that since the time of ability in me, to distinguish between good and evil, I have alwayes been subject (perhaps by the means of some beauty here amongst us) to the proud and imperious dominion of Love, with expression of all duty, humility, and most intimate desire to please: yet all hath proved to no purpose, but still I have been

rejected for some other, whereby my condition hath fain from ill to worse, and so still it is likely, even to the hour of my death. In which respect, it best pleaseth me, that our conferences to morrow, shall extend to no other argument, but onely such cases as are most comfortable to my calamity, namely, of such, whose love hath had unhappy ending, because I await no other issue of mine; nor willingly would I be called by any other name, but *The miserable and unfortunate Lover.*

Having thus spoken, he arose again; granting leave to the rest, to recreate themselves till supper time. The Garden was very fair and spacious, affording large limits for their severall walks; the Sun being already so low descended, that it could not be offensive to any one: the Conies, Kids, and young Hindes skipping every where about them, to their no mean pleasure and contentment. *Dioneus* and *Fiametta*, sate singing together, of *Messire Guiglielmo*, and the Lady of *Virtue*. *Philomena* and *Pamphilus* playing at the Chesse, all sporting themselves as best they pleased. But the hour of Supper being come, and the Tables covered about the fair fountain, they sate downe, and supp'd in most loving manner. Then *Philostratus*, not to swerve from the course which had been observed by the Queens before him, so soon as the Tables were taken away, gave command, that Madam *Lauretta* should begin the dance, and likewise to sing a Song. My gracious Lord (quoth she) I can skill of no other Songs, but onely a piece of mine owne, which I have already learned by heart, and may well beseem this assembly: if you please to allow of that, I am ready to perform it with all obedience. Lady, rep'yed the King, you your selfe being so fair and lovely, so needs must be whatsoever commeth from you, therefore let us hear such as you have. Madam *Lauretta* giving instruction to the Chorus prepared, and began in this manner.

The Song.

NO soule so comfortlesse,
Hath more cause to expresse,
Like woe and heavinesse,
As I poore amorous Maid.

He that did form the Heavens and every Star,
Made me as best him pleased,
Lovely and gracious, no Element at jar,

Or

Or else in gentle breasts to move war,
But to have strifes appeased
Where Beauties eye should make the deepest scar.
And yet when all things are consest,
Never was any soul distrest,
Like me poor amorous Maid.
No soule so comfortlesse, &c.

There was a time, when once I was held dear,
Blest were those happy dayes,
Numberlesse Love-suites whispered in mine ear,
All of fair hope, but none of desperate fear;
And all sung Beauties praise.
Why should black clouds obscure so bright a clear?
And why should others swim in joy,
And no heart drowned in annoy,
Like mine poor amorous Maid?
No soul so comfortlesse, &c.

Well may I curse that sad and dismall day,
When in unkinde exchange,
Another beauty did my hopes betray;
And stole my dearest Love from me away:
Which I thought very strange,
Considering vows were past, and what else may
Assure a loyall Maidens trust.
Never was Lover so unjust,
Like mine poor amorous Maid.
No soule so comfortlesse, &c.

Come then kinde Death, and finish all my woes,
Thy help is now the best.
Come lovely Nymphs, lend hands mine eyes to close,
And let him wander whereseere he goes,
Vaunting of mine unrest;
Beguiling others by his treacherous shews,
Graue on my Monument,
No true love was worse spent,
Than mine poor amorous Maid.
No soul so comfortlesse, &c.

So did Madam *Lauretta* finish her Song, which being well observed of them all, was understood by some in divers kindes, some alluding it one way, and others according to their own apprehensions, but all consenting that both it was an excellent Ditty, well devised, and most sweetly sung. Afterward, lighted Torches being brought, because the stars had already richly spangled all the Heavens, and the fit hour of rest approaching: the King commanded them all to their Chambers, where we mean to leave them till the next morning.

The Fourth Day.

Wherein all the severall Discourses, are under the Government of honourable Philostratus : *And concerning such persons whose loves have had successelesse ending.*

The Induction unto the ensuing Novells.

MOst worthy Ladies, I have alwayes heard, as by the sayings of the Judicious, so also by mine owne observation and reading, that the impetuous and violent windes of envy, doe seldome blow turbulently, but on the highest towers and tops of the trees most eminently advanced. Yet (in mine opinion) I have found my selfe much deceived; because, by striving with my very utmost endevour, to shun the outrage of those implacable windes; I have laboured to goe, not onely by plain and even pathes, but likewise through the deepest vallies. As very easily may be seen and observed in the reading of these few small Novels, which I have written, not onely in our vulgar *Florentine* prose, without any ambitious title, but also in a most humble stile, so low and gentle as possibly I could. And although I have been rudely shaken, yea, almost half unrooted, by the extreame agitation of those blustring winds, and torn in pieces by the base backbiter, Envy: yet have I not (for all that) discontinued, or broken any part of mine intended enterprize. Wherefore, I can sufficiently witnesse (by mine owne comprehension) the saying so much observed by the wise, to be most true: That nothing is without Envie in the world, but misery onely.

Among

Among varietie of opinions, fair Ladies, ſome ſeeing theſe Novelties, ſpared not to ſay; that I have been over-pleaſing to you, and wandred too farre from mine owne reſpect, imbaſing my credit and repute, by delighting my ſelfe too curiouſly, for the fitting of your humours, and have extolled your worth too much, with addition of worſe ſpeeches, than I mean to utter. Others, ſeeming to expreſſe more maturity of judgment, have likewiſe ſaid, That it was very unſuitable for my yeers, to meddle with Womens wanton pleaſures, or contend to delight you by the very leaſt of my labors. Many more making ſhew of affecting my good fame and eſteem, ſay; I had done much more wiſely, to have kept me with the Muſes at *Parnaſſus*, than to confound my ſtudies with ſuch effeminate follies. Some other beſide, ſpeaking more deſpightfully than diſcreetly, ſaid; I had declared more hunanity, in ſeeking meanes for mine owne maintenance, and therewith to ſupport my continuall neceſſities, than to glut the world with gulleries, and feed my hopes with nothing but winde. And others, to calumniate my travels, would make you beleeve, that ſuch matters as I have ſpoken of, are meerly diſguiſed by me, and figured in a quite contrary nature, quite from the courſe as they are related. Whereby you may perceive (virtuous Ladies) how while I laboured in your ſervice, I am agitated and moleſted with theſe blatterings, and bitten even to the bare bones, by the ſharp and venemous teeth of envy; all which (as heaven beſt knoweth) I gladly endure, and with good courage.

Now, albeit it belongeth onely to you, to defend me in this deſperate extremity, yet, notwithſtanding all their utmoſt malice, I will make no ſpare of my beſt abilities, and, without any anſwering them any otherwiſe than is fitting, will quietly keep their ſlanders from mine ears, with ſome ſleight reply, yet not deſerving to be dreamt on. For I apparently perceive, that (having not already attained to the third part of my paines) they are grown to ſo great a number, and preſume very farre upon my patience: they may increaſe, except they be repulſed in the beginning, to ſuch an infinity before I can reach to the end, as with their very leaſt pains taking they will ſink me to the bottomleſſe depth, if your ſacred forces (which are great indeed) may not ſerve for me in their reſiſtance. But before I come to anſwer any one of them, I will relate a Tale in mine own favour, yet not a whole Tale, becauſe it ſhall not appear, that I purpoſe to mingle

mine,

mine, among those which are to proceed from a company so commendable. Onely I will report a parcell thereof, to the end, that what remaineth untold, may sufficiently expresse, it is not to be numbred among the rest to come.

By way then of familiar discourse, and speaking to my malicious detractors, I say, that a long time since, there lived in our City, a Citizen who was named *Philippo Balduccio*, a man but of mean condition, yet very wealthy, well qualified, and expert in many things appertaining unto his calling. He had a wife whom he loved most entirely, as she did him, leading together a sweet and peaceable life, studying on nothing more, than how to please each other mutually. It came to passe, that as all flesh must, the good woman left this wretched life for a better, leaving one onely Son to her husband, about the age of two yeares. The Husband remained so disconsolate for the losse of his kinde wife, as no man possibly could be more sorrowfull, because he had lost the onely jewel of his joy. And being thus divided from the company which he most esteemed, he determined also to separate himself from the world, addicting all his endevours to the service of God, and applying his young Son likewise to the same holy exercises. Having given away all his goods for Gods sake, he departed to the Mountain *Asisis*, where he made him a small Cell, and lived there with his little Son, onely upon charitable almes, with abstinence and prayer, forbearing to speak of any worldly occasions, or letting the Lad see any vain sight: but conferred with him continually, on the glories of eternall life, of God, and his Saints, and teaching him nothing else but devout prayers, leading this kinde of life for many years together, not permitting him ever to goe forth out of his Cell, or shewing him any other but himselfe.

The good old man used divers times to goe to *Florence*, where having received (according to his opportunities) the almes of divers well disposed people, he returned back againe to his Hermitage. It fortuned, that the Boy being now about eighteen years old, and his Father growne very aged; he demanded of him one day, whither he went? Wherein the old man truely resolved him: whereupon, the youth thus spake unto him: Father, you are now growne very aged, and hardly can indure such painfull travell: why doe you not let me goe to *Florence*, that by making me known to your well disposed friends, such as are devoutly

addicted

addicted both to God and you; I, who am young, and better able to endure travell than you are, may go thither to supply our neceſſities, and you take your eaſe in the mean while? The aged man, perceiving the growth of his Son, and thinking him to be ſo well inſtructed in Gods ſervice, as no worldly vanities could eaſily allure him from it; did not diſlike the Lads honeſt motion, but when he went next to *Florence*, took him thither along with him.

When he was there, and had ſeen the goodly Palaces, Houſes, and Churches, with all other ſights to be ſeen in ſo pompous a City: he began greatly to wonder at them, as one that had never ſeen them before, at leaſt, within the compaſſe of his remembrance; demanding many things of his Father, both what they were, and how they were named: wherein the old man ſtill reſolved him. The anſwers ſeemed to content him highly, and cauſed him to proceed on in further queſtions, according ſtill as they found freſh occaſions: till at the laſt, they met with a troop of very beautifull women, going on in ſeemly manner together, as returning back from a Wedding. No ſooner did the youth behold them, but he demanded of his Father what things they were; whereto the old man replyed thus: Son, caſt downe thy lookes unto the ground, and doe not ſeem to ſee them at all, becauſe they are bad things to behold. Bad things Father? anſwered the Lad. How doe you call them? The good old man, not to quicken any concupiſcible appetite in the young boy; or any other inclinable deſire to ought but goodneſſe; would not term them by their proper name of Women, but told him that they were called young Gozlings.

Here grew a matter of no mean marvell, that he who had never ſeen any women before now; appeared not to reſpect the fair Churches, Palaces, goodly Horſes, Gold, Silver, or any thing elſe which he had ſeen; but, as fixing his affection onely upon this ſight, ſuddenly ſaid to the old man: Good Father do ſo much for me, as let me have one of theſe Gozlings. Alas, Son (replyed the Father) hold thy peace I pray thee, and do not deſire any ſuch naughty thing. Then by way of demand, he thus proceeded, ſaying: Father, are theſe naughty things made of themſelves? Yes Son, anſwered the old man. I know not Father (quoth the Lad) what you mean by naughtyneſſe, nor why theſe goodly things ſhould be ſo badly termed, but in my judgement, I have not ſeen any thing ſo faire and

pleaſing

pleasing in mine eye, as these are, who excell those painted Angels, which here in the Churches you have shewn me. And therefore Father, if ever you love me, or have any care of me, let me have one of these Gozlings home to your Cell, where we can make means sufficient for their feeding. I will not (said the Father) be so much thine enemy, because, neither thou, or I, can rightly skill of their feeding. Perceiving presently, that Nature had farre greater power than his Sons capacity and understanding; which made him repent, for fondly bringing his Sonne to Florence.

Having gone so farre in this fragment of a Tale, I am content to pause here, and will return againe to them of whom I spake before; I mean my envyous depravers: such as have said (faire Ladies) that I am double blame-worthy, in seeking to please you, and that you are also over-pleasing to me; which freely confesse before all the world, that you are singularly pleasing to me, and I have stroven how to please you effectually. I would demand of them (if they seem so much amazed hereat) considering, I never knew what belonged to true love kisses, amorous embraces, and their delectable fruition, so often received from your graces; but onely that I have yet seen, and do daily behold your commendable conditions, admired beauties, noble adornments by nature, and (above all the rest) your womanly and honest conversation. If he that was nourished, bred, and educated, on a savage solitary Mountaine, within the confines of a poore small Cell, having no other company than his Father: If such a one, I say, upon the very first sight of your sexe, could so constantly confesse that Women are onely worthy of affection, and the object which (above all things else) he most desired; why should these contumelious spirits so murmure against me, tear my credit with their teeth, and wound my reputation to the death, because your virtues are pleasing to me, and I endevour likewise to please you with my utmost paines? Never had the Jauspicious heavens allowed me life, but onely to love you; and from my very infancy, mine intentions have alwayes been that way bent: feeling what vertue flowed from your fair eyes, understanding the mellifluous accents of your speech, whereto the enkindled flames of your sighes gave no mean grace. But remembring especially, that nothing could so please a Hermite, as your divine perfections, an unnurtured Lad, without understanding,

ſtanding, and little differing from a meer brutiſh beaſt: undoubtedly, whoſoever loveth not women, and deſireth to be affected of them againe: may well be ranked among Women-haters, ſpeaking out of cankered ſpleen, and utterly ignorant of the ſecret power (as alſo the virtue) of naturall affection, whereof they ſeem ſo careleſſe, the like am I of their depraving.

Concerning them that touch me with mine age; Do not they know, that although Beeks have white heads, yet the blades of them are alwayes green? But referring them to their flouts and taunts, I anſwer, that I ſhall never hold it any diſparagement to me, ſo long as my life endureth, to delight my ſelf with thoſe exerciſes which *Guido Cavalconti*, and *Dante Alghieri*, already aged, as alſo *Meſſer Cino da Piſtoia*, older than either of them both, held it to be their chiefeſt honour. And were it not wandring too farre from our preſent argument, I would alledge Hiſtories to approve my words full of very ancient and famous men, who in the ripeſt maturity of all their time, were carefully ſtudious for the contenting of women, albeit theſe cockbraines neither know the way how to doe it, nor are ſo wiſe as to learn it.

Now, for my dwelling at *Parnaſſus* with the Muſes, I confeſſe their counſell to be very good: but we cannot alwayes continue with them, nor they with us. And yet nevertheleſſe, when any man departeth from them, they delighting themſelves, to ſee ſuch things as may be thought like them, (for like will to like) doe not therein deſerve to be blamed. We finde it recorded, that the Muſes were Women, and albeit Women cannot equall the performance of the Muſes, yet in their very prime aſpect, they have a lively reſemblance with the Muſes: ſo that, if women were pleaſing for nothing elſe, yet they ought to be generally pleaſing in that reſpect. Beſide all this, Women have been the occaſion of my compoſing a thouſand verſes, whereas the Muſes never cauſed me to make ſo much as one. True it is, that they gave me good aſſiſtance, and directed me in writing of theſe Nove's. And how baſely ſoever they judge of my ſtudies, yet have the Muſes never ſcorned to dwell with me, perhaps for the reſpective ſervice, and honorable reſemblance of thoſe Ladies with themſelves, whoſe virtues I have not ſpared to commend by them. Wherefore in the compoſing of theſe varieties, I have not ſtrayed ſo far from *Parnaſſus*, nor the Muſes; as in their ſilly conjectures they imagine.

But

But what shall I say to them, who take so great compassion on my poverty, as they advise me to get some thing whereon to make my living? Assuredly I know not what to say in this case, except by due consideration made with my selfe, how they could answer me, if necessity should drive me to crave kindnesse of them; questionlesse then would they say: Goe, seek comfort among thy fables and follies. Yet would I have them know, that poor Poets have found more among their fables and fictions, than many rich men ever could do by ransacking all their bags of treasure. Beside, many other might be spoken of, who made their age and times to flourish, meerly by their inventions and fables: whereas on the contrary, a great number of other busier brains, seeking to gain more than would serve them to live on; have utterly run upon their owne ruine, and overthrown themselves for ever. What shall I say more? To such men as either are so suspicious of their owne charity, or of my necessity, whensoever it shall happen: I can answer (I thank my God for it) with the Apostle; I know how to abound, and how to abate, yea, how to endure both prosperity and want, and therefore, let no man be more carefull of me, than I of my selfe.

For them that are so inquisitive into my discourse, to have a further construction of them, than agrees with my meauing, or their owne good manners, taxing me with writing one thing, but intending another; I could wish, that their wisdome would extend so far, as to compare them with their originals, to find them a jot discordant from my writing; and then I would freely confesse, that they had some reason to reprehend me, and I would endevour to make them amends. But untill they can touch me with any thing else, but words onely; I must let them wander in their owne giddy opinions, and follow the course projected to my self, saying of them, as they doe of me.

Thus holding them all sufficiently answered for this time, I say (most worthy Ladies) that by heavens affiance and yours, whereunto I onely lean: I will proceed on, armed with patience; and turning my back against these impetuous windes, let them breath till they burst, because I see nothing can happen to harm me, but onely the venting of their malice. For the roughest blast doth but raise the smallest dust from off the ground, driving it from one place to another; or, carrying it up to the aire, many times it falleth down again on mens heads, yea, upon the Crowns of Emperors

and

and Kings, and ſometimes on the higheſt Palaces and tops of Towers; from whence if it chance to deſcend again by contrary blaſts, it cannot light any lower than from whence it came at the firſt. And therefore, if ever I ſtrove to pleaſe you with my uttermoſt abilities in any thing, ſurely I muſt now contend to expreſſe it more than ever: For I know right well, that no man can ſay with reaſon, except ſome ſuch as my ſelf, who love and honour you, that wee doe any thing otherwiſe than as nature hath ordained us; and to reſiſt her laws requires a greater and more powerfull ſtrength than ours: and the contender againſt her ſupreme priviledges, have either laboured meerly in vaine, or elſe incurred their owne bane. Which ſtrength, I freely confeſſe my ſelfe not to have, neither covet to be poſſeſſed of it in this caſe: but if I had it, I would rather lend it to ſome other, than any way to uſe it on mine owne behalf. Wherefore I would adviſe them that thus check and controule me, to give over and be ſilent; and if their cold humours cannot learn to love, let them live ſtill in their froſty complexion, delighting themſelves in their corrupted appetites; ſuffering me to enjoy mine owne, for the little while I have to live; and this is all the kindneſſe I require of them.

But now it is time (bright beauties) to return whence we parted, and to follow our former order begun, becauſe it may ſeem we have wandred too far. By this time the Sun had chaſed the Star-light from the heavens, and the ſhadie moyſture from the ground, when *Philoſtratus* the King being riſen, all the company aroſe likewiſe. When being come into the goodly Garden, they ſpent the time in variety of ſports, dining where they had ſupt the night before. And after the Sun was at his higheſt, and they had refreſhed their ſpirits with a little ſlumbring, they ſat down (according to cuſtome) about the fair Fountain. And then the King commanded Madam *Fiammetta*, that ſhe would give beginning to the dayes Novels; when ſhe, without any longer delaying, began in this manner.

Tancrede, *Prince of* Salerne, *cauſed the amorous friend of his daughter to be ſlain, and ſent her his heart in a cup of Gold: which afterwards ſhe ſteeped in an impoyſoned water, and then drinking it ſo dyed.*

The firſt Novell.

Wherein is declared the power of Love, and their cruelty juſtly repre-

reprehended, who imagine to make the vigour therof [illegible] by abuſing or killing one of the Lovers.

OUr King (moſt Noble and virtuous Ladies) hath this day given us a ſubject, very rough and ſtearne to diſcourſe on, and ſo much the rather, if we conſider that we are come hither to be merry and pleaſant, where ſad Tragicall reports are no way ſuitable, eſpecially, by reviving the tears of others, to bedew our own cheeks withall. Nor can any ſuch argument be ſpoken of, without moving compaſſion both in the reporters and hearers. But, (perhaps) it was his Highneſſe plea-



ſure, to moderate the delights which we have already had

sad. Or whatsoever else hath provoked him thereto, seeing it is not lawfull for me, to alter or contradict his appointment; I will recount an accident very pityfull, or rather most unfortunate, and well worthy to be graced with our tears.

Tancredo, Prince of *Salerne* (which City, before the Consuls of *Rome* held dominion in that part of *Italy*, stood free, and thence (perchance) took the modern title of a Principality) was a very humane Lord, and of ingenuous nature; if, in his elder yeers, he had not soyled his hands in the blood of Lovers, especially one of them, being both neer and deer unto him. So it fortuned, that during the whole life time of this Prince, he had but one onely daughter (albeit it had been much better if he had had none at all) whom he so choycely loved and esteemed, as never was any childe more deerly affected of a Father: and so farre extended his over curious respect of her, as he would seldome admit her to be forth of his sight; neither would he suffer her to marry, although she had outstept (by divers yeers) the age meet for marriage. Nevertheless, at length he matched her with the Son to the Duke of *Capua*, who lived no long while with her; but left her in a widowed estate, and then she returned home to her father again.

This Lady, had all the most absolute perfections, both of favour and feature, as could be wished in any woman, young, quaintly disposed, and of admirable understanding, more (perhaps) than was requisite in so weak a body. Continuing thus in Court with the King her Father, who loved her beyond all his future hopes; like a Lady of great and glorious magnificence, she lived in all delights and pleasure. She well perceiving, that her Father thus exceeding in his affection to her, had no minde at all of remarrying her, and holding it most immodest in her, to sollicite him with any such suite: concluded in her mindes consultations, to make choyce of some one speciall friend or favourite (if Fortune would prove so furtherous to her) whom she might acquaint secretly, with her sober, honest, and familiar purpose. Her Fathers Court being much frequented, with plentifull accesse of brave Gentlemen, and others of inferiour quality, as commonly the Courts of Kings and Princes are, whose carriage and demeanor she very heedfully observed. There was a young Gentleman among all the rest, a servant to her Father, and named *Guiscardo*, a man not derived from any great descent by blood, yet much more Noble by

virtue

vertue and commendable behaviour, than appeared or was to be observed and found in any of the other: none pleased her opinion, like as he did; so that by often noting his parts and perfections, her affections being but a glowing spark at the first, grew like a Bavin to take flame, yet kept so closely as possibly she could; as Ladies are very wary enough in their love.

The young Gentleman, though poor, being neither block nor dullard, perceiving what he made no outward shew of, and understood himselfe so sufficiently, that holding it no mean happinesse to be affected by her, he thought it very base and cowardly in him, if he should not expresse the like to her again. So loving mutually (yet secretly) in this manner, and she coveting nothing more, than to have private conference with him, yet not daring to trust any one with so important a matter, at length she devised a new stratagem, to compasse her longing desire, and acquaint him with her private purpose, which proved to be in this manner. Shee wrote a Letter concerning what was the next day to be done, for their secret meeting together; and conveying it within the joynt of an hollow Cane, in jesting manner threw it to *Guistardo*, saying: Let your man use this for a pair of bellowes, when he meaneth to make fire in your Chamber. *Guiscardo* taking up the Cane, and considering with himselfe, that neither was it given, or the words thus spoken, but doubtlesse on some important occasion; went unto his lodging with the Cane, where viewing it respectively, he found it to be cleft, and opening it with his knife, found there the written Letter enclosed.

After he had read it, and well considered on the service therein concerned, he was the most joyfull man of the world, and began to contrive the aptest means, for meeting with his gracious Mistresse, and according as she had given him direction. In a corner of the Kings Palace, it being seated on a rising hill, a Cave had long been made in the body of the same hill, which received no light into it, but by a small spiracle or vent-loop made out ingeniously on the hills side: And because it had not been a long time frequented, by the accesse of any body, that vent-light was overgrown with briars and bushes, which almost engirt it round about. No one could descend into this Cave or vault, but onely by a secret paire of stairs, answering to a lower Chamber of the Palace, and very neer to the

the Princesse lodging, as beirg altogether at her command, by reason of a strong and barred defensible dore, whereby to mount or descend at her pleasure. And both the Cave it selfe, as also the degrees conducting down into it, were now so quite worn out of memory (in regard it had not been visited by any one in long time before) as no man remembred that there was any such thing.

But Love, from whose bright discerning eyes, nothing can so closely be concealed, but at the length it commeth to light, had made this amorous Lady mindfull thereof, and because she would not be discovered in her intention, many dayes together, her soul became perplexed; by what meanes that strong dore might best be opened, before she could compasse to perform it. But after that she had found out the way, and gone down her self alone into the Cave; observing the loop light, and had made it commodious for her purpose, she gave knowledge thereof to *Guiscardo*, to have him devise an apt course for his descent, acquainting him truely with the height, and how farre it was distant from the ground within. After he had found the souspitall in the hills side, and given it a large entrance for his safer passage, he provided a ladder of cords, with steps sufficient for his descending and ascending, as also a wearing suit made of leather, to keep his skin unscratched of the thorns, and to avoyd all suspicion of his resorting thither. In this manner went he to the said loophole the night following, and having fastened one end of his corded ladder, to the strong stump of a tree, being close by it; by means of the said ladder, he descended down into the cave, and there attended the comming of his Lady.

She, on the morrow morning, pretended to her waiting woman, that she was scarcely well, and therefore would not be diseased the most part of that day; commanded them to leave her alone in her Chamber, and not return untill she called for them, locking the dore her self for the better security. Then opened she the dore of the Cave, and going downe the staires, found there her amorous friend *Guiscardo*, whom shee saluted with a chaste and modest kisse; causing him to ascend up the staires with her into her Chamber. This long desired, and now obtained meeting, caused the two dearly affected lovers, in kinde discourse of amorous argument (without incivill or rude demeanor) to spend there the most part of that day, to their hearts joy and mutuall contentment. And having conclude

od

on their often meeting there, in this concealed sort; *Guiscardo* went downe into the Cave again, the Princesse making the dore fast after him, and then went forth among her Women. And so in the night season, *Guiscardo* ascended up again by his Ladder of cords, and covering the loop-hole with brambles and bushes, returned (unseen of any) to his owne lodging: the cave being afterward guilty of their often meeting there in this manner.

But Fortune who hath alwayes been a fatall enemy to Lovers stolen felicities, became envyous of their thus secret meeting, and overthrew (in an instant) all their poor happinesse, by an accident most spightfull and malicious: the King had used divers dayes before dinner time, to resort all alone to his daughters chamber, there conversing with her in most loving manner. One unhappy day among the rest, when the Princesse, being named *Ghismonda*, was sporting in her private Garden among her Ladies, the King (at his wonted time) went to his daughters chamber, being neither heard nor seen by any. Nor would he have his daughter called from her pleasure, but finding the windowes fast shut, and the Curtains close drawn about the bed; he sate down in a chaire behinde it, and leaning his head upon the bed, his body being covered with the curtain, as if he hid himselfe purposely; he mused on so many matters till at last he fell asleep.

It hath been observed as an ancient Adage, that when disasters are ordained to any one, commonly they prove to be inevitable, as poor *Ghismonda* could witnesse too well. For while the King thus slept, shee having (unluckily) appointed another meeting with her friendly Lover *Guiscardo*, left her Gentlewomen in the Garden, and stealing softly into her Chamber, having made all fast and sure, for being descryed by any person, opened the dore to *Guiscardo*, who stood there ready on the staire-head, awaiting his entrance, and, they siting downe on the bed side (as they were wont to doe) began their usuall kinde of conference again, with sighes and loving kisses mingled among them. It chanced the King awaked, and both hearing and seeing this familiarity of *Guiscardo* with his daughter, he became greatly confounded with grief thereat. Once he intended, to cry out for help, to have them both there apprehended; but he held it a part of greater wisdome, to sit silent still, and (if he could) to keep himselfe so closely concealed: to the end, that he might the more secretly, and with far lesse disgrace

lesse disgrace to himselfe, perform what he had rashly intended to doe.

The poor discovered Lovers, having ended their amorous interparlance, without suspicion of the Kings being so neer in person, or any else, to betray their over confident trust, *Guiscardo* descended again into the Cave, and she leaving the Chamber, returned to her women in the Garden; all which *Tancredo* well observed, and in a rapture of fury departed (unseen) into his owne lodging. The same night, about the houre of mens first sleep, and according as he had given order; *Guiscardo* was apprehended, even as he was comming forth of the loope-hole, and in his homely leather habite. Very closely was he brought before the King, whose heart was swollen so great with grief, as hardly was he able to speak. Notwithstanding at the last he began thus. *Guiscardo*, the love and respect I have used towards thee, hath not deserved the shamefull wrong which thou hast requited me withall, and as I have seen with mine owne eyes this day. Whereunto *Guiscardo* could answer nothing else, but onely this: Alas my Lord! Love is able to do much more, than either you or I. Whereupon, *Tancredo* commanded, that he should be secretly well guarded, in a neer rejoyning Chamber, and on the next day. *Ghismonda* having (as yet) heard nothing hereof, the Kings brain being infinitely busied and troubled, after dinner, and as he often had used to doe: he went to his daughters Chamber, where calling for her, and shutting the dores closely to them, the tears trickling down his aged white beard, thus he spake to her.

Ghismonda, I was once grounded in a setled perswasion that I truely knew thy virtue, and honest integrity of life; and this beleef could never have been altered in me, by any sinister reports whatsoever, had not mine eyes seen, and mine ears heard the contrary. Nor did I so much as conceive a thought either of thine affection, or private conversing with any man, but onely he that was to be thy Husband. But now, I my selfe being able to avouch thy folly, imagine what an heart-break this will be to me, so long as life remaineth in this poor, weak, and aged body. Yet, if needs thou must have yeelded to this wanton weaknesse, I would thou hadst made choice of a man answerable to thy birth and Nobility: whereas on the contrary, among so many worthy spirits as resort to my Court, thou likest best to converse with that silly young man *Guiscardo*, one of very mean and base descent, and by me (even for

Gods sake) from his very youngest yeers, brought up to this instant in my Court; wherein thou hast given me such affliction of minde, and so overthrown my senses, as I cannot well imagine how I should deale with thee. For him, whom I have this night caused to be surprized, even as he came forth of your close contrived conveyance, and detain as my Prisoner, I have resolved how to proceed with him: but concerning thy selfe, mine oppressions are so many and violent, as I know not what to say of thee. One way thou hast meerly murthered the unfaigned affection I bare thee, as never any Father could expresse more to his Childe: and then again, thou hast kindled a most just indignation in mee, by thine immodest and wilfull folly, and whereas Nature pleadeth pardon for the one, yet Justice standeth up against the other, and urgeth cruell severity against thee: nevertheless, before I will determine upon any resolution, I come purposely first to hear thee speak, and what thou canst say for thy selfe, in a base case, so desperate and dangerous.

Having thus spoken, he hung down the head in his bosome, weeping as abundantly, as if he had been a childe severely disciplined. On the other side, *Ghismonda* hearing the speeches of her Father, and perceiving withall, that not onely her secret love was discovered, but also that *Guiscardo* was in close prison, the matter which most of all did torment her; she fell into a very strange kinde of extasie, scorning teares and entreating tearms, such as feminine frailtie are alwayes apteſt unto: but rather with height of courage, controlling fear or servile baseneſſe, and declaring invincible fortitude in her very look, she concluded with her selfe, rather than to urge any humble perswasions, she would lay her life down at the stake. For plainly she perceived, that *Guiscardo* already was a dead man in Law, and death was likewise welcome to her, rather than the deprivation of her love; and therefore not like a weeping woman, or as checkt by the offence committed, but careleſſe of any harm happening to her: stoutly and couragiously, not a tear appearing in her eye, or her soul any way to be perturbed, thus she spake to her Father.

Tancredo, to deny what I have done, or to intreat any favour from you, is now no part of my disposition: for as the one can little availe me, so shall not the other any way advantage me. Moreover, I covet not that you should extend any clemency or kindneſſe to me, but by my voluntary confeſſion of truth, doe intend

(first

(first of all) to defend mine honour, with reasons sound, good, and substantiall; and then virtuously pursue to the full effect, the greatnesse of my minde and constant resolution. True it is, that I have loved, and still doe, honourable *Guiscardo*, purposing the like so long as I shall live, which will be but a small while: but if it be possible, to continue the same affection after death, it is for ever vowed to him onely. Nor did mine owne womanish weaknesse so much thereto induce me, as the matchlesse vertue shining clearly in *Guiscardo*, and the little respect you had of marrying me againe. Why royall Father, you cannot be ignorant, that you being composed of flesh and blood, have begotten a daughter of the self-same composition, and not made of stone or iron. Moreover, you ought to remember (although you are far stept in yeers) what the laws of youth are, and with what difficulty they are to be contradicted. Considering withall, that albeit (during the vigour of your best time) you evermore were exercised in Armes, yet you should likewise understand, that negligence & idle delights have mighty power, not only in young people, but also in them of greatest yeers.

I being then made of flesh and blood, and so derived, from your selfe; having had also so little benefit of life, that I am yet in the spring and blooming time of my blood: by either of these reasons I must needs be subject to naturall desires, wherein such knowledge as I have once already had in the estate of my marriage, perhaps might move a further intelligence of the like delights, according to the better ability of strength, which exceeding all capacity of resistance, induced a second motive to affection, answerable to my time and youthfull desires, and so (like a young woman) I became amorous again; yet did I strive, even with all my utmost might, and best virtuous faculties abiding in me, no way to disgrace either you or my selfe, as (in equall censure) yet have I not done. But Nature is above all humane power, and Love commanded by Nature hath prevailed: for Love, joyning with Fortune, in meer pity and commiseration of my extreame wrong, I found them both most benigne and gracious, teaching me a way secret enough, whereby I might reach the height of my desires, howsoever you became instructed, or (perhaps) found it out by accident, so it was, and I deny it not.

Nor did I make election of *Guiscardo* by chance, or rashly, as many women doe, but by deliberate counsell in my soule, and most mature advice; I made choyce of

him above all other, and having his honeſt harmleſs converſation, mutually we enjoyed our hearts contentment. Now it appeareth, that I have not offended but by love; in imitation of vulgar opinion, rather than truth: you ſeek to reprove me bitterly, alledging the other main argument for your anger, but onely my not chooſing a Gentleman, or one more worthy. Wherein it is moſt evident, that you doe not ſo much check my fault, as the ordination of fortune; who many times advanceth men of meaneſt eſteem, and abaſeth them of greater merit. But leaving this diſcourſe, let us look into the originall of things wherein we are firſt to obſerve, that from one maſſe or lump of fleſh, both we, and all other received our fleſh, and one Creator hath created all things; yea, all creatures, equally in their forces and faculties, and equall likewiſe in their virtue: which virtue was the firſt that made diſtinction of birth and equality, in regard, that ſuch as have the moſt liberall portion thereof, and performed actions thereto anſwerable, were thereby termed noble; all the reſt remaining unnoble. Now although contrary uſe did afterward hide and conceal this Law, yet was it not therefore baniſhed from Nature or good manners. In which reſpect, whoſoever did execute all his actions by virtue, declared himſelf openly to be noble; and he that termed him otherwiſe, it was an errour in the miſcaller, and not in the perſon ſo wrongfully called; as the very ſame priviledge is yet in full force among us at this day.

Caſt an heedfull eye then (good Father) upon all your Gentlemen, and adviſedly examine their virtues, conditions, and manner of behaviour. On the other ſide, obſerve thoſe parts remaining in *Guiſcard*, and then if you will judge truely, and without affection, you will confeſſe him to be moſt Noble, and that all your Gentlemen (in reſpect of him) are baſe Groomes and Villains. His virtues and excelling perfections, I never credited from the report or judgement of any perſon; but onely by your ſpeeches, and mine owne eyes are true witneſſes. Who did ever more commend *Guiſcard*, extolling all thoſe ſingularities in him, moſt requiſite to be in an honeſt virtuous man, than you your ſelfe have done? Nor need you to be ſorry, or aſhamed of your good opinion concerning him: for if mine eyes have not deceived my judgement, you never gave him the leaſt part of praiſe, but I have known much more in him, than ever your words were able to expreſſe: wherefore, if I have been any way deceived,

truly

only the deceit proceeded onely from you. How will you then maintaine, that I have throwne my liking on a man of base condition? In troth (Sir) you cannot. Perhaps you will alledge, that he is but mean and poore; I confesse it, and surely it is your shame, that you have not bestown place of more preferment, on a man so honest and well deserving, and having been so long a time your servant. Nevertheless, poverty impaireth not any part of noble nature, but wealth hurries it into horrible confusions. Many Kings and great Princes have heretofore been poor, when divers of them that have delved into the earth, and kept Flocks in the field, have been advanced to riches, and exceeded the other in wealth.

Now, as concerning your last doubt, which most of all afflicteth you, namely, how you shall deal with me; boldly rid your brain of any such disturbance; for if you have resolved now in your extremity of yeers, to doe that which your younger dayes evermore despised, I mean, to become cruell, use your utmost cruelty against me: for I will never intreat you to the contrary, because I am the sole occasion of this offence. if it doe deserve the name of an offence. And this I dare assure you, that if you deal with me, as you have done already, or intend to *Guiscardo*. mine owne hands shall act as much; and therefore give over your tears to women; and if you purpose to be cruell, let him and me in death drink both of one cup, at least if you imagine that we have deserved it.

The King knew well enough the high spirit of his Daughter, but yet (nevertheless) he did not beleeve, that her words would prove actions, or she doe as she said. And therefore parting from her, and without intent of using any cruelty to her, concluded, by quenching the heat of another, to coole the fiery rage of her distemper, commanded two of his followers (who had the custody of *Guiscardo*) that without any rumour or noyse at all, they should strangle him the night ensuing, and taking the heart forth of his body, to bring it to him; which they performed according to their charge. On the next day, the King called for a goodly standing cup of gold, wherein he put the heart of *Guiscardo*, sending it by one of his most familiar servants to his Daughter, with command also to use these words to her. Thy Father hath sent thee this present, to comfort thee with that thing which most of all thou affectest, even as thou hast comforted him with that thing which he most hated.

Ghismonda, nothing altered from her cruell deliberation, after her Father was departed from her, caused certain poysonous rootes and herbs to be brought her, which she (by distillation) made a water of, to drink suddenly, whensoever any crosse accident should come from her Father; whereupon, when the Messenger from her Father had delivered her the present, and uttered the words as he was commanded: she took the Cup, and looking into it with a setled countenance, by sight of the heart, and effect of the message, she knew certainly, that was the heart of *Guiscardo*; then looking sternly on the servant, thus she spake unto him. My honest friend, it is no more than right and justice, that so worthy a heart as this is, should have any worse grave than gold, wherein my Father hath dealt most wisely. So lifting the heart up to her mouth and sweetly kissing it, she proceeded thus. In all things, even till this instant, (being the utmost period of my life) I have evermore found my Fathers love most effectuall to me; but now it appeareth far greater than at any time heretofore: and therefore from my mouth, thou must deliver him the latest thanks that ever I shall give him, for sending me such an honourable present.

These words being ended, holding the Cup fast in her hand, and looking seriously upon the heart, she began again in this manner. Thou sweet entertainer of all my dearest delights, accursed be his cruelty, that causeth me to see thee with my corporall eyes, it being sufficient enough for me alwayes to behold thee with the sight of my soul. Thou hast run thy race, and as Fortune ordained, so are thy dayes finished: for as all flesh hath an ending, so hast thou concluded, albeit too soone and before thy due time. The travailes and miseries of this world, have now no more to meddle with thee, and thy veriest heaviest enemy hath bestowed such a grave on thee, as thy greatnesse in virtue worthily deserveth: Now nothing else is wanting, wherewith to beautifie thy Funerall, but onely her sighes and teares, that was so dear unto thee in thy life time. And because thou mightest the more freely enjoy them, see how my mercilesse Father (on his own meer motion) hath sent thee to me; and truely I will bestow them frankly on thee, though once I had resolved, to die with dry eyes, and not shedding one tear, dreadlesse of their utmost malice towards mee.

And when I have given thee the due oblation of my tears, my soule which sometime thou hast kept most carefully,

cruelly, shall come to make a sweet conjunction with thine: for in what company else can I travell more contentedly, and to those unfrequented silent shades, but onely in thine? As yet I am sure it is present here, in this Cup sent me by my Father, as having a provident respect to the place, for possession of our mutuall pleasure; because thy soul affecting mine so truly cannot walk alone, without his dear companion.

Having thus finished her complaint, even as if her head had been converted into a well-spring of water, so did tears abundantly flow from her faire eyes, kissing the heart of *Guiscardo* infinit times. All which while, her women standing by her, neither knew what heare it was, nor to what effect her speeches tended: but. being moved to compassionate tears, they often demanded (albeit in vain) the occasion of her sad complaining, comforting her to their utmost powe. When she was not able to weep any longer, wiping her eyes, and lifting up her head, without any signe of the least dismay, thus she spake to the heart. Dear heart, all my duty is performed to thee, and nothing now remaineth unefected; but onely breathing my last, to let my ghost accompany thine.

Then calling for the glasse of water, which she had readily prepared the day before, and pouring it upon the heart lying in the Cup, couraglously advancing it to her mouth, she drank it up every drop; which being done, she lay down upon her bed, holding her Lovers heart fast in her hand. and laying it so neer to her own as she could. Now although her women knew not what water it was, yet when they had seen her to quaff it off in that manner, they sent word to the King, who much suspecting what had hapned, went in all haste to his Daughters chamber, entring at the very instant when she was laid upon the bed; beholding her in such passionate pangs, with tears streaming down his reverend beard, he used many kind words to comfort her, when boldly thus she spake unto him. Father (quoth she) well may you spare these tears, because they are unfitting for you, and not any way desired by me; who but your self hath seen any man to mourn for his own wilfull offence? Nevertheless, if but the least jot of that love doe yet abide in you, whereof you have made such liberall profession to me; let me obtain this my very last request, to wit, that seeing I might not privately enjoy the benefit of *Guiscardo*'s love while he lived, let yet (in death) one peblick grave contain both our bodies; that death may afford us, what you so cruelly in life denyed us.

Extremity of griefe and sorrow, with-held his tongue from returning any answer, and she perceiving her end approaching, held the heart still closed to her owne bare breast, saying; Here Fortune, receive two true hearts latest oblation; for in this manner are we comming to thee. So closing her eyes, all sense forsook her, life leaving her body breathlesse. Thus ended the hapless love of *Guiscardo*, and *Ghismonda*, for whose sad disaster, when the King had mourned sufficiently, and repented fruitlessely; he caused both their bodies to be honourably embalmed, and buryed in a most royall Monument; not without generall sorrow of the subjects of *Salerne*.

Fryar Albert *made a young Venetian Gentlewoman believe, that God* Cupid *was falne in love with her, and by resorted oftentimes unto her, in the disguise of the said God. Afterward, being frighted by the Gentlewomans kindred and friends, hee cast himselfe out of a Chamber window, and was hidden in a poore mans house; the day following, in the shape of a wilde or savage man, he was brought upon the Rialto of Saint* Marke, *and being there publickly knowne by the Brethren of his Order, hee was presently committed to Prison.*

The second Novell.

Reprehending the lewd lives of dissembling hypocrites, and checking the arrogant pride of vain-headed women.

THe Novell recounted by Madam *Fiametta*, caused teares many times in the eyes of all the company; but it being finished, the King shewing a stern countenance, said; I should have much commended the kindnesse of Fortune, if in the whole course of my life, I had tasted the least moity of that delight, which *Guiscardo* received by conversing with fair *Ghismonda*. Nor need any of you to wonder thereat, or how can it be otherwise, because hourly I feel a thousand dying torments, without enjoying any hope of ease or pleasure. But referring my fortune to their own poore condition, it is my will, that Madam *Pampinea* proceed next in the argument of succesleslesse love, according as Madam *Fiametta* hath already begun, to let fall more dew-drops on the fire of mine afflictions. Madam *Pampinea* perceiving what a task was imposed on her, knew well (by her owne disposition) the inclination of the company, whereof she was more respective than of the

Kings

Kings command: wherefore, chusing rather to recreate their spirits, than to satisfie the Kings melancholy humor; she determined to relate a Tale of mirthfull matter, and yet to keep within compasse of the purposed Argument.

It hath been continually used as a Proverbe; that a bad man taken and reputed to be honest and good, may commit many evils, yet neither credited, or suspected: which proverb giveth me very ample matter to speak of, and yet not varying from our intention, concerning the hypocrisie of some religious persons, who having their garments long and large, their faces made artificially pale, their language meek and humble to get mens goods from them; yet sowre, harsh, and sterne enough, in checking and controuling other mens errours, as also in urging others to give, and themselves to take, without any other hope or means of salvation. Nor doe they endevour like other men to work out their souls health with fear and trembling; but, even, as if they were sole Owners, Lords, and Possessors of Paradise, will appoint to every dying person, place (there) of greater or lesser excellency, according as they think good, or as the legacies left by them are in quantity, whereby they not onely deceive themselves, but all such as give credit to their subtile perswasions. And were it lawfull for me, to make known no more than is meerly necessary; I could quickly disclose to simple credulous people, what craft lyeth hid under their holy habites: and I would wish, that their lies and deluding should speed with them, as they did with a *Franciscan* Fryer, none of the younger Novices, but one of them of greatest reputation, and belonging to one of the best Monasteries in *Venice*, which I am the rather desirous to report, to recreate your spirits, after your tears for the death of fair *Ghismonda*.

Sometime (honourable Ladies) there lived in the City of *Imola*, a man of most lewd and wicked life; named *Berthe de la messa*, whose shameless deeds were so well known to all the Citizens, and won such respect among them, as all his lies could not compasse any belief, no, not when he delivered a matter of sound truth. Wherefore perceiving that his lewdnesse allowed him no longer abiding there; like a desperate adventurer, he transported himself thence to *Venice*, the receptacle of all foul sin and abomination, intending there to exercise his wonted bad behaviour, and live as wickedly as ever he had done before. It came to passe, that some remorse

of conscience took hold of him, for the former passages of his dissolute life, and he pretended to be surprized with very great devotion, becomming much more Catholick than any other man, taking on him the profession of a *Franciscane Cordelier*, and calling himselfe, Fryer *Albert* of *Imola*.

In this habit and outward appearance, he seemed to lead an austere and sanctimonious life, highly commending penance and abstinence, never eating flesh, or drinking wine, but when he was provided of both in a close corner. And before any person could take notice thereof, he became of a (thief) Ruffian, forswearer, and murtherer, as formerly he had been, a great Preacher; yet not abandoning the forenamed vices, when secretly he could put any of them in execution. Moreover, being made Priest, when he was celebrating Masse at the Altar, if he saw himself to be observed by any; he would most mournfully read the passion of our Saviour, as one whose teares cost him little, whensoever he pleased to use them: so that in a short while, by his preaching and teares he fed the humors of the *Venetians* so pleasingly, that they made him Executor (well-neer) of all their Testaments, yea, many chose him as Depository or Guardian of their monies; because he was both Confessor and Counsellour, almost to all the men and women.

By this well-seeming outside of sanctity, the Wolfe became a Shepheard, and his renown for holinesse was so famous in those parts, as Saint *Francis* himselfe had hardly any more. It fortuned, that a young Gentlewoman being somewhat foolish, wanton and proil minded, named, Madam *Lisetta de Caquirino*, wife to a wealthy Merchant, who went with certain Gallies into *Flanders*, and there lay as Lieger long time: in company of other Gentlewomen, went to be confessed by this ghostly Father; kneeling at his feet, although her heart was high enough, like a proud minded woman, (for *Venetians* are presumptuous, vain-glorious, and witted much like to their skittish Gaudoloes) she made a very short rehearsall of her sins. At length Fryer *Albert* demanded of her, whether shee had any amorous friend or Lover? Her patience being exceedingly provoked, stern anger appeared in her lookes, which caused her to returne him this answer. How now Sir *Domine*? what? have you no eyes in your head? Can you not distinguish between mine, and these other common beauties? I could have Lovers enow, if I were so pleased; but those perfections remaining

ning in me, are not to be affected by this man, or that. How many beauties have you beheld, any way answerable to mine, and are more fit for gods than mortals.

Many other idle speeches she uttered, in proud opinion of her beauty, whereby Fryer *Albert* presently perceived that this Gentlewoman had but a hollow brain, and was fit game for folly to fly at; which made him instantly enamored of her, and that beyond all capacity of resisting, which yet he referred to a further and more commodious time. Nevertheless, to shew himself an holy and religious man now, he began to reprehend her, and told her plainly, that she was vainglorious, and overcome with infinite follies. Hereupon she called him a logger headed beast; and he knew not the difference between an ordinary complexion, and beauty of the highest merit. In which respect Fryer *Albert*, being loath to offend her any further; after confession was fully ended, let her passe away among the other Gentlewomen, she giving him divers disdainfull looks.

Within some few dayes after, taking one of his trusty brethren in his company; he went to the house of Madam *Lisetta*, where requiring to have some conference alone with her self; she took him into a private Parlor, and being there, not to be seen by any body, he fell on his knees before her, speaking in this manner. Madam, for charities sake, and in regard of your own most gracious nature, I beseech you to pardon those harsh speeches, which I used to you the other day, when you were with me at confession: because, the very night ensuing thereon, I was chastised in such cruell manner, as I was never able to stir forth of my bed, untill this very instant morning; whereto the weak-witted Gentlewoman thus replyed. And who I pray you (quoth she) did chastise you so severely? I will tell you Madam, said Fryer *Albert*, but it is a matter of admirable secresie.

Being alone by my selfe the same night in my Dorter, and in very serious devotion, according to my usuall manner: suddenly I saw a bright splendour about mee, and I could no sooner arise to discern what it might be, and whence it came, but I espyed a very goodly young Lad standing by me, holding a golden Bow in his hand, and a rich Quiver of Arrowes hanging on his back. Catching fast hold on my Hood, against the ground he threw me rudely, trampling on me with his feet, and beating me with so many cruell blowes,

blowes, that I thought my body to be broken in peeces. Then I desired to know, why he was so rigorous to me in his correction? Because (quoth he) thou didst so saucily presume this day to reprove the celestiall beauty of Madam *Lisetta*, whom (next to my mother Venus) I love most deerly. Whereupon I perceived, he was the commanding God *Cupid*, therefore I craved most humbly pardon of him. I will pardon thee (quoth he) but upon this condition, that thou goe to her so soon as conveniently thou canst, and (by lowly humility) prevaile to obtaine her free pardon: which if she will not vouchsafe to grant thee, then shall I in stern anger return again, and lay so many tortoring afflictions on thee, that all thy whole life time shall be most hatefull to thee. And what the displeased God said else beside, I dare not disclose, except you please first to pardon me.

Mistresse Shallow-brain, being swolne big with this wind, like an empty bladder; conceiving no smal pride in hearing these words, constantly crediting them to bee true, and therefore thus answered. Did I not tell you Father *Albert*, that my beauty was celestiall? But I swear by my beauty, notwithstanding your idle passed arrogancy, I am heartily sorry for your severe corrections; which that it may no more be inflicted on you, I doe freely pardon you; yet with this *provis*, that you tell me what the God else said unto you; whereto Fryer *Albert* thus replyed; Madam, seeing you have so graciously vouchsafed to pardon me, I will thankfully tell you all: but you must be very carefull and respective, that whatsoever I shall reveale unto you, must so closely be concealed, as no living creature in the world may know it; for you are the onely happy Lady now living, and that happinesse relyeth on your silence and secresie: With solemne vows and protestations, she sealed up her many promises, and then the Fryer thus proceeded.

Madam, the further charge imposed on mee by god *Cupid*, was to tell you, that himselfe is so extreamly enamoured of your beauty, and you are become so gracious in his affection, as many nights he hath come to see you in your Chamber, sitting on your pillow, while you slept sweetly, and desiring very often to awake you, but onely fearing to affright you. Wherefore, now he sends you word by me, that one night he intendeth to come visite you, and to spend some time in conversing with you. But in regard he is a god, and meerly a spirit in form, whereby neither you nor any else have a capacity of

of beholding him, much lesse, to touch or feel him: he saith, that (for your sake) he will come in the shape of a man; giving me charge also to know of you, when you shall please to have him come, and in whose similitude you would have him to come, whereof he will not fail; in which respect you may justly think your self to be the onely happy woman living, and far beyond all other in your good fortune.

Mistresse Want-wit presently answered, she was well contented, that god *Cupid* should love her, and she would return the like love to him; protesting withall, that whersoever she should see his Majesticall picture, she would set a hallowed burning Taper before it. Moreover, at all times he should be welcome to her, whensoever he would vouchsafe to visite her; for he should alwayes finde her alone in her private Chamber: on this condition, that his old Love *Psyche*, and all other beauties else whatsoever must be set aside, and none but her self onely to be his best Mistresse, referring his personall form of appearance, to what shape himselfe best pleased to assume, so that it might not be frightfull or offensive to her.

Madam (quoth Fryer *Albert*) most wisely have you answered, and leave the matter to me; for I will take order sufficiently, and to your contentment. But you may doe me a great grace, and without any prejudice to your selfe, in granting me one poore request; namely to vouchsafe the gods appearance to you, in my bodily shape and person, and in the perfect form of a man as now you behold mee: so may you safely give him entertainment, without any taxation of the world, or ill apprehension of the most curious inquisition. Beside, a greater happinesse can never befall me, for, while he assumeth the soul out of my body, and walketh on the earth in my humane figure: I shall be wandering in the joyes of Lovers Paradise, feeling the fruition of their felicities; which are such, as no mortality can be capable of, no, not so much as in imagination.

The wise Gentlewoman replyed, that she was well contented, in regard of the severe punishment inflicted on him by god *Cupid* for the reproachfull speeches he had given her; to allow him so poor a kinde of consolation, as he had requested her to grant him. Whereupon Fryer *Albert* said: Be ready then Madam to give him welcome to morrow in the evening, at the entring into your house, for comming in an humane body, he cannot but enter in at yong doors; whereas if

(in

(in powerfull manner) he made use of his wings, he then would fly in at your window, and then you could not be able to see him.

Upon this conclusion *Albert* departed, leaving *Lisetta* in no mean pride of imagination that God *Cupid* should be enamored of her beauty; and therefore she thought each hour a year, till she might see him in the mortall shape of Fryer *Albert*. And now was his brain wonderfully busied, to visit her in more than common or humane manner; and therefore he made him a suit (close to his body) of white Taffety, all powdered over with stars and spangles of Gold, a Bow and Quiver of Arrowes, with wings also fastened to his back behinde him, and all cunningly covered with his Fryers habite, which must be the sole means of his safe passage.

Having obtained licence of his Superiour, and being accompanyed with an holy Brother of the Convent, yet ignorant of the busineſſe by him intended; he went to the house of a friend of his, which was his usuall receptacle, whensoever he went about such deeds of darkeneſſe. There did he put on his dissembled habit of God *Cupid* with his wings, Bow, and Quiver, in formall fashion; and then clouded over with his Monks Cowle, leaves his companion to await his returning back, while he visited foolish *Lisetta*, according to her expectation, readily attending for the Gods arrivall.

Albert comming to the house, knocked at the dore, and the Maid admitting him entrance, according as her Mistresse had appointed, she conducted him to her Mistresses Chamber, where laying aside his Fryers habite, and she seeing him shine with such glorious splendour, adding action also to his assumed dissimulation, with majestick motion of his body, wings, and bow, as if he had been God *Cupid* indeed, converted into a body much bigger of stature, than Painters commonly doe describe him, her wisdome was overcome with fear and admiration, that she fell on her knees before him, expressing all humble reverence unto him. And he spreading his wings over her, as with wyers and strings he had made them pliant; shewed how graciously he accepted her humiliation, holding her in his arms, and sweetly kissing her many times together, with repetition of his entire love and affection towards her. So delicately was he perfumed with odoriferous savours, and so compleat of person in his spangled garments, that she could doe nothing else but wonder at his rare behaviour, reputing her felicity

fleitie beyond all Womens in the world, and utterly impossible to be equalled, such was the pride of her presuming. For he told her divers tales and fables of his awefull power among the other gods, and stolen pleasures of his upon the earth, yet gracing her praises above all his other Lovers, and vows made now, to affect none but her onely, as his often visitations should more constantly assure her, that she verily credited all his protestations, and thought his kisses and embraces, farre to exceed any mortall comparison.

After they had spent so much time in amorous discoursing, as might best fit for this their first meeting, and stand cleare from suspicion from either side: our *Albert Cupid*, or *Cupid Albert*, which of them you best please to term him, closing his spangled wings together again behinde his back, fastening also on his bow and quiver of arrowes, over-clouds all with his religious Monkes Cowle, and then with a parting kisse or two, returned to the place where he had left his fellow and companion, perhaps employed in as devout an exercise, as hee had been in his absence from him; whence both repairing home to the Monastery, all this nights wandering was allowed as tolerable, by them who made no spare of doing the like.

On the morrow following, *Madam Lisetta* immediately after dinner, being attended by her Chambermaid, went to see Fryer *Albert*, finding him in his wonted form and fashion, and telling him what had hapned between her and god *Cupid*, with all the other lies and tales which he had told her. Truly *Madam* (answered *Albert*) what your successe with him hath been, I am no way able to comprehend; but this I can assure you, that so soon as I had acquainted him with your answer, I felt a sudden rapture made of my soule, and visibly (to my apprehension) saw it carryed by Elves and Fairies, into the fields about *Elisium*, where Lovers departed out of this life, walk among the beds of Lillies and Roses, such as are not in this world to be seen, neither to be imagined by any humane capacity. So super-abounding was the pleasure of this joy and solace, that, how long I continued there, or by what means I was transported hither again this morning, it is beyond all ability in me to expresse, or how I assumed my body again after that great god had made use thereof to your service. Well Fryer *Albert* (quoth she) you may see what an happinesse hath be-

falne

false you, by so grosse an opinion of my perfection, and what a felicity you enjoy, and still are like to do, by my pardoning your error, and granting the good accesse to me in your shape: which as I envy not, so I wish you hereafter to be wiser, in taking upon you to judge of beauty. Much other idle folly proceeded from her, which still he soothed to her contentment, and (as occasion serv'd) many meeting they had in the former manner.

It fortuned within few dayes after that Madam *Lisetta* being in company with one of her Gossips and their conference (as commonly it falleth out to be) concerning other women of the Citie; their beauty, behaviour, amorous suiters, and servants, and generall opinion conceived of their worth and merit; wherein *Lisetta* was overmuch conceited of her selfe, not admitting any other to be her equall. Among other speeches, of an unseasoned brain: Gossip (quoth she) if you knew what account is made of my beauty, and who holds it in no mean estimation, you would then freely confesse, that I deserve to be preferred before any other. As women are ambitious in their owne opinions, so commonly are they covetous of one anothers secrets, especially in matters of emulation, whereupon the Gossip thus replyed. Beleeve me Madam, I make no doubt but your speeches may be true, in regard of your admirable beauty, and many other perfection besides; yet let me tell you, priviledges, how great and singular soever they be, without they are knowne to others, beside such as doe particularly enjoy them; they carry no more account than things of ordinary estimation. Whereas on the contrary, when any Lady or Gentlewoman hath some eminent and peculiar favour, which few or none other can reach unto, and it is made famous by generall notion; then doe all women elle admire and honour her, as the glory of their kinde, and a miracle of Nature.

I perceive Gossip, said *Lisetta*, whereat you aim, and such is my love to you, as you should not lose your longing in this case, were I but constantly secured of your secresie, which as hitherto I have been no way able to taxe, so would I be loth now to be more suspicious of than needs. But yet this matter is of such main moment, that if you will protest, as you are truely virtuous, never to reveal it to no living body, I will disclose to you almost a miracle. The vertuous oath being past, with many other solemn protestations beside, *Lisetta* then proceeded in this manner.

I know Gossip, that it is a matter of common and ordinary custome for Ladies, and Gentlewomen to be graced with favourites, men of fraile and mortall conditions; whose natures are as subject to inconstancy, as their very best endevours dedicated to folly, as I could name no meane number of our Ladies here in *Venice*. But when Soveraign deities shall feel the impression of our humane desires, and behold subjects of such prevailing efficacy, as to subdue the greatest power, yea, and make them enamoured of mortall creature; you may well imagine Gossip, such a beauty is superiour to any other. And such is the happy fortune of your friend *Lisetta*, of whose perfections, great *Cupid* the awefull commanding god of Love himselfe, conceived such an extraordinary liking, as he hath abandoned his seat of supreme Majesty, and appeared to me in the shape of a mortall man, with lively expression of his amorous passions, and what extremities of anguish he hath endured, onely for my love. May this be possible? replyed the Gossip. Can the gods be toucht with the apprehension of our fraile passions? True it is Gossip, answered *Lisetta*, and so certainly true, that his sacred kisses, sweet embraces, and most pleasing speeches, with proffer of his continuall devotion towards me, hath given me good cause to confirm what I say, and to think my felicity sat beyond all other womens, being honoured with his often nightly visitations.

The Gossip inwardly smiling at her idle speeches, which (nevertheless) she avouched with vehement asseverations: fell instantly sick of womens naturall disease, thinking every minute a tedious moneth, till she were in company with some other Gossips, to break the obligation of her virtuous promise, and that others (as well as her selfe) might laugh at the folly of this shallow witted woman. The next day following, it was her hap to be at a Wedding, among a great number of other women, whom quickly she acquainted with this so strange a wonder; as they did the like to their husbands: and passing from hand to hand, in lesse space than two dayes, all *Venice* was fully possessed with it.

Among the rest, the brethren to the fooliſh woman, heard this admirable news concerning their Sister; and they discreetly concealing it to themselves, closely concluded to watch the walk of this pretended god: and if he soared not to a lofty flight, they would clip his wings, to come the better acquainted with him.

him. It fortuned, that the Fryer hearing his Cupidical visitations over-publickly discovered, purposed to check and reprove *Lisetta* for her indiscretion. And being habited according to his former manner, his Fryerly Cowle covering all his former bravery, he left his companion where he used to stay, and closely walked along unto the house. No sooner was he entred, but the brethren being ambushed neer to the dore, went in after him, and ascending the stairs, by such time as he had uncased himself, and appeared like god *Cupid*, with his spangled wings displayed: they rushed into the Chamber, and he having no other refuge, opened a large Casement, standing directly over the great gulfe or River, and presently leapt into the water; which being deep, and he skilfull in swimming, he had no other harm by his fall, albeit the sudden affright did much perplexe him.

Recovering the further side of the River, he espyed a light, and the dore of the house open, wherein dwelt a poor man, whom he earnestly intreated, to save both his life and reputation; telling him many lies and tales by what means he was disguised, and thrown by night-walking villains into the water. The poor man, being moved to compassionate his distressed estate, laid him in his owne bed, ministring such other comforts to him, as the time and his poverty did permit; and day drawing on, he went about his businesse, advising him to take his rest, and it should not be long till he returned. So locking the dore, and leaving the counterfeiting god a bed, away goes the poor man to his daily labour. The brethren to *Lisetta*, perceiving god *Cupid* to bee fled and gone, and she in melancholy sadnesse sitting by them: they took up the reliques he had left behinde him, I mean, the Fryers Hood and Cowle, which shewing to their Sister, and sharply reproving her unwomanly behaviour, they left her in no mean discomfort, returning home to their owne houses, with their conquered spoyle of the forlorne Fryer.

During the times of these occurrences, broad day spreading on, and the poor man returning homeward by the *Rialto*, to visite his guest so left in bed: he beheld divers crowds of people, and a generall rumor noysed among them that God *Cupid* had been that night with Madam *Lisetta*, where being over-closely pursued by her brethren, for fear of being surprized, he leapt out of her window into the gulfe, and no one could tell what was become of him. Hereupon the poor man

began

began to imagine, that the guest entertained by him in the night, must needs be the same god *Cupid*, as by his wings, and other embellishments appeared: wherefore being come home, and sitting downe on the beds side by him, after some few speeches passing between them, he knew him to be Fryer *Albert*, who promised to give him fifty duckats if he would not betray him to *Lisetta*'s brethren.

Upon the acceptation of this offer, the mony being sent for, and paid downe; there wanted nothing now, but some apt and convenient means, whereby *Albert* might safely be conveyed into the Monastery, which being wholly referred to the poor mans care and trust, thus he spake. Sir, I see no likely-hood of your cleat escaping home, except in this manner, as I advise you. We observe this day as a merry Festivall, and it is lawfull for any one, to disguise a man in the skin of a Beare, or in the shape of a savage man, or any other form of better advice. Which being so done, he is brought upon Saint *Marks* market place, where being hunted a while with dogs, upon the huntings conclusion, the Feast is ended, and then each man leads his monster whither him pleaseth. If you can accept any of these shapes, before you be seen here in my poor abiding, then can I safely (afterward) bring you where you would be. Otherwise, I see no possible means, how you may escape hence unknown; for it is without all question to the contrary, that the Gentlewomans brethren, knowing your concealment in some one place or other, will set such spies and watches for you throughout the City, as you must needs be taken by them.

Now, although it seemed a most severe imposition, for *Albert* to passe in any of these guises: yet his exceeding fear of *Lisetta*'s brethren and friends, made him gladly yeeld, and to undergoe what shape the poor man pleased, which thus he ordered. Annointing his naked body with hony, he then covered it over with downy small feathers, and fastening a chain about his neck, and a strange ugly vizard on his face, he gave him a great staffe in the one hand, and two huge Mastive dogges chained together in the other hand also which he had borrowed in the Butchery. Afterward he sent a man to the *Rialto*, who there proclaimed by the sound of Trumpets: that all such as desired to see god *Cupid*, which the last night had descended downe from the skies; and fell (by ill happe) into the Venetian gulfe,

gulfe, let them repair to the publick Market place of Saint *Mark*, and there he would appear in his owne likenesse.

This being done, soon after he left his house, and leading him thus disguised along by the chaine, hee was followed by great crowdes of people, every one questioning of whence, and what hee was. In which manner he brought him to the Market place, where an infinite number of people were gathered together, as well of the followers as of them that before heard the proclamation. There he made choyce of a pillar, which stood in a place somewhat highly exalted, whereto he chained his savage man, making shew as if he meant to awaite there, till the hunting should begin: in which time the Flies, Wasps, Hornets, did so terribly sting his naked body, being anointed with honey, that he endured thereby unspeakable anguish. When the poor man saw that there needed no more concourse of people; pretending, as if he purposed to let loose his Savage man; he took the mask or vizard from *Albert*'s face, and then hee spake aloud in this manner.

Gentlemen and others, seeing that the wilde Boare commeth not to our hunting, because I imagine that he cannot easily be found: I mean (to the end you may not lose your labour in comming hither) to shew you the great god of Love, called *Cupid*, whom Poets faigned long since to be a little Boy, but now growne to manly stature. You see in what manner he hath left his high dwelling, onely for the *Venetian* beauties: but belike, the night-fogs overflagging his wings, he fell into our gulfe, and comes now to present his service to you. No sooner had he taken off his vizard, but every one knew him to be Fryer *Albert*; and suddenly arose such shouts and out-cryes, with most bitter words breathed forth against him, hurling also stones, dirt and filth in his face, that his best acquaintance then could take no knowledge of him, and not any one pitying his abusing.

So long continued the offended people in their fury, that the news thereof was carryed to the Covent, and five of his religious Brethren came, who casting and throwing an habite about him, and releasing him from his chain, they led him to the Monastery, not without much molestation and trouble of the people; where imprisoning him in their house, severity of some inflicted punishment, or rather conceit for his open shame shortned his dayes, and so he died. Thus you see (fair Ladies)

when

when licentious life must be clouded with a cloak of sanctity, and cruell actions daily committed, yet escaping uncredited: there will come a time at length, for just discovering of all, that the good may shine in their true lustre of glory, and the bad sink in their own deserved shame.

Three young Gentlemen affecting three sisters, fled into Candie. *The eldest of them (through jealousie) becommeth the death of her Lover: The second, by consenting to the Duke of* Candies *request, is the meanes of saving her life. Afterward her own friend killeth her, and thence flieth away with the eldest Sister. The third couple, are charged with her death, and being committed prisoners, they confesse the fact; and fearing death, by corruption of money they prevaile with their Keepers, escaping from thence to* Rhodes, *were they died in great poverty.*

The third Novell.

Herein is declared, how dangerous the occasion is, insuing by anger and despight, in such as intirely love, especially being injured and offended by them that they love.

WHen the King perceived that Madam *Tampinea* had ended her discourse, he sat sadly a pretty while, without uttering one word, but afterward spake thus. Little goodnesse appeared in the beginning of this Novell, because it ministred mirth; yet the ending proved better, and I could wish that worse afflictions had falne on the venereous Fryer. Then turning towards *Lauretta*, he said; Lady, doe you tell us a better Tale, if possibly it may be. She smiling, thus answered the King, Sir, you are over-cruelly bent against poor Lovers, in desiring that their amorous processions should have harsh and sinister concludings. Nevertheless, in obedience to your severe command, among three persons amorously perplexed, I will relate an unhappy ending, whereas all might be said to speed as unfortunately, being equally alike, in enjoying the issue of their desires; and thus I proceed.

Every Vice (choyce Ladies) as very well you know, redoundeth to the great disgrace and prejudice of him, or her, by whom it is practised; and oftentimes to others.. Now, among those common hurtfull enemies, the sin or vice which most carrieth us with full carreer, and draweth us into unavoydable dangers (in mine opinion) seemeth to be that of choler or anger, which is a sudden

ſudden and inconſiderate moving, provoked by ſome received injury, which having excluded all reſpect of reaſon, and dimn'd (with dark vapors) the bright diſcerning ſight of the underſtanding, enflameth the mind with moſt violent fury. And albeit this inconvenience hapneth moſt to men, and more to ſome few than others; yet notwithſtanding, it hath been noted, that women have felt the ſelf-ſame infirmity, and in more extreme manner, becauſe it much ſooner is kindled in them, and burneth with the brighter flame, in regard they have the leſſer conſideration, and therefore not to be wondred at. For if we will adviſedly obſerve, we ſhall plainly perceive, that fire (even of his owne nature) taketh hold of ſuch things as are light and tender, much ſooner than it can on hard and weighty ſubſtances; and ſome of us women (let men take no offence at my words) are far more ſoft and delicate than they be, and therefore more frail. In which regard, ſeeing we are naturally inclined hereto, and conſidering alſo, how much our affability and gentleneſſe doe ſhew themſelves pleaſing and full of content to thoſe men with whom we are to live; and likewiſe how anger and fury are compacted of extraordinary perills: I purpoſe (becauſe we may be the more valiant in our courage, to outſtand the fierce aſſaults of wrath and rage) to ſhew you by mine enſuing Novell, how the loves of three young Gentlemen, and of as many Gentlewomen, came to fatall and unfortunate ſucceſſe by the tempeſtuous anger of one among them, as I have formerly related unto you.

Marſeilles (as you are not now to learn) is in *Provence*, ſeated on the ſea, and is alſo a very ancient and moſt noble City, which hath been (heretofore) inhabited with far richer and more wealthy Merchants, than at this inſtant time it is. Among whom there was one named *Narnaldo Ciuida*, a man but of mean condition, yet clear in faith and reputation, and in lands, goods, and ready moneyes, immeaſurable rich. Many children he had by his Wife, among whom were three Daughters, which exceeded his Sons in years. Two of them being twinnes, and born of one body, were counted to be fifteen yeers old; the third was fourteen, and nothing hindred marriage in their Parents own expectation, but the returne home of *Narnaldo*, who was then abroad in *Spaine* with his Merchandizes. The eldeſt of theſe Siſters was named *Ninetta*, the ſecond *Magdalena*, and the third *Bertella*. A Gentleman (albeit but poor in fortunes) and called *Reſtagnone*, was extraordinarily enamored of *Ninetta*, as no man poſſibly could be more, and ſhe likewiſe

wise as earnest in affection towards him; yet both carrying their loves proceeding with such secresie, as long time they enjoyed their hearts sweet content, yet undiscovered.

It came to passe, that two other young Gallants, the one named *Folco*, and the other *Hugnetto* (who had attained to incredible wealth, by the decease of their Father) were also farre in love, the one with *Magdalen*, the other with *Bertella*. When *Restagnone* had intelligence thereof, by the means of his faire friend *Ninetta*, he purposed to relieve his poverty, by friendly furthering both their love, and his own: and growing into familiarity with them, one while he would walk abroad with *Folco*, and then again with *Hugnetto*, but oftner with them both together, to visit their Mistresses, and continue worthy friendship. On a day, when he saw the time suitable to his intent, and that he had invited the two Gentlemen home unto his house, hee fell into this like conference with them.

Kinde friends (quoth he) the honest familiarities which hath past between us, may render you some certain assurance of the constant love I bear to you both, being as willing to work any meanes that may tend to your good, as I desire to compasse mine own. And because the truth of my affection cannot conceal it self to you, I mean to acquaint you with an intention, wherewith my brain hath a long while travelled, and now may soon be delivered of, if it may passe with your liking and approbation. Let me then tell you, that except your speeches savour of untruth, and your actions carry a double understanding, in common behaviour both by night and day, you appeare to pine and consume away in the cordiall love you beare to two of the Sisters, as I suffer the same afflictions for the third, with reciprocall requitall of their deerest affection to us. Now, to qualifie the heat of our tormenting flames, if you will condescend to such a course as I shall advise you, the remedy will yeeld them equall ease to ours, and we may safely enjoy the benefit of contentment. As wealth aboundeth with you both, so doth want most extreamly tyrannize over me: but if one banke might be made of both your rich substances, I embraced therein as a third partaker, and some quarter of the world designed out by us, where to live at hearts ease upon our possessions, I durst engage my credite, that all the Sisters (not meanly stored with their Fathers treasure) shall beare

us company to what place soever wee please. There each man freely enjoying his own dearest love, may live like three brethren without any hinderance to our mutuall content: it remaineth now to you Gentlemen, to accept this comfortable offer, or to refuseit.

The two Brothers, whose passions exceeded their best means for support, perceiving some hope how to enjoy their loves; desired no long time of deliberation, or greatly disputed with their thoughts what was best to be done: but readily replyed, that let happen any danger whatsoever, they would joyne with him in this determination, and hee should partake with them in their wealthyest fortunes. After *Reſtagnone* had heard their answer, within some few dayes following, he went to conferre with *Nisetta*, which was no easie matter for him to compasse. Nevertheless, opportunity proved so favourable to him, that meeting with her at a place appointed, hee discoursed at large what had passed between him, and the other two young Gentlemen, maintaining the same with many good reasons, to have her like and allow of the enterprize, which although (for a while) he could very hardly doe, yet in regard she had more desire than power, without suspicion to be daily in his company, she thus answered.

My hearts chosen friend, I cannot any way mislike your advice, and will take such order with my Sister, that they shall agree to our resolution. Let it therefore be your charge, that you and the rest make every thing ready, to depart from hence so soon as with best convenient means we may be enabled.

Reſtagnone being returned to *Folco* and *Hugotto*, who thought every hour a year, to hear what would succeed upon the promise past between them; he told them in plain terms, that their Ladies were as free in consent as they, and nothing wanted now, but furnishment for their sudden departing. Having concluded, that *Candia* should be their harbour for entertainment, they made sale of some few inheritances which lay the readyest for the purpose, as also their goods in their houses; and then, under colour of venting Merchandizes abroad, they bought an nimble Pinnace, fortified with good strength and preparation, and waited but for a convenient wind. On the other side, *Nisetta*, who was sufficiently acquainted with the forwardnesse of her Sisters desires, and her owne, had so substantially prevailed with them, that a

good

good voyage now was the sole expectation. Whereupon the same night when they should set away, they opened a strong barred chest of their Fathers, whence they took great store of gold, and costly jewels, wherewith escaping secretly out of the house, they came to the place where the Lovers attended for them, and going hastily aboard the Pinnace, the winds were so furtherous to them, that without touching any where, the night following they arrived at *Genoway*.

There being out of perill or pursuit, they all knit the knot of holy wedlock, and then freely enjoyed their long wished desires: from whence setting sail again, and being well furnished with all things wanting, passing on from Port to Port, at the end of eight dayes, they landed at *Candie*, not meeting with any impeachment on the way. Determining there to spend their dayes, first they provided themselves of goodly lands in the Countrey, and then of beautifull dwelling houses in the City, with all due furnishments belonging to them, and families well beseeming such worthy Gentlemen, and all delights for their daily recreations, inviting their neighbours, and they them again in loving manner; so that no Lovers could wish to live in more ample contentment.

Passing on their time in this height of felicity, and not crossed by any finister accidents, it came to passe (as often we may observe in the like occasions, that although delights doe most especially please us, yet they breed surfeit, when they swell too over-great in abundance) that, *Reßagnano*, who most deerly affected his faire *Nivetta*, and had her now in his free possession, without any perill of loosing her: grew now also to be weary of her, and consequently, to fail in those familiar performances, which formerly had hapned between them. For being one day invited to a Banquet, he saw there a beautifull Gentlewoman of that Countrey, whose perfection pleasing him beyond all comparison: he laboured (by painfull pursuit) to win his purpose; and meeting with her in divers private places, grew prodigall in his expences upon her. This could not be so closely carryed, but being seen and observed by *Nivetta*, she became possessed with extream jealousie, that he could not doe any thing whatsoever, but immediately she had knowledge of it: which fire growing to a flame in her, her patience became extreamely provoked, urging rude speeches from her to him, and daily tormenting him beyond sufferance.

As the enjoying of any thing in too much plenty makes it appear irksome and loathing to us, and the denyall of our desires doe more and more whet on the appetite: even so did the angry spleen of *Ninetta* proceed on in violence against this new commenced love of *Restagnone*. For, in succession of time, whether he injoyed the embracements of his new Mistresse, or no: yet *Ninetta* (by sinister reports, but much more through her own jealous imaginations) held it for infallible, and to be most certain. Hereupon, she fell into an extreme melancholy, which melancholy begat implacable fury, and (consequently such contemptible disdain, as converted her formerly love to *Restagnone*, into most cruell and bloody hatred; yea, and so strangely was reason or respect confounded in her, as no revenge else but speedy death, might satisfie the wrongs she imagined to receive by *Restagnone* and his Minion.

Upon enquiry, by what means she might best compasse her bloody intention, she grew acquainted with a *Grecian* woman, and wonderfully expert in the compounding of poysons, whom she so perswaded by gifts and bounteous promises, that at length she prevailed with her. A deadly water was distilled by her, which (without any other counsell to the contrary) on a day when *Restagnone* had his blood somewhat over-heated, and little dreamed on any such Treason conspired against him by his Wife, she caused him to drink a great draught thereof, under pretence that it was a most soveraigne and cordiall water; but such was the powerfull operation thereof, that the very next morning *Restagnone* was found dead in his bed. When his death was understood by *Folco*, *Hugnetto*, and their Wives, and not knowing how he came to be thus impoysoned (because their Sister seemed to bemoan his sudden death, with as apparent shews of mourning, as they could possibly expresse) they buried him very honourably, and so all suspicion ceased.

But as Fortune is infinite in her fugaries, never acting disaster so closely, but as cunningly discovereth it again: so it came to passe, that within few days following, the *Grecian* woman that had delivered the poyson to *Ninetta*, for such another deed was apprehended even in the action. And being put upon the tortures, among many other horrid villanies by her committed, she confessed the empoysoning of *Restagnone*, and every particle thereto appertaining. Whereupon, the Duke of *Candie*, without any noyse or publication, setting a strong guard about the house of *Folco*, where *Ninetta* then was lodged;

there

there suddenly they seized on her, and upon examination, in maintenance of her desperate revenge, voluntarily confessed the fact, and what else concerned the occasion of his death, by the wrongs which he had offered her.

Folco and *Hugnetto* understanding secretly, both from the Duke, and other intimate friends, what was the reason of *Ninettaes* apprehension, which was not a little displeasing to them, laboured by all their best pains and endevour, to work such means with the Duke, that her life might not perish by fire, although she had most justly deserved it; but all their attempts proved to none effect, because the Duke had concluded to execute justice.

Here you are to observe, that *Magdalena* (being a very beautifull Woman, young, and in the choyceſt flower of her time) had often before been solicited by the Duke, to entertain his love and kindnesse, whereto by no means she would listen or give consent. And being now most earnestly importuned by her, for the safety of her Sisters life, he tooke hold on this her daily suit to him, and in private told her, that if she was so desirous of *Ninettaes* life, it lay in her power to obtain it, by granting him the fruition of her love. She apparently perceiving that *Ninetta* was not likely to live, but by the prostitution of her chaste honor, which she preferred before the losse of her own life, or her Sister, concluded, to let her die, rather than run into any such disgrace. But having an excellent ingenious wit, quick, and apprehensive in perilous occasions, she intended now to make a tryall of over-reaching the lascivious Duke in his wanton purpose, and yet to be assured of her Sisters life, without any blemish to her reputation.

Solliciting him still as she was wont to doe, this promise passed from her to him, that when *Ninetta* was delivered out of prison, and in safety at home in her owne house, he should resort thither in some quaint disguise, and enjoy his long and expected desire; but untill then she would not yeeld. So violent was the Duke in the prosecution of his purpose, that under colour of altering the manner of *Ninettaes* death, not suffering her to be consumed by fire, but to be drowned, according to a custome observed there long time, and at the importunity of her Sister *Magdalena*, in the still silence of the night, *Ninetta* was conveyed into a sack, and sent in that manner to the house of *Folco*, the Duke following soon after, to challenge his promise.

Magdalena having acquainted her Husband with her vertuous intention for preserving her Sisters life, and disappointing the Duke in his wicked desire; her was as contrary to her true meaning in this case, as *Ninetta* had formerly been adverse to *Restagnone*, onely being over-ruled likewise by jealousie, and perswaded in his rash opinion, that the Duke had already dishonoured *Magdalena*, otherwise he would not have delivered *Ninetta* out of prison. Mad fury gave further fire to this unmanly perswasion, and nothing will quench this violent flame, but the life of poore *Magdalena*, suddenly sacrificed in the rescue of her Sister; such a devill is anger, when the understandings bright eye is thereby abused. No credit might be given to her woman'ly protestations, or any thing seem to alter his purpose; but having slain *Magdalena* with his Ponyard, (notwithstanding her tears and humble intreaties) he ran in haste to *Ninettaes* Chamber, she not dreaming on any such desperate accident; and to her he used these dissembling speeches.

Sister (quoth hee) my Wife hath advised, that I should speedily convey you hence, as fearing the renewing of the Dukes fury, and your falling again into the hands of Justice: I have a Barke readi'y prepared for you, and your life being secured, it is all that she and I doe most desire. *Ninetta* being fearfull, and no way distrusting what he had said; in thankfull allowance of her Sisters care, and courteous tender of his so ready service; departed thence presently with him, not taking any farewell of her other Sister, and her Husband. To the sea-shore they came, very weakly provivided of monies to defray their charges, and getting aboard the Bark, directed their course themselves knew not whither.

The amorous Duke in his disguise, having long danced attendance at *Folco's* dore, and no admittance of his entrance, angerly returned back to his Court, protesting severe revenge on *Magdalena*, if she gave him not the better satisfaction, to clear her from thus basely abusing him. On the morrow morning, when *Magdalena* was found murthered in her Chamber, and tydings thereof carryed to the Duke; presently search was made for the bloody offender, but *Folco* being fled and gone with *Ninetta*; some there were, who bearing deadly hatred to *Hugnetta*, incensed the Duke against him and his Wife, as supposing them to be guilty of *Magdalenaes* death. He being thereto very easily perswaded, in regard of his

immoderate

immoderate love to this slain Gentlewoman; went himselfe in person (attended with his Guard) to *Hugnetto*'s house, where he and his wife were seized as prisoners.

These news were very strange to them, and their imprisonment as unwelcome; and although they were truly innocent, either in knowledge of the horrid fact, or the the departure of *Folco* with *Ninetta*; yet being unable to endure the tortures extremitie, they made themselves culpable by Confession, and that they had a hand with *Folco* in the Murther of *Magdalena*. Upon their forced Confession, and Sentence of death pronounced on them by the Duke himselfe; before the day appointed for their publick execution, by great summes of money, which they had closely hid in their house, to serve when any urgent extremity should happen to them; they corrupted their Keepers, and before any intelligence could be had of their flight, they escaped by Sea to *Rhodes*, where they lived afterwards in great distresse and misery. The just vengeance of heaven followed after *Folco* and *Ninetta*, he for murthering his honest Wife, and she for poysoning her offending Husband: for being beaten a long while on the Seas, by tempestuous storms and weather, and not admitted landing in any Port or Creek; they were driven back on the coast of *Candie* again, where being apprehended and brought to the City before the Duke, they confessed their severall and notorious offences, and ended their loathed lives in one fire together.

Thus the idle and loose life of *Restagnone*, with the frantick rage and jealousie of *Ninetta* and *Folco* overturned all their long continued happinesse, and threw a disastrous ending on them all.

Gerbino, *contrary to the former plighted faith of his Grandfather, King* Gulielmo, *fought with a ship at Sea, belonging to the King of* Thunis, *to take away his Daughter, who was then in the same ship. She being slain by them that had possession of her, he likewise slew them; and afterward had his own head smitten off.*

The fourth Novell.

In commendation of Justice between Princes; and declaring withall, that neither fear, dangers, nor death it self, can any way daunt a true and loyall Lover.

MAdam *Lauretta* having concluded her Novell, and the company complaining on Lovers misfortunes, some

blaming the angry and jealous fury of *Ninetta*, and every one delivering their severall opinions; the King as awaking out of a passionate perplexity, exalted his looks, giving a signe to Madam *Elisa*, that she should follow next in order; whereto, shee obeying, began in this manner. I have heard (Gracious Ladies, quoth she) of many people, who are verily perswaded, that loves arrowes never wound any body, but onely by the eyes looks and gazes, mocking and scorning such as maintain that men may fall in love by hearing onely. Wherein (beleeve me) they are greatly deceived, as will apear by a Novell as I shall now relate unto you, and wherin you shall plainly perceive, that not onely fame or report is as prevailing as sight; but also hath conducted divers to a wretched and miserable ending of their lives.

Gulielmo the second, King of *Sicily*, according as the *Sicilian* Chronicles record, had two children, the one a Son, named *Don Rogero*, and the other a Daughter, called Madam *Constance*. The said *Rogero* dyed before his Daughter, leaving a Son behinde him, named *Gerbino*, who with much care and cost, was brought up by his Grand father, proving to be a very goodly Prince, and wondrously esteemed for his great valour and humanity. His fame could not containe it self, within the bounds or limits of *Sicily* onely. But being published very prodigally, in many parts of the world beside, flourished with no mean commendations throughout all *Barbarie*, which in those dayes was tributary to the King of *Sicily*. Among other persons deserving most to be respected, the renowned virtues, and affability of this gallant Prince *Gerbino*, was understood by the beauteous Daughter to the King of *Thunis*, who by such as had seen her, was reputed to be one of the rarest creatures, the best conditioned, and of the truest noble spirit, that ever Nature framed in her very choycest pride of Art.

Of famous, virtuous, and worthy men, it was continually her chiefest delight to hear of the admired actions of valiant *Gerbino*, reported to her by many singular discourses: such as could best describe him, with language answerable to his due deservings, won such honorable entertainment in her understanding soule, that they were most affectionately pleasing to her, and in recapitulating (over and over again) his manifold and heroicall perfections, meer speech made her extremely amorous of him, nor willingly would she lend an ear to any other discourse, but that which tended to his honour and advancement.

On the other ſide, the fame of her incomparable beauty, with addition of her other infinite ſingularities beſide, as the world had given ear to innumberleſſe places, ſo *Sicily* came at length acquainted therewith, in ſuch flowing manner, as was truly anſwerable to her merit. Nor ſeemed this as a bare babling rumor, in the Princely hearing of royall *Gerbino*; but was imbraced with ſuch a reall apprehenſion, and the entire probation of a true underſtanding, that hee was no leſſe enflamed with noble affection towards her, than ſhe expreſſed the like in virtuous opinion of him. Wherefore, awaiting ſuch convenient opportunity, when he might entreat licence of his Grand father for his owne going to *Thunis*, under colour of ſome honorable occaſion, for the earneſt deſire he had to ſee her, he gave charge to ſome of his eſpeciall friends (whoſe affairs required their preſence in thoſe parts) to let the Princeſſe underſtand in ſuch ſecret manner as beſt they could deviſe, what noble affection he bare unto her, devoting himſelf onely to her ſervice.

One of his choſen friends thus put in truſt, being a Jeweller, a man of ſingular diſcretion, and often reſorting to Ladies for ſight of his jewels, winning like admittance to the Princeſſe: related at large unto her, the honourable affection of *Gerbino*, with full tender of his perſon to her ſervice, and that ſhe onely was to diſpoſe of him. Both the meſſage and the Meſſenger, were moſt graciouſly welcome to her, and flaming in the ſelf ſame affection towards him: as a teſtimony thereof, one of the very choyceſt jewels which ſhe bought of him, ſhe ſent by him to the Prince *Gerbino*, it being received by him with ſuch joy and contentment, as nothing in the world could be more pleaſing to him. So that afterward, by the truſty carriage of this Jeweller, many Letters and Love-tokens paſſed between them; each being as highly pleaſed with this poor, yet happy kinde of entercourſe, as if they had ſeen and converſed with one another.

Matters proceeding on in this manner, and continuing longer than their love-ſicke paſſions eaſily could permit, yet neither being able to finde out any other means of help; it fortuned that the King of *Thunis* promiſed his Daughter in marriage to the King of *Granada*, whereat ſhe grew exceedingly ſorrowfull; perceiving, not onely ſhe ſhould be ſent further off, by a large diſtance of way from her friend, but alſo be deprived utterly, of all hope ever to enjoy him. And if ſhe could have deviſed any means, either by

ſecret flight from her Father, or any way elſe to further her intention, ſhe would have adventured it for the Princes ſake. *Gerbino* in like manner hearing of this purpoſed marriage, lived in a hell of torments, conſulting oftentimes with his ſoule, how he might be poſſeſſed of her by power, when ſhe ſhould be ſent by Sea to her husband, or private ſtealing her away from her Fathers Court before: with theſe and infinite other thoughts, was he inceſſantly afflicted, both day and night.

By ſome unhappy accident or other, the King of *Thunis* heard of this their ſecret love, as alſo of *Gerbino*'s purpoſed policy to ſurprize her, and how likely he was to effect it, in regard of his manly valour, and ſtore of ſtout friends to aſſiſt him. Hereupon, when the time was come, that he would convey his Daughter thence to her marriage, and fearing to be prevented by *Gerbino*: he ſent to the King of *Sicily*, to let him underſtand his determination, craving ſafe conduct from him, without impeachment of *Gerbino*, or any one elſe; untill ſuch time as his intent was accompliſhed. King *Gulielmo* being aged, and never acquainted with the affectionate proceedings of *Gerbino*, nor any doubtfull reaſon to urge this ſecurity from him, in a caſe convenient to be granted: yeelded the ſooner thereto right willingly, and as a ſignall of his honourable meaning, he ſent him his royall Glove, with a full confirmation for his ſafe conduct.

No ſooner were theſe Princely aſſurances received, but a good ſhip was prepared in the Port of *Carthagena*, well furniſhed with all things thereto belonging, for the ſending his Daughter to the King of *Granada*, waiting for nothing elſe but beſt favouring winds. The young Princeſſe (who underſtood and ſaw all this) ſecretly ſent a Servant of hers to *Palermo*, giving him ſpecial charge on her behalfe, to ſalute the Prince *Gerbino*, and to tell him withall, that (within few dayes) ſhe muſt be tranſported to *Granada*. And now opportunity gave fair and free means to let the world know, whether he were a man of that magnanimous ſpirit or no, as a generall opinion had formerly conceived of him, and whether he affected her ſo firmly, as by many cloſe meſſages he had aſſured her. He who had the charge of this embaſſie, effectually performed it, and then returned back to *Thunis*.

The Prince *Gerbino*, having heard this meſſage from his divine Miſtreſſe, and knowing alſo that the King his Grand-father, had paſt his ſafe conduct to the King of

of *Thunis*, for peaceable passage through his Seas: was at his wits end, in this urgent necessity, what might best be done. Notwithstanding, moved by the setled constancy of his plighted Love, and the speeches delivered to him by the messenger from the Princesse: to shew himself a man endued with courage, he departed thence unto *Messina*, where he made ready two speedy gallies, and fitting them with men of valiant disposition, set away to *Sardiguia*, as making full account that the ship which carryed the Princesse, must come along that Coast. Nor was his expectation therein deceived: for, within few dayes after, the ship (not over-swiftly winded) came sailing neer to the place where they attended for her arrivall; whereof *Gerbino* had no sooner gotten a sight but to animate the Resolutes which were in his company, thus hee spake.

Gentlemen, if you be those men of valour, as heretofore you have been reputed, I am perswaded, that there are some among you, who either formerly have, or now instantly doe feel the all-commanding power of love, without which (as I think) there is not any mortall man, that can have any goodnesse or virtue dwelling in him. Wherefore, if ever you have been amorously affected, or presently have any apprehension thereof, you shall the more easily judge of what I now aym at. True it is, that I doe love, and Love hath guided me to be comforted, and manfully assisted by you, because in yonder ship, which you see comming on so gently under sail (even as if she offered her self to be our prize) not onely is the Jewell which I most esteem, but also mighty and most unvaluable treasure, to be won without any difficult labour, or hazard of a dangerous fight, you being men of such undauntable courage. In the honour of which victory, I covet not any part or parcell, but onely a Lady, for whose sake I have undertaken these Arms, and freely give you all the rest contained in the Ship. Let us set on them, Gentlemen, and my dearest friends; couragiously let us assail the ship; you see how the wind favours us, and (questionlesse) in so good an action, Fortune will not fail us.

Gerbino needed not to have spoken so much, in perswading them to seize so rich a booty; because the men of *Messina* were naturally addicted to spoyl and rapine: and before the Prince began his oration, they had concluded to make the ship their purchase. Wherefore giving a loud shout, according to their Countrey manner, and

commanding their Trumpets to ſound chearfully, they rowed on a main with their Oares, and (in meer deſpight) ſet upon the ſhip, but before the Gallies could come neer her, they that had the charge and managing of her, perceiving with what ſpeed they made towards them, and no likely meanes of eſcaping from them, reſolvedly they ſtood upon their beſt defence, for now it was no time to be ſlothfull.

The Prince being come neer to the Ship, commanded that the Patrons ſhould come to him, except they would adventure the fight. When the *Saracens* were thereof advertiſed, and underſtood alſo what he demanded, they returned anſwer: That their motion and proceeding in this manner, was both againſt Law and plighted faith, which was promiſed by the King of *Sicily*, for their ſafe paſſage through the ſea, by no means to be moleſted or aſſailed. In teſtimony whereof, they ſhewed his Glove, avouching moreover, that neither by force (or otherwiſe) they would yeeld, or deliver him any thing which they had aboard their ſhip.

Gerbino eſpying his gracious Miſtreſſe on the Ships deck, and ſhe appearing to be far more beautiful than Fame had made relation of her: being much more enflamed and ſcorched by the heat of love now, than formerly they had been, replyed thus when they ſhewed the Glove, We have (quoth he) no Paulcon here now, to be humbled at the ſight of your Glove: and therefore, if you will not deliver the Lady, prepare your ſelves for fight, for we muſt have her whether you will or no. Hereupon, they began to let flie (on both ſides) their Darts and Arrowes, with Stones ſent in violent ſort from their ſlings, thus continuing the fight a long while, to very great harm on either ſide. At the length, *Gerbino* perceiving, that ſmall benefit would redound to him, if he did not undertake ſome other kind of courſe; he took a ſmall Pinnace, which purpoſely he brought with him from *Sardignia*, and ſetting it on a flaming fire, conveyed it (by the Gallies help) cloſe to the ſhip. The Sarazens much amazed thereat and evidently perceiving, that either they muſt yeeld or die; brought the Kings Daughter to the prow of the ſhip, moſt grievouſly weeping and wringing her hands. Then calling *Gerbino*, to let him behold their reſolution, there they ſlew her before his face, and throwing her body into the ſea, ſaid: Take her, there we give her to thee, according to our bounden duty, and as thy perjury hath juſtly deſerved.

This

This fight was not a little grievous to the Prince *Gerbino*, who madded now with this their monstrous cruelty, and not caring what became of his owne life, having lost her for whom he onely desired to live; not dreading their Darts, Arrows, slinged stones, or what violence else they could use against him; he leapt aboard their ship, in despight of all that durst resist him, behaving himself there like a hungry starved Lyon, when he enters among a heard of beasts, tearing their carkasses in pieces both with his teeth and paws. Such was the extream fury of this poor Prince, not sparing the life of any one that durst appear in his presence; so that what with the bloody slaughter, and violence of the fires encreasing in the Ship; the Mariners got such wealth as possibly they could save, and suffering the Sea to swallow up the rest, *Gerbino* returned unto his Gallies again, nothing proud of this so ill-gotten victory.

Afterward having recovered the Princesse dead body out of the Sea; and embalmed it with sighes and tears, he returned back into *Sicily*, where he caused it to be most honorably buried, in a little Island, named *Ustica*, face to face confronting *Trepanum*. The King of *Thunis* hearing these disasterous Newes, sent his Ambassador habited in sad mourning, to the aged King of *Sicily*, complaining of his faith broken with him, and how the accident had faln out. Age being suddenly incited to anger, and the King extreamly offended at this injury, seeing no way whereby to deny him justice, it being urged so instantly by the Ambassadors: caused *Gerbino* to be apprehended; and he himselfe (in regard that none of his Lords and Barons would therein assist him, but laboured to divert him by their earnest importunity) pronounced the Sentence of death on the Prince, and commanded to have him beheaded in his presence; affecting rather to die without an heir, than to be thought a King voyd of justice. So these two unfortunate Lovers, never enjoying the very least benefit of their long wished desires: ended both their lives in violent manner.

The three Brethren of Isabella, *slew a Gentleman that secretly loved her. Hughst appeared to her in her sleep, and shewed her in what place they had buryed his body. She (in silent manner) brought away his head, and putting it into a pot of earth, such as Flowers, Basile, or other sweet hearbs are usually set in, she watered*

it (a long while) with her tears. Whereof her Brethren having intelligence, soon after she dyed, with meer excess of sorrow.

The fifth Novell.

Wherein is plainly proved, that Love cannot be rooted up, by any humane power or providence; especially in such a soul, where it hath been really apprehended.

THe Novell of Madam *Eliza* being finished, and some-what commended by the King, in regard of the Tragicall conclusion; *Philomena* was enjoyned to proceed next with her discourse. She being overcome with much compassion, for the hard fortunes of Noble *Gerbino* and his beautyfull Princesse, after an extreme and vehement sigh, thus he spake. My Tale (worthy Ladies) extendeth not to persons of so high birth or quality, as they were, of whom Madam *Eliza* gave you relation: yet (peradventure) it may prove no lesse pityfull. And now I remember my self, *Messina* so lately spoken of, is the place where this accident also hapned.

In *Messina* there dwelt three young men, Brethren, and Merchants, by their common profession, who becomming very rich by the death of their Father, lived in very good fame and repute. Their Father was of *San Gemignano*, and that had a Sister named *Isabella*, young, beautyfull, and well conditioned; who upon some occasion, as yet remained unmarryed. A proper youth, being a Gentleman born in *Pisa*, and named *Lorenzo*, as a trusty factor or servant, had the managing of the Brethrens businesse and affairs. This *Lorenzo* being of comely personage, affable, and excellent in his behaviour, grew so gracious in the eyes of *Isabella*, that she afforded him many respective looks, yea, kindnesse of no common qualities. Which *Lorenzo* taking notice of, and observing by degrees from time to time, gave over all beauties in the City, which might allure any affection from him, and onely fixed his heart on her, so that their love grew to a mutuall embracing, both equally respecting one another, and entertaining kindnesses, as occasion gave leave.

Long time continued this amorous league of love, yet not so cunningly concealed, but at length the secret meeting of *Lorenzo* and *Isabella*, to ease their poor souls of Loves oppressions, was discovered by the eldest of the Brethren, unknown to them who were thus betrayed. He being a man of great discretion, although this sight was highly displeasing to him; yet notwithstanding he kept it

to himself till the next morning, labouring his brain what might best be done in so urgent a case. When day was come, he resorted to his Brethren, and told them what he had seen in the time past, between their Sister and *Lorenzo*.

Many deliberations passed on in this case; but after all, thus they concluded together, to let it proceed on with patient supportance, that no scandall might ensue to them, or their Sister, no evill act being (as yet) committed. And seeming, as if they knew not of their love, had a wary eye still upon her secret walks, awaiting for some convenient time, when without their owne prejudice, or *Isabellaes* knowledge, they might safely break off this stolne love, which was altogether against their liking. So, shewing no worse countenance to *Lorenzo*, than formerly they had done, but imploying and conversing with him in kinde manner; it fortuned, that riding (all three) to recreate themselves out of the City, they took *Lorenzo*, in their company, and when they came to a solitary place, such as suited best with their vile purpose: they ran suddenly upon *Lorenzo*, slew him, and afterward enterred his body, where hardly it could be discovered by any one. Then they returned back to *Messina*, and gave it forth (as a credible report) that they had sent him abroad about their affairs, as formerly they were wont to doe: which every one verily beleeved, because they knew no reason why they should conceit any otherwise.

Isabella, living in expectation of his returne, and perceiving his stay to her was so offensive long: made many demands to her Brethren, into what parts they had sent him, that his tarrying was so quite from all wonted course. Such was her importunate speeches to them, that they taking it very discontentedly, one of them returned her this frowning answer. What is your meaning Sister, by so many questionings after *Lorenzo*? What urgent affaires have you with him, that makes you so impatient upon his absence? If hereafter you make any more demands for him, we shall shape you such a reply, as will be but little to your liking. At these harsh words *Isabella* fell into abundance of tears, where-among she mingled many sighes and groans, such as were able to overthrow a far greater constitution: so that being full of fear and dismay, yet no way distrusting her Brethrens so wicked and hainous a cruell deed; she durst not question any more after him.

In

In the silence of dark night, as she lay afflicted in her bed, oftentimes would she call for *Lorenzo*, entreating his speedy return to her. And then again, as if he had been present with her, she checkt and reproved him for his long absence. One night among the rest, she being grown almost hopelesse, of ever seeing him again, having a long while wept and grievously lamented; her senses and faculties utterly spent and tyred, that she could not utter any more complaints, she fell into a trance or sleep, and dreamed, that the ghost of *Lorenzo* appeared unto her, in torne and unbefitting garments, his lookes pale, meager, and starving and (as she thought) thus spake to her. My deer love *Isabella*, thou dost nothing but torment thy self, with calling on me, accusing me for overlong tarrying from thee: I am come therefore to let thee know, that thou canst not enjoy my company any more, because the very same day when last thou saweſt mee, thy Brethren most bloodily murthered me. And acquainting her with the place where they had buryed his mangled body, he strictly charged her not to call him at any time afterward, and so vanished away.

The young Damosell awaking, and giving some credite to her Vision, sighed and wept exceedingly; and after she was risen in the morning, not daring to say any thing to her Brethren, she resolutely determined, to goe see the place formerly appointed her, onely to make tryall, if that which she seemed to see in her sleep, should carry any likely-hood of truth. Having obtained favour of her Brethren, to ride a days journey from the City, in company of her trusty Nurse, who long time had attended on her in the house, and knew the secret passages of her love: they rode directly to the designed place, which being covered with some store of dryed leaves, and more deeply sunke than any other part of the ground thereabout, they digged not farre, but they found the body of the murthered *Lorenzo*, as yet very little corrupted or impaired, and then perceived the truth of her vision.

Wisdome and government so much prevailed with her, as to instruct her soul, that her tears spent there, were meerly fruitlesse and in vain, neither did the time require any long tarrying there. Gladly would she have carryed the whole body with her, secretly to bestow honourable enterment on it, but yet exceeded the compasse of her ability. Wherefore, in regard she could not have all, yet she would be possessed of a part, and

and having brought a keen razor with her, by help of the nurse, she divided the head from the body, wrapped it up in a Napkin, which the Nurse conveyed into her lap, and then laid the body in the ground again. Thus being undiscovered by any, they departed thence, and arrived at home in convenient time, where being alone by themselves in the Chamber: she washed the head over and over with her teares, and bestowed infinite kisses thereon.

Not long after, the Nurse having brought her a large earthen pot, such as we use to set Basile, Marjoram, Flowers, or other sweet hearbs in; and shrowding the head in a silken scarfe, put it into the pot, covering it with earth, and planting divers roots of excellent Basile therein, which she never watered, but either with her teares, Rose-water, or water distilled from the flowers of Oranges. This pot she used continually to sit by, either in her Chamber, or any where else: for she carryed it always with her, sighing and breathing forth sad complaints thereto, even as if they had been uttered to her *Lorenzo*, and day by day this was her continuall exercise, to the no mean admiration of her Brethren, and many other friends that beheld her.

So long she held on in this mourning manner, that, what by the continuall watering of the Basile, and putrefaction of the head, so buried in the pot of earth; it grew very flourishing, and most odoriferous to such as sented it, that as no other Basile could possibly yeeld so sweet a savour. The neighbours noting this behaviour in her, observing the long continuance thereof, how much her bright beauty was defaced, and the eyes sunk into her head by incessant weeping, made many kinde and friendly motions, to understand the reason of her so violent oppressions; but could not by any means prevaile with her, or win any discovery by her Nurse, so faithfull was she in secresie to her. Her brethren also waxed weary of this carriage in her; and having very often reproved her for it, without any other alteration in her: at length, they closely stole away the pot of Basile from her, for which she made infinite wofull lamentation, earnestly entreating to have it restored againe, avouching that she could not live without it.

Perceiving that she could not have the pot againe, she fell into an extreme sickness, occasioned only by her ceaseless weeping: & never urged she to have any thing, but the restoring of the Basile pot. Her brethren grew

greatly

greatly amazed thereat, because she never called for ought else beside; and thereupon were very desirous to ransack the pot to the very botome. Having emptyed out all the earth, they found the Scarfe of silk, wherein the head of *Lorenzo* was wrapp'd; which was (as yet) not so much consumed, but by the locks of hair, they knew it to be *Lorenzo*'s head, whereat they became confounded with amazement.

Fearing lest their offence might come to open publication, they buryed it very secretly; and before any could take notice thereof, they departed from *Messina*, and went to dwell at *Naples*. *Isabella* crying and calling still for her pot of Basile, being unable to give over mourning, dyed within a few dayes after. Thus have you heard the hard fate of poor *Lorenzo* and *Isabella*. Within no long while after, when this accident came to be publickly known, an excellent Ditty was composed thereof beginning thus:

Cruell and unkinde was the Christian,
That rob'd me of my Basiles blisse, &c.

A beautifull Virgin, named Andreana, *became enamoured of a young Gentleman, called* Gabriello. *In conference together, she declared a dream of hers to him, and he another of his to her; whereupon* Gabriello *fell downe suddenly dead in her arms. She, and her Chamber-maide were apprehended by the Officers, belonging to the Signeury, as they were carrying* Gabriello, *to lay him before his owne dore. The Potestate offering violence to the Virgin, and she resisting him vertuously: it came to the understanding of her father, who approved the innocence of his Daughter, and compassed her deliverance. But she afterward, being weary of all worldly felicities, entred into Religion, and became a Nun.*

The sixth Novell.

Describing the admirable accidents of Fortune; and the mighty prevailing power of Love.

THe Novell which Madam *Philomena* had so graciously related, was highly pleasing unto the other Ladies; because they had oftentimes heard the Song, without knowing who made it, or upon what occasion it was composed. But when the King saw that the Tale was ended, he commanded *Pamphilus*, that he should follow in his due course: whereupon he spake thus.

The

The Dream already recounted in the laſt Novell, doth miniſter matter to me, to make report of another Tale, wherein mention is made of two ſeverall dreams; which divined as well what was to enſue, as the other did what had hapned before. But no ſooner were they finiſhed in the relation, by both the parties which had formerly dreamt them, but the effects of both as ſuddenly followed.

Worthy Ladies, I am ſure that it is not unknowne to you, that it is, and hath been a generall paſſion, to all men and women living, to ſee divers and ſundry things while they were ſleeping. And although (to the ſleeper) they ſeem moſt certain, ſo that when he awaketh, he judgeth the truth of ſome, the likelyhood of others, and ſome beyond all poſſibility of truth: yet notwithſtanding, many dreams have been obſerved to happen; and very ſtrangely hath come to paſſe. And this hath been a grounded reaſon for ſome men, to give as great credit to ſuch things as they ſee ſleeping, as they doe to others uſually waking. So that, according unto their dreams, and as they make conſtruction of them, they are ſadly diſtaſted, or merrily pleaſed, even as (by them) they either fear or hope. On the contrary, there are ſome who will not credit any dream whatſoever, untill they be fallen into the very ſame danger which formerly they ſaw, and moſt evidently in their ſleep.

I mean not to commend either the one or other, becauſe they doe not alwayes fall out to be true, neither are they at all times liers. Now, that they prove not all to be true, we can beſt teſtifie to our ſelves. And that they are not alwayes lyers, hath already been manifeſted, by the Diſcourſe of Madam *Philomena*, and as you ſhall perceive by mine own, which next commeth in order to ſalute you. Wherefore, I am of this opinion, that in matters of good life, and performing honeſt actions, no dream is to be feared preſaging the contrary, neither are good worksany way to be hindred by them. Likewiſe in matters of bad and wicked quality, although our dreams may appear favourable to us, and our viſions flatter us with proſperous ſucceſſe: yet let us give no credence unto the beſt, nor addict our mindes to them of contrary nature. So we proceed.

In the City of *Breſcia*, there lived ſometime a Gentleman, named *Meſſer Negro da Ponte Carero*, who (among may other children) had a Daughter, called *Andreana*, young and beautifull, but as yet unmarryed. It fortuned, that ſhe fell in love with a neighbor, named

Gabriello;

Gabriello; a comely young Gentleman, of affable complexion, and graciously conditioned. Which love was (with like kindnesse) welcommed and entertained by him; and by the furtherance of her Chamber-maid, it was so cunningly carryed, that in the Garden belonging to *Andreanaes* father, she had many meetings with her *Gabriello*. And solemne vows being mutually passed between them, that nothing but death could alter their affection: by such ceremonious words as are used in marriage, they maryed themselves secretly together, & continued their stolne chaste pleasures with equall contentment to them both.

It came to passe, that *Andreana* sleeping in her bed, dreamed, that she met with *Gabriello* in the Garden, where they both embracing lovingly together, she seemed to see a thing black and terrible, which suddenly issued forth of his body, but the shape thereof she could not comprehend. It rudely seized upon *Gabriello*, and in despight of her utmost strength (with incredible force) snatcht him out of her armes, and sinking with him into the earth, they never after did see one another. Whereupon, overcome with extremity of grief and sorrow, presently she awaked, being then not a little joyfull, that she found no such matter as she feared, yet continued very doubtfull of her Dream. In regard whereof, *Gabriello* being desirous to visite her the night following, she laboured very diligently to hinder his comming to her; yet knowing his loyall affection toward her, and fearing lest he should grow suspicious of some other matter, she welcommed him into the Garden, where gathering both White and Damaske Roses (according to the nature of the season) at length they sate downe by a very goodly Fountain, which stood in the middest of the garden.

After some small familiar Discourse passing between them, *Gabriello* demanded of her, upon what occasion she denyed his comming thither the night before, and by such a sudden unexpected admonition? *Andreana* told him, that it was in regard of a horrid Dream, wherewith her soule was perplexed the precedent night, and doubt what might ensue thereon. *Gabriello* hearing this, began to smile, affirming to her, that it was an especiall note of folly, to give any credit to idle dreams: because (oftentimes) they are caused by excesse of feeding, and continually are observed to be meer lies. For (quoth he) if I had had any superstitious beliefe of Dreames, I should not then have come hither now: yet not so much as being dismayed by your Dream, but for another of mine owne, which

which I am the more willing to acquaint you withal.

Me thought, I was in a goodly Foreſt, in the noble exerciſe of ſportfull hunting, and became poſſeſſed of a young Hinde, the very love'yeſt and moſt pleaſing beaſt that was ever ſeen. It ſeemed to be as white as ſnow, and grew (in a ſhort while) ſo familiar with me, that by no means it would forſake me. I could not but accept this rare kindneſſe in the beaſt, and fearing leſt I ſhould loſe it, I put a coller of gold about the neck thereof, and faſtened it into a chain of gold alſo, which then I held ſtrongly in my hand.

The Hinde afterward couched down by me, laying his head mildely in my lap; and on the ſudden, a black gray-hound bitch came ruſhing on us (but whence, or how, I could not imagine) ſeeming half hunger-ſtarved, and very ugly to look upon. At me ſhe made her full carreere, without any power in me of reſiſtance, and putting her mouth into the left ſide of my boſom, griped it ſo mainly with her teeth, that (me thought) I felt my heart quite bitten through, and ſhe tugged on ſtill, to take it wholly away from me; by which imagined pain and anguiſh I felt, inſtantly I awaked. Laying then my hand upon my ſide, to know whether any ſuch harm had befaln me, or no, and finding none, I ſmiled at mine owne folly, in making ſuch a frivolous and idle ſearch. What can be ſaid then in theſe or the like caſes? Divers times I have had as ill ſeeming Dreams, yea, and much more to be feared, yet never any thing hurtfull to me, followed thereon; and therefore I have alwayes made the leſſe account of them.

The young Maiden, who was ſtill diſmayed by her own Dream, became much more afflicted in her mind, when ſhe had heard this other reported by *Gabriello*: but yet, to give him no occaſion of diſtaſte, ſhe bare it out in the beſt manner ſhe could deviſe to do. And albeit they ſpent the time in much pleaſing diſcourſe, maintained with infinite ſweet kiſſes on either ſide: yet was ſhe ſtill ſuſpicious, but knew not whereof; fixing her eyes oftentimes upon his face, and throwing ſtrange looks to all parts of the garden, to catch hold on any ſuch black ugly ſight, whereof he had formerly made deſcription to her. As thus ſhe continued in theſe afflicting fears, it fortuned, that *Gabriello* ſuddenly breathed forth a very vehement ſigh, and throwing his arms faſt about her, ſaid, O help me dear Love, or elſe I die; &, in ſpeaking the words, fel down upon the ground. Which the young Damoſell perceiving, and drawing him into her lap, weeping, ſaid: Alas ſweet friend, what pain doſt thou feel?

Gabriello

Gabriello answered not one word, but being in an exceeding sweat, without any ability of drawing breath, very soon after he gave up the ghost. How grievous this strange accident was to poor *Andreana*, who loved him as deerly as her owne life: you that have felt loves tormenting afflictions, can more easily conceive, than I relate. Wringing her hands, and weeping incessantly, calling him, rubbing his temples, and using all likely means to reduce life: she found all her labour to be spent in vain, because he was stark dead indeed, and every part of his body as cold as ice, whereupon: she was in such wofull extremity, that she knew not what to doe or say. All about the Garden she went weeping in infinite fears and distraction in soul, calling for her Chamber-maid, the onely secret friend to their stoln meetings, and told her the occasion of this sudden sorrow. After they had sighed and mourned a while over the dead body of *Gabriello*, *Andreana* in this manner spake unto her Maid,

Seeing Fortune hath thus bereft me of my love, mine owne life must needs be hatefull to mee: but before I offer any violence to my self, let us devise some convenient means, as may both preserve mine honor from any touch or scandall, and conceal the secret love passing between us: but yet in such honest sort, that this body (whose blessed soul hath too soon forsaken it) may be honorably interred. Whereto her Maid thus answered: Mistresse, never talk of doing any violence to your selfe, because by such a black and dismall deed, as you have lost his kind company here in this life, so shall you never see him in the other world: for immediately you sink down to hell, which foule place cannot be a receptacle for his fair soul, that was indued with so many singular virtues. Wherefore, I hold it far better for you, to comfort your self by all good means, and with the power of fervent prayer, to fight against all desperate intruding passions, as a truely virtuous minde ought to doe. Now, as concerning his interment, the means is readily prepared for you here in this Garden, where never he hath been seen by any, or his resorting hither known, but onely to our selves. If you will not consent to have it so, let you and I convey his body hence, and leave it in such an apt place, where it may be found to morrow-morning: and being then carryed to his own house, his friends and kindred will give it honest buriall.

Andreana, although her soule was extraordinarily sorrowfull, and tears flowed abundantly from her eyes, yet

yet she listned attentively to her Maids counsell; allowing her first advice against desperation, to be truely good, but for the rest, thus she replyed. God forbid (quoth she) that I should suffer so deer a loving friend, as he hath alwayes shewed himselfe to me; nay, which is much more, my Husband, by sacred and solemne vowes passed between us; to be put into the ground basely, and like a Dog, or else to be left in the open street. He hath had the sacrifice of my Virgin-teares, and if I can prevaile, he shall have some of his kindreds, as I have instantly devised, what (in this hard case) is best to be done. Forthwith she sent the Maid to her Chamber, for divers els of white Damask lying in her Chest, which when she had brought, they spread it abroad on the grasse, even in the manner of a winding sheet, and therein wrapped the body of *Gabriello*; with a fair wrought pillow lying under his head, having first (with their tears) closed his mouth and eyes, and placed a chaplet of flowers on his head, covering the whole shrowd over in the same manner; which being done, thus she spake to her Maid.

The dore of his owne house is not farre hence, and thither (between us two) he may be easily carryed, even in this manner as we have adorned him; where leaving him in his owne Porch, we may return back before it be day: and although it will be a sad sight to his friends, yet because he dyed in mine arms, and wee being so well discharged of the body, it will be a little comfort to me. When she had ended these words, which were not uttered without infinite teares, the Maid intreated her to make haste, because the night swiftly passed on. At last, she remembred the Ring on her finger, wherewith *Gabriello* had solemnly espoused her, and opening the shrowd again, she put it on his finger, saying: My deer and loving Husband, if thy soul can see my tears, or any understanding doe remain in thy body, being thus untimely taken from me: receive the latest gift thou gavest me, as a pledge of our solemne and spotlesse marriage. So, making up the shroud again as it should be, and conveighing it closely out of the Garden, they went on along with it towards his dwelling house.

As thus they passed along, it fortuned, that they were met and taken by the Guard or Watch belonging to the Potestate, who had been so late abroad, about very earnest and important businesse. *Andreana*, desiring more the dead mans company, than theirs whom now she had thus met withall, boldly spake

thus to them. I know who and what you are, and can tell my selfe, that to offer flight will never avail me: wherefore, I am ready to goe along with you before the Seigneury, and there wil tell the truth concerning this accident. But let not any man among you, be so bold as to lay hand on me, or to touch mee, beeause I yeeld so obediently to you; neither to take any thing from this body, except he intend that I shall accuse him. In which respect, not any one daring to displease her, she went with the dead body to the Seigneury, there to answer all Objections.

When notice hereof was given to the Potestate, he arose; and she being brought forth into the Hall before him, he questioned with her, how, and by what means this accident happened. Beside, he sent for divers Physicians, to be informed by them, whether the Gentleman were poysoned, or otherwise murthered? All of them affirmed the contrary, avouching rather that some impostumation had ingendred neer his heart, which suddenly breaking, occasioned his as sudden death. The Potestate hearing this, and perceiving that *Andreana* was little or nothing at all faulty in the matter, her beauty and good carriage, kindled a villanous and lustfull desire in him towards her, provoking him to the immodest motion, that upon granting his request, he would release her. But when he saw, that all his perswasions were to no purpose, he sought to compasse his will by violence: which like a virtuous and valiant *Virago*, she worthily withstood, defending her honour nobly, and reproving him with many injurious speeches, such as a lustful Letcher justly deserved.

On the morrow morning, these news being brought to her Father, *Messer Negro da Ponte Carao*, grieving thereat exceedingly, and accompanyed with many of his friends, he went to the Pallace. Being there arrived, and informed of the matter by the Potestate: he demanded (in teares) of his Daughter, how, and by what means she was brought thither? The Potestate would needs accuse her first, of outrage and wrong offered to him by her, rather than to tarry her accusing of him; yet, commending the young Maiden, and her constancy, proceeded to say, that onely to prove her, he had made such a motion to her; but finding her so firm, his liking was now so addicted to her, that if her Father were so pleased to forget the remembrance of her former secret husband, he willingly would accept her in marriage.

While

While thus they continued talking, *Andreana* comming before her Father, the tears trickling mainly down her cheeks, and falling at his feet, she began in this manner. Dear Father, I shall not need to make an Historicall relation, either of my youthfull boldnesse or misfortunes, because you have both seen and known them: rather most humbly, I crave your pardon, for another error committed, in that, both without your leave and liking, I accepted the man as my troth-plighted husband, whom (above all other in the world) I most intirely affected. If my offence herein do challenge the forfeit of my life, than (good Father) I free you from any such pardon; because my onely desire is to die your Daughter, and in your gracious favor: with which words, in signe of her humility, she kissed his feet. *Messer Negro da Ponte*, being a man well in yeers, and of a gentle nature, observing what his Daughter said, could not refrain from tears, and in his weeping, lovingly took her from the ground, speaking thus to her.

Daughter, I could have wisht, that thou hadst taken such an husband, as (in my judgement) had been best fitting for thee: yet if thou madest election of one answerable to thine own good liking, I have no just reason to be offended therewith. My greatest cause of complaint is, thy too severe concealing it from me, and the small trust thou didst repose in me, because thou hast lost him, before I knew him. Nevertheless, seeing these occasions are thus come to passe and accidents already ended, cannot possibly be recalled, it is my will, that as I would gladly have contented thee, by making him my Son in law if he had lived, so I will expresse the like love to him now he is dead. And so turning himself to his kindred and friends, lovingly requested of them, that they would grace *Gabriello* with most honourable obsequies.

By this time, the kindreds and friends to the dead man (upon noyse of his death bruited abroad) were likewise come to the Palace, yea, most of the men and women dwelling in the City, the body of *Gabriello* being laid in the midst of the Court, upon the white Damask shroud given by *Andreana*, with infinite Roses, and other sweet flowers lying thereon: and such was the peoples love to him, that never was any mans death, more bemoaned and lamented. Being delivered out of the Court, it was carried to buryall, not like a Burgesse or ordinary Citizen, but with such pomp as beseemed a Lord Baron, and on the shoulders of very noble Gentlemen, with great honour and reverence.

Within

Within a few dayes after, the Poteſtate purſuing his former motion of marriage, and the Father moving it to his Daughter, ſhe would not by any means liſten thereto. And he being deſirous to give her contentment, deliuered her, and her Chamber-maid into a Religious Abby, very famous for devotion and ſanctity, where afterwards they ended their lives.

Fair Simonida *affecting* Paſquino, *and walking with him in a pleaſant garden, it fortuned, that* Paſquino *rubbed his teeth with a leaf of Sage, and immediately fell downe dead.* Simonida *being brought before the Bench of Juſtice, and charged with the death of* Paſquino, *ſhe rubbed her teeth likewiſe with one of the leaves of the ſame Sage, a declaring what ſhe ſaw him doe, and thereon ſhe died alſo in the ſame manner.*

The ſeventh Novell.

Whereby is given to underſtand, that love and death do uſe their power equally alike, as well upon poor and meane perſons, as on them that are rich and noble.

P*Amphilus* having ended his Tale, the King declaring an outward ſhew of paſſion, in regard of *Andreanas* diſaſtrous fortune; fixed his eye on Madam *Emilia*, and gave her ſuch an apparent ſigne, as expreſſed his pleaſure, for her next ſucceeding in diſcourſe; which being ſufficient for her underſtanding, thus ſhe began. Fair aſſembly, the Novell ſo lately delivered by *Panphilus*, maketh me willing to report another to you, varying from it, in any kinde of reſemblance; onely this excepted: that as *Andreana* loſt her Lover in a Garden, even ſo did ſhe of whom I am now to ſpeake. And being brought before the ſeat of Juſtice, according as *Andreana* was, freed her ſelfe from the power of the Law; yet neither by force, or her owne virtue, but by her ſudden and inopinate death. And although the nature of love is ſuch (according as we have oftentimes heretofore maintained) to make his abiding in the houſes of the nobleſt perſons; yet men and women of poore and far inferiour quality, doe not alwayes ſit out of his reach, though encloſed in their meaneſt Cottages; declaring himſelf ſometime as a powerfull Commander in thoſe humble places, as he doth in the richeſt and moſt Emperious Palaces. As will plainly appear unto you, either in all, or a great part of my Novell, whereto our City pleadeth ſome title; though by the diverſitie of our diſcourſes, talking of ſo many

ſeverall

fiverall accidents; we have wandred into many other parts of the world, to make all answerable to our owne liking.

It is not any long time since, when there lived in our City of *Florence*, a young and beautifull Damosell, yet according to the nature of her condition, because she was the Daughter of a poor Father, and called by the name of *Simonida*. Now, albeit she was not supplyed by any better means than to maintain her self by her owne painfull travell, and earn her bread before she could eat it, by carding and spinning to such as imployed her; yet was she not so base or dejected a spirit, but had both courage and sufficient virtue, to understand the secret solliciting of love, and to distinguish the parts of well deserving, both by private behaviour and outward ceremony. As naturall instinct was her Tutor thereto, so wanted she not a second main and urging motion, a chip hewed out of the like timber, one no better in birth than her selfe, a proper young springall, named *Pasquino*, whose generous behaviour, and noble carriage, and gracefull actions (in bringing her daily wool to spin by season his Master was a Clothier) prevailed upon her liking and affection.

Nor was he negligent in the observation of her amorous regards, but the Tinder took, and his soul flamed with the self same fire; making him as desirous of her loving acceptance, as possibly she could be of his; so that the commanding power of love, could not easily be distinguished in which of them it had the greater predominance. For every day as he brought her fresh supply of wools, and found her seriously busied at her wheel: her soul would vent forth many deep sighs, and those sighs fetcht flouds of tears from her eyes, thorough the singular good opinion she had conceived of him, and earnest desire to enjoy him. *Pasquino* on the other side, as leasure gave him leave for the least conversing with her: his disease was every way answerable to hers, for tears stood in his eyes, sighs flew abroad, to ease the poor hearts afflicting oppressions; which though he was unable to conceal, yet would he seem to cloud them cleanly, by entreating her that his Masters work might be neatly performed, and with such speed as time would permit her, intermixing infinite praises of her artificiall spinning; and affirming withall, that the Quills of yearn received from her, were the choycest beauty of the whole peece; so that, when other Work women played, *Simonida* was sure to want no employment.

Hereupon, the one soliciting, and the other taking delight in being solicited; it came to passe that of excesse bred the bolder courage, and overmuch bashfulnesse became abandoned, yet no immodesty passing between them, but affection grew the better setled in them both, by interchangeable vowes of constant perseverance, so that death only, but no disaster else had power to divide them. Their mutuall delight continuing on in this manner, with more forcible increasing of their Loves equall flame: it fortuned, that *Pasquino* sitting by *Simonida*, told her of a goodly Garden, wherein he was desirous to bring her, to the end, that they might the more safely converse together, without the suspition of envious eyes. *Simonida* gave answer of her well-liking the motion, and acquainting her Father therewith, he gave her leave, on he Sunday following after dinner, to go fetch the pardon of S. *Gallo*, and afterwards, to visite the Garden.

A modest young mayden named *Lagina*, following the same profession, and being an intimate familiar friend, *Simonida* took along in her company and came to the Garden appointed by *Pasquino*; where she found him readily expecting her comming, and another friend also with him, called *Puccino* (albeit more usually termed *Strambo*) a secret well-willer to *Lagina*, whose love became the more furthered by this friendly meeting. Each lover delighting in his hearts chosen Mistresse, caused them to walke alone by themselves, as the spaciousnesse of the Garden gave them ample liberty: *Puccino* with his *Lagina* in one part, and *Pasquino* with his *Simonida* in another. The walke which they had made choise of, was by a long and goodly bed of Sage, turning and returning by the same bed as their conference ministred occasion, and as they pleased to recreate themselves, affecting rather to continue still there, then in any part of the Garden.

One while they would sit down by the Sage bed, and afterward rise to walke again, as ease and wearinesse seemed to invite them. At length, *Pasquino* chanced to crop a leafe of the Sage, wherewith he both rubbed his teeth and gummes, and champed it between them also, saying, that there is no better thing in the world to cleanse the teeth withall after feeding. Not long after he had champed the Sage in his teeth, returning to his former kinde of discoursing, but his countenance began to change very pale, his sight failed, and speech forsooke him; so that (in briefe) he fell down dead. Which when *Simonida* beheld, wringing her hands, she

she cryed out for he'pe to *Strambo* and *Lagina*, who immediately came running to her. They finding *Pasquino* not only dead, but his body swolne very much, and strangely over spred with foule blacke spots, both on his face, hands, and all parts else beside: *Strambo* cryed out, saying, Ah wicked maid, what hast thou poysoned him?

These words and their shrill out-cryes also were heard by neighbours dwelling neer to the Garden, who coming in suddenly upon them, and seeing *Pasquino* lying dead, and hugely swolne, *Strambo* likewise complaining, and accusing *Simonida* to have poysoned him; she making no answer, but standing in a gast'y amazement, all her senses meerly confounded at such a strange and uncouth accident, in losing him whom she so dearly loved: knew not how to excuse her selfe, and therefore every one verily beleeved, that *Strambo* had not unjustly accused her. Poor wofull maid, thus was she instantly apprehended, and drowned in her teares they led her along to the Potestates Palace, where her accusation was justified by *Strambo*, *Lagina*, and two men more; the one named *Atticciato*, and the other *Malegevole*, fellowes and companions with *Pasquino*, who came into the Garden upon the out-cry.

The Judge without any delay at all gave eare to the businesse, and examined the cause very strictly: but could by no meanes comprehend, that any malice should appear in her towards him, nor that she was guilty of the mans death. Wherefore in the presence of *Simonida* he desired to see the dead body, and the place where he fell down dead, because there he intended to have her relate, how she saw the accident to happen, that her own speeches might the sooner condemne her, whereas the case yet remained doubtfull and farre beyond his comprehension. So, without any further publication, and to avoid the following of the turbulent multitude, they departed from the Bench of Justice, and came to the place where *Pasquinos* body was swollen like a Tunne. Demanding there questions, concerning his behaviour, when they walked in conference together, and not a little admiring the manner of his death, while he stood advisedly considering thereon.

She going to the bed of Sage, reporting the precedent history, even from the originall, to the ending: the better to make the case understood, without the least colour of ill cariage towards *Pasquino*, according as she had seen him do, even so did she plucke another leafe

of the Sage, rubbing her teeth therewith, and champing it as he formerly did. *Strambo*, and the other intimate friends of *Pasquino*, having noted in what manner she used the sage, and this appearing as her utmost, resolve either to acquit or condemne her: in presence of the Judge they smiled thereat, mocking and deriding whatsoever she said, or did, and desiring the more earnestly the sentence of death against her, that her body might be consumed with fire, as a just punishment for her abominable transgression.

Poor *Simonida*, sighing and sorrowing for her dear Loves losse, and (perhaps) not meanly terrified with the strict infliction of torment so severely urged and followed by *Strambo* and the rest, standing dumb still, without answering so much as one word; by tasting of the same Sage, fell down dead by the bed, even by the like accident *Pasquino* formerly did, to the admirable astonishment of all there present.

Oh poor unfortunate Lovers, whose Starres were so auspicious to you, as to finish both your mortal lives, and fervent love, in lesse limitation than a day space. How to censure of your deaths, and happiness to ensue thereon, by an accident so strange and inevitable: it is not within the compasse of my power, but to hope the best, and so I leave you. But yet concerning *Simonida* her selfe, in the common opinion of us that remain living, her true virtue and innocency (though Fortune was otherwise most cruell to her) would not suffer her to sink under the testimony of *Stramba*, *Lugina*, *Attiociato*, and *Malegevole*, being but Carders of wooll, or perhaps of meaner condition; a happier course was ordained for her, to passe cleerly from the infamous imputation, and follow her *Pasquino* in the very same manner of death, and with such a speedy expedition.

The Judge standing amazed, and all there present in his company, were silent for a long while together: but upon better recollection of his spirits, thus he spake. This inconvenience which thus hath hath hapned, and confounded our senses with no common admiration; in mine opinion, concerneth the bed of Sage, avouching it either to be venomous, or dangerously infected. which (nevertheless) is seldome found in Sage. But to the end, that it may not be offensive to any more hereafter, I will have it wholly digd up by the roots, and then to be burnt in the open Market place.

Hereupon, the Gardiner was presently sent for, and before the Judge would depart hence, he saw the bed

of Sage digged up by the roots, and found the true occasion, whereby these two poor Lovers lo't their loves. For, just in the midst of the bed, and at the main root, which directed all the Sage in growth; lay an huge mighty Toad, even weltring (as it were) in a hole full of poyson; by meanes whereof, in conjecture of the Judge, and all the rest, the whole bed of Sage became envenomed, occasioning every leaf thereof to be deadly in taste. None being so hardy, as to approach neer the Toad, they made a pile of wood directly over it, and setting it on a flame of fire, th ew all the Sage therein, and so they were consumed together. So ended all further suit in Law, concerning the deaths of *Pasquino* and *Tom-aida*: whose bodies being carryed to the Church of St. *Paul*, by their sad and sorrowfull Accusers, *Strambo*, *Lupino*, *Attriociato*, and *Malagevolo*, were buryed together, in one goodly Monument, for a future memory of their hard fortune.

Geronimo affecting a young Maiden, named Silvestra *was constrained (by the earnest importunitie of his Mother) to take a journey to* Paris. *At his return home from thence again, he found his love* Silvestra *married. By secret means, he got entrance into her house, and died upon the bed lying by her. Afterward his body being carried to Church, to receive buriall, she likewise died there instantly upon his coarse.*

The eight Novell.

Wherein is again declared, the great indiscretion and folly of them, that think to constrain love according to their will, after it is constantly setled before: With other instructions, concerning the power of Love.

MAdam *Emilia* had no sooner concluded her Novell, but Madam *Neiphila* (by the Kings command) began to speak in this manner. It seemeth to me (Gracious Ladies) that there are some such people to be found, who imagine themselves to know more, than all other else in the world beside, and yet indeed do know nothing at all: presuming (thorow this arrogant opinion of theirs) to employ and oppose their senseless understanding, against infallible grounded reason, yea, and to attempt courses, not only contrary to the counsel and judgment of men but also to cross the nature of divine ordination. Out of which fancy and ambitious presumption, many mighty harms have already had beginning, and more are like to ensue upon such boldnesse, because it is the ground of all evill.

Now, in regard that among all other naturall things, no one is leſſe ſubject to take counſell, or can be wrought to contrariety, then Love, whoſe nature is ſuch, as rather to run upon his own raſh conſumption, then to be ruled by admonitions of the very wiſeſt: my memory hath inſpired it ſelfe, with matter incident to this purpoſe, effectually to approve, what I have already ſaid. For I am now to ſpeak of a woman who would appear to have more wit, then either ſhe had indeed, or appertained to her by any title. The matter alſo wherein ſhe would needs ſhew her ſtudious judgment and capacity, was of much more conſequence then ſhe could deſerve to meddle withall. Yet ſuch was the iſſue of her fond preſuming; that even (in one inſtant) ſhe expelled both love, and the ſoul of her owne ſonne out of his body, where (doubtleſſe) it was planted by divine favour and appointment.

In our owne City (according to true and ancient teſtimony) there dwelt ſometime a worthy and wealthy Merchant, named *Leonardo Sighiero*, who by his wife had onely one Son, called *Ieroſimo*; and within a ſhort while after his birth, *Leonardo* being very ſicke, and having ſetled all his affaires in good order; departed out of this wretched life to a better. The Tutors and Governours of the childe, thought it fitteſt to let him live with his Mother, where he had his whole education, though ſchooled among many other worthy neighbours children, according as in moſt Cities they uſe to do. Young *Ieronimo* growing on in yeares, and frequenting dayly the company of his Schoole-felowes and others: he would often ſport (as the reſt did) with the neighbours children, and much pretty paſtime they found together.

In the harmeleſſe recreations of youth, graver judgements have often obſerved, that ſome eſpeciall matter received then ſuch originall, as greater effect hath followed thereon. And many times, parents and kindred have been the occaſion (although perhaps beyond their expectation) of very ſtrange and extraordinary accidents, by names of familiarity paſſing between Boyes and Girles, as King, and Queen, ſweet-heart, and ſweet-heart, friend, and friend, husband and wife, and diverſe other ſuch like kinde tearmes proving afterwards to be true indeed. It fell out ſo with our young *Ieronimo*; for, among a great number of pretty Damoſels, daughters to men of eſpeciall reſpect, and others of farre inferiour quality: a Tailors daughter excelling the reſt in favour and feature (albeit her

Father

father was but poore) *Ieronimo* most delighted to sport withall; and no other tittles passed between them, even in the hearing of their Parents and friends, but wife and husband: such was the beginning of their young affection, presaging (no doubt) effectually to follow.

Nor grew this familarity (as yet) any way distasted, till by their dayly conversing together, and enterchange of infinite pretty speeches, *Ieronimo* felt a strange alteration in his soul, with such enforcing and powerfull affections, as he was never well but in her company, nor she enjoyed any rest if *Ieronimo* were absent. At the length this being noted by his mother, she began to rebuke him, yea, many times gave him both threatnings and blowes; which proving to no purpose, nor hindering his accesse to her; she complained to his Tutor, and like one that in regard of her riches, thought to plant an Orenge upon a blacke thorne, spake as followeth,

This Son of mine *Ieronimo*, being as yet but foureteen yeares of age, is so deepely enamoured of a young Girle, named *Silvestra*, daughter unto a poor Taylor, our near dwelling neighbour: that if we do not send him out of her company, one day (perhaps) he may make her his wife, and yet without any knowledge of ours, which questionlesse would be my death. Otherwise he may pine and consume himselfe away, if he see us procure her marriage to some other. Wherefore I hold it good, that to avoid so great an inconvenience, we should send *Ieronimo* some far distance hence, to remaine where some of our Factors are employed: because, when he shall be out of her sight, and their open meetings utterly disappointed; his affection to her will the sooner cease, by frustrating his hope for ever enjoying her, and so we shall have the better meanes to match him with one of greater quality. The Tutors did like well of her advise, not doubting but it would take answerable effect: and therefore calling for *Ieronimo* into a private Parlor, one of them began in this manner.

Ieronimo, you are now growne to an indifferent stature, and (almost) able to take government of your selfe. It cannot seeme any way inconvenient, to acquaint you with your deceased Fathers affaires and by what good courses he came to such wealth. You are his only son and heire, to whom he hath bequeathed his rich possessions (your Mothers moity evermore remembred) and travell would now seeme fitting

for you, as well to gain experience in Trafficke and Merchandize, as also to let you see the worlds occurrences. Your Mother therefore and we have thought it expedient, that you should journy from hence to *Paris*, there to continue for some such fitting time, as may grant you full and free opportunity, to survey what stock of wealth is there imployed for you, and to make you understand, how your Factors are furtherous to your affairs. Beside, this is the way to make you a man of more solid and perfect instruction in civill courses of life; rather than by continuing here to see none but Lords, Barons, and Gentlemen, whereof we have too great a number. When you are so sufficiently qualified there, and have learned what belongeth to a worthy Merchant, such as was *Leonardo Sighiero* your famous Father; you may returne home again at your own pleasure.

The youth gave them attentive hearing, and (in few words) returned them answer: That he would not give way to any such travell, because he knew how to employ himself profitably, and dispose of himselfe in *Florence*, as well as in any other place he should be sent to. Which when his Tutors heard, they reproved him with many severe speeches: and seeing they could win no other answer from him, they made return thereof to his Mother. She storming extreamly thereat, yet not so much for denying the journey to *Paris*, as in regard of his violent affection to the Maid: gave him very bitter and harsh language. All which availing nothing, she began to speak in a more milde and gentle strain, entreating him with flattering and affable words, to be governed in this case by his Tutors good advice. And so far (in the end) she prevailed with him, that he yeelded to live at *Paris*, for the space of a year, but further time he would not graut.

Ieronimo being gone to remain at *Paris*, his love increasing more and more, by reason his absence from *Silvestra*, under fair and friendly promises, of this moneth, and the next moneth, sending for him home; there they detained him two years together. Whereupon, his love was grown to such an extremity, that he neither would or could abide any longer there, but home he returned, before he was expected. His Love *Silvestra* by the cunning compacting of his Mother and Tutors, he found married to a Tent-makers Son; whereat he vexed and grieved beyond all measure. Nevertheless, seeing the case was now no way to be holpen; he strove to bear it with so much patience, as so great a wrong,

and

and his hearts tormenting grief, would give leave to doe.

Having found out the place where she dwelt, he began (as it is the custome of young Lovers) to use divers daily walks by her dore: as thinking in his minde, that her remembrance of him was constantly continuel, as his was most intirely fixed on her. But the case was very strangely altered. because she was now grown no more mindfull of him, than if she had never seen him before. Or if she did any way remember him, it appeared to be so little, that manifest signes declared the contrary. Which *Ieronimo* very quickly perceived, albeit not without many melancholy perturbations. Notwithstanding he laboured by all possible means, to recover her former kindnesse again: but finding his paines frivolously imployed; he resolved to die, and yet to compasse some speech with her before.

By means of a neer dwelling neighbour (that was his very dear and intimate friend) he came acquainted with every part of the house, and prevailed so far, that one evening, when shee and her husband supt at a neighbours house: he compassed accesse into the same bed-chamber, where *Silvestra* used most to lodge. Finding the Curtains ready drawn, he hid himselfe behinde them, on the further side of the bed, and so tarryed there untill *Silvestra* and her husband were returned home, and laid downe in bed to take their rest. The Husbands senses were soon overcome with sleep, by reason of his painfull toyling all the day, and bodies that are exercised with much labour, are the more desirous to have ease. She staying up last to put out the light, and hearing her husband sleeping so soundly, that his snoring gave good evidence thereof: laid her selfe down the more respectively, as being very loath any way to displease him, but sweetly to let him enjoy his rest.

Silvestra lay on the same side of the bed, where *Ieronimo* hid himselfe behinde the Curtaines; who stepping softly to her in the dark, and laying his hand gently on her brest, said: Dear Love, forbear a little while to sleep, for here is thy loyall friend *Ieronimo*. The young woman starting with amazement, would have cryed out, but that he intreated her to the contrarie; protesting, that he came for no ill intent to her, but onely to take his latest leave of her. Alas *Ieronimo* (quoth she) those idle dayes are past and gone, when it was no way unseemly for our youth, to entertaine equality of those desires which then well agreed with

our young blood: Since when, you have lived in forraine Countries, which appeared to me to alter your former disposition: for in the space of two whole yeares, either you grew forgetfull of me (as change of aire, may change affection) or (at the least) made such account of me, as I never heard the least salutation from you. Now you know me to be a married wife, in regard whereof, my thoughts have embraced that chaste and honourable resolution, not to minde any man but my husband, and therefore, as you are come hither without my love and licence, so in like manner I do desire you to be gone. Let this priviledge of my Husbands sound sleeping, be no colour to your longer tarrying here, or encourage you to finde any further favour at my hand: for if my husband should awake, beside the danger that thereon may follow to you, I cannot but lose the sweet happinesse of peacefull life, which hitherto we have both mutually embraced.

The young man, hearing these words, and remembring what loving kindnesse he had formerly found, what secret love Letters he had sent from Paris, with other private intelligences and tokens, which never came to her receipt and knowledge, so cunningly his Mother and Tutors had carried the matter: immediately felt his heart-strings to break; and lying downe upon the bed-side by her, uttered these his very last words. *Silvestra* farewell, thou hast killed the kindest heart that ever loved a woman: and speaking no more gave up the ghost. She hearing these words delivered with an entire sigh, and deep fetcht groan, did not imagine the strange consequence following thereon; yet was moved to much compassion, in regard of her former affection to him. Silent she lay an indifferent while, as being unable to returne him any answer; and looking when he would be gone, according as before she had earnestly intreated him. But when she perceived him to lie so still, as neither word nor motion came from him; she said, Kinde *Ieronimo* why dost thou not depart and get thee gone? So putting forth her hand, it happened to light upon his face, which she felt to be as cold as ice: whereat marvelling not a little, as also at his continuing silence, she jogged him, and felt his hands in like manner, which were stiffely extended forth, and all his body cold as not having any life remaining in him, which greatly amazing her, and confounding her with sorrow beyond all measure, she was in such perplexity, that she could not devise what to do or say.

In

In the end she resolved to trie how her husband would take it, that so strange an accident should thus happen in his house, and putting the case as if it did not concerne them, but any other of the neighbours; waking him first, demanded of him what was best to be done, if a man should steal into a neighbours house, unknown to him, or any of his family; and in his bed chamber to be found dead. He presently replyed (as not thinking the case concerned himself) that, the only helpe in such an unexpected extremity was to take the dead body and convey it into his own house if he had any; whereby no scandall or reproach would follow to them, in whose house he had so unfortunately dyed. Hereupon she immediately arose, and lighting a candle, shewed him the dead body of *Ieronimo*, with protestation of every particular, both of her innocency either of knowledge of his coming thither, or any other blame that could concerne her. Which he both constantly knowing and believing, made no more ceremony, but putting on his garments, took the dead body upon his shoulders, and carried it to the Mothers door, where he left it, and returned to his own house.

When day light was come, and the dead body found lying in the Porch, it moved very much griefe and amazement, considering, he had been seen the day before, in perfect health to outward appearance. Not need we to urge any question of his Mother, sorrow upon this strange accident, who, causing his body to be carefully searched, without any blow, bruise, wound, or hurt upon it, the Physicians could not give any other opinion, but some other conceit of griefe had caused his death, as it did indeed, and in no way otherwise. To the chiefe Church was the dead body carryed, to be generally seen of all the people, his Mother and Friends weeping heavily by it, as many more did the like beside, because he was beloved of every one. In which time of universall mourning, the horest man (in whose house he dyed) spake thus to his wife; disguise thy selfe in some decent manner, and goe to the Church, where (as I heare) they have laid the body of *Ieronimo*. Crowde in amongst the women, as I will do the like amongst the men, to heare what opinion passeth of his death, and whether we shall be scandalized thereby, or no.

Silvestra, who was now become full of pitty too late, quickly condescended, as desiring to see him dead; whom sometime she dearely affected in life. Being come to the Church, it is a matter to be admired, if advisedly we

consider

'onſidering on the powerfull working of love; for the heart of this woman, which the proſperous fortune of *Ieronimo* could not pierce, now in his woſull death did ſplit in ſunder; and the ancient ſparks of love ſo long concealed in the embers, brake forth into a furious flame; and being violently ſurprized with extraordinary compaſſion, no ſooner did ſhe come neer to the dead body, where many ſtood weeping round about it, but ſtrangely ſhrieking out aloud, ſhee fell downe upon it: and even as extremity of grief finiſhed his life, ſo did it hers in the ſame manner. For ſhe moved neither hand nor foot, becauſe her vitall powers had quite forſaken her. The women labouring to comfort her by all beſt means they could deviſe; did not take any knowledge of her, by reaſon of her diſguiſed garments: but finding her dead indeed, and knowing her alſo to be *Silveſtra*, being overcome with unſpeakable compaſſion, and daunted with no meane admiration, they ſtood ſtrangely gazing each upon other.

Wonderfull crouds of people were then in the Church; and this accident being now noyſed among the men, at length it came to her husbands underſtanding, whoſe griefe was ſo great, as exceeded all capacity of expreſſion. Afterward he declared what had hapned in his houſe the precedent night, according as his wife had truly related to him, with all the ſpeeches which paſſed betweene *Silveſtra* and *Ieronimo*; by which diſcourſe, they generally conceived, the certain occaſion of both their ſudden deaths, which moved them to great compaſſion. Then taking the young womans body, and ordering it as a coarſe ought to be, they laid it on the ſame Biere by the young man, and when they had ſufficiently ſorrowed for their diſaſtrous fortune, they gave them honourable buriall both in one grave. So this poore couple, whom love (in life) could not joyne together, death did unite in an unſeparable conjunction.

Meſſer Guiglielmo *of* Roſſiglione *having ſlaine Meſſer* Guiglielmo Guardaſtagno, *whom he imagined to love his wife, gave her his heart to eat. Which ſhe knowing afterward, threw her ſelfe out of an high window to the ground; and being dead, was then buried with her friend.*

The

The ninth Novell.

Whereby appeareth what ill successe attendeth on them that love contrary to reason: in offering injury both to friendship and marriage together.

WHen the Novell of Madam *Neiphila* was ended, which occasioned much passion in the whole assembly; the King would not infringe the priviledge granted to *Dioneus*, no more remaining to speak but they two, began thus. I call to minde (gentle Ladies) a Novell, which seeing we are so far entred into the lamentable accidents of successeless love, will urge you unto as much commiseration, as that so lately reported to you. All so much the rather, because the persons of whom we are to speak, were of respective quality; which approveth the accident to be more cruell than those whereof we have formerly discoursed.

According as the people of *Provence* doe report, there dwelt sometime in that jurisdiction, two noble Knights, each well possessed with Castles and followers: the one being named *Messer Guiglielmo de Rossiglione*, and the other *Messir Guiglielmo Guardastagno*. Now, in regard that they were both valiant Gentlemen, and singularly expert in actions of Arms; they loved together the more mutually, and held it as a kinde of custome to be seen in all Tilts and Tournaments, or any other exercises of Arms, going commonly alike in their wearing garments: And although their Castles stood above five miles distant each from other, yet were they daily conversant together, as loving and intimate friends. The one of them, I mean *Messer Guiglielmo de Rossiglione*, had to wife a very gallant beautifull Lady, of whom *Messer Guardastagno* (forgetting the Laws of respect and loyal friendship) became over fondly enamoured, expressing the same by such outward means, that the Ladie her self took knowledge thereof, and not with any dislike, as it seemed, but rather lovingly entertained; yet she grew not so forgetfull of her honour and estimation, as the other did of faith to his friend.

With such indiscretion was this idle love carryed, that whether it sorted to effect or no, I know not; but the Husband perceived some such manner of behaviour, as he could not easily digest, nor thought it fitting to endure. Whereupon, the league of friendly amity so long continued, began to faile in very strange fashion,

and

and became converted into deadly hatred which hyer he ve y cu-ningly concealed, bearing an outward shew of constant friendship still, but (in his heart) he had vowed the death of *Guardastagno*. Nothing wanted, but by what meanes it might best be effected, which fell out to be in this manner. A publick Just or Tourney, was proclaimed by sound of Trumpet throghout all France, wherwith immediately, *Messer Guiglielmo Rossiglione* acquainted *Messer Guardastagno*, entreating him that they might further conser thereon together, and for that purpose to come and visite him, if he intended to have any hand in the businesse. *Guardastagno* being exceeding glad of this accident, which gave him liberty to see his mistresse, sent answer back by the messenger, that on the morrow at night, he would come and sup with *Rossiglione*; who upon this reply, projected to himselfe in what manner to kill him.

On the morrow, after dinner, arming himselfe, and two more of his servants with him; such as he had solemnely sworne to secrecy, he mounted on horse-back, and rode on about a mile from his own Castle, where he lay closely ambushed in a Wood, thorough which *Guardastagno* must needs passe. After he had stayed there some two houres space and more, he espied him come riding with two of his attendants, all of them being unarmed, as no way distrusting any such intended treason. So soone as he was come to the place, where he had resolved to do the deed; he rushed forth of the ambush, and having a sharpe Lance readily charged in his rest, ran mainly at him, saying, False villain, thou art dead. *Guardastagno*, having nothing wherewith to defend himselfe, nor his servants able to give him any succour; being pierced quite through the body with the Lance, downe he fell dead to the ground, and his men (fearing the like misfortune to befall them) gallopped mainly backe again to their Lords Castle, not knowing them who had thus murthered their Master, by reason of their armed disguises, which in those martiall times were usually worne.

Messer Guiglielmo Rossiglione, alighting from his horse, and having a keen knife ready drawn in his hand, opened therewith the breast of dead *Guardastagno*, and taking forth his heart with his own hands, wrapped it in the Bandelote belonging to the Lance, commanding one of his men to the charge thereof, and never to disclose the deed. So mounting on horse backe again, and darke night drawing on apace, he returned

home

home to his Castle. The Lady, who had heard before of *Guadastagnos* intent, to sup there that night, and (perhaps) being earnestly desirous to see him; marvelling at his so long tarrying, said to her husband: Beleeve me Sir (quoth she) me thinkes it is somewhat strange, that *Messer Guiglielmo Guardastagno* delayes his coming so long, he never used to do so till now. I received tidings from his wife (said he) that he cannot be here till to morrow. Whereat the Lady appearing to be displeased, concealed it to her selfe, and used no more words.

Rossiglione leaving his Lady, went into the Kitchin, where calling for the Cooke, he delivered him the heart, saying, Take this heart of a wilde Boare, which it was my good hap to kill this day, and dresse it in the daintiest manner thou canst devise to do; which being so done, when I am set at the table, send it to me in a silver dish, with sauce beseeming so dainty a morsell. The Cook took the heart, beleeving it to be no otherwise, then as his Lord had said: and using his utmost art in dressing it, did divide it into artificiall small slices, and made it most pleasing to be tasted. When supper time was come, *Rossiglione* sat downe at the table with his Lady: but he had little or no appetite at all to eat, the wicked deed which he had done so perplexed his soul, and made him to sit very strangely musing. At length the Cooke brought in the dainty dish, which he himselfe setting before his wife, began to finde fault with his owne lacke of stomach, yet provoking her with many faire speeches, to taste the Cooks cunning in so rare a dish.

The Lady having a good appetite indeed, when she had first tasted it, fed afterwards so heartily thereon, that she left very little, or none at all remaining. When he perceived that all was eaten, he said unto her. Tell me Madam, how you do like this delicate kinde of meat? In good faith Sir (quoth she) in all my life I was never better pleased. Now trust me Madam, answered the Knight, I do verily beleeve you, nor do I greatly wonder the eat, if you like that dead, which you loved so dearly being alive. When she heard these words, a long while she sat silent, but afterward said. I pray you tell me Sir, what meat was this which you have made me to eat? Mese no longer (said he) for therein I will quickly resolve thee. Thou hast eaten the heart of *Messer Guiglielmo Guardastagno*, whose love was so dear and precious to thee, thou false, perfidious, and disloyall Lady: I plucked it out of his vile body with my own hands, and made my Cook to dresse it for thy diet.

Poor

Poore Lady, how ſtrangely was her ſoule affli&ted, hearing theſe harſh and unpleaſing ſpeeches? Teares flowed abundantly from her fair eyes, and like tempeſtuous winds embowelled in the earth, ſo did vehement ſighes break mainly from her heart, and after a tedious time of ſilence, ſhe ſpake in this manner. My Lord and Husband, you have done a moſt diſloyall and damnable deed. miſguided by your owne wicked jealous opinion, and not by any juſt cauſe given you, to murther ſo worthy and noble a Gentleman. I proteſt unto you upon my ſoule, which I wiſh to be confounded in eternall perdition if ever I were unchaſte to your bed, or allowed him any other favour, but what might well become ſo honourable a friend. And ſeeing my body hath been made the receptacle for ſo precious a kinde of food, as the heart of ſo valiant and courteous a Knight, ſuch as was the noble *Guardaſtagno*; never ſhall any other food hereafter have entertainment there, or my ſelf live the Wife to ſo bloody a Husband.

So ſtanting up from the Table, and ſtepping unto a great gazing window, the caſement whereof ſtanding wide open behinde her: violently ſhe leaped out thereat, which being an huge height in diſtance from the ground, the fall did not onely kill her, but alſo ſhivered her body into many pieces. Which *Roſſiglione* perceiving, he ſtood like a body without a ſoul, confounded with the killing of ſo dear a friend, loſſe of a chaſte and honourable Wife, and through his own over-credulous conceit.

Upon further conference with his private thoughts, and remorſefull acknowledgement of his hainous offence, which repentance (too late) gave him eyes now to ſee, though raſhneſſe before would not permit him to conſider; theſe two extremities inlarged his dulled underſtanding. Firſt, he grew fearfull of the followers of murthered *Guardaſtagno*, as alſo the whole Country of *Provence*, in regard of the peoples generall love unto him; which being two main and important motives, both to the deteſtation of ſo horrid an act, and immediate ſevere revenge to ſucceed thereon; he made ſuch proviſion as beſt he could, and as ſo ſudden a warning would give leave, he fled away ſecretly in the night ſeaſon.

Theſe unpleaſing news were ſoon ſpread abroad the next morning, not onely of the unfortunate accidents, but alſo of *Roſſiglions* flight; in regard whereof, the dead bodies being found, and brought toge-

ther

ther, as well by the people belonging to *Guardastagno* as them that attended on the Lady: they were laid in the Chappell of *Rossiliones* Castle; where, after so much lamentation for so great a misfortune to befall them, they were honourably interred in one faire Tombe, with excellent Verses engraven thereon, expressing both their noble degree, and by what unhappy meanes, they chanced to have their buriall there.

A Physicians Wife laid a Lover of her Maids (supposing him to be dead) in a Chest, by reason that he had drunk Water, which usually was given to procure a sleepy entrancing. Two Lumbard usurers, stealing the Chest, in hope of a rich booty, carried it into their own house, where afterward the man awaking, was taken for a Theefe. The Chamber-maid to the Physicians Wife going before the Bench of Justice, accuseth her selfe for putting the imagined dead body into the Chest, by the which meanes he escaped hanging. And the Theeves which stole away the Chest were condemned to pay a great summe of money.

The tenth Novell.

Herein is declared, that sometime by adventurous accident, rather than any reasonable comprehension, a man may escape out of manifold perils, but especially in occurrences of Love.

AFter that the King had concluded his Novell, there remained none now but *Dioneus* to tell the last, which himselfe confessing, and the King commanding him to prosted, he began in this manner. So many miseries of unfortunate Love, as all of you have already related, have not onely swollen our eyes with weeping, but also made sick our hearts with sighing: yea (Gracious Ladies) I my selfe finde my spirits not meanly afflicted thereby. Wherefore, the whole day hath been very irksome to me, and I not a little glad that it is so neer ending. Now, for the better shutting it up altogether, I would be very loath to make an addition of any such sad and mournfull matter, good for nothing but to ferde melancholy humour, and from which (I hope) my fair Stars will defend me. Tragicall discourse, thou art no fit companion for me; I will therefore report a Novell which may minister a more joviall kinde of argument, unto those Tales that must be told to morrow, and with the expiration

of

of our preſent Kings reign, to rid us of all heart-burning hereafter.

Know then (gracious aſſembly) it is not many yeats ſince, where there lived in *Salerne*, a very famous Phyſician, named Signieur *Maſſeo della Montagna*, who being already well entered in yeares, would (nevertheleſſe) marry with a beautifull young maiden of the City, beſtowing rich garments, gaudy attires, Rings and Jewels on her, ſuch as few women elſe could equall, becauſe he loved her moſt dearly. Yet being an aged man, and never remembring, how vain and idle a thing it is, for age to make ſuch an unfitting election, injurious to both; and therefore endangering that domeſtick agreement, which ought to be the ſole and maine comfort of marriage; it maketh me therefore to miſdoubt, that as in our former Tale of Signieur *Ricciardo de Cinthica*, ſome dayes of the Calender here ſeem as diſtaſtefull, as thoſe that occaſioned the other womans diſcontentment. In ſuch unequall choiſes, Parents commonly are more blame-worthy, then any imputation, to be laid on the young woman, who gladly would enjoy ſuch as in heart they have elected: but that their Parents, looking through the glaſſe of greedy lucre, do overthrow both their own hopes, and fair fortunes of their children together.

Yet to ſpeak uprightly of this young married wife, ſhe declared her ſelfe to be of a wiſe and cheerefull ſpirit, not diſcouraged with her unequality of marriage: but bearing all with a contented brow, for fear of urging the very leaſt miſlike in her husband. And he, on the other ſide, when occaſions did not call him to viſite his Patients, or to be preſent at the Colledge among his fellow Doctours, would alwayes be cheering and comforting his wife, as one that could hardly afford to be out of her company. There is one eſpeciall fatall misfortune, which commonly awaiteth on old mens marriages; when freezing December will match with flouriſhing May, and green deſires appeare in age, beyond all poſſibility of performance. Nor are there wanting good ſtore of wanton Gallants, who hating to ſee beauty in this manner betrayed, and to the embraces of a loathed bed, will make their folly ſeen in publicke appearance, and by their dayly proffers of amorous ſervices (ſeeming compaſſionate of the womans diſaſter) are uſually the cauſe of jealous ſuſpicions, and very heinous houſhold diſcontentments.

Among

Among diverſe other, that fain would be nibling at this beauty, there was one, named *Ruggiero de Taroly*, of honorable parentage, but yet of ſuch a debauched and diſordered life, as neither kindred or friends, were willing to take any knowledge of him, but utterly gave him over to his diſſolute courſes: ſo that, throughout all *Salerne*, his conditions cauſed his generall contempt, and he accounted no better but even as a theeving and lewd companion. The Doctors wife, had a Chamber-maid attending on her; who notwithſtanding all the ugly deformities in *Ruggiero*, regarding more his perſon then his imperfections (becauſe he was a compleat and well featured youth) beſtowed her affection moſt intirely on him and oftentimes did ſupply his wants, with her own beſt means.

Ruggiero having this benefit of the maids kinde love to him, made it a hopefull mounting Ladder, whereby to derive ſome good liking from the Miſtreſſe, preſuming rather on his outward comely parts, then any other honeſt quality that might commend him. The Miſtreſſe knowing what choiſe her maide had made, and unable by any perſwaſions to remove her, took knowledge of *Ruggieroes* private reſorting to her houſe, and in meer love to her maid (who had very many eſpeciall deſervings in her) oftentimes ſhe would (in like manner) rebuke him, and adviſe him to a more ſetled courſe of life; which counſell, that it might take the better effect, ſhe graced with liberall gifts: one while with Gold, others with Silver, and often with garments, for his comelier acceſſe thither; which bounty, he (like a lewd miſtaker) interpreted as aſſurances of her affection to him, and that he was more graceſull in her eye, then any man elſe could be.

In the continuance of theſe proceedings, it came to paſſe, that Maſter Doctor *Maſſeo* (being not only a moſt expert Phyſitian, but likewiſe as skilfull in Chirurgery beſide) had a Patient in cure, who by great misfortune, had one of his legges broken all in pieces; which ſome weaker judgement having formerly dealt withall the bones and ſinewes were become ſo foully putrefyed, as he told the parties friends, that the legge muſt be quite cut off, or elſe the patient muſt needs die: yet he intended ſo to order the matter, that the perill ſhould proceed no further, to prejudice any part of the body. The caſe being thus reſolved on with the Patient and his friends, the day and time was appointed when the deed ſhould be done: and the Doctor conceiving, that except the patient were ſleepily entranced,

tranced, he could not by any meanes endure the pain, but muſt needs hinder what he meant to doe: by diſtillation he made ſuch an artificall Water, as (after the Patient hath received it) it will procure a kinde of a dead ſleep, and endure ſo long a ſpace as neceſſity requireth the uſe thereof, in full performance of the work.

After he had made this ſleepy water, he put it into a glaſſe, wherewith it was filled (almoſt) up to the brim; and till the time came when he ſhould uſe it, he ſet it in his own Chamber-window, never acquainting any one, to what purpoſe he had provided the water, nor what was his reaſon of ſetting it there; when it drew towards the evening, and he was returned home from his Patients, a Meſſenger brought him Letters from *Malfy*, concerning a great conflict happening there between two noble Families, wherein divers were very dangerouſly wounded on either ſide, and without his ſpeedy repairing thither, it would prove to the loſſe of many lives. Hereupon, the cure of the mans legge muſt needs be prolonged, untill he was returned back again, in regard that many of the wounded perſons were his worthy friends, and liberall bounty was there to be expected, which made him preſently go aboard a ſmall Bark, and forthwith ſet away towards *Malfy*.

This abſence of Mr. Doctor *Mattheo*, gave opportunity to adventurous *Ruggiero*, to viſite his houſe (he being gone) in hope to get more Crownes and courteſie from the Miſtreſſe, under formall colour of courting the Maid. And being cloſely admitted into the houſe, when divers neighbours were in conference with her Miſtreſſe, and held her with much pleaſing diſcourſe, as required longer time then was expected: the Maid had no other roome to conceale *Ruggiero* in, but onely the Eel-chamber of her Maſter, where ſhe lock'd him in; becauſe none of the houſehold people ſhould deſcry him, and ſtayed attending on her Miſtreſſe, till all the neighbours tooke their leave, and were gone, *Ruggiero* thus remaining alone in the Chamber, for the ſpace of three long houres and more, was viſited, neither by Maid nor Miſtreſſe, but awaited when he ſhould be ſet at liberty.

Now, whether feeding on ſalt meats before his coming thither, or cuſtomary uſe of drinking, which maketh men unable any long while to abſtain, as being never ſatisfied with exceſſe; which of theſe two ex-

extreams they were, I know not: but drink needs he must. And, having no other meanes for quenching his thirst, espyed the glasse of water standing in the Window, and thinking it to be some soveraigne kinde of water, reserved by the Doctor for his own drinking, to make him lusty in his old years, he took the glasse; and finding the water pleasing to his palat, drunk it off every drop; then sitting down upon a Coffer by the beds side, soon after he fell into a sound sleep, according to the powerfull working of the water.

No sooner were all the neighbours gone, and the Maid at liberty from her Mistresse, but unlocking the dore, into the Chamber she went; and finding *Ruggiero* sitting fast asleep, she began to hunch and punch him, entreating him (softly) to awake: but all was to no purpose, for he neither moved, or answered word; whereat her patience being somewhat provoked, she punched him more rudely, and angerly said: Awake for shame, thou drowsie dullard, and if thou be so desirous of sleeping, get thee home to thy own lodging, because thou art not allowed to sleep here.

Ruggiero being thus rudely punched, fell from off the Coffer flat on the ground, appearing no other in all respects, than as if he were a dead body. Whereat the Maid being fearfully amazed, plucking him by the nose and young beard, and what else she could devise to doe, yet all her labour proving still in vain; she was almost beside her wits, stamping and raving all about the room, as if sense and reason had forsaken her; so violent was her extream distraction.

Vpon the hearing of this noyse, her Mistresse came suddenly into the Chamber, where being affrighted at so strange an accident, and suspecting that *Ruggiero* was dead indeed: shee pinched him strongly, and burnt his finger with a Candle, yet all was as fruitlesse as before. Then sitting downe, she began to consider advisedly with her selfe, how much her honor and reputation would be endangered hereby, both with her Husband, and in vulgar opinion, when this should come to publick notice. For (quoth she to her Maid) it is not thy fond love to this unruly fellow that can sway the censure of the monster multitude, in beleeving his accesse hither onely to thee: but my good name, and honest repute, as yet untoucht with the very least taxation, will be racke on the center of infamous judgement, and (though never so cleer) branded with generall condemnation. It is wisdome therefore, that we should make no noyse, but (in silence) consider with our selves,

ſelves, how to cleare our ſelves of his dead body, by ſome ſuch helpfull and witty devices as when it ſhall be found in the morning, his being here may paſſe without ſuſpicion, and the worlds raſh opinion no way touch us.

Weeping and lamenting is now laid aſide, and all hope in them of his lives reſtoring; onely to rid his body out of the houſe, that now requires their care and cunning: Whereupon the maid thus began, Miſtreſſe (quoth ſhe) this evening, although it was very late, at our next neighbours door (who you know is a Ioyner by his trade) I ſaw a great Cheſt ſtand; and as it ſeemeth, for a publicke ſale, becauſe two or three nights together, i hath not been thence removed: and if the owner have not lockt it, all inventions elſe cannot furniſh us with the like helpe. For therein we will lay his body, whereon I will beſtow two or three wounds with my knife; and leaving him ſo, our houſe can be no more ſuſpected, concerning his being here, then any other in the ſtreet beſide; nay rather far leſſe, in regard of your husbands credit and authority. Moreover, hereof I am certain, that he being of ſuch bad and diſordered qualities: it will the more likely be imagined, that he was ſlaine by ſome of his own looſe companions, being with them about ſome pilfering buſineſſe, and afterwards hid his body in the cheſt, it ſtanding ſo fitly for the purpoſe, and darke night alſo favoring the deed.

The maides counſell paſt under the ſeal of allowance, onely her Miſtreſſe thought it not convenient, that (having affected him ſo dearly) ſhe ſhould mangle his body with any wounds; but rather let it be gathered by more likely-hood, that villaines had ſtrangled him, and then conveyed his body into the cheſt. Away ſhe ſends the maid to ſee whether the Cheſt ſtood there ſtill, or no; as indeed it did, and unlockt, whereof they were not a little joyfull. By the helpe of her Miſtreſſe, the maid took *Ruggiero* upon her ſhoulders, and bringing him to the door, with diligent reſpect that none could diſcover them; in the Cheſt they laid him, and ſo there left him, cloſing down the lid according as they found it.

In the ſame ſtreet, and not far from the Ioyner, dwelt two young men who were *Lumbards*, living upon the intereſt of their moneys, coveting to get much, and to ſpend little. They having obſerved where the Cheſt ſtood, and wanting a neceſſary moveable to houſhold, yet loath to lay out money for buying it; complotted together this

this very night to steal it thence and to carry it home to their house, as accordingly they did; finding it somewhat heavy, and therefore imagining, that matter of worth was contained therein. In the Chambe where their wives lay, they left it; and so without any further search till the next morning, they laid them down to rest likewise.

Ruggiero, who had now slept a lon while, the drinke being digested and the virtue thereof fully consummated; began to awake before day. And although his naturall sleep was broken, and his senses had recovered their former power yet notwithstanding, there remained such an astonishment in his brain, as not only did affect him all the day following, but also diverse days and nights afterward. Having his eyes wide open, and yet not discerning any thing, he stretched forth his armes every where about him, and finding himselfe to be enclosed in the Chest, he grew more broad awake, and said to himselfe, What is this? Where am I? Do I wake or sleep? Full well do I remember, that not long since I was in my sweet-hearts Chamber, and now (me thinkes) I am mewed up in a Chest. What should I thinke hereof? Is Master Doctor returned home, or hath some other incovenience hapned, whereby finding me asleep, she was enforced to hide me thus? Surely it is so, and otherwise it cannot be: wherefore it is best for me to be still, and listen when I can heare any talking in the Chamber.

Continuing thus a longer while then otherwise he would have done, because his lying in the bare Chest was somewhat uneasie and painefull to him; turning diverse times on one side, and then as often againe on the other, coveting still for ease, yet could not finde any: at length, he thrust his back so strongly against the chests side, that it standing on an uneven ground) it began to totter, and after fell downe. In which fall, it made so loud a noise, as the women (lying in the bed standing by) awaked, and were so ove come with feare, that they had not the power to speake one word. *Ruggiero* also being affrighted with the chests fall, and perceiving how by that means it was become open; he thought it better, lest some other sinister fortune should befall him, to be at open liberty, then inclosed up so strictly. And because he knew not where he was, as also hoping to meet with his Mistresse; he went all about groaping in the darke, to finde either staires or doór, whereby to get forth. When the women heard his trampling, as also his justling against the doors and windowes;

windowes; they demanded, Who was there? *Ruggio*, not knowing their voyces, made them no answer; wherefore they called to their Husbands, who lay very soundly sleeping by them, by reason of their so late walking abroad, and therefore heard not this noyse in the house. This made the women much more timorous, and therefore rising out of their beds, they opened the casement towards the street; crying out aloud, Theeves, Theeves. The neighbours arose upon this outcry, running up and down from place to place; some engirting the house, and others entring into it: by means of which troublesome noyse, the two Lumbards awaking, and seizing there upon poor *Ruggiero*, (who was well-neer affrighted out of his wits, at so strange an accident, and his own ignorance, how he hapned thither, and how to escape from them) he stood gazing on them without any answer.

By this time, the Sergeants and other Officers of the City, ordinarily attending on the Magistrate, being raised by the tumult of this uproar, were come into the house, and had poor *Ruggiero* committed unto their charge, who bringing him before the Governour, was forthwith called in question, and known to be of a most wicked life, a shame to all his friends and kindred. He could say little for himselfe, never denying his taking in the house, and therefore desiring to finish all his fortunes together, desperately confessed, that he came with a fellonious intent to rob them, and the governor gave him sentence to be hanged.

Soon were the newes spread throughout *Salerne*; that *Ruggiero* was apprehended, about robbing the house of the two usuring Lumbards: which when Mistresse Doctor and her Chamber-maid heard, they were confounded with most strange admiration, and scarcely credited what they themselves had done the night before, but rather imagined all matters past, to be no more then meerly a dream, concerning *Ruggieros* dying in the house, and their putting him into the chest, so that by no likely or possible means, he could be the man in this perilous extremity.

In a short while after, Master Doctor *Mazzeo* was returned from *Malfy*, to proceed in the cure of the poor mans leg; and calling for his glasse of water, which he left standing in his own chamber-window, it was found quite empty, and not a drop in it: whereat he raged so extremely, as never had the like impatience been noted in him. His wife and her maid, who had another kinde of businesse in their brain, about a dead man

so

so strangely come to life again, knew not well what to say: but at the last, his wife thus replyed somewhat angerly. Sir (quoth she) what a coyl is here about a paltry glasse of Water, which perhaps hath been spilt, yet neither of us faulty therein? Is there no more such water to be had in the world? Alas dear wife (said he) you might repute it to be a common kinde of water, but indeed it was not so; for I did purposely compound it, only to procure a dead kind of sleep: And so related the whole matter at large, of the Patients legge, and his Waters losse.

When she had heard these words of her husband, presently she conceived, that the water was drunke off by *Ruggiero*, which had so sleepily entranced his senses, as they verily thought him to be dead, wherefore she said. Beleeve me Sir, you never acquainted us with any such matter, which would have procured more carefull respect of it: but seeing it is gone, your skill extendeth to make more, for now there is no other remidy. While thus Master Doctor and his Wife were conferring together, the maid went speedily into the City, to understand truely, whether the condemned man was *Ruggiero*, and what would now become of him. Being returned home again, and alone with her Mistresse in the Chamber, thus she spake, Now trust me Mistresse, not one in the City speaketh well of *Ruggiero*, who is the man condemned to die; and, for ought I can perceive, he hath neither kinsman nor Friend that will doe any thing for him; but he is left with the Provost, and must be executed to morrow morning. Moreover Mistresse, by such instructions as I have received, I can well-neer informe you, by what meanes he came to the two *Lumbards* house, if all be true as I have heard.

You know the Joyner, before whose door the chest stood, wherein we did put *Ruggiero*; there is now a contention between him and another man, to whom (it seemeth) the chest doth belong; in regard whereof, they are ready to quarrell extreamly each with other. For the one owing the chest, and trusting the Joyner to sell it for him, would have him to pay him for the chest. The Joyner denyeth any sale thereof, avouching that the last night it was stolen from his door. Which the other man contraying, and denying, maintaineth that he sold the chest to the two *Lumbard* usurers, as himselfe is able to affirme, because he found it in his house, when he (being present at the apprehension of *Ruggiero*) saw it there in the same house. Hereupon,

the Joyner gave him the lye, because he never sold it to any man; but if it were there, they had robbed him of it, as he would make it manifest to their faces. Then falling into clamorous speeches, they went together to the *Lombards* house, even as I returned home. Wherefore Mistresse, as you may easily perceive, *Ruggiero* was (questionlesse) carried thither in the chest, and so there found; but how he revived again, I cannot comprehend.

The Mistresse understanding now apparently, the full effect of the whole businesse, and in what manner it had been carryed, revealed to the maid her husbands speeches, concerning the glasse of sleepy Water, which was the engine of all this trouble, clearely acquitting *Ruggiero* of the robbery, howsoever (in desperate fury, and to make an end of a life so contemptible) he had wrongfully accused himselfe. And notwithstanding this his hard fortune, which had made him much more infamous then before, in all the dissolute behaviour of his life: yet it could not quail her affection towards him; but being loath he should die for some other mans offence, and hoping his future reformation; she fell on her knees before her Mistresse, and (drowned in her teares) most earnestly entreated her, to advise her with some such happy course, as might be the safety of poor *Ruggiero* life. Mistresse Doctor, affecting her maid dearly, and plainly perceiving, that no disasterous fortune whatsoever, could alter her love to condemned *Ruggiero*; hoping the best hereafter, as the maide did, and willing to save life rather then suffer it to be lost without just cause, thus directed her in such discreet manner, as you will better conceive by the successe.

According as she was instructed by her Mistresse, she fell at the feet of Master Doctor, desiring him to pardon a great errour, whereby she had over-much offended him. As how? said Master Doctor. In this manner (quoth the maid) and thus proceeded. You are not ignorant Sir, what a lewde liver *Ruggiero de Isnly* is, and notwithstanding all his imperfections, how dearly I love him, as he protesteth the like to me, and thus hath our love continued a year and more. You being gone to *Malfy*, and your absence granting me apt opportunity, for conference with so kinde a friend; I made the bolder, and gave him entrance into your house, yea even into mine own Chamber, yet free from any abuse, neither did he (bad though he be) offer any. Thirsty he was before his coming thither, either by saltmeate, or distempered diet, and I being unable

unable to fetch him Wine or Water, by reason that my Mistresse sat in the Hall, seriously talking with her Sisters; remembred, that I saw a viall of water standing in your Chamber Window, which he drinking quite off, I set it empty in that place again. I have heard your discontentment for the said Water, and confesse my fault to you therein: but who liveth so justly, without offending at one time or other? And I am heartily sorry for my transgression; yet not so much for the water, as the hard fortune that hath followed thereon; because thereby *Ruggiero* is in danger to lose his life, and all my hopes are utterly lost. Let me intreat you therefore (gentle Master) first to pardon me, and then to grant me permission, to succour my poor condemned friend, by all the best means I can devise.

When the Doctor had heard all her discourse, angry though he were, yet thus he answered with a smile. Much better had it been, if thy follies punishment had falne on thy selfe, that it might have paid thee with deserved repentance, upon thy Mistresses finding thee sleeping. But go and get his deliverance if thou canst, with this caution, that if ever hereafter he be seen in my house, the perill thereof shall light on thy selfe. Receiving this answer, for her first entrance into the attempt, and as her Mistresse had advised her, in all haste she went to the prison, where she prevailed so well with the Jaylor, that he granted her private conference with *Ruggiero*. She having instructed him what he should say to the Provost, if he had any purpose to escape with life; went thither before him to the Provost, who admitting her into his presence, and knowing that she was Master Doctors maide, a man especially respected of all the City, he was the more willing to heare her message, he imagining that she was sent by her Master.

Sir (quoth she) you have apprehended *Ruggiero de Ieroly*, as a theef, and judgement of death is (as I heare) pronounced against him: but he is wrongfully accused, and is clearly innocent of such an heinous detection. So entring into the History, she declared every circumstance, from the originall ro the end; relating truely, that being her Lover, she brought him into her Masters house, where he dranke the compounded sleepy water, and reputed for dead, she laid him in the Chest. Afterward she rehearsed the speeches between the Joyner, and him that laid claime to the Chest, giving him to understand thereby, how *Ruggiero* was taken in the *Lombards* house.

The provoſt preſently gathering, that the truth in this caſe wos eaſie to be known; ſent firſt to Mr. Doctor *Mazzeo*, to know whether he compounded any ſuch water, or no: which he affirmed to be true, and upon what occaſion he prepared it. Then the Joyner, the owner of the cheſt, and the two *Lombards*, being ſeverally queſtioned withall: it appeared evidently, that the *Lombards* did ſteal the Cheſt in the night ſeaſon, and carryed it home to their own houſe. In the end, *Ruggiero* being brought from the priſon, and demanded, where he was lodged the night before, made anſwer, that he knew not where. Only he well remembred, that bearing affection to the Chambermaid of Maſter Doctor *Mazzo della Montagna*, ſhe brought him into a Chamber, where a viall of water ſtood in the Window, and being extreamly thirſty, dranke it off all. But what became of him afterward (till being awake, he found himſelfe incloſed in a cheſt, and in the houſe of the two *Lombards*) he could not ſay any thing.

When the Provoſt had heard all their anſwers, which he cauſed them to repeat over diverſe times, in regard they were very pleaſing to him, he cleared *Ruggiero* from the crime impoſed on him, and condemned the *Lombards* in three hundred Ducates, to be given to *Ruggiero*, in way of an amends, and to enable his marriage with the Doctors maide, whoſe conſtancy was much commended, and wrought ſuch a miracle on penitent *Ruggiero*; that after his marriage, which was graced with great and honourable pompe, he regained the intimate love of all his kindred, and lived in moſt noble condition, even as if he had never been any diſordered man.

If the former Novels had made all the Ladies ſad and ſigh, this laſt of *Dioneus* as much delighted them, as reſtoring them to their former jocond humor, and baniſhing Tragicall diſcourſe for ever. The King perceiving that the Sun was near ſetting, and his government as near ended, with many kind and courteous ſpeeches, excuſed himſelf to the Ladies, for being the motive of ſuch an argument, as expreſſed the infelicity of poor Lovers. And having finiſhed his excuſe, up he roſe, taking the Crown of Lawrell from off his own head, the Ladies awaiting on whoſe head he pleaſed next to ſet it, which proved to be the gratious Lady *Fiammetta*; and thus he ſpake, Here I place this Crown on her head, that knoweth better then any other, how to comfort this fair aſſembly to morrow, for the ſorrow which they have this day endured.

Madam

Madam *Fiammetta*, whose locks of hair were curled, long and like golden wiers hanging somewhat down over her white and delicate shoulders, her visage round, wherein the Damaske Rose and Lilly contended for priority, the eyes in her head, resembling those of the Faulcon messenger, and also a dainty mouth; her lippes looking like two little Rubies, with a comfortable smile thus she replyed.

Philostratus, gladly I do accept your gift; and to the end that ye may the better remember your self, concerning what you have done hitherto: I will and command, that generall preparation be made against to morrow, for fair and happy fortunes happening to Lovers, after former cruell and unkind accidents. Which proposition was well pleasing to them all.

Then calling for the Master of the Houshold, and taking order with him, what was most needfull to be done; she gave leave unto the whole company (who were all risen) to go recreate themselves untill supper time. Some of them walked about the Garden, the beauty whereof banished the least thoughts of wearinesse. Others walked by the River to the Mill, which was not far off, and the rest fell to exercises, fitting their own fancies, untill they heard the summons for *Supper*. Hard by the goodly Fountain (according to the wonted manner) they supped altogether, and were served to their no mean contentment: but being risen from the Table, they fell to their delight of singing and dancing. While *Philomena* led the dance, the Queen spake in this manner.

Philostratus, I intend not to vary from those courses heretofore observed by my predecessors, but even as they have already done, so it is my authority to command a Song. And because I am well assured, that you are not unfurnished of Songs answerable to the qualities of the passed Novels, my desire is, in regard we would not be troubled hereafter, with any more discourses of unfortunate Love, that you shall sing a Song agreeing with your own disposition. *Philostratus* made answer, that he was ready to accomplish her command, and without all further ceremony, thus he began.

The Song.

Chorus. *My tears do plainly prove,*
How juſtly that poor heart hath cauſe to grieve,
Which (under truſt) findes treaſon in his love.

When firſt I ſaw her, that now makes me ſigh,
Diſtruſt did never enter into my thoughts.
So many vertues clearly ſhin'd in her,
That I eſtcem'd all martyrdome was light,
Which love could lay on me. Nor did I grieve,
Although I found my liberty was loſt.
But now mine errour I doe plainly ſee:
Not without ſorrow, thus betray'd to be.
My tears do &c.

For, being left by baſeſt treachery
Of her in whom I moſt repoſid truſt:
I then could ſee apparent flattery
In all the faireſt ſhewes that ſhe did make.
But when I ſtrove to get forth of the ſnare,
I found my ſelfe the further plunged in.
For I beheld another in my place,
And I caſt off, with manifeſt diſgrace.
My teares do, &c.

Then felt my heart ſuch hels of heavy woes,
Not utterable. I curſt the day and houre
When firſt I ſaw her lovely countenance,
Enrichs with beauty far beyond all other:
Which ſet my ſoule on fire, enflam'd each part,
Making a martyrdome of my poore heart.
My faith and hope being baſely thus betraid;
I durſt not move, to ſpeak I was afraid.
My tears do, &c.

Thou canſt (thou powe full god of Love) perceive,
My ceaſeleſſe ſorrow, void of all comfort:

I make my moane to thee, and do not fable,
Desiring, that to end my misery,
Death may come speedily, and with his Dart
With one fierce stroke, quite piercing to my heart:
To cut off future sell contending strife,
An happy end be made of Love and Life.
My teares do, &c.

No other means of comfort doth remain,
To ease me of such sharpe afflictions,
But only death. Grant then that I may die,
To finish grief and life in one blest houre.
For being bereft of any future joyes,
Come, take me quickly from so false a friend.
Yet in my death, let thy great power approve,
That I died true and constant in my love.
My teares do, &c.

Happy shall I account this sighing Song,
If some (beside my selfe) do learn to sing it,
And so consider of my miseries,
As may incite them to lament my wrongs,
And to be warned by my wretched fate;
Least (like my selfe) themselves do sigh too late.
Learne Lovers, learn, what is to be unjust,
And be betray'd, where you repose best trust.

The words contained in this Song, did manifestly declare, what torturing afflictions poor *Philostratus* felt, and more (perhaps) had been perceived by the looks of the Lady whom he spake of, being then present in the dance; if the sudden ensuing darkenesse had not hid the crimson blush, which mounted up into her face. But the Song being ended, and diverse others beside, lasting till the houre of rest drew on; by command of the Queen, they all repaired to their Chambers.

THE FIFTH DAY.

Whereon, all the Discourses do passe under the Government of the most noble Lady Fiammetta: *concerning such persons, as have been successefull in their love, after many hard and perilous misfortunes.*

The Induction.

NOW began the Sunne to dart forth his golden beames, when Madam *Fiammetta* (incited by the sweet singing birds, which since the break of day, sate merrily chanting on the trees) arose from her bed: as all the other Ladies likewise did, and the three young Gentlemen descending down into the fields, where they walked in a gentle pace on the green grasse, untill the Sunne was risen a little higher. On many pleasant matters they conferred together, as they walked in severall companies till at the length the Queen finding the heat to enlarge it selfe strongly, returned back to the Castle: where when they were all arrived, she commanded, that after this mornings walking, their stomaches should be refreshed with wholesome Wines, and also diverse sorts of banqueting stuffe. Afterward, they all repayred into the Garden, not departing thence, untill the houre of dinner was come: at which time, the Master of the Houshold, having prepared every thing in decent readinesse, after a solemne song was sung by order of the Queen, they were seated at the Table.

When they had dined, to their own liking and contentment, they began (in continuation of their former order) to exercise diverse dances, and afterward voyces to their instruments, and many pretty Madrigals, and Roundelayes. Upon the finishing of these delights, the Queen gave them leave to take their rest, when such as were so minded, went to sleep, others solaced

laced themſelves in the Garden. But after midday was over paſt, they met (according to their wonted manne) and as the Queen had commanded, at the faire Fountain; where ſhe being placed in her ſeat Royall, and caſting her eye upon *Pamphilus*, ſhe bad him begin the dayes diſcourſe, of happy ſucceſſe in love, after diſaſterous and troubleſome accidents; who yeelding thereto with humble reverence thus began:

Many Novels (gracious Ladies) do offer themſelves to my memory, wherewith to begin ſo pleaſant a day, as it is her Highneſſe deſire that this ſhould be: among which plenty I eſteem one above all the reſt, becauſe you may comprehend thereby; not only the fortunate concluſion, wherewith we intend to begin our day; but alſo how mighty the forces of Love are, deſerving to be both admired and reverenced. Albeit there are many (who ſcarcely know what they ſay) do condemne them with infinite groſſe imputations: which I purpoſe to diſprove, and (I hope) to your no little pleaſing.

Chynon, *by falling in Love, became wiſe, and by force of Armes winning his faire Lady* Iphigenia *on the Sea, was afterwards imprisoned at Rhodes. Being delivered by one named* Lyſimachus, *with him he recovered his* Iphigenia *again, and fair* Caſſandra; *even in the middeſt of their marriage. They fled with them into Candy, where after they had married them, they were called home to their own dwelling.*

The firſt Novell.

Whereby is approved, that Love (oftentimes) maketh a man both wiſe and valiant.

ACcording to the ancient Annales of the *Cypriots*, there ſometime lived in *Cyprus* a noble Gentleman, who was commonly called *Ariſtippus* and exceeded all other of the Country in the goods of fortune. Divers children he had, but (amongſt the reſt) a Sonne, in whoſe birth he was more infortunate then the reſt; and continually grieved, in regard, that having all compleat perfections of beauty, good forme, and manly parts, ſurpaſſing all other youths of his age or ſtature; yet he wanted the reall ornament of the ſoul, reaſon and judgement; being indeed a meer Ideot or Fool, and no better hope to be expected from him. His true name, according as he received it by Baptiſme, was *Galeſus*, but becauſe neither by the laborious paines

of his Tutors indulgence, great care, and fair endevour of his Parents, or ingenuity of any other, he could not be brought to civility of life, unde ſtanding of Letters, or common carriage of a reaſonable creature: by his groſſe and deformed kind of ſpeech, his qualities alſo ſavouring rather of brutiſh feeding, then any way derived from manly education; and as an Epithete of ſcorne and deriſion, generally they gave him the name of *Cbymon*, which in their native Country language, and divers other beſide, ſignifyeth a very ſot or fool, and ſo was he termed by every one.



This loſt kind of life in him, was no mean burthen of grief unto his noble Father, all hope being already ſpent, of any future happy recovery, he gave command (becauſe

(becauſe he would not alwayes have ſuch a ſorrow in his ſight) that he ſhould live at a Farme of his owne in a Country Village, among his Peazants and Plough-ſwaines. Which was not any way diſtaſtefull to *Chynon*, but well agreed with his owne naturall diſpoſition; for their rurall qualities, and groſſe behaviour pleaſed him beyond the Cities civility. *Chynon* living thus at his fathers Country Village, exerciſing nothing elſe but rurall demeanour, ſuch as then delighted him above all other: it chanced upon a day, about the hour of noon, as he was walking over the fields, with a long ſtaffe on his necke, which commonly he uſed to carry; he entred into a ſmall thicket, reputed the goodlieſt in all thoſe quarters, and by reaſon it was then the moneth of May, the Trees had their leaves fairely ſhot forth.

When he had walked through the thicket, it came to paſſe, that (even as good fortune guided him) he came into a fair meadow, on every ſide engirt with Trees, and in one corner thereof ſtood a goodly Fountain, whoſe currant was both cool and clear. Hard by it, upon the green graſſe, he eſpied a very beautifull Damoſell, ſeeming to be faſt aſleep, attired in ſuch looſe garments, as hid very little of her white body; only from the girdle downward, ſhe wore a kirtle made cloſe unto her, of interwoven delicate ſilke, and at her feet lay two other Damoſels ſleeping, and a ſervant in the ſame manner. No ſooner had *Chynon* fixed his eye upon her, but he ſtood leaning on his ſtaffe; and viewed her adviſedly, without ſpeaking a word, and in no mean admiration, as if he had never ſeen the forme of a woman before. He began then to feel in his rurall underſtanding (whereunto never till now, either by painfull inſtruction, or any good means uſed to him, any honeſt civility had power of impreſſion) a ſtrange kinde of humour to awake, which informed his groſſe and dull ſpirit, that this Damoſell was the very faireſt, which any living man beheld.

Then he began to diſtinguiſh her parts, commending the treſſes of her hair, which he imagined to be of gold, her forehead, noſe, mouth, necke, armes, but above all her breſts, appearing (as yet) but only to ſhew themſelve, like to little mountains. So that of a ſielden clowniſh lout, he would needs now become a judge of beauty, coveting earneſtly in his ſoul, to ſee her eyes, which were veiled over with ſound ſleep, that kept them faſt incloſed together, and only to look on them, he wiſhed a thouſand times, that ſhe would awake.

wake. For in his judgement, she excelled all the women that ever he had seen, and doubted, whether she were some Godesse, or no; so strangely was he metamorphoſed from folly, to a ſenſible apprehenſion, more then common. And ſo far did this ſodain knowledge in him extend; that he could conceive of divine and celeſtiall things, and that they were more to be admired and reverenced, then thoſe of humane or terrene conſideration; wherefore the more gladly he contented himſelf, to tarry till ſhe awaked of her own accord. And although the time of ſtay ſeemed tedious to him, yet not withſtanding, he was overcome with ſuch extraordinary contentment, as he had no power to depart thence, but ſtood as if he had been glewed to the ground.

After ſome indifferent reſpite of time, it chanced that the young Damoſell (who was named *Iphigenia*) awaked before any of the other with her, and lifting up her head, with her eyes wide open, ſhe ſaw *Cymon* ſtanding before her, leaning ſtill on his ſtaffe; whereat marvelling not a little, ſhe ſaid unto him, *Cymon*, whither wandereſt thou, or what doſt thou ſeek for in this wood? *Cymon*, who not only by his countenance but likewiſe his folly, nobility of birth, and wealthy poſſeſſions of his Father, was generally knowne throughout the Country, made no anſwer at all to the demand of *Iphigenia*; but ſo ſoon as he beheld her eyes open, he began to obſerve them with a conſtant regard, and being perſwaded in his ſoul that from them flowed ſuch an unutterable ſingularity, as he had never felt till then. Which the young Gentlewoman well noting ſhe began to wax fearfull, leſt theſe ſtedfaſt looks of his, ſhould incite his ruſticity to ſome attempt, which might redound to her diſhonour: wherefore awaking her women and ſervants, and they all being riſen, ſhe ſaid, Farewell *Cymon*, I leave thee to thine own good fortune; whereto he preſently replied, ſaying, I will go with you. Now although the Gentlewoman refuſed his company, as dreading ſome act of incivility from him: yet could ſhe not deviſe any way to be rid of him, till he had brought her to her own dwelling, where taking leave mannerly of her, he went directly home to his Fathers houſe; ſaying, Nothing ſhould compell him to live any longer in the muddy Country. And albeit his Father was much offended hereat, and all the reſt of his kindred and friends: (yet not knowing how to help it) they ſuffered him to continue there ſtill, expecting the cauſe of this his ſo ſodain alteration.

nation, from the course of life, which contented him so highly before.

Cymon being now wounded to the heart (where never any civill instruction could before get entrance) with loves piercing dart, by the bright beauty of *Iphigenia*, moved much admiration (falling from one change to another) in his father, kindred, and all else tha knew him. For first he requested of his father, that he might be habited and respected like to his brethren, whereto right gladly he condescended. And frequenting the company of civill youths, observing also the carriage of Gentlemen, especially such as were amorously inclined: he grew to a beginning in a short time (to the wonder of every one) not only to understand the first instruction of Letters, but also became most skilfull, even amongst them that were best exercised in Philosophy. And afterward love to *Iphigenia* being the sole occasion of this happy alteration, not onely did his harsh and clownish voyce convert it selfe more mildly, but also he became a singular Musician, and could perfectly play on any instrument. Beside, he took delight in the riding and managing of great horses, and finding himself of a strong and able body, he used all kinds of Military disciplines, as well by sea, as on the land. And, to be brief, because I would not seem tedious in the repetition of all his virtues, scarsely had he attained to the fourth year, after he was thus falne in love, but he became generally known, to be the most civill, wise, and worthy Gentleman, as well for all virtues enriching the minde as any whatsoever to beautifie the body, that very hardly he could be equaled throughout the whole kingdome of *Cyprus*.

What shall we say then (virtuous Ladies) concerning this *Cymon*? Surely nothing else, but that those high and divine virtues, infused into his gentle soule, whereby envious Fortune, bound and shut up in some small angle of his intellect, which being shaken and set at liberty by love, (as having a farre more potent power then Fortune, in quickning and reviving the dull and drowsie spirits;) declaring his mighty and soveraigne authority, in setting free so many fair and precious vertues unjustly detained, so let the worlds eye behold them truly, by manifest testimony from whence he can deliver those spirits subjected to his power, and guide them (afterward) to the highest degrees of honour. And although *Cymon* by affecting *Iphigenia*, failed in some particular things; yet notwithstanding,

ſtanding, his Father *Ariſippus* duely conſidering, that love had made him a man, whereas (before) he was no better then a beaſt: not only endured all patiently, but alſo adviſed him therein to take ſuch courſes as beſt liked himſelfe. Nevertheleſſe *Chynon* (who refuſed to be called *Galeſus*, which was his naturall name indeed) remembring that *Iphigenia* tearmed him *Chynon*, and coveting (under this title) to compaſſe the iſſue of his honeſt amorous deſire: made many motions to *Cipheus* the Father of *Iphigenia*, that he would be pleaſed to let him enjoy her in marriage. But *Cipheus* told him, that he had already paſſed his promiſe for her, to a Gentleman of Rhodes, named *Paſimondo*, which promiſe he religiouſly intended to performe.

The time being come, which was concluded on for *Iphigenias* marriage, in regard that the affianced husband had ſent for her: *Chynon* thus communed with his own thoughts. Now is the time (quoth he) to let my divine Miſtreſſe ſee, how true and honourably I do affect her, becauſe (by her) I am become a man. But if I could be poſſeſſed of her, I ſhould grow more glorious, then the common condition of a mortall man, and have her I will or loſe my life in the adventure. Being thus reſolved, he prevailed with divers young Gentlemen his friends, making them of his faction and ſecretly prepared a Ship, furniſhed with all things for a Navall fight, ſetting ſuddainly forth to Sea, and hulling abroad in thoſe parts by which the Veſſell ſhould paſſe, that muſt convey *Iphigenia* to Rhodes to her husband. After many honours done to them, who were to tranſport her thence unto Rhodes, being embarked, they ſet ſaile upon their *Bon viaggio*.

Chynon, who ſlept not in a buſineſſe ſo earneſtly importing him, ſet on them (the day following) with his Ship, and ſtanding aloft on the deck, cryed out to them that had the charge of *Iphigenia*, ſaying, Strike your ſayles, or elſe determine to be ſunk in the Sea. The enemies to *Chynon*, being nothing daunted with his words, prepared to ſtand upon their owne defence; which made *Chynon* after the former ſpeeches delivered, and no anſwer returned, to command the grapling Irons, to be caſt forth, which took ſo faſt hold on the Rhodians ſhip, that (whether they would or no) both the veſſels joyned cloſe together. And he ſhewing himſelfe fierce like a Lyon, not tarrying to be ſeconded by any, ſtepped aboard the Rhodians ſhip, as if he made no reſpect at all of them, and having his ſword ready drawn in his hand (incited by the vertue of unſaigned

fained (love) laied about him on all sides very manfully. Which when the men of Rhodes perceived, casting down their weapons, and all of them (as it were) with one voyce yeelded themselves his prisoners: whereupon he said. Honest friends, neither desire of booty, nor hatred to you, did occasion my departure from Cyprus, thus to assail you with drawne weapons, but that which hereto hath moved me, is a matter highly importing to me, and very easie for you to grant and so enjoy your present peace. I desire to have fair *Iphigenia* from you, whom I love above all other Ladies living, because I could not obtain her of her father, to make her my lawfull wife in marriage. I love is the ground of my instant conquest, and I must use you as my mortall enemies, if you stand upon any further termes with me, and do not deliver her as mine owne: for your *Pasimondo*, must not enjoy what is my right, first by vertue of my love, and now by Conquest: Deliver her therefore, and depart hence at your pleasure.

The men of Rhodes, being rather constrained thereto, then of any free disposition in themselves; with teares in their eyes, delivered *Iphigenia* to *Chynon*; who beholding her in like manner to weep, thus spake unto her. Noble Lady, do not any way discomfort yourselfe, for I am your *Chynon*, who have more right and true title to you, and much better do deserve to enjoy you, by my long continued affection to you, then *Pasimondo* can any way plead; because you belong to him but only by promise. So, bringing her aboard his own ship, where the Gentlemen his companions gave her kinde welcome; without touching any thing ele belonging to the Rhodians, he gave them free liberty to depart.

Chynon being more joyfull by the obtaining of his hearts desire, then in any other conquest else in the world could make him, after he had spent some time in comforting *Iphigenia*, who as yet sat sadly sighing; he consulted with his companions, who joyned with him in opinion, that their safest course was, by no meanes to returne to Cyprus; and therefore all (with one accord) resolved to set sail for Candie, where every one made account, but especially *Chynon*, in regard of ancient and new combined kindred, as also very intimate friends, to finde very worthy entertainment, and so to continue there safely with *Iphigenia*. But Fortune, who was so favourable to *Chynon*, in granting him so pleasing a conquest, to shew her inconstancy, so

sudainly

sodainly changed the inestimable joy of our jocund Lover, into as heavy sorrow and disaster. For, foure houres were not fully compleated, since his departure from the Rhodian, but darke night came upon them, and he sitting conversing with his fair Mistresse, in the sweetest solace of his soul; the winds began to blow roughly, the seas swelled angerly, and a tempest rose impetuously, that no man could see what his duty was to do, in such a great unexpected distresse, nor how to warrant themselves from perishing.

If this accident were displeasing to poor *Cheyon*, I thinke the question were in vain demanded: for now it seemeth to him, that the gods had granted his chief desire to the end he should die with the greater anguish, in losing both his love and life together. His friends likewise felt the selfe-same afflictions, but especially *Iphigenias*, who wept and grieved beyond all measure, to see the ship beaten with such stormy billowes, as threatned her sinking every minute. Impatiently she cursed the love of *Cheyon*, greatly blamed his desperate boldnesse, and maintaining that so violent a tempest could never happen, but only by the gods displeasure, who would not permit him to have a wife against their will; and therefore thus punished his proud presumption, not only in his unavoidable death; but also that her life must perish for company.

She continuing in these wofull lamentations, and the Mariners labouring all in vain, because the violence of the tempest increased more and more, so that every moment they expected racking: they were carryed (contrary to their own knowledge) very neer to the Ile of *Rhodes*, which they being no way able to avoide, and utterly ignorant of the Coast; for safety of their lives, they laboured to land there if possibly they might. Wherein Fortune was somewhat fartherous to them, driving them into a small gulfe of the Sea, whereinto (but a little while before) the *Rhodians*, from whom *Cheyon* had taken *Iphigenie*, were newly entred with their ship. Nor had they any knowledge each of other, till the break of day) which made the heavens to look more clearly) gave them discovery of being within a flights shoot together. *Cheyon* looking forth, and espying the same ship which he had left the day before, he grew exceeding sorrowfull, as fearing that which after followed, and therefore he willed the Mariners, to get away from her by all their best endeavour, and let fortune afterward dispose of them as she pleased; for into a worse place they could not come, nor fall into the like danger.

The

The Mariners employed their utmoſt paines, and all proved but loſſe of time: for the winde was ſo ſterne, and the waves ſo turbulent, that ſtill they drove them the contrary way: ſo that ſtriving to get forth of the gulfe, whether they would or no, they were driven on land, and inſtantly known to the *Rhodians*, whereof they were not a little joyfull. The men of *Rhodes* being landed, ran preſently to the near neighbouring Villages, where dwelt divers worthy Gentlemen, to whom they reported the arrivall of *Chynon*, what fortune befell them at ſea, and that *Iphigenia* might now be recovered again, with chaſtiſement to *Chynon* for his bold inſolence. They being very joyfull of this good newes, took ſo many men as they could of the ſame Village, and ran immediately to the Sea ſide, where *Chynon* being newly landed and his people, intending flight into a near adjoyning Forreſt, for defence of himſelfe and *Iphigenia*: they were all taken, led thence into the Village, and afterward unto the chief City of *Rhodes*.

No ſooner were they arrived, but *Paſimondo*, the intended Husband for *Iphigenia* (who had already heard the tydings) went and complained to the Senate, who appointed a Gentleman of *Rhodes*, named *Lyſimachus*, and being that year ſoveraigne Magiſtrate over the *Rhodians* to go well provided for the apprehenſion of *Chynon* and his company, committing them to priſon, which accordingly was done. In this manner, the poor unfortunate lover *Chynon*, loſt his fair *Iphigenia*, having wonne her in ſo ſhort a time before, and ſcarſely requited with ſo much as a kiſſe. But as for *Iphigenia* ſhe was royally welcommed by many Lords and Ladies of *Rhodes*, who ſo kindly comforted her, that ſhe ſoon forgot all her grief and trouble on the Sea, remaining in company of thoſe Ladies and Gentlewomen, untill the day determined for her marriage.

At the earneſt entreaty of divers *Rhodian* Gentlemen, who were in the Ship with *Iphigenia*, and had their lives courteouſly ſaved by *Chynon*: both he and his friend had their lives likewiſe ſpared, although *Paſimondo* laboured importunately, to have them all put to death; only they were condemned to perpetuall imprisonment, which (you muſt thinke) was moſt grievous to them, as being now hopeleſſe of any deliverance. But in the mean time, while *Paſimondo* was ordering his nuptiall preparation, Fortune ſeeming to repent the wrongs ſhe had done to *Chynon*, prepared a new accident, whereby to comfort him in this

deep

deep distresse, and in such manner as I will relate unto you.

Pasimondo had a Brother, younger then he in years, but not a jot inferiour to him in virtue, whose name was *Hermisda*, and long time the case had been in question, for his taking to wife a fair young Gentlewoman of *Rhodes*, called *Cassandra*; whom *Lysimachus* the Governour loved very dearly, and hindred her marriage with *Hermisda*, by diverse strange accidents. Now *Pasimondo* perceiving, that his owne Nuptials required much cost and solemnity, he thought it very convenient, that one day might serve for both their Weddings, which else would lanch into more lavish expences, and therefore concluded, that his brother *Hermisda* should marry *Cassandra*, at the same time as he wedded *Iphigenia*. Hereupon he consulted with the Gentlewomens parents, who liking the motion as well as he, the determination was set downe, and one day to effect the duties of both.

When this came to the hearing of *Lysimachus*, it was greatly displeasing to him, because now he saw himselfe utterly deprived of all hope to attain the issue of his desire, if *Hermisda* received *Cassandra* in marriage. Yet being a very wise and worthy man, he dissembled his distaste, and began to consider on some apt means, whereby to disappoint the marriage once more, which he thought impossible to be done, except it were by rape or stealth. And that did not appeare to him any difficult matter, in regard of his Office and Authority: only it would seem dishoneſt in him, by giving such an unfitting example. Nevertheless, after long deliberation, honour gave way to love, and resolutely he concluded to steal her away, whatsoever became of it.

Nothing wanted now, but a convenient company to assist him, and the order how to have it done. Then he remembred *Chysen* and his friends, whom he detained as his prisoners, and perswaded himself, that he could not have a more faithfull friend in such a businesse then *Chysen* was. Hereupon, the night following, he sent for him into his Chamber, and being alone by themselves, thus he began *Chysen* (quoth he) as the gods are very bountifull in bestowing their blessings on men, so do they therein most wisely make proof of their virtues, and such as they finde firme and constant, in all occurrences which may happen, them they make worthy (as valiant spirits) of the very best and highest merits. Now, they being willing to have more certain experience of thy virtues,

then

then those which heretofore thou hast shewn, within the bounds and limits of your fathers possessions, which I know to be superabounding: perhaps do intend to present thee other occasions, of more important weight and consequence.

For first of all (as I have heard) by the piercing solicitudes of love, of a senseless creature, they made thee (to become a man endued with reason. Afterward, by adverse fortune, and now again by wearisom imprisonment, it seemeth that they are desirous to make tryall, whether thy manly courage be changed, or no, from that which heretofore it was, when thou enjoyedst a matchlesse beauty, and lost her again in so short a while. Wherefore if thy vertue be such as it hath been, the gods can never give thee any blessing more worthy any acceptance, then she whom they are now minded to bestow on thee: in which respect, to the end that thou mayest re-assume thy wonted heroick spirit, and become more couragious then ever heretofore, I will acquaint thee more at large.

Understand then noble *Cymon*, that *Pasimondo*, the only glad man of thy misfortune, and diligent sutor after thy death, maketh all hast he can possibly devise to do, to celebrate his marriage with thy fair Mistresse: because he would plead possession of the prey, which fortune (when she smiled) did first bestow, and (afterward frowning) took from thee again. Now, that it must needs be very irkesome to thee (at least if thy love be such, as I am perswaded it is) I partly can collect from my selfe, being intended to be wronged by his brother *Hermisda*, even in the selfesame manner, and on his marriage day, by taking fair *Cassandra* from me, the only Jewell of my love and life. For the prevention of two such notorious injuries, I see that Fortune hath left us no other meanes, but only the virtue of our courages, and the help of our right hands, by preparing our selves for Armes, opening a way to thee, by a second rape or stealth; and to me the first; for absolute possession of our divine Mistresses. Wherefore if thou art desirous to recover thy losse, I will not only pronounce liberty to thee (which I thinke thou dost little care for without her) but dare also assure thee to enjoy *Iphigenia*, so thou wilt assist me in mine enterprise, and follow me in my fortune, if the gods do let them fall into our power.

You may well imagine, that *Cymons* dismayed soul was not a little cheared at these speeches; and therefore without craving any longer respit of time for answer;

swer, thus he replyed; *Lord Lysimachus*, in such a businesse as this is, you cannot have a faster friend then my self, at least, if such good hap may betide me, as you have more then halfe promised: and therefore do no more but command what you would have to be effected by me, and make no doubt of my courage in the execution: Whereupon *Lysimachus* made this answer, Know then *Chynon* (quoth he) that three dayes hence these marriages are to be celebrated in the houses of *Pasimond* and *Hermisda*: upon which day, thou, thy friends, and my selfe (with some others, in whom I repose especiall trust) by the friendly favour of night, will enter into their houses, while they are in the middest of their joviall feasting; and (seizing on the two Brides) beat them thence to a ship, which I will have lie in secret, waiting for our coming, and kill all such as shall presume to impeach us. This direction gave great contentment to *Chynon*, who remained still in prison, without revealing a word to his own friends, untill the limited time was come.

Upon the Wedding day, performed with great and magnificent Triumph, there was not a corner in the Brethrens houses, but it sung joy in the highest key. *Lysimachus*, after he had ordered all things as they ought to be, and the hour for dispatch approched neer; he made a division in three parts, of *Chynon*, of his followers, and his own friends, being all well armed under their outward habits. Having first used some encouraging speaches, for more resolute prosecution of the enterprize, he sent one troope secretly to the Port, that they might not be hindered of going aboord the ship, when the urgent occasion should require it. Passing with the other two traines of *Pasimond* he left the one at the door, that such as were in the house, might not shut them up fast, and so impeach their passage forth. Then with *Chynon*, and the third band of Confederates, he ascended the staires up into the Hall, where he found the Brides with store of Ladies and Gentlewomen, all sitting in comely order at Supper. Rushing in roughly among the attendants, down they threw the Tables, and each of them laying hold of his Mistresse, delivered them into the hands of their followers, commanding that they should be carryed aboord the ship, for avoiding of further inconveniences.

This hurry and amazement being in the house, the Brides weeping, the Ladies lamenting, and all the servants confusedly wondering; *Chynon* and *Lysimachus* (with their Friends) having their weapons drawn in their

their hands, made all opposers to give them way, and so gained the staires for their own descending. There stood *Passmonde*, with a huge long staffe in his hand, to hinder their passage down the staires; but *Clynon* saluted him so soundly on the head, that it being cleft in twain, he fell dead before his feet. His brother *Hermisda* came to his rescue, and sped likewise in the selfe-same manner as he had done; so did diverse others beside, whom the companions to *Lysimachus* and *Clynon*, either slew out-right, or wounded.

So they left the house, filled with bloud, teares, and out-cries, going on together without any hindrance, and so brought both the Brides aboard the ship, which they rowed away instantly with their Oares. For, now the shore was full of armed people, who came in rescue of the stolen Ladies: but all in vain, because they were lanched into the main, and sayled on merrily towards *Candie*. Where being arrived, they were worthily entertained by honourable Friends and Kinsmen, who pacified all unkindnesse between them and their Mistresses: And, having accepted them in lawfull marriage, there they lived in no mean joy and contentment: albeit there was a long and troublesome difference (about these rapes) between *Rhodes* and *Cyprus*.

But yet in the end, by the means of Noble Friends and kindred on either side, labouring to have such discontentment appeased, endangering war betweene the Kingdomes; after a limited time of banishment, *Clynon* returned joyfully with *Iphigenia* home to *Cyprus*, and *Lysimachus* with his beloved *Cassandra* unto *Rhodes*, each living in their severall Countries, with much felicity.

Fair Constance *of* Liparis, *fell in love with* Martuccio Gomitto: *and hearing that he was dead, desperately she entered into a Barke, which being transported by the windes to* Susa *in* Barbary, *from thence she went to* Thunis *where she made her selfe known to him, and he being in great authority, as a privy Counsellor to the King: he married the said* Constance, *and returned richly home with her, to the Iland of* Liparis.

The second Novell.

Wherein is declared, the firme loyalty of a true Lover: And how Fortune doth sometime humble men, to raise them afterward to a far higher degree.

When

When the Queen perceived, that the Novell recited by *Pamphilus* was concluded, which she graced with especiall commendations; she commanded Madam *Emelia*, to take her turne as next in order; whereupon she thus began. Me thinkes it is a matter of equity, that every one should take delight in those things, whereby the recompence may be noted, answerable to their own affection. And because I rather desire to walke along by the pathes of pleasure, then dwell in any ceremonious or scrupulous affection, I shall the more gladly obey our Queen to day, then yesterday I did our melancholy King.

Understand then (Noble Ladies) that near to *Sicily*, there is a small Iland, commonly called *Lipari*, wherein (not long since) lived a young Damosell, named *Constance*, borne of very sufficient parentage in the same Iland. There dwelt also a young man called *Martuccio Gomito*, of comely feature, well conditioned, and not unexpert in many vertuous qualities; affecting *Constance* in hearty manner: and she so answerable to him in the same kinde, that to be in his company, was her only felicity. *Martuccio* coveting to injoy her in marriage, made his intent known to her Father: who upbraiding him with poverty, told him plainly that he should not have her. *Martuccio* grieving to see himself thus despised, because he was poor: made such good meanes, that he was provided of a small barke; and called such friends (as he thought fit) to his association, made a solemne vow, that he would never returne backe to *Lipari*, untill he was rich, and in better condition.

In the nature and course of a Rover or Pirate, so he put thence to Sea, coasting all about *Barbarie*, robbing and spoyling such as he met with; who were of no greater strength then himself: wherein fortune was so favourable to him, that he became wealthy in a very short while. But as felicities are not always permanent, so he and his followers not contenting themselves with sufficient riches by greedy seeking to get more, happened to be taken by certain ships of the Sarazins, and so were robbed themselves of all that they had gotten, yet they resisted them stoutly a long while together, though it proved to the losse of many lives among them. When the Sarazens had sunke his ship in the Sea, they took him with them to *Tunis*, where he was imprisoned and lived in extreame misery.

Newes came to *Lipari*, not only by one, but many more beside, that all those that departed thence in the small

small Barke with *Martuccio*, were drowned in the Sea, and not a man escaped. When *Constance* heard these unwelcome tyding, (who was exceeding full of griefe for his so desperate departure) she wept and lamented extraordinarily, desiring now rather to die, then live any longer. Yet she had not the heart to lay any violent hands on her selfe, but rather to end her dayes by some new kinde of necessity. And departing privately from her fathers house, she went to the Port or Haven, where (by chance) she found a small Fisher-boate, lying distant from the other vessells, the owners whereof being all gone on shore, and it well furnished with Masts, Sailes and Oares, she entred into it; and putting forth the Oares, being somewhat skilfull in sayling, (as generally all the women of that Iland are) she so well guided the Sayles, Rudder, and Oares, that she was quickely farre off from the Land, and soly remained at the mercy of the windes. For thus she had resolved with herselfe, that the Boat being uncharged, and without a guide, would either be over-whelmed by the windes, or split in peeces against some Rocke; by which meanes she could not escape although she would, but (as it was her desire) must need be drowned.

In this determination, wrapping a mantle about her head, and lying downe weeping in the boats bottome, she hourely expected her finall expiration: but it fell out otherwise, and contrary to her desperate intention, because the wind turning to the North, and blowing very gently, without disturbing the Seas a jot, they conducted the small boat in such sort, that after the night of her entring into it, and the morrowes sailing on untill the evening, it came with, in an hundred leagues of *Thunis* and to a strond near a Towne called *Susa*. The young Damosell knew not whether she were on the sea or land; as one, who not by any accident happening, lifted up her head to look about her; neither intended ever to do. Now it came to passe, that as the boat was driven to the shore, a poor woman stood at the Sea side, washing certaine Fishermens Nets; and seeing the boat coming towards her under saile, without any person appearing in it, she wondered thereat not a little. It being close at the shore, and she thinking the Fishermen to be asleep therein; stept boldly, and looked into the boat, where she saw not any body, but only the poor distressed Damosell, whose sorrowes having brought her now into a sound sleep, the woman gave many cals before she could

could awake her, which at the length she did, and looked very strangely about her.

The poor woman perceiving by her habit that she was a Christian, demanded of her (in speaking Latine) how it was possible for her, being all alone in the boat to arrive there in this manner? When *Constance* heard her speak the Latine tongue, she began to doubt lest some contrary winde had turned her backe to *Liparis* again, and starting up sodainly, to look with better advise about her, she saw her self at Land: and not knowing the Country, demanded of the poor woman where she was? Daughter (quoth she) you are here hard by *Susa* in *Barbary*. Which *Constance* hearing and plainly perceiving, that death had denyed to end her miseries, fearing lest she should receive some dishonour, in such a barbarous unkind country, and not knowing what should now become of her, she sat down by the boat side, wringing her hands and weeping bitterly.

The good woman did greatly compassionate her case, and prevailed so well by gentle speaches, that she conducted her into her own poor habitation, where at length she understood by what means she happened thither so strangely. And perceiving her to be fasting, she set such homely bread as she had before her, a few small Fishes, and a cruse of Water, praying her for to accept of this poor entertainment; which meer necessity compelled her to do, and shewed her selfe very thankfull for it.

Constance hearing that she spake the Latine language so well; desired to know what she was. Whereto the old woman thus answered, Gentlewoman (quoth she) I am of *Trepanum*, named *Carapresa*, and am a servant in this Country to certain Christian Fishermen. The young Maiden (albeit she was very full of sorrow) hearing her name to be *Carapresa*, conceived it as a good augury to her selfe, and that she had heard the name before, although she knew not what occasion should move her thus to do. Now began her hopes to quicken again, and yet she could not rely upon whatground; nor was she so desirous of death as before, but made more precious estimation of her life, and without any further declaration of her self or Country, she entreated the good woman (even for charities sake) to take pitty on her youth, and help her with such good advice, to prevent all injuries which might happen to her, in such a solitary wofull condition.

Carapresa

Carapresa having heard her request, like a good woman as she was, left *Constance* in her poor Cottage, and went hastily to leave her nets in safety: which being done, she returned back again, and covering *Constance* with her mantle, led her on to *Susa* with her, where being arrived, the good woman began in this manner, *Constance*, I will bring thee to the house of a worthy Sarazin Lady, to whom I have done many honest services, according as she pleased to command me. She is an ancient woman, full of charity, and to her I will commend thee as best I may; for I am well assured, that she will gladly entertain thee, and use thee as if thou were her own daughter. Now, let it be thy part, during thy time of remaining with her, to employ thy utmost diligence in pleasing her, by deserving and gaining her grace, till heaven shall bless thee with better fortune: and as she promised so she performed.

The Sarazine Lady, being well stept into years, upon the commendable speeches delivered by *Carapresa*, did the more seriously fasten her eye on *Constance*, and compassion provoking her to teares, she took her by the hand, and (in loving manner) kissed her forehead. So she led her further into her house, where dwelt divers other women (but not one man) all exercising themselves in severall labours, as working all sorts of silke, with Imbroideries of Gold and Silver, and sundry other excellent Arts beside, which in short time were very familiar to *Constance*, and so pleasing grew her behaviour to the old Lady, and all the rest beside; that they loved and delighted in her wonderfully, and by little and little she attained to the speaking of their language, although it were very harsh and difficult.

Constance continuing thus in the old Ladies service at *Susa*, and thought to be dead or lost in her owne Fathers house; it fortuned, that one reigning then as King of *Thunis*, who named himself *Mariabdola*: there was a young Lord of great birth, and very powerfull; who lived as then in *Granada*, and pleaded that the Kingdome of *Thunis* belonged to him. In which respect he muttered together a mighty Army, and came to assault the King, as hoping to expell him. These newes coming to the eare of *Martuccio Gomito*, who spake the Barbarian Language perfectly; and hearing it reported, that the King of *Thunis* made no mean preparation for his own defence: he conferred with one of his keepers, who had the custody of him, and the rest taken with him, saying, If (quoth he) I could have meanes

to speake with the King, and he were pleased to allow of my counsell, I can instruct him in such a course as shall assure him to win the honour of the field. The Guard reported these speeches to his Master, whoe presently acquainted the King therewith, and *Martuccio* being sent for, he was commanded to speake his mind: Whereupon he began in this manner.

My gracious Lord, during the time that I have frequented your Country, I have heedfully observed that the Military Discipline used in your fightes and battells, dependeth more upon Archers, than other men imployed in your warre. And therefore, if it could be so ordered, that this kinde of Artillery may faile in your enemies Campe, and yours bee sufficiently furnished therewith, you need make no doubt of winning the battaile: whereto the King thus replyed Doubtlesse, if such an act were possible to be done, I would give great hope of successefull prevailing. Sir, said *Martuccio*, if you please it may be done, and I can quickely resolve you how. Let the strings of your Archers bowes be made more soft and gentle, than those which heretofore they have formerly used; and next, let the nockes of the Arrowes be so provided, as not to receive any other, than those pliant gentle strings. But this must be done so secretly, that your enemies may have no knowledge thereof, lest they should provide themselves in the same manner. Now the reason (Gracious Lord) why thus I counsell you, is to this end. When the Archers on the Enemies side have shot their arrowes at your men, and yours in like manner at them: it followeth, that (upon meere constraint) they must gather up your arrowes, to shoot them backe againe at you, for so long while as the battell endureth; as no doubt but your men will doe the like to them. But your enemies will finde themselves much deceived, because they can make no use of your peoples Arrowes, in regard that the nockes are too narrow to receive their boysterous strings: which will fall out contrary with your followers; for the pliant string belonging to your Bowes, are as apt for their enemies great nockt Arrowes, as their owne: and so they shall have free use of both, reserving them in plentifull store, when your adversaries must stand unfurnished of any, but them that they cannot any way use.

This counsell pleased the King very highly, and he being a Prince of great understanding, gave order to have it accordingly followed, and thereby valiantly vanquished his enemies. Hereupon, *Martuccio* came to be great in his grace, as also consequently rich, and setled

ted in no meane place of authority. Now as worthy and commendable actions are soone spread abroad, in honour of the man by whom they hapned: even so the fame of this rare got victory, was quickely noysed throughout the Country, and came to the hearing of poore *Constance*, that *Martuccio Gomito* (whom shee supposed so long since to be dead) was living, and in honourable condition. The love which formerly shee bare unto him, being not altogether extinct in her heart; of a small sparke, brake forth into a sudaine flame, and so increased day by day, that her hope (being before almost quite dead) revived againe in chearfull manner.

Having imparted all her fortunes to the good old Lady with whom she dwelt; she told her beside, that she had earnest desire to see *Tunis*, to satisfie her eyes as well as her eares, concerning the rumor blazed abroad. The good old Lady commended her desire, and (even as shee had beene her Mother) tooke her with her aboord a Barke, and so sayled thence to *Tunis* where both shee and *Constance* found honourable welcome, in the house of a kinsman to the Sarazin Lady. *Corapreste* also went with them thither, and her they sent abroad into the Citie, to understand the newes of *Martuccio Gomito*. After they knew for a certainty that he was living, and in great authority about the King, according as the former report went of him; Then the good old Lady, being desirous to let *Martuccio* know, that his faire friend *Constance* was come thither to see him, went her selfe to the place of his abiding, and spake unto him in this manner. Noble *Martuccio*, there is a servant of thine in my house, which came from *Lipari*, and requireth to have a little conference with thee: but because I durst not trust any other with the message, my selfe (at her intreaty) am come to acquaint thee therewith. *Martuccio* gave her kinde and hearty thankes, and then went along with her to the house.

No sooner did *Constance* behold him, but she was ready to die with conceit of joy, and being unable to containe her passion, sudainely she threw her armes about his necke, and in meere compassion of her many misfortunes, as also the instant solace of her soule (not being able to utter one word) the teares trickled abundantly downe her cheekes. *Martuccio* also seeing his faire friend, was overcome with exceeding admiration, and stood a while, as not knowing what to say; till venting forth a vehement sigh, thus he spake.

My deareſt love *Conſtance*! Art thou yet living? It is a tedious long while ſince I heard thou waſt loſt, and never any tiuings of thee in thy fathers houſe. With which words the tears ſtanding in his eyes moſt lovingly he embraced her; *Conſtance* recounted to him all her fortunes, and what kindneſſe ſhe had received from the Sarazine Lady ſince her firſt coming to her. And after much other d ſcourſe paſſing between them. *Martuccio* departed from her, and returning to the King his Maſter, told him all the hiſtory of his fortunes, and thoſe beſide of his dear love *Conſtance*, being purpoſely minded (with his gracious liking) to marry her according to the Chriſtian Law.

The King was much amazed at ſo many ſtrange accidents, and ſending for *Conſtance* to come before him; from her own mouth he heard the whole relation of her continued affection to *Martuccio*, whereupon he ſaid, Now truſt me fair Damoſell, thou haſt dearly deſerved him to be thy Husband. Then ſending for very coſtly Jewels, and rich preſents, the one half of them he gave to her, and the other to *Martuccio*, granting them licenſe withall, to marry according to their own mindes.

Martuccio did many honours, and gave great giſts to the aged Sarazine Lady, with whom *Conſtance* had lived ſo kindly reſpected: which although ſhe had no need of, neither ever reſpected any ſuch rewarding; yet conquered by their urgent importunity, (eſpecially *Conſtance*, who could not be thankfull enough to her) ſhe was enforced to receive them, and taking her leave of them weeping, ſayled back again to *Suſa*.

Within a ſhort while after, the King licenſing their departure thence, they entred into a ſmall barke, and *Carapreſa* with them, ſayling on with proſperous gales of winde, untill they arrived at *Liparis*, where they were entertained with generall rejoycing. And becauſe their marriage was not ſufficiently performed at *Thunis*, in regard of divers Chriſtian ceremonies there wanting, their Nuptials were again moſt honourably ſolemnized, and they lived (many yeares after) in health and much happineſſe.

Pedro Bocamazzo, *eſcaping away with a young Damoſell which he loved, named* Angelina, *met with theeves in his journey. The Damoſell flying fearefully into a Forreſt, by chance arrived at a Caſtle. Pedro being taken by the theeves, happening afterward to eſcape from them*

them; cometh (accidentally) to the same Castle where Angelina was. And marrying her, they then returned home to Rome.

The third Novell.

Wherein the severall powers both of Love and Fortune, is more at large approved.

THere was not any one in the whole company, but much commended the Novell of Madam *Emilia*; and when the Queen perceived it was ended she turned towards Madam *Eliza*, commanding her to continue on their delightfull exercise: whereto she declaring her willing obedience, began to speak thus: Courteous Ladies, I remember one unfortunate night which happened to two Lovers that were not endued with the greatest discretion. But because they had very many and happy days afterwards, I am the mroe willing for to let you hear it.

In the City of Rome, which (in times past) was called the Lady and Mistresse of the world, though now scarsely so good as the waiting maide: there dwelt sometime a young Gentleman, named *Petro Boccamazzo*, descended from one of the most honourable Families in Rome, who was much enamoured of a beautifull Gentlewoman, called *Angelina*, daughter to one named *Giglevazzo Sculo*, whose fortunes were none of the fairest, yet he greatly esteemed amongst the Romans. The entercourse of love between these twain, had so equally instructed their hearts and sousl, that it could hardly be judged which of them was the more fervent in affection. But he, not being inured to such oppressing passions, and therefore the lesse able to support them, except he was sure to compasse his desire, plainly made the motion, that he might enjoy her in honourable marriage. Which his parents and friends hearing, went to conferre with him, blaming him with over-much baseneſſe, so far to disgrace himself and his stocke. Beside, they advised the father to the maid, neither to credit what *Pedro* said in this case, or to live in hope of any such match, because they all did despise it.

Pedro perceiving, that the way was shut up, whereby (and none other) he was to mount the Ladder of his hopes; began to wax wearry of longer living: and if he could have wonne her fathers consent, he would have married her in the despight of all his friends. Nevertheleſſe, he had a conceit hammering in his head, which if the maid would be as forward as himselfe, should bring the matter to full effect. Letters and secret

intelligences passing still between, at length he understood her ready resolution, to adventure with him through all fortunes whatsoever, concluding on their sodaine and secret flight from Rome. For which *Pedro* did so well provide, that very early in a morning, and well mounted on horse-backe, they tooke the way leading to Alagna, where *Pedro* had some honest friends, in whom he reposed especiall trust. Riding on thus thorow the country, having no leasure to accomplish their marriage, because they stood in feare of pursuite: they were ridden above foure leagues from Rome, still shortning the way with their amorous discoursing.

It fortuned, that *Pedro* having no certaine knowledge of the way, but following a tracke guiding too farre on the left hand; rode quite out of course, and came at last within sight of a small Castle, out of which (before they were aware) issued twelve Villaines, whom *Angelina* sooner espied, than *Pedro* could do; which made her cry out to him, saying: Helpe deare Love to save us, or else wee shall be assailed. *Pedro* then turning his horse so expeditiously as he could, and giving him the spurres as need required; mainely he gallopped into a neer adjoyning Forrest, more minding the following of *Angelina*, than any direction of his way, or them that endeavoured to be his hinderance. So that by often winding and turning about, as the passage appeared troublesome to him, when he thought himselfe free and furtheſt from them, he was round engirt, and seized on by them. When they had made him to dismount from his horse, questioning him of whence, and what he was, and he resolving them therein, they fell into a secret consultation saying thus among themselves. This man is a friend to our deadly enemie, how can we then otherwise dispose of him, but draine him of all he hath, and in dispight of the *Orsins* (men in nature hatefull to us) hang him up here on one of these trees?

All of them agreeing in this dismall resolution, they commanded *Pedro* to put off his garments, which hee yeelding to do (a beit unwillingly) it so fell out, that five and twentie other theeves, came sodainely rushing in upon them, crying, Kill, kill, and spare not a man.

They which before had surprized *Pedro*, desiring now to shift for their owne safety; left him standing quaking in his shirt, and so ranne away mainely to defend themselves. Which the new crew perceiving, and that their number farre exceeded the other: they followed to robbe them of what they had gotten, accounting it

as

as a present purchase for them. Which when *Pedro* perceived, and saw none carrying to prey upon him; he put on his cloathes againe, and mounting on his owne horse, gallopped that way which *Angelina* before had taken: yet could he not descry any tracke or path, or so much as the footing of a horse; but thought himselfe in sufficient security, being rid of them that first seized on him, and also of the rest, which followed in the pursuite of them.

For the losse of his beloved *Angelina*, he was the most wofull man in the world, wandring first one way, and then againe another, calling for her all about the Forrest with out any answer returning to him. And not darring to ride backe againe, on he travelled still, not knowing where to make his arrivall. And having formerly heard of savage ravenous beasts, which commonly live in such unfrequented Forrests: hee not onely was in feare of losing his owne life, but also despaired much for his *Angelina*, lest some Lyon or woolfe, had torne her body in peeces.

Thus rode on poore unfortunate *Pedro*, untill the breake of day appeared, not finding any meanes to get forth of the Forrest, still crying and calling for his faire friend, riding many times backeward, when as he thought he rode forward, untill he became so weake and faint, what with extreame feare, loud calling, and continuing so long a while without any sustenance, that the whole day being thus spent in vaine, and darke night sodainely come upon him, he was not able to hold out any longer.

Now was hee in farre worse case than before, not knowing where, or how to dispose of himselfe, or what might best be done in so great a necessitie. From his horse he alighted, and tying him by the bridle unto a great tree, up he climed into the same tree, fearing to be devoured (in the night time) by some wilde beast, choosing rather to let his his horse perish than himselfe. Within a while after, the Moone began to rise, and the skies appeared bright and cleare: yet durst he not nod, or take a nap, lest he should fall out of the tree; but sate still greeving, sighing, and mourning, despairing of ever seeing his *Angelina* any more, for he could not be comforted by the smallest hopefull perswasion, that any good Fortune might befall her in such a desolate Forrest, where nothing but dismall fears was to be expected, and no likelihood that she should escape with life.

Now, concerning poore affrighted *Angelina*, who-

(as you heard before) knew not any place of refuge to flie unto, but even as it pleased the Horse to carry her: she entred so far into the Forrest, that she could not devise where to seek her own safety. And therefore even as it fared with her friend *Pedro*, in the same manner did it fall out with her, wandering the whole night, and all the day following, one while taking one hopefull tracke, and then another, calling, weeping, and wringing her hands, and grievously complaining of her hard fortune. At the length, perceiving that *Pedro* came not unto her at all, she found a little path (which she lighted on by great good fortune) even when dark night was apace drawing on, and followed it so long, till it brought her within the sight of a small poor Cottage, whereto she rode on so fast as she could, and found therein a very old man, having a wife rather more aged then he; who seeing her to be without company, the old man spake thus unto her.

Faire Daughter (quoth he) whither wander you at such an unseasonable houre, and all alone in a place so desolate? the Damosell weeping, replied; that she had lost her company in the Forrest, and inquired how near she was to Alagna. Daughter (answered the old man) this is not the way to Alagna, for it is above six leagues hence. Then she desired to know, how farre off she was from such houses, where she might have any reasonable lodging? there is none so near, said the old man, that day-light will give you leave to reach. May it please you then good father (replyed *Angelina*) seeing I cannot travell any whither else; for Gods sake, to let me remain here with you this night. Daughter, answered the good old man, we can gladly give you entertainment here, for this night, in such poor manner as you see: but let me tell you withall, that up and down these woods (as well by night as day) walke companies of all conditions, and rather enemies then friends, who do many grievous displeasures and harmes. Now if by misfortune, you being here, and any such people should come, and seeing you so lovely fair, as indeed you are, offer you any shame or injury: Alas you see, it lies not in our power to lend you any helpe or succour. I thought it good (therefore) to acquaint you herewith, because if any such mischance do happen, you should not afterward complain of us.

The young maiden, seeing the time to be so far spent, albeit the old mans words did much dismay her, yet she thus replyed, If it be the will of heaven both you and

I shall be defended from any misfortune: but if any such mischance do happen, I account the meanes leſſe deſerving grief, if I fall into the mercy of men, then to be devoured by wild beaſts in this Forreſt. So, being dismounted from her horſe, and entred into the homely houſe; ſhe ſupp poorly with the old man and his wife, with ſuch mean cates as their proviſion afforded, and after ſupper lay down in her garments on the poor pallat, where the aged couple took their reſt, and was very well contented therewith, albeit ſhe could not refrain from ſighing and weeping, to be thus divided from her dear *Pedro*, of whoſe life and welfare ſhe greatly deſpared.

When it was almoſt day, ſhe heard a great noiſe of people travelling by, whereupon ſhe ſodainly aroſe, and ran into a Garden plot, which was on the back-ſide of the poor Cottage, eſpying in one of the corners a great ſtacke of Hay, wherein ſhe hid her ſelf to the end, that travelling ſtrangers might not readily finde her there in the houſe. Scarſely was ſhe fully there hidden but a great company of Theeves and Villaires, finding the doo open, ruſhed into the Cottage, where looking round about them for ſome booty, they ſaw the Damoſels horſe ſtand ready ſadled which made them demand to whom it belonged. The good old man, not ſeeing the maiden preſent there anſwered thus; Gentlemen, here is no body here but my wife and my ſelfe: as for this horſe, which ſeemeth to be eſcaped from the owner: he came hither yeſter-night, and we gave him houſe room here, rather then to be devoured by Wolves abroad. Then ſaid the principall of the Theeviſh crew: This horſe ſhall be ours, in regard he hath no other Maſter, and let the Owner come claime him of us.

When they had ſearched every corner of the poor Cottage and found no ſuch prey as they looked for, ſome of them went into the backſide; where they had left their Javelins and Targers, wherewith they uſed commonly to travell. It fortuned that one of them, being more ſubtilly ſuſpicious then the reſt, thruſt his Javelin into the ſtacke of Hay, in the very ſame place where the Damoſell lay hidden, miſſing very little of killing her; for it entred ſo far, that the iron head pierced quite thorough her garments, and touched her left bare breſt: whereupon, ſhe was ready to cry out, as fearing ſhe was wounded: but conſidering the place where ſhe was, ſhe lay ſtill and ſpake not a word. This diſordered company, after they had fed on ſome young Kids, and other fleſh which

they brought with them thither, they went thence about their theeving exercise, taking the Damosells horse along with them.

After they were gone a great distance off, the good old man began thus to question his wife. What is become (quoth he) of our young Gentlewoman, which came so late to us yesternight? I have not seene her to day since our arising. The old woman made answer, that shee knew not where she was, and sought all about to finde her. *Angelinaes* feare being well over blowne, and hearing none of the former noise, which made her the better hope of their departure, came forth of the Haystacke; whereof the good old man was not a little joyfull, and because shee had so well escaped from them: so seeing it was now broad day light, he said unto her Now that the morning is so fairely begun, if you can be so well contented, we will bring you to a Castle, which stands about two miles and a halfe hence, where you may be sure to remaine in safety. But you must needs travell thither on foote, because the night-walkers that hapned hither, hath taken away your horse with them.

Angelina making little or no account of such a losse, entreated them for charities sake, to conduct her to that Castle: which according'y they did, and arrived there betweene seaven or eight of the clock. The Castle belonged to one of the *Orsini*, being called *Lo Rhodi Campo di Fiore*, and by great good fortune, his wife was then there, she being a very vertuous and religious Lady. No sooner did shee looke upon *Angelina* but shee knew her immediately, and entertained her very willingly, requesting, to know the reason of her arriving there: which she at large related, and moved the Lady (who likewise knew *Pedro* perfectly well) to much compassion, because he was a kinsman and deare friend to her Husband; and understanding how the theeves had surprized him, she feared that he was slain among them, whereupon shee spake thus to *Angelina*. Seeing you know not what is become of my kinsman *Pedro*, you shall remaine here with mee, untill such time, as (if we heare no other tidings of him) you may with safety be sent backe to Rome.

Pedro all this while sitting in the Tree, so full of griefe, as no man could be more; about the houre of midnight (by the bright splendor of the Moone) espyed about some twentie Wolves, who, so soone as they had got a sight of the horse, ran and engirt him round about. The horse when hee perceived them so neere him,

him, drew his head so strongly backward that breaking the reines of his bridle, hee laboured to escape away from them. But being beset on every side and utterly unable to helpe himselfe, he contended with his teeth and feete in his owne defence, till they haled him violently to the ground, and tearing his body in pieces, left not a jot of him but the bare bones, and afterward ran ranging through the Forrest. At this sight poore *Pedro* was mightily dismayed, fearing to speed no better than his horse had done, and therefore could not devise what was best to be done for he saw no likelihood of getting out of the Forrest with life. But daylight drawing on apace, and he almost dead with cold, having stood quaking so long in the Tree; at length by continuall looking every where about him, to discerne the least glimpse of any comfort; he espied a great fire, which seemed to be about halfe a mile off from him.

By this time it was broad day, when he descended downe out of the Tree, (yet not without much feare) and tooke his way toward the fire, where being arived he found a company of Shepheards banqueting about it, whom he courteously saluting, they tooke pitty on his distresse, and welcommed him kindely. After hee had tasted of such cheere as they had, and was indifferently refreshed by the good fire; he discoursed his hard disasters to them, as also how he hapned thither, desiring to know, if any Village or Castle were neere there about, where he might in better manner releeve himselfe. The Shepheards told him, that about a mile and a halfe from thence, was the Castle of Signior *Lisello di Campo di Fiore*, and that his Lady was residing there; which was no meane comfort to poore *Pedro*, requesting that one of them would accompany him thither, as two of them did in loving manner, to rid him of all further feares.

When hee was arrived at the Castle, and found there divers of his familiar acquaintance; hee laboured to procure some meanes, that the Damosell might bee sought for in the Forrest. Then the Lady calling for her, and bringing her to him; he ran and caught her in his armes, being ready to swound with conceit of joy, for never could any man be more comforted than he was at the sight of his *Angelina*; and questionlesse her joy was not a jot inferior to his, such a simpathy of firme love was setled between them. The lady of the Castle, after she had given them very gracious entertainment, and understood the scope of their bold adventure; she reproved

reproved them both somewhat sharpely, for presuming so far without the consent of their Parents. But perceiving (notwithstanding all her remonstrances) that they continued still constant in their resolution, without any inequality of either side; she said to her self, Why should this matter be any way offensive to me? They love each other loyally; they are not inferiour to one another in birth, but in fortune; they are equally loved and allied to my Husband, and their desire is both honest and honourable. Moreover, what know I, if it be the will of Heaven to have it so? Theeves intended to hang him, in malice to his name and kindred, from which hard fate he hath now happily escaped. Her life was endangered by a sharpe pointed Javeline, and yet her fairer stars would not suffer her so to perish: beside, they have both escaped the fury of ravenous wild beasts; and all these are apparent signes, that future comforts should recompense former passed misfortunes, far be it therefore from me, to hinder the appointment of the Heavens.

Then turning her self to them, thus she proceeded, If your desire be to joyn in honourable marriage, I am well contented therewith, and your Nuptials shall here be solemnized at my Husbands charges. Afterward both he and I will endeavour to make peace between you and your discontented Parents. *Pedro* was not a little joyfull at her kind offer, and *Angelina* much more then he; so they were married together in the Castle, and worthily feasted by the Lady, as Forrest entertainement could permit, and there they enjoyed the first-fruits of their love. Within a short while after, the Lady and they (well mounted on horse backe, and attended with a honourable train) returned to Rome; where her Lord *Lisli* and she prevailed so well with *Pedros* angry Parents, that the variance ended in love and peace, and afterward they lived lovingly together, till old age made them as honourable, as the true and mutuall affection formerly had done.

Riciardo Manardy, *was found by* Messer Lizio Volbonna, *as he sat fast asleep at his daughters Chamber window, having his hand fast in hers, and she sleeping in the same manner Whereupon they are joyned together in marriage, and their long loyall love mutually recompensed.*

The fourth Novell.

Declaring the discreet providence of Parents, in care of their childrens love and their own credit, to cut off inconveniences before they do proceed too farre.

Madam

MAdam *Eliza* having ended her Tale; and heard what commendations the whole company gave thereof: the Queen commanded *Philostratus*, to tell a Novell agreeing with his own mind; who, thus replyed, Faire Ladies, I have been so often checkt for yesterdayes argument of discoursing, which was very offensive to you; that if I intended to make you any amends, I should now undertake to tell such a Tale, as might put you into a mirthfull humor. Which I am determined to do, in relating a briefand pleasant Novell.

Not long since, there lived in Romania, a Knight, a very honest Gentleman, and well qualified, whose name was *Messer Lizio de Valbuna*, to whom it fortuned, that (at his entrance into age) by his Lady and wife, called *Iaquemina*, he had a Daughter, the very choisest and goodliest Gentlewoman in all those places. Now because such a happy blessing (in their old years) was not a little comfortable to them; they thought themselves the more bound in duty, to be circumspect of her education, by keeping her out of over-frequent companies, but only such as agreed best with their gravity, and might give the least ill example to their Daughter, who was named *Catharina*; as making no doubt, but by this their provident and wary respect, to match her in marriage answerable to their liking. There was also a young Gentleman, in the very flourishing estate of his youthfull time, descended from the Family of the *Manardy da Brettinoro*, named *Messer Ricciardo*, who oftentimes frequented the House of *Messer Lizio*, and was a continuall welcome guest to his Table. *Messer Lizio* and his wife making the like account of him, even as if he had been their owne Son.

The young Gallant, perceiving the Maiden to be very beautifull, of singular behaviour, and of such years as was fit for marriage, became exceeding enamoured of her, yet concealed his affection so closely as he could, which was not so covertly carryed, but that she perceived it, and grew into as good liking of him. Many times he had an earnest desire to have conference with her, which yet still he deferred, as fearing to displease her; at the length he lighted on an apt opportunity, and boldly spake unto her in this manner. Faire *Catharina*, I hope thou wilt not let me die for thy love; *Signior Ricciardo* (replyed she suddenly again) I hope you will extend the like mercy to me, as you desire that I should shew to you. This answer was so pleasing to *Messer Ricciardo*, that presently he said:

Alas

Alas deare Love, I have dedicated all my fairest fortunes onely to thy service, so that it remaineth soly in thy power, to dispose of me as best shall please thee, and to appoint such times of private conversation, as may yeeld more comfort to my poore afflicted soule.

Catharina standing musing a while, at last returned him this answer. *Signior Ricciardo*, quoth she, you see what a restraint is set on my liberty, how short I am kept from converting with any one, that I hold this our enterparlance now almost miraculous and very rare. But if you could devise any convenient meanes, to admit us more familiar freedome, without any prejudice to mine honour, or the least distaste to my Parents; doe but instruct it, and I will adventure it. *Ricciardo* having considered on many wayes and meanes, thought one to be the fittest of all; and therefore thus replyed. *Catharina* (quoth he) the onely place for our private talking together, I conceive to be the Gallery over your Fathers Garden. If you can win your Mother to let you lodge there, I will make meanes to climbe over the wall, and at the goodly gazing window, wee may discourse so long as wee please. Now trust me deare Love (answered *Catharina*) no place can be more convenient for our purpose, there shall wee heare the sweete Birds sing, especially the Nightingale, which I have heard singing there all the night long; I will breake the matter to my Mother, and how I speed, you shall heare further from me. So with divers parting kisses, they brake off conference, till the next meeting.

On the day following, which was towards the ending of the moneth of May, *Catharina* began to complaine to her Mother, that the season was over hot and tedious, to be still lodged in her Mothers Chamber, because it was an hinderance to her sleeping; and wanting rest, it would be an empairing of her health. Why Daughter (quoth the Mother) the weather (as yet) is not so hot, but (in my minde) you may very well endure it. Alas Mother, said she, aged people, as you and my Father are, doe not feele the heates of youthfull blood, by reason of your far colder complexion, which is not to be measured by younger yeers. I know that well Daughter, replyed the Mother; but is it in my power, to make the weather warme or coole, as thou perhaps wouldst have it? Seasons are to be suffered, according to their severall qualities; and though the last night might seem hot, this night ensuing may be cooler, and then thy rest will be the better. No Mother quoth

quoth *Catharina*, that cannot be; for as Summer proceedeth on, so the heate increaseth, and no expectation can be of temperate weather, untill it grow to Winter againe. Why Daughter, said the Mother, what wouldest thou have me to doe? Mother (quoth she) if it might stand with my Fathers good liking and yours, I would be spared to the Garden Gallery, which is a great deale more coole lodging. There shall I heare the sweete Nightingale sing as every night she useth to do, and many other pretty Birdes beside, which I cannot doe, lodging in your Chamber.

The Mother loving her Daughter deerely, as being somewhat over-fond of her, and very willing to give her contentment; promised to impart her minde to her Father, not doubting but to compasse what she requested. When she had moved the matter to *Messer Licio*, whose age made him somewhat froward and testy; he angerly said to his wife, Why how now woman; Cannot our daughter sleepe, except she heare the Nightingale sing? Let there be a bed made in the Oven, and there let the Crickets make her Melody. When *Catharina* heard this answere from her Father, and saw her desire to be disapointed; not onely could she take any rest the night following, but also complained more of the heate than before, not suffering her Mother to take any rest; which made her goe angerly to her Husband in the morning, saying, Why Husband, have wee but onely one Daughter, whom you pretend to love right dearely, and yet can you be so careleese of her, as to deny her a request, which is no more than reason? What matter is it for you or me, to let her lodge in the Garden Gallery? Is her young bloud to be compared with ours? Can our weake and crazie bodies, feele the frolike temper of hers? Alas she is hardly (as yet) out of her childish yeares, and children have many desires farre differing from ours: the singing of Birds is rare musick to them, and chiefely the Nightingale; whose sweet notes will provoke them to rest, when neither Art or Phisicke can do it.

Is it even so Wife? answered *Messer Licio*. Must your will and mine be governed by our Daughter? Well, be it so then, let her bed be made in the Garden Gallery, but I will have the keeping of the key, both to lock her in at night, & set her at liberty every morning. Woman, woman, young wenches are wily, many wanton crotchets are busie in their braines, and to us that are aged, they sing like Lapwings; telling us one thing, and intending another; talking of Nightingales, when

when their mindes run on Cocke-sparrowes. Seeing wife, she must needs have her mind, let yet your care and mine extend so far, to keep her chastity uncorrupted, and our credulity from being abused. *Catharina* having so prevailed now with her Mother, her bed made in the Garden Gallery, and secret intelligence given to *Ricciardo*, for preparing his means of accesse to her window; old provident *Lotio* lockes the door to bed-ward, and gives her liberty to come forth in the morning, for his lodging was near the Gallery.

In the dead and silent time of night, when all (but Lovers) take their rest: *Ricciardo* having provided a Ladder of ropes, with grapling hooks to take hold above and below, according as he had occasion to use it By helpe thereof, first mounted over the Garden wall, and then climed up to the Gallery window, before which (as is every where in Italy) was a little round engirting Terrace, only for a man to stand upon, for making cleane the window, or otherwise repairing it. Many nights (in this manner) enjoyed they their meetings, entermixing their amorous conference with infinite kisses and kinde embraces, as the window gave leave, he sitting in the Terrace and departing always before break of day, for fear to be discovered by any.

But, as excesse of delight is the Nurse, to negligence, and begetteth such an over presuming boldnesse, as afterward proveth to be sauced with repentance: so came it to passe with our over-fond Lovers, in being taken tardy through their own folly. After they had many times met in this manner, the nights (according to the season) growing shorter and shorter, which their stolne delight made them lesse respective of, then was requisite in an adventure so dangerous: it fortuned, that their amorous pleasure had so far transported them and dulled their senses in such sort, by these their continuall nightly watching; that they both fell fast asleep, he having his hand closed in hers, and she one arme folded about his body, and thus they slept till broad day light. Old *Messer Lotio*, who continually was the morning Cocke to the whole house, going forth into his Garden, saw how his Daughter and *Ricciardo* were seated at the window. In he went again, and going to his wives Chamber, said to her, rise quickly wife, and you shall see what made your Daughter so desirous to lodge in the Garden Gallery. I perceive that she loved the Nightingale, for she hath caught one, and holds him fast in her hands. Is it possible, said the Mother, that our Daughter should catch a live Nightingale in the dark? You shall

see

see that your self, answered *Messer Lizio*, if you will make haste and go with me.

She putting on her garments in great haste, followed her Husband, and being come to the Gallery door, he opened it very softly, and going to the window, shewed her how they both sat fast asleep, and in such manner as hath been before declared: whereupon she perceiving how *Ricciardo* and *Catharina* had both deceived her, would have made an out-cry, but that *Messer Lizio* spake thus to her; Wife as you love me, speak not a word, nor make any noise: for, seeing she hath loved *Ricciardo* without our knowledg, and they have had their private meetings in this manner, yet free from any blamefull imputation; he shall enjoy her, and she him. *Ricciardo* is a Gentleman, well derived, and of rich possessions, it can be no disparagement to us, that *Catharina* match with him in marriage, which he neither shall, or dare deny to do, in regard of our Lawes severity; for climbing up to my window with his Ladder of Ropes, wherby his life is forfeited to the Law except our Daughter please to spare it, as it remaineth in her power to do, by accepting him as her husband, or yeelding his life up to the Law: which surely she will not suffer, their love agreeing together in such mutuall manner, and he adventuring so dangerously for her. Madam *Iaquemina*, perceiving that her husband spake very reasonably, and was no more offended at the matter: stept aside with him behinde the drawn Curtaines, untill they should awake of themselves. At the last, *Ricciardo* awaked, and seeing it was so far in the day, thought himself halfe dead, and calling to *Catharina*, said. Alas deare Love! what shall we doe? We have slept too long, and shall be taken here. At which words, *Messer Lizio* stept forth from behind the Curtaines, saying, Nay, *Signior Ricciardo*, seeing you have found such an unbefitting way hither, we will provide you a better way for your backe returning. When *Ricciardo* saw the Father and Mother both there, he could not devise what to doe or say, his senses became so strangely confounded; yet knowing how hainously he had offended, if the strictnesse of Law should be challenged against him, falling on his knees, he sayd. Alas, *Messer Lizio*, I humbly crave your mercy, confessing my selfe well worthy of death, that knowing the sharpe rigour of the Law, I would presume so audaciously to break it. But pardon me, worthy Sir, my loyall and unfeigned love to your Daughter *Catharina*, hath been the onely cause of my transgressing.

Ricciardo

Ricciardo (rep'yed *Messer Lizio*) the love I beare thee, and the honest confidence I doe repose in thee step up to plead thy excuse, especially in regard of my Daughter, whom I blame thee not for loving, but for this unlawfull way of presuming to her. Neverthelesse, perceiving how the case standeth, and considering withall, that youth and and affection were the grounds of thine offence: to free thee from death, and my selfe from dishonour, before thou depart hence, thou shalt espouse my Daughter *Catharina*, to make her thy lawfull wife in marriage, and wipe off all scandall to my House and me. All this while was poore *Catharina* on her knees likewise to her Mother, who (notwithstanding this her bold adventure) made earnest suite to her Husband to remit all, because *Ricciardo* right gladly condescended, as it being the maine issue of his hope and desire, to accept *Catharina* in marriage; whereto she was as willing as he. *Messer Lizio* presently called for the confessour of his House, and borrowing one of his Wives Rings, before they went out of the Gallery, *Ricciardo* and *Catharina* were espoused together, to their no little joy and contentment.

Now had they more leasure for further conference, with the Parents and Kindred of *Ricciardo*, who being no way discontented with this sodaine match, but applauding it in the highest degree; they were publikely married againe in the Cathedrall Church, and very honourable triumphs performed at the Nuptials, living long after in happie prosperity.

Guidotto *of Cremona, departing out of this mortall life, left a Daughter of his, with* Iacommino *of Pavia.* Giovanni di Severino, *and* Menghino da Minghole, *fell both in love with the young Maiden, and fought for her; who being afterward knowne to be the Sister to* Giovanni, *she was given in marriage to* Menghino.

The fifth Novell.

Wherein may be observed, what quarrells and contentions are occasioned by Love; with some particular description, concerning the sincerity of a loyall friend.

ALl the Ladies laughing heartily at the Novell of the Nightingale, so pleasingly delivered by *Philostratus*, when they saw the same to be fully ended, the Queene thus spake. Now trust me *Philostratus*, though yesterday you did much oppresse me with melancholy, yet you have made me such an amends to day, as wil-

hart-

have little reason to complaine any more of you. So turning to Madam *Neiphila*, commanded her to succeed, which willingly she yeelded to, beginning in this manner. Seeing it pleased *Philostratus* to produce his Novell out of Romania: I meane to walke with him in the same jurisdiction, concerning what I have to say.

There dwelt in the City of *Faro*, two Lombards, the one being named *Guidotto* of Cremona, and the other *Iacommino* of Pavia, men very aged, having followed the wars (as souldiers) all their youth. *Guidotto* feeling sickenesse to over master him, and having no soane or friend, that he might repose more trust in, than he did in *Iacommino*: having long conference with him about his worldly affaires, and setled his whole estate in good order; he left a Daughter to his charge, about ten yeares of age, with all such goods as he enjoyed, and then departed out of this life. It came to passe, that the Citie of Faenza, long time being molested with tedious warres, and subiected to very servile condition; began now to recover her former strength, with free permission (for all such as pleased) to returne and possesse their former dwellings. Whereupon *Iacommino* (having sometime beene an inhabitant there) was desirous to live in Faenza againe, conveying thither all his goods, and taking with him also the young Girle, which *Guidotto* had left him, whom he loved and respected as his owne child. As she grew in stature, so she did in beauty and vertuous qualities, as none was more commended throughout the whole Citie, for faire, civill, and honest demeanour, which incited many amorously to affect her. But (above all the rest) two very honest young men, of good fame and repute, who were so equally in love addicted to her, that being jealous of each others fortune, in preventing of their severall hopefull expectation; a deadly hatred grew suddenly betweene them, the one being named *Giovanni de Severino*, and the other *Menghino de Minghole*. Either of these two young men, before the maide was fifteene yeares old, laboured to be possessed of her in marriage, but her Guardian would give no consent thereto: wherefore perceiving their honest intended meaning to be frustrated, they now began to busie their braines, how to forestall one another by craft and circumvention.

Iacommino had a maide-servant belonging to his house, somewhat aged, and a man-servant beside, named *Ciuetto*, of mirthfull disposition, and very friendly, with whom *Giovanni* grew in great familiarity; and when he found time fit for the purpose, he discovered his love

to

to him, requesting his furtherance and assistance, in compassing the height of his desire, with bountifull promises of rich rewarding; whereto *Grinello* returned this answer. I know not how to steed you in this case but when my Master shall sup forth at some Neighbours house, to admit your entrance where she is: because, if I offer to speake to her, she never will stay to heare me. Wherefore, if my service this way may doe you any good, I promise to performe it; doe you besides as you shall finde most convenient for you. So the bargaine was agreed on between them, and nothing else remained, but to what issue it should sort in the end.

Menghino, on the other side, having entered into the Chamber-maides acquaintance, sped so well with her, that she delivered so many messages from him, as had (already) halfe won the liking of the Virgin; putting further promises beside, of bringing him to have conference with her, whensoever her Master should be absent from home. Thus *Menghino* being favoured (on the one side) by the old Chamber-maide and *Giovanni* (on the other) by trusty *Grinello*; their amorous warre was now on foot, and diligently followed by both their solicitors. Within a short time after, by the procurement of *Grinello*, *Iacomino* was invited by a Neighbour to supper, in company of divers his familiar friends; whereof intelligence being given to *Giovanni*; a conclusion passed betweene them, that (upon a signall given) he should come, and finde the doore open, to give him all accesse unto the affected maiden.

The appointed night being come, and neither of their Lovers knowing the others intent, but their suspicion being alike, and increasing more and more: they made choise of certaine friends well armed, for either safer entrance when neede should require. *Menghino* stayed with his troope, in a house neere to the Maiden, attending when the signall would be given: but *Giovanni*, and his consorts, were ambushed further off from the house, and both saw when *Iacomino* went forth to supper. Now *Grinello* and the Chamber-maide began to vary, which should send the other out of the way, till they had effected their severall inventions; whereupon *Grinello* said to her. What maketh thee to walke thus about the house, and why dost thou not goe to bed? And thou (quoth the maide) why doest thou not goe to attend on thy Master, and tarry till his returning home? I am sure thou hast supt long agoe, and I know no businesse here in the house for thee to doe. Thus (by no meanes) the one could send away the other, but either remained as the others hinderance.

But

But *Grinello* remembring himselfe, that the houre of his appointment with *Giovanni* was come, he said to himselfe. What care I whether our old maide be present or not? If she will disclose any thing that I doe, I can be revenged on her when I list. So, having made the signall, he went to open the doore, even when *Giovanni* (and two of his confederates) rushed into the house, and finding the faire young maiden sitting in the Hall, laid hands on her, to beare her away. The Damosell began to resist them, crying out for helpe so loud as she could, as the old Chamber maide did the like: which *Menghino* hearing, he ran presently with his friends, and seeing the young Damosell brought well-neer out of the House; they drew their swords, crying out: Traytors you [illegible] but dead men, here is no violence to be offered, neither is this a booty for such base Groomes. So they layd about them lustily, and would not permitt them to passe any further. On the other side, upon this mutinous noise and out-cry, the neighbours came forth of their houses, with lights, staves and clubbes, greatly reproving them for this out-rage, yet assisting *Menghino*: by meanes whereof, after a long time of contention, *Menghino* recovered the Maiden from *Giovanni*, and placed her peacefully in *Iacominos* House.

No sooner was this hurly burly somewhat calmed, but the Serjeants to the Captaine of the Citie, came thither, and apprehended divers of the mutiners: among whom were *Menghino*, *Giovanni*, and *Grinello*, committing them immediately to prison. But after every thing was pacified, and *Iacomino* returned home to his house from supper, he was not a little offended at so grosse an injury. When he was fully informed, how the matter happened, and apparently perceived, that no blame at all could be imposed on the Mayden: he grew the better contented, resolving with himselfe (because no more inconveniences should happen) to have her married as soone as possibly he could.

When morning was come, the friends on either side, unde stranding the error committed, and knowing beside, what punishment would be inflicted on the prisoners if *Iacomino* pressed the matter no further, than as with reason and equitie well he might, they repaired to him and intreated him, not to regard a wrong offered by unruly and youthfull people, meerely drawne into the action by perswasion of friends; submitting both themselves and the offenders, to such satisfaction as he pleased to appoint them. *Iacomino*, who had seen and observed many things, and was a man of sound understanding

ſtanding, returned them this anſwer. Gentlemen, if I were in mine owne Country, as now I am in yours, I would as forwardly confeſſe my ſelfe your friend, as here I muſt fall ſhort of any ſuch ſervice, but even as you ſhall pleaſe to command me. But plainely, without all further ceremonious complements, I muſt agree to whatſoever you can requeſt; as thinking you to be more injured by me, than any great wrong that I have ſuſtained. Concerning the young Damoſell remaining in my houſe, ſhe is not (as many have imagined) either of Cremona, or Pavia, but borne at Faenza, here in this Citie: albeit, neither my ſelfe, ſhee, nor hee of whom I had her, did ever know it, nor yet could learne whoſe Daughter ſhee was. Wherefore, the ſuite you make to me, ſhould rather (in deede) be mine to you: for ſhe is a native of your owne, doe right to her, then you can doe no wrong to me.

When the Gentlemen underſtood, that the Maiden was borne in Faenza, they marvelled thereat, and after they had thanked *Iacomino* for his kinde anſwere; they deſired to let them know, by what meanes the Damoſell came into his cuſtody, and how he knew her to be borne in Faenza, he anſwered in this manner.

Vnderſtand, worthy Gentlemen, that *Guidotto* of Cremona, was my companion and deare friend, who growing neere to his death, told me that when this Citie was ſurprized by the Emperor *Frederigo*, and all things committed to ſacke and ſpoile; he and certaine of his confederates entred into a Houſe, which they found to be well furniſhed with goods, but utterly forſaken of the dwellers, onely this poore Maiden excepted, being then aged but two yeares, or thereabout. As he mounted up the ſteps, with intent to depart from the Houſe; ſhe called him Father, which word moved him ſo compaſſionately, that hee went backe againe, brought her away with him, and all things of worth which were in the Houſe; going thence forward to Fano, and there deceaſing, he left her and all his goods to my charge; conditionally, that I ſhould ſee her married when due time required, and beſtow on her the wealth which he had left her. Now very true it is, although her yeares are convenient for marriage, yet I could never finde any one to beſtow her on, at leaſt that I thought fitting for her: howbeit, I will liſten thereto much more reſpectively, before any other ſuch accident ſhall happen.

It came to paſſe, that in the reporting of this diſcourſe there was then a Gentleman in the company, named

Guillemino da Medicina, who at the surprizall of the Citie, was present with *Guidotto* of Cremona, and knew well the house which he had ransacked, the owner whereof was also present with him; wherefore taking him aside, he said to him. *Bernardino*, heareſt thou what *Iacomino* hath related? Yes very well, replyed *Bernardino*, and remember withall, that in that dismall bloudy combustion, I lost a little Daughter, about the age as *Iacomino* speaketh. Questionlesse, then replyed *Guillemino*, she must needs be the same young maiden, for I was there at the same time, and in the House, whence *Guidotto* did bring both the Girle and goods, and I doe perfectly remember, that it was thy House, I pray thee call to mind, if ever thou saw any scarre or marke about her, which may revive thy former knowledge of her, for my mind perswades me, that the maid is thy Daughter.

Bernardino musing a while with himself, remembred, that under her left eare she had a scarre, in the forme of a little crosse, which happened by the biting of a Wolfe, and but a small while before the spoyle was made. Wherefore, without deferring it to any further time, he stept to *Iacomino* and intreated him to fetch the Maiden from his house, because shee might be knowne to some in the company; whereto willingly he condescended, and there presented the Maide before them. So soone as *Bernardino* beheld her, he began to be much inwardly moved, for the perfect character of her Mothers countenance, was really figured in her face; onely that her beauty was somewhat more excelling. Yet not herewith satisfied, he desired *Iacomino* to be so pleased, as to lift up a little of her lockes of hair depending over her left eare. *Iacomino* did it presently, albeit with a modest blushing in the maid, and *Bernardino* looking advisedly on it, knew it to be the selfesame crosse, which confirmed her constantly to be his Daughter.

Overcome with exceſſe of joy, which made the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, hee proffered to embrace and kisse the maide: but shee refusing his kindnesse, because (as yet) shee knew no reason for it, hee turned himselfe to *Iacomino*, saying, My deare brother and friend, this maide is my Daughter, and my House was the same which *Guidotto* spoyled, in the generall havocke of our Citie, and thence be carried this child of mine, forgotten (in the fury) by my Wife her Mother; but happy was the houre of his becomming her father, and carrying her away with him; for else she had perished in the fire, because the house was instantly burnt down

down to the ground. The Mayden hearing these words, observing him to be a man of yeares and gravity: she beleeved what he said, and humbly submitted her selfe to his embraces, even as instructed thereto by instinct of nature. *Bernardine* instantly sent for his wife, her own Mother, his daughters, sons, and kindred, who being acquainted with this admirable accident gave her most kind welcome, he receiving her from *Ierimia* as his child, and the legacies which *Guidotto* had left her.

When the Captaine of the Citie (being a very wise Gentleman) heard these things, and knowing that *Giovanni*, then his prisoner, was the sonne to *Bernardine*, and naturall brother to the newly recovered maid: he bethought himselfe, how he might qualifie the fault committed by him. And entring into the Hall among them, handled the matter so discreetly, that a loving league of peace was confirmed betweene *Giovanni* and *Menghino*, to whom (with free and full consent on both sides) the faire maid, named *Agatha*, was given in marriage, with more honorable enlargement of her dowry, and *Grinello*, with the rest, delivered out of prison, which for their tumultuous riot they had justly deserved. *Menghino* and *Agatha* had their wedding worthily solemnized, with all due honors belonging thereto, and long time they lived in *Fraenza*, highly beloved and graciously esteemed.

Guion di Procida, *being found familiarly conversing with a young Damosell which he loved; and had been given (formerly) to* Frederigo, *King of Sicilia: was bound to a stake, to be consumed with fire. From which danger (nevertheless) he escaped, being knowne by* Don Rogiero de Oria, *Lord Admirall of Sicily, and afterward married the Damosell.*

The sixt Novell.

Wherein is manifested, that love can lead a man into unbeliefe perills: out of which he escapeth with no meane difficulty.

THe Novell of Madam *Neiphila* being ended, which proved very pleasing to the Ladies, the Queene commanded Madam *Pampinea*, that shee should prepare to take her turne next, whereto willingly obeying, thus she began. Many and mighty (Gracious Ladies) are the prevailing powers of love, conducting amorous soules into infinite travells, with inconveniences no way avoydable, and not easily to be foreseen, or prevented. As partly already hath been observed by

divers

divers of our former Novels related, and some (no doubt) to ensue hereafter; for one of them (comming now to my memory) I shall acquaint you withall, in so good terms as I can.

Ischia is an Iland very neer to *Naples*, wherein (not long since) lived a fair and lovely Gentlewoman, named *Restituta*, Daughter to a Gentleman of the same Isle, whose name was *Marino Bolgaro*. A proper youth called *Guion*, dwelling also in a neer neighbouring Isle, called *Procida*, did love her as dearly as his own life, and she was intimately affected towards him. Now because the sight of her was his only comfort, as occasion gave him leave, he resorted to *Ischia* very often in the day time, and as often also in the night season, when any Barke passed from *Procida* to *Ischia*; if to see nothing else, yet to behold the wals that enclosed his Mistresse thus.

While this love continued in equall fervency, it chanced upon a fair summers day, that *Restituta* walked alone upon the Sea-shore, going from Rock to Rock, having a naked knife in her hand, wherewith she opened such Oysters as she found among the stones, seeking for smal pearles enclosed in their shels. Her walk was very solitary and shady, with a faire Spring or Well adjoyning to it, and thither (at that very instant time) certain *Sicilian* young Gentlemen, which came from *Naples* had made their retreat. They perceiving the Gentlewoman to be very beautifull (shee as yet not having any sight of them) and in such a silent place alone by her self: concluded together, to make a purchase of her, and carry her thence away with them; as indeed they did, notwithstanding all her outcries, and exclaims, bearing her perforce aboard their Barke.

Setting sayle thence, they arrived in *Calabria*, and then there grew a great contention between them, to which of them this booty of beauty should belong, because each of them pleaded a title unto her. But when they could not grow to any agreement, but doubted greater disasters would ensue thereon, by breaking their former league of friendship: by an equall conformity in consent, they resolved, to bestow her as a rich present, on *Frederigo* King of *Sicilie*, who was then young and joviall, and could not be pleased with a better gift, wherefore they were no sooner landed at *Palermo*, but they did according as they had determined. The King did commend her beauty extraordinarily, and liked her far beyond all his other Lovers: but, being at that time empaired in his health, and his body much di-

ſtempered by ill dyet; he gave command, that untill he ſhould be in more able diſpoſition ſhe muſt be kept in a goodly houſe of his own, erected in a beautifull Garden, called the *Cube*, where ſhe was attended in moſt pompous manner.

Now grew the noyſe and rumour great in *Iſchia*, about this rape or ſtealing away of *Reſtituta*; but the chiefeſt grievance of all was, that it could not be known how, by whom, or by what means. But *Guion de Procida* whom this injury concerned much more then any other, ſtood not in expectation of better tydings from *Iſchia*, but hearing what courſe the Bark had taken, made ready another to follow after with all poſſible ſpeed, flying thus on the winged windes through the Seas, even from *Minerva* unto the *Scalea* in *Calabria*, ſearching for his loſt love in every angle: at length it was told him at the *Scalea*, that ſhe was carried away by certain *Sicilian* Mariners to *Palermo*, whither *Guion* ſet ſayle immediately.

After ſome diligent ſearch made there, he underſtood, that ſhe was delivered to the King, and he had given ſtrict command, for keeping her in his place of pleaſure, called the *Cube*: which newes were not a little grievous to him, for now he was almoſt quite out of hope, not onely of ever enjoying her, but alſo of ſeeing her. Nevertheleſſe, Love would not let him utterly deſpair, whereupon he ſent away his Barke, and perceiving himſelf to be unknown of any; he continued for ſome time in *Palermo*, walking many times by that goodly place of pleaſure. It chanced on a day, that keeping his walk as he was wont to do, Fortune was ſo favourable to him, as to let him have a ſight of her at her window; from whence alſo ſhe had a full view of him, to their exceeding comfort and contentment. And *Guion* obſerving that the *Cube* was ſeated in a place of ſmall reſort; approached ſo near as poſſible he durſt, to have ſome conference with *Reſtituta*.

As love ſets a keen edge on the dulleſt ſpirit, and (by a ſmall advantage) makes a man the more adventurous: ſo this little time of unſeen talk, inſpired him with courage and her with witty advice, by what means his acceſſe might be much nearer to her, and their communication concealed from any diſcovery, the ſituation of the place, and benefit of due time conſidered. Night muſt be the cloud of their amorous concluſion, and therefore ſo much thereof being ſpent, as was thought convenient, hee returned thither again, provided of ſuch grappling-irons, as is required when men

men will clamber, made fast unto his hands and knees; by their help he attained to the top of the wall, whence descending down into the Garden, there he found the main yard of a Ship, whereof before she had given him instruction; and rearing it up against her Chapter window, made that his means for ascending thereto, she having left it open for his easier entrance.

You cannot deny (fair Ladies) but here was a very hopefull beginning, and likely to have as happy an ending, were it not true loves fatall misery, even in the very height of promised assurance, to be thwarted by unkinde prevention, and in such manner as I will tell you. This night intended for our lovers meeting, proved dysastrous and dreadfull to them both: for the King, who at the first sight of *Restituta*, was highly pleased with her excelling beauty, gave order to his Eunoches and other women that a costly bathe should be prepared for her, and therein to let her wear away that night, because the next day he intended to visit her. *Restituta* being royally conducted from her Chamber to the Bathe, attended on with Torch light, as if she had been a Queen: none remained there behinde, but such women as waited on her, and the Guards without which watched the Chamber.

No sooner was poor *Guion* aloft at the window, calling softly to his Mistresse, as if she had been there; but he was over-heard by the women in the dark: and immediately apprehended by the Guard, who forthwith brought him before the Lord Marshall, where being examined, and he avouching, that *Restituta* was his elected wife, and for her he had presumed in that manner; closely was he kept in prison till the next morning. When he came into the Kings presence, and there boldly justified the goodnesse of his cause: *Restituta* likewise was sent for, who no sooner saw her dear love *Guion*, but she ran and caught him fast about the neck, kissing him in tears, and grieving not a little at his hard fortune. Hereat the King grew exceedingly enraged, loathing and hating her now, much more than formerly he had affected her; and having himself seen by what strange means he did climbe over the wall, and then mounted to her chamber window; he was extremely impatient, and could not otherwise be perswaded, but that their meetings thus had been many.

Forthwith he sentenced them both with death, commanding, that they should be conveyed thence to *Palermo*, and there (being stript starke naked) be bound

to a ſtake back to back, and ſo to ſtand the full ſpace of nine hours, to ſee if any could take knowledge, of whence, or what they were; then afterward to be conſumed with fire. The ſentence of death, did not ſo much daunt or diſmay the poor lovers, as the uncivill and unſightly manner, which (in fear of the Kings wrathfull diſpleaſure) no man durſt preſume to contradict. Wherefore as he had commanded. ſo were they carried thence to *Palermo*, and bound naked to a ſtake in the open market place, and (before their eyes) the fire of wood brought, which was to conſume them, according to the hour as the King had appointed. You need not make any queſtion, what an huge concourſe of people were ſoon aſſembled together, to behold ſuch a ſad and wofull ſpectacle, even the whole city of *Palermo*, both men and women. The men were ſtricken with admiration, beholding the unequal beauty of fair *Reſtituta*, and the ſelf-ſame paſſion poſſeſſed the women, ſeeing *Guion* to be ſuch a goodly and compleat young man: but the poor infortunate lovers themſelves, they ſtood with their looks dejected to the ground, being much pitied of all, but no way to be holpen or reſcued by any, awaiting when the happy hour would come, to finiſh both their ſhame and lives together

During the time of this tragicall expectation, the fame of this publick execution being noiſed abroad, calling all people far and near to behold it, it came to the ear of *Don Rogiero de Oria*, a man of much admired valour, and then Lord Admirall of *Sicily*, who came himſelf in perſon, to the place appointed for their death. Firſt, he obſerved the Maiden, confeſſing her in his ſoul to be a beauty beyond all compare. Then looking on the young man, thus he ſaid within himſelf: If the inward endowments of the minde, do parallel the outward perfections of body; the World cannot yeeld a more compleat man. Now, as good natures are quickly incited to compaſſion (eſpecially in caſes almoſt commanding it) and compaſſion knocking at the door of the ſoul, doth quicken the memory with many paſſed recordations: ſo this noble Admirall adviſedly beholding the poor condemned *Guim*, conceived that he had ſomewhere ſeen him before this inſtant, and upon this perſwaſion (even as if divine vertue had tutored his tongue) he ſaid: Is not thy name *Guion di Procida*?

Mark now, how quickly miſery can receive comfort, upon ſo poor and ſilly a queſtion; for *Guion* began

to

to elevate his dejected countenance, and looking on the Admirall, returned him this answer. Sir, here-fore I have beene the man which you speak of; but now, both that name and man must dye with mee. What misfortune (said the admirall) hath thus unkindly crost thee? Love (answered *Guion*) and the Kings pleasure. Then the Admirall would needs know the whole history at large, which briefly was related to him, and having heard how all had happened; as he was turning his horse to ride away thence, *Guion* called to him, saying, Good my Lord, entreat one favour for me, if possible it may be. What is that replyed the Admiral. You see Sir (quoth *Guion*, that I am very shortly to breath my last; all the grace which I do most humbly intreat, is, that as I am here with this chaste Virgin, (whom I honour and love beyond my life) and miserably bound back to back: our faces may be turned each to other, to the end, that when the fire shall finish my life, by looking on her, my soule may take her flight in full felicity. The Admirall smiling, said; I will doe for thee what I can, and (perhaps) thou mayest so long look on her, as thou wilt be weary, and desire to look off her.

At his departure, he commanded them that had the charge of this execution, to proceed no further, untill they heard more from the King; to whom he gallopped immediately, and although he beheld him to be very angerly moved; yet he spared not to speak in this manner. Sir, wherein have those poor couple offended you, that are to be burnt at *Palermo*? The King told him: whereto the Admirall (pursuing still his purpose) thus replyed. Beleeve me Sir, if true love be an offence, then theirs may be termed to be one; and albeit it deserved death, yet farre be it from thee to inflict it on them: for as faults doe justly require punishment, so doe good turnes as equally merit grace and requitall. Knowest thou what and who they are, whom thou hast so dishonourably condemned to the fire? Not I, quoth the King. Why then I will tell thee, answered the Admirall, that thou maist take the better knowledge of them, and forbear hereafter, to be so over violently transported with anger.

The young Gentleman, is the sonne to *Landolfo di Procida*, the only Brother to Lord *John di Procida*, by whose means thou becamest Lord and King of this Countrey. The fair young Damosell, is the Daughter to *Marino Bulgaro*, whose power extendeth so farre, as to preserve thy prerogative in *Isthia*, which (but for

him) had long since been out rooted there. Beside, these two main motives, to challenge justly grace and favour from thee; they are in the flower and pride of their youth, having long continued in loyal love together, and compelled by fervency of endeared affection, not any will to displease thy majesty: they have offended (if it may be termed an offence to love, and in such lovely young people as they are.) Canst thou then finde in thine heart to let them die, whom thou rather oughtest to honour, and recompense with no mean rewards?

When the King had heard this, and beleeved for a certainty, that the Admirall told him nothing but truth: he appointed not only, that they should proceed no further, but also was exceeding sorrowfull for what he had done, sending presently to have them released from the stake, and honourably to be brought before him. Being thus instructed in their severall qualities, and standing in duty obliged to recompense the wrong which he had done, with respective honours: he caused them to be cloathed in royall garments, and knowing them to be knit in unity of soul; the like he did in marrying them solemnly together, and bestowing many rich gifts and presents on them, sent them honourably attended home to *Ischia*, where they were with much joy and confort received, and lived long after in great felicity.

Theodoro, *falling in love with* Violenta, *the Daughter to his Master, named* Amarigo, *and she conceiving with child by him, was condemned to be hanged. As they were leading him to the Gallowes, beating and misusing him all the way, he happened to be known of his own Father, whereupon he was released, and afterward enjoyed* Violenta *in marriage.*

The seventh Novell.

Wherein is declared, the sundry travels and perillous accidents, occasioned by those two powerfull Commanders, Love and Fortune, the insulting Tyrants over humane life.

GReatly were the Ladies mindes perplexed, when they heard, that the two poor lovers were in danger to be burned: but hearing afterward of their happy deliverance, for which they were as joyfull again; upon the concluding of the Novell, the Queen looked

on

on Madam *Lauretta*, enjoyning her to tell the next tale, which willingly she undertook to doe, and thus began.

Fair Ladies, at such time as the good King *William* reigned in *Sicily*, there lived within the same Dominion, a young Gentleman, named *Signior Amarigo*, Abbot of *Trapani*, who among his other worldly blessings, (commonly termed the goods of Fortune) was not unfurnished of children; and therefore having need of servants, he made his provision of them the best he might. At that time certain Gallies of *Genoway* Pyrates comming from the Eastern parts, which coasting along *Armenia*, had taken divers children; he bought some of them, thinking they were Turks. They all resembling clownish peazants, yet there was one among them, who seemed to be of more tractable and gentle nature, yea, and of a more affable countenance than any of the rest, being named *Teodoro*: who growing on in years, (albeit he lived in the condition of a servant) was educated among *Amarigoes* Children, and as instructed rather by nature, than accident, his conditions were very much commended, as also the feature of his body; which proved so highly pleasing to his Master *Amarigo*, that he made him a free man, and imagining him to be a Turk, caused him to be baptized, and named *Pedro*, creating him superintendent of all his affairs, and reposing his chiefest trust in him.

As the other children of *Signior Amarigo* grew in years and stature, so did a Daughter of his, named *Violenta*, a very goodly and beautifull Damosell, somewhat over-long kept from marriage by her Fathers covetousnesse, and casting an eye of good liking on poor *Pedro*. Now, albeit she loved him very dearly, and all his behaviour was most pleasing to her, yet maiden modesty forbad her to reveal it, til Love (too long concealed) must needs disclose it self. Which *Pedro* at the length took notice of, and grew so forward towards her in assurity of affection, as the very sight of her was his onely happinesse. Yet very fearfull he was, lest it should be noted, either by any of the house, or the Mayden her selfe: who yet well observed it, and to her no mean contentment, as it appeared no lesse (on the other side) to honest *Pedro*.

While thus they loved together meerly in dumbe shewes, not daring once to speak to each other, (though nothing more desired) to finde some ease in

this their oppressing passions: Fortune, even as if she pitied their so long languishing, instructed them how to finde out a way, whereby they might both better relieve themselves. *Signior Amarigo*, about some two or three miles distance from *Trapani*, had a Country-house or Farme, whereto his wife, with her Daughter and some other women, used oftentimes to make their resort, as it were in sportfull recreation; *Pedro* alwaies being diligent to man them thither. One time among the rest, the fair skie became suddenly overclouded, even as they were returning home towards *Trapani*, threatning a storm of rain to overtake them, except they made the speedier haste.

Pedro, who was young, and likewise *Violenta*, went farre more lightly than her Mother and her company, as much perhaps provoked by love, as fear of the suddain raine falling, and pacing on so fast before them, that they were wholly out of sight. After many flashes of lightning, and a few dreadfull clappes of thunder, there fell such a tempestuous showre of hayle, as compelled the Mother and her train to shelter themselves in a poor Countrey-mans Cottage. *Pedro* and *Violenta*, having no other refuge, ran likewise into a poor sheep coat, so over ruined, as it was in danger to fall on their heads; and no body dwelt in it, neither stood any other house neer it, and it was scarsely any shelter for them, howbeit necessity enforceth to make shift with the meanest. The storme encreasing more and more and they coveting to avoid it as well as they could; sighes and dry hemmes were often inter-vented, as doubly (before) they were wont to doe, when willingly they could afford another kinde of speaking.

At ist *Pedro* took heart, and said: I would this showre would never cease, that I might be alwaies where I am. The like could I wish, answered *Violenta*, so we were in a better place of safety. These wishes drew on other gentle language, with modest kisses and embraces, the onely ease to poore Lovers soules; so that the raine ceased not, till they had taken order for their ofter conversing, and absolute plighting of their faiths together. By this time the storm was fairly over-blown, and they attending on the way, till the mother and the rest were come, with whom they returned to *Trapani*, where by wise and provident means they often conferred in private together, and enjoyed the benefit of their amorous desires, yet free from all ill surmise or suspicion.

But,

But, as Lovers felicities are seldome permanent, without one encountring crosse or other; so these stolne pleasures of *Pedro* and *Violenta*, met with as sowre a sauce in the farewell. For, she proved to be conceived with childe, then which could befall them no heavier affliction, and *Pedro* fearing to lose his life therefore, determined immediate flight, and revealed his purpose to *Violenta*. Which when she heard, she told him plainly, that if he fled, forthwith she would kill her self. Alas deer Love (quoth *Pedro*) with what reason can you wish my tarrying here? This conception of yours, doth discover our offence, which a Fathers pity may easily pardon in you: but I being his servant and vassall, shall be punished both for your sinne and mine, because hee will have no mercy on me. Content thy self *Pedro* replyed *Violenta*; I will take such order for mine own offence, by the discreet counsell of my loving Mother, that no blame shall any way be laide on thee, or so much as a surmise, except thou fondly betray thy selfe. If you can doe so, answered *Pedro*, and constantly maintain your promise, I will not depart, but see that you prove to be so good as your word.

Violenta, who had concealed her amisse so long as she could, and saw no other remedy but now at last it must needs be discovered; went privately to her mother, and (in teares) revealed her infirmity, humbly craving her pardon and furtherance in hiding it from her Father. The mother being extraordinarily displeased, chiding her with many sharpe and angry speeches, would needes know with whom she had thus offended. The Daughter (to keep *Pedro*, from any detection) forged a Tale of her own brain, far from any truth indeed; which her Mother verily beleeving, and willing to preserve her daughter from shame, as also the fierce anger of her husband, he being a man of very implacable nature: conveyed her to the Countrey Farme, whither *Signior Amarigo* seldome or never resorted; intending (under the shadow of sicknesse) to let her lye in there, without the least suspicion of any in Trapani.

Sinne and shame can never be so closely carryed, or clouded with the greatest cunning; but truth hath a loop-light whereby to discover it, even when it supposeth it self in the surest safety. For, on the very day of her deliverance, at such time as the Mother, and some few friends (sworne to secrecy) were about the businesse: *Signior Amarigo*, having been in the company of other Gentlemen, to fly his Hawke at the River, upon a sud-

den, (but very unfortunately, albeit he was alone by himself) ſtept into his Farm-houſe, even to the next room where the women were, and heard the new-born babe to cry, whereat marvelling not a little, he called for his Wife, to know what young childe cryed in his houſe. The mother amazed at his ſtrange coming thither, which never before he had uſed to do, and pitying the wofull diſtreſſe of her daughter, which now could be no longer covered, revealed what happened to *Violenta*. But he being nothing ſo raſh in belief, as his Wife was, made anſwer, that it was impoſſible for his Daughter to be conceived with childe, becauſe he never obſerved the leaſt ſign of love in her to any man whatſoever, and he would be ſatisfied in the truth, as ſhe expected any favour from him, or elſe there was no other way but death.

The Mother laboured by all means ſhe could deviſe, to pacifie her Husbands fury, which proved all in vain; for being thus impatiently incenſed, hee drew forth his ſword, and ſtepping with it drawn into the Chamber (where ſhe had been delivered of a goodly Son) he ſaid unto her. Either tell me who is the Father of this Baſtard, or thou and it ſhall periſh both together. Poor *Violenta* leſſe reſpecting her own life, then ſhee did the childes; forgot her ſolemn promiſe made to *Pedro*, and diſcovered all. Which when *Amarigo* had heard, he grew ſo deſperately enraged, that hardly he could forbear from killing her. But after he had ſpoken what his fury inſtructed him, he mounted on Horſe-back again riding back to *Trapani*, where he diſcloſed the injury which *Pedro* had done him, to a noble Gentleman, named *Signior Conrado*, who was Captain for the King over the City.

Before poor *Pedro* could have any intelligence, or ſo much as ſuſpected any treachery againſt him; he was ſuddenly apprehended, and being called in queſtion, ſtood not on any deniall; but confeſſed truly what he had done: whereupon within ſome few daies after, he was condemned by the Captain, to be whipt to the place of execution, and afterward to be hanged by the neck. *Signior Amarigo*, becauſe he would cut off (at one and the ſame time) not only the lives of the two poor Lovers, but their childes alſo; as a frantick man violently carryed out of all ſenſe of compaſſion, even when *Pedro* was led and whipt to his death, he mingled ſtrong poyſon in a Cup of wine, delivering it to a truſty ſervant of his own, and a naked rapier withall. Go carry theſe two preſents to my late daughter

Violenta

Violenta, and tell her from mee, that in this instant hour, two severall kindes of death are offered unto her, and one of them she must make choice of, either to drink the poyson, and so dye, or to run her body on this Rapiers point; which if she deny to do, she shall be haled to the publique market place, and presently be burnt in the sight of her lewd companion, according as she hath worthily deserved. When thou hast delivered this message, take her bastard brat, so lately since born, and dash his braines out against the wals, and afterward throw him to my Dogs to feed on.

When the Father had given this cruell sentence, both against his own Daughter and her young Son, the servant readier to do evill, than any good, went to the place where his Daughter was kept. Poor condemned *Pedro*, (as you have heard) was led whipt to the Gibbet, and passing (as it pleased the Captains Officers to guide him) by a fair Inne: at the same time were lodged there three chiefe person of *Armenia*, whom the King of the Countrey had sent to *Rome* as Ambassadors to the Popes Holinesse, to negotiate about an important businesse neerly concerning the King and State. Reposing there for some few daies, as being much wearied with their journey, and highly honoured by the Gentlemen of *Trapania* especially *Signior Amasigo*; these Ambassadors standing in their Chamber window, heard the wofull lamentation of *Pedro* in his passage by.

Pedro was naked from the middle upward, and his hands bound fast behinde him, but being well observed by one of the Ambassadors, a man aged and of great authority, named *Phinio*: he espyed a great red spot upon his brest, not painted or procured by his punishment, but naturally imprinted in the flesh, which women (in these parts) term the Rose. Upon the sight hereof, he suddenly remembred a son of his own which was stolne from him some fifteen years before, by Pyrats on the Seacoast of *Lajazzo*, never hearing any tidings of him afterward. Upon further consideration, and comparing his sonnes age with the likelihood of this poor wretched mans; thus he conferred with his own thoughts. If my son (quoth he) be living his age is equall to this mans time, and by the red blemish on his brest it plainly speaks him for to be my Son.

Moreover, thus he conceived, that if it were he, he could not but remember his own name, his Fathers, and the *Armenian* Language; wherefore, when he was just opposite against the window, he called aloud to him saying

ing: Thereat to Pedro hearing the voice presently lifted up his head, and Phineo speaking Armenian, said: Of whence art thou, and what is thy Fathers name? The Sergeants (in reverence to the Lord Ambassador) stayed a while, till Pedro had returned his answer, who said, I am an Armenian born, Son to one Phineo, and was brought hither I cannot tell by whom. Phineo hearing this, knew assuredly that this was the same Son which he had lost; wherefore, the tears standing in his eyes with conceit of joy, down he ascended from the window, and the other Ambassadors with him, running in among the Sergeants to embrace his Son, and casting his own rich cloak about his whipt body, entreating them to forbear and proceed no further, till they heard what command he should return withall unto them; which very willingly they promised to doe.

Already, by the generall rumour dispersed abroad, Phineo had understood the occasion, why Pedro was thus punished, and sentenced to be hanged; wherefore accompanyed with his fellow Ambassadors, and all their attending traine, he went to Signior Conrado, and spake thus to him. My Lord, he whom you have sent to death as a slave, is a free Gentleman borne, and my Son, able to make her amends whom he hath dishonoured, by taking her in marriage to his lawfull wife. Let me therefore intreat you, to make stay of execution, untill it may be known, whether thee will accept him as her husband, or no; lest (if she be so pleased) you offend directly against your own Law. When Signior Conrado heard that Pedro was sonne to the Lord Ambassador, he wondred thereat not a little, and being somewhat ashamed of his fortunes error, confessed that the claim of Phineo was conformable to the Law, and ought not to be denyed him; going presently to the Counsell chamber, sending for Signior Amerigo immediately thither, & acquainting him fully with the case.

Amerigo, who beleeved that his Daughter and her child was already dead, was the wofullest man in the world, for his so rash proceeding, knowing very well, that if she were not dead, the scandall would easily be wipt away with credit. Wherefore he sent in all poste haste, to the place where his Daughter lay, that if his command were not already executed, by no meanes to have it done at all. He who went on this speedy errand, found there Signior Amerigoes servant standing before Violenta with the Cup of poyson in the one hand, and the drawn Rapier in the other, reproaching her with very foul and injurious speeches, because she

she had delayed the time so long, and would not accept the one or other, striving (by violence) to make her take the one. But hearing his Masters command to the contrary, he left her, and returned back to him, certifying him how the case stood.

Most highly pleased was *Amurigo* with these glad newes, and going to the Ambassador *Phineo*, in teares excused himself (so well as he could) for his severity, and craving pardon; assured him, that if *Theodoro* would accept his Daughter in marriage, willingly hee would bestow her on him. *Phineo* allowed his excuses to be tolerable, and said beside; If my Son will not marry your Daughter, then let the sentence of death be executed on him. *Amurigo* and *Phineo* being thus accorded, they went to poor *Theodoro*, fearfully looking every minute when he should die, yet joyfull that he had found his Father, who moved the question to him. *Theodoro* hearing that *Violenta* should be his Wife, if he would so accept her: was overcome with such exceeding joy, as if he had leapt out of hell into Paradise; confessing, that no greater felicity could befall him, if *Violenta* her self were so well pleased as he.

The like motion was made to her, to understand her disposition in this case, who hearing what good hap had befaln *Theodoro*, and now in like manner must happen to her: whereas not long before, when two such violent deaths were prepared for her, and one of them she must needs embrace, she accounted her misery beyond all other womens: but now she thought her self above all in happinesse, if she might be Wife to her beloved *Theodoro*, submitting her self wholly to her fathers disposing. The marriage being agreed on between them, it was celebrated with great pomp and solemnity, a general Feast being made for all the Citizens, and the young married couple nourished up their sweet Son, which grew to be a very comely childe.

After that the Embassie was dispatched at *Rome*, and *Phineo* (with the rest) was returned thither again; *Violenta* did reverence him, as her own naturall Father, and he was not a little proud of so lovely a daughter, beginning afresh feasting again, continuing the same a whole moneth together. Within some short while after, a Galley being fairly furnished for the purpose, *Phineo*, his son, daughter, and their young son, went aboard, saying away thence to *Lajazzo*, where afterward they lived in much tranquillity.

Anastasio, a Gentleman of the family of the Traversi, in loving the daughter to Signior Paulo Traversario, *lavishly wasted a great part of his substance, without receiving any love of her again. By persuasion of some of his kindred and friends, he went to a Countrey dwelling of his, called* Chiasso, *where he saw a Knight desperately pursue a young Damosell whom he slew, and afterward gave her to be devoured by his Hounds. Anastasio invited his friends, and her also whom he so dearly loved, to take part of a dinner with him, who likewise saw the same Damosell so torn in pieces: which his unkinde love perceiving, and fearing lest the like ill fortune should happen to her, she accepted* Anastasio *to be her Husband.*

The eighth Novell.

Declaring, that love not only makes a man prodigall, but also an enemy to himself. Moreover, adventure oftentimes bringeth such matters to passe, as wit and cunning in man can never comprehend.

SO soon as Madam *Lauretta* held her peace, Madam *Pampinea* (by the Queens command) began, and said, Lovely Ladies, as pity is most highly commended in our sex, even so is cruelty in us as secretly revenged (oftentimes) by divine ordination. Which that you may the better know, and learn likewise to shun, as a deadly evill; I purpose to make apparent by a Novell, no lesse full of compassion, than delectable.

Ravenna being a very ancient City in *Romania*, there dwelt sometime a great number of worthy Gentlemen, among whom I am to speak of one more especially, named *Anastasio*, descended from the family of *Honesti*, who by the death of his Father, and an Uncle of his, was left extraordinarily abounding in riches, and growing to years fitting for marriage, (as young Gallants are easily apt enough to do) he became enamoured of a very beautifull Gentlewoman, who was daughter to *Signior Paulo Traversario*, one of the most ancient and noble families in all the Countrey. Nor made he any doubt, by his means and industrious endeavour, to derive affection from her again; for he carried himself like a brave-minded Gentleman, liberall in his expences, honest and affable in all his actions, which commonly are the true notes of a good nature, and highly to be commended in any man. But, howsoever Fortune became his enemy, these laudable parts of manhood did not any way friend him, but rather appeared hurtfull to himself; so cruell, unkinde, and almost

meerly savage did she shew her self to him; perhaps in pride of her singular beauty, or presuming on her nobility by birth, both which are rather blemishes, than ornaments in a woman, especially when they be abused. The harsh and uncivill usage in her, grew very distastefull to *Anastasio*, and so unsufferable, that after a long time of fruitlesse service, requited still with nothing but coy disdain; desperate resolutions entred into his brain, and often he was minded to kill himself: But better thoughts supplanting those furious passions, hee abstained from such a violent act; and governed by more manly consideration, determined, that as she hated him; he would requite her with the like, if hee could: wherein he became altogether deceived, because as his hopes grew to a daily decaying, yet his love enlarged it self more and more.

Thus *Anastasio* persevering still in his bootlesse affection, and his expences not limited within any compasse; it appeared in the judgement of his Kindred and Friends, that he was falne into a mighty consumption, both of his body and means. In which respects, many times they advised him to leave the City of *Ravenna*, and live in some other place for such a while, as might set a more moderate stint upon his spending, and bridle the indiscreet course of his love, the only fuell which fed his furious fire.

Anastasio held out thus a long time, without lending an eare to such friendly counsell: but in the end, hee was so neerly followed by them, as being no longer able to deny them, he promised to accomplish their request. Whereupon making such extraordinary preparation, as if he were to set thence for *France* or *Spain*, or else into some further countrey: he mounted on horseback, and accompanied with some few of his familiar friends departed from *Ravenna*, and rode to a countrey dwelling house of his owne, about three or four miles distant from the City, which was called Chiasso, and there (upon a very good green) erecting divers Tents & Pavillions, such as great persons make use of in the time of progress: he said to his friends, which came with him thither, that there he determined to make his abiding, they all returning back unto *Ravenna*, and might come to visit him again so often as they pleased.

Now, it came to passe, that about the beginning of *May*, it being then a very milde and serene season, and he leading there a much more magnificent life, than ever he had done before, inviting divers to dine with him this day, and as many to morrow, and not to leave

him

him till after ſupper: upon a ſodaine falling into remembrance of his cruell Miſtreſſe, he commanded all his ſervants to forbear his company, and ſuffer him to walke alone by himſelfe a while, becauſe he had occaſion of private meditations, wherein he would not (by any meanes) be troubled. it was then about the ninth houre of the day; and he walking on ſolitary all alone, having gone ſome halfe a mile diſtance from the Tents, entred into a grove of Pine trees, never minding dinner time, or any thing elſe, but onely the unkinde requitall of his love.

Sodainely he heard the voyce of a woman, ſeeming to make moſt mournfull complaints, which breaking off his ſilent conſiderations, made him to lift up his head, to know the reaſon of this noiſe. When he ſaw himſelfe ſo far entred into the Grove, before he could imagine where he was; he looked amazedly round about him, and out of a little thicket of bulhes and briers round ingirt with ſpreading trees, he eſpyed a yong Damoſell come running towards him, naked from the middle upward, her haire lying on her ſhoulders, & her faire skinne rent and torne with the bryers and brambles, ſo that the blood ran trickling downe mainely; ſhe weeping, wringing her hands, and crying out for mercy ſo loud as ſhe could. Two fierce Blood-hounds alſo followed ſwiftly after, and where their teeth tooke hold, did moſt cruelly bite her. Laſt of all (mounted on a luſty black Courſer) came galloping a Knight, with a very ſterne and angry countenance, holding a drawne ſhort Sword in his hand, giving her very dreadfull ſpeeches and threatning every minute to kill her.

This ſtrange and uncouth ſight bred in him no meane admiration, as alſo kinde compaſſion to the unfortunate woman; out of which compaſſion, ſprung an earneſt deſire to deliver her (if he could) from a death ſo full of anguiſh and horror: but ſeeing himſelfe to be without Armes, he ranne and pluckt up the plant of a Tree, which handling as if it had beene a ſtaffe, he oppoſed himſelfe againſt the Dogs and the Knight, who ſeeing him comming cryed out in this manner to him. *Anaſtaſio*, put not thy ſelfe in any oppoſition, but referre to my hounds and me, to puniſh this wicked woman as ſhe hath juſtly deſerved. And in ſpeaking theſe words, the Hounds took faſt hold on her body, ſo staying her untill the Knight was come neerer to her, and alighted from his horſe. When *Anaſtaſio* (after ſome other angry ſpeeches) ſpake thus to him: I cannot tell what or who thou art, albeit thou takeſt ſuch know-

knowledge of me, yet I muſt ſay it is meere cowardiſe in a Knight, being armed as thou art, to offer to kill a naked woman, and make thy dogges thus to ſeize on her, as if ſhe were a ſavage beaſt; therefore beleeve me, I will defend her ſo farre as I am able.

Anaſtaſio, anſwered the Knight, I am of the ſame City as thou art, and do well remember, that thou waſt a little Ladd, when I (who was then named *Guido Anaſtaſio*, and thine Vncle) became as intirely in love with this woman, as now thou art of *Paulo Traverſaries* daughter. But through her coy diſdaine and cruelty, ſuch was my heavy fate, that deſperately I ſlew my ſelfe with this ſhort ſword which thou beholdeſt in mine hand: for which raſh ſinfull deed, I was and am condemned to eternall puniſhment. This wicked woman, rejoycing immeaſurably in mine unhappy death, remained no long time alive after me, and for her mercileſſe ſinne of cruelty, and taking pleaſure in my oppreſſing torments, dying unrepentant, and in pride of her ſcorne, ſhe had the like ſentence of condemnation pronounced on her, and ſent to the ſame place where I was condemned.

There the three impartiall Iudges, impoſed this further inflict on vs both; namely, that ſhe ſhould flye in this manner before me, and I (who loved her ſo dearely while I lived) muſt purſue her as my deadly enemy, not like a woman that had a taſte of love in her, And ſo often as I can overtake her, I am to kill her with this ſword, the ſame weapon wherewith I ſlew my ſelfe. Then am I enjoyned, therewith to open her accurſed body, and teare out her heart, with her other inwards, as now thou ſeeſt me doe, which I give to my Hounds to feed on. Afterward, ſuch is the appointment of the ſupreme powers, that ſhee re-aſſumeth life againe, even as if ſhe had not beene dead at all, and falling to the ſame kinde of flight, I with my hounds am ſtill to follow her; without any reſpit or intermiſſion. Every Fryday, and juſt at this houre, our courſe is this way, where ſhe ſuffereth the juſt puniſhment inflicted on her. Nor doe we reſt any of the other dayes, but are appointed unto other places, where ſhe cruelly executed her malice againſt me, being now (of her deare affectionate friend) ordained to be her endleſſe enemy, and to perſue her in this manner, for ſo many yeares, as ſhe exerciſed monthes of cruelty towards me. Hinder me not then, in being the executioner of divine juſtice; for all thy interpoſition is but a vaine, in ſeeking to croſſe the appointment of ſupreme powers.

A-

Anastasio having heard all this discourse, his hair stood upright, like porcupins quils, and his soul was so shaken with the terror, that he stept back, to suffer the Knight to do what he was enjoyned, looking yet with milde commiseration on the poor woman. Who kneeling most humbly before the Knight, and sternly seized on by the two bloud-hounds, he opened her brest with his weapon, drawing forth her heart and bowels, which instantly he threw to the dogs, and they devoured them very greedily. Soon after the Damosell (as if none of this punishment had been inflicted on her) started up suddainly, running amain towards the Sea shure, and the hounds swiftly following her, as the Knight did the like, after he had taken his sword, and was mounted on horse back; so that *Anastasio* had soon lost all sight of them, and could not guesse what could become of them.

After he had heard and observed all these things, hee stood a while as confounded with fear and pity, like a simple silly man, hoodwinckt with his own passions, not knowing the subtle enemies cunning illusions in offering false suggestions to the sight, to work his own ends thereby, and encrease the number of his deceived servants. Forthwith he perswaded himself, that hee might make good use of this womans tormenting, so justly imposed on the Knight to prosecute, if thus it should continue still every Friday. Wherefore setting a good note or mark upon the place, he returned back to his own people, and at such times as he thought convenient, sent for divers of his kindred and friends from *Ravenna*, who being present with him, thus he spake to them.

Dear Kinsmen and Friends, ye have long while importuned me to discontinue my over-doating love to her, whom you all think, and I finde to be my mortall enemy: as also to give over my lavish expences, wherein I confesse my self too prodigall; both which requests of yours, I will condescend to, provided, that you will performe one gracious favour for me; Namely, that on friday next, Signior *Paulo Traversario*, his wife, daughter, with all other women linked in linage to them, and such beside only as you shall please to appoint, will vouchsafe to accept a dinner here with me; as for the reason thereto moving me, you shall then more at large be acquainted withall. This appeared no difficult matter for them to accomplish: wherefore, being returned to *Ravenna*, and as they found the time answerable to their purpose, they invited such as *Anastasio* had appointed them. And although they found it some-

somewhat an hard matter, to gain her company whom he had so dearly affected; yet notwithstanding, the other women won her along with them.

A most magnificent Dinner had *Anastasio* provided, and the tables were covered under the Pine-trees, where he saw the cruell Lady so pursued and slain: directing the guests so in their seating, that the young Gentlewoman, his unkinde Mistresse, sate with her face opposite unto the place, where the dismall spectacle was to bee seen. About the closing up of Dinner, they began to hear the noise of the poor persecuted Woman, which drove them all to much admiration; desiring to know what it was, and no one resolving them, they rose from the tables, and looking directly as the noise came to them, they espied the woefull Woman, the dogs eagerly pursuing her, the Knight gallopping after them with his drawn weapon, & came very neer unto the company, who cryed out with loud exclaims against the dogs, and the Knight, stepping forth in assistance of the injured woman.

The Knight spake unto them as formerly he had done to *Anastasio* (which made them draw back, possessed with fear and admiration) acting the same cruelty as he did the Friday before, nor differing in the least degree. Most of the Gentlewomen there present, being neer allyed to the unfortunate Woman, and likewise to the Knight, remembring well both his love and death, did shed tears as plentifully, as if it had been to the very persons themselves, in usuall performance of the action indeed. Which tragicall Scene being passed over, and the Woman and Knight gone out of their sight: all that had seen this strange accident, fell into diversity of confused opinions, yet not daring to disclose them, as doubting some further danger to ensue thereon.

But beyond all the rest, none could compare in fear and astonishment with the cruell young Maid affected by *Anastasio*, who both saw and observed all with a more inward apprehension, knowing very well, that the morall of this dismall spectacle carryed a much neerer application to her, than any other in the company. For now she could call to minde, how unkinde and cruell she had shewn her self to *Anastasio*, even as the other Gentlewoman formerly did to her lover, still flying from her in great contempt and scorne: for which, she thought the Blood-hounds also pursued her at the heels already, and a sword of vengeance to mangle her body. This fear grew so powerfull upon her, that to prevent the like heavie doom from falling on her, she studied (and therein bestowed all the night season)

how

how to change her hatred into kind love, which at the length she fully obtained, and then purposed to procure in this manner. Secretly she sent a faithfull Chamber-maide of her own, to greet *Anastasio* on her behalfe; humbly entreating him to come see her: because now she was absolutely determined to give him satisfaction in all which (with honour) hee could request of her. Whereto *Anastasio* answered, that he accepted her message thankefully, and desired no other favour at her hand, but that which stood with her own offer, namely, to be his wife in honourable marriage. The Maid knowing sufficiently, that he could not be more desirous of the match, than her Mistresse shewed her selfe to be, made answer in her name, that this motion would be most welcome to her.

Herenpon, the Gentlewoman her selfe became the soliciter to her Father and Mother, telling them plainely, that she was willing to be the wife of *Anastasio*; which newes did so highly content them, that upon the Sunday next following, the marriage was very worthily solemnized, and they lived and loved together very kindely. Thus the divine bounty, out of the malignant enemies secret machinations, can cause good effects to arise and succeed. For, from this conceit of fearfull imagination in her, not only happened this long desired conversion of a maide so obstinately scornefull and proud: but likewise all the women of Ravenna (being admonished by her example) grew afterward more tractable to mens honest motions, than ever they shewed themselves before. And let me make some use hereof (faire Ladies) to you, not to stand over-nicely conceited of your beauty and good parts, when men solicite you with their best services. Remember then this disdainefull Gentlewoman, but more especially her, who being the death of so kind a Lover, was therefore condemned to perpetuall punishment, and he made the minister thereof, whom she had cast off with coy disdaine, from which I wish your minds to be free, as mine is ready to doe you any acceptable service.

Frederigo, *of the* Alberighi *Family, loved a Gentlewoman, and was not requited with like love again. But by bountifull expences, and over liberall invitations he wasted all his lands and goods, having nothing left him, but a Hawk or Faulcon. His unkind Mistresse happeneth to come visite him, and he not having any other foode for her dinner, made a daintie dish of his Faulcon for her to feed on. Being conquered by this exceed-*

extending kinde courteſie; ſhe changed her former hatred towards him, accepting him as her Husband to marriage, and made him a man of wealthy poſſeſſions.

The ninth Novell.

Wherein is figured to the life, the notable kindneſſe and courteſie, of a true and conſtant lover: As alſo the magnanimous minde of a famous Lady.

MAdam *Phylomena* having finiſhed her diſcourſe, the Queen perceiving that her turne was the next, in regard of the priviledge granted to *Dioneus*; with a ſmiling countenance, thus ſhe ſpake. Now or never am I to maintain the order which was inſtituted when we began this commendable exerciſe, whereto I yeeld with all humble obedience. And (worthy Ladyes) I am to acquaint you with a Novell, in ſome ſort anſwerable to the precedent, not only to let you know, how powerfull your kindneſſes doe prevaile, in ſuch as have a free and gentle ſoule: but alſo to adviſe you, in being bountifull, where vertue doth juſtly challenge it. And evermore, let your favours ſhine on worthy deſervers, without the directions of chance or fortune, who never beſtoweth any gift by diſcretion; but raſhly without conſideration, even to the firſt ſhe blindly meets withall.

You are to underſtand then, that *Coppo di Borghoſo Domenichi*, who was of our owne City, and perhaps (as yet) his name remaineth in great and reverend authority, now in theſe dayes of ours, as well deſerving eternall memory; yet more for his vertues and commendable qualities, than any boaſt of Nobility from his predeceſſors. This man being well entred into yeares, and drawing towards the finiſhing of his dayes; it was his only delight and felicity, in converſation among his neighbours, to talke of matters concerning antiquity, and ſome other things within compaſſe of his owne knowledge: which he would deliver in ſuch ſingular order, (having an abſolute memory) and with the beſt Language, as very few or none could doe the like. Among the multiplicitie of his queint diſcourſes, I remember he told us, that ſometime there lived in Florence a young Gentleman, named *Friderigo*, Son to Signior *Phillippo Alberigo*, who was held and reputed, both for Armes, and all other actions beſeeming a Gentleman, hardly to have his equall through all Tuſcany.

This *Friderigo* (as it is no rare matter in young Gentlemen) became enamoured of a Gentlewoman, named Madam *Giana*, who was eſteemed (in her time)

to

to be the faireſt Lady in all Florence. In which reſpect, and to reach to the height of his deſire, he made many ſumptuous Feaſts and Banquets, Juſts, Tilts, Tournaments, and all other noble actions of Arms; beſide, ſending her infinite rich and coſtly preſents, making ſpare of nothing, but laſhing all out in laviſh expence. Notwithſtanding, ſhe being no leſſe honeſt then fair, make no reckoning of whatſoever he did for her ſake, or the leaſt reſpect of his own perſon. So that *Frederigo*, ſpending thus daily more, than his means and ability could maintain, and no ſupplies any way redounding to him, or his faculties (as very eaſily they might) diminiſhing in ſuch ſort, that he became ſo poor, as he had nothing left him but a ſmall farm to live upon, the ſilly revenues whereof were ſo mean, as ſcarſely allowed him meat and drink; yet had he a fair Hawke or Falkon, hardly any where to be fellowed, ſo expeditious and ſure ſhe was of flight. His low ebb and poverty, no way quailing his love to the Lady, but rather ſetting a keener edge thereon; he ſaw the city life could no longer contain him, where moſt he coveted to abide; and therefore betook himſelf to his poor Countrey Farme, to let his Falcon get his dinner and ſupper, patiently ſupporting his penurious eſtate, without ſuit or means making to one, for help or relief in any ſuch neceſſity.

While thus he continued in this extremity, it came to paſſe, that the husband to Madam *Giana* fell ſick, and his debility of body being ſuch, as little or no hope of life remained, he made his laſt Will and Teſtament, ordaining thereby, that his Son (already grown to indifferent ſtature) ſhould be heir to all his lands and riches, wherein he abounded very greatly. Next unto him, if he chanced to dye without a lawfull heir, he ſubſtituted his wife, whom moſt dearly he affected, and ſo departed out of this life. Madam *Giana* being thus left a widow; as commonly it is the cuſtome of our City Dames, during the ſummer ſeaſon, ſhe went to a houſe of her own in the Countrey, which was ſomewhat neer to poor *Frederigoes* Farm, and where he lived in ſuch an honeſt kinde of contented poverty.

Hereupon the young Gentleman her Son, taking great delight in Hounds and Hawkes, grew into familiarity with poor *Frederigo*, and having ſeen many fair flights of his Falkon, they pleaſed him ſo extraordinarily, that he earneſtly deſired to enjoy her as his own; yet durſt not move the motion for her, becauſe he ſaw how choiſely *Frederigo* eſteemed her. Within a

ſhort

short while after, the young Gentleman became very sick, whereat his mother grieved exceedingly, as (having no more but he) and never parting from him either night or day, comforting him so kindely as shee could; demanding, if he had a desire to any thing, willing him to reveal it, and assuring him withall, that (if it were within the compasse of possibility) he should have it. The youth hearing how many times she had made him these offers, and with such vehement protestations of performance, at last thus spake.

Mother (quoth he) if you can do so much for me, as that I may have *Frederigoes* Falkon, I am perswaded, that my sicknesse soon will cease. The Lady hearing this, sate some short while musing to her self, and began to consider, what she might best do to compasse her Sons desire: for well she knew, how long a time *Frederigo* had most lovingly kept it, not suffering it ever to be out of his sight. Moreover, she remembred, how earnest in affection hee had been to her, never thinking himself happy, but only when he was in her company; wherefore, she entred into private advice with her own thoughts: Shall I send or go my self in person, to request the Falcon of him, it being the best that ever flew? It is his onely Jewell of delight, and that taken from him, no longer can he wish to live in this world. How far then void of understanding, shall I shew my self, to rob a Gentleman of his sole felicity, having no other joy or comfort left him? These and the like consideration, wheeled about her troubled brain, onely in tender love to her Son, perswading her self assuredly, that the Falkon were her own, if she would but request it: yet not knowing whereon it were best to resolve, she returned no answer to her Son, but sate still in her silent meditation. At the length, love to the youth so prevailed with her, that she concluded on his contentation, and (come of it what could) she would not send for it, but go her self in person to request it, and then return home again with it: where upon thus she spake. Son, comfort thy self, and let languishing thoughts no longer offend thee: for here I promise thee, that the first thing I do to morrow morning, shall be my journey for the Falcon, and assure thy self, that I will bring it with me. Whereat the youth was so joyed, that he imagined, his sicknesse began instantly a little to leave him, and promised him a speedy recovery.

Somewhat early the next morning, the Lady, in care of her sick Sonnes health, was up and ready betimes, and taking another Gentlewoman with her; only as

a morning recreation, she walking to *Frederigos* poor Countrey Farm, knowing that it would not a little glad him to see her. At the time of his arrivall there, he was (by chance) in a silly Garden, on the back side of the House, because (as yet) it was no convenient time for slight: but when he heard, that Madan *Giana* was come thither, and desired to have come conference with him; as one almost confounded with admiration, in all haste he ran to her and saluted her with most humble reverence. She in all modest and gracious manner, requited him with the like salutations, thus speaking to him. Signior *Frederigo*, your own best wishes befriend you. I am now come hither, to recompense some part of your passed travels, which heretofore you pretended to suffer for my sake, when your love was more to me, than did well become you to offer, or my self to accept. And such is the nature of my recompence, that I make my self your guest, and mean this day to dine with you, as also this Gentlewoman, making no doubt of our welcome: whereto with lowly reverence thus he replied.

Madam, I do not remember, that ever I sustained any losse or hinderance by you, but rather so much good, as if I was worth any thing, it proceeded from your deservings, and by the service in which I did stand ingaged to you. But my present happinesse can no way be equalled, derived from your super-abounding gracious favour, and more then common course of kindnesse, vouchsafing (of your own liberall nature) to come and visit so poor a servant. Oh that I had as much to spend again as heretofore riotously I have run thorow: what a welcome would your poor Host bestow on you, for gracing this homely house with your divine presence? with these words, he conducted her into his house, and then into his simple Garden, where having no convenient company for her, he said, Madam, the poverty of this place is such, that it affordeth none fit for your conversation: this poor woman, wife to an honest husbandman will attend on you while that I (with some speed) shall make ready Dinner.

Poor *Frederigo*, although his necessity was extream, and his grief great, remembring his former inordinate expences, a moity whereof would now have stood him in some stead; yet he had a heart as free and forward as ever, not a jot dejected in his minde, though utterly overthrown by fortune. Alas! how was his good soul afflicted, that he had nothing to honour his Lady with? Up and down he runs, one while this

this way, then againe another, exclaiming on his diſ-
afterous Fate, like a man enraged, or bereft of his
ſenſes: for he had not one penny of money, neither
pawne or pledge, wherewith to procure any. The time
haſted on, and he would gladly (though in meane
meaſure) expreſſe his honourable reſpect to the Lady.
To beg of any, his nature denyed it, and to borrow hee
could not, becauſe his neighbours were as needy as
himſelfe. At laſt, looking round about, and ſeeing his
Faulcon ſtanding on her pearch, which he felt to be
very plumpe and fat, being voide of all other helpes in
his neede, and thinking her to be a Fowle fit for ſo no-
ble a Lady to feed on: without any further demurring
or delay, he pluckt off her neck, and cauſed the poore
woman preſently to pull her Feathers: which being
done he put her on the ſpit, and in a ſhort time ſhe was
daintily roaſted. Himſelfe covered the Table, ſet bread
and ſalt on, and laid the Napkins, whereof hee had
but a few left him. Going then with cheerefull lookes
into the Garden, telling the Lady that dinner was rea-
dy, and nothing now wanted, but her preſence. Shee,
and the Gentlewoman went in, and beeing ſeated at the
Table, not knowing what they fed on, the Faulcon was
all their foode; and *Fredarigo* not a little joyfull, that
his credite was ſo well ſaved. When they were riſen
from the table, and had ſpent ſome ſmall time in fami-
liar conference: the Lady thought it fit to acquaint
him with the reaſon of her comming thither, and there-
fore (in very kind manner) thus began.

Fredarigo, if you doe yet remember your former car-
riage towards me, as alſo my many modeſt and chaſte
denials, which (perhaps) you thought to ſavour of a
harſh, cruell, and unwomanly nature, I make no doubt,
but you will wonder at my preſent preſumption, when
you underſtand the occaſion, which expreſly moved
me to come hither. But if you were poſſeſſed of chil-
dren, or ever had any, whereby you might comprehend
what love (in nature) is due unto them: then I durſt
aſſure my ſelfe, you would partly hold me excuſed. Now
in regard that you never had any, and my ſelfe (for my
part) onely but one, I ſtand not exempted from thoſe
Lawes, which are in common to other mothers. And
being compelled to obey the power of thoſe Lawes;
contrary to mine own will, and thoſe duties which
reaſon ought to maintain, I am to requeſt ſuch a gift
of you, which I am certain, that you doe make moſt
precious account of, as in manly equity you can do no
leſſe. For Fortune hath beene extreamly adverſe to

you, that she hath robbed you of many other pleasures allowing you no comfort or delight, but onely that poore one, which is your faire Faulcon. Of which bird, my Sonne is become so strangely desirous, as, if I doe not bring it to him at my comming home; I feare so much the extreamity of his sickneſſe, as nothing can ensue thereon, but his loſſe of life. Wherefore I beseech you, not in regard of the love you have borne me, for thereby you stand no way obliged: but in your own gentle nature (the which hath alwayes declared it selfe ready in you, to doe more kinde offices generally, than any other Gentleman that I know) you will be pleased to give her me; or at the least, let me buy her of you. Which if you doe, I shall freely then confeſſe, that only by your meanes my Sonnes life is saved, and we both shall for ever remain engaged to you.

When *Frederigo* had heard the Ladies request, which was quite out of his power to grant, because it had been her service at dinner: he stood like a man meerely dulled in his senses, the teares trickling amaine down his cheeks, and he was nor able to utter one word. Which she perceiving, began to conjecture immediately that these teares and passions proceeded rather from griefe of mind, as being loather to part with his Faulcon, than any kinde of manner: which made her ready to say that she would not have it. Nevertheleſſe shee did not speak, but rather to attend his answer. Which, after some small respite, he returned in this manner.

Madame, since the houre, when first my affection became soly devoted to your service, Fortune hath beene crosse and contrary to me, in many occasions, as justly and in good reason I may complaine of her; Yet all seemed light and easie to be indured, in comparison of her present malicious contradiction, to my utter overthrow, and perpetuall molestation. Considering, that you are come hither to my poore house which (while I was rich and able) you would not so much as vouchsafe to look on. And now you have requested a small matter of me, wherein she hath also most crookedly thwarted me, because she hath disabled me, in bestowing so meane a gift, as your selfe will confeſſe, when it shall be related to you in few words.

So soon as I heard, that it was your gracious pleasure to dine with me, having regard to your excellency, and what (by merit) is justly due unto you: I thought it a part of my bounden duty, to entertaine you with such excellent viands, as my poore power could any way compasse, and farr beyond respect or welcome, to

other

other common and ordinary persons. Whereupon, remembring my Faulcon, which now you aske for; and her goodnesse excelling all other of her kinde; I supposed, that shee would make a dainty dish for your diet, and having dressed her, so well as I could devise to doe, you have fed heartily on her, and I am proud that I have so well bestown her. But perceiving now, that you would have her for your sicke Son; it is no meane affliction to mee that I am disabled of yeelding you contentment, which all my life time I have desired to doe.

To approve his words, the feathers, feete, and beake, were brought in; which when she saw she greatly blamed him for killing so rare a Faulcon, to content the appetite of any woman. Yet shee commended his spirit, which poverty had no power to abase. Lastly, her hopes being frustrate for enjoying the Faulcon, and fearing the health of her Son, she thanked *Federigo* for his kindnesse, returning home very melancholy. Shortly after, her Sonne, either grieving that hee could not have the Faulcon, or by extremity of his disease, chanced to die, leaving his mother a wofull Lady. After so much time was expired, as might agree with mourning; her brethren made motions to her to marry againe, because she was very rich, and yet but young. Now although she was well contented to remaine a widow; yet being continually importuned by them, and remembring the honorable honesty of *Federigo*, his last poore yet magnificent dinner, in killing his Faulcon for her sake, said to her brethren. This kind of life doth like me so well, as willingly I would not leave it: but seeing you are so earnest, let me plainly tell you, that I will never accept of any other husband but onely *Federigo di Alberino*.

Her brethren in scornfull manner reprooved her, telling her, he was a begger, and had nothing left. I know it well (quoth she) & am heartily sorry for it. But give me a man that hath need of wealth, rather than wealth that hath neede of a man. The breathren hearing how shee stood addicted, and knowing *Federigo* to be a worthy Gentleman, though poore, consented thereto; so shee bestowed herselfe & her riches on him. He on the other side, having so noble a Lady to his wife, and the same whom he had so long dearely loved, submitting all his faireſt Fortunes unto her, became a better husband (for the world) than before, and they lived, and loved in equal joy and happinesse.

Pedro di Vinciolo *went to sup at a friends house in the City. His wife (in the mean while) had a young man whom*

she loved at supper with her. Pedro *returning home on a soddain, the young man was hidden under a Coope for Hens.* Pedro *in excuse of his so soone comming home declareth, how in the house of* Herculano *(with whom he should have supt) a friend of his wives was found, which was the reason of the Suppers breaking off.* Pedroes *wife reproving the error of* Herculanoes *wife, an Asse (by chance) treades on the young mans fingers that lay hidden under the Hen-coope. Upon his crying out* Pedro *steppeth thither, sees him, knows him and findeth the fallacy of his wife; with whom (nevertheless) hee groweth to agreement, in regard of some imperfection in himselfe.*

The tenth Novell.

Reprehending the cunning of immodest women, who by abasing themselves, do throw evil aspersions on all their Sexe.

THe Queenes Novell being ended, and all applauding the happy fortune of *Fredorigo*, as also the noble nature of *Giana*: *Dioneus* expecting no command, delivered his discourse in this manner. I know not whether I should tearme it a vice accidentall, and issuing thorow the badnesse of complexions on us mortals; or an error in nature, to rejoice rather at lewd accidents, than at deeds deserving commendation, especially when they no way concerne our selves. Now, in regard that all the paines I have hitherto taken, and am also to undergo at this present, aimeth at no other end, but onely to purge your mindes of melancholy: pardon me I pray you (faire Ladies) if my Tale trip in some part, and savour a little of immodesty; yet in hearing it, you may observe the same course, as you doe in delightfull Gardens, plucke a sweete Rose, and preserve your fingers from pricking. Which easily you may do, winking at the imperfections of a foolish woman, and smiling at the amorous subtilties of his wife, compassionating the misfortune of others, where urgent necessity doth require it.

There dwelt not long since in Perugia, a wealthy man named *Pedro di Vinciolo*, who perhaps more to deceive some other, and restraine an evill opinion which the Perugians had conceived of him, in matter no way beseeming a man, than any beauty or good feature remaining in the woman, entred into the estate of marriage. And Fortune was so conforme to him in his election, that the woman whom hee had made his wife, had a yong, and enabled body, a red-haired Wench, hot spirited, standing more in need of three husbands, than he who could not any way well content one wife, because his minde ranne more on his money, than those offices

belong-

belonging to wedlock; which time acquainted his wife withall, contrary to his owne expectation, and those delights which the estate of marriage afforded, knowing her selfe also to be of a sprightly disposition, and not to be easily tamed by houlhould cares, thee waxed weary of her husbands unkind courses, upbraided him dayly with harsh speeches, making his owne home as hell to him.

When she saw that this domestick disquietnesse returned her no benefit, but rather tended to her owne consumption, than any amendment in her miserable husband, she began thus to conferre with her private thoughts. This husband of mine liveth with me, as if he were no husband, or I his wife; the marriage bed, which should be a comfort to us both, seemeth hatefull to him, and as little pleasing to me because his minde is alwayes on his money, his head busied with worldly cogitations, and early and late in his counting-house, admitting no familiar conversation with mee. Why should not I be as respectlesse of him, as he declares himselfe to bee of mee? I tooke him for an husband, brought him a sufficient Dowry, thinking him to be a man, and affected a woman as a man ought to doe, else he had never beene any husband of mine. If hee be a woman-hater, why did he make choice of me to be his wife? If I had not intended to be of the world, I could have coopt my selfe up in a Cloyster, and shorne my self like a Nunne, but that I was not borne to such severity of life. My youth shall be blasted with age before I can truly understand what youth is, and I shall be branded with the disgracefull word barrennesse, knowing my self meete and able to be a Mother, were my husband but worthy the name of a Father, or expected issue and posterity, to leave our memoriall to after times in our race, as all our predecessors formerly have done, and for which marriage was chiefely instituted. Castles long besieged, doe yeeld at the last, and women wrongedly their owne husbands, can hardly warrant their owne frailty, especially living among so many temptations, which flesh and blood are not alwayes able to resist. Well, I meane to be advised in this case, before I will hazard my honest reputation, either to suspicion or scandall; than which, no woman can have two heavier enemies, and very few there are that can escape them.

Having thus a long while consulted with her selfe, and (perhaps) oftner than twice or thrice; she became secretly acquainted with an aged woman, generally reputed to be more than halfe a Saint, walking allwayes very demurely in the streets, counting (over and over)

her *Pater Nosters*, and all the Cities holy pardons hanging at her girdle, never talking of any thing, but the lives of the holy Fathers, or the lives of the holy Saints, or the wounds of Saint *Francis*, all the world admiring her sanctity of life, as if she were divinely inspired: this shee Saint must be our distressed womans Counsellour, and having found out a convenient season, in large she imparted all her minde to her, in some such manner as formerly you heard, whereto she returned this answer. Now trust me Daughter, thy case is to be pitied, and so much the rather, because thou art in the flowre of thy youth, when not a minute of time is to be left; for there is no greater errour in this life, than the losse of time, because it cannot be recovered againe; and when the fiends themselves affright us, yet if we keep our embers still covered with warme ashes on the hearth, they have not any power to hurt us. If any one can truely speak thereof, then I am able to deliver true testimony; for I know, but not without much perturbation of minde, and piercing afflictions in the spirit; how much time I lost without any profit. And yet I lost not all, for I would not have thee thinke me to be so foolish, that I did altogether neglect such an especiall benefit; which when I call to mind, and consider now in what condition I am, thou must imagine it is no small hearts griefe to me, that age should make me utterly despised, and no fire afforded to light my tinder.

With men it is not so, they are borne apt for a thousand occasions, as well for the present purpose we talke of, as infinite others beside; yea, and many of them are more esteemed being aged, than when they are young, But women serve onely for mens contentation, and to bring children; and therefore are they generally beloved, which if they faile of, either it is by unfortunate marriage, or some imperfection depending on nature, or want of good will in themselves. We have nothing in this world but what is given us, in which regard, we are to make use of our time, and employ it the better while we have it. For, when we grow to be old, our husbands, yea our dearest friends, will scarsely look on us, Wee are then fit for nothing, but to sit by the fire in the Kitchin telling tales to the Cat, or counting the Pots and Pans on the shelves. Nay which is worse, Rimes and Songs are made of us, even in meere contempt of our age, and commendation of such as are young, the daintiest morsels are fittest for them, and we referred to feede on the scrappes from their Trenchers, or such reversion as they can spare us. I tell thee daughter, thou couldst not make

choice

choice of a meeter woman in all the Citie, to whom thou mighteſt ſafely open thy mind, and knowes better to adviſe thee than I doe. But remember withall, that I am poore, and it is not your part to ſuffer poverty to be unſupplyed. I will make thee partaker of all theſe bleſſed pardons, at every Altar I will ſay a *Pater Noſter*, and an *Ave Maria*, that thou maiſt proſper in thy hearts deſires, and be defended from foule ſinne and ſhame.

Within a while after, it came to paſſe that her husband was invited forth to ſupper, with one named *Herculano*, a kind friend of his; but his wife refuſed to goe, becauſe ſhe had appointed a friend to ſupper with her, to whom the old woman was imployed as her meſſenger, and was well recompenſed for her labour. This friend was a gallant proper youth as any Perugia yeelded, and ſcarſely was he ſeated at the Table, but her husband was returned backe, and called to be let in at the doore. Which when ſhe perceived, ſhe was almoſt halfe dead with feare, and coveting to hide the young man, out of her husbands ſight, ſhee had no other meanes, but in an entry, hard by the Parlour where they purpoſed to have ſupt, ſtood a Coope or Hen-pen, wherein ſhe uſed to keepe her Pullen, under which he crept, and then ſhe covered it with an old empty ſacke; and after ran to let her husband come in. When he was entred into the houſe; as halfe offended at his ſo ſuddaine returne, angerly ſhe ſaid: It ſeemes Sir you are a ſhaver at your meat that you have made ſo ſhort a Supper. In troth Wife (quoth he) I have not ſupt at all, no not ſo much as eaten one bit. How happened that, ſaid the woman? Marry wife (quoth he) I will tell you, and thus he began.

As *Herculano*, his wife, and I were ſitting downe at the Table, very neere unto us we heard one ſneeze, whereof at the firſt we made no reckoning, untill wee heard it againe the ſecond time, yea, a third, fourth, and fifth, and many more after, whereat we were not a little amazed. Now wife I muſt tell you, before we entred the roome where we were to ſup, *Herculanus* wife kept the doore faſt ſhut againſt us, and would not let us enter in an indifferent while; which made him ſomewhat offended, but now much more, when he had heard one to ſneeze ſo often. Demanded of her a reaſon for it, and who it was that thus ſneezed in his houſe: hee ſtarted from the Table, and ſtepping to a little doore neere the ſtaires head, neceſſarily made, to ſet ſuch things in, as otherwiſe would be troubleſome to the roome (as in all houſes we commonly ſee the like) he perceived that the party was hidden there, which we had heard ſo often to ſneeze before.

No sooner had he opened the doore, but such a smell of brimstone came forth (whereof he felt not the least savour before) which made us likewise to cough and sneeze, being no way able to refraine it. She seeing her husband to be much moved, excused the matter thus: that (but a little while before) she had whited certaine linnen with the smoake of brimstone, as it is a usuall thing to doe, and then set the Pan into that spare place because it should not be offensive to us. By this time, *Herculano* had espied him that sneezed, who being almost stifled with the smell, and closeneese of the small roome wherein he lay, had not any power to help himselfe, but still continued coughing and sneezing, even as if his heart would have split in twaine. Forth hee pluckt him by the heeles, & perceiving how the matter had past, he said to her. I thanke you wife, now I see the reason, why you kept us so long from comming into this roome: let me die, if I beare this wrong at your hands. When his wife heard these words, and saw the discovery of her shame; without returning either excuse or answer; forth of doores she ran, but whither, we know not. *Herculano* drew his Dagger, and would have slaine him that still lay sneezing: but I disswaded him from it, as well in respect of his, as also mine own danger when the Law should censure on the deed. And after the yong man was indifferently recovered, by the perswasion of some neighbours comming in, he was closeconveied out of the house, and all the noyse quietly pacified. Onely (by this meanes, and the flight of *Herculanoes* wife) we were disappointed of our Supper, and now you know the reason of my so soone returning.

When she had heard this whole discourse, then shee perceived, that other Women were subject to the like infirmitie, and as wise for themselves, as she could bee, though these or the like sinister accidents might sometime crosse them: and gladly she wished, that *Herculanoes* wives excuse, might now serve to acquite her: but because in blaming others errours, our owne may sometime chance to escape discovery, and cleare us, albeit we are as guiltie; in a sharpe reprehending manner, thus she began: See husband, here is handsome behaviour, of an holy faire-seeming, and Saint-like woman, to whom I durst have confest my sinnes, I conceived such a religious perswasion of her lives integrity, free from the least scruple of taxation. A woman so farre stept into yeares as she is, to give such an evill example to yonger women, is it not a sinne beyond all sufferanse? Accursed be the houre, when she was borne into this world, and her

her selfe likewise, to be so lewdly and incontinently given; an univerſall shame and slander to all the good women of our City.

Shall I terme her a woman, or rather some savage monster in a womans shape? Hath she not made an open proſtitution of her honesty, broken her plighted troth to her husband, and all the womanly reputation she had in this world? Her husband being an honourable Citizen, entreating her allwayes, as few men else in the City do their wives; what an heare-break must this needs be to him, good man? Neither I, nor any honeſt woman else, ought to have any pity on her, but with our owne hands teare her in peeces, or drag her along to a good fire in the Market place, wherein shee and her minion should be consumed together, and their base ashes disperſed abroad in the winde, leſt the pure Aire should be infected with them.

Then, remembring her owne caſe, and her poore affrighted friend, who lay in such diſtreſſe under the Hencoope; shee began to perſwade her husband, that hee would be pleased to goe to bed, because the night paſſed on space. But *Pedro* having a better will to eate, than to sleepe, desired her to let him have some meat, else he must goe to bed with an empty belly; whereto she answered. Why husband (quoth she) doe I make any large proviſion, when I am debard of your company? I would I were the wife of *Herculano*, seeing you cannot content your selfe from one nights feeding, considering it is now over-late to make any thing ready.

It fortuned, that certaine Husbandmen, which had the charge of *Pedros* Farme house in the Countrey, and there followed his affaires of Husbandry, were returned home this instant night, having their Asses laden with such proviſion, as was to be used in his City-house. When the Asses were unladen, and set up in a small stable, without watering; one of them being (belike) more thirſty than the reſt, brake looſe, and wandering all about smelling to seek water, happened into the entry, where the young man lay hidden under the Hen-pen. Now; he being constrained (like a Carpe) to lie flat on his belly, because the Coope was over-weightie for him to carry, & one of his hands more extended forth, than was requiſite for him in so urgent a thiſt: it was his hap (or ill fortune rather) that the Aſſe set his foote on the young mans fingers, treading so hard, and the paine being very irkſome to him, as he was inforced to cry out aloud: which *Pedro* hearing, he wondered thereat not a little.

Knowing that this cry was in his house, he took the Candle in his hand, and going forth of the Parlour, heard the cry to be louder; because the Asse removed not his Foote, but rather trod the more firmely on his hand. Comming to the Coope, driving the Asse, and taking off the old sacke, he espyed the young man, who beside the painfull anguish he felt of his fingers, arose up trembling, fearing some outrage beside to be offered by *Pedro*, who knew the youth perfectly, and demanded of him, how he came thither? No answer did hee make to that question, but humbly entreated (for charities sake) that he would not doe him any harme. Feare not (quoth *Pedro*) I will not offer thee any violence: onely tell mee how thou camest hither, and for what occasion; where in the youth fully resolved him.

Pedro being no lesse joyfull for thus finding him, than his wife was sorrowfull, tooke him by the hand, and brought him into the Parlour, where she sate trembling and quaking, as not knowing what to say in this distresse. Seating himselfe directly before her, and holding the youth still fast by the hand, thus he began. Oh wife! What bitter speeches did you use (even now) against the wife of *Herculano*, maintaining that shee had shamed all other women and justly deserved to be burned? Why did you not say as much of your selfe? Or, if you had not the heart to speake, how could you bee so cruell against her, knowing your offence as great as hers? Questionlesse, nothing else urged you thereto, but that all women are of one and the same condition, covering their owne grosse faults by farre inferior infirmities in others. You are a perverse generation, meerely false in your fairest shewes.

When shee saw that hee offered her no other violence but gave her such vaunting and reproachfull speeches, holding still the young man before her face, meerely to vexe and despight her: she began to take heart, and thus replyed. Doest thou compare me with the wife of *Herculano*, who is an old dissembling Hypocrite? Yet shee can have of him what she desireth, and he useth her as a w man ought to be, which favour I could never yet finde at thy hands. Put the case, that thou keepest mee in good garments; allowing me to go neatly hosed and shod; yet well thou knowest, there are other meete matrers belonging to a woman, and every way as necessarily required, both for the preservation of Household quietnesse, and those other rites between a husband and a wife. Let me be worser garmented, courser dieted, yea, debarred of all pleasures and delights; so

I might once be worthy the name of a Mother, and leave some remembrance of womanhood behinde mee. I tell thee plainely *Pedro*, I am a woman as other women are, and subject to the same desires, as (by nature) attendeth on flesh and bloud: looke how thou faileſt in kindneſſe towards me, thinke it not amiſſe, if I doe the like to thee, and endeavour thou to win the worthy title of a Father, becauſe I was made to be a Mother.

When Pedro perceived that his wife had ſpoken nothing but reaſon, in regard of his over-much neglect towards her, and not uſing ſuch houſhould kindneſſe, as ought to be between Man and wife, he returned her this anſwer. Well wife (quoth he) I confeſſe my fault, and hereafter will labour to mend it, conditionally, that this youth, nor any other, may no more viſite my houſe in my abſence. Get mee therefore ſomething to eate, for doubtleſſe, this young man and thy ſelfe fell ſhort of your ſupper, by reaſon of my ſo ſoone returning home. In troth husband, ſaid ſhe, we did not eate one bit of any thing, and I will be a true and loyall wife to thee, ſo thou wilt be the like to mee. No more words then wife, replyed *Pedro*, all is forgotten, and forgiven, let us to ſupper, and wee are all friends. She ſeeing his anger was ſo well appeaſed, lovingly kiſſed him, and laying the cloth, ſet on the ſupper, which ſhe had provided for her ſelfe and the youth, and ſo they ſupt together merrily, not one unkinde word paſſing betweene them. After ſupper, the youth was ſent away in a friendly manner, and *Pedro* was allwayes afterward more loving to his Wife, than formerly he had beene, and no complaint paſſed on either ſide, but mutuall joy and houſhould contentment, ſuch as ought to be betweene Man and Wife.

Dioneus having ended this his Tale, for which the Ladies returned him no thankes, but rather angerly frowned on him: the Queene, knowing that her Government was now concluded, aroſe, and taking off her Crowne of Lawrell, placed it graciouſly on the head of Madam *Eliza*, ſaying, Now Madam, it is your turne to command. *Eliza* having received the honour, did (in all reſpects) as others formerly had done, and after ſhe had inſtructed the Maiſter of the Houſhold, concerning his charge during the time of her Regiment, for contentation of all the company; thus ſhe ſpake.

We have long ſince heard, that with witty words, ready anſwers, and ſudden jeſts or taunts, many have checkt and reproved great folly in others, and to their no meane commendations. Now, becauſe it is a pleaſing kind of argument, miniſtring occaſion of mirth,

and

and wit: my desire is, that all our Discourse to morrow shall tend thereto. I meane of such persons, either Men or Women, who with some witty answer, have encountred a scorner in his owne intention, and laied the blame where it justly belonged. Every one commended the Queenes appointment, because it savoured of good wit and judgement; and the Queen being risen, they were all discharged till supper time, falling to such severall exercises as themselves best fancied.

When Supper was ended and the instruments layed before them; by the Queenes consent, Madam *Emilia* undertooke the dance, and the Song was appointed to *Dioneus*, who began many, but none that proved to any liking they were so palpably obscœne & idle, savouring altogether of his owne wanton disposition. At the length; the Queene looking strangely on him, and commanding him to sing a good one, or none at all; thus he began.

The Song.

EYes, can you not refraine your hourely weeping?
Eares, how are you depriv'd of sweete attention?
Thoughts, have you lost your quiet silent sleeping?
What who hath rob'd thee of thy rare invention?
The lack of these being life and motion giving:
Are senselesse shapes, and no true signes of living.

Eyes, when you gaz'd upon her Angell beauty;
Eares, while you heard her sweete delicious straines,
Thoughts (sleeping then) did yet performe their duty,
With sprightly pleasure in his paines.
While she did live, then none of these were scanting,
But now (being dead) they all are gone and wanting.

After that *Dioneus* (by proceeding no further) declared the finishing of his Song; many more were sung before, and that of *Dioneus* highly commended. Some part of the night being spent in other delightfull exercises, and a fitting houre for rest drawing on: they betooke themselves to their Chambers, where we will leave them till to morrow morning.

FINIS.

THE DECAMERON,

CONTAINING

An hundred very pleasant Novels.

Wittily discourſed, betwene ſeven Honourable Ladies, and three Noble Gentlemen.

Preſerved to Poſterity by the Re*nowned* Iohn Boccacio, *the* firſt refiner of *Italian* proſe: And now tranſlated into *Engliſh.*

The laſt Five dayes.

LONDON,

Printed by *E. Cotes.* 1655.

To the Right Honourable, Sir *Philip Herbert*, Knight; Lord Baron of *Sherland*, Earle of *Montgomery*, and Knight of the most Noble order of the Garter.

HAving (by your Honourable command) translated this Decameron, *or* Cento Novelle, *sirnamed* Il Principe Galeotto, *of ten dayes several discourses, grounded on variable and singular Arguments, happening between seaven noble Ladies and three very Honourable Gentlemen: Although not attyred with such elegancy of phrase, or nice curiosity of style, as a quicker and more sprightfull wit could have performed, but in such home-born language, as my ability could stretch unto; yet it cometh (in all duty) to kisse your Noble hand, and to shelter it selfe under your gracious protection, though not from the leering eye, and over-lavish tongue of snarling Envy; yet from the power of his blasting poyson, and malice of his machinations.*

To the Reader.

BOokes (Courteous Reader) may rightly be compared to Gardens; wherein, let the painefull Gardiner expresse never so much care and diligent endeavour; yet among the very faireſt, sweeteſt, and freſheſt Flowers, as also Plants of precious vertue; ill savouring and stinking Weedes, fit for no use but the fire or mucke hill, will spring and sprout up So fareth it with Bookes of the very best quality, let the Author be never so indulgent, and the Printer vigilant: yet both may misse their ayme, by the escape of Errors & mistakes, either in sense or matter, the one fault ensuing by a ragged written Copy; and the other through want of wary Correction. If then the best Bookes cannot be free from this common infirmity; blame not this then, of farre lighter argument, wherein thy courtesie may helpe us both; His blame, in acknowledging his more sufficiency, than to write so grosse and absurdly: And mine, in pardoning unwilling Errors committed, which thy judgement finding, thy pen can as easily correct.

Farewell.

The Sixt day governed by Madame *Eliza*.

The first Novell.

A Knight requested Madam *Oretta*, to ride behinde him on horsebacke, and promised to tell her an excellent Tale by the way. But the Lady perceiving, that his discourse was idle, and much worse delivered: entreated him to let her walke on foot again.

2. Novell. *Ciſtio a Baker, by a witty anſwer which he gave unto Meſſer Geri Spina, cauſed him to acknowledge a very indiſcreete motion, which he had made to the ſaid Ciſtio.*

3. Novell. *Madam Nonna de pulci, by a ſudden anſwer, did put to ſilence a Biſhop of Florence, & the Lord Marſhall: having moved a queſtion to the ſaid Lady, which ſeemed to come ſhort of honeſty.*

4. Novell. *Chichibio, the Cooke to Meſſer Currado Gianfiliazzi, by a ſudden pleaſant anſwer which he made to his Maſter; converted his anger into laughter and thereby eſcaped the puniſhment, that Meſſer meant to impoſe on him.*

5. Novell. *Meſſer Fereſo da Rabatte, and Maiſter Giotto a Painter by his profeſſion, comming together, from Mugello, ſcornefully reprehended one another for their deformity of body.*

6. Novell. *A young ingenuous Schollar, being unkindly reviled and ſmitten by his ignorant Father, & through the procurement of an unlearned Vicar; after attained to be doubly revenged on him.*

7. Novell. *Madame Philippa, being accuſed by her husband Rinaldo de Puglieſe, becauſe he tooke her in adultery with a young gentleman named Lazarino de Guazzagliori: cauſed her to be cited before a Iudge. From whom ſhe delivered her ſelfe, by a ſudden witty,*

and pleasant answer, & moderated a severe strict Statute, formerly made against women.

8. Novell. *Fresco da Celatico, counselled and advised his Neece Cesca, That if such as deserved to be looked on, were offensive to her eyes (as she had often told him) she should forbeare to look on any.*

9. Novell. *Signior Guido Cavalcante, with a sodaine and witty answer, reprehended the rash folly of certaine Florentine Gentlemen, that thought to scorne and flout him.*

10. Novell. *Fryer Onion promised certaine honest people of the Country, to shew them a Feather of the same Phœnix, that was with Noahin his arke: in steed whereof he found coales, which he avouched to be those very coales wherewith the same Phœnix was roasted.*

The VII. day governed by *Dioneus*.

The first Novell.

IOhn of Lorraine heard one knock at his doore in the night time, whereupon he awaked his wife Monna Tessa. Shee made him believe, that it was a Spirit which knocked at the doore, and so they arose, going both together to conjure the spirit with a charme; and afterwards they heard no more knocking.

2. Novell. *Peronella hid a young man her Friend & Lover, under a great brewing Fat, upon the sodden returning home of her Husband; who told her, that he had sold the said Fat, and brought him that bought it, to carry it away. Peronella replyed, that she had formerly sold it unto another, who was now underneath it, to see whether it were whole and sound, or no. Whereupon, he being come forth from under it; she caused her Husband to make it neat & clean, & so the last buyer carried it away.*

3 Novell. *Fryer Reynard, falling in love with a Gentlewoman, wife to a man of good account; found the meanes to become her Gossip. Afterward, hee being confessing closely with her in her Chamber, and her Husband*

band coming ſuddenly thither: ſhee made him beleeve, that he came thither for no other end, but to cure his Godſonne by a charme, of a dangerous diſeaſe which he had by wormes.

4. Novell. *Tofano in the night ſeaſon did locke his wife out of his houſe, and ſhe not prevailing to get entrance againe, by all the entreaties ſhee could poſſibly uſe: made him beleeve that ſhe had throwne her ſelfe into a Well, by caſting a great ſtone into the well. Tofano hearing the fall of the ſtone into the well, and being perſwaded that it was his wife indeed; came forth of his houſe, and ran to the Well-ſide. In the mean while, his wife got into the houſe, made faſt the doores againſt her Husband, and gave him many reproachfull ſpeeches.*

5. Novell. *A jealous man, clouded with the habite of a Prieſt, became the confeſſour to his owne Wife who made him beleeve, that ſhe was deepely in love with a Prieſt, which came every night, and lay with her. By meanes of which confeſſion, while her jealous Husband watched the doore of his houſe: ſhe that never meant to doe amiſſe, had the company of a ſecret friend, who came over the toppe of the houſe to viſite her, while her fooliſh Husband kept the doore.*

6. Novell. *Madam Iſabella, delighting in the company of her affected friend, named Lionello, & ſhe being like wiſe beloved by Signior Lambertuccio: At the ſame time as ſhe had entertained Lionello, ſhe was alſo viſited by Lambertuccio. Her husband returning home in the very inſtant, ſhe cauſed Lambertuccio to runne forth with a drawne ſword in his hand, and (by that means) made an excuſe ſufficient for Lionello to her Husband.*

7. Novell. *Lodovico diſcovered to his Miſtreſſe Madam Beatrix, how amorouſly he was affected with her. She cunningly ſent Egano her husband into his garden in all reſpects diſguiſed like her ſelfe; while (friendly) Lodovico conferred with her the mean while: afterward Lodovico pretending a laſcivious allurement of his miſtreſſe, thereby to wrong his honeſt Maſter, inſtead of her, beateth Egano ſoundly in the Garden.* Novell. 8.

Novell. 8. *Arriguccio Berlinghierie, became immeasurably jealous of his wife Simonida, who fasten a thred about her great toe, for to serve as a signall, when her amorous friend should come to visite her. Arriguccio findeth the fallacy, and while he pursueth the amorous friend, she causeth her Maide to lye in her bed against his returne: whom he beateth extreamely, cutting away the lockes of her haire (thinking he had done all this violence to his wife Simonida:) and afterward fetcheth her Mother and Brethren, to shame her before them, and so be rid of her. But they finding all his speeches to be false; and reputing him to be a drowsie jealous foole, all the blame and disgrace falleth on himselfe.*

Novell. 9. *Lydia a Lady of great beauty, birth and honour, being wife to Nicostratus, Governour of Argos falling in love with a Gentleman named Pyrrus, was requested by him as a true testimony of her unfeigned affection to performe three severall actions of her selfe. Shee did accomplish them all, and imbraced and kissed Pyrrhus in the presence of Nicostratus, by perswading him, that whatsoever he saw, was meerely false.*

Novell. 10. *Two Citizens of Sienna, the one named Tingoccio Mini, and the other Meutio di Tora, affected both one woman, called Monna Mita, to whom the one of them was a Gossip. The Gossip dyed, and appeared afterward to his companion, according as he had formerly promised him to doe, and told him what strange wonders he had seene in the other world.*

The VIII. day governed by Madame *Lauretta.*

The first Novell.

Gulfardo made a match or wager with the wife of Gasparvolo, for the obtaining of her amorous favour, in regard of a summe of money first to be given her. The

money he borrowed of her husband and gave it in payment to her, as in case of discharging him from her husbands debt. After his returne home from Geneway, hee told him in the presence of his wife, how he had payd the whole summe to her, with Charge of delivering it to her Husband, which she confessed to be true, albeit greatly against her will.

2. Novell. A lusty Priest of Varlungo, fell in love with a pretty woman, named Monna Belcolore. To compasse his amorous desire, he left his Cloake (as a pledge of further payment) with her. By a subtile sleight afterward he borrowed a morter of her, which when he sent home againe in the presence of her husband, hee demanded to have his cloake sent him, as having left it in pawne for the morter. To pacifie her husband, offended that shee would not lend the Priest the morter without a pawne, she sent him back his cloake againe, albeit greatly against her will.

3. Novell. Calandrino, Bruno and Buffalmaco, being Painters by profession, travailed to the plaine of Mugnone, to finde the pretious stone called Heliotropium. Calandrino perswading himselfe to have found it, returned home to his house heavie loaden with stones. His wife rebuking him for his absence, he groweth into anger, and shrewdly beates her. Afterward when the case is debated by his other friends Bruno and Buffalmaco, all is found to be meere folly.

4. Novell. The Provost belonging to the Cathedrall Church of Fiesola, fell in love with a Gentlewoman, named Piccarda, who hated him as much as hee loved her. He imagining that hee lay with her: by the Gentlewomans Brethren, and Bishop under whom he served, was taken in bed with her mayd, an ugly foule deformed Slut.

5. Novell. Three pleasant companions, playd a merry pranke with a Iudge (belonging to the Marquesse of Anna) at Florence, at such time as he sat on the bench and Criminall causes.

6. Novell.

6. Novell. *Bruno and Buffalmaco stole a yo[ung] Brawne from Calandrino, and for his recovery ther[e]of, they used a kind of pretended conjuration, with Pi[ls] made of Ginger and strong Malmesey. But in stead [of] this application, they gave them two pils of a Dogs dun[g] er dousets, confected in Aloes, by means whereof th[ey] made him beleeve, that he had rob'd himselfe. And [for] feare they should report this theft to his Wife, they ma[de] him to buy another Brawne.*

7. Novell. *A young Gentleman being a Scholar, fell [in] love with a Ladie named Helena: She being a woma[n] and addicted in affection to another Gentleman, one wi[nter] night in cold winter, she caused the Scholar to exp[ect] her comming, in an extreame frost and snow. In rev[enge] whereof, by his imagined art and skill, he made her st[and] naked on the top of a Tower, the space of a whole day, [and] in July, to be sun burnt & bitten with waspes & flies.*

8. Novell. *Two neere dwelling neighbours, the o[ne] being named Spinellocio Tavena, and the other Zepp[a] Mino, frequenting each others company dayly togeth[er] Spinellocio Cuckolded his Friend and neighbour: [but] happening to the knowledge of Zeppa, hee prevailed [so] well with the wife of Spinellocio, that hee being lock[ed] in a Chest, he revenged his wrong at that instant, so th[at] neither of them complained of his misfortune.*

9. Novell. *Maestro Simone, an idle headed Doctor [of] Physick, was throwne by Bruno and Buffalmaco into [a] common Leystall of filth: the Physitian fondly beleevi[ng] that (in the night time) he should be made one of a n[ew] created company, who usually went to see wonders [in] Corsica, and there in the Leystall they left him.*

10. Novell. *A Curtezan, named Madam Biancafi[o]re by her subtile policy deceived a young Merchant call[ed] Salaberto, of all his money he had taken for his ware[s] at Palermo. Afterward he making shew of coming th[i]ther againe with far richer Merchandises than before, made the meanes to borrow a great summe of money, [re]ceiving her so base a pawn, as well requited her for [her] former cousenage.*

The ninth day governed by Madam *Emilia*.

The first Novell.

MAdam *Francesca*, a Widow of *Pistoya*, being affected by two Florentine Gentlewomen, the one named *Rinuccio Palermini*, and the other *Alessandro Chiarmontesi*, and she bearing no good will to either of them, ingenuously freed her selfe from both their importunate suites. One of them she caused to lye as dead in a grave, and the other to fetch him from thence. So neither of them accomplishing what they were enjoyned, failed of their expectation.

2. Novell. *Madam Vsimbalda*, Lady Abbesse of a Monastery of Nuns in Lombardie, arising hastily in the night time without a Candle, to take one of her Daughter Nuns in bed with a young Gentleman, whereof she was enviously accused, by certain of her other Sisters: the Abbesse her selfe (being at the same time in bed with a Priest) imagining to have put on her head a plaited veile, put on the Priests breeches. Which when the poor Nunne perceived; by causing the Abbesse to see her own error, she got her selfe to be absolved, and had the freedom afterward, to be more familiar with her friend, then formerly she had been.

3. Novell. *Master Simon* the Physitian, by the perswasions of *Bruno Buffalmaco*, and a third Companion, named *Nello*, made *Calandrino* to beleeve, that hee was conceived great with child. And having Physicke ministred to him for the disease, they got both good fat Capons and mony of him, and so cured him, without any other manner of deliverance.

4. Novell. *Francesco Fortarigo*, played away all that he had at Buonconvento, and likewise the money of *Francesco Anniolliero*, being his Master: then running after him in his shirt and avouching that he had robbed him, hee caused him to be taken by Pezants of the Country, cloathed himselfe in his Masters wearing garments, and (mounted

(mounted on his horſe) rode thence to Sienna, leaving Amolliore in his ſhirt, and walked bare-footed.

5. Novell. Calandrino became extraordinarily enamoured of a young Damoſell, named Nicoletta. Bruno prepared a Charme or writing for him, avouching conſtantly that as ſoon as he touched the Damoſell therewith, ſhe ſhould follow him whitherſoever he would have her. She being gone to an appointed place with him hee was found there by his wife, and dealt withall according to his deſerving.

6. Novell. Two young Gentlemen, the one named Panuccio, and the other Adriano, lodged one night in a poore Inne, whereof one of them went to bed with the Hoſts daughter, and the other (by miſtaking his way in the dark) to the Hoſts wife. He which lay with the daughter, hapned afterward to the Hoſts bed, and told him what hee had done, as thinking he ſpake to his own companion. Diſcontentment growing betweene them, the mother perceiving her error, went to bed to her daughter and with diſcreet language, made a generall pacification.

7. Novell. Talano de Moleſe dreamed, That a wolf rent and tore his wives face and throate. which dreame he told to her, with adviſe to keepe her ſelfe out of danger; which ſhe refuſing to doe, received what followed.

8. Novell. Blondello (in a merry manner) cauſed Guiotto to beguile himſelfe of a good dinner: for which deceit, Guiotto became cunningly revenged, by procuring Blondello to be unreaſonably beaten and miſuſed.

9. Novell. Two young Gentlemen, the one named Meliſſo, borne in the City of Laiazzo: and the other Goſefo of Antioche, travelled together unto Salomon, the famous King of Great Britaine. The one deſiring to learne what he ſhould doe, whereby to compaſſe and winne the love of men. The other craved to be inſtructed by what meanes he might reclaime an headſtrong and unruly wife. And what anſwers the wiſe King gave unto them both, before they departed away from him.

10. Novell

10. Novell. *Iohn de Barolo, at the instance and requeſt of his Goſſip Pietro da Treſanti, made an enchantment, to have his wife become a Mule. And when it came to the faſtning on of the taile, Goſſip Pietro by ſaying ſhe ſhould have no tayle at all, ſpoyled the whole enchantment.*

The X. Day, governed by *Pamphilus.*

The firſt Novell.

A Florentine Knight, named Signior Ruggiero de Figiovanni, became a ſervant to Alphonſo, King of Spain who (in his owne opinion) ſeemed but ſleightly to reſpect and reward him. In regard whereof, by a notable experiment, the King gave him a manifeſt teſtimonie, that it was not through any defect in him, but onely occaſioned by the Knights ill fortune, moſt bounteouſly recompenſed him afterwards.

2. Novell. *Ghinotto di Tacco, tooke the Lord Abbot of Clugni as his priſoner, and cured him of a grievous diſeaſe, which hee had in his ſtomacke, and afterward ſet him at liberty. The ſame Lord Abbot, when he returned from the Court of Rome, reconciled Ghinotto to Pope Boniface; who made him a Knight, and a Lord Prior of a goodly Hoſpitall.*

3. Novell. *Mithridanes envying the life and liberality of Nathan, and travelling thither, with a ſeiled reſolution to kill him: chanceth to conferre with Nathan unknowne. And being inſtructed by him in what manner hee might beſt performe the bloody deed, according as hee gave direction, he meeteth him in a ſmall Thicket or Wood, where knowing him to bee the ſame man, that taught him how to take away his life: Confounded with ſhame, he acknowledgeth his horrible intention, and becommeth his loyall friend.*

4. Novell.

4. Novell. *Signior Gentile de Curisendi, being come from Modena, tooke a Gentlewoman, named Madam Catharina, forth of a grave, wherein she was buried for dead: which act he did, in regard of his former bouns affection to the said Gentlewoman. Madam Catharina remaining there afterward, and delivered of a goodly Son: was (by Signior Gentile) delivered to her owne husband, named Signior Nicolluccio Caccianimico, and the young infant with her.*

5. Novell. *Madam Dianora, the wife of Signior Gilberto, being immodestly affected by Signior Ansaldo, to free her selfe from his tedious importunity, shee appointed him to performe (in her judgement) an act of impossibility; namely to give her a Garden, as plentifully stored with fragrant Flowres in Ianuary, as in the flourishing moneth of May. Ansaldo, by meanes of a bond which hee made to a Magitian, performed her request. Signior Gilberto, the Ladies Husband, gave consent, that his Wife should fulfill her promise made to Ansaldo. Who hearing the bountifull minde of her husband, released her of her promise: And the Magitian likewise discharged Signior Ansaldo, without taking ought of him.*

6. Novell. *Victorious King Charles, sirnamed the Aged, and first of that Name; fell in love with a yong Maiden, named Genevera, daughter to an ancient Knight called Signior Neri degli Vberti. And waxing ashamed of his amorous folly, caused both Genevera, and her faire sister Isotta, to bee joyned in marriage with two Noble Gentlemen; the one named Signior Maffeo da Palizzi, and the other, Signior Gulielmo della Magna.*

7. Novell. *Lisana, the daughter of a Florentine Apothecary, named Bernardino Puccino, being at Palermo & seeing Piero, King of Aragon run at the tilt; became so affectionately enamoured of him, that she languished in an extreame and long sicknesse. By her owne deuise and meanes of a Song, sung in the hearing of the King, he vouchsafed to visite her, and giving her a kisse, terming himselfe also to be her knight for ever after, he honourably*

nourably beſtowed her in marriage on a young Gentleman, who was called Perdicano, and gave him liberall endowment with her.

8. Novell. *Sopronia, thinking her ſelfe to be the married wife of Giſippus, was (indeed) the wife of Titus Quintus Fulvius, and departed thence with him to Rome. Within a while after, Giſippus alſo came thither in very poore condition, and thinking that he was deſpiſed by Titus, grew weary of his life, and confeſſed that hee had murdered a man, with full intent to die for the fact. But Titus taking knowledge of him, and deſiring to ſave the life of Giſippus, charged himſelfe to have done the bloody deed. Which the murderer himſelfe (ſtanding then among the multitude) ſeeing truely confeſſed the deed. By meanes whereof, all three were delivered by the Emperor Octavius: and Titus gave his Siſter in marriage to Giſippus, giving them alſo the moſt part of his goods and inheritances.*

9. Novell. *Saladine, the great Soldan of Babylon, in the habite of a Merchant, was honourably received and welcommed, into the houſe of Signior Thorello Iſtria. Who travelling to the holy Land, prefixed a certaine time to his wife, for his returne backe to her again; wherein, if he failed, it was lawfull for her to take another Husband. By clouding himſelfe in the diſguiſe of a Faulkner, the Soldan tooke notice of him and did him many great honours. Afterward, Thorello falling ſicke, by Magicall Art he was conveyed in one night to Pavia, when his wife was to be married on the morrow: where making himſelfe knowne to her, all was diſappointed, and ſhe went home with him to his owne houſe.*

10. Novell. *The Marqueſſe of Saluzzo, named Gualtiero, being conſtrained by the importunate ſollicities of his Lords, and other inferior people, to joyne himſelfe in marriage; tooke a woman according to his owne liking, called Grizelda, ſhe being daughter to a poore Countreyman, named Ianiculo, by whom he had two children, which he pretended to be ſecretly murde-*

red Afterward, they being growne to yeeres of more ſtature, and making ſhew of taking in marriage another wife, more worthy of his degree and calling: made a ſeeming publick liking of his owne daughter, expulſing his wife Grizelda poorely from him. But finding her incomparable patience; more dearely (then before) he received her into favour againe, brought her home to his owne Palace, where (with her children) he cauſed her and them to be reſpectively honoured, in deſpight of all her adverſe enemies.

THE

THE SIXT DAY,

Governed under the Authority of Madam Eliza, *and the Argument of the Discourses or Novels there to bee recounted, doe concerne such persons, who by some witty words (when any have checkt and taunted them) have revenged themselves, in a sodden, unexpected and discreet answer, thereby preventing losse, danger, scorne, and disgrace, retorting them on the busie-headed Questioners.*

The Induction.

THe Moone having past the heaven, lost her bright splendor, by the arising of a more powerfull light, and every part of our world began to looke cleare: When the Queene (being risen) caused all the Company to be called, walked forth afterward upon the pearled dew (so farre as was supposed convenient) in faire and familiar conference together according as severally they were disposed, and repetition of divers the passed Novels, especially those which were most pleasing, and seemed so by their present commendations. But the Sunne being somewhat higher mounted, gave such a sensible warmth to the aire, as caused their returne back to the Palace, where the Tables were readily covered against their comming, strewed with sweet hearbes, and odoriferous flowers, seating themselves at the Tables (before the heat grew more violent) according as the Queene commanded.

After dinner, they sung divers excellent Canzonnets; and then some went to sleepe, others played at the Chesse, and some at the Tables: but *Dioneus* and Madam *Lauretta*, they sung the love-conflict betweene *Troylus* and *Cressida*. Now was the houre come, of repairing to their consistory or meeting place; the Queen having thereto generally summoned them, and seating themselves (as they were wont to doe) about the faire Fountaine, As the Queene was commanding to begin

the first Novell, an accident suddenly happened, which never had befalne before: to wit, they heard a great noise and tumult, among the houshold servants in the Kitchin. Whereupon, the Queene caused the Master of the Houshold to be called, demanding of him, what noise it was, and what might be the occasion thereof? He made answer, that *Lucisca* and *Tindaro* were at some words of discontentment, but what was the occasion thereof, he knew not. Whereupon, the Queene commanded, that they should be sent for, (their anger and violent speeches still continuing) and being come into her presence, she demanded the reason of their discord; and *Tindaro* offering to make answer, *Lucisca* (being somewhat more ancient than he, and of a fiercer fiery spirit, even as if her heart would have leapt out of her mouth) turned her selfe to him, and with a scornefull frowning countenance, said; See how this bold, unmannerly, and beastly fellow, dare presume to speake in this place before me: Stand by (saucy impudence) and give your better leave to answer; then turning to the Queene, thus she proceeded.

Madam, this idle fellow would maintain to mee, that Signior *Sicophanto* marrying with *Madonna della Grazia*, had the victory of her virginity the very first night; and I avouched the contrary, because she had been a mother twise before, in very faire adventuring of her fortune. And hee dared to affirme beside, that young Maides are so simple, as to lose the flourishing April of their time, in meere feare of their Parents, and great prejudice of their amorous friends. Onely being abused by infinite promises, that this yeare, and that yeare, they shall have husbands, when both by the lawes of nature and reason they are not tyed to tarry so long, but rather ought to lay hold upon opportunity, when it is fairely and friendly offered, so that seldome they come maides to marriage. Beside, I have heard and know some marryed wives, that have played divers wanton pranks with their husbands, yet carryed all so demurely and smoothly, that they have gone free from publicke detection. All which this Wood-cocke will not credit, thinking mee to be so young a Novice, as if I had been borne but yesterday.

While *Lucisca* was delivering these speeches, the Ladies smiled on one another, not knowing what to say in this cause: And although the Queene (five or six severall times) commanded her to silence; yet such was the earnestnesse of her spleen, that shee gave no attention, but held on still, even untill shee had uttered all

that

that ſhe pleaſed. But after ſhe had concluded her complaint, the Queene (with a ſmiling countenance) turned towards *Dioneus*, ſaying, This matter ſeemeth moſt properly to belong to you; therefore I dare to repoſe ſuch truſt in you; that when our Novels (for this day) ſhall be ended, you will conclude the caſe with a definitive ſentence. Whereto *Dioneus* preſently thus replyed. Madam the Verdict is already given, without any further expectation: and I affirme, that *Lacaſta* hath ſpoken very ſenſibly, becauſe ſhe is a woman of good apprehenſion, and *Tindaro* is but a Puny, in practiſe and experience, to her.

When *Lacaſta* heard this, ſhe fell in a loud laughter, and turned her ſelfe to *Tindaro*, ſaid: The honour of the day is mine, and thy owne quarrell hath overthrowne thee in the field. Thou that (as yet) haſt ſcarſely learned to ſucke wouldeſt thou preſume to know ſo much as I doe? Couldſt thou imagine me, to be ſuch a wrewant in the loſſe of my time, that I come hither as an Ignorant creature? And had not the queene looking very frowningly on her ſtrictly enjoyned her to ſilence; ſhee would have continued ſtill in this triumphing humor: But fearing further chaſtiſement for diſobedience, both ſhe and *Tindaro* were commanded thence, where was no other allowance all this day, but onely ſilence and attention, to ſuch as ſhould be injoyned ſpeakers.

And then the queene, ſomewhat offended at the folly of the former controverſie, commanded Madam *Philomena*, that ſhe ſhould give beginning to the dayes Novels: which (in dutifull manner) ſhe undertooke to doe, and ſeating her ſelfe in formall faſhion, with modeſt and very gracious geſture, thus ſhe began.

A Knight requeſted Madame Oretta, to ride behinde him on horſebacke, and promiſed, to tell her an excellent Tale by the way. But the Lady perceiving, that his diſcourſe was idle, and much worſe delivered: entreated him to let her walke on foote againe.

The firſt Novell.

Reprehending the folly of ſuch men, as undertake to report diſcourſes, which are beyond their wit and capacity, and gaine nothing but blame for their labour.

GRacious Ladies, like as in our faire, cleare, and ſerene Seaſons, the ſtars are bright ornaments to the heavens, and the flowry fields (ſo long as the Spring time laſteth) weare their goodlyeſt Liveries, the

Trees likewiſe bragging in their beſt adornings: Even ſo at friendly meetings, ſhort, ſweet and ſententious words, are the beauty and ornament of any diſcourſe, ſavouring of wit, and ſound judgement, worthily deſerving to be commended. And ſo much the rather, becauſe in few and witty words, aptly ſuting with the time and the occaſion, more is delivered than was expected, or ſooner anſwered, than raſhly apprehended: which, as they become men very highly, yet doe they ſhew more ſingular in women.



True it is, what the occaſion may be, I know not, either by the badneſſe of our wits, or the eſpeciall enmitie betweene our complexions and the celeſtiall bodies: there are ſcarſely any, or very few women to be found among us, that well knowes how to deliver a word,

word, when it ſhould, and ought to be ſpoken; or, if a queſtion be moved, underſtands to ſuite it with an apt anſwer, ſuch as rightly is required; which is no meane diſgrace to us women. But in regard that Madame *Pampinea* hath already ſpoken ſufficiently of this matter, I meane not to preſſe it any further: but at this time it ſhall ſatisfie me, to let you know, how wittily a Lady made due obſervation of opportunity, in anſwering of a Knight, whoſe talke ſeemed tedious and offenſive to her.

No doubt there are ſome among you, who either do know, or (at the leaſt) have heard, that it is no long time ſince, when there dwelt a Gentlewoman in our City, of excellent grace and good diſcourſe, with all other rich endowments of Nature remaining in her, as pity it were to conceale her name: and therefore let me tell you, that ſhe was called Madame *Oretta*, the wife to Signior *Geri Spina*. She being upon ſome occaſion (as now we are) in the Countrey, and paſſing from place to place, by way of neighbourly invitations) to viſite her loving friends and acquaintance, accompanyed with many Knights and Gentlewomen, who on the day before had dined and ſupt at her houſe, as now (belike) the ſelfe ſame courteſie was intended to her: walking along with her company upon the way; and the place for her welcome being further off than ſhe expected; a Knight chanced to overtake this faire troop, who well knowing Madam *Oretta*, uſing a kind and courteous ſalutation, ſpake thus unto her.

Madam, this foot travell may be offenſive to you, and were you ſo well pleaſed as my ſelfe, I would eaſe your journey behind me on my Gelding, even ſo farre as you ſhall command me: and beſide, will ſhorten your wearineſſe with a Tale worth the hearing. Courteous Sir, (replyed the Lady) I embrace your kind offer with ſuch acceptation that I pray you to performe it; for therein you ſhall doe me an eſpeciall favour. The Knight whoſe ſword (perhaps) was as unſuitable to his ſide, as his wit out of faſhion for any ready diſcourſe, having the Lady mounted behinde him; rode on with a gentle pace, and (according to his promiſe) began to tell a Tale, which indeed (of it ſelfe) deſerved attention, becauſe it was a knowne and commendable Hiſtory but yet delivered ſo abruptly, with idle repetitions of ſome particulars, three or foure ſeverall times, miſtaking one thing for another, and wandring erroniouſly from the eſſentiall ſubject, ſeeming neere an end, and then beginning againe: that a poore Tale could not poſſibly be more mangled, or worſe tortured in telling,

ling, than this was; for the persons therein concerned, were so abusively nicke named, their actions and speeches so monstrously mistaken, that nothing could appeare to be more ugly.

Madam *Oretta*, being a Lady of unequalled ingenuity, admirable in judgement, and most delicate in her speech, was afflicted in soule, beyond all measure; overcome with many cold sweates, and passionate heartaking qualmes, to see a Foole thus in a Pinne-fold, and unable to get out, albeit the doore stood wide open to him; whereby she became so sicke, that converting her distaste to a pleasing kinde of acceptation, merrily thus she spake. Beleeve me Sir, your horse trots so hard, and travels so uneasie; that I intreate you to let me walke on foote againe.

The Knight, being (perchance) a better understander, than a Discourser; perceived by this witty taunt, that his Bowle had run a contrary Bias, and he as farre out of Tune, as he was from the Towne. So lingering the time, untill her company was neerer arrived, hee left her with them, and rode on as his wisedome could best direct him.

Ciſtio a Baker, by a witty anſwer which he gave unto Meſſer Geri Spina, cauſed him to acknowledge a very indiſcreet motion, which he had made to the ſaid Ciſtio.

The ſecond Novell.

Approving, that a requeſt ought to be civill, before it ſhould bee granted to any one whatſoever.

THe words of Madame *Oretta*, were much commended by the men and women; and the diſcourſe being ended, the Queene gave command to Madame *Pampinea*, that ſhe ſhould follow next in order, which made her to begin in this manner.

Worthy Ladies, it exceedeth the power of my capacitie, to cenſure in the caſe whereof I am to ſpeake, by ſaying, who ſinned moſt, either Nature, in ſeating a noble ſoule in a vile body, or Fortune in beſtowing on a body (beautified with a noble ſoule) a baſe or wretched condition of life. As we may obſerve by *Ciſtio*, a Citizen of our owne, and many more beſide; for, this *Ciſtio* being endued with a ſingular good ſpirit, Fortune hath made him no better than a Baker. And beleeve me Ladies, I could (in this caſe) lay as much blame on Nature, as on Fortune; if I did not know Nature to be moſt abſolutely wiſe, and that Fortune

hath

hath a thousand eyes, albeit Fooles have figured her to be blinde. But upon more mature and deliberate consideration, I finde, that they both (being truely wise and judicious) have dealt justly, in imitation of our best advised mortalls, who being uncertaine of such inconveniences, as may happen unto them, doe burie (for their own benefit) the very best and choisest things of esteeme, in the most vile and abject places of their houses, as being subject to least suspition, and where they may be sure to have them at all times, for supply of any necessity whatsoever, because so base a conveyance hath better kept them, than the very best Chamber in the house could have done. Even so these two great Commanders of the world, doe many times hide their most precious Iewels of worth, under the clouds of Arts or professions of worst estimation, to the end, that fetching them thence when need requires, their splendor may appeare to be the more glorious. Nor was any such matter noted in our homely Baker *Ciſtio*, by the best observation of *Meſſer Geri Spina*, who was spoken of in the late repeated Novell, as being the husband to Madam *Oretta*; whereby this accident came to my remembrance, and which (in a short tale) I will relate unto you.

Let me then tell you, that Pope *Bonifacio* (with whom the fore-named *Meſſer Geri Spina* was in great regard) having sent divers Gentlemen of his Court to Florence as Ambassadours about very serious and important busioſſe: they were lodged in the house of *Meſſer Geri Spina*, and hee employed (with them) in the said Popes negotiation. It chanced, that as being the most convenient way for passage, every morning they walked on foote by the Church of Saint *Maria di Vgbi*, where *Ciſtio* the Baker dwelt, and exercising the trade belonging to him. Now although Fortune had humbled him to so meane a condition, yet shee added a blessing of wealth to that contemptible qualitie, and (as smiling on him continually) no dysasters at any time befell him, but still he flourished in riches, lived like a jolly Citizen, with all things fitting for honest entertainment about him, and plenty of the best Wines (both White and Claret) as Florence, or any part thereabout yeelded.

Our frolike Baker perceiving, that *Meſſer Geri Spina* and the other Ambaſſadors, used every morning to passe by his doore, and afterward to returne backe the same way: seeing the Season to be somewhat hot and soultry, hee tooke it as an action of kindnesse and

courtesie, to make them an offer of tasting his white wine. But having respect to his owne meane degree, and the condition of *Messer Geri*, hee thought it farre unfitting for him, to be so forward in such presumption; but rather entred into consideration of some such meanes whereby *Messer Geri* might be the inviter of himselfe to taste his wine. And having put on him a trusse or thin doublet of very white and fine Linnen cloth, as also breeches, and an apron of the same, and a white cap upon his head, so that he seemed rather to be a Miller than a Baker: at such times as *Messer Geri* and the Ambassadors should dayly passe by, he set before his doore a new Bucket of faire water, and another small vessell of Bologna earth (as new and sightly as the other) full of his best and choicest white wine, with two small Glasses, looking like silver, they were so cleere. Down he sate, with all this provision before him, and emptying his stomach twice or thrice, of some clotted flegmes which seemed to offend it: even as the Gentlemen were passing by, he dranke one or two rouses of his Wine so heartily, and with such a pleasing appetite, as might have moved a longing (almost) in a dead man.

Messer Geri well noting his behaviour, and observing the very same course in him two mornings together; on the third day (as he was drinking) he said unto him, Well done *Cistio*, what, is it good, or no? *Cistio* starting up, forthwith replyed: Yes Sir, the wine is good indeed, but how can I make you to beleeve me, except you taste of it? *Messer Geri*, either in regard of the times quality, or by reason of his paines taking, perhaps more than ordinary, or else because hee saw *Cistio* had drunke so sprightly, was very desirous to taste of the wine, and turning unto the Ambassadors, in merriment he said. My Lords, me thinks it were not much amisse, if we tooke a taste of this honest mans wine, perhaps it is so good, that wee shall not need to repent our labour.

Hereupon he went with them to *Cistio*, who had caused a handsome seat to be fetched forth of his house whereupon he requested them to sit downe, and having commanded his men to wash cleane the Glasses he said. Fellowes, now get you gone, and leave me to the performance of this service; for I am no worse a skinker, than a Baker, and tarry you never so long, you shall not drinke a drop. Having thus spoken, himselfe washed foure or five small Glasses, faire and new, and causing a Viall of his best wine to be brought him: he,

diligent-

diligently filled it out to *Messer Geri* and the Ambassadours, to whom it seemed the very best Wine that they had drunke of in a long while before. And having given *Cistio* most hearty thanks for his kindnesse, and the Wine his due commendation: many dayes afterwards so long as they continued there they found the like courteous entertainment, and with the good liking of honest *Cistio*.

But when the affaires were fully concluded, for which they were sent to Florence, and their parting preparation in due readinesse: *Messer Geri* made a very sumptuous Feast for them, inviting thereto the most part of the honourable Citizens, and *Cistio* to be one amongst them; who (by no meanes) would be seene in an assembly of such State and pompe, albeit he was thereto (by the said *Messer Geri*) most earnestly entreated.

In regard of which deniall, *Messer Geri* commanded one of his servants to take a small Bottle, and request *Cistio* to fill it with his good Wine; & to serve it in such sparing manner to the Table, that each Gentleman might be allowed halfe a Glasse full at their downe sitting. The Serving man, who had heard great report of the Wine, and was halfe offended, because he could never taste thereof: tooke a great flaggon Bottle, containing foure or five Gallons at the least, and comming therewith unto *Cistio*, said unto him. *Cistio*, because my Master cannot have your company among his friends, he prayes you to fill this Bottle of your best wine. *Cistio* looking upon the huge Flaggon, replyed thus. Honest Fellow, *Messer Geri* never sent thee with such a message to me: which although the Servingman very stoutly maintained, yet getting no other answer, he returned backe therewith to his Master.

Messer Geri returned the Servant backe againe unto *Cistio*, saying: Go and assure *Cistio*, that I sent thee to him, & if he make thee any more such answers, then demand of him, to what place else I should send thee. Being come againe to *Cistio*, hee avouched that his Master had sent him, but *Cistio* affirming, that he did not: the Servant asked to what place else hee should send him? Marrie (quoth *Cistio*) unto the River of *Arno*, which runneth by *Florence*, there thou mayest be sure to fill thy Flaggon. When the Servant had reported this answere to *Messer Geri*, the eyes of his understanding began to open, and calling to see what bottle he had carryed with him: no sooner looked he on the huge Flagon, but severely reproving the sawcinesse of his Servant, he said. Now trust me, *Cistio* told

thee

thee nothing but truth, for neither did I send thee with any such dishoneſt meſſage, nor had the reaſon to yeeld or grant it.

Then he ſent him with a bottle of more reaſonable competency, which as ſoone as *Ciſtio* ſaw: Yea marry my friend, quoth he, now I am ſure that thy Maſter ſent thee to me, hee ſhall have his deſire with all my heart. So commanding the bottle to be filled, hee ſent it away by the ſervant, and preſently followed after him. When he came to *Meſſer Geri*, he ſpake unto him after this manner. Sir I would not have you to imagine, that the huge flaggon (which firſt came) did any jot diſmay me; but rather I conceived, thad the ſmall Viall whereof you taſted every morning, yet filled many mannerly Glaſſes together, was fallen quite out of your remembrance; in plainer tearmes, it being no Wine for Groomes or Peazants, as your ſelfe affirmed yeſterday. And becauſe I meane to be a Skinker no longer, by keeping Wine to pleaſe any other palat but mine owne: I have ſent you halfe my ſtore, and hereafter thinke of me as you ſhall pleaſe. *Meſſer Geri* took both his gift and ſpeeches in moſt thankefull manner, accepting him allwayes after, as his intimate Friend, becauſe he had ſo graced him before the Ambaſſadors.

Madame Nonna de Pulci, by a ſudden anſwer, did put to ſilence a Biſhop of Florence, and the Lord Marſhall: having moved a queſtion to the ſaid Lady, which ſeemed to come ſhort of honeſty.

The third Novell.

Wherein is declared, that mockers doe ſometimes meet with their matches in mockery, and to their owne ſhame.

WHen Madam *Pampinea* had ended her Diſcourſe, and (by the whole company) the anſwer and bountie of *Ciſtio*, had paſt with deſeryed commendation: it pleaſed the Queene, that Madame *Lauretta* ſhould next ſucceed; whereupon very cheerefully thus ſhee beganne.

Faire Aſſembly, Madame *Pampinea* (not long time ſince) gave beginning, and Madam *Philomena* hath alſo ſeconded the ſame argument, concerning the ſlender vertue remaining in our Sexe, and likewiſe the beauty of witty words, delivered on apt occaſion, and in convenient meetings. Now, becauſe it is needleſſe to proceed any further, than what hath beene already ſpoken; let me onely tell you (over and beſide) and commit

commit it to memory, that the nature of meetings and speeches are such, as they ought to nippe or touch the Hearer, like unto the Sheepes nibling on the tender grasse, and not as the sullen Dogge biteth. For, if their biting be answerable to the Dogges, they deserve not to be termed witty jests or quips, but foule and offensive language: as plainely appeareth by the words of *Oretta*, and the merry, yet sensible answer of *Cisthio*.

True it is, that if it be spoken in way of answer, and the answer biteth doggedly, because himselfe was bitten in the same manner before: hee is the lesse to bee blamed, because he maketh paiment but with coine of the same stampe. In which respect, an especiall care is to be had, how, when, with whom, and where we jest or gibe, whereof very many prove too unmindfull, as appeared (not long since) by a Prelate of ours, who met with a biting, no lesse sharpe and bitter, than had first come from himselfe before, as very briefly I intend to tell you how.

Messer Antonio d'Orso, being Bishop of Florence, a vertuous, wise, and reverend Prelate; it fortuned that a Gentleman of Catalogna, named *Messer Diego de la Ratta*, and Lord Marshall to King *Robert* of Naples, came thither to visite him. Hee beeing a man of very comely personage, and great observer of the choicest beauties in Court: among all the other Florentine Dames, one proved to be most pleasing in his eye, who was a very faire woman indeede, and Neece to the Brother of the said *Messer Antonio*.

The Husband of this Gentlewoman (albeit descended of a worthy Family), was nevertheless, immeasurably covetous. Which the Lord Marshall understanding, made such a mad composition with him, as to give him five hundred Duckets of Gold, on condition, that he would let him lie one night with his wife, not thinking him so base minded as to give consent. Which in a greedy avaritious humour he did, and the bargaine being absolutely agreed on, the Lord Marshall prepared to fit him with a payment, such as it should be. He caused so many peeces of silver to be cunningly guilded, as then went for currant money in Florence, and called *Popolines*; and after he had lien with the Lady (contrary to her will and knowledge, her husband had so closely carried the businesse) the money was duely paid to the cornuted Coxocombe. Afterwards this impudent shame chanced to be generally known, nothing remaining to the wilfull Wittoll, but losse of his expected gaine, and scorne in every place where he went.

The

The Bishop likewise (being a discreet and sober man) would seem to take no knowledge thereof, but bare out all scoffes and mocks with a well setled countenance.

Within a short while after, the Bishop and the Lord Marshall (alwayes conversing together) it came to passe, that upon Saint *Iohns* day, they riding thoron the Citie, side by side, and viewing the brave beauties, which of them might best deserve to win the prize: the Bishop espyed a young marryed Lady (which our late grievous pestilence bereaved us of) shee beeing named Madam *Nonna de Pulci*, and Cousine to *Messer Alesso Rinucci*, a Gentleman well knowne unto us all. A very goodly beautifull young woman she was, of delicate language and singular spirit, dwelling close by S. *Peters* gate. This Lady did the Bishop shew to the Marshall, and when they were come to her, laying his hand upon her shoulder, hee said, Madam *Nonna*, What thinke you of this Gallant? dare you adventure another wager with him?

Such was the apprehension of this witty Lady, that these words seemed to taxe her honour, or else to contaminate the hearers understanding, whereof there were great plenty about her, whose judgement might be as vile, as the speeches were scandalous. Wherefore never seeking for any further purgation of her cleare conscience, but onely to retort taunt for taunt, presently thus shee replyed. My Lord, if I should make such a vile adventure, I would looke to be paid with better money.

These words being heard both by the Bishop and Marshall, they felt themselves touched to the quicke, the one, as the Factor or Broker, for so dishoneft a businesse, to the Brother of the Bishop; and the other, as (receiving in his owne person) the shame belonging to his Brother. So, not so much as looking each on other, or speaking one word together all the rest of that day they rode away with blushing cheekes. Whereby we may collect, that the young Lady, being so injuriously provoked, did no more than well became her, to bite their basenesse neerely, that so abused her openly.

Chichibio, the Cooke to Messer Currado Gianfiliazzi, by a sudden pleasant answer which he made to his Master; converted his anger into laughter, and thereby escaped the punishment, that Messer meant to impose upon him.

The fourth Novell.

Whereby plainely appeareth, that a sudden witty and merry answer, doth oftentimes appease the furious choler of an angry man.

Madam

Madam *Lauretta* sitting silent, and the answer of Lady *Nonna* having past with generall applause: the Queen commanded Madam *Neiphila* to follow next in order; who instantly thus began. Although a ready wit (faire Ladies) doth many times afford worthy and commendable speeches, according to the accidents happening to the speaker: yet notwithstanding, Fortune (being a ready helper divers wayes to the timorous) doth often tippe the tongue with such a present reply, as the party to speake, had not so much leasure as to thinke on, nor yet to invent; as I purpose to let you perceive, by a pretty short Noveill.

Messer Currado Gianfigliazzi (as most of you have both seene and knowne) living alwayes in our City in the estate of a noble Citizen, being a man bountifull, magnificent, and within the degree of Knighthoode: continually kept both Hawkes and Hounds, taking no meane delight in such pleasures as they yeelded, neglecting (for them) farre more serious imployments, wherewith our present subject presumeth not to meddle. Upon a day, having killed with his Faulcon a Crane, neere to a Village called *Peretola*, and finding her to be young and fat, he sent it to his Cooke a *Vrbanian* borne, named *Chichibio*, with command to have it prepared for his Supper. *Chichibio*, who resembled no other than (as he was indeede) a plain, simple, honest, merry fellow, having dreft the Crane as it ought to be, put it on the spit, and laid it to the fire.

When it was well neere roasted, and gave forth a verie delicate pleasing savour, it fortuned that a young woman dwelling not farre off, named *Brunetta*, and of whom *Chichibio* was somewhat enamoured, entred into the Kitchin, and seeling the excellent smell of the Crane, to please her beyond all savours, that ever shee had felt before, she entreated *Chichibio* very earnestly that he would bestow a legge thereof upon her. Whereto *Chichibio* (like a pleasant companion, and evermore delighting in singing) sung her this answer.

My Brunetta, faire and feata,
Why should you say so?
The meat of my Master,
Allowes you for no Taster,
Go from the Kitchin, go.

Many other speeches past betweene them in a short while, but in the end *Chichibio*, because hee would not have his Mistresse *Brunetta* angry with him; cut off one of the Cranes legges from the spit, and gave it

to her to eate. Afterward, when the Fowle was serued up to the Table before *Messer Currado*, who had inuited certain strangers his friends to Sup with him, wondering not a little, hee called for *Chichibio* his Cooke; demanding what was become of the Crane other legge? Whereto the *Venetian* (being a lyer by nature) sodainely answered: Sir, Cranes hath no more but one legge each Bird. *Messer Currado*, growing very angry replyed, Wilt thou tell me, that a Crane hath no more but one leg? Did I never see a Crane before this? *Chichibio* persisting resolutely in his deniall, said Beleeve mee Sir, I have told you nothing but the truth, and when you please, I will make good my words, by such fowles as are living.

Messer Currado, in kind love to the strangers that he had inuited to supper, gave over any further consultation; onely he said, Seeing thou assurest me, to let me see thy affirmation for truth, by other of the same Fowles living (a thing which as yet I never saw, or heard of) I am content to make proof thereof to morrow morning; till then I shal rest satisfied: but, upon my word, if I finde it otherwise, expect such a sound paiment, as thy knavery justly deserveth, to make thee remember it all thy life time. The contention ceasing for the night season, *Messer Currado*, who, although he had slept well, remained still discontented in his mind, arose in the morning by breake of day, and puffing, and blowing angerly, called for his horses, commanding *Chichibio* to mount on one of them; so riding on towards the River, where early (every morning) he had seene plenty of Cranes, hee said to his man; We shall see anon Sirra, whether thou or I lied yesternight.

Chichibio perceiving, that his Masters anger was not as yet asswaged, and now it stood him upon, to make good his lye; not knowing how he should doe it, rode after his Master, fearfully trembling all the way. Gladly he would have made an escape, but he could not by any possible meanes, and on every side hee looked about him, now before and after behinde, to espie any Cranes standing on both their legges, which would have beene an omnious sight to him. But being come neere to the River, he chanced to see (before any of the rest) upon the bancke thereof, about a dozen Cranes in number, each standing upon one legge, as they use to doe when they are sleeping. Whereupon, shewing them quickly to *Messer Currado*, he said Now Sir your selfe may see, whether I told you true yesternight, or no: I am sure a Crane hath but one thigh, and one

legge, as all here present are apparent witnesses, and I have beene as good as my promise.

Messer Cursado looking on the Cranes, and well understanding the knavery of his man, replyed: Stay but a little while sirra, and I will shew thee, that a Crane hath two thighes and two legges. Then riding somewhat neerer to them, hee cryed out aloud, Shough, shough; which caused them to set down their other legges and all fled away, after they had made a few paces against the winde for their mounting. So going unto *Chichibio*, he said: How now you lying Knave, hath a Crane two legges or no? *Chichibio* being wellnere at his wits end, not knowing now what answer he should make; but even as it came suddenly in his minde said: Sir, I perceive you are in the right, and if you would have done as much yesternight, and had Cryed Shough, as here you did: questionlesse, the Crane would then have set downe the other legge, as these here did: but if (as they) she had fled away too, by that meanes you might have lost your Supper.

This sudden and unexpected sudden answer, comming from such a Logger-headed Loute, and so seasonably for his owne safety: was so pleasing to *Messer Cursado*, that he fell into a hearty laughter, and forgetting all anger, said, *Chichibio*, thou hast quit thy selfe well, and to my contentment; albeit I advise thee, to teach me no more such trickes hereafter. Thus *Chichibio*, by his sudden and merry answer, escaped a sound beating, which (otherwise) his Master had inflicted upon him.

Messer Forese da Rabatta, and Maister Giotto, a Painter by his Profession, comming together from Mugello, frutefully reprehended one another for their deformity of body.

The fifth Novell.

Whereby may be observed, that such as will speake contemptibly of others, ought (first of all) to looke respectively on their owne imperfection.

SO soone as Madame *Neiphila* sate silent (the Ladies having greatly commended the pleasant answer of *Chichibio*) *Pamphilus*, by command from the Queene, spake in this manner. Worthy Ladies, it commeth to passe oftentimes, that like as Fortune is observed divers wayes, to hide under vile and contemptible Arts, the great and unvaluable treasures of vertue (as not long since, was well discourſed unto us by madame *Pampinea*)

Pisa:) so in like manner hath appeared; that Nature hath infused very singular spirits into most millaps bodies of men. As hath been noted in two of our owne Citizens. The one of them was named *Messer Forese de Rabatta*, a man of little and low person, but yet deformed in body, with a flat nose, like a Terrier or Beagle, very ugly to behold. But notwithstanding all his deformity, he was so singularly experienced in the Lawes, that no man was his equall, but reputed him a Treasury of civill knowledge. The other man, being named *Giotto*, had a spirit of such great excellency, as there was nothing in Nature, the worke-mistresse of all, by continuall motion of the heavens; but he by his pen could perfectly portrait; shaping them all so truely alike, that they were taken for the reall matters indeede; so whether they were present or no, there was hardly any possibility of their distinguishing. So that many times it happened, that by the variable devices hee made the visible sense of men became deceived, in crediting those things to be naturall, which were but painted. By which meanes, he reduced that singular Art to light, which long time before had lien buried, under the grosse error of some; who, in the Mysterie of Painting, delighted more to content the ignorant, than to please the wise, hee justly deserving to bee tearmed one of the Florentines most glorious lights. And so much the rather, because he performed all his actions in true humility: for while he lived, and was a Master in his Art above all other painters: yet he refused any such title, which shined the more majesticall in him, as appeared by such, who knew much lesse than hee: yet his knowledge was much desired of them.

Now, notwithstanding, all this excellency in him: yet was not a jot the handsomer a man, than was our fore-named Lawyer *Messer Forese*, therefore my Novell concerneth them both. Understand (faire assembly) the possessions of *Messer Forese* & *Giotto*, lay in *Mugello*; wherefore, when Holy-dayes were celebrated by Order of Court, and in the Summer time, upon the admittance of so apt a vacation; *Forese* rode thither upon a very unsightly Iade. The like did *Giotto* the Painter, as ill fitted every way as the other; & having dispatched their businesse there, they both returned backe towards Florence, neither of them could boast which was the best mounted. Riding on a softly pace, because their horses could goe no faster: and they being well entred into yeares; it fortuned that a sodaine showre of raine ouer-tooke them; for avoiding whereof they made all possible

possible haste to a poore mans Cottage, well known to them both. Having continued there an indifferent while, and the raine unlikely to cease: to prevent all further protraction of time, and to arrive at Florence in due season; they borrowed two old cloakes of the poore man, of over-worne and ragged Countrey gray, as also two hoods of the like complexion, which did more mishape them. than their owne ugly deformity, and made them flouted & scorned of all that saw them.

After they had ridden some distance of ground, much moyled & bemired with their shuffling Iades, flinging the dirt every where about them, that well they might be tearmed two filthy companions: the raine gave over, and the evening somewhat cleare, they began to confer familiarly together. *Forese* riding a lofty French trot, every step being ready to hoise him out of his saddle, hearing *Giottos* answers to every idle question he made began to surveigh him, even from the foot to the head. And perceiving him to be greatly deformed, in his opinion: without any consideration of his owne mishaping as bad, or rather more unsightly than hee; in a scoffing laughing humor, he said. *Giotto*, dost thou imagine that a stranger, who had never seene thee before, and should now happen into our company, would beleeve thee to bee the best Painter in the world, as indeed thou art? Presently *Giotto* (without any further meditation) returned him this answer. Signior *Forese*, I thinke he might then beleeve it, when (beholding you) hee could imagine that you had learned your A. B. C. Which when *Forese* heard, he knew his own error, and saw his payment returned in such Coine, as he sold his Wares for.

A young ingenious Scholar, being unkindly reviled and smitten by his ignorant Father, and through the procurement of an unlearned Vicar; afterward attained to be doubly revenged on him.

The sixth Novell.

Serving as an advertisement to unlearned Parents, not to be over-rash, in censuring on Scholars professions, through any bad or unbeseeming persuasions.

The Ladies smiled very heartily, at the ready answer of *Giotto*; untill the Queene charged Madam *Flammetta*, that she should next succeede in order: whereupon, thus she began. The very greatest infelicity that can happen to a man, and most insupportable of all other, is Ignorance; a word (I say) which hath

been

been so generall, as under it is comprehended all perfections whatsoever. Yet notwithstanding, whatever can cull (graine by graine) the defects incident humane race; will and must confesse, that we are all borne to knowledge: but onely such whom the heavens illuminating by their bright radiance (which consisteth the course and well-spring of all Science) little and little, doe bestow the influence of their ty, on such and so many as they please who are presse themselves the more thankefull for such a sing. And a though this grace doth lessen the tune of many, which were over-mighty to be in all; some there are, who by saucie presuming on themselves, doe bewray their ignorance by their owne ches; setting such behaviour on each matter, and thing every thing with such gravity, even as if would make comparison: or (to speake more properly) durst encounter in the lists with great *Salomon* or *Socrates*. But let us leave them, and come to the matter our purposed Novell.

In a certain Village of Picardie, there lived a Priest or Vicar, who being meerely an ignorant blocke, yet such a peremptory presuming spirit; as, though was sufficiently discerned, yet he beguiled many by, untill at last he deceived himselfe, and with thatitisements to his folly.

A plaine Husbandman dwelling in the same Village possessed of much Land, and Livings, but very and dull in understanding; by the entreaty of some his friends, and well-willers, some-thing more intelligible than himselfe: became incited, or rather provoked, to send a Sonne of his to the Vniversity of Paris, to study there as was fitting for a Scholar. To end (quoth they) that having but this Sonne onely, and Fortunes blessings abounding in store for him: might likewise have the riches of the minde, which are those true treasures indeed, that *Aristippus* gives advise to be furnished withall.

His friends perswasions having prevailed, and continued at Paris for the space of three yeares: with the documents he had attained to, before his going thither, and by meanes of a happy memory in the time of his being there, wherewith no young man more singularly endued (in so short a while) hee attained and performed the greater part of his Studies.

Now, as oftentimes it commeth to passe, the love of a Father (surmounting all other affections in man) made the old Farmer desirous to see his Sonne: which caused

sed his sending for him with all convenient speede, d obedience urged his as forward willingneſſe there- The good old man, not a little joyfull to ſee him in good condition and health, and increaſed ſo much ature ſince his parting thence: familiarly told him, e earneſtly deſired to know, if his minde and y had attained to a competent and equall growth, ich in three or four dayes he would put in practice. No other help had he ſilly ſimple man, but Maſter ar muſt be the queſtioner of his Sonne: wherein the eſt was very unwilling to meddle, for feare of diſ- ering his owne ignorance which paſſed under better ion than hee deſerved. But the Farmer being im- tunate, and the Vicar many wayes beholding to him, d not returne deniall, but undertooke it very formal- as if he had beene an able man indeed. But ſee how Pooles are borne to be fortunate, and re they leaſt hope there they finde the beſt ſucceſſe; ſimplicity of the Father, muſt be the meanes for a- ing his Schollarly Son, and a skreene to ſtand be- eene the Prieſt and his ignorance. Earneſt is the old to know, what, and how far his Sonne hath profited Schoole, and by what note he might beſt take un- ſtanding of his anſwers, which jumping fit with Vicars vanity, had a warrantable cloake to cover his very; he appoints him but one word onely, namely ſcio, wherewith if hee anſwered to any of his de- nds, it was an evident token, that hee underſtood hing. As thus they were walking and conferring in Church, the Farmer very carefull to remember the d *Neſcio*: it came to paſſe upon a ſudden, that the gman entred in to them, to the great contentment his Father, who prayed Maſter Vicar, to make ap- bation of his Sonne, whether hee were learned, or and how he had benefited at the Vniverſity? After the time of the dayes ſalutations had paſt be- eene them, the Vicar being ſubtile and crafty as they ked along by one of the Tombes in the Church; ting with his finger to the Tombe, the Prieſt utte- theſe words to the Scholar.

Quis hic eſt Sepultus?

The young Scholar (by reaſon it was erected ſince departure, and finding no inſcription whereby to me him) anſwered, as well as he might, *Neſcio*. diately the Father, keeping the word perfectly in memory, grew very angerly paſſionate; and deſiring eare no more demands: gave him three or foure on the eares; with many harſh and injurious

ſpeeches,

ſpeeches, tearming him an aſſe and villaine, and ſ
he had not learned any thing. His Sonne was p
and returned no anſwer, but plainly perceived, that
was a trick intended againſt him, by the malicious Pri
on whom (in time) he might be revenged.

Within a ſhort while after, the Suffragan of thoſe p
(under whom the Prieſt was but a Depury, holding
Benefice of him, with no great charge to his co
ence) being abroad in his viſitation, ſent word to
Vicar, that he intended to preach there on the n
Sunday, and he to prepare in a readineſſe, *Bonum
Commodum*, becauſe he would have nothing elſe to
dinner. Hereat Maſter vicar was greatly amazed, b
cauſe he had never heard ſuch words before, neith
could he find them in all his *Breviaris*. Hereupon h
went to the young Scholar, whom he had ſo lately
fore abuſed, and crying him mercy, with many in
dent and ſhallow excuſes, deſired him to reveal
meaning of thoſe words, *Bonum & Commodum*.

The Scholar (with a ſober counteuance) made
ſwer; That he had bin over-much abuſed, which (
vertheleſſe) he tooke not ſo impatiently, but he had
ready both forgot and forgiven it, with promiſe
comfort in this his extraordinary diſtraction,
griefe of minde. When he had peruſed the Suffra
Letter, well obſerving the bluſhleſſe ignorance of
Prieſt, he ſeemed (by outward appearance) to tak
ſtrangely, and cryed out aloud, ſaying; In the nam
Virtue, what may be this mans meaning? How (q
the Prieſt) What manner of demand doe you mak
Alas, replyed the Schollar, you have but one p
Aſſe, which I know you doe love dearely, and yet
muſt ſtew his genitories very daintily, for your Pa
will have no other meate to his dinner. The gen
ries of my Aſſe, anſwered the Prieſt? Paſſion of m
who then ſhall carry my corne to the Mill? There i
remedy, ſaid the Scholar, for hee hath ſo ſet it dow
for an abſolute reſolution.

After the Prieſt had conſidered thereon a while
himſelfe, remembring the yearely revenues, wh
clearely he put up into his purſe, to be ten times
greater worth than his Aſſe: hee concluded to ha
him gelded, what danger ſoever ſhould enſue there
preparing them in readineſſe againſt his comming,
ſoone as the Suffragan was there arrived, heavily
complained to him for his Aſſe: which kind of la
guage he not underſtanding, knew not what he ma
nor how he ſhould anſwer. But being (by the Scho
acquai

acquainted with the whole Hiſtooy, he laughed heartily at the Prieſts ignorant folly, wiſhing that all ſuch bold Bayards (from time to time) might be ſo ſerved. Likewiſe, that all ignorant Prieſts, Vicars, and other Oraſhoppers of Townes, or Villages, who ſometime have only ſcene *Partes orationis quot ſunt*, not to ſtand over-much on their owne ſufficiencie, grounded ſolely upon their Grammar; but to beware whom they jeſt withall, without medling with Scholars, who take no injuries as dullards doe, leſt they prove infamous by their diſputations.

Madam Philippa, being accuſed by her husband Rinaldo de Pugliese, because he took her in adultery, with a young Gentleman named Lazarino de Guazzaglioteri: caused her to be cited before the Iudge. From whom she delivered her selfe, by a sudden witty, and pleasant answer, and moderated a severe strict Statute formerly made against women.

The seventh Novell.

Women is declared, of what worth it is to confesse a truth, with a facetious and witty excuse.

After that Madam *Fiammetta* had given over ſpeaking, and all the Auditory had ſufficiently applauded the Scholars honeſt revenge, the Queene enjoyned *Philoſtratus* to proceede on next with his Novell, which cauſed him to begin thus. Beleeve mee Ladies, it is an excellent and commendable thing, to ſpeake well, and to all purpoſes: but I hold it a matter of much greater worth, to know how to doe it, and when neceſſity doth moſt require it. Which a Gentlewoman (of whom I am now to ſpeake) was ſo well inſtructed in, as not onely it yeelded the Hearers mirthfull contentment, but likewiſe delivered her from the danger of death, as (in few words) you ſhall heare related.

In the City of *Pirato*, there was an Edict or Statute, no leſſe blame-worthy (to ſpeake uprightly) than moſt ſevere and cruell, which (without making any diſtinction) gave ſtrict command; that every woman ſhould be burned with fire, whoſe husband found her in the act of Adultery, with any ſecret or familiar friend, as one deſerving to be thus abandoned, like ſuch as proſtituted their bodies to publike ſale or hire. During the ſharpe Edict, it fortuned that a Gentlewoman, who was named *Philippa*, was found in her Chamber one night, in the Armes of a young Gentleman of the ſame

City

City, named *Lazzarino de Guazzalistori*, and by her owne husband, called *Rinaldo de Puglisse*, shee loving the young Gallant, as her owne life, because hee was most compleate in all perfections, and every way as dearely addicted to her.

This sight was so irkesome to *Rinaldo*, that, being overcome with extreame rage, he could hardly contein from running at him, with a violent intent to kill them both: but feare of his owne life caused his forbearance, meaning to be revenged by some better way. Such was the heate of his spleene and fury, as setting aside all respect of his owne shame, he would needs prosecute the rigour of the deadly Edict, which he held lawfull for him to doe, although it extended to the death of his wife. Hereupon, having witnesses sufficient, to approve the guiltinesse of her offence: a day being appointed (without desiring any other counsell) hee went in person to accuse her, & required justice against her.

The Gentlewoman, who was of a high and undantable spirit, as all such are, who have fixed their affection resolutely, and love upon a grounded deliberation: concluded, quite against the counsell and opinion of her Parents, Kindred, and Friends, to appeare in the Court, as desiring rather to die, by confessing the truth with a manly courage, than by denying it, and her love unto so worthy a person as he was, in whose armes she chanced to be taken; to live basely in exile with shame, as an eternall scandall to her race. So, before the Potestate, she made her appearance, worthily accompanyed both with men and women, all advising her to deny the act: but she not minding them or their perswasions, looking on the Judge with a constant countenance, and a voyce of setled resolve, craved to know of him, what he demanded of her?

The Potestate well noting her brave carriage, her singular beauty and praise-worthy parts, her words apparantly witnessing the height of her minde: began to take compassion on her, and doubted, lest shee would confesse some such matter, as should enforce him to pronounce the sentence of death against her. But she boldly scorning all delayes, or any further protraction of time; demanded againe, what was her accusation? Madam, answered the Potestate, I am sorry to tell you what needs I must, your husband (whom you see present here) is the complainant against you, avouching that he tooke you in the act of Adultery with another man: and therefore he requireth, that according to the rigour of our Statute here in force with us, I should pro-

pronounce sentence against you, and (consequently) the infliction of death. Which I cannot doe, if you confesse not the fact, and therefore be well advised, how you answer me; and tell me the truth, if it be as your husband accuseth you, or no.

The Lady, without any dismay or dread at all, pleasantly thus replyed. My Lord, true it is, that *Rinaldo* is my husband, and that hee found me, on the night named, between the arms of *Lazarino*, where many times heretofore he hath embraced me, according to the mutuall love re-plighted together, which I deny not, nor ever will. But you know well, and I am certain of it, that the Lawes enacted in any Countrey, ought to be common, and made with consent of them whom they doe concerne; which in this Edict of yours is quite contrary. For it is rigorous against none, but poore women only, who are able to yeeld much better satisfaction generally, than remaineth in the power of men to doe. And moreover, when this Law was made, there was not any woman that gave consent to it, neither were they called to like or allow thereof: in which respect it may be tearmed, an unjust Law. And if you will, in prejudice of my body, & your own soule, be the executioner of so unlawfull an Edict, it lies in your power so to doe.

But before you proceede to pronounce any sentence, may it please you to favour me with one small request, namely, that you would demand of my husband, if at all times, and whensoever he took delight in my company, I ever made any curiosity, or came to him unwillingly. Whereto *Rinaldo*, without tarrying for the Potestate to move the question, sodainly answered; that (undoubtedly) his wife at all times, and oftner than he could request it, was never sparing of her kindnesse or put him off with any denyall. Then the Lady, continuing on her former speeches, thus replyed. Let mee then demand of you, my Lord, being our Potestate and Judge, if it be so, by my Husbands owne free confession, that he hath alwayes had his pleasure of mee, without the least refusall in me, or contradiction; what should I doe with the over-plus remaining in my owne power, and whereof he had no need? would you have me cast it away to Dogges? was it not more fitting for me, to pleasure therewith a worthy Gentleman, who was even at deaths doore for my love, than (my husband surfeiting, and having no neede of me) to let him lie languishing and die?

Never was heard such an examination before, and to come from a woman of such worth, the most part of

the honourable Piratoſians (both Lords and Ladies) being there preſent, who hearing her urge ſuch a neceſſary queſtion, cryed out all aloud together with one voyce (after they had laughed their fill) that the Lady had ſaid well, and no more than ſhe might. So that before they departed thence, by comfortable advice proceeding from the Poteſtate, the Edict (being reputed over-cruell) was modified, and interpreted to concerne them onely, who offered injurie to their husbands for money. By which meanes, *Rinaldo* ſtanding as one confounded, for ſuch a fooliſh and unadviſed enterprize, departed from the Auditory: and the Lady, not a little joyfull to be thus freed and delivered from the fire, returned home with victory to her own houſe.

Freſco da Celatico, counſelled and adviſed his Neece Ceſca; That if ſuch as deſerved to be looked on, were offenſive to her eyes, as ſhe had often told him; ſhee ſhould forbeare to looke on any.

The eighth Novell.

In juſt ſcorne of ſuch unſightly and unpleaſing ſutly Sluts; who imagin none to be faire or well-favoured, but themſelves.

ALL the while *Philoſtratus* was recounting his Novell; it ſeemed, that the Ladies (who heard it) found themſelves much moved thereat, as by their warme bloud mounting up into their cheeks, it plainly appeared. But in the end, looking on each other with ſtrange behaviour, they could not forbeare ſmiling: which the Queene interrupting by a command of attention, turning to Madam *Æmilia*, willed her to follow next. When ſhe puffing and blowing, as if ſhee had been newly awaked from ſleepe, began in this manner.

Faire Beauties; My thoughts having wandred a great diſtance hence, and further than I can eaſily collect them together again: in obedience yet to our Queene, I ſhall report a much ſhorter Novell, than otherwiſe (perhaps) I ſhould have done, if my mind had been a little neerer home. I ſhall tell you the groſſe fault of a fooliſh Damoſell, well corrected by a witty reprehenſion of her Vnkle; if ſhe had been endued but with ſo much ſenſe, as to have underſtood it.

An honeſt man named *Freſco da Celatico*, had a good fulſome wench to his Neece, who for her folly and ſqueamiſhneſſe, was generally called *Ceſca*, or nice

Franſca.

Francesca. And although she had stature sufficient, yet none of the handsomest, and a good hard favoured countenance, nothing neere such Angelicall beauties as wee have seen; yet she was endued with such height of mind, and so proud an opinion of her selfe, that it appeared as a custome bred in her, or rather a gift bestowed on her by Nature (though none of the best) to blame and despise both men and women, yea, whosoever she lookt on; without any consideration of her selfe, she being as unsightly, ill shaped, and ugly faced, as a worse was very hardly to be found.

Nothing could be done at any time, to yeeld her liking or content: moreover, shee was so waspish, nice, and squeamish, that when she came into the royall Court of France, it was hateful and contemptible to her. Whensoever she went through the streets, every thing stunke and was noysome to her; so that she never did any thing but stop her nose; as if all men or women she met withall; and whatsoever else she lookt on, were stinking and offensive. But let us leave all further relation of her ill condition; being every way (indeed) so bad, and hardly becoming any sensible body, that we cannot condemne them so much as we should.

It chanced upon a day, that she coming home to the house where her Vnkle dwelt, declared her wonted scurvy and scornefull behaviour; swelling, puffing, and pouting extreamely, in which humor she sat down by her Vnkle, who desiring to know who did displease her, said. Why how now *Francesca*? what may the meaning of this be? This being a solemne Festivall day, what is the reason of your so soone returning home? She coyly biting the lip, and bridling her head, as if she had bin some mans Gelding; sprucely thus replyed.

Indeed you say true Vnkle, I am come very early, because since the day of my birth, I never saw a City so pestered with unhandsome people, both men and women, and worse this high Holiday, than ever I did observe before. I walked through some store of streets, and I could not see one proper man: and for the Women, they are the most mishapen creatures, that, if God had made me such an one, I should be sorry that ever I was borne. And being no longer able to endure such unpleasing sights, you will not think (Vnkle) in what an anger I am come home. *Frasco* to whom these stinking qualities of his Neece seemed so unsufferable, that hee could not (with patience) endure them any longer, thus short and quickly answered. *Francesca*, if all people of our City (both men and women) be so odious in

thy eyes, and offenſive to thy noſe, as thou haſt often reported to me: be adviſed then by my counſell. Stay ſtill at home, and looke upon none but thy ſelfe onely, and then thou ſhalt be ſure that they cannot diſpleaſe thee. But ſhe, being as empty of wit as a pith leſſe cane, and yet thought her judgement to exceede *Salomons*, could not underſtand the leaſt part of her Vnckles meaning, but ſtood as ſenſeleſſe as a ſheepe. Only ſhe replied, that ſhe would reſort to ſome other part of the countrey, which if ſhe found as weakly furniſhed of handſome people, as here ſhe did, ſhe would conceive better of her ſelfe, than ever ſhe had done before.

Signior Guido Cavalcante, with a ſodaine and witty anſwer, reprehended the raſh folly of certaine Florentine Gentlemen, that thought to ſcorne and flout him.

The ninth Novell.

Notably diſcovering the great difference that is betwixt learning and ignorance, upon judicious apprehenſion.

WHen the Queene perceived, that Madam *Æmilia* was diſcharged of her Novell, and none remained now to ſpeake next, but only her ſelfe, his priviledge alwayes remembred to be laſt, ſhe began in this manner.

Faire company, you have this day diſappointed mee of two Novels at the leaſt, whereof I had intended to make uſe. Nevertheleſſe, you ſhall not imagine mee ſo unfurniſhed, but that I have left one in ſtore; the concluſion whereof, may miniſter ſuch inſtruction, as will not be reputed impertinent: but rather of ſuch materiall conſequence, as better hath not this day paſt.

Vnderſtand then (moſt faire Ladies) that in former time, our City had many commendable cuſtomes in it; whereof we cannot ſay that poore one remaineth, ſuch hath bin the too much wealth and covetouſneſſe, the only ſupplanters of all good qualities. Among many, there was one of note, that in many places of *Florence*, men of the beſt houſes in every quarter, had a ſociable and neighbourly meeting, creating their company to conſiſt of a certain number, ſuch as were able to ſupply their expences; as this day one, and to morrow another: and thus in a kinde of friendly courſe, each daily furniſhed the Table for the reſt of the company. Oftentimes, they did honor to divers Gentlemen and ſtrangers, upon their arrivall in our City, by inviting them into their aſſembly, and many of our worthieſt Citizens beſides; ſo that it grew to a cuſtomary uſe, and one eſpeciall day in the yeare appointed, in me-

memory of this so loving a meeting, when they would ride (triumphantly as it were) on horseback thorow the City, sometimes performing Tilts, Tourneyes, and other Martiall exercises, but they were reserved for Festivall dayes.

Among which company, there was one called *Signior Betto Brimleschi*, who was earnestly desirous to Procure *Signior Guido Cavalcante de Cavalcanti*, to make one in their friendly society. And not without great reason: for ever and beside his being one of the best Logitians, as those times not yeelded a better: He was also a most absolute naturall Philosopher (which worthy qualities were little esteemed among these honest meeters) a very friendly Gentleman, singularly well spoken, and whatsoever else was commendable in any man, was no way wanting in him, being wealthy withall, and able to returne equall honours, where he found them to be duly deserved, as no man therein could goe beyond him. But Signior *Betto*, notwithstanding his long continued importunitie, could not draw him into their assembly, which made him, and the rest of his company conceive, that the solitude of *Guido*, retiring himselfe alwayes from familiar conversing with men, provoked him to many curious speculations: and becaus he retained some part of the *Epicurean* Opinion, their vulgar judgement passed on him, that his speculations tended to no other end, but only to find out that which was never done.

It chanced upon a day, that *Signior Guido* departing from the Church of Saint *Michael d'Horta*, and passing along by the *Adamari*, so far as to Saint *Iohns* Church, which evermore was his customary walke: many goodly Marble Tombes were then about the said Church, as now adayes are at Saint *Reparata*, and divers more beside. He entring among the Colomnes of Porphiry, and the other Sepulchers being there, because the doore of the Church was shut: *Signior Betto* and his company, came riding from Saint *Reparata*, and espying *Signior Guido* among the Graves and Tombes, said. Come, let us goe make some jests to anger him. So putting the spurs to their horses, thay rode apace towards him: and being upon him before hee perceived them, one of them said. *Guido* thou refusest to be one of our society, & seekest for that which never was: when thou hast found it, tell us, what wilt thou doe with it?

Guido seeing himselfe round engirt with them, sodainely thus replyed: Gentlemen, you may use me in

your owne house as you please. And setting his hand upon one of the Tombes (which was somewhat great) he tooke his rising, and leapt quite over it on the further side, as being of an agile and sprightly body, and being thus freed from them, he went away to his own lodging. They stood all like men amazed, strangely looking one upon another, and began afterward to murmure among themselves: That *Guido* was a man without any understanding, and the answer which he had made unto them, was to no purpose, neither savoured of any discretion, but meerly came from an empty braine, because they had no more to doe in the place where now they were, than any of the other Citizens, and Signior *Guido* (himselfe) as little as any of them; whereto Signior *Betto* thus replyed.

Alas Gentlemen, it is you your selves that are void of understanding: for, if you had but observed the answer which he made unto us: he did honestly, and (in very few words) not onely notably expresse his owne wisedome, but also deservedly reprehend us. Because, if we observe things as we ought to doe, Graves and Tombes are the houses of the dead, ordained and prepared to be the latest dwellings. He told us moreover that although we have here (in this life) our habitations and abidings; yet these (or the like) must at last be our houses. To let us know, and all other foolish, indiscreet, and unlearned men, that wee are worse than dead men, in comparison of him, and other men equall to him in skill and learning. And therefore, while we are here among the Graves and Monuments, it may well be said, that wee are not farre from our owne houses, or how soon we shall be possessors of them, in regard of the frailty attending on us.

Then every one could say, that Signior *Guido* had spoken nothing but the truth, and were much ashamed at their own folly, and shallow estimation which they made of *Guido*, desiring never more after to meddle with him so grossely; and thanking Signior *Betto*, for so well reforming their ignorance, by his much better apprehension.

Fryer Onyon promised certain honest people of the Country, to shew them a Feather of the same Phenix, that was with Noah *in his Arke. Instead whereof he found Coales, which he avouched to be those very coales wherewith the same Phenix was roasted.*

The

The tenth Novell.

Wherein it may be observed, what palpable abuses do many times passe under the counterfeit Cloake of Religion.

WHen all of them had delivered their Novels, *Dioneus* knowing, that it remained in him to relate the last for this day: without attending for any command (after he had imposed silence on them, that could not sufficiently commend the witty reprehension of *Guido*) thus he began. Wise and worthy Ladies, although by the priviledge you have granted, it is lawfull for mee to speake any thing best pleasing to my selfe: yet notwithstanding, it is not any part of my meaning, to vary from the matter and method, whereof you have spoken to very good purpose. And therefore following your footsteps, I intend to tell you, how craftily, and with a Rampiar suddenly raised in his owne defence, a Religious Friar of Saint *Anthonies* Order, shunned a shame, which two wily companions had prepared for him. Nor let it offend you, if I runne into more large discourse, than this day hath beene used by any, for the apter compleating of my Novell: because, if you will observe it, the Sun is as yet in the middest of heaven, and therefore you may the better forbeare me.

Certaldo, (perhaps) you know, or have heard, is a Village in the Vale of *Elsa*, and under the command of our *Florence*, which although it be but small: yet (in former times) it hath been inhabited with Gentlemen, and people of especiall respect. A Religious Friar of Saint *Anthonies* Order, named Fryar *Onyon*, had long time used thither, to receive the benevolent Almes, which those charitably affected people in simplicity gave him, and chiefely at divers dayes of the yeare, when their bounty and devotion would extend themselves more largely than at other seasons. And so much the rather, because they thought him to bee a good Pastor, of holy life in outward appearance, and carried a name of much greater matter, than remained in the man indeed: beside, that part of the Countrey yeelded far more plentifull abundance of Onyons, than all other in *Tuscany* elsewhere, a kind of food greatly affected by those Friars, as men allwayes of hungry and good appetite. This Fryar *Onyon* was a man of little stature, red haire, a cheerfull countenance, and the World afforded not a more crafty companion, than hee. Moreover, albeit hee had very little Knowledge, Wit, or learning, yet he was so prompt, ready, and voluble of

speech, uttering often he knew not what himselfe: that such as were not well acquainted with his qualities, supposed him to be a singular Rhetoritian, excelling either *Cicero* or *Quintilian* themselves; and he was a gossip, friend, dearly affected by every one dwelling in these parts. According to his wonted custome one time he went thither in the moneth of August, and on a Sunday morning, when all the dwellers thereabout, were present to heare Masse, and in the chiefest Church above all the rest: when the Frier saw time convenient for his purpose, he advanced himselfe, and began to speake in this manner.

Gentlemen and Gentlewomen, you know you have kept a commendable custome, in sending yearely to the poore brethren of our Lord Baron Saint *Anthony*, both of your Corne and other provision, some more, some lesse, all according to their power, meanes, and devotion, to the end that blessed Saint *Anthony* should be the more carefull of your Oxen, Sheepe, Asses, Swine, Pigs, and other cattle. Moreover, you have used to pay (especially such as have their names registred in our Fraternity) those duties which annually you send unto us. For the collection whereof, I am sent by my Superiour, namely our Lord Abbot, and therefore (with Gods blessing) you may come after noone hither, when you shall heare the Bels of the Church ring: then will I make a predication to you; you shall kisse the Crosse, and beside, because I know you all to be most devout servants to our Lord Baron Saint *Anthony*, in especiall grace and favour, I will shew you a most holy and goodly Relique, which I my selfe (long since) brought from the holy Land beyond the seas. If you desire to know what it is, let me tell you, that it is one of the Feathers of the same *Phenix*, which was in the Arke with the Patriarch *Noah* And having thus spoken, he became silent, returning back to heare Masse. While he delivered these and the like speeches, among the other people then in the Church, there were two shrewde and craftie companions; the one, named *John de Bragoniero*, and the other, *Biagio Pizzino*. These subtile fellowes, after they had heard the report of Pryer *Onions* Relique: although they were his intimate friends, and came thither in his company; yet they concluded betweene themselves, to shew him a tricke of Legierdemaine, and to steale the Feather from him. When they had intelligence of Frier *Onion* dining that day at the Castle, with a worthy friend of his: no sooner was he set at the Table, but away were they

they in all haſt, to the Inne where the Frier frequented, with this determination, that *Biagio* ſhould hold conference with the Friars Boy, while his fellow ranſacke the Wallet, to find the Feather, and carry it away with him, for a future obſervation, what the Friar would ſay unto the people, when hee found the loſſe of the Feather, and could not performe his promiſe to them.

The Friers Boy, whom ſome called *Guccio Balena*, ſome *Guccio Imbrata*, and others *Guccio Porco*, was ſuch a knaviſh Lad, and had ſo many bad qualities, as *Lippo Topo* the cunning Painter, or the moſt curious Poeticall wit, had not any ability to deſcribe them. Fryer *Onyon* himſelfe did often obſerve his behaviour, and would make this report among his Friends. My Boy (quoth he) hath nine rare qualities in him, and ſuch they are, as if *Salomon*, *Ariſtotle*, or *Seneca*, had onely but one of them, it were ſufficient to torment and trouble all their vertue, all their ſenſes, and all their ſanctitie. Conſider then, what manner of man hee is like to be, having nine ſuch varieties, yet voide of all vertue, wit, or goodneſſe. And when it was demanded of Frier *Onyon*, what theſe nine rare conditions were; he having them all ready by heart, and in rime, thus anſwered,

Boyes I have knowne and ſeene,
And heard of many:
But
For Lying, Lyſtring, Lacineſſe,
For Facing, Filching, Filthineſſe;
For Careleſſe, Graceleſſe, all unthriftineſſe,
My Boy excelleth any.

Now over and beſide all theſe admirable qualities, he hath many more ſuch ſingularities, which (in favour towards him) I am faine to conceale. But that which I ſmile moſt at in him, is that he would have a Wife in every place where hee commeth yea, and a good houſe to boot too: for, in regard his beard beginneth to ſhew it ſelfe, riſing thicke in haire, blacke and amiable, he is verily perſwaded, that all Women will fall in love with him; and if they refuſe to follow him, he will in all haſte run after them. But truely he is a notable ſervant to me, for I cannot ſpeake with any one, and in never ſo great ſecrecy, but he will be ſure to heare his part; and when any queſtion is demanded of me, he ſtands in ſuch awe & feare of my diſpleaſure, that he will be ſure to make the firſt anſwer, yea, or no, according as he thinketh it moſt convenient.

Now, to proceed where wee left, Friar *Onyon* having left this serviceable youth at his lodging, to see that no body should meddle with his Commodities, especially his Wallet, because of the sacred things therein contained: *Guccio Imbrata*, who as earnestly affected to bee in the Kitchin, as Birds to hop from branch to branch, especially, when any of the Chamber-maides were there; espyed one of the Hostesses Female attendants, a grosse fat Trugge, low of stature, ill faced, and worse formed: with a paire of brests like two Dumbards, smelling loathsomely of grease and sweate; downe shee descended into the Kitchin, like a Kite upon a peece of Carion. This Boy, or Knave, chuse whether you will stile him, having carelesly left Friar *Onyons* Chamber doore open, and all the holy things so much to be neglected, although it was then the Moneth of August, when heate is in the highest predominance, yet hee would needs sit downe by the fire, and began to confer with this amiable Creature, who was called by the name of *Nuta*.

Being set close by her, he told her, that he was a Gentleman by Atturneyship, that he had more millions of Crownes, than all his life time would serve him to spend, beside those which lie payed away dayly, as having no convenient imployment for them. Moreover, he knew how to speake, and doe such things, as were beyond wonder and admiration. And never remembring his old Friars Cowle, which was so snotty and greazie, that good store of kitchin stuffe might have beene boyled out of it; and also a foule slovenly Trusse or halfe doublet, all baudied with bousing, fat, greazy, and lubberly sweating, and other drudgeries in the Convent Kitchin, where hee was an Officer in the meanest credit. So that to describe this sweete youth in his lively colours, both for naturall perfections of body, and artificiall composure of his Garments: never came fowler silks out of *Tartaria* or *India* more ugly or unsightly to be lookt upon. And for a further addition to his neate knavery, his breeches were so rent betwene his legges, his shooes and stockings had been at such a mercilesse massacre: that the gallantest *Commandador* of *Castile* (though he had never so lately bin releast out of slavery) could have wisht for better Garments, than he; or make larger promises than hee did to his *Nuta*. Protesting to entitle her as his only, to fret her from the Inne and Chamber thraldomes, if shee would live with him, be his Love, partaker of his present possessions, and so to succeed in his future fortunes.

All

All which bravadoes, though they were put forth with admirable insinuations: yet they converted into smoke, as all such braggadochio behaviours doe, and he was as wise at the ending, as when he began.

Our former named craftie Companions, seeing *Guccio Porco* so seriously employed about *Nuta*, were therewith not a little contented, because their intended labour was now more than half ended. And perceiving no contradiction to crosse their proceeding, into Friar *Onyons* chamber entred they, finding it ready open for their purpose: where the first thing that came into their hand in search, was the Wallet. When they had opened it, they found a small Cabinet, wrapped in in a great many foldings of rich Taffata; and having unfolded it, a fine formall Key was hanging thereat: wherewith having unlockt the Cabinet, they found a faire feather of a Parrots taile, which they supposed to be the very same, that hee meant to shew the people of *Certaldo*. And truly (in those dayes) it was no hard matter to make them beleeve any thing, because the idle vanities of Ægypt, and those remoter parts, had not (as yet) been seen in Tuscany, as since then they have been in great abundance, to the utter ruine (almost) of Italy.

And although they might be known to be very few, yet the Inhabitants of the countrey generally, understood little or nothing at all of them. For there, the pure simplicitie of their ancient Predecessours still continuing; they had not seen any Parrots, or so much as heard any speech of them. Wherefore the craftie consorts not a little joyfull of finding the Feather, tooke it thence with them, and because they would not leave the Cabinet empty, espying Char-coales lying in a corner of the chamber, they filled it with them, wrapping it up againe in the Taffata, and in as demure manner as they found it. So, away came they with the Feather, neither seen or suspected by any one, intending now to heare what Fryar *Onyon* would say, upon the losse of his precious Relique, and finding the coales were placed in stead thereof.

The simple men and women of the Countrey, who had been at morning Misse in the Church, and heard what a wonderfull Feather they should see in the after noone; returned in all hast to their houses, where one telling this newes to another, and gossip with gossip consulting there; they made the shorter dinner, and afterwards flocked in maine troopes to the Castle, contending who should first get entrance, such was their

their devotion to see the holy Feather. Fryar *Onyon* having dined and repoſed a little after his wine, hee aroſe from the Table to the Window, where beholding what multitudes came to ſee the Feather, hee aſſured himſelfe of good ſtore of money. Hereupon, he ſent to his Boy *Guccio Imbrata*, that upon the Bells ringing, hee ſhould come and bring the wallet to him: which (with much adoe) he did, ſo ſoone as his quarrell was ended in the kitchin, with the amiable Chamber-maid *Nuta*, away then he went with his holy comodities: where he was no ſooner arrived, but becauſe his belly was ready to burſt with drinking water, he ſent him to the Church to ring the Bels, which not onely would warme the cold water in his belly, but likewiſe make him run as gaunt as a Grey hound.

When all the people were aſſembled in the Church together, Fryar *Onyon* (never miſtruſting any injury offered to him, or that his cloſe commodities had beene medled withall) began his predication, uttering a thouſand lies to fit his purpoſe. And when he came to ſhew the feather of the Phœnix (having firſt in great devotion finiſht the concluſion) he cauſed two goodly torches to be ligh'ed, and ducking downe his head three ſeverall times, before he would ſo much as touch the Tafata, he opened it with much reverence. So ſoone as the Cabinet came to be ſeene, off went his Hood, ſowly he bowed downe his body, and uttering eſpeciall praiſes of the Phœnix, and ſacred properties of the wonderfull Relique, the cover of the Cabinet being lifted up, he ſaw the ſame to be full of Coales. He could not ſuſpect his Villaine boy to doe the deed, for he knew him not to be endued with ſo much wit, only he curſt him for keeping it no better, and curſt himſelfe alſo, for repoſing truſt in ſuch a careleſſe knave, knowing him to be ſlothfull, diſobedient, negligent, and void of all honeſt underſtanding or grace. Sodainely (without bluſhing) leſt his loſſe ſhould be diſcerned, he lifted his lookes and hands to heaven, ſpeaking out ſo loud, as every one might eaſily heare him, thus: O thou omnipotent providence, for ever let thy power be praiſed. Then making faſt the Cabinet again, and turning himſelfe to the people, with lookes expreſſing admiration, he proceeded in this manner.

Lords, Ladies, and you the reſt of my worthy Auditors: You are to underſtand, that I (being then very young) was ſent by my Superiour, into thoſe parts, where the Sun appeareth at his firſt riſing. And I had received charge by expreſſe commaund, that I ſhould ſeeke

seke for (so much as consisted in my power to doe) the speciall vertues and priviledges belonging to Porcelane, which although the boyling thereof be worth but little, yet it is very profitable to any but us. In regard whereof, being upon my journey, and departing from Venice, passing along the Borgo de Grecia, I proceeded thence (on horsebacke) through the Realme of Garbo, to Baldacca, till I came to Parione; from whence, not without great extreamity of thirst, I arrived in Cardigna.

But why doe I trouble you with the repetition of so many Countries? I coasted on still, after I had past Saint Georges Arme, into Truffia, and then into Buffia, which are Countries much inhabited, and with great people. From thence I went into the Land of Lying, where I found store of the Brethren of our Religion, and many other beside, who shunned all pain and labour, onely for the love of God, and cared as little for the paines and travels which others tooke, except some benefit arised thereby to them; nor spend they any money in this Countrey, but such as is without stamp. Thence I went into the Land of Abruzzi, where the men and women goe in Galoches over the Mountaines, and make them garments of their Swines guts. Not farre from thence, I found people that carried bread in their staves, and wine in Satchels, when parting from them, I arrived among the Mountaines of Baechus, where all the waters run downe with a deep fall, and in short time, I went on so farre, that I found my selfe to be in India Pastinaca; where I sweare to you by the holy habit which I weare on my body, that I saw Serpents flie, things incredible, and such as was never seen before.

But because I would be loath to lie, so soon as I departed thence, I met with Maso de Saggio, who was a great Merchant there, and whom I found cracking Nuts, and selling Cockles by retale. Nevertheless, all this while I could not find what I sought for, and therefore I was to passe from hence by water, if I intended to travell thither, and so in returning backe. I came into the Holy Land, where coole fresh bread is sold for four pence, & the hot is given away for nothing. There I found the venerable Father (blame me not I beseech you) the most worthy Patriarch of Ierusalem, who for the reverence due to the habit that I weare, and love to our Lord Baron S. Anthony, would have me to see all the holy Reliques, which he had there under his charge: whereof there were so many, as if I should recount them

them all to you, I never could come to a conclusion. But yet, not to leave you discomforted, I will relate some few of them to you.

First of all, he shewed me the finger of the holy Ghost so whole and perfect, as ever it was. Next the nose of the Cherubin, which appeared to S. *Francis*; with the payring of the naile of a Seraphin; and one of the ribbes of *Verbum caro*, fastened to one of the Windowes, covered with the holy garments of the Catholike Faith. Then he tooke me into a dark Chappell, where he shewed me divers beames of the Starre that appeared to the three Kings in the East. Also a Viall of Saint *Michaels* sweate, when hee combatted with the divell: And the jaw bone of dead *Lazarus*, with many other precious things beside. And because I was liberall to him, giving him two of the Plaines of *Monte Morello*, in the Vulgar Edition, and some of the Chapters *del Capretto*, which he had long laboured in search of; he bestowed upon me some of his Reliques.

First he gave me one of the eye teeth of *Santa Cruz*, and a little Viall, filled with some part of the sound of those Belles, which hung in the sumptuous Temple of *Salomon*. Next he gave me the Feather of the Phœnix, which was with *Noah* in the Arke, as before I told you. And one of the Wooden Pattens, which the good Saint *Gerrard de Magnavillo* used to weare in his travels, and which I gave (not long since) to *Gerrardo di Bonfy* at Florence, where it is respected with great devotion. Moreover, he gave me a few of those Coales, wherewith the Phœnix of *Noah* was roasted; all which things I brought away thence with mee. Now, most true it is, that my Superiour would never suffer me to shew them any where untill he was faithfully certified, whether they were the same precious Reliques, or no. But perceiving by sundry miracles which they have wrought, and Leters of sufficient credence received from the reverend Patriarch, that all is true, he hath granted mee permission to shew them, and because I would not trust any one with matters of such moment, I my selfe brought them hither with me.

Now I must tell you, that the feathers of the said Phœnix, I conveighed into a small Cabinet or Casket, because it should not be bent or broken. And the coales wherewith the said Phœnix was roasted, I put into another Casket, in all respects so like to the former, that many times I have taken one for another. As now at this instant it hath been my fortune: for, imagining that I brought the Casket with the Feather, I mistooke

mistooke my selfe, and brought the other with the Coales. Wherein doubtlesse I have not offended, because I am certaine, that we of our Order doe not any thing but it is ordered by divine direction, and our blessed Patron the Lord Baron Saint *Anthony*. And so much the rather, because about a sennight hence, the Feast of Saint *Anthony* is to be solemnized, against the preparation whereof, and to kindle your zeale with the greater fervencie, hee put the Casket with the coales into my hand, meaning to let you see the Feather, at some fitting season. And therefore my blessed sonnes and daughters, put off your Bonnets, and come hither with devotion to looke upon them. But first let me tell you, that whosoever is marked by any of these coales, with the signe of the Crosse: hee or shee shall live all this yeare happily, and no fire whatsoever shall come neere to touch or hurt them. So singing a solemne Anthem in the praise of Saint *Anthony*, hee unveiled the Casket, and shewed the coales openly.

The simple multitude, having (with great admiration and reverence) a long while beheld them, they thronged in crouds to Friar *Onyon*, giving him farre greater offerings, than before they had, and entreating him to marke them each after other. Whereupon he taking the coales in his hand, began to marke their garment of white, and the veiles on the womens heads, with Crosses of no meane extendure; affirming to them, that the more the coales wasted with making those great crosses, the more they still encreased in the Casket, as often before he had made triall

In this manner, having crossed all the *Cornaldenses* (to his great benefit) and their abuse: he smiled at his sodaine and dexterous devise, in mockery of them who thought to have made a scorne of him, by dispossessing him of the Feather. For *Bregeniso* and *Pi[illegible]*, being present at his Learned Predication, and having heard what a cunning shift he found, to come off cleanely, without the least detection, and all delivered with such admirable protestations: they were faine to forsake the Church, lest they should burst with laughing.

But when all the people were departed and gone, they met Friar *Onyon* at his Inne, where closely they discovered to him, what they had done, delivering him his Feather againe: which the yeare following, did yeild him such money, as now the Coales had done.

This

This Novell afforded equall pleasing to the whole company, Friar *Onyons* Sermon being much commended: but especially his long Pilgrimage, and the Reliques he had both seen, and brought home with him. Afterward, the Queene perceiving, that her reigne had now the full expiration, graciously she arose, and taking the Crown from off her own head, placed it on the head of *Dioneus*, saying. It is high time *Dioneus*, that you should taste part of the charge & pain which poore women have felt and undergone in their Soveraigntie and government: wherefore, be you our King, and rule us with such awefull authority, that the ending of our dominion may yeeld us all contentment. *Dioneus* being thus invested with the Crown, returned this answer.

I make no doubt (bright Beauties) but you many times have seen a better King among the Chesse-men, than I am. But yet of a certainty, if you would be obedient to me, as you ought in duty unto a true King: I should grant you a liberall freedome of that, wherein you take the most delight, and without which, our choisest desires can never be compleat. Nevertheless, I meane, that my government shall be according to mine owne mind. So, causing the Master of the Household to be called for, as all the rest were wont to doe for conference with him: hee gave him direction for all things fitting the time of his Regiment, and then proceeded.

Honest Ladies, we have already discoursed of variable devises and so many severall manners of humane industry, concerning the businesse wherewith *Licisca* came to acquaint us: that her very words, have ministred me matter, sufficient for our morrows conference, or else I stand in doubt, that I could not have devised a more convenient Theame for us to talke on. She (as you have all heard) said, that she had not any neighbour, who came a true Virgin to her husband: and added moreover, that she knew some others, who had beguiled their Husbands, in very cunning and craftie manner. But setting aside the first part, concerning the proofe of children, I conceive the second to be more apt for our intended argument. In which respect, my will is (seeing *Licisca* hath given us so good an occasion,) that our discourse to morrow, may onely concerne such slie cunning and deceits, as women have heretofore used, for satisfying their own appetites, and beguiling their own Husbands, without their knowledge, or suspicion, and cleanly escaping with them, or no.

This argument seemed not very pleasing to the Ladies, and therefore they urged an alteration thereof, to some

some matter better suting with the day, and their discoursing: whereto thus he answered. Ladies, I know as well as your selves, why you would have this instant argument altered: but to change me from it you have no power, considering the season is such, as shielding all (both men and women) from medling with any dishoneſt action; it is lawfull for us to speake of what we pleaſe. And know you not, that through the sad occasion of the time, which now over-ruleth us, the Iudges have forsaken their venerable benches, the Lawes (both Divine and Humane) ceasing, granting ample licence to every one, to doe what beſt agreeth with the conservation of life? Therefore, if your honeſtles doe straine themselves a little, both in thinking or speaking, not for prosecution of any immodeſt deed, but onely for familiar and blameleſſe entercourſe: I cannot deviſe a more convenient ground, at leaſt that carrieth apparent reaſon, for reproofe of perils, to ensue by any of you. Moreover, your company, which hath been moſt honeſt, since the firſt day of our meeting, to this instant: appeareth not any jot to be disgraced, by any thing either said or done, neither shall be (I hope) in the meaneſt degree.

And what is he, knowing your choice and vertuous diſpoſitions, ſo powerfull in their own prevailing, that wanton words cannot miſguide your wayes, no nor the terrour of death it ſelfe, that dare inſinuate a diſtempered thought? But admit, that ſome ſlight or ſhallow judgments, hearing you (perhaps ſome times) talke of ſuch amorous follies, ſhould therefore ſuſpiciouſly imagine you to be faultie, or elſe you would be more ſparing of ſpeech? Their wit and cenſure are both alike, ſavouring rather of their own vile nature, who would brand others with their baſe bred imperfections. Yet there is another conſideration beſide, of ſome great injurie offered to my honour, and I know not how you can acquit you ſelves.

I that have been obedient to you all, and born the heavy load of your buſineſſe, having now (with full conſent) created me your King, you would wreſt the law out of my hands & diſpoſe of my authority as you pleaſe. Forbeare (gentle Ladies) all frivolous ſuſpicions, more fit for them that are full of bad thoughts, than you, who have true Vertue ſhining in your eyes; and therefore, let every one freely ſpeake their mind according as their humours beſt pleaſeth them.

When the Ladies heard this, they made anſwer, that all ſhould be anſwerable to his minde. Whereupon the King gave them all leave to diſpoſe of themſelves till ſupper time, And becauſe the Sun was yet very high,

in

in regard all the recounted Novells had been so short: *Dioneus* went to play at the Tables with another of the young Gentlemen, and Madam *Eliza*, having withdrawne the Ladies aside, thus spake unto them. During the time of our beeing here, I have often been desirous to let you see a place somewhat neere at hand, which I suppose you have never seene, it being called *The Valley of Ladies*. Till now, I could not finde any convenient time to bring you thither, the Sunne continuing still aloft, which fitteth you with the apter leasure, and the sight (I am sure) can no way displease you.

The Ladies replyed, they were ready to walke with her thither: and calling one of their women to attend on them, they set on, without speaking a word to any of the men. And within the distance of half a mile, they arrived at the *Valley of Ladies*, whereinto they entred by a strait passage at the one side, from whence there issued forth a cleare running River. And they found the said Valley to bee so goodly and pleasant, especially in that season, which was the hottest of all the yeare; as all the world was no where able to yeeld the like. And, as one of the said Ladies (since then) related to me, there was a plaine in the Valley so directly round, as if it had been formed by a compasse, yet rather it resembled the Workemanship of Nature, than to be made by the hand of man: containing in circuit somewhat more than the quarter of a mile, inviron'd with fixe small hills, of no great height, and on each of them stood a little Palace, shapen in the fashion of Castles.

The ground plots descending from those hills or mountaines, grew lesse and lesse by variable degrees, as we observe at entring into our Theaters from the highest part to the lowest, succinctly to narrow the circle by order. Now, concerning these ground-plots, or little meadowes, those which the Sun Southward looked on, were full of Vines, Olive-trees, Almond-trees, Cherry-trees, and Fig trees, with divers other Trees beside, so plentifully bearing fruits, as you could not discerne a hands bredth of losse. The other Mountaines, whereon the Northern winds blow, were curiously covered with small Thickets, or Woods of Oakes, Ashes, and other Trees, so greene and straight, as it was impossible to behold fairer. The goodly plaine it selfe, not having any other entrance, but where the Ladies came in, was planted with Trees of Firre, Cipresse, Laurel, and Pines, so singularly growing in formall or-

der,

der, as if some artificiall or cunning hand had planted them, the Sun hardly piercing through their branches, from the top to the bottome, even at the higheſt, or any part of his course.

All the whole field was richly spread with grasse, and such variety of delicate Flowers, as Nature yeelded out of her plenteous Store-house. But that which gave no lesse delight than any of the rest, was a small running Brooke, descending from one of the Valleyes, that divided two of the little hills, and fell directly through a Veine of the intire Rocke it selfe, that the fall and murmure thereof was most delightfull to heare, seeming all the way in the descent, like Quicke-silver, weaving it selfe into artificiall workes, and arriving in the plaine beneath, it was there received into a small Channel, swiftly running through the midst of the plaine, to a place where it stayed, and shaped it selfe into a Lake or Pond, such as our Citizens have in their Orchards or Gardens, when they please to make use of such a commodity.

This Pond was no deeper, than to reach the breast of a man, and having no mud or soyle in it, the bottome thereof shewed like small beaten gravell, with pretty pibble stones intermixed, which some that had nothing else to doe, would sit down and count them as they lay, as very easily they might. And not onely was the bottome thus apparently seene, but also such plenty of Fishes swimming every way, as the minde was never to be wearied in looking on them. Nor was this water bounded in with any banks, but onely the sides of the Medow, which made it appeare the more sightly as it arose in swelling plenty. And always as it superabounded in his course, lest it should overflow disorderly: it fell into another Channell, which conveying it along the lower Valley, ran forth to water other needfull places.

When the Ladies were arrived in this goodly Valley, and upon advised viewing of it, had sufficiently commended it, in regard the heat of the day was great, the place tempting, and the Pond free from the sight of any, they resolved there to bathe themselves. Wherefore they sent the waiting Gentlewoman to have a diligent eye on the way where they entred, lest any one should chance to steale upon them. All seven of them being stript stark naked, into the water they went, which left their delicate white Bodies, like as a cleare Glasse concealeth a Damaske Rose within it. So they being in the Pond, and the water nothing troubled by their being

being there, they found much pretty paſtime together; running after the fiſhes to catch them with their hands, but they were over-quicke and cunning for them. After they had delighted themſelves there to their own contentment, and were cloathed with their garments, as before: thinking it fit time for their returning backe again, leſt their overlong ſtay might give offence, they departed thence in an eaſie pace, doing nothing elſe all the way as they went but extolling the *Valley of Ladies* beyond all compariſon.

At the Palace they arrived in a due houre, finding the three Gentlemen at play, as they left them, to whom *Pampinea* pleaſantly thus ſpake. Now truſt me gallants, this day we have very cunningly beguiled you. How now (anſwered *Dioneus*) begin you firſt to act, before you ſpeak? Yes truly Sir, replyed madam *Pampinea*, relating to him at large, from whence they came, what they had done there, the beautie of the place, and the diſtance thence. The King (upon her excellent report) being very deſirous to ſee it, ſodainely commanded Supper to be ſerved in, which was no ſooner ended, but they and their three ſervants (leaving the Ladies) walked on to the Valley, which when they had conſidered, no one of them having ever been there before; they thought it had been the Paradiſe of the world.

They bathed themſelves there likewiſe, as the Ladies formerly had done, and being re-veſted, returned home to their Lodgings, becauſe dark night drew on apace: but they found the Ladies dancing, to a Song which Madam *Fiammetta* ſung. When the dance was ended, they entertained the time with no other diſcourſe, but only concerning the *Valley of Ladies*, whereof they all ſpake liberally in commendations. Whereupon, the King called the Maſter of the Houſhold, giving him command, that (on the Morrow) dinner ſhould be ready betimes, and bedding to be thence carryed, if any deſired to reſt at mid-time of the day.

All this being done, Variety of pleaſing Wines were brought, Banquetting ſtuffe, and other dainties; after which they fell to dancing. And *Pamphilus*, having received command, to begin a ſpeciall dance, the King turned himſelfe to Madam *Eliza*, ſpeaking thus. Faire Ladie, you have done me ſo much honour this day, as to deliver me the Crown: in regard whereof be you this night the Miſtreſſe of the Song: and let it be ſuch as beſt may pleaſe your ſelfe. Whereupon Madam *Eliza* with a modeſt bluſh ariſing in her Face, replyed; That his will ſhould be fulfilled, and then (with a delicate voyce) ſhe began in this manner.

The

The Song.

The CHORVS sung by all.

LOVE, if I can scape free from forth thy hold,
Beleeve it for a truth,
Never more shall thy falshood me enfold.

WHen I was young, I entred first thy fights,
Supposing there to find a solemne peace:
I threw off all my Armes, and with delights
Fed my poore hopes, as still they did encrease.
But like a Tyrant, full of rancorous hate,
Thou took'st advantage:
And I sought refuge, but it was too late.
Love, if I can scape free, &c.

But being thus surpriz'd in thy snares,
To my misfortune thou madest me her slave,
Was only borne to feed me with despaires,
And keep me dying in a living grave,
For I saw nothing dayly fore mine eyes,
But rackes and Tortures;
From which I could not get in any wise.
Love, if I can scape free, &c.

My sighes and teares I vented to the wind,
For none would heare, or pity my complaints;
My torments still encreased in this kind,
And more and more I felt these sharpe restraints.
Release me now at last from forth this hell.
Asswage thy rigour,
Delight not thus in cruelties to dwell.
Love if I can scape free, &c.

If this thou wilt not grant, be yet so kind,
Release me from those worse than servile bands,
Which new vaine hopes have bred, wherein I find,
Such violent feares, as comfort quite withstands.
Bemoane (at length) a little mov'd to pity:
Be it never so little:
Or in my death listen my Swan-like Ditty.
Love if I can scape free from forth thy hold,
Beleeve it for a truth,
Never more shall thy falshood me enfold.

After that Madam *Eliza* had made an end of her Song, which she sealed up with an heart-breaking sigh: they all sate amazedly wondering at her moanes, not one among them being able to conjecture, what should be the reason of her singing in this manner. But the-

King

King being in a good and pleasing temper, calling Tudor commanded him to bring his Bagge-pipe, by the sound whereof they danced divers dances: and a great part of the night being spent in this manner, they all gave over, and departed to their Chambers.

The Seventh Day.

When the Assembly being met together, and under the Regiment of Dioneus: *the Discourses are directed, for the discovery of such policies and deceits, as women have used for beguiling of their Husbands, either in respect of their love, or for the prevention of some blame or scandall, escaping without sight, knowledge, or otherwise.*

The Induction to the Dayes Discourses.

ALL the Starres were departed out of the East, but onely that, which we commonly call bright *Lucifer*, or the Day Starre, gracing the morning very gloriously: when the Master of the Houshold, being risen was with all the provision, to the *Valley of Ladies*, to make every thing in due and decent readinesse, according as his Lord over-night had commanded him. After which departure of his, it was not long before the King arose, being awaked with the noise which the carriages made; and when he was up, the other two Gentlemen and the Ladies were quickly ready soon after. On they set towards the *Valley*, even as the Sunne was rising: and all the way as they went, never before had they heard so many sweet Nightingales and other pretty Birds melodiously singing, as they did this morning; which keeping them company throughout the journey, they arrived at the *Valley of Ladies*, where it seemed to them, that infinite Quires of delicate Nightingales, and other sweet singing Birds had purposely made a meeting, even as it were to give them a glad welcome thither.

Divers times they walked about the *Valley*, never satisfied with viewing it from one end to the other; because it appeared farre more pleasing unto them, than it had done the precedent day: and because the dayes splendour, was much more conforme to the beauty thereof. After they had broken their fast, with excellent Wines and Banqueting stuffe, they began to tune their Instruments and sing; because (therein) the sweete Birds should not excell them, the *Valley* (with delicate

Echoes)

Echoes) answering all their notes. When dinner time drew neare, the Tables were covered under the spreading trees, and by the goodly ponds side, where they sate down orderly by the Kings direction: and all dinner while, they saw the Fishes swimme by huge shoales in the Pond, which sometimes gave them occasion to talke, as well as gaze on them.

When dinner was ended, and the Tables withdrawn, in as jocond manner as before, they renued again their harmonious singing. In divers places of this pleasant Valley, were goodly field-beds readily furnished, according as the Master of the Houshold gave instruction, encloſed with Pavilions of costly stuffes, such as are sometimes brought out of France. Such as were disposed, were licenced by the King to take their rest: & they that would not, he permitted them to their wonted pastime, each according to their minds. But when they were risen from sleepe, and the rest from their other exercises, it seemed to be more than half time, that they should prepare for talke and conference. So, sitting down on Turky Carpets, which were spread abroad upon the green grasse, and close by the place where they had dined: the King gave command, that Madam *Æmilia* should first begin, whereto shee willingly yeelded obedience, and expecting such silent attention, as formerly had bin observed, thus she began.

Iohn of Lorraine heard one knocke at his doore in the night time, whereupon he awaked his wife Menna Taſſa. She made him beleeve, that it was a Spirit which knocked at the doore, and ſo they aroſe going both together to conjure the Spirit with a prayer; and afterwards, they heard no more knocking.

The first Novell.

Reprehending the ſimplicity of ſome fooliſh Husbands: And diſcovering the wanton ſubtilties of ſome women, to compaſſe their unlawfull deſires.

MY Gracious Lord (quoth Madam *Æmilia*) it had been a matter highly pleasing me that any other (rather than my self) should have begun to speake of this argument, which it hath pleased you to appoint. But seeing it is your Highnesse pleasure, that I must make a passage of assurance for all the rest; I will not be irregular, because obedience is our chief Article. I shall therefore (Gracious Ladies) strive to speake something, which may be advan-

advantageable to you hereafter, in regard, that if other women be as fearefull as we, especially of Spirits, of which all our sexe have generally been timorous (although, upon my credit, I know not what they are, nor never could meet with any, to tell me what they be) you may by the diligent observation of my Novell, learn a wholesome and holy prayer, very availeable, and of precious power, to conjure and drive them away, whensoever they shall presume to assault you in any place.



There dwelt sometime in Florence, and in the street of *Branca∫io*, a woollen Weaver, named *Iohn* of Lorraine; one more happy in his Art, than wise in any thing else beside: because, favouring somewhat of the *Gregory*, and (in very deed) little lesse than an Ideot; He was many times made Captain of the Woollen Weavers, in the quarters belonging to *Santa Maria Novel-*

la,

la, and his house was the Schoole or receptacle, for all their meetings and assemblies. Hee had divers other petty Offices beside, by the dignity and authority whereof, he supposed himself much exalted or elevated, above the common pitch of other men. And this humour became the more tractable to him, because he addicted himself oftentimes (as being a man of an easie inclination) to be a benefactor to the holy Fathers of *Santa Maria Novella*, giving (beside his other charitable almes) to some one a paire of Breeches, to another a Hood, and to another an whole Habite. In reward whereof they taught him (by heart) many wholesome prayers, as the *Pater Noster* in the vulgar tongue, the Song of Saint *Alexis*, the Lamentation of Saint *Bernard*, the Hymne of Madam *Matilda*, and many other such like matters, which he kept charily, and repeated usually, as tending to his soules salvation.

This man had a very faire and lovely wife, named *Monna Tessa*, the daughter of *Manuccio della Cuculia*, wise and well advised; who knowing the simplicity of her Husband, and affecting *Frederigo di Neri Pegolotti*, who was a comely young Gentleman, fresh and in the flowre of his time, even as she was, therefore they agreed the better together. By meanes of her Chambermaid, *Frederigo* and she met often together, at a Countrey Farme of *Iohn* of *Lorrayne*, which he had neere to *Florence*, and where she used to lodge all the Summer time, called *Camerata*, whither *Iohn* resorted sometimes to supper, and lodged for a night, returning home again to his City house the next morning; yet often he would stay there longer with his own companions.

Frederigo, who was no mean man in his Mistresses favour, and therefore these private meetings the more welcome to him; received a summons, or assignation from her, to be there on such a night, when her husband had no intent of comming thither. There they supped merrily and (no doubt) did other things, nothing apperraining to our purpose, she both acquainting, and well instructing him, in a dozen (at the least) of her Husbands devout prayers. Nor did she make any account, or *Frederigo* either, that this should be the last time of their meeting, because (indeed) it was not their first: and therefore they set down an order and conclusion together (because the Chambermaid must be no longer the messenger) in such manner as you shall heare.

Frederigo was to observe especially, that always when he went or came from his own house, which stood much higher than *Iohn* of *Lorraines* did, to looke upon

a Vine, closely adjoyning to her house, where stood the scull of an Asses head, advanced upon an high pole, and when the face thereof looked towards Florence he might safely come, it being an assured signe that *Iohn* kept at home; and if he found the doore fast shut, he should softly knocke three severall times, and thereon be admitted entrance. But if the face stood towards *Fesole*, then he might not come, for it was the signe of *Iohns* being there, and there might be no medling at all.

Having thus agreed upon this conclusion, and had many merry meetings together: one night above the rest, when *Frederigo* was appointed to suppe with *Monna Tessa*, who had made ready two fat Capons, drest in most dainty and most delicate manner: it fell out so unfortunately that *Iohn* (whose Kue was not to come that night) came very late, yet before *Frederigo*, wherewith she being not a little offended, gave *Iohn* a slight supper, of Lard, Bacon, and such like course provision, because the other was kept for a better guest. In the meane time, and while *Iohn* was in supper, the maide (by her Mistresses direction) had conveighed the two Capons, with boyled egges, Bread and a Bottle of wine (all folded up in a fair clean table cloth) into her Garden, that had a passage to it without entring into the house, and where shee had divers times supt with *Frederigo*. She further willed the Maide to set all those things under a Peach-tree, which adjoyned to the fields side: but, so angry she was at her husbands unexpected comming, that she forgot to bid her tarry there, till *Frederigoes* comming, and to tell him of *Iohn* being there: as also, to take what he found prepared ready for his Supper.

Iohn and she being gone to bed together, and the Maid likewise, it was not long after, before *Frederigo* came, and knocking once softly at the doore, which was very neere to their lodging Chamber, *Iohn* heard the noise, and so did his wife. But to the end, that *Iohn* might not have the least scruple of suspicion, she seemed to be fast asleep; and *Frederigo* pausing a while, according to the order directed, knocke again the second time. *Iohn* wondring thereat very much, jogd his wife a little, and said to her *Tessa*, heard'st thou nothing? Me thinks one knocketh at our doore. *Monna Tessa*, who was better acquainted with the knocke, than plaine honest meaning *Iohn* was, dissembling as if she awaked out of a drowsy dreame, said, Alas Husband, dost thou know what this is? In the name of our blessed Lady, be not afraid, this is but a Spirit which haunts our Countrey houses, whereof I have often

often told thee, and it hath many times much dismaied me, living here alone without thy comfort. Nay, such hath beene my feare, that in divers nights past, so soon as I heard the knockes: I was feigne to hide my self in the bed over head and eares (as we usually say) never daring to be so bold, as to looke out, untill it was broad open day. Arise good wife (quoth *Iohn*) and if it be such a Spirit of the Countrey, as thou talkest of, never be afraid; for before we went to bed, I said the *Teluen*, the *Intemerata*, with many other good prayers beside. Moreover, I made the signe and shape of the Crosse at every corner of our bed, in the name of the Father, Son, and holy Ghost, so that no doubt at all need to be made of any power it can have to hurt or touch us.

Monna Tessa, because (perhaps) *Frederigo* might receive some other suspicion, and so enter into distaste of her by anger of offence: determined to arise indeed, and to let him covertly understand, that *Iohn* was there, and therefore said unto her husband. Beleeve me *Iohn*, thy counsell is good, and every one of thy words hath wisedome in it: but I hold best for our own safety, thou being here; that we should conjure him quite away, to the end he may never more haunt our house; Conjure him wife? (quoth *Iohn*,) By what meanes? And how? Be patient good man (quoth *Tessa*) and I will instruct thee. I have learned an excellent kinde of conjuration; for, the last week, when I went to procure the Pardons at *Fiesola*, one of the holy recluse Nuns, who (indeed *Iohn*) is my endeared Sister and Friend, and the most sanctimonious in life of them all; perceiving me to be troubled and terrified by spirits; taught me a wholesome and holy prayer, and protested withall, that she had often made experiment thereof, before she became a Recluse, and found it (alwayes) a present help to her. Yet never durst I adventure to essay it, living here by my self all alone: but honest *Iohn*, seeing thou art here with me, we will goe both together, and conjure this Spirit. *Iohn* replyed, that hee was very willing; and being both up, they went faire and softly to the doore, where *Frederigo* stood still without, and was growne somewhat suspicious of his long attendance.

When they were come to the doore, *Monna Tessa* said to *Iohn*: Thou must cough and sper, at such time as I shall bid thee. Well (quoth *Iohn*) I will not faile your immediately she began her prayer in this manner.

Spirit that walkest thus in the night,
Poore Countrey people to affright:

Thou haſt miſtane thy mark and aime,
The head ſtood right but Iohn *home came,*
And therefore thou muſt pack away,
For I have nothing elſe to ſay:
But to my Garden get thee gone,
Vnder the Peach-tree ſtands alone,
There ſhalt thou find two Capons dreſt,
And Egges laid in mine own Henns neſt,
Bread, and a Bottle of good Wine,
All wrapt up in a cloth moſt fine.
Is not this good Goblins fare?
Packe and ſay you have your ſhare;
Not doing harm to Iohn *or me,*
Who this night keeps me company.

No ſooner had ſhe ended her devout conjuring prayer, but ſhe ſaid to her Husband: Now *Iohn*, cough, and ſpet: which *Iohn* accordingly did. And *Frederigo*, being all this while without, hearing her witty conjuration of a Spirit, which he himſelf was ſuppoſed to be, being rid of his former jealous ſuſpicion: in the middeſt of all his melancholy, could very hardly refrain from laughing, the jeſt appeared ſo pleaſing to him. But when *Iohn* coughed and ſpit, ſoftly he ſaid to himſelf. When next thou ſpetſt, ſpet out all thy teeth.

The woman having three ſeverall times conjured the Spirit, in ſuch manner as you have already heard, returned to bed again with her husband: and *Frederigo*, who came as perſwaded to ſup with her, being ſupperleſs all this while; directed by the words of *Monna Teſſa* in her prayer, went into the Garden. At the foot of the Peach-tree, there he found the linnen cloth, with the two hot Capons, Bread, Egges, and a Bottle of Wine in it, all which he carried away with him, and went to Supper at better leaſure. Oftentimes afterward, upon other meetings of *Frederigo* and ſhe together, they laughed heartily at her inchantment, and the honeſt beleef of ſilly *Iohn*.

I cannot deny, but that ſome doe affirme, that the woman had turned the face of the Aſſes head towards *Fieſola*, and a Countrey traveller paſſing by the Vine, having a long piked ſtaffe on his necke: the ſtaffe (by chance) touched the head, and made it turne divers times about, and in the end faced *Florence*, which being the call for *Frederigoes* comming, by this meanes he was diſappointed. In like manner ſome ſay, that *Monna Teſſaes* prayer for conjuring the Spirit was in this order.

Spirit, Spirit, goe thy way,
And come again some other day.
It was not I that turnd the head
But some other. In our bed
Are Iohn and I: Goe from our doore,
And see thou trouble us no more.

So that *Frederigo* departed thence, both with the losse of his labour and supper. But a neighbour of mine, who is a woman of good yeares, told me that the one and the other were true, as she her selfe heard, when shee was a little Girle. And concerning the latter accident, it was not *Iohn of Lorrayne*, but to another, named *Iohn de Nulle*, that dwelt at Saint *Peters* Gate, and of the same profession as *Iohn of Lorrayne* was. Wherefore (faire Ladies) it remaineth in your own choise, to entertaine which of the two prayers you please, or both together if you will: for they are of extraordinary vertue in such strange occurrences, as you have heretofore heard, and (upon doubt) may prove by experience. It shall not therefore be amisse for you, to learn them both by heart, for (peradventure) they may stand you in good steed, if ever you chance to have the like occasion.

Peronella hid a young man her friend and Lover, under a great brewing Fat, upon the sodain returning home of her husband; who told her that he had sold the said Fat, and brought him that bought it to carry it away. Peronella replyed, that she had formerly sold it unto another, who was underneath it to see whether it were whole or sound, or no. Whereupon, he being come forth from under it; she caused her Husband to make it neat and clean, and so the last buyer carried it away.

The second Novell.

Women is declared, what hard and narrow shifts and distresses, such as be seriously linked in Love, are many times enforced to undergo: according as their own wit and capacity of their surpisers, drive them to, in extremities.

NOT without much laughter and good liking, was the Tale of Madam *Æmilia* listened unto, and both the prayers commended to be sound and soveraigne: but it being ended, the King commanded *Philostratus*, that he should follow next in order, whereupon thus he began.

Deare Ladies, the deceits used by men towards your sexe, but especially by Husbands, have bin so great and many, as when it hath sometime happened, or yet may,

that husbands are requited in the selfe-same kinde; you neede not finde fault at any such accident, either by knowledge thereof afterward, or hearing the same reported by any one; but rather you should referre it to generall publication, to the end that immodest men may know and finde it for truth, that if they have apprehension and capacity; women are therein not a jot inferiour to them. Which cannot but redound to your great benefit, because when any one knoweth, that another is as cunning and subtile as himselfe, he will not be so rashly adventurous in deceite. And who maketh any doubt, that if those sleights and trickes, whereof this dayes argument may give us occasion to speake, should afterwards be put in execution by men: would it not minister just reason, of punishing themselves for beguiling you, knowing, that (if you please) you have the like ability in your own power? Mine intent is to tell you, what a woman (though but in meane quality) did to her husband, upon a sodaine, and in a moment (as it were) for her own safety.

Not long since, there lived in Naples, an honest meane man, who did take to wife a faire and lusty young woman, being named *Peronella*. He professing the Trade of a Mason, and she Carding and Spinning, maintained themselves, in a reasonable condition, abating and abounding as their fortunes served. It came to passe, that a certaine young man, well observing the beauty and good parts of *Peronella*, became much addicted in affection towards her: and by his often and secret sollicitations, which he found not to be unkindly entertained, his successe proved answerable to his hope, no indifferency appearing in their purposes, but where her estate seemed weakest, his supplies made an addition of more strength.

Now for their securer meeting, to stand cleare from all matter of scandall or detection they concluded in this order between themselves. *Lazaro*, for so was *Peronellas* Husband named, being an early riser every morning, to ther to seek for work, or to effect it being undertaken: this amorous friend being therewith acquainted, and standing in some such convenient place, where he might see *Lazaroes* departure from his house, and yet himself no way discerned; soone *Lazaro* was no sooner gone but presently he enters the house, which stood in a very solitary street called the *Aversa*. Many mornings had they thus met together, to their no mean delight and contentation, till one especiall morning among the rest, when *Lazaro* was gone forth to work, and *Strignario* (so was the amorous

amorous young man named *Visting Perenella* in the house, upon a very urgent occasion, *Lazaro* returned backe againe, quite contrary to his former wont keeping forth all day, and never comming home till night.

Finding his doore to be fast lockt, and hee having knockt softly once or twice, he spake in this manner to himselfe. Fortune I thanke thee, for albeit thou hast made me poore, yet thou hast bestowed a better blessing on me with matching me with so good, honest, and loving a wife. Behold, though I went early out of my house, her self hath risen in the cold to shut the doore, to prevent the entrance of theeves, or any other that might offend us. *Perenella* having heard what her husband said, and knowing the manner of his knocke, said fearefully to *Striguario*. Alas, deare friend, what shall we doe? I am little lesse than a dead woman: For *Lazaro* my husband is come backe again, and I know not what to doe or say. He never returned in this order before now doubtlesse, he saw when you entred the doore, and for the safety of your honour and mine, creep under this brewing Fat, till I have opened the doore, to know the reason of his so soone returning.

Striguario made no delaying of the matter, but got himselfe under the Fat, and *Perenella* opening the doore for her husbands entrance, with a frowning countenance, spake thus unto him. What meaneth this so early returning home again this morning? It seemeth thou intendest to doe nothing to day, having brought backe thy tooles in thy hand. If such be thine intent, how shall we live? Where shall we have bread to fill our bellies? Doest thou thinke, that I will suffer thee to pawn my Gowne, and other poore garments, as heretofore thou hast done? I that Card and Spinne both night and day, till I have worne the flesh from my fingers; yet all will hardly finde oyle to maintaine our Lampe. Husband, husband, there is not one neighbour dwelling by us, but makes a mockery of me, and tels me plainely, that I may be ashamed to drudge and moyle as I doe; wondering not a little, how I am able to endure it; and thou returnest home with thy hands in thy hose, as if thou hadst no worke at all to doe this day.

Having thus spoken, she fell a weeping, and then thus began againe. Poore wretched woman as I am, in an unfortunate houre was I borne, and in a much worse when I was made thy wife. I could have had a proper, handsome young man; one that would have maintained me brave and gallantly: but, beast as I was to forgoe my good, and cast my selfe away on such a

begger as thou art, and whom none would have had, but such an Asse as I. Other women live at hearts ease, and in jollity, having their amorous friends and loving Paramours, yea, one, two, three at once, making their husbands looke like a Moone crescent, whereon they shine Sun-like, with amiable lookes, because they know not how to helpe it: when I (poore foole) live here at home a miserable life, not daring once to dreame of such follies, a poore innocent soule, heartlesse and harmelesse.

Many times, sitting and sighing to my selfe: Lord, thinke I, of what mettle am I made? Why should I not have a Friend in a corner, as well as others have? I am flesh and bloud, as they are, not made of brasse or iron, and therefore subject to womens frailty. I would thou shouldest know it husband, and I tell it thee in good earnest; That if I would doe ill, I could quickly find a friend at a need. Gallants there are good store, who (of my knowledge) love mee dearly, and have made me very large and liberall promises, of gold, silver, Iewels, and gay garments, if I would extend them the least favour. But my heart will not suffer me, I never was the daughter of such a mother, as had so much as a thought of such matters. No, I thanke our blessed Lady and Saint *Friswid* for it: and yet thou returnest home again, when thou shouldest be at work.

Lazaro, who stood all this while like a well beleeving Logger-head, demurely thus answered. Alas good wife! I pray you be not so angry, I never had so much as an ill thought of you, but know well enough what you are, and have made good proofe thereof this morning. Vnderstand therefore patiently (sweet wife) that I went forth to my worke, as dayly I use to doe, little dreaming (as I thinke you doe not) that it had beene Holy-day. Wife, this is the Feast day of Saint *Galeus*; whereon we may in no wise worke, and this is the reason of my so soon returning. Nevertheleſſe (deare wife) I was not careleſſe of our Houshold provision: For, though we worke not, yet wee must have food, which I have provided more than a moneth. Wife, I remembred the brewing Fat, whereof we have little or none at all, but rather it is a trouble to the house, than otherwise. I met with an honest friend, who flateth without at the doore to him I have sold the Fat for ten *Giglioti*, and hee tarrieth to take it away with him.

How Husband? replyed *Peronella*. Why now I am worse offended than before. Thou that art a man, walkest

walkest every where, and shouldest be experienced in worldly affaires: wouldest thou be so simple, as to sell such a brewing Fat for ten *Giglioses*? Why, I that am a poore ignorant woman, a house Dove, seldome going out of my doore; have sold it already for twelve *Giglioses*, to a very honest man, who (even a little before thy comming home,) came to me; wee agreed on the bargaine, and he is now underneath the Fat, to see whether it be sound or no. When credulous *Lazaro* heard this, hee was be ter contented than before, and went to him that tarried at the doore, saying. Good man, you may goe your way; for, whereas you offered me but ten *Giglioses* for the Fat, my loving wife hath sold it for twelve, I must maintaine what she hath done: so the man departed from thence, and the variance ended.

Peronella then said to her husband. Seeing thou art come home so luckily, helpe me to lift up the Fat, that the man may come forth, and then you two end the bargaine together. *Strignario*, who though hee was mewed up under the tubbe, had his eares open enough; and hearing the witty excuse of *Peronella* tooke himselfe free from future feare: and being come from under the Fat, pretending also, as if he heard nothing, nor saw *Lazaro*, looking round about him, said. Where is the good woman? *Lazaro* stepping forth boldly like a man, replyed: Here am I, what would you have Sir? Thou? quoth *Strignario*, what art thou? I aske for the good wife, with whom I made my match for the Fat. Honest Gentleman (answered *Lazaro*) I am the honest womans Husband, for lacke of a better, and I will maintaine whatsoever my wife hath done.

I crie you mercy Sir, replyed *Strignario*, I bargained with your wife for this brewing Fat, which I find to be whole and sound: onely it is uncleane within, hard crusted over with some dry soile upon it. which I know not how to get off if you will be the meanes of making it cleane, I have the money here for it. For that Sir (quoth *Peronella*) take you no care, although no match at all had bin made, what serves my husband for, but to make it cleane? Yes forsooth Sir, answered silly *Lazaro*, you shall have it neate and cleane before you pay the money.

So, stripping himselfe into his shirt, lighting a candle, and taking tooles fit for the purpose; the Fat was whelmed over him, and he being within it, wrought untill he sweated, with scraping and scrubbing. So that these poore Lovers, what they could not accomplish as

they would, neceſſity enforced them to performe as they might. And *Peronella*, looking in at the vent-hole, where the Liquor runneth forth for the meſhing; ſeemed to inſtruct her husband in the buſineſſe, as eſpying thoſe parts where the Fat was fowleſt, ſaying: There, there *Lazaro*, tickle it there, the Gentleman payes well for it, and is worthy to have it: but ſee thou doe thy ſelfe no harme good Husband. I warrant thee Wife, anſwered *Lazaro*, hurt not your ſelfe with leaning your ſtomacke on the Fat, and leave the cleanſing of it to me. To bee briefe, the brewing Fat was neatly cleanſed, *Peronella* and *Scriquario* both well pleaſed, the money paid, and honeſt meaning *Lazaro* not diſcontented.

Fryer Reynard, falling in love with a Gentlewoman, Wife to a man of good account; found a means to become her Goſſip. Afterward he being conferring cloſely with her in her Chamber, and her Husband comming ſodainely thither: he made him beleeve, that he came thither for no other end, but to cure his God-ſon by a charme, of a dangerous diſeaſe which he had by wormes.

The third Novell.

Serving as a friendly advertiſement to married women, that Monkes, Friars, and Prieſts may be none of their Goſſips, in regard of unavoidable perils enſuing thereby.

PHileſtratus told not this Tale ſo covertly, concerning *Lazaroes* ſimplicity, and *Peronellaes* witty policy; but the Ladies found a knot in the ruſh, and laughed not a little, at his queint manner of diſcourſing it. But upon the concluſion, the King looking upon Madam *Eliſa*, willed her to ſucceed next, which as willingly ſhe granted, and thus began. Pleaſant Ladies, the charme or conjuration wherewith Madam *Emilia* laid her night walking Spirit, maketh me to remember a Novell of another enchantment; which although it carrieth not commendation equall to the other, yet I intend to report it, becauſe it ſuteth to our preſent purpoſe, and I cannot ſodainely beſurniſht with another, anſwerable thereto in nature.

You are to underſtand then, that there lived in *Siena*, a proper young man, of good birth, and well friended, being named *Reynard*. Earneſtly he affected his neere dwelling neighbour, a beautifull Gentlewoman, and wife to a man of good eſteeme: of whom he grew half perſwaded, that if he could (without ſuſpicion) compaſſe private conference with her, he ſhould reach the height of his amorous deſigns. Yet ſeeing no likely

meanes

meanes wherewith to further his hope, and she being great with child, he resolved to become a Godfather to the child, at such time as it should be brought to Christening. And being inwardly acquainted with her husband, who was named *Credulano*; such familiar entercourses passed betweene them, both of *Reynards* kinde offer, and *Credulanoes* as courteous acceptance, that he was set down for a Gossip.

Reynard being thus embraced for Madam *Agnesiaes* Gossip, and this proving the onely colourable meanes for his safer permission of speech with her, to let her now understand by word of mouth, what long before she collected by his looks and behaviour: it fell out no way beneficiall to him, albeit *Agnesia* seemed not nice or scrupulous in hearing, yet she made a more precious care of her honour. It came to passe, within no long while after (whether by seeing his labour spent, or some other urgent occasion moving him thereto, I know not) *Reynard* would needs enter into Religion, and whatsoever strictnesse or austeritie hee found to bee in that kinde of life, yet hee determined to persevere therein, whether it were for his good or ill. And although within a short space, after he was thus become a Religious Monke, hee seemed to forget the former love which he bare to his Gossip *Agnesia*, and divers other enormons vanities beside: yet let me tell you, successe of time tutor'd him in them againe; and, without any respect to his poore holy habite, but rather in great derision and contempt thereof (as it were) he tooke an especiall delight, in wearing garments of much richer esteeme, yet favoured by the same monasticall profession, appearing (in all respects) like a Courtemision or Favorite, of a sprightly and Poeticall disposition, for composing Verses, Sonnets, and Canzons, singing them to sundry excellent instruments, and yet not greatly curious of his company, so they were some of the best and madam *Agnesia* one, his former Gossip.

But why doe I trouble my self, in talking thus of our so lately converted Friar, holy Father *Reynard*, when they of longer standing, and reputed meerely for Saints in life, are rather much more vile than he? Such is the wretched condition of this world, that they shame not (fat, foggy, and nastie Abby-lubbers) to shew how full-fedde they live in their Cloysters, with cherry-chekes, and smooth shining lookes, gay and gaudy garments so far from the least expression of humility, not walking in the streets like Doves: but high-crested like Cockes, with well crammed gorges. Nay which is

worse

worſe, if you did but ſee their chambers furniſhed with Gally pots of Electuaries, precious unguents, Apothecarie Boxes, filled with various Confections, Conſerves, excellent Perfumes and other goodly Glaſſes of artificiall Oyles and Waters: beſide Rundlets and ſmall Barrels full of Greeke Wine, *Muſcatella*, *Lacrimæ Chriſti*, and other ſuch like moſt precious Wines, ſo that (to ſuch as ſee them) they ſeeme not to be Chambers of Religious men; but rather Apothecaries Shops, or appertaining to Druggiſts, Grocers, Perfumers.

It is no diſgrace to them to be Gowty; becauſe when other men know it not, they alledge, that ſtrict faſting, feeding on groſſe meats (though never ſo little) continuall ſtudying, and ſuch like reſtraints from their bodies freer exerciſe, maketh them ſubject to many infirmities. And yet, when any one of them fall ſicke, the Phyſitian muſt miniſter ſuch counſell to them, as Chaſtity, Abſtinence from voluptuous meats, Diſcipline of the body, or any of thoſe matters appertaining to a modeſt religious life. For, concerning the plaine, vulgar, and Plebeian people, theſe holy Fathers are perſwaded, that they know nothing really belonging to a ſanctimonious life; as long watching, praying, diſcipline and faſting, which (in themſelves) are not able to make men looke leane, wretched and pale. Becauſe Saint *Dominicke*, Saint *Francis*, and divers other holy Saints beſide, obſerved the ſelf ſame religious orders and conſtitutions, as now their carefull ſucceſſours doe. Moreover, in example of thoſe forenamed Saints, who went well cloathed, though they had not three Garments for one, nor made of the fineſt Woollen excellent cloth: but rather of the courſeſt of all other, and of the common ordinary colour, to expell cold onely, but not to appeare brave or gallant, deceiving thereby infinite ſimple credulous ſoules, whoſe purſes (nevertheleſſe) are their beſt pay maſters.

But leave we this, and returne we backe to vertuous Fryar *Reynard*, who falling againe to his former apretines, became an often viſitant of his Goſſip *Agneſes*, and now he had learned ſuch a bluſhleſſe kind of boldneſſe; that he durſt be more inſtant with her (concerning his privie ſute) than ever formerly hee had been, yea, even to ſolicite the enjoying of his immodeſt deſires. The good Gentlewoman, ſeeing her ſelfe ſo importunately purſued, and Fryar *Reynard* appearing now (perhaps) of ſweeter and more delicate complexion, than at his entrance into Religion: at a ſeaſon time of his ſecret communing with her; ſhe anſwered him in as apt tearmes

armes as they use to doe, who are not greatly squeamish, in granting matters demanded of them.

Why how now Fryar *Reynard*? quoth she, Doe Godfathers use to move such questions? Whereto the Friar thus replyed. Madam, when I have laide off this holy habite (which is a matter very easie for me to doe) I shall seeme in your eye, in all respects like another man, quite from the course of any Religious life. *Agnesia*, biting the lip with a pretty smile, said; O my faire Starres! You will never be so unfriendly to me. What? You being my Gossip, would you have mee consent to such a sinne? Our blessed Lady shield me, for my ghostly Father hath often told me, that it is utterly unpardonable: but if it were, I feare too much confiding upon mine own strength. Gossip, Gossip, answered the Friar, you speake like a Foole, and feare (in this case) is wholly frivolous especially the motions moved by such an one as my selfe, who (upon repentance) can grant you pardon and indulgence presently. But I pray you let me aske you one question; Who is the neerest kinsman to your Sonne, either I that stood at the Font for his Baptisme, or your Husband that begot him? The Lady made answer that it was her husband. You say very true Gossip, replyed the Friar, and yet notwithstanding, doth not your husband (both at boord and bed) enjoy the sweet benefit of your company? Yes, said the Lady, why should he not? Then Lady (quoth *Reynard*) I, who am not so neere a Kinsman to your Son, as your Husband is, why may you not afford mee the like favour, as you doe him? *Agnesia*, who was no Logitian, and therefore could not stand on any curious answer, especially being so cunningly moved; beleeved, or rather made shew of beleeving, that the Godfather said nothing but truth, and thus answered. What woman is she (Gossip) that knoweth how to answer your strange speeches? And, how it came to passe, I know not, but such an agreement passed betweene them, that, for once onely (so it might not infringe the league of Gossip-ship, but that title to countenance their further intent) such a favour should be afforded, so it might stand cleare from suspicion.

An especiall time being appointed, when this amorous Combate should be fought in loves field, Friar *Reynard* came to his Gossips house, where none being present to hinder his purpose, but only the Nurse which attended on the child, who was an indifferent faire and proper woman, this holy brother that came thither in his company (because Friars were not allowed to walke

walke alone) was sent aside with her into the Pigeon loft, to enstruct her in a new kinde of *Paternoster*, lately devised in their holy Convent. In the meane while, as Friar *Reynard* and *Agnesia* were entring into her Chamber, she leading her little son by the hand, and making fast the doore for their better safety: the Friar laid by his holy habite, Cowle, Hood, Booke, and Beads to be (in all respects) as other men were. No sooner were they thus entered the Chamber, but her husband *Credulano*, being come into the house, and unseene of any, staid not till he was at the Chamber doore, where he knockt, and called for his wife.

She hearing his voyce: Alas Gossip (quoth she) what shall I doe? My Husband knocketh at the doore, and now he will perceive the occasion of our so familiar acquaintance. *Reynard* being stript into his Trusse and streight Trouses, began to tremble and quake extreedingly. I heare your Husbands tongue Gossip, said he, and seeing no harme as yet hath beene done, if I had but my garments on againe; we would have one excuse or other to serve the turne, but till then you may not open the doore. As womens wits are seldome gadding abroad, when any necessity concerneth them at home: even so *Agnesia*, being sodainely provided of an invention, both how to speake and carry her selfe in this extremity, said to the Friar. Get on your Garments quickly, and when you are cloathed, take your little Godson in your armes, and listning well what I shall say, shape your answers according to my words, and then referre the matter to me. *Credulano* had scarsely ended his knocking, but *Agnesia* stepping to the doore, said: Husband I come to you. So she opened the doore, and (going forth to him) with a chearfull countenance thus spake. Beleeve me Husband, you could not come in a more happy time, for your young Son was sodainely extreamly sicke, and (as good Fortune would have it) our loving Gossip *Reynard* chanced to come in; and questionlesse, but by his good prayers, a dother religious paines, we had utterly lost our child, for he had no life left in him.

Credulano, being as credulous as his name imported, seemed ready to swoune with sodaine conceit: Alas good wife (quoth he) how happened this? Sit downe sweet Husband (said she) and I will tell you all. Our childe was sodainely taken with a swounding, wherein I being unskillfull did verily suppose him to be dead, not knowing what to doe or say. By good hap our Gossip *Reynard* came in, and taking the childe in his armes, said

said to me. Gossip, this is nothing else but Wormes in the belly of the child, which ascending to the heart, must needs kill the child, without all question to the contrary. But be of good comfort Gossip, and feare not, for I can charme them in such sort, that they shall all die, and before I depart hence, you shall see your Son as healthfull as ever. And because the manner of this charme is of such nature, that it required prayer and exercising in two places at once: Nurse went up with his holy Brother into our Pigeon loft, to exercise their devotion there, while wee did the like here, For none but the Mother of the child must be present at such a mysterie, nor any enter to hinder the operation of the charme; which was the reason of making fast the Chamber door. You shall see husband anon the child, which is indifferently recovered in his armes, and if Nurse and his holy Brother were returned from their meditations; he saith, that the charme would then be fully effected; for the child beginneth to looke chearfull and merry.

So dearly did *Credulano* love the child, that he verily beleeved what his wife had said, never misdoubting any other treachery: and lifting up his eyes, with a vehement sigh, said, Wife, may I not goe in and take the child into my armes? Oh no, not yet good husband (quoth she) in any case, lest you should overthrow all that is done. Stay but a little while, I will goe in again, and if all be well, then will I call you. In went *Agnesia* againe, making the doore fast after her: The Friar having heard all the passed speeches, by this time he was fitted with his habite, and taking the child in his armes, he said to *Agnesia*. Gossip, me thought I heard your Husbands voyce, is hee at your Chamber doore? Yes Gossip *Reynard* (quoth *Credulano* without, while *Agnesia* opened the doore, and admitted him entrance) indeed it is I. Come in Sir I pray you, replyed the Friar, and here receive your child of me, who was in great danger, of your ever seeing him any more alive. But you must take order, to make an Image of waxe, agreeing with the stature of the childe, to bee placed upon the Altar before the Image of Saint *Francis*, by whose merits the child is thus restored to health.

The child beholding the Father made signes of coming to him, rejoycing merrily, as young infants use to doe; and *Credulano* clasping him in his armes, wept with conceit of joy, kissing him infinitely, and heartily thanked his Gossip *Reynard* for the recovery of his God son. The Friars brotherly companion who had given sufficient instructions to the Nurse, and a small

small purse full of Sisters white thread, which a Nunne (after shrift) had bestowed on him, upon the husbands admittance into the chamber (which they easily heard) came in also to them, and seeing all in very good termes, they holpe to make a joyfull conclusion, the Brother saying to Friar *Reynard*: Brother, I have finished all those four Iaculatory prayers, which you comanded me.

Brother, answered *Reynard*, you have a better breath than I, and your successe hath prooved happier than mine, for before the arrivall of my Gossip *Credulous*, I could accomplish but two Iaculatory prayers onely, but it appeareth, that we have both prevailed in our devote desires, because the child is perfectly cured. *Credulous* calling for wine and good cheere, feasted both the Friars very jocondly, and then conducting them forth of his house, without any further intermission, caused the childs Image of waxe to be made; and sent it to be placed on the Altar of S. *Francis* among many other the like oblations.

Tofano in the night season, did locke his wife out of his house, and she not prevailing to get entrance againe by all the entreaties shee could possibly use: made him beleeve that she had throwne her self into a Well, by casting a great stone into the same Well. Tofano hearing the fall of the stone into the Well, and being perswaded that it was his wife indeed, came forth of his house, and ran to the Wells side. In the meane while, his wife got into the house, made fast the doore against her husband, and gave him many reproachfull speeches.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is manifested, that the malice and subtilty of women, surpasseth all the Art and Wit in man.

SO soone as the King perceived, that the Novell reported by Madam *Eliza* was finished: hee turned himselfe to Madam *Lauretta*, and told her that it was his pleasure, that she should now begin the next; whereto she yeelded in this manner. O Love: What, and how many are thy prevailing forces? How strange are thy foresights? And how admirable thine attempts? Where is, or ever was the Philosopher or Artist, that could enstruct the wiles, escapes, preventions, and demonstrations, which sodainely thou teacheſt such, as are thy apt and understanding Schollars indeed? Certaine it is, that the documents and eruditions of all other whatsoever, are of weake or of no worth, in respect of thine: as hath notably appeared by the demonstrances already past, and whereto (worthy Ladies)

I will adde another of a simple woman, who taught her husband such a lesson, as she never learned of any, but Love himselfe.

There dwelt sometime in Arezzo (which is a faire Village of *Tuscany*) a rich man named *Tofano*, who enjoyed in marriage a young beautifull woman, called *Ghita*: of whom (without any occasion given, or reason knowne to himselfe) he became exceeding jealous. Which his wife perceiving, she grew much offended therat, and tooke it in great scorne, that she should be servile to so vile and slavish a condition. Oftentimes she demanded of him, from whence this jealousie in him rectived originall, he having never heard of any; he could make her no other answer, but what his own bad humour suggested, and drove him every day almost to deaths doore, by feare of that which no way needed. But whether as a just scourge for this his grosse folly, or a secret decree, ordained to him by Fortune and the Fates, I am not able to distinguish: It came so to passe, that a young Gallant made meanes to enjoy her favour, and she was so discreetly wise in judging of his worthinesse, that affection passed so farre mutually between them, as nothing wanted, but effects to answer words, suited with time and place convenient, for which order was taken as best they might, and to avoid all evill suspition, which should make against their honours.

Among many other evill conditions, very frequent and familiar in her husband *Tofano*; he tooke a great delight in drinking, which not onely he held to be a commendable quality, but was alwayes solicited thereto: that *Ghita* her selfe began to like and allow it in him, feeding his humour so effectually, with drinking, quaffing, and carowsing, that (at any time when she listed) she could make him bowsie beyond all measure: and leaving him sleeping in this drunkennesse, would alwayes get her selfe to bed. By help hereof, she compassed the first familiarity with her friend, yea, divers times after, as occasion served: and so confidently did she build on her Husbands drunkennesse, that not only she adventured to bring her friend home into her own house; but also would as often go to his, which was somewhat neere at hand, and abide with him there, the most part of the night season.

While *Ghita* thus continued on these amorous courses, it fortuned that her slie suspicious husband, began to perceive, that though she drunke very much with him, yea, untill he was quite spent and gone: yet shee remained fresh and sober still, and thereby imagined strange

ſtrange matters, that he being faſt aſleepe, his Wife tooke advantage of his drowſineſſe, and might—and ſo forth. Being deſirous to make experience of this his diſtruſt, he returned home at night (not having drunke any thing all that day) diſſembling both by his words and behaviour, as if hee were notoriouſly drunke indeed. Which his wife conſtantly beleeving, ſaid to her ſelf: That he now had more need of ſleep than drinke; getting him immediately into his warme bed; and then going down the ſtaires again, ſoftly went out of doores unto her Friends houſe, as formerly ſhe had uſed to doe, and there ſhe remained untill midnight.

Tofano perceiving that his Wife came not to bed, and imagining to have heard his doore open and ſhut: aroſe out of his bed, and calling his wife *Cheta* divers times, without any anſwer returned: he went downe the ſtaires, and finding the doore but cloſed too, made it faſt and ſure on the inſide, and then got him up to the windowe, to watch the returning home of his Wife, from whence ſhe came, and then to make her conditions apparently knowne. So long there he ſtaied, till at the laſt ſhe returned indeed, and finding the doore ſo ſurely ſhut, ſhe was exceeding ſorrowfull, eſſaying how ſhe might get it open by ſtrength: which when *Tofano* had long ſuffered her in vaine to approve, thus he ſpake to her. *Cheta, Cheta,* all thy labour is meerely loſt, becauſe here is no entrance allowed for thee; therefore returne to the place from whence thou cameſt, that all thy friends may judge of thy behaviour, and know what a night-walker thou art become.

The woman hearing this unpleaſing language, began to uſe all humble entreaties, deſiring him (for charities ſake) to open the doore and admit her entrance, becauſe ſhe had not beene in any ſuch place as his jealous ſuſpition might ſuggeſt to him: but onely to viſit a weake ſicke neighbour, the nights being long, ſhee not (as yet) capable of ſleepe, nor willing to ſit alone in the houſe. But all her perſwaſions ſerved to no purpoſe, he was ſo ſettled in his own opinion, that all the Towne ſhould now ſee her nightly gadding, which before was not ſo much as ſuſpected. *Cheta* ſeeing, that faire meanes would not prevaile, ſhe entred into rough ſpeeches and threatnings: ſaying, If thou wilt not open the doore and let me come in, I will ſo ſhame thee, as never baſe man was. As how I pray thee? anſwered *Tofano*, what canſt thou doe to me?

The woman, whom love had inſpired with ſprightfull counſell, ingeniouſly inſtructing her what to do in this

this distresse; sternely thus replyed. Before I will suffer any such shame as thou intendest towards me, I will drowne my selfe here in this Well before our doore, where being found dead, and thy villanous jealousie so apparently knowne, beside thy more than beastly drunkennesse: all the neighbours will constantly beleeve, that thou didst first strangle me in the house, and afterwards throw me into this Well. So either thou must flie upon the supposed offence, or lose all thy goods by banishment, or (which is much more fitting for thee) have thy head smitten off, as a wilfull murtherer of thy wife; for all will judge it to be no otherwise. All which words moved not *Tofano* a jot from his obstinate determination: but he still persisting therein, thus she spake. I neither can nor will longer endure this base villany of thine: to the mercy of heaven I commit my soul, and stand there my wheel, a witness against so hard hearted a murtherer.

No sooner had she thus spoke, but the night being so extreamly darke, as they could not discerne one another; *Cheta* went to the Well, where finding a very great stone, which lay loose upon the brim of the well, even as if it had beene laid there on purpose, she cryed out aloud saying, Forgive me faire heavens, and so threw the stone down into the Well. The night being very still and silent, the fall of the great stone made such a dreadfull noise in the Well; that he hearing it at the windowe, thought verily she had drowned her self indeed. Whereupon, running downe hastily, and taking a Bucket fastened to a strong cord: he left the doore wide open, intending speedily to helpe her. But she standing close at the doores entrance, before he could get to the Wells side; she was within the house, softly made the doore fast on the inside, and then went up to the windowe, where *Tofano* before had stood talking to her.

While he was thus dragging with his Bucket in the Well, crying and calling *Cheta*, take hold good *Cheta*, and save thy life: she stood laughing in the Windowe, saying, Water should be put into wine before a man drinkes it, and not when he hath drunk too much already. *Tofano* hearing his wife thus to floute him out of his windowe, went backe to the doore, and finding it made fast against him: hee willed her to grant him entrance. But she forgetting all gentle Language, which formerly she had used to him: in meere mockery and derision (yet intermixed with some sighes and teares, which women are said to have at command) out aloud (because all the neighbours should heare her) thus she replyed.

Beastly

Beastly drunken Knave as thou art, this night thou shalt not come within these doores, I am not able to endure thy base behaviour, it is more than high time that thy course of life should be publikely knowne, and at what drunken houres thou returnest home to thy house. *Tofano*, being a man of very impatient Nature, was as bitter unto her in words on the other side, which the neighbours about them (both men and women) hearing; looked forth of their windowes, and demanding a reason for this their disquietnesse, *Cheta* (seeming as if she wept) said.

Alas my good Neighbours, you see at what unfitting houres, this bad man, comes home to his house, after he hath lyen in a Taverne all day drunke, sleeping and snorting like a Swine. You are my honest witnesses, how long I have suffered this beastlinesse in him, yet neither your good counsell, and my too often loving admonitions, can worke that good which wee have expected. Wherefore, to trie if shame can procure any amendment, I have shut him out of doores, untill his drunken fit be over-past, and so he shall stand to coole his feet.

Tofano (but in very uncivill manner) told her being abroad that night, and how she had used him: But the neighbours seeing her to be within the house, and believing her, rather than him, in regard of his too well known ill qualities; very sharpely reprooved him, gave him grosse speeches, pitying that any honest Woman should be so continually abused and wronged. Now my good Neighbours (quoth shee) you see what manner of man he is. What would you thinke of mee, if I should walke the streets thus in the night time, or be so late out of mine own house, as this dayly Drunkard? I was afraid that you would have given credit to his dissembling speeches, when he told you, that I was at the Welles side, and threw something into the Well: but that I know your better opinion of me, and how seldome I am to bee seen out of doores, although he would induce your sharper judgement of mee, and lay that shame upon me, wherein he hath sinned himself.

The Neighbours both men and women, were all very severely incensed against *Tofano*, condemning him for his great fault that night committed, and avouching his wife to be vertuous and honest. Within a little while, the noyse passing from neighbour to neighbour, at the length it came to the eares of her Kindred, who forthwith resorted thither, and hearing how sharply the neighbours reprehended *Tofano*: they tooke him, soundly bastinadoed him, and hardly left any bone of him unbruised.

A stur-

Afterward, they went into the house, tooke all such things thence as belonged to her, taking her also with them to their dwelling, and threatning *Tofano* with further infliction of punishment, both for his drunkennesse, and causlesse jealousie.

Tofano perceiving how curstly they had handled him, and what crooked meanes might further be used against him, in regard her Kindred and Friends were very mighty: thought it much better, patiently to suffer the wrong already done him, than by obstinate contending to proceed farther, and fare worse. He became a suter to her Kindred, that all might be forgotten and forgiven, in recompence whereof, he would not onely refrain from drunkennesse, but also, never more be jealous of his wife. This being faithfully promised, and *Checa* reconciled to her Husband, all strife was ended, shee enjoyed her Friends favour, as occasion served, but yet with such discretion as it was not noted. Thus the Coxcombe foole, was faine to purchase his peace, after a notorious wrong sustained, and further injuries to be offered.

A Iealous man, cloathed with the habite of a Priest, became the Confessour to his own Wife; who made him believe, that she was deeply in love with a Priest, which came every night, and lay with her; by meanes of which confession, while her jealous Husband watched the doore of his house; to surprize the Priest when he came: she that never meant to doe amisse, had the company of a secret Friend, who came over the top of the house to visite her, while her foolish Husband kept the doore.

The fifth Novell.

In iust scorne and mockery of such Iealous husbands, that will be so idle headed upon no occasion. And yet when they have good reason for it, doe least of all suspect any such injury.

MAdam *Lauretta* having ended her Novell every one commended the Woman, for fitting *Tofano* in his kind; and, as his jealousie and drunkennesse justly deserved: the King (to prevent all losse of time) turned to Madam *Fiammetta*, commanding her to follow next: whereupon, very graciously, she began in this manner.

Noble Ladies, the precedent Novell delivered by Madam *Lauretta*, maketh me willing to speake of another jealous man; as being halfe perswaded, that whatsoever is done by their Wives, and especially upon no occasion given, they doe no more than well becommeth them. And if those grave heads, which were the first instituters of lawes, had diligently observed all

things;

things; I am of the minde, that they would have ordained no other penalty for women, than they appointed against such, as (in their owne defence) doe offend any other. For jealous husbands, are meere infidiators of their Wives lives, and most diligent pursuers of their deaths, being lockt up in their houses all the Week long, imployed in nothing but domesticke drudging affaires: which makes them desirous of high Festivall dayes, to receive some little comfort abroad, by an honest recreation or pastime, as Husbandmen in the Fields, Artizans in our City, or Governours in our judiciall Courts; yea as the Lord himselfe, who rested the seaventh day from all his travels. In like manner, it is so willed and ordained by the Lawes, as well divine as humane, which have regard to the glory of God, and for the common good of every one; making distinction betweene those dayes appointed for labour, and the other determined for rest. Whereto jealous persons (in no case) will give consent, but all those dayes (which for other women are pleasing and delightfull) unto such, over whom they command, are most irkesome, sad and sorrowful, because then they are lockt up, and very strictly restrained. And if question were urged, how many good women doe live and consume away in this torturing hell of affliction: I can make no other answer, but such as feele it, are best able to discover it. Wherefore to conclude the probeme to my present purpose, let none be over rash in condemning women, for what they do to their husbands, being jealous without occasion; but rather commend their wit and providence.

Sometime (faire Ladies) there lived in *Arimino*, a Merchant, very rich in wealth and worldly possessions, who having a beautifull Gentlewoman to his wife, he became extreamly jealous of her. And he had no other reason for this foolish conceit; but, like as he loved her dearely, and found her to be very absolutely faire: even so he imagined, that although she devised by her best meanes to give him content; yet others would grow enamoured of her, because she appeared so lovely to all. In which respect, time might tutor her to affect some other beside himselfe: the only common argument of every bad minded man, being weak and shallow in his owne understanding. This jealous humour increasing in him more and more, hee kept her in such narrow restraint, that many persons condemned to death, have enjoyed larger liberty in their imprisonment. For, she might not be present at Feastes, Weddings, nor goe to Church, or so much as to be seene at the

the doore: Nay, she durst not stand in her Windowe, nor looke out of her house, for any occasion whatsoever. By meanes whereof, life seemed most tedious and offensive unto her, and she supported it the more impatiently, because she knew her selfe not any way guilty.

Seeing her husband still persist in this shamefull course towards her; she studied, how she might best comfort her selfe in this desolate case; by devising one meanes or other (if any were to be found) whereby he might be requited in his kinde, and beare that Badge of shame whereof he was now but onely afraid. And because she could not gaine so small a permission, as to be seene at any window, where (haply) she might have observed some one passing by in the street, discerning a little parcell of her love: she remembred at length, that in the next house to her husbands (they both joyning close together) there dwelt a young proper Gentleman, whose perfections carried correspondencie with her desires. She also considered with her selfe, that if there were any partition wall; such a chinke or cranny might easily be made therein, by which (at one time or other) she should gaine a sight of the young Gentleman, and find an houre so fitting, as to conferre with him, and bestow her lovely favour on him, if he pleased to accept it. If successe (in this case) proved answerable to her hope, then thus she resolved to outrun the rest of her wearisome dayes, except the frensie of mad jealousie did finish her husbands loathed life before.

Walking from one roome to another, thorough every part of the house; and no wall escaping without diligent surveying, on a day when her husband was absent from home, she espyed in a corner very secret, an indifferent cleft in the wall, which though it yeelded no full view on the other side, yet she plainly perceived it to be an handsome Chamber, and grew more than halfe perswaded, that it might either be the Chamber of *Philippo* (for so was the neighbouring young Gentleman named) or else a passage guiding thereto. A Chambermaide of hers, who compassioned her case very much; made such observance, by her Mistresses direction, that she found it to be *Philippoes* bed-Chamber, and where alwayes he used to lodge alone. By often visiting this rift or chinke in the wall, especially when the Gentleman was there; and by throwing in little stones, flowers, and such like things, which still fell in his way as hee walked: so farre she prevailed, that he stepping to the chinke, to know from whence they came; she called softly to him, who knowing her

voyce,

voyce, there they had such private conference together, as was not any way displeasing to either. So that the chinke being made a little larger; yet so, as it could not be easily discerned, their mouthes might meet with kisses together, and their hands folded each in other; but nothing else to be performed, for continuall feare of the jealous husband.

Now the Feast of Christmasse drawing neere, the Gentlewoman said to her Husband; that, if it stood with his liking, she would doe such a duty as fitted with so solemne a time, by going early in a morning unto Church, there to be confessed, and receive her Saviour, as other Christians did. How now? replyed the jealous Asse, what sinnes have you committed, that should need confession? How Husband? quoth shee, what doe you thinke me to be a Saint? Who knoweth not I pray, that I am as subject to sinne, as any other woman living in the world? But my sinnes are not to be revealed to you, because you are no Priest. These words inflamed his jealousie more violently than before, and needs must he know what sinnes she had committed, and having resolved what to doe in this case, made her answer: That he was contented with her motion, always provided, that she went to no other Church, than to their own Chappell, betimes in a morning; and their own Chaplain to confesse her, or some other Priest by him appointed, but not any other: and then she to returne home presently again. She being a woman of acute apprehension, presently collected his whole intention: but seeming to take no knowledge thereof, replyed, that she would not swerve from his direction.

When the appointed day was come, shee arose very early, and being prepared answerably to her own liking, to the Chappell she went as her Husband had appointed, where her jealous Husband (being much earlier risen than she) attended for her comming: having so ordered the matter with his Chaplain, that hee was cloathed in his Cowle, with a large Hood hanging over his eyes, that she could not know him, and so hee went and sate down in the Confessors place. She being entred into the Chappell, and calling for the Priest to heare her confession, he made her answer: that hee could not intend it, but would bring her to another holy Brother, who was at better leasure than hee. So to her Husband he brought her, that seemed (in all respects) like the Confessor himselfe: save onely his Hood was not so closely veiled, but she knew his beard, and said to her selfe. What a mad world is this, when lealousie can

can metamorphose an ordinary man into a Priest? But, let me alone with him, I meane to fit him with that which he lookes for.

So, appearing to have no knowledge at all of him, downe she fell at his feete, and he had conveied a few Cherry stones into his mouth, to trouble his speech from her knowledge; for, in all things else he thought himselfe to be sufficiently fitted for her. In the course of her Confession, she declared, that she was married to a most wicked jealous Husband, and with whom shee lead a very hatefull life. Nevertheless (quoth shee) I am indifferently even with him, for I am beloved of a holy Friar, that every night cometh and lieth with me. When the jealous husband heard this, it stabbed him like a dagger to the heart, and but for his greedy covetous desire to know more; he would faine have broke off confession, and got him gone. But perceiving that it was his wisest course, he questioned further with his wife, saying: Why good Woman, doth not your Husband lodge with you? Yes Sir, quoth she. How is it then possible (replyed the husband) that the Friar can lodge there with you too?

She dissembling a farre fetched sigh, thus answered. Reverend Sir, I know not what skillfull Art the Friar useth, but this I am sure, every doore in our house will flie open to him, so soone as he doth but touch it. Moreover, he told me, that when he cometh unto my Chamber doore, he speaketh certaine words to himself, which immediately casteth my Husband into a dead sleep, and understanding him to be thus sleepily entranced: he openeth the doore, entreth in, lyeth down by me, and this every night he faileth not to doe. The jealous Coxcombe angerly scratching his head, and wishing his wife halfe hang'd, said: Mistresse, this is very badly done, for you should keepe your self from all men, but your husband onely. That shall I never doe, answered she, because (indeed) I love him dearely. Why then (quoth our supposed Confessor) I cannot give you any absolution. I am the more sorry Sir, said she, I came not hither to tell you any leasings, for if I could, yet I would not, because it is not good to fable with such Saint-likemen as you are. You doe therein (quoth he) the better, and surely I am very sorry for you, because in this dangerous condition, it will be the utter losse of your soule: nevertheless, both for your husbands sake and your owne, I will take some paines, and use such especiall prayers in your name, which may (perchance) greatly availe you. And I purpose now and then, to send you a Novice or young

Clearke of mine, whom you may ſafely acquaint with your minde, and ſignifie to me, by him, whether they have done you good, or no; and if they proove helpefull, then will we proceede therein. Alas Sir, ſaid ſhe, never trouble your ſelfe, in ſending any body to our houſe; becauſe if my husband ſhould know it, he is ſo extreamely jealous, as all the world cannot otherwiſe perſwade him but that he commeth thither for no honeſt intent, and then I ſhall live worſe than now I doe. Feare not that, good woman, quoth he, but beleeve it certainely, that I will have ſuch a care in this caſe, as your Husband ſhall never ſpeake thereof to you. If you can doe ſo Sir, ſaid ſhe, without any prejudice to my honour, and my husbands further jealouſie, proceede I pray you, and I am well contented.

Confeſſion being thus ended, and ſhe receiving ſuch penance as he appointed, ſhe aroſe on her feete, and went to heare Maſſe; while our jealous woodcocke (ſtilly puffing and blowing) put off his Religious habite, returning home preſently to his houſe, beating his braines all the way as he went, what meanes he might beſt deviſe, for the taking of his wife and the Fryar together, whereby to have them both ſeverely puniſhed. His wife being come home from the Chappell, diſcerned by her Husbands lookes that he was like to keepe but a ſorry Chriſtmaſſe: yet he uſed his utmoſt induſtry, to conceale what he had done, and which ſhe knew as well as himſelfe. And he having fully reſolved, to watch his owne ſtreete doore the next night enſuing in perſon, in expectation of the Friars comming, ſaid to his wife, I have occaſion both to ſup and lodge out of my houſe this night, wherefore ſee you the ſtreet doore that it be ſurely made faſt on the inſide, and the doore at the middeſt of the ſtaires, as alſo your owne Chamber-doore, and then (in Gods name) get you to bed. Whereto ſhee anſwered, that all ſhould be done as he had appointed,

Afterward, when ſhe ſaw convenient time, ſhe went to the chinke in the Wall, and making ſuch a ſigne as ſhe was wont to doe: *Phillippo* came thither, to whom ſhe declared her morſings affaires, and what directions her husband had given her. Furthermore ſhe ſaid, certaine I am that he will not depart from the houſe, but ſit and watch the doore without, to take one that comes not heere. If therefore, you can climbe over the houſe top and get in at our gutter window, you and I may conferre more familiarly together. The young Gentleman being no dullard, had his leſſon quickly

taught

taught him; and when night was come, *Geloso* (for so must we tearme the Cocke-braind husband) armes himselfe at all points, with a browne Bill in his hand, and so he fits to watch his owne doore. His wife had made fast all the doores, especially that on the midst of the staires, because hee should not (by any meanes) come to her Chamber; and so, when the houre served, the Gentleman adventured over the house top, found the gutter window, and the way conducting him to her Chamber, where I leave them to their further amorous conference.

Geloso more than halfe mad with anger, first, because he had lost his supper: next, having sitten almost all the night (which was extreamely cold and windie) his Armour much molesting him, and yet he could see no Friar come: when day drew neere and he ashamed to watch there any longer; conveyed himselfe to some more convenient place, where putting off his Armes, and seeming to come from the place of his Lodging; about the ninth houre, hee found his doore open, entred in, and went up the staires, going to dinner with his wife. Within a while after, according as *Geloso* had ordered the businesse, a youth came thither seeming to be the Novice sent from the Confessor, and he being admitted to speake with her, demanded, whether shee was troubled and molested that night passed, as formerly she had beene, or whether the party came or no? The Woman, who knew well enough the Messenger (notwithstanding all his formall disguise) made answer, that the party expected, came not: but if he had come, it was to no purpose; because her mind was now otherwise altered, albeit she changed not a jot from her amorous conclusion.

What should I now further say unto you? *Geloso* continued his watch many nights together, as hoping to surprize the Friar at his entrance, and his wife kept still her contented quarter, according as opportunity served. In the conclusion, *Geloso* being no longer able to endure his bootlesse watching, nor some (more than ordinary) pleasing countenance in his wife: one day demanded of her (with a very sterne and frowning brow) what secret sinnes she had revealed to the ghostly Father, upon the day of her shrift? The woman replyed, that shee would not tell him, neither was it a matter reasonable, or lawfull so to doe. Wicked Woman, answered *Geloso*: I know them all well enough, even in despight of thee, and every word that thou spakest unto him. But Huswife, now I must further know, what

the Friar is, with whom you are so farre in love, and (by meanes of his enchantments) lieth with you every night; tell me what and who he is, or else I meane to cut your throate.

The woman immediately made answer, it was not true that she was in love with any Friar. How? quoth *Gelosi*, didst not thou confesse so much to the ghostly Father, the other day when thou wast at shrift? No Sir, said she, but if I did, I am sure he would not disclose it to you, except he suffered you to be there present, which is an Article beyond his duty. But if it were so, then I confesse freely, that I did say so unto him. Make an end then quickely wife (quoth *Gelosi*) and tell me who the Friar is. The woman fell into a hearty laughter, saying, it liketh me singularly well, when a wise man will suffer himselfe to be led by a simple Woman, even as a sheepe is to the slaughter, and by the hornes. If once thou wast wise, that wisedome became utterly lost, when thou fellst into that divellish frenzie of jealousie, without knowing any reason for it: for, by this beast like and no manly humour, thou hast eclipsed no meane part of thy glory, and to the disgrace of my honour, and womanly reputation.

Dost thou imagine Husband, that if I were so blinded in mind, as thou in that which should informe thy understanding, I could have found out the Priest, that would needs be my Confessor? I knew thee husband to be the man, and therefore I prepared my wit accordingly, to fit thee with the foolish imagination which thou soughtest for, and (indeed) gave it thee. For, if thou hadst beene wise, as thou makest the world to beleeve by outward appearance, thou wouldst never have expressed such a baseneſse of minde, to borrow the colour of a sanctified cloake, thereby to undermine the secrets of thine honest meaning wife. Wherefore, to feede thee in thy fond suspition and imagination, I was the more free in my Confession, and told thee truely, with whom I had transgressed. Did I not tell thee, that I loved a Friar? And art not thou he whom I love, being a Friar, and my ghostly Father, though (to thine own shame) thou madest thy selfe so? I said moreover, that there is not one doore in our house, that can keepe it selfe shut against him, but (when he pleaseth) he comes and lies with me. Now tell me Husband, What doore in our house (hath at any time) beene shut against thee, but they are freely thine owne, and grant thee free entrance? Thou art the same Friar that confest me, and lieth every night with me, and so often as thou

thou ſentſt thy young Novice or Clearke to me, as often did I truely returne thee word, when the ſame Friar lay with me. But by jealouſie thou haſt loſt thine underſtanding and wit, that thou wilt hardly beleeve all this.

Alas good man, like an armed Watchman, thou ſatſt at thine own doore all a cold Winter night, perſwading me poore ſilly credulous woman, that upon urgent occaſions, thou muſt needs ſuppe and lodge from home. Remember thy ſelfe better hereafter, become a true underſtanding man, as thou ſhouldeſt be, and make not thy ſelf a mocking ſtock to them who knoweth thy jealous qualities as well as I doe, and be not ſo watchfull over me, as thou art. For I ſweare by my true honeſty, that if I were but as willing as thou art ſuſpicious, I could deceive thee, if thou hadſt an hundred eyes, as Nature affords thee but two, and have my pleaſure freely, yet thou be not a jot the wiſer, or my credit any way impaired.

Our wonderfull wiſe *Geloſo*, who (very adviſedly conſidered) that he had wholly heard his wives ſecret confeſſion, and dreamed on no other doubt beſide, but (perceiving by her ſpeeches) how he was become a ſcorne to all men: without returning other anſwer, confirmed his wife to be both wiſe and honeſt, and how when he had juſt occaſion to be jealous indeed, he utterly forſware it, and counted them all Coxcombes that would be ſo miſguided. Wherefore, ſhe having thus wiſely wonne the way to her owne deſires, and he reduced into a more humane temper: I hope there was no need of clambring over houſes in the night time like Cats, nor walking in at gutter Windowes; but all abuſes were honeſtly reformed.

Madam Iſabella, delighting in the company of her affected friend, named Lionello, and ſhe likewiſe beloved by Signior Lambertuccio: at the ſame time as ſhe had entertained Lionello, ſhe was alſo viſited by Lambertuccio. Her Husband returning home in the very inſtant; ſhe cauſed Lambertuccio to run forth with a drawn ſword in his hand, and (by that meanes) made an excuſe ſufficient for Lionello to her husband.

The Sixth Novell.

Wherein is manifeſtly diſcerned, that if love be driven to a narrow ſtraights in any of his attempts; yet he can accompliſh his purpoſe by ſome other ſupply.

WOndrously pleasing to all the company, was the reported Novell of Madam *Fiammetta*, every one applauding the Womans wisedome, and that she had done no more, than as the jealous foole her husband justly deserved. But she having ended, the King gave order unto Madam *Pampinea*, that now it was her turne to speake, whereupon thus she began. There are no meane store of people who say (though very false and foolishly) that Love maketh many to be out of their wits, and that such as fall in love, do utterly lose their understanding. To me this appeareth a very idle opinion, as already it hath been approved by the related discourses, and shall also be made manifest by another of mine owne.

In our City of *Florence*, famous for some good, though as many bad qualities, there dwelt (not long since) a Gentlewoman, endued with choice beauty and admirable perfections, being wife to Signior *Beltrame*, a very valiant Knight, and a man of great possessions. As oftentimes it commeth to passe, that a man cannot allwayes feede on one kinde of bread, but his appetite will be longing after change: so fared it with this Lady, named *Isabella*, she being not satisfied with the delights of her Husband, grew enamoured of a young Gentleman, called *Lionello*, compleate of person, albeit not of the faireſt fortunes, yet his affection every way suitable to hers. And full well you know (faire Ladies) that where the minds reciprocally accord, no diligence wanteth for the desires execution: so this amorous couple, made many solemne protestations, untill they should be friended by opportunity.

It fortuned in the time of their hopefull expectation a Knight, named Signior *Lambertuccio*, fell likewise in love with *Isabella*: but because hee was somewhat unsightly of person, and utterly unpleasing in the eye, she grew regardlesse of his frequent sollicitings, and would not accept either tokens, or letters. Which when he saw, (being very rich, and of great power) he sought to compasse his intent by a contrary course, threatning her with scandall and disgrace to her reputation, and with his associates to bandy against her best friends. She knowing what manner of man he was, and how able to abuse any with infamous imputations, wisely returned him hopefull promises, though never meaning to performe any, but onely (Lady-like) to flatter and foole him therewith.

Some few miles from Florence, *Beltrame* had a Castle of pleasure, and there his Lady *Isabella* used to be

be all Summer, as all other doe the like, being so possessed. On a day, *Beltrame* being ridden from home, and she having sent for *Lionello*, to take advantage of her husbands absence; accordingly he went, not doubting but to winne what he had long expected. Signior *Lambertuccio* on the other side, meeting *Beltrame* riding from his Castle, and *Isabella* now fit to enjoy his company: gallops thither with all possible speed, because hee would be no longer delaid. Scarcely was *Lionello* entred the Castle, and receiving directions by the waiting woman, to her Ladies Chamber: but *Lambertuccio* gallopped in at the Gate, which the woman perceiving, ranne presently and acquainted her Lady with the coming of *Lambertuccio*.

Now was shee the onely sorrowfull woman in the world; for nothing was now to be feared, but stormes and tempests, because *Lambertuccio*, spake no other than Lightning and Thunder, and *Lionello*, (being no lesse affraid than shee) by her perswasion crept behinde the bed, where he hid himselfe very contentedly. By this time *Lambertuccio* was dismounted from his Courser, which he fastened (by the bridle) to a ring in the wall, and then the waiting woman came to him, to guide him to her Lady and Mistresse: who stood at the staires head, graced him with a very acceptable welcome, yet marvelling much at his so sodaine coming. Lady (quoth he) I met your Husband upon the way, which granting mine accesse to see you; I came to claime your long delayed promise, the time being now so favourable for it.

Before he had uttered those words, *Beltrame* having forgot an especiall evidence in his study, which was the onely occasion of his journey came galloping backe againe into the Castle Court, and seeing such a goodly Gelding stand fastened there, could not readily imagine who was the owner thereof. The waiting woman, upon the sight of her Masters entring into the Court, came to her Lady, saying: My Master *Beltrame* is returned back, newly alighted and (questionlesse) coming up the stairs. Now was our Lady *Isabella*, ten times worse affrighted than before, (having two severall amorous suters in her house, both hoping, neither speeding, yet her credit lying at the stake for either) by this unexpected returne of her husband. Moreover, there were no possible meanes, for the concealing of Signior *Lambertuccio*, because his Gelding stood in the open Court, and therefore made a shrewd presumption against her, upon the least doubtfull question urged.

Nevertheleſſe, as womens wits are alwayes beſt upon ſudden conſtraints, looking forth of her Window, and eſpying her Husband preparing to come up: ſhee threw her ſelf on her day Couch, ſpeaking thus (earneſtly) to *Lambertuccio.* Sir, if ever you loved mee, and would have me faithfully to beleeve it, by the inſtant ſafety both of your own honour, and my life, doe but as I adviſe you. Forth draw your ſword, and with a fierce countenance, threatning death and deſtruction: runne downe the ſtaires, and when you are beneath, ſay, I ſweare by my beſt fortunes, although I miſſe of thee now here, yet I will be ſure to finde thee ſomewhere elſe. And if my Husband offer to ſtay you, or move any queſtion to you: make no other anſwer but what you formerly ſpake in fury. Beſide, ſo ſoone as you are mounted on horſebacke have no further conference with him, upon any occaſion whatſoever; to prevent all ſuſpition in him, of our future reſolutions and intendments.

Lambertuccio ſware many terrible oathes, to obſerve her directions in every part, and having drawne forth his ſword, graſping it naked in his hand, and ſetting worſe lookes on the buſineſſe, than ever Nature gave him, becauſe he had ſpent ſo much labour in vaine; he failed not in a jot of the Ladies injunction. *Beltrame* having commanded his horſe to ſafe cuſtody, and meeting *Lambertuccio* deſcending downe the ſtaires, ſo armed, ſwearing, and moſt extreamly ſtorming, wondring extraordinarily at his threatning words, made offer to embrace him, and underſtand the reaſon of this diſtemper. *Lambertuccio* repulſing him rudely, and ſetting foot in the ſtirrup, mounting on his Gelding, and ſpake nothing elſe but this. I ſweare by the faireſt of all my fortunes, although I miſſe of thee here: yet I will be ſure to finde thee ſomewhere elſe, and ſo hee gallopped mainely away.

When *Beltrame* was come up into his Wives Chamber, he found her caſt down upon her Couch, weeping, full of feare and greatly diſcomforted; wherefore hee ſaid unto her, What is hee that Signior *Lambertuccio* is ſo extreamely offended withall, and threatneth in ſuch implacable manner? The Lady ariſing from her Couch, going neere to the Beds, becauſe *Lionello* might the better heare her; returned her husband this anſwer. Husband (quoth ſhe) never was I ſo dreadfully affrighted til now, for a young Gentleman, of whence, or what he is, I know not, came running into our Caſtle for reſcue, being purſued by Sign. *Lambertuccio*, with a weapon ready drawne in his hand. Aſcending up our ſtaires, by what

fortune,

fortune, I know not, he found my Chamber doore ſtanding open, finding me alſo wo king on my Sampler, and in wonderfull feare and trembling.

Good Madam (quoth he) for Gods ſake helpe to ſave my life or elſe I ſhall be ſlaine here in your Chamber. Hearing his pitious cry, and compaſſionating his deſperate caſe; I aroſe from my worke, and in my demanding of whence, and what he was, that durſt preſume ſo boldly into my bed-chamber: preſently came up Signior *Lambertuccio* alſo, in the ſame uncivill ſort, as before I told you, ſwaggering and ſwearing; Where is this traiterous villaine? Hereupon I ſtept (ſomewhat ſtoutly) to my chamber doore, and as he offered to enter, with a womans courage I reſiſted him, which made him ſo much enraged againſt me, that when he ſaw me to debarre his entrance, after many terrible and vile oathes and vowes he ran downe the ſtaires again, in ſuch like manner as you chanced to meet him.

Now truſt me deare wife (ſaid *Beltrame*) you have behaved your ſelfe very well and worthily: for, it would have beene a moſt notorious ſcandall to us, if a man ſhould be ſlaine in our bed chamber: and Signior *Lambertuccio* carried himſelfe very diſhoneſtly, to purſue any man ſo outragiouſly, having taken my Caſtle as his Sanctuary. But alas wife, what is become of the poore affrighted Gentleman? In troth Sir (quoth ſhe) I know not, but (ſomewhere or other) hereabout he is hidden. Where art thou honeſt friend? ſaid plain meaning *Beltrame*, Come forth and feare not, for thine enemy is gone.

Lionello, who had heard all the fore-paſſed diſcourſe, which ſhe had delivered to her Husband *Beltrame*, came creeping forth amazedly (as one now very fearefully affrighted indeed) from under the further ſide of the bed, and *Beltrame* ſaid unto him, What a quarrell was this, between thee and furious *Lambertuccio*? Not any at all Sir, replyed *Lionello*, to my knowledge, which verily perſwadeth me; that either he is not well in his wits, or elſe he miſtaketh me for ſome other; becauſe, ſo ſoone as he ſaw me on the way, ſomewhat neere to this your caſtle, he drew forth his ſword, & ſwearing an horrible oath ſaid. Traitor, thou art a dead man. Upon theſe rough words, I ſtayed not to queſtion the occaſion of mine offending him: but fled from him ſo faſt as poſſibly I could; but confeſſe my ſelf (indeed) over-bold, by preſuming in your Ladies bed chamber, which yet (equalled with her mercie) hath beene the only meanes at this time, of ſaving my life.

She hath done like a good Lady anſwered *Beltrame*,

and I doe very much commend her for it. But recollect thy dismayed spirits together, for I will see thee safely secured hence; afterward look to thy self so well as thou canst. Dinner being immediately made ready, and they having merrily feasted together: hee bestowed a good Gelding on *Lionello*. and rode along with him to Florence, where he left him quietly in his owne lodging. The selfe-same Evening (according as *Isabella* had given instruction) *Leonello* conferred with *Lambertuccio*: and such an agreement passed betweene them, that though rough speeches were noised abroad, to set the better colour on the businesse; yet all matters were so cleanly carried, that *Beltrame* never knew this queint deceitfull policy of his wife.

Lodovico *discovered to his Mistresse Madam* Beatrix, *how amorously he was affected to her. She cunningly sent* Egano *her husband into his Garden, in all respects disguised like her selfe, while (friendly)* Lodovico *conferred with her in the mean while. Afterward* Lodovico *pretending a lascivious allurement of his Mistresse, thereby to wrong his honest Master, in stead of her, beateth* Egano *soundly in the Garden.*

The Seventh Novell.

Whereby is declared, that such as keepe many honest simple servants, may sometimes finde a knave among them, and one that proves to be over saucy with his Master.

THis so sodaine dexterity of wit in *Isabella*, related in very modest manner by Madam *Pamphea*, was not onely admired by all the company; but likewise passed with as generall approbation. But yet Madam *Philomena* (whom the King had commanded next to succeede) peremptorily said. Worthy Ladies, if I am not deceived, I intend to tell you another Tale presently; as much to be commended as the last.

You are to understand then, that it is no long time since, when there dwelt in Paris a *Florentine* Gentleman, who falling into decay of his estate, by over-bountifull expences; undertooke the degree of a Merchant, and thrived so well by his trading that he grew to great wealth, having one onely sonne by his wife, named *Lodovico*. This sonne, partaking somewhat in his Fathers former height of minde, and no way inclinable to deale in Merchandize, had no meaning to be a Shop-man, and therefore accompanied the Gentlemen of France, in sundry services for the King; among whom, by his singular good carriage and qualities, he happened to

to be not meanely esteemed. While thus he continued in the Court, it chanced, that certaine Knights, returning from *Ierusalem*, having there visited the holy Sepulcher, and coming into company where *Lodovico* was: much discourse passed among them, concerning the faire women of *France*, *England*, *Italy*, and other parts of the world, where they had beene, and what delicate beauties they had seene.

One in the company constantly avouched, that of all the women by them so generally observed, there was not any comparable to the wife of *Egano de Galuzzi*, dwelling in *Bologna*, and her name was Madam *Beatrix*, reputed to be the only faire woman of the world. Many of the rest maintained as much, having beene at *Bologna*, and likewise seene her. *Lodovico* hearing the woman to be so highly commended, and never (as yet) feeling any thought of amorous inclination; became sodainely toucht with an earnest desire of seeing her, and his mind could entertain no other matter, but only of travelling thither, yea, and to continue there, if occasion so served. The reason for his journey urged to his Father, was to visit *Ierusalem*, and the holy Sepulcher, which with much difficulty, at length he obtained his leave.

Being on his journey towards *Bologna*, by the name of *Anichino*, and not of *Lodovico*, and being there arrived; upon the day following, and having understood the place of her abiding: it was his good hap, to see the Lady at her Window; shee appearing in his eye farre more faire, than all reports had made her to be. Hereupon, his affection became so inflamed to her, as hee vowed, never to depart from *Bologna*, untill hee had obtained her love. And devising by what meanes hee might effect his hopes, he grew perswaded (setting all other attempts aside) that if he could be entertained into her Husbands service, and undergoe some businesse in the house, time might tutor him to obtaine his long expected, and much wished desire. Having given his attendants sufficient allowance, to spare his company and take no knowledge of him, selling his Horses also, and other notices as might discover him: he grew into acquaintance with the Hoaste of the house where hee lay, revealing an earnest desire in himself to serve some Lord or worthy Gentleman, if any were willing to give him entertainment.

Now beleeve me Sir (answered the Hoaste) you seeme worthy to have a good service indeed, and I know a noble Gentleman of this Citie, who is named *Egano*: he will (without all question) accept your offer,

for

for he keepeth many men of very good deserving, and you shall have my furtherance therein so much as may be. As he promised, so he performed, and taking *Anichino* with him unto *Egano*; so farre he prevailed by his friendly protestations, and good opinion of the young Gentleman; that *Anichino* was (without more adoe) accepted into *Eganos* service, than which nothing could be more pleasing to him. Now had he the benefit of daily beholding his hearts Mistresse, and so acceptable proved his service to *Egano*, that he grew very far in love with him: not undertaking any affaires whatsoever, without the advice and direction of *Anichino*, so that he reposed the most especiall trust in him, as a man altogether governed by him.

It fortuned upon a day, that *Egano* being ridden to flie his Hawke at the River, and *Anichino* remaining behinde at home, Madam *Beatrix* who (as yet) had taken no notice of *Anichinos* love to her (albeit her selfe, observing his faire carriage and commendable qualities, was highly pleased to have so seeming a servant) called him to play at Chesse with her: and *Anichino*, covetting nothing more than to content her, carried himselfe so dexterously in the game, that he permitted her still to win, which was no little joy to her. When all the Gentlewomen, and other friends there present, as spectators to behold their play, had taken their farewell, and were departed, leaving them all alone, yet gaming still, *Anichino* breathing forth an intire sigh, Madam *Beatrix* looking merrily on him, said, Tell me *Anichino*, art not thou angry to see me win? It should appeare so by that solemn sigh. No truely Madam, answered *Anichino*, a matter of farre greater moment, than losse of infinite games at the Chesse, was the occasion why I sighed. I pray thee (replyed the Lady) by the love thou beareſt me, as being my servant (if any love at all remain in thee towards me) give me a reason for that hearty sigh.

When he heard himselfe so severely conjured, by the love he bare to her, and loved none else in the world beside: he gave a farre more heart-sicke sigh, than before. Then his Lady and Mistresse entreated him seriously, to let her know the cause of those two deep sighes whereto *Anichino* thus replyed. *Madam*, if I should tell you, I stand greatly in feare of offending you: and when I have told you, I doubt your discovery thereof to some other. Beleeve me *Anichino* (quoth she) therein thou neither canst or shalt offend me. Moreover, assure thy self, that I wil never disclose it to any other, except I may doe it with thy consent. *Madam* (said he) seeing you have

protested such a solemne promise to me, I will reveale no meane secret unto you.

So with teares standing in his eyes, he told her what he was; where he heard the first report of her singular perfections, and instantly became enamoured of her, as the maine motive of his entring into her service. Then he humbly entreated her, that if it might agree with her good liking, she would be pleased to commiserate his case, and grace him with her private favours. Or if she might not be so mercifull to him; that yet she would vouchsafe, to let him live in the lowly condition as he did, and think it a thankfull duty in him, onely to love her. O singular sweetnesse, naturally living in faire feminine blood! How justly art thou worthy of praise in the like occasions? Thou couldest never be wonne by sighes and teares; but hearty imprecations have alwayes prevailed with thee, making thee apt and easie to amorous desires. If I had praises answerable to thy great and glorious deservings, my voice should never faint, nor my pen waxe weary, in the due and obsequious performance of them.

Madam *Beatrix*, well observing *Anichino* when hee spake, and giving credit to his so solemne protestations; they were so powerfull in prevailing with her that her senses (in the same manner) were inchanted; and sighes flew as violently from her, as before he had vented them: which stormy tempests being a little over-blowne, thus she spake. *Anichino*, my hearts deare affected friend, live in hope, for I tell thee truely, never could gifts, promises, nor any Courtings used to mee by Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, or other (although I have been solicited by many) win the least grace or favour at my hand, no, nor move me to any affection. But thou in a minute of time (compared with their long and tedious suing) hast expressed such a soveraigne potencie in thy sweet words, that thou hast made me more thine, than mine owne: and beleeve it unfainedly, I hold thee to be worthy of my love. Wherefore, with this kisse I freely give it thee, and make thee a further promise, that before this night shall be fully past, thou shalt in better manner perceive it. Adventure into my Chamber about the houre of midnight, I will leave the doore open: thou knowest on which side of the bed I use to rest, come thither and feare not; if I sleep the least gentle touch of thy hand will wake me, and then thou shalt see how much I love thee. So with a kinde kisse or two, the bargaine was concluded, she licensing his departure for that time, and he staying in hope of his hearts happinesse, he thought every houre a yeare.

In

In the meane while, *Egano* returned home from Hawking, and so soone as he had supt (being very weary) he went to bed, and his Lady with him, leaving her Chamber doore open, according as she had promised. At the houre appointed, *Anichino* came, finding the doore but easily put to, which (being entred) softly he closed againe in the same manner as he found it. Going to the beds side where the Lady lay, annd gently touching her breast with his hand, hee found her to be awake, and perceiving he was come according unto promise, she caught his hand fast with hers, and held him very strongly. Then turning (as she could) towards *Egano*, she made such meanes, as he awaked, whereupon she spake unto him as followeth.

Sir, yesternight I would have had a few speeches with you: but in regard of your wearinesse and early going to bed, I could not have any opportunity. Now, this time and place being most convenient, I desire to be resolved by you: Among all the men retained into your service; which of them doe you thinke to be the best, most loyall, and worthiest to enjoy your love? *Egano* answered thus: Wife, why should you move such a question to me? Doe not you know, that I never had any servant heretofore, or ever shall have hereafter, in whom I reposed the like trust as I have done, and doe in *Anichino*? But to what end is this motion of yours? I will tell you Sir (quoth she) and then be Judge your selfe, whether I have reason to move this question, or no. Mine opinion every way equalled yours, concerning *Anichino*, and that he was more just and faithfull to you, than any could be amongst the rest: But husband, like as where the water runneth stilleſt, the Foord is deepest, even so his smoothe lookes have beguiled both you and me: For no longer ago than this present day, no sooner were you ridden forth on Hawking, but he (belike purposely) tarrying at home, watching such a leisure, as best fitted his intent: was not ashamed to solicit me, both to abuse your bed, and mine owne spotlesse honour.

Moreover, he prosecuted his vile purpose with such alluring perswasions: that being a weake woman, and not able to endure over many amorous proofes (onely to acquaint you with his most sawcy immodestie, and to revenge you selfe upon him as best you may; your selfe being best able to pronounce him guilty) I made him promise to meete him in our Garden, presently after mid night and to finde me sitting under the Pine-tree; never meaning (as I am vertuous) to be there. But, that you may know the deceit and falsehood of your

your ſervant, I would have you to put on my night-gown, my head attire, and Chinne-cloth, and ſitting but a ſhort while there underneath the Pine-tree: ſuch is his inſatiate deſire, as he will not faile to come, and then you may proceede, as you finde occaſion.

When *Egano* heard theſe words, ſodainely he ſtarted out of bed, ſaying, Doe I foſter ſuch a Snake in mine owne boſome? Gramercie Wife for this politicke promiſe of thine, and beleeve me, I meane to follow it effectually. So on he put his Ladies Night-gowne, her ſmall head Attire and Chin cloth, going preſently downe into the Garden to expect *Anichinus* coming to the Pine-tree. But before the matter grew to this iſſue, let me demande of you, faire Ladies, in what a lamentable condition (as you may imagine) was poore *Anichino*; to be ſo detained by her, heare all his amorous ſuite diſcovered, and likely to draw very heavy afflictions on him? Vndoubtedly, he looked for immediate apprehenſion by *Egano*, impriſonment and publike puniſhment for his ſo malapert preſumption: and had it proved ſo, ſhe had much renowned her ſelf, and dealt with him but as he had juſtly deſerved.

But frailty in our feminine ſex, is too much prevalent, and makes us wander from vertuous courſes when we are well onward in the way to them. Madam *Beatrix*, whatſoever paſſed betweene her and *Anichino*, I know not, but, either to continue this new begunne league for further time, or, to be revenged upon her husbands ſimplicitie, in over-raſhly giving credite to ſo ſmoothe a lie; this was her adviſe to him, *Anichino*, (quoth ſhe) Take a good Cudgell in thy hand, then goe into the Garden ſo farre as the Pine; and there, as if formerly thou hadſt ſolicited me unto this ſecret meeting, onely but by way of approving my honeſty: in my name revile thy Maſter ſo bitterly as thou canſt, beſtowing many ſound blowes on him with thy Cudgell; yet urge the ſhame ſtill (as it were) to me, and never leave him, till thou haſt beaten him out of the Garden, to reach him keepe his bed another time. Such an apt Scholar as *Anichino* was in this kinde, needs no tutoring, but a word is enough to a ready Wit. To the Garden goes he, with a good Willowe Cudgell in his hand, and comming neere to the Pine-tree, there hee found *Egano* diſguiſed like to his Lady; who ariſing from the place where he ſate, went with chearefull geſture to welcome him; but *Anichino* (in rough and ſterne manner) thus ſpake unto him. Wicked, ſhameleſſe, and moſt immodeſt Woman, Art thou come, accor-

according to thine unchaſte and laſcivious promiſe? couldſt thou ſo eaſily credit (though I tempted thee, to try the vertue of thy continencie) I would offer ſuch a damnable wrong to my worthy Maſter, that ſo dearely loves me, and repoſeth his eſpecial confidence in me? Thou art much deceived in me, and ſhalt finde, that I hate to be falſe to him.

So lifting up the Cudgell, hee gave him therewith halfe a ſcore good baſtinadoes, laying them on ſoundly, both on his armes and ſhoulders: and *Egano* feeling the ſmart of them, durſt not ſpeake one word, but fled away from him ſo faſt as he could: *Auichino* ſtill following, and multiplying many other injurious ſpeeches againſt him, with the Epethites of ſtrumpet, luſtfull and unſatiable Woman. Goe thou lewde beaſt (quoth he) moſt unworthy the title of a Lady, or to be wife unto ſo good a natured man, as my Maſter is, to whom I will reveale thy moſt ungracious incivility to morrow, that hee may puniſh thee a little better then I have done.

Egano being thus well beaten for his Garden walke, got within the doore, and ſo went up to his Chamber againe: his Lady there demanding of him, whether *Auichino* came according to his promiſe, or no? Come? quoth *Egano*. Yes Wife, hee came, but dearely to my coſt: for he verily taking me for thee, hath beaten mee very extreamely, calling me an hundred Whores and Strumpets, reputing thee to be the wickedeſt woman living. In good ſadneſſe *Beatrix*, I wondered not a little at him that he would give thee any ſuch vile ſpeeches, with intent to wrong me in mine honour. Queſtionleſs, becauſe he ſaw thee to be joviall ſpirited, gracious and affable towards all men; therefore he intended to make triall of thine honeſt carriage. Well Sir (ſaid ſhe) twas happy that he tempted mee with words, and let you take the proofe of them by deeds: and let him thinke that I brooke thoſe words as diſtaſtably, as you doe or can, his ill deeds. But ſeeing he is ſo juſt, faithfull, and loyall to you, you may love him the better, and reſpect him as you finde occaſion.

Whereto *Egano* thus replyed. Now truſt me Wife, thou haſt ſaid very well: and drawing hence the argument of his ſetled perſwaſion; that he had the chaſteſt woman living to his wife, and ſo juſt a ſervant, as could not be fellowed: there never was any further diſcovery of this Garden-night accident. Perhaps, Madam *Beatrix* and *Auichino* might ſub illy ſmile thereat in ſecret, in regard that they knew more than any other elſe beſide did. But, as for honeſt meaning *Egano*, he never had ſo much

the least mistrust of ill dealing, either in his Lady, or *Anichino*; whom he loved and highly esteemed farre more respectively upon this proofe of his honesty towards him, than he would or could possibly have done, without a triall so plain and pregnant.

Arriguccio Berlinghieri, became immeasurably jealous of his Wife Simonida, who fastened a thread about her great toe, for to serve as a signall, when her amorous friend should come to visite her. Arriguccio findeth the fallacy, and while he pursueth the amorous friend, she causeth her maide to lie in her bed against his returne, whom he beateth extreamely, cutting away the locks of her haire (thinking he had done all this violence to his wife Simonida:) and afterward fetcheth her Mother and her Brethren, to shame her before them, and so be rid of her. But they finding all his speeches to be false; and reputing him to be a jealous fole; all the blame and disgrace falleth upon himselfe.

The eighth Novell.

Whereby appeareth, that an Husband ought to be very well advised, when he meaneth to discover any wrong offered his wife; except he himself doe rashly run into all the shame and reproach.

IT seemed to the whole assembly, that Madam *Beatrix*, dealt somewhat strangely, in the manner of beguiling her husband; and affirmed also, that *Anichino* had great cause of feare, when she held him so strongly by her bed side, and related all his amorous temptations. But when the King perceived, that Madam *Philomena* sate silent, he turned to Madam *Neiphila*, willing her to supply the next place; who modestly smiling thus began.

Faire Ladies, it were an heavy burthen imposed on me, and a matter much surmounting my capacity, if I should vainely imagine, to content you with so pleasing a Novell, as those have already done, by you so singularly reported: nevertheless I must discharge my dutie in obeying my Soveraigne, and take my fortune as it falleth out, albeit I hope to finde you mercifull.

You are to know then, that sometime there lived in our City, a very wealthy Merchant, named *Arriguccio Berlinghieri*, who (as many Merchants have done) fondly imagined, to make him a Gentleman by marriage. Which that he might the more assuredly doe, he took to wife a Gentlewoman, one much above his degree and element, she being named *Simonida*. Now in regard that he delighted (as it is the usuall life a Merchant) to be

often

often abroad, and little at home, whereby she had small benefit of his company; she grew very forward in affection with a young Gentleman, called Signior *Roberto*, who had solicited her by many amorous meanes, and (at length) prevailed to win her favour. Which favour being once obtained, affection gaddes so farre beyond all discretion, and makes Lovers so heedlesse of their private conversations: that either they are taken tardy in their folly, or else subjected to scandalous suspition.

It came to passe that *Arriguccio*, either by rumour, or some other more sensible apprehension, had received such intelligence concerning his wife *Simonda*, as he grew into extraordinary jealousie of her, retraining travell abroad, as formerly he was wont to doe, and ceasing from his very ordinary affaires, addicting all his care and endeavour, onely to be watchfull of his wife; so that he never durst sleep, untill shee was by him in bed, which was no meane molestation to her, being thus curbd from her familiar meetings with *Roberto*. Nevertheless, having a long while consulted with her wits, to finde some apt meanes for conversing with him, being thereto also very earnestly still solicited by him; you shall heare what course she undertooke.

Her Chamber being on the streete side, and somewhat jutting over it, she observed the disposition of her husband, that every night it was long before he fell a sleepe: but being once falne into it, no noise whatsoever, could easily wake him. This his solemne and sound sleeping, emboldened her so farre, as to meete with *Roberto* at the street doore, which (while her husband slept) softly she would open to him, and there in private converse with him.

But because she would know the certaine houre of his coming without the least suspicion of any: she hung a thread forth of her Chamber window, descending downe within the compasse of *Robertoes* reach in the street, and the other end thereof, guided from the window to the bed, being conveied under the cloathes, and being in bed, she fastened it about her left great Toe, wherewith *Roberto* was sufficiently acquainted, and thus instructed withall; that at his coming, he should plucke the thread, and if her husband was in his dead sleepe, she would let goe the thread, and come downe to him: but if he slept not, she would hold it strongly, and then his tarrying would prove but in vaine, there could be no meeting that night.

This device was highly pleasing to *Roberto* and *Simonda*, being the intelligencer of their often meeting, and many

many times also adviſing the contrary. But in the end, as the quainteſt cunning may faile at one time or other; ſo it fortuned one night, that *Simonida* being in a ſound ſleepe, and *Arriguccio* waking, becauſe his drowſie houre was not as yet come: as hee extended forth his legge in the bed, hee found the thread, which feeling in his hand, and perceiving it was tied to his wives great toe; it proved apt tinder to kindle further jealouſie, and now he ſuſpected ſome treachery indeed, and ſo much the rather, becauſe the thread, guided (under the cloathes) from the bed to the window, and there hanging downe into the ſtreet, as a warning to ſome further buſineſſe.

Now was *Arriguccio* ſo furiouſly inflamed, that he muſt needs be further reſolved in this apparent doubt: and becauſe therein hee would not be deceived, ſoftly he cut the thread from his wives toe, and made it faſt about his owne; to trie what ſucceſſe would enſue thereon. It was not long before *Roberto* came, and according as he uſed to doe, he pluckt the thread, which *Arriguccio* felt, but becauſe he had not tied it faſt, and *Roberto* pulling it over-hardly, it fell downe from the window into his hand, which he underſtood as his leſſon, to attend her comming, and ſo he did. *Arriguccio* ſtealing ſoftly out of his bed from his wife, and taking his Sword under his arme, went downe to the doore, to ſee who it was with full intent of further revenge. Now albeit he was a Merchant, yet he wanted not any courage, and boldneſſe of ſpirit, and opening the doore without any noiſe, only as his wife was wont to doe: *Roberto*, there waiting his entrance, perceived by the doores unfaſhionable opening, that it was not *Simonida*, but her husband, whereupon he betook himſelf to flight, and *Arriguccio* fiercely followed him. At the length, *Roberto* perceiving flight availed him not, becauſe his enemy ſtill perſued him: being armed alſo with a Sword, as *Arriguccio* was; he returned backe upon him, the one offering to offend, as the other ſtood upon his defence, and ſo in the darke they fought together.

Simonida awaking, even when her husband went forth of the Chamber, and finding the thred to be cut from her Toe; conjectured immediately, that her ſubtle cunning was diſcovered, and ſuppoſing her husband in purſuite of *Roberto*, preſently ſhe aroſe; and conſidering what was likely to enſue thereon, called her Chamber-maide (who was not ignorant in the buſineſſe) and by perſwaſions prevailed ſo with her, that ſhe lay downe in her place in the bed, upon ſolemne

lemne proteſtations and liberall promiſes, not to make her ſelfe knowne, but to ſuffer all patiently, either blowes, or any ill uſage of her husband, which ſhe would recompenſe in ſuch bountifull ſort, as ſhe ſhould have no occaſion to complaine. So, putting forth the watch-light which every night burned in the Chamber, ſhe departed thence, and late down in a cloſe corner of the houſe to ſee what would be the end of all this ſtirre after her husbands coming home.

The fight (as you have formerly heard) continued betweene *Roberto* and *Arriguccio*, the neighbours hearing of the claſhing of their Swords in the ſtreet; aroſe out of their beds, and reproved them in very harſh manner. In which reſpect *Arriguccio*, fearing to be known, and ignorant alſo what his adverſary was (no harme being as yet done on either ſide) permitted him to depart; and extreamely full of anger, returned backe again to his houſe. Being come up into his bed-chamber, Thus he began? Where is this lewd and wicked woman? what Haſt thou put out the light, becauſe I ſhould not finde thee? that ſhall not availe thee, for I can well finde a drab in the darke. So, groping on to the beds ſide, and thinking he had taken hold of his wife, he graſped the Chamber-maid, ſo beating her with his fiſts, and ſpurning her with his feet, that all her face was bloudy and bruiſed. Next, with his knife he cut of a great deale of her haire, giving her the moſt villanous ſpeeches that could be diviſed: ſwearing that he would make her a ſhame to all the world.

You need make no doubt, but the poor maid wept exceedingly, as ſhe had good occaſion to doe: and albeit many times ſhe deſired mercy, and that he would not be ſo cruell to her: yet notwithſtanding, her voyce was ſo broaken with crying, and his impatience ſo extreame, that rage hindered all power of diſtinguiſhing, or knowing his wives tongue from a ſtrangers Having thus ſadly beaten her, and cut the lockes off from her head, then he ſpake to her. Wicked woman and no wife of mine, be ſure I have not done with thee yet; for, although I meane not now to beate thee any longer, I will go to thy brethren, and they ſhall underſtand thy diſhoneſt behaviour. Then will I bring them with me, and they perceiving how much thou haſt abuſed both their honour and thine own; let them deale with thee as they find occaſion, for thou art no more a companion for me. No ſooner was theſe angry words uttered, but he went forth of the Chamber, bolting it faſt on the outward ſide, as meaning to keep her ſafely encloſed, and out of the houſe he went alone by himſelfe.

Sim-

Simonida, who had heard all this tempestuous conflict, perceiving that her Husband had lockt the street doore after him, and was gone whither he pleased: unbolted the Chamber doore, lighted a waxe candle, and went in to see her poore maiden, whom she found to be most horribly misused. Shee comforted her as well as shee could, brought her again into her own lodging Chamber, where washing her face and hurts in very soveraign waters, and rewarding her liberally with *Arriguccios* own gold; she held her self to be sufficiently satisfied. So, leaving the maid in her lodging, and returning again to her own Chamber: she made up the bed in such former manner, as if no body had lodged therein that night. Then hanging up her Lampe fresh filld with oyle, and clearely lighted, she deckt her self in so decent sort, as if she had been in no bed at all that night.

Then taking sowing worke in her hand, either shirts or bands of her Husbands; hanging the Lampe by her, and sitting downe at the staires head, she fell to worke in very serious manner, as if she had undertaken some imposed taske.

On the other side, *Arriguccio* had travelled so farre from his house, till he came at last to the dwelling of *Simonidas* brethren: where he knockt so soundly, that it was quickly heard, and (almost as speedily) let in: *Simonidas* brethren, and her mother also, hearing of *Arriguccios* coming thither so late, rose from their beds, and each of them having a waxe Candle lighted, came presently to him, to understand the cause of this his so unseasonable visitation. *Arriguccio* beginning at the originall of the matter, the thread found tied about his wives great toe, the fight and houshold conflict after following: related every circumstance to them. And for the better proofe of his words, he shewed them the thread it self, the lockes supposed of his wives haire, and adding withall; that they might now dispose of *Simonida* as themselves pleased, because she should no longer remain in his house.

The brethren to *Simonida* were exceedingly offended at this relation, in regard they beleeved it for truth, and in this fury, commanded Torches to bee lighted preparing to part thence with *Arriguccio* home to his owne house, for the more sharpe reprehension of their sister. Which when their mother saw, she followed them weeping, first entreating one, and then the other, not to be over rash in crediting such a slander, but rather search the truth thereof advisedly: because the Husband might be angry with his Wife upon some other occasi-

on,

on, and having outraged her, made this the meanes to excuse of himselfe. Moreover she said, that she could not chuse but wonder greatly, how this matter should thus come to passe; because she had good knowledge of her daughter, during the whole course of her education, faultlesse and blamelesse in every degree; with many other good words of her beside, as proceeding from naturall affection of a mother.

Being come to the house of *Arriguccio*, entring in, and ascending up the staires, they heard *Simonida* sweetly singing at her working; but pausing, upon hearing their rude trampling, she demanded, who was there. One of the angry brethren answered: Lewde woman as thou art, thou shalt know soone enough who is here. Our blessed Lady be with us (quoth *Simonida*) and sweet S. *Francis* helpe to defend me, who dare use such unseemly speeches? Starting up, and meeting them on the staires head: Kinde brethren, (said she) is it you? What, and my loving Mother too? For sweet Saint Charities sake, what may be the reason of your coming hither in this manner? She being set downe again to her worke, so neately apparelled, without any signe of outrage offered her, her face unblemished, her haire comely ordered, and differing wholly from the former speeches of her husband: the Brethren marvelled thereat not a little, and asswaging somewhat the impetuous torrent of their rage, began to demand in coole bloud, (as it were) from what ground her husbands complaints proceeded, and threatning her roughly, if she would not confesse the truth to them.

Ave Maria (quoth *Simonida*, crossing her selfe) Alas deare Brethren, I know not what you say, or meane, nor wherein my husband should be offended, or make any complaint at all of me. *Arriguccio* hearing this, looking on her like a man that had lost his Senses, as well he remembred, how many cruell blowes he had given her on the face, beside scratches of his nailes, and spurnes of his feete, as also the cutting of her haire, the least shew of all which misusage, was not now to be seen. Her brethren likewise briefely told her, the whole effect of her husbands speeches, shewing her the threats and in what cruell manner, he sware he did beate her. *Simonida*, turning then to her Husband, and seeming as confounded with amazement, said. How is this husband? what doe I heare? would you have me suppose (to your own shame and disgrace) to be a bad woman, and your selfe a cruell curst man, when (on either side) there is no such matter? When were you this night

night here in the house with me? Or when should you beate me and I not feele or know it? Beleeve me (sweet heart) all these are meerly miracles to me.

Now was *Arrigucio* ten times more mad in his mind, than before, saying Divell, and no woman, did we not this night go both together to bed? Did not I cut this thred from thy great toe, tied it to mine, and found the crafty compact between thee and thy *Minion*? Did I not follow and fight with him in the street? Came I not backe againe and beat thee as a Strumpet should be? And are not these the locks of haire, which I my selfe did cut from thy head?

Alas Sir (quoth she) where have you beene? Doe you know what you say? you did not lodge in this house this night, neither did I see you all the whole day and night till now.!

But leaving this, and come to the matter now in question, because I have no other testimony but my owne words. You say, that you did beate me, and cut those lockes of haire from my head. Alas Sir, why should you slander your selfe? In all your lifetime you did never strike me. And to approve the truth of these speeches, doe you your selfe, and all else here present, looke on me advisedly, if any signe of blow or beating is to be seene on me. Nor were it an easie matter for you to doe either to smite, or so much as lay your hand (in anger) on me, it would cost dearer then you thinke for. And whereas you say, that you did cut these lockes of haire from my head; it is more then either I know, or felt, nor are they in colour like to mine: but because my Mother and brethren shall be my witnesses therein, and whether you did it without my knowledge; you shall all see, if they be cut or no. So, taking off her head attire, she displaied her haire over her shoulders, which had suffered no violence, neither seemed to be so much as uncivilly or rudely handled.

When the mother and brethren saw this, they began to murmure against *Arrigucio*, saying. What thinke you of this Sir? You tell us of strange matters which you have done, and all proving false and unlikely, we wonder how you can make good the rest. *Arrigucio* looked wilde and confusedly, striving still to maintaine his accusation: but he seeing every thing fall to be flatly against him, he durst not attempt to speake one word. *Simonida* tooke advantage of this distraction in him, and turning to her brethren, said. I see now the marke whereat he aimeth, to make me doe what I never meant: Namely, that I should acquaint you with his

his vile qualities, and what a wretched life I lead with him, which seeing he will needs have me to reveale; beare with me if I doe it upon compulsion.

Mother and brethren, I am verily perswaded, that those accidents which he disclosed to you, hath doubtlesse in the same manner hapned to him, and you shall heare how. Very true it is, that this seeming honest man, to whom (in a luckleſſe houre) you married me, styleth himself by the name of a *Merchant*, coveting to be so accounted and credited, as holy in outward appearance, as a Religious *Monke*, and as demure in looke, as the modestest maid: like a notorious common drunkard, is a Taverne hunter, where making his luxurious matches, one while with one whore, then again with another; he causeth me every night to sit tarrying for him, even in the same sort as you found me: sometimes till midnight, and other whiles till broad day light in the morning.

And questionlesse, being in his wonted drunken humour, he hath lyen with one of his sweet Consorts, about whose toe he found the thread, and finding her as false to him, as he hath alwayes been to me: did not onely beat her but also cut the haire from her head. And having not yet recovered his senses, is verily perswaded, and cannot be altered from it, but that she perfomed all this villany to me. And if you doe but advisedly observe his countenance, he appeareth yet to be more than half drunk.

But whatsoever he hath said concerning me, I make no account at all thereof, because he spake it in his drunkennesse; and as freely as I doe forgive him, even so (good *Mother*, and kind brethren) let me intreat you to doe the like.

When the *Mother* had heard these words, and confidently beleeved her Daughter: she began to torment her selfe with anger, saying. By the faith of my body Daughter, this unkindnesse is not to be indured, but rather let the dogge be hanged, that his qualities may be knowne, he being utterly unworthy, to have so good a woman to his wife, as thou art. What could he have done more, if he had taken thee in the open street, and in company of some wanton Gallant? In an unfortunate houre wast thou married to him, base jealous Coxcombe as he is; and it is quite against sense, or reason, that thou shouldest bee subject to his fooleries. What was hee, but a *Merchant* of Eele-skinnes or Oranges; bred in some paltry Countrey Village; taken from Hogge-rubbing; cloathed in Sheepes-Sattin, with Clow-

clownish Startops, Leather stockings, and Caddies garters: His whole habite not worth three shillings: And yet he must have a faire Gentlewoman to his Wife, of honest fame, riches and reputation; when, comparing his pedegree with hers, he is farre unfit to wipe her shooe.

Oh my deare Sonnes, I would you had followed my counsell, and permitted her to match in the honourable Family of Count *Guido*, which was much moved, and strioussly pursued. But you would needs bestow her on this goodly Jewell; who, although she is one of the faireſt beauties in all Florence, chaste, honest and truely vertuous: is not ashamed at midnight, to proclaime her for a common whore, as if we had no better knowledge of her. But by the blessed Mother of Saint *John*, if you would be ruled by mine advice, our law should make him dearely smart for it.

Alas my Sonnes did I not tell you at home in our owne house, that his words were no way likely to prove true? Have not your eyes observed his unmannerly behaviour to your Sister? If I were as you are, hearing what he hath said, and noting his drunken carriage beside; I should never give over, as long as he had any life left in him: And were I a man as I am a woman, none other than my selfe should revenge her wrongs, making him a spectacle to all drabbing drunkards.

When the brethren had heard and observed all these occurrences; in most bitter manner they railed on *Arrigucio*, bestowing some good bastinadoes on him beside, concluding thus with him in the end. Quoth one of them, we will pardon this shamefull abusing of our Sister, because thou art a notorious drunkard: but look to it (on perill of thy life) that wee have no more such newes hereafter; for, beleeve it unfainedly, if any such impudent rumours happen to our eares, or so much as a flying fame thereof; thou shalt surely be paid for both faults together.

So home againe went they, and *Arrigucio* stood like one that had neither life nor motion, nor knowing whether what he had done was true or no, or if he dreamed all this while, and so (without uttering any word) he left his wife, and went quietly to bed. Thus by her wisedome, she did not onely prevent an imminent perill: but made a free and an open passage, to further contentment with her amorous friend, yet dreadlesse of any distaste or suspicion in her husband.

Lydia, a Lady of great beauty, birth and honour, being wife to Nicostratus, Governour of Argos, falling in love with a Gentleman named Pyrrhus; was requested by him (as true testimony of her unfeigned affection) to perform the several offices of her selfe. She did accomplish them all, and embraced and kissed Pyrrhus in the presence of Nicostratus; by perswading him, that whatsoever he saw, was meerely false.

The ninth Novell.

Wherein is declared, that great Lords sometime be deceived in their wives, as well as men of meaner condition.

THe Novell delivered by Madam *Neiphila*, seemed pleasing to all the Ladies; as they could not refrain from hearty laughter, beside much liberality of speech. Albeit the King did often times urge silence, and commanded *Pamphilus* to follow next. So, when attention was admitted, *Pamphilus* began in this manner. I am of opinion, faire Ladies, that there is not any matter, how uneasie or doubtfull soever it might seeme to be; that the man or woman that affecteth fervently, dare boldly attempt and effectually accomplish. And this perswasion of mine, although it hath beene sufficiently approved, by many of our passed Novels: Yet notwithstanding I shall make it much more apparent to you, by a private discourse of mine own. Wherein I have occasion to speak of a Lady, to whom Fortune was more favourable, than either reason or judgement, could give direction. In which regard, I would not advise any of you, to entertaine so high an imagination of mind, as to tracke her footsteps of whom I am now to speake: because Fortune containeth not alwayes one and the same disposition, neither can all mens eyes be blinded after one manner. And so proceed we to our Tale.

In *Argos*, a most ancient City of *Achaya*, much more renowned by her precedent Kings, than wealth or any other great matter of worth: there lived as Lievetenant or Governour thereof, a Noble Lord, named *Nicostratus*, on whom (albeit he was well stept in yeares) Fortune bestowed in marriage a great Lady, no lesse bold of spirit, than choicely beautified. *Nicostratus*, abounding in treasure and wealthy possessions, kept a goodly traine of Servants, Horses, Hounds, Hawkes, and what else esteemed as having an extraordinary felicity in all kind of game, as singular exercises to maintaine his health.

Among his other Servants and Followers, there was a young Gentleman, graceſull of person, excellent in

ech, and every way as active as no man could bee
re: his name *Pyrrhus*, highly affected of *Nicostratus*,
more intimately trusted than all the rest. Such see-
d the perfections of this *Pyrrhus*, that *Lydia* (for so
s the Lady named) began to affect him very earnest-
and in such sort, as day or night she could take no
, but devised all meanes to compasse her hearts de-
e. Now, whether he observed this inclination of her
wards him, or else would take no notice thereof, it
uld not be discerned by any outward apprehension:
ich moved the more impatiencie in her, and drove
r hopes to despairing passions. Wherein to finde some
mfort and ease, she called an ancient Gentlewoman
her Chamber, in whom she reposed confidence, and
us she spake to her.

Lesca, The good turnes and favours thou hast recei-
d from me, should make thee faithfull and obedient
me: therefore set a locke upon thy lippes, for reveal-
g to any one whatsoever, such matters as now I shall
ust to thee; except it be to him that I command
e. Thou perceivest *Lesca*, how youthfull I am, apt to
sprightly recreations, rich, and abounding in all that
oman can wish to have, in regard of Fortunes com-
n and ordinary favours: yet I have one especiall
se of complaint: namely, the inequality of my mar-
ge, my Husband being over-ancient for me; in which
ard, my youth finds it selfe too highly wronged being
eated of those duties and delights, which women
rre inferiour to me) are continually cloyed withall,
d I am utterly deprived of. I am subject to the same
res they are, and deserve to taste the benefit of
m, in as ample manner, as they doe or can.

Hitherto have I lived with losse of time, which yet
some measure) may be releeved and recompensed: for
ough Fortune were my enemy in marriage, by such a
proportion of our conditions: yet she may be friend
another nature, and kindely redeeme the injury done
. Wherefore *Lesca*, to be as compleate in this case,
I am in all the rest beside; I have resolved upon a
vate friend, and one more worthy then any other,
mely, my servant *Pyrrhus*, whose youth carryeth
e correspondency with mine, and so constantly
ve I setled my love to him, as I am not well, but
en I thinke on him, or see him: and (indeed) shall
, except the sooner I may enjoy him. And therefore,
my life and well-fare be respected by thee, let him
derstand the integrity of mine affection, by such
d meanes as thou findest it most expedient to be

done: intreating him from mee, that I may have some conference with him, when he shall there to be solicited by me.

The Chamber Gentlewoman *Lesca*, willingly undertooke the Ladies Embassie; and so soone as opportunity did favour her: having drawne *Pyrrhus* into apt and commodious place, shee delivered the Message to him, in the best manner she could devise. Which *Pyrrhus* hearing, did not a little wonder thereat, not having noted any such matter; and therefore solitarily conceived that the Lady did this only to try him; whereupon, somewhat roundly and roughly, he returned this answer. *Lesca*, I am not so simple, as to credit any such Message to be sent from my Lady, and therefore better advised of thy words. But admit that it should come from her, yet I cannot be perswaded, that her soule consented to such harsh Language, farre differing from the forme so full of beauty. And yet admit againe, that her heart and tongue herein were relatives: My lord and Master hath so farre honoured me, and so much beyond the least part of merit in me: as I will rather die, than any way offer to disgrace him: And therefore I charge thee, never more to move me in this matter.

Lesca not a jot danted at his sterne words, presently she said. *Pyrrhus*, both in this and all other matters my Lady shall command me, I will speake to thee whosoever she pleaseth, receive what discontent thou shalt thereby; or make presumption of what doubts thou maist devise. But as I found thee a senseless stock dull, and not shaped to any understanding, so I leave thee: And in that anger parted from him, carrying backe the same answer to her Lady. She no sooner heard it, but instantly she wished her selfe to be dead: and within some few dayes after, she conferred again with her Chamber-woman, saying, *Lesca*, thou knowest well enough, that the Oxe falleth not at the first blowe of the Axe, neither is the victory won, upon a silly and shallow adventure: Wherefore I thinke it convenient, that once more thou shouldest make another triall of him, who (in prejudice to me) standeth so strictly on his loyalty; and chooseth such an houre as seemeth most commodious, soundly possesse him with my tormenting passions. Bestirre thy wits, and tipe thy tongue with a womans eloquence, to effect what I so earnestly desire: because by languishing in this my sicke affection, it will be the danger of my death, or some severe detriment to him, to be the occasion of so great a losse,

Lyſa comforted her Lady, ſo much as lay in her pow-
to doe, and having ſought for *Pyrrhus*, whom ſhee
nd at good leyſure; and, in a pleaſing humour, thus
ebegan. *Pyrrhus*, ſome few dayes ſince I told thee, in
ur extreame agonies thy Lady and mine was; onely
egard of her love to thee: and now againe I come
ce more, to give thee further aſſurance thereof:
herefore beleeve it unfeignedly, that if thy obſtinacie
inue ſtill, in like manner as the other day it did, ex-
ſt very ſhortly, to heare the tidings of her death.

It is my part therefore, to entreate thee, to comfort
long languiſhing deſires: but if thou perſiſt in thy
ſt opinion, inſtead of reputing thee a wiſe and for-
ate young man, I ſhall confeſſe thee to be an igno-
t Aſſe. What a glory is it to thee, to be affected of ſo
t a Lady, beyond all men whatſoever? Next to
, tell me, how highly maiſt thou conſeſſe thy ſelfe
ad to Fortune, if thou but duely conſider, how ſhe
s elected thee as ſole ſoveraigne of her hopes, which
crowne of honour to thy youth, and a ſufficient re-
e againſt all wants and neceſſities? Where is any to
knowledge like thy ſelfe, that can make ſuch ad-
tage of his time, as thou maiſt doe, if thou wert wiſe?
ere canſt thou find any one to goe beyond thee in
es, horſes, ſumptuous garments, and gold, as will
ven to thee if *Lydia* may be the Lady of thy love?
n then thy underſtanding to my words, returne into
e owne ſoule, and be wiſe for thy ſelfe.

Remember (*Pyrrhus*) that Fortune preſents her ſelfe
once before any one with chearfull lookes, and her
e wide open of richeſt favours, where if choice be
quickely made, before ſhe ſould it up, and turne her
e; let no complaint afterward be made of her. if
Fellow that had ſo faire an offer, prove to be miſe-
e, wretched, and a Begger, onely through his owne
igence. Beſide, what elſe hath formerly beene ſaid
re h now no ſuch neede of loyalty in ſervants to
r Ladies, as ſhould be among deare Friends and
dred: but ſervants ought rather (as beſt they may)
ſuch to their Maſters, as they are to them. Doſt thou
gine, that if thou hadſt a faire wife, Mother, Daugh-
r Sifter, and pleaſing in the eye of our *Nicoſtratus*,
ould ſtand on ſuch nice tearmes of dutie or Loy-
, as now thou doſt to his Lady? Thou wert a ve-
o'e to reſt ſo perſwaded. Aſſure thy ſelfe, that if
eat es and faire meanes might not prevaile, force
compulſion would win the maſterie: Let us then
hem, and the commodities unto them belonging,

as they would use us and ours. Vse the benefit of the Fortune, and beware of abusing her favour. Shee smiles on thee; but take heed least she turne her back it will then be over-late to repent thy folly. And if Lady die through thy disdaine, be assured, that thou canst not escape with life, beside open shame and grace for ever.

Pyrrhus, who had often considered on *Lesca's* message, concluded with himselfe; that if any more moved the same matter, he would returne her another kinde of answer; wholly yeelding to content his Lady provided that he might remaine assured, concerning the intire truth of the motion, and that it was not urged to trie him: wherefore, thus he replyed. *Lesca*, I not imagine me so ignorant, as not to know the certainty of all thy former allegations, confessing them as truly as thou doest, or canst. But yet let me tell thee with all, that I know my Lord to be wise and judicious; having committed all his affaires to my care and trust never blame me to misdoubt, least my Lady (by counsell and advise) make thee the messenger of motion, thereby to call my Fidelity in question.

To cleare which doubt, and for my further assurance of her well meaning toward me; if she will undertake the performance of three such things as I must necessarily quire in this case, I am afterward her owne, in any service she can command me. The first of them, is; that the presence of my Lord and Master, she kill his favourite falcon, which so dearely he affecteth. The second, send me a locke or tuft of his beard, being pulled away with her own hand. The third and last, with the same hand also, to plucke out one of his best and soundest teeth, and send it me as her loves true token. When I finde all these three effectually performed, I am wholly hers, and not before.

These three strict impositions, seemed to *Lesca*, and her Lady likewise, almost beyond the compasse of possibility. Nevertheless, Love, being a powerfull Orator in perswading, as also so adventurous even the most difficult dangers; gave her courage to undertake them all: sending *Lesca* backe againe to him, with full assurance, of these more than *Herculean* labours. Moreover, her selfe did intend to adde a fourth taske, in regard of his strong opinion concerning the great Wisedome of his Lord and Master. After she had effected all the other three, she would not permit him to kisse her, but before his Lords face: which yet should be accomplished in such sort, as *Nicostratus* himselfe should

not beleeve it, although apparently he ſaw it. Well, (quoth *Pyrrhus*) when all theſe wonders are performed, aſſure my Lady, that I am truely hers.

Within a ſhort while after, *Nicoſtratus* made a ſolemn Feaſtivall (according as yearely he uſed to doe) in honour of his birth day, inviting many Lords and Ladies thereto. On which rejoycing day ſo ſoone as dinner was ended, and the Tables withdrawne: *Lydia* came into the great Hall, where the Feaſt was ſolemnely kept; very rich and coſtly apparelled; and there, in preſence of *Pyrrhus*, and the whole aſſembly, going to the Perch whereon the Faulcon ſate, wherein her husband tooke no little delight, and having untied her, as if ſhe meant to beare her on her Fiſt: tooke her by the leſſes, and bearing her againſt the Wall, killed her. *Nicoſtratus* beholding this, called out aloud unto her, ſaying, Alas Madam! What have you done? She making him no anſwer, but turning to the Lords and Ladies, which had dined there, ſpake in this manner.

Ill ſhould I take revenge on a King, that had offended me, if I had not ſo much heart, as to wreake my ſpleene on a paltry Hawke. Vnderſtand then, worthy Lords and Ladies, that this Faulcon hath long time robbed me of thoſe delights, which men (in meere equity) ought to have with their wives: becauſe continually, ſo ſoone as breake of day hath appeared, my Husband, ſtarting out of bed, makes himſelfe ready, preſently to horſe, and the Faulcon on his Fiſt, rides abroad to his recreations in the Fields. And I, in ſuch forſaken ſort as you ſee, am left all alone in my bed, diſcontented and deſpiſed: often vowing to my ſelfe, to be thus revenged as now I am, being withheld from it by no other occaſion, but onely want of a fit and apt time, to doe it in the preſence of ſuch perſons, as might be juſt judges of my wrongs, and as I conceive you all to be.

The Lords and Ladies hearing theſe words, and beleeving this deed of hers to be done no otherwiſe, but out of her entire affection to *Nicoſtratus*, according as her ſpeeches ſounded: compaſſionately turning towards him (who was exceedingly diſpleaſed) and all ſmiling ſaid, Now in good ſadneſſe Sir, Madam *Lydia* hath done well, in acting her juſt revenge upon the Hawke, that bereft her of her husbands kinde company; than which nothing is more precious to a loving wife, and a hell it is to live without it. And *Lydia*, being ſodainly withdrawn into her Chamber; with much other friendly and familiar talke, they converted the anger of *Nicoſtratus* into mirth and ſmiling.

Pyrrhus, who had diligently observed the whole carriage of this businesse, said to himselfe. My Lady hath begun well, and proceeding on with no worse successe, will (no doubt) bring her love to an happy conclusion. As for the Lady her selfe, she having thus killed the Hawke, it was no long while after, but being in the Chamber with her husband, and they conversing familiarly together: she began to jest with him, and he in the like manner with her, tickling and toying each the other, till at the length she plaied with his beard, and now she found occasion aptly serving, to effect the second taske imposed by *Pyrrhus*. So, taking fast hold on a small tuft of his beard, she gave a soddain snatch, and plucked it away quite from his chin. Whereat *Nicostratus* being angerly moved, she (to appease his distaste) pleasantly thus spake. How now my Lord? Why doe you looke so frowningly? What? Are you angry for a few loose haires of your beard? How then should I take it, when you pincke me by the haire of my head, and yet I am not a jot discontented, because I know you doe it but in jesting manner? These friendly speeches cut off all further contention, and she kept chatly the tuft of her Husbands beard, which (the very selfe-same day) she sent to *Pyrrhus* her hearts chosen friend.

But now concerning the third matter to be adventured, it drove her to a much more serious consideration, than those two which she had already so well and exactly performed, Notwithstanding, like a Lady of unconquerable spirit, and (in whom) Love inlarged his power more and more: She sodainely conceited what course was best to be kept in this case, forming her attempt in this manner. Vpon *Nicostratus* waited two young Gentlemen, as Pages of his Chamber, whose Fathers had given them to his service, to learne the manners of honourable Courtship, and those qualities necessarily required in Gentlemen. One of them, when *Nicostratus* sate downe to dinner or supper, stood in Office of his Carver, delivering him all the meates whereon he fed. The other (as Taster) attended on his Cup, and he dranke no other drinke, but what he brought him, and they both were very pleasing unto them.

Lydia called these two youths aside; and, among some other speeches, which served as an induction to her intended policy; she perswaded them, that their mouths yeelded an unsavoury and ill-pleasing smell, whereof their Lord seemed to take dislike. Wherefore she advised them, that at such times as they attended on him in their

their severall places, they should (so much as possibly they could) withdraw their heads aside from him, because their breath might not be noyous unto him. But withall to have an especiall care, of not disclosing to any person, what she had told them; because (out of meere love) she had acquainted them therewith: which very constantly they beleeved, and followed the same direction as she had advised, being loath to displease, where service bound them to obey. Choosing a time fitting for her purpose, when *Nicostratus* was in private conference with him, thus she began. Sir, you observe not the behaviour of your two Pages, when they waite on you at the Table? Yes but I doe wife (quoth he) how squemishly they turne their heads aside from me, and it hath often beene in my minde, to understand a reason why they doe so.

Seating her selfe by him, as if she had some weighty matter to tell him; she proceeded in this manner. Alas my Lord you shall not need to question them, because I can sufficiently resolve you therein: which (nevertheless) I have long concealed, because I would not be offensive to you. But in regard it is now manifestly apparent, that others have tasted what (I imagined) none but my selfe did, I will no longer hide it from you. Assuredly Sir, there is a most strange and unwonted ill-savour, continually issuing from your mouth, smelling most noysomely, and I wonder what should be the occasion. In former times I never felt any such foule breathing to come from you, and you who daily converse with so many worthy persons, should seeke meanes to be rid of so great an annoyance. You say very true wife (answered *Nicostratus*) and I protest to you on my Credit, I feele no such ill smell, neither know what should cause it, except I have some corrupted tooth in my mouth. Perhaps Sir (quoth she) it may be so, and yet you feele not the savour which others doe, yea, very offensively.

So walking with her to the window, he opened wide his mouth, the which nicely she surveyed on either side, and, turning her head from him, as seeming unable to endure the savour: starting, and shrieking out aloud; she said, *Santa Maria*! What a sight is this? Alas my good Lord, How could you abide this, and for so long a while? Here is a tooth on this side, which (so farre as I can perceive) is not onely hollow and corrupted, but also putrified and rotten: and if it continue still in your head, beleeve it for a truth, that it will infect and spoile all the rest neere it. I would therefore counsell you, to let it be pluckt out, before it breed your further

danger. I like your counsell well *Lydia* replyed *Nicostratus*, and presently intend to follow it; Let therefore my Barber be sent for, and without any longer delay, he shall plucke it out instantly.

How Sir? (quoth she) your Barber? upon mine honour, there shall come no Barber here. Why Sir, it is such a rotten tooth, and standeth so fairely for my hand, that without helpe or advice of any Barber, let me alone for plucking it forth, without putting you to any paine at all. Moreover, let me tell you Sir, those Tooth-drawers are so rude and cruell, in performing such Offices, as my heart cannot endure, that you shall come within compasse of their curriish courtesie, neither shall you Sir, if you will be ruled by me. If I should faile in the manner of their facility, yet love and duty hath instructed me, to forbeare your least paining, which no unmannerly Barber will doe.

Having thus spoken, and he well contented with her kinde offer, the instruments were brought, which are used in such occasions, all being commanded forth of the Chamber, but onely *Lesca*, who evermore kept still in her company. So, locking fast the doore, and *Nicostratus* being seated, as she thought fittest for her purpose, she put the Tanacles into his mouth, catching fast hold on one of his soundest teeth: which, notwithstanding his loud crying, *Lesca* held him so strongly, that forth she pluckt it, and hid it, having another tooth ready made hot and bloudy, very much corrupted and rotten, which she held in the Tanacles, and shewed to him, who was well neere dead with anguish. See Sir, (quoth she) was this tooth to be suffered in your head, and to yeeld so foule a smell as it did? He verily beleeving what she said, albeit he had endured extreame pain, and still complained of her harsh and violent pulling it out: rejoyced yet, that he was now rid of it, and she comforting him on the one side, and the anguish asswaging on the other, he departed forth of the Chamber.

In the meane while, by *Lesca* she sent the sound tooth to *Pyrrhus* who (wondring not a little at her so many strange attempts, which he urged so much the rather, as thinking their performance impossible, and in meere loyall duty to his Lord) seeing them all three to be notably effected; he made no further doubt of her intire love towards him, but sent her assurance likewise of his readinesse and serviceable diligence, whensoever she would command him.

Now, after the passage of all these adventures, hardly to be undertaken by any other Woman: yet she held them

them inſufficient for his ſecurity, in the grounded perſwaſion of her love to him, except ſhe performed another of her owne, and according as ſhe had boldly promiſed. Houres doe now ſeeme dayes, and dayes multiplicity of years, till the kiſſe may be given and received in the preſence of *Nicoſtratus*, yet he himſelfe to avouch the contrary.

Madam *Lydia* (upon a pretended ſickneſſe) keepeth her chamber, and as women can hardly be exceeded in diſſimulation: ſo ſhe wanted no wit, to ſeeme exquiſitely cunning, in all the outward appearances of ſickneſſe. One day after dinner, ſhe being viſited by *Nicoſtratus*, and none attending on him but *Pyrrhus* onely: ſhe earneſtly entreated, that as a mitigation to ſome inward afflictions which ſhe felt, they would helpe to guide her into the Garden.

Moſt gladly was her motion granted, and *Nicoſtratus* gently taking her by one arme, and *Pyrrhus* by the other, ſo they conducted her into the Garden, ſeating her in a faire flowry Graſſe-plot, with her backe leaning to a Peare tree. Having ſitten there an indifferent while, and *Pyrrhus*, being formerly inſtructed, in the directions which ſhe had given him. thus ſhe ſpake, ſomewhat faintly. *Pyrrhus*, I have a kinde of longing deſire upon a ſudden, to taſte of the ſe Peares. Whe efore climbe up into the tree, and caſt me down one or two; which inſtantly he did. Being aloft in the Tree, and throwing downe ſome of the beſt and richeſt Peares; at length (according to his premeditated Leſſon) looking downe, he ſaid.

Forbeare my Lord, Doe you not ſee, in how weake and feeble condition my Lady is, being ſhaken with ſo violent a ſickneſſe? And you Madam, how kinde and loving ſoever you are to my Lord, are you ſo little carefull of your health being but now come forth of your ſicke Chamber, to be ruffled and tumbled in ſuch rough manner? Though ſuch dalliances are not amiſſe in you both; being fitter for the private Chamber, than an open Garden, and in the preſence of a ſervant: yet time and place ſhould alwayes be reſpectively conſidered, for the avoiding of ill example, and better teſtmony of your owne wiſdomes, which ever ſhould be like your ſelves. But if ſo ſoone, and even in the heate of a yet turbulent ſickneſſe, your equall love can admit theſe kiſſe, and embraces: your private lodgings were much more convenient, where no ſervants eye can ſee ſuch wantonneſſe, nor you be reproved of indiſcretion, for being too publique in your familiarity.

Lydia,

Lydia, sodainly turning to her husband, said. What doth *Pyrrhus* prate? Is he well in his wits? No Madam, replyed *Pyrrhus*, I am not franticke. Are you so fond as to thinke that I doe not see your folly? *Nicostratus* wondering at his words, presently answered. Now trust me *Pyrrhus* I thinke thou dreamest. No my Lord, replyed *Pyrrhus*, I dreame not a jot, neither doe you, or my Lady: but if this Tree could afford the like kindnesse to me, as you doe to her, there would not a Peare bee left upon it. How now *Pyrrhus*? (quoth *Lydia*) this language goeth beyond our understanding, it seemeth thou knowest not what thou saist. Beleeve me husband, If I were as well as ever I have beene, I would climbe this tree, to see those idle wonders which he talketh of: for while he continued thus above, it appeareth, he can find no other prattle, albeit he taketh his marke amisse.

Hereupon, he commanded *Pyrrhus* to come downe, and being on the ground: Now *Pyrrhus* (quoth he) tell me what thou saidst. *Pyrrhus*, pretending an alteration into much amazement, strangely looking about him, said, I know not very well (my Lord) what answer I should make you, fearing lest my sight hath bin abused by error: for when I was aloft in that Tree, it seemed manifestly to me: that you embraced my Lady (though somewhat rudely, in regard of her perillous sickenesse, yet lovingly) and as youthfully as in your younger daies, with infinite kisses, and wanton dalliances such as (indeed) deserved a farre more private place in my poore opinion. But in my descending downe, me thought you gave over that amourous familiarity, and I found you seated as I left you. Now trust me *Pyrrhus* answered *Nicostratus*, Thy tongue and wit have very strangely wandered, both from reason and all reall apprehension: because we never stirred from hence, since thou didst climb up into the Tree; neither moved otherwise, then as now thou seest us. Alas my good Lord (said *Pyrrhus*) I humbly crave pardon for my presumption, in reproving you for medleing with your own: which shall make me hereafter better advised, in any thing whatsoever I hear or see.

Mervaile and amazement encreased in *Nicostratus* far greater than before, hearing him to avouch still so constantly what he had seene, no contradiction being able to alter him, which made him rashly sweare and say, I will see my selfe whether this Peare tree be enchanted, or no: and such wonders to be seene when a man is up in it, as thou wouldst have us to beleeve. And being mounted up so high, that they were safe from his sodaine comming on them, *Lydia* had soone forgotten her

ne ſickeneſſe, and the promiſed kiſſe coſt her above
enty more, beſide very kind and hearty embraces, as
ringly reſpected and entertained by *Pyrrhus*. Which
cofratus beholding aloft in the tree; cryed out to her,
ying. Wicked woman what doſt thou meane? And
ou villaine *Pyrrhus*, Dareſt thou abuſe thy Lord, who
ath repoſed ſo much truſt in thee? So, deſcending down
gaine, yet crying to them ſtill: *Lydia* replyed, Alas my
ord, why doe you raile and rave in ſuch ſort? So, he
ound her ſeated as before, and *Pyrrhus* waiting with du-
full reverence, even as when he climbed up the tree:
e yet he thought his ſight nos deceived for all their
emure and formall behaviour; which made him walke
o and downe extreamely fuming and fretting unto him-
elfe, and which in ſome milder manner to qualifie,
yrrhus ſpake thus to him.

I deny not (my good Lord) but freely confeſſe, that
ven as your ſelfe, ſo I, being above in the tree, had my
ght moſt falſely deluded: which is ſo apparently con-
rmed by you, and in the ſame ſort, as there needeth no
oubt of both our beguiling, in one and the ſame ſuſ-
icious nature: in which caſe to be more aſſuredly re-
olved, nothing can be queſtioned, but whether your
eleefe doe ſo farre miſleade you, as to thinke that my
Lady (who hath alwayes beene moſt wiſe, loyall, and
ve tuous,) would ſo ſhamefullly wrong you, yea, and to
erforme it before your face, wherein I dare gage my
ife to the contrary. Concerning my ſelfe, it is not fit
or me, to argue or conteſt in mine owne commendati-
on: you that have ever knowne the ſincerity of my ſer-
vice, are beſt able to ſpeake in my behalfe: and rather
would I be drawne in pieces with foure wild horſes, than
be ſuch an injurious ſlave to my Lord and Maſter.

Now then, it can be no otherwiſe, but we muſt needs
reſt certainly perſwaded, that the guile and offence of
his falſe appearance, was occaſioned by the tree only. For
all the world could not make me beleeve, but that
I ſaw you kiſſe and moſt kindly embrace my Lady: if
your owne eyes had not credited the like behaviour in
me to her, of which ſin I never conceived ſo much as a
thought. The Lady (on the other ſide) ſeeming to be
very angerly incenſed, ſtarting faintly up on her feete,
yet ſupporting her ſelfe by the tree, ſaid. It appeareth
Sir, that you have entertained a goodly opinion of me,
as if I were ſo lewd and laſcivioſly diſpoſed, or ad-
dicted to the leaſt deſire of wantonneſſe: that I would be
ſo forgetfull of mine owne honour, as to adventure it in
your ſight, and with a ſervant of my houſe? Oh Sir,

ſuch

such women as are so familiarly affected, need learne no wit of men in amorous matters; their private Chambers shall be better trusted, than an open blabbing and teltale Garden.

Nicostratus, who verily beleeved what they had both sayd, and that neither of them would adventure such familiarity before his face, would talke no more of the matter, but rather studyed of the rarity of such a miracle, not seene, but in the height of the tree, and changing againe upon the descent. But *Lydia*, containing still her colourable kind of impatience, and angerly frowning upon *Nicostratus*, scarcely said. If I may have my will, this villanous, and deceiving tree, shal never more shame me, or any other woman: and therefore *Pyrrhus*, run for an Axe, and by felling it to the ground, in an instant, revenge both thy wrong and mine. Doest not thou serve a worthy Lord? And have not I a wise Husband, who, without any consideration, will suffer the eye of his understanding to be so dazled, with a foolish imagination beyond all possibility. For, though his eyes did apprehend such a folly; and it seemed to be a truth indeed: yet in the depth of a setled judgement, all the world should not perswade him, that it was so.

Pyrrhus had quickly brought the Axe, and hewing downe the tree, so soone as the Lady saw it fall; turned her selfe to *Nicostratus* she said. Now that I have seene mine honour and honesties enemy laid along mine anger is past, and Husband, I freely pardon you: intreating you heartily hencefoward, not to presume or imagine, that my love either is, or can be altered from you.

Thus the mocked and derided *Nicostratus* returned in againe with his Lady and *Pyrrhus*; where perhaps (though the Peare-tree was cut downe) they could find as cunning meanes to over-reach him.

Two Citizens of Siena, the one named Tingoccio Nini, and the other Meucio di Tura, affected both one woman, called Monna Mita, to whom one of them was a Gossip. The Gossip dyed, and appeared afterward to his companion, according as he had formerly promised him to do, and told him what Strange wonders he had seene in the other world.

The tenth Novell.

Wherein such men are covertly reprehended, who make no care or conscience at all of those things that should preserve them from sinne.

NOw there remained none but the King himselfe, last of all to recount this Novell; who, after he heard the Ladies complaints indifferently pacified, for the

the rash felling downe of such a precious Peare tree; then he began. Faire Ladies, it is a case more than manifest, that every King, who will be accounted just and upright, should first of all and rather than any other, observe those Laws which he himselfe hath made, otherwise to be reputed as a servant, worthy punishment, and no King. Into which fault and reprehension I your King, shall well-neere be constrained to fall; for yesterday I enacted a Law, upon the forme of our dis-coursing with full intent, that this day I would not use any part of my priviledge; but being subject (as you all are) to the same Law, I should speake of that argument, which already you have done.

Wherein, you have not only performed more than I could wish, upon a subject so sutable to my minde: but in every Novell, such variety of excellent matter, such singular illustrations, and delicate eloquence hath flown from you all: as I am utterly unable to invent any thing (notwithstanding the most curious search of my brain) apt or fit for the purpose, to paragon the meanest of them already related. And therefore seeing I must needs sin in the Law established by my selfe; I tender my submission as worthy of punishment, or what amends else you please to enjoyne me. Now, as returned to my wonted priviledge, I say, that the Novell recounted by Madam *Elisa*, of the Fryar Godfather, and his Gossip *Agnesia*, as also the sottishnesse of the *Semese* her Husband, hath wrought in me (worthy Ladies) to such effect; as, forbearing to speake any more of these wily prancks, which witty wives exercise on their simple Husbands; I am to tell you a pretty short Tale; which, though there is matter enough in it, not worthy the crediting, yet partly it will be pleasing to heare.

Sometime there lived in *Sienna* two popular men, the one being named *Tingoccio Mini*, and the other *Meuccio di Tora*; Men simple and of no understanding, both of them dwelling in *Porta Salaja*. These two men lived in such familiar conversation together, and expressed such cordiall affection each to other, as they seldome walked asunder; but (as honest men use to doe) frequented Churches and Sermons, oftentimes hearing, both what miseries and beatitudes were in the world to come, according to the merits of their soules that were departed out of this life, and found their equal repayment in the other. The manifold repetition of these matters, made them very desirous to know, by what meanes they might have tidings from thence, for their further confirmation. And finding all their endeavours utterly frustrated,

they.

they made a solemne vow and promise (each to other under oath) that he which first dyed of them two, should returne backe againe (so soone as possibly he could) to the other remaining alive, and tell him such tydings as he desired to heare.

After the promise was thus faithfully made, and they still keeping company as they wonted to doe: It fortuned that *Tingoccio* became Gossip to one named *Ambrosa Anselmino*, dwelling in *Camporeggio*, who by his wife, called *Monna Mita*, had a sweete and lovely Son. *Tingoccio* often resorted thither, and consorted with his Companion *Meucio*; the like Gossip, being a woman worthy the loving, faire and comely of her person: *Tingoccio*, notwithstanding the Gossipship betweene them, had more then a moneths minde to his God-childes Mother. *Meucio* also fell sicke of the same disease, because she seemed pleasing in his eye, and *Tingoccio* gave her no meane commendations; yet, carefully they concealed their love to themselves, but not for one and the same occasion. Because *Tingoccio* kept it close from *Meucio*, lest he should hold it disgracefull in him, to beare amorous affection to his Gossip, and thought it unfitting to be knowne. But *Meucio* had no such meaning, for he knew well enough that *Tingoccio* loved her, and therefore conceived in his minde, that if he discovered any such matter to him: He will (quoth he) be jealous of me, and being her Gossip (which admitteth his conference with her when himselfe pleaseth; he may easily make her to distaste me, and therefore I must rest contented as I am.

Their love continuing on still in this kind, *Tingoccio* proved so fortunate in the businesse, that having better meanes than his companion, and more prevailing courses, when, where, and how to Court his Mistris, which seemed to forward him effectually. All which *Meucio* plainly perceived, and though it was tedious and wearisome to him, yet hoping to find some successe at length he would not take notice of any thing, as fearing to infringe the amity betweene him and *Tingoccio*, and so his hope to be quite supplanted. Thus the one triumphing in his loves happinesse, and the other hoping for his felicity to come; a lingering sicknesse seased on *Tingoccio*, which brought him to so low a condition, as at the length he dyed.

About some three or foure nights after, *Meucio* being fast asleep in his bed, the ghost of *Tingoccio* appeared to him, and called so loud, that *Meucio* awaking, demanded who called him? I am thy friend *Tingoccio*, replied the

the ghoſt, who according to my former promiſe made, am come againe in viſion to thee, to tell thee tidings out of the neather world. *Meucio* was a while ſomewhat amazed; but, recollecting his more manly ſpirits together, boldly he ſaid. My brother and friend, thou art heartily welcome: but I thought thou hadſt beene utterly loſt. Thoſe things (quoth *Tingoccio*) are loſt, which cannot be recovered againe, and if I were loſt, how could I then be here with thee? Alas *Tingoccio* replyed *Meucio* my meaning is not ſo; but I would be reſolved, whether thou art among the damned ſoules in the painfull fire of hell torments, or no? No (quoth *Tingoccio*) I am not ſent thither, but for divers ſins by me committed I am to ſuffer very great and grievous pains. Then *Meucio* demanded particularly, the puniſhment inflicted there, for the ſeverall ſinnes committed here: Wherein *Tingoccio* fully reſolved him. And upon further queſtion, what he would have to be done for him here, made anſwer. That *Meucio* ſhould cauſe Maſſes, Prayers, and Almes-deeds, to be performed for him, which (he ſaid) were very helpefull to the ſoules abiding there, and *Meucio* promiſed to ſee them done.

As the ghoſt was offering to depart, *Meucio* remembred *Tingoccios* Goſſip *Monna Mita*, and raiſing himſelfe higher upon the pillow ſaid. My memory informeth me, friend *Tingoccio*, of your kind Goſſip *Monna Mita*, with whom (when you remained in this life) I knew you to be very familiar: let me entreate you then to tell me what puniſhment is inflicted on you there, for that wanton ſin committed here? Oh Brother *Meucio*, anſwered *Tingoccio*, ſo ſoone as my ſoule was landed there, one came immediatly to me, who ſeemed to know all mine offences readily by heart, and forthwith commanded, that I ſhould depart thence into a certain place where I muſt weep for my ſins in very grievous pains. There I found more of my companions; condemned to the ſame puniſhment as I was, and being among them, I called to mind ſome wanton dalliance, which had paſſed between my Goſſip and me, and expecting therefore farre greater afflictions, than as yet I felt (although I was in a huge fire, and exceedingly hot) yet with conceit of feare, I quaked and trembled wondrouſly.

One of my other Conſorts being by me, and perceiving in what an extreame agony I was, preſently ſaid unto me. My friend, what haſt thou done more then any of us here condemned with thee, that thou trembleſt and quakeſt being in ſo hot a fire? Oh my friend (qd. I) I am in feare of a greater judgement than this, for a

grievous

grievous offence by me heretofore committed while I lived. Then he demanded of me what offence it was, whereto thus I answered. It was my chance in the other world, to be Godfather at a childs Christening, and afterward I grew so affectionate to the childs mother, as (indeed) I kissed her twice or thrice. My companion laughing at me in mocking manner. Go like an Asse as thou art, and be no more afraid hereafter, for here is no punishment inflicted, in any kind whatsoever, for such offences of frailty committed, specially with Gossips, as I my selfe can witnesse.

Now day drew on, and the Cockes began to crow, a dreadfull hearing to walking spirits, when *Tingoccio* said to *Meucio*. Farewell my friendly companion, for I may tarry no longer with thee, and instantly he vanished away. *Meucio* having heard this confession of his friend, and verily beleeving it for a truth, that no punishment was to be inflicted in the future world, for offences of frailty in this life, and chiefly with Gossips: began to condemne his owne folly, having beene a Gossip to many wives, yet modestly restrained him from such familiar offending. And therefore being sorry for this grosse ignorance, he made a vow to be wiser hereafter. And if Fryer *Reynard* had beene acquainted with this kinde of shrift (as doubtlesse he was, though his Gossip *Agnesia* knew it not) he needed no such Syllogismes, as he put in practise, when he converted her to his lustfull knavery, in the comparison of kindred by him moved concerning her husband, the childe and himselfe. But, these are the best fruits of such Fryerly Confessions, to compasse the issue of their inordinate appetites; yet clouded with the cloake of Religion, which hath beene the overthrow of too many.

By this time the gentle blast of *Zephyrus* began to blow, because the Sun grew neere his setting, wherewith the King concluded his Novell, and none remaining more to be thus employed: taking the Crowne from off his owne head, he placed it on Madam *Lauretaes*, saying, Madam, I Crowne you wit your owne Crowne, as Queene of our Company You shall henceforth command as Lady and Mistresse, in such occasions as shall be to your liking, and for the contentment of us all; With which words he set him downe. And Madam *Lauretta* being now created Queen, she caused the Master of the household to be called, to whom she gave command, that the Tables should be prepared in the pleasant vally, but at a more convenient houre than formerly had beene, because they might (with better ease)

returne

returne backe to the Palace. Then she tooke order likewise, for all such other necessary matters, as should be required in the time of her regiment: and then turning her self to the whole company, she began in this manner.

It was the Will of *Dioneus* yesternight, that our discourses for this day, should concerne the deceits of wives to their Husbands. And were it not to avoyd taxation of a spleenitive desire to be revenged, like the Dog being bitten, biteth againe: I could command our to morrowes conference, to touch mens treacheries towards their wives. But because I am free from any such fiery humour, let it be your generall consideration, to speake of such quaint beguilings, as have heretofore past, either of the woman to the man, or the man to the woman, or of one man to another: and I am of opinion, that they will yeeld us no lesse delight, than those related (this day) have done. When she had thus spoken, she rose, granting them all liberty, to goe recreate themselves untill Supper time.

The Ladies being thus at their owne disposing, some of them bared their legs and feete, to wash them in the coole current. Others, not so minded, walked on the greene grasse, and under the goodly spreading trees. *Dioneus*, and Madam *Fiammetta*, they sate singing together, the love-war betweene *Arcite* and *Palamon*. And thus with diversity of disports, in choice delight and much contentment, all were imployed, till Supper drew neere. When the houre was come, and the Tables covered by the Ponds side: we need not question their dyet and dainties, infinite birds sweetly singing about them, as no musicke in the world could be more pleasing; beside calme windes, fanning their faces from the neighbouring hill (free from flyes, or the least annoyance) made a delicate addition to their pleasure.

No sooner were the Tables withdrawne, and all risen: but they fetcht a few turnings about the vally, because not (as yet) quite set. Then in the coole evening according to the Queenes appointment, in a soft and gentle pace, they walked homeward: devising on a thousand occasions, as well those which the dayes discourses had yeelded, as others of their owne inventing beside. It was almost dark night, before they arrived at the palace; where, with variety of choice Wines, and abounding plenty of rare Banquetting, they out-wore the little toile and wearinesse, which the long walke had charged them withall. Afterward according to their wonted order, the Instruments being brought and played on, they fell to dancing about the faire Fountaine;

Tindaro

Tindaro intruding (now and then) the ſound of his Bag-pipe, to make the muſicke ſeeme more melodious. But in the end, the Queene commanded Madam *Philomena* to ſing; whereupon the inſtruments being tuned fit for the purpoſe, thus ſhe began.

The Song.

The Chorus Sung by the whole Company.

Weariſome is my life to me,
Becauſe I cannot once again returne
Onto the place which made me firſt to mourne.

NOthing I know, yet feele a powerfull fire,
Burning within my breſt,
Through deepe deſire;
To be once more where firſt I felt unreſt,
Which cannot be expreſt.
O my ſole good! O my beſt happineſſe!
Why am I thus reſtrain'd?
Is there no comfort in this wretchednesſe?
Then let me live content, to be thus pain'd.
Weariſome is my life to me, &c.

I cannot tell what was that rare delight,
Which firſt enflam'd my ſoule,
And gave command in ſpight,
That I ſhould find no eaſe by day or night,
But ſtill live in controule.
I ſee, I heare, and feele a kinde of bliſſe,
Yet finde no forme at all:
Others in their deſire, feele bleſſednesſe,
But I have none nor thinke I ever ſhall.
Weariſome is my life to me, &c.

Tell me if I may hope in following dayes,
To have but one poore ſight
Of thoſe bright Sunny rayes,
Dazeling my ſenſe, did overcome me quite,
Bequeath'd to wandring wayes.
If I be poaſted off, and may not prove,
To have the ſmalleſt grace:

Or but to know, that this proceeds from love,
Why ſhould I live deſpiſ'd in every place?
Wearyſome is my life to me, &c.

Me thinkes milde favour whiſpers in my eare,
And bids me not deſpaire;
There will a time appeare
To quell and quite confound conſuming care,
And joy ſurmount proud feare.
In hope that gracious time will come at length,
To cheere my long diſmay:
My ſpirits reaſſume your former ſtrength,
And never dread to ſee that joyfull day.
Wearyſome is my life to me,
Becauſe I cannot once again returne
Unto the place which made me firſt to mourne.

This Song gave occaſion to the whole Company, to imagine, that ſome new and pleaſing apprehenſion of Love, conſtrained Madam *Philomena* to ſing in this manner. And becauſe (by the diſcourſe thereof) it plainly appeared, that ſhe had felt more then ſhe ſaw, ſhe was ſo much the more happy, and the like was wiſhed alſo by all the reſt. Wherefore after the Song was ended; the Queene remembring, that the next day following was Fryday, turning her ſelfe gratiouſly to them all, thus ſhe ſpake.

You know, noble Ladies, and you likewiſe moſt noble Gentlemen, that to morrow is the day conſecrated to the paſſion of our bleſſed Lord and Saviour, which (if you have not forgotten it, as eaſily you cannot) we devoutly celebrated, Madam *Neiphila* being then Queen, ceaſing from all our pleaſant diſcourſing, as we did the like on the Saturday following, ſanctifying the ſacred Sabbath, in due regard of it ſelfe. Wherefore being deſirous to imitate precedent good examples, which in worthy manner ſhe began to us all: I hold it very decent and neceſſary, that we ſhould abſtain to morrow, and the day enſuing from recounting any of our pleaſant Novels, reducing to our memories, what was done (as on thoſe dayes) for the ſalvation of our ſoules. This holy and Religious motion made by the Queene, was commendably allowed by all the Aſſembly, and therefore, humbly taking their leave of her, and an indifferent part of the night being already ſpent; ſeverally they betooke themſelves to their Chambers.

The end of the Seventh day.

The

THE EIGHTH DAY.

Wherein all the Discourses, passe under the rule and government of of the honourable Lady Lauretta, And the Argument imposed, is, concerning such witty deceivings, as have, or may be put in practise, by Wives to their Husbands; Husbands to their Wives; or one man towards another.

The Induction.

EArely in the morning, *Aurora* shewing her selfe bright and lovely; the Sunnes golden beames began to appeare on the tops of the adjoyning Mountaines; so that Hearbes, Plants, Trees, and all things else, were very evidently to be discerned. The Queen and her Company, being all come forth of their Chambers, and having walked a while abroad, in the goodly greene Meadowes, to taste the sweetnesse of the fresh and wholesome aire, they returned backe againe into the Palace, because it was their duty so to doe.

Afterward, betweene the houres of seven and eight they went to heare Masse, in a faire Chappell neere at hand, and thence returned to their Lodgings. When they had dined merrily together, they fell to their wonted singing and dancing: Which being done, such as were so pleased (by Licence of the Queene first obtained) went either to their rest, or such exercises as they tooke most delight in. When midday, and the heate thereof was well over-past, so that the aire seemed milde and temperate: according as the Queene had commanded; they were all seated againe about the Fountaine, with intent to prosecute their former pastime. And then Madam *Neiphila*, by the charge imposed on her, as first Speaker for this day, began as followeth.

Gulfardo made a match or wager with the wife of Gasparuolo, for the obtaining of her amorous favour, in regard of a summe of money first to be given her. The money he borrowed of her husband, and gave it in payment to her, as in case of discharging him from her husbands debt. After his returne home from Genoway, he told him in presence of his wife, how he had paid the whole summe to her, with charge of delivering it to her husband, which she confessed to be true, albeit greatly against her will.

The first Novell.

Wherein is declared, that such women as will make sale of their honestie, are sometimes over reached in their payment, and justly served as they should be.

SEeing it is my fortune, Gracious Ladies, that I must give beginning to this dayes discoursing, by some such Novell which I thinke expedient; as duty bindeth me, I am therewith well contented. And because the deceits of women to men, have been at large and liberally related; I will tell you a subtle tricke of a man to a woman. Not that I blame him for the deed, or thinke the deceit not well fitted to the woman: but I speake it in a contrary nature, as commending the man, and condemning the woman very justly; as also to shew, how men can as well beguile those crafty companions, which least beleeve any such cunning in them, as they that stand most on their artificiall skill.

Howbeit, to speake more properly, the matter by me to be reported, deserveth not the reproachfull title of deceit, but rather of a recompence duly returned: because women ought to be chaste and honest, and to preserve their honour as their lives, without yeelding to the contamination thereof, for any occasion whatsoever. And yet (nevertheless in regard of our frailty) many times we prove not so constant as we should be: yet I am of opinion, that she which selleth her honesty for money, deserveth justly to be burned. Whereas by the contrary, she that falleth into the offence, onely by intire affection (the powerfull lawes of Love being above all resistance) in equity meriteth pardon, especially of a Iudge not over-rigorous: as not long since we heard from *Philostratus*, in revealing what happned to Madam *Phillippa de Prato*, upon the dangerous Edict.



Vnderſtand then, my moſt worthy Auditors, that there lived ſometime in Millaine an *Almaigne* ſouldier, named *Gulfardo*, of commendable carriage in his perſon, and very faithfull to ſuch as he ſerved, a matter not common among the *Almaignes*. And becauſe he made juſt repaiment, to every one that lent him monies; he grew to ſuch eſpeciall credit, and was ſo familiar with the very beſt Merchants; as (many times) he could not be ſo ready to borrow, as they were willing alwayes to lend him. He thus continuing in the Citie of Millaine, faſtened his affection on a very beautifull Gentlewoman, named Miſtreſſe *Ambroſia*, wife unto a rich Merchant, who was called Signior *Gaſparolo Sagaſtraccio*, who had good knowledge of him, and reſpectively uſed him. Loving this Gentlewoman with great diſcretion, without the

the leſt apprehenſion of her husband: he ſent upon a day to entreate conference with her, for enjoying the fruition of her love, and ſhe ſhould find him ready to fulfill whatſoever ſhe pleaſed to command him, as at any time he would make good his promiſe.

The Gentlewoman, after divers of theſe private ſolicitings, reſolutely anſwered, that ſhe was as ready to fulfil the requeſt of *Gulfardo*, provided, that two eſpeciall conſiderations might enſue thereon. Firſt, the faithfull concealing thereof to any perſon living. Next, becauſe ſhe knew him to be rich, and ſhe had occaſion to uſe two hundred Crownes, about buſineſſe of importance conſequence: he ſhould freely beſtow ſo many on her, and (ever after) ſhe was to be commanded by him. *Gulfardo* perceiving the covetouſneſſe of this woman, whom (notwithſtanding his doting affection) he thought to be intirely honeſt to her husband: became ſo deeply offended at her vile anſwer, that his fervent love converted into as earneſt loathing her; determining conſtantly to deceive her, and to make her avaritious moan, the onely meanes whereby to effect it.

He ſent her word, that he was willing to performe her requeſt, or any farre greater matter for her: in which reſpect, he onely deſired for to know, when ſhe would be pleaſed to have him come ſee her, and to receive the money of him? No creature he acquainted with his ſetled purpoſe, but onely a deare friend and kinde companion, who alwayes uſed to keepe him company, in the neareſt occaſions that concerned him. The Gentlewoman, or rather moſt diſloyall wife, upon this anſwer ſent her, was extraordinarily jocond and contented, returning him a ſecret Letter, wherein ſhe ſignified: that *Gaſparvolo* her husband, had important affaires which called him to *Geneway*: but he ſhould underſtand of his departure, and then (with ſafety) he might come ſee her, as alſo his bringing of the two hundred Crownes.

In the meane while, *Gulfardo* having determined what he would doe, watched a convenient time, when he went unto *Gaſparvolo*, and ſaid: Sir, I have ſome buſineſſe of maine importance, and ſhall need to uſe but two hundred Crownes onely: I deſire you to lend me ſo many Crownes, upon ſuch profit as you were wont to take of me, at other times when I have made uſe of you, and I ſhall not faile you at my day.

Gaſparvolo was well contented with the motion, and made no more adoe, but counted downe the Crownes: departing thence (within few dayes after) for *Geneway*,

according to his wives former meſſage; ſhe giving *Gulfardo* alſo intelligence of his abſence, that now (with ſafety) he might come ſee her, and bring the two hundred Crownes with him.

Gulfardo, taking his friend in his company, went to viſit Miſtreſſe *Ambroſia*, whom he found in expectation of his arrivall, and the firſt thing he did, he counted downe the two hundred Crownes; and delivering them to her in the preſence of his friend, ſaid: Miſtreſſe *Ambroſia*, receive theſe two hundred Crownes, which I deſire you to pay unto your husband on my behalfe, when he is returned from Geneway. *Ambroſia*, received the two hundred Crownes, not regarding wherefore *Gulfardo* uſed theſe words: becauſe ſhe verily believed, that he ſpake in ſuch manner, becauſe his friend ſhould take no notice, of his giving them to her, upon any covenant paſſed between them; whereupon, ſhee ſaid. Sir, I will pay them to my husband for you; and cauſe him to give you a ſufficient diſcharge: but firſt I will count them over my ſelfe, to ſee whether the ſumme be juſt, or no. And having drawne them over upon the Table, the ſumme containing truely two hundred Crownes (wherewith ſhe was moſt highly contented) ſhe lockt them ſafe up in her Cupboord, and *Gulfardoes* friend being gone (as formerly it was compacted betweene them) ſhe came to converſe more familiarly with him, having provided a banquet for him. What paſſed betweene them afterward, both then, and oftentimes beſide, before her husband returned home, is a matter out of my element, and rather requires ignotance, than knowledge.

When *Gaſparvolo* was come from Geneway, *Gulfardo* obſerving a convenient time, when he was ſitting at the doore with his wife; tooke his Friend with him, and comming to *Gaſparvolo*, ſaid. Worthy Sir, the two hundred Crownes which you lent mee, before you journey to Geneway, in regard they could not ſerve my turne, to compaſſe the buſineſſe for which I borrowed them: within a day or two after, in preſence of this Gentleman my friend, I made repayment of them to your wife, and therefore I pray you croſſe me out of your Booke. *Gaſparvolo*, turning to his wife, demanded whether it was ſo, or no? She beholding the witneſſe ſtanding by: who was alſo preſent at her receiving them: durſt not make any deniall, but thus anſwered. Indeed husband, I received two hundred Crownes of the Gentleman, and never remembred to acquaint you therewith ſince your comming home: but hereafter

will be made no more your receiver, except I carried a quicker memory.

Then said *Gasparvolo*: Signior *Gulfardo*, I finde you alwayes a most honest Gentleman, and I will be ready at any time, to doe you the like, or a farre greater kindnesse; depart at your pleasure, and feare not the crossing of my Booke. So *Gulfardo* went away merrily contented, and *Ambrosia* was served as she justly merited; she paying the price of her owne lewdnesse to her husband, which she had a more covetous intent to keepe, questionlesse, not caring how many like lustfull matches she could make, to be so liberally rewarded, if this had succeeded to her minde: whereas he shewed himselfe wise and discreet, in paying nothing for his pleasure, and well requiting a covetous queane according to her kinde.

A lusty youthfull Priest of Varlungo, fell in love with a pretty woman, named Monna Belcolore. *To compasse his amorous desire, he left his Cloake (as a pledge of further payment) with her. By subtile sleight afterward, he made meanes to borrow a Morter of her, which when he sent home again in the presence of her husband; he demanded to have his Cloake sent him, as having left it in pawne for the Morter. To pacifie her husband, offended that she did not lend the Priest the Morter without a pawne: she sent him backe his Cloake again, albeit greatly against her will.*

The second Novell.

Approving, that no promise is to be kept with such Women as will make sale of their honesty for coyne. A warning also for men, not to suffer Priests to be over familiar with their wives.

BOth the Gentlemen and Ladies gave equall commendations of *Gulfardoes* queint beguiling the Millaine Gentlewoman *Ambrosia*, and wishing all other (of her mind) might alwayes be so served. Then the Queene, smiling on *Pamphilus*, commanded him to follow next: whereupon, thus he began.

I can tell you (faire Ladies) a short Novell, against such as are continually offensive to us, yet we being no way able to offend them, at least, in the same manner as they doe injure us. And for your better understanding what and who they be, they are our lustie Priests, who advance their Standart, and make their publike protestations against our wives, winning such advan-

tage over them, that they can pardon them both of the ſinne and puniſhment, whenſoever they are once ſubjected unto their perſwaſions, even as if they brought the Soldane bound and captived, from *Alexandria* to *Avignon*. Which imperious power, we (poore ſoules) cannot exerciſe on them, conſidering we have neither heart nor courage, to do our devoir in juſt revenge on their Mothers, Siſters, Daughters, and friends, with the like ſpirit as they riſe in armes againſt our wives. And therefore I meane to tell you a tale of a Country mans wife, more to make you laugh at the concluſion thereof, than for any ſingularity of words or matter: yet this benefit you may gaine thereby, of an apparent proofe, that ſuch Cinamon amorous and perſwading Prieſts, are not alwayes to be credited on their words or promiſes.

Let me then tell you, that at Varlungo, which you know to be not far diſtant hence, there dwelt a youthfull Prieſt, luſty, gallant, and proper of perſon (eſpecially for womens ſervice) commonly called by the name of ſweet Sir *Simon*. Now, albeit he was a man of ſlender reading, yet notwithſtanding, he had ſtore of Latine ſentences by heart; ſome true, but twice ſo many maimed and falſe, Saint like ſhewes, holy ſpeeches, and ghoſtly admonitions, which he would preach under an Oake in the fields, when he had congregated his Pariſhioners together. When women lay in child-bed, he was their daily comfortable viſitant, and would mas them from their houſes, when they had any occaſion to walke abroade; carrying alwayes a bottle of holy water about him, wherewith he would ſprinkle them by the way; peeces of hallowed Candles, and Chriſome Cakes, which pleaſed women extraordinarily, and all the Countrey afforded not ſuch another frolike Prieſt, as this our nimble and active ſweet Sir *Simon*.

Among many other of his feminine Pariſhioners, all of them being handſome and comely women: yet there was one more pleaſing in his wanton eye, than any of the reſt, named *Monna Belcolore*, and wife to a plaine mechanicke man, called *Bentivegna del Mazzo*. And, to ſpeake uprightly, few Country Villages yeelded a Woman, more freſh and lovely of complexion, although not admirable for beauty, yet ſweet Sir *Simon* thought her a Saint, and faine would be offering at her ſhrine. Divers pretty pleaſing qualities ſhe had, as ſounding the Cymball, playing artificially on the Timbrell, and ſinging thereto as it had beene a Nightingale, dancing alſo ſo dexterouſly, as happy was the man that could

could dance in her company. All which ſo enflamed ſweet Sir *Simon*, that he loſt his wonted ſprightly behaviour, walked ſullen, ſad, and melancholy, as if he had melted all his metall, becauſe he could hardly have a ſight of her. But on the Sunday morning, when he heard or knew that ſhe was in the Church, he would tickle it with a *Kyrie* and a *Sanctus*, even as if he contended to ſhew his ſingular skill in ſinging, when it had beene as good to heare an Aſſe bray. Whereas on the contrary, when ſhe came not to Church, Maſſe, and all elſe were quickly ſhaken up, as if his devotion waited upon her preſence. Yet he was ſo cunning in the carriage of his amorous buſineſſe, both for her credit and his owne, as *Bentivegna* could not perceive it, or any neighbour ſo much as ſuſpect it.

But to compaſſe more familiar acquaintance with *Beliſora*, he ſent her ſeverall gifts and preſents, day by day, as ſometimes a bunch of dainty greene Garlicke, whereof he had plenty growing in his Garden, which he manured with his owne hands, and better than all the Countrey yeelded; otherwhile a ſmall basket of Peaſe or Beanes, and Onyons or Scallions, as the ſeaſon ſerved. But when he could come in place where ſhe was; then he darted amorous wincks and glances at her, with becks, nods, and bluſhes, Loves private Ambaſſadours; which ſhe (being but countrey-bred) ſeeming by outward appearance, not to ſee, retorted diſdainefully, and forthwith would abſent her ſelfe, ſo that ſweet Sir *Simon* laboured ſtill in vaine, and could not compaſſe what he coveted.

It came to paſſe within a while after, that on a time (about high noone) Sir *Simon* being walking abroad, chanced to meet with *Bentivegna*, driving an Aſſe before him, laden with divers commodities, and demanding of him, whither he went: *Bentivegna*, thus anſwered. In troth Sir *Simon* I am going to the City, about ſome ſpeciall buſineſſe of mine owne, and I carry theſe things to Signior *Bonaccorſi da Ginaſtreto*, becauſe he ſhould helpe me before the Iudge, when I ſhal be called in queſtion concerning my patrimony. Sir *Simon* looking merrily on him, ſaid. Thou doeſt well *Bentivegna*, to make a friend ſure before thou neede him; goe, take my bleſſing with thee, and returne againe with ſucceſſe. But if thou meet with *Lagnccio*, or *Naldo*, forget not to tell them, that they muſt bring me my ſhooe-ties before Sunday. *Bentivegna* ſaid, he would diſcharge his errand, and ſo parted from him driving his Aſſe on towards *Florence*.

Now began Sir *Simon* to ſhrug, and ſcratch his head, thinking this to be a fit convenient time, for him to go viſit *Belcolore*, and to make triall of his fortune: wherefore, ſetting aſide all other buſineſſe, he ſtayed no where till he came to the houſe, whereinto being entered, he ſaid: All happineſſe be to them that dwell here. *Belcolore* being then above in the Chamber, when ſhe heard his tongue, replyed. Sweet Sir *Simon*! you are heartily welcome, whither are you walking, if the queſtion may be demanded? Beleeve me dainty Duck, anſwered Sir *Simon*, I am come to ſit a while with thee, becauſe I met thy husband going to the City. By this time, *Belcolore* was deſcended downe the ſtaires, and having once againe given welcome to Sir *Simon*, ſhe ſate downe by him, cleanſing of Colewort ſeeds from ſuch other courſe chaffe, which her husband prepared before his departure.

Sir *Simon* hugging her in his armes, and fetching a vehement ſigh, ſaid: My *Belcolore*, how long ſhall I pine and languiſh for thy love? How now Sir *Simon*? anſwered ſhe, is this behaviour for an holy man? Holy men *Belcolore*, are made of the ſame matter as others be, they have the ſame affections, and therefore ſubject to their infirmities. *Santa Maria*, anſwered *Belcolore*, Dare Prieſts doe ſuch things as you talke of? Yes *Belcolore* (quoth he) and much better than other men can, becauſe they are made for the very beſt buſineſſe, in which regard they are reſtrained from marriage. True (quoth *Belcolore*) but much more from medling with other mens wives. Touch not that Text *Belcolore*, replyed Sir *Simon*, it is ſomewhat above your capacity: talke of that I came for, namely thy love, my Ducke, and my Dove, Sir *Simon* is thine, I pray thee be mine.

Belcolore, obſerving his ſmirking behaviour, his proper perſon, pretty talke, and queint inſinuating: felt a motion to female frailty, which yet ſhe would withſtand ſo long as ſhe could, and not be over-haſty in her yeelding. Sir *Simon* promiſed her a new paire of ſhoots, garters, ribbands, or what elſe ſhe would requeſt. Sir *Simon* (quoth ſhe) all theſe things which you talke of, are fit for women: but if your love to me be ſuch as you make choice of, fulfill what I will motion to you, and then (perhaps) I ſhall tell you more. Sir *Simon* heare made him haſty to promiſe whatſoever ſhe would deſire, whereupon thus ſhe replyed, On Saturday ſaid ſhe, I muſt goe to Florence, to carry home ſuch yarne as was ſent me to ſpinne, and to amend my ſpinning wheele: if you will lead me to Florence, where-

with

with I know you are alwayes furniſhed, I ſhall redeeme from the Vſurer my beſt peticoate, and my wedding gowne (both well-neere loſt for lacke of repayment) without which I cannot be ſeene at Church, or in any other good place els, and then afterward other matters may be accompliſhed.

Alas, ſweet *Belcolore* anſwered Sir *Simon*, I never bare any ſuch ſumme about me, for men of our profeſſion, doe ſeldome carry any money at all: but beleeve me on my word before Saturday come, I wil not faile to bring them hither. Oh Sir (quoth *Belcolore*) you men are quicke promiſers, but ſlow performers. Doe you thinke to uſe me, as poore *Bilia??a* was, who truſted to faire words, and found her ſelfe deceived? Now Sir *Simon*, her example in being made a ſcandall to the world, is a ſufficient warning for me: if you be not ſo provided, goe and make uſe of your friend, for I am not otherwiſe to be mooved. Nay *Belcolore* (quoth he) I hope you will not ſerve me ſo, but my word ſhall be of better worth to you. Conſider the conveniency of time, we being ſo privately here alone: whereas at my returning hither againe, ſome hinderance may thwart me, and the like opportunity be never obtained. Sir, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) you have heard my reſolution; if you will fetch the Florines, do, otherwiſe walke about your buſineſſe, for I am a woman of my word.

Sir *Simon* perceiving, that ſhe would not truſt him upon bare words, nor any thing was to be done, without *Solum me fac*, whereas his meaning was *Sine cuſtodia*; thus anſwered. Well *Belcolore*, ſeeing you dare not credit my bringing the ten Florines, according to my promiſed day, I will leave you a good pawne, my very beſt Cloake, lined quite thorow with rich Silke, and made up in the choiceſt manner.

Belcolore, looking on the cloak, ſaid. How much may this cloake be worth? How much? quoth Sir *Simon*, upon my word *Belcolore*, it is of a right fine Flanders Serdge, and not above eight daies ſince, I bought it thus (ready made) of *Lotto* the Fripperer, and payed for it ſixe and twenty Florines, a pledge then ſufficient for your ten. Is it poſſible, ſaid ſhe, that it ſhould coſt ſo much? Well, Sir *Simon*, deliver it me firſt, I will lay it up ſafe for you againſt Saturday; when if you fetch it not, I will redeeme mine owne things with it, and leave you to releaſe it your ſelfe.

The cloak is laid up by *Belcolore*, and Sir *Simon* ſo forward in his affection; that (in briefe) he enjoyed what he came for; and departed afterward in his light trip-

ping Cassocke, but yet through by-lanes, and no much frequented places, smelling on a Nosegay, as if he had been at some wedding in the Countrey, and went thus lightly without his Cloake for his better ease. As commonly after actions of evil, Repentance knocketh at the doore of Conscience, and urgeth a guilty remembrance with some sense of sorrow: so was it now with sweete Sir *Simon*, who surveying over all his vailes of offering Candles, the validity of his yearely benefits, and all coming nothing neere the sum of (scarce halfe) sixe and twenty Florines; he began to repent his deed of darkenesse, although it was acted in the day time, and considered with himselfe, by what honest (yet unsuspected meanes) he might recover his Cloake again, before it went to the Broaker, in redemption of *Belcolores* pawned apparrell, and yet to send her no Florines neither.

Having a cunning reaching wit, especially in matters for advantage, and pretending to have a dinner at his lodging, for a few of some invited friends: hee made use of a neighbours Boy, sending him to the house of *Belcolore*, with request of lending him her stone Morter, to make Greene-sawce in for his guests, because he had meate required such sawce. *Belcolore* suspecting no treachery, sent him the stone Morter with the Pestell, and about dinner time, when he knew *Bentivegna* to be at home with his wife, by a spy which was set for the purpose; he called the Clearke (usually attending on him) and said. Take this Morter and Pestell, beare them home to *Belcolore*, and tell her: Sir *Simon* sends them home with thankes, they having sufficiently served his turn, and desire her likewise, to send me my cloake which the Boy left as a pledge for better remembrance, and because she should not lend it without a pawne.

The Cleark comming to the house of *Belcolore*, found her sitting at dinner with her husband, and delivering her the Pestell and Morter, performed the rest of Sir *Simons* message. *Belcolore* hearing the Cloake demanded, stept up to make answer. But *Bentivegna*, seeming (by his lookes) to be much offended, roughly replyed, Why how now wife? Sir *Simon* is our speciall friend, and cannot he be pleasured without a Pawne? I protest upon my word, I could finde in my heart to smite thee for it. Rise quickely thou wert best, and send him back his cloake; with this warnin ghereafter, that whatsoever he will have, be it our poore Asse, or any thing else being ours, let him have it; and tell him (Master Clearke) he may command it. *Belcolore* rose grumbling from the Table, and fetching the Cloake forth of the Chest

which

which ſtood neere at hand in the ſame roome; ſhe delivered it to the Clearke, ſaying. Tell Sir *Simon* from me, and boldly ſay you heard me ſpeake it: that I make a vow to my ſelfe, he ſhall never make uſe of my Morter hereafter, to beate any more of his ſawcineſſe in, let my Husband ſay whatſoever he will, I ſpeake the word and will performe it.

Away went the Clearke home with the Cloake, and told Sir *Simon* what ſhe had ſaid; whereto he replyed. If I muſt not make uſe of her morter, I will not truſt her with the keeping of my Cloak, for feare it go to the gage indeed.

Bentivegna was a little diſpleaſed at his wives words, becauſe he thought ſhe ſpake but in jeſt: albeit *Belcolore* was ſo angry with Sir *Simon*, that ſhe would not ſpeak to him, till vintage time following. But then Sir *Simon* what by ſharpe threatnings, of her ſoule to be in danger of hel fire, continuing ſo long in hatred of a holy Prieſt, which words did not a little terrifie her; beſides daily preſents to her, of ſweet new Wines, roaſted Cheſſe nuts, Figs and Almonds: all unkindnes became converted to former familiarity; the garments were redeemed: he gave her Sonnets which ſhe would ſweetly ſing to her Cimball, and further friendſhip increaſed betweene her and ſweet Sir *Simon*.

Calandrino, Bruno, *and* Buffalmaco, *all of them being Painters by profeſſion, travelled to the Plaine of* Mugnone, *to finde the precious Stone called* Helitropium. Calandrino *perſwading himſelfe that he had found it, returned home to his houſe heavily loden with Stones. His Wife rebuking him for his abſence, he groweth into anger, and ſhrewdly beateth her. Afterward, when the caſe is debated among his other friends* Bruno *and* Buffalmaco, *all found to be meere foolery*

The third Novell.

Juſtly reprehending the ſimplicity of ſuch men, as are too much addicted to credulity, and will give credit to every thing they heare.

Pamphilus having ended his Novell, whereat the Ladies laughed exceedingly, ſo that very hardly they could give over: The Queene gave charge to Madam *Eliſa*, that ſhe ſhould next ſucceed in order; when being ſcarcely able to refraine from ſmiling, thus ſhe began.

I know not (Gracious Ladies) whether I can move you to as hearty laughter, and with a breefe Novell of

mine owne, as *Pamphilus* did with his: yet I assure you, it is both true and pleasant, and I wil relate it in the best manner I can.

In our City, which evermore hath contained all sorts of people, not long since there dwelt a Painter, named *Calandrino*, a simple man; yet as much addicted to matters of novelty, as any man whatsoever could be. The most part of his time, he spent in the company of two other Painters, the one called *Bruno*, and the other *Buffalmaco* men of very recreative spirits, and indifferent good capacity, often resorting to the said *Calandrino*, because they tooke delight in his honest simplicity, and pleasant behaviour. At the same time likewise, there dwelt in *Florence*, a young Gentleman of singular disposition, to every witty conceite, as the world did not yeeld a better companion, he being named *Maso del Saggio*, who having heard somewhat of *Calandrinos* silinesse, determined to jest with him in merry manner, and to suggest his longing humours after Novelties, with some conceite of extraordinary nature.

He happening (on a day) to meete him in the Church of Saint *Iohn*, and seeing him seriously busied, in beholding the rare pictures, and the curious carved Tabernacle, [which not long before] was placed on the high Altar in the said Church: considered with himselfe, that he had now fit place and opportunity, to effect what he had long time desired. And having imparted his minde to a very intima e friend, how he intended to deale with simple *Calandrino*: they went both very neere him where he sate all alone, and making shew as if they saw him not; began to consult betweene themselves, concerning the rare property of precious stones; whereof *Maso* discoursed as exactly, as if he had been a most skilfull Lapidary; to which conference of theirs, *Calandrino* lent an attentive eare, in regard it was a matter of singular rarity.

Soone after, *Calandrino* started up, and perceiving by their loud speaking that they talked of nothing which requited secret Counsell: he went into their company [the only thing which *Maso* desired] and holding on still the former Argument; *Calandrino* would needs request to know, in what place these precious stones were to be found, which had such excellent vertues in them? *Maso* made answer, that the most of them were to be had in *Berlinzona*, neere to the City of *Baschi*, which was in the Territory of a Country, called *Bengodi*, where the Vines were bound about with Sawcidges, a Goose was sold for a penny, and the Gosslings freely given in to

to boote. There was also an high mountaine, wholly made of *Parmezane*, grated Cheese, whereon dwelt people, who did nothing else but make *Macheronez* and *Ravioles*, boyling them with broth of Capons, and afterward hurled them all about, to whosoever can or will catch them. Neere to this mountaine runneth a faire River, the whole streame being pure white Bastard, none such was ever sold for any money, and without one drop of water in it.

Now trust me Sir, [said *Calandrino*] that is an excellent country to dwell in: but I pray you tell me Sir, what do they with the Capons after they have boyld them? The *Basthanes* [quoth *Maso*] eate them all. Have you Sir, said *Calandrino*, at any time beene in that Countrey? How? answered *Maso*, do you demand if I have been there? Yes man, above a thousand times, at the least. How far Sir, I pray you [quoth *Calandrino*] is that worthy Countrey, from this our City? In troth, replyed *Maso*, the miles are hardly to be numbred, for the most part of them, we travell when we are nightly in our beds, and if a man dreame right; he may be there upon a sudden.

Surely Sir, said *Calandrino*, it is further hence, then to *Abruzzo*. Yes questionlesse, replyed *Maso*; but, to a willing mind, no travell seemeth tedious.

Calandrino well noting, that *Maso* delivered all these speeches with a stedfast countenance, no signe of smiling, or any gesture to urge the least mislike: he gave such credit to them, as to any matter of apparent and manifest truth, and upon this confidence he said.

Beleeve me Sir, the journey is over-farre for me to undertake, but if it were neerer; I could afford to go in your Company; onely to see how they make *Macheronez*, and to fill my belly with them.

But now we are in talke Sir, I pray you pardon me to aske whether any such precious stones, as you speake of are to be found in that Countrey, or no? Yes indeed, replyed *Maso*, there are two kindes of them to be found in those Territories, both being of very great vertue. One kind, are gritty stones, of *Scitignano*, and of *Montisia*, by vertue of which places, when as any Mill-stones or Grind-stones are to be made, they kneade the sand as they use to doe meal, and so make them of what bignes they please. In which respect, they have a saying there, that Nature maketh common stones, but *Montisia* Mill stones. Such plenty are there of these Mill-stone, so slenderly here esteemed among us, as Emralds are with them, whereof they have whole mountains, farre

greater

greater than our *Montemorello*, which ſhine moſt glorioufly at midnight. And how meanly ſoever we account of their Mill-ſtones; yet they drill them, and enchaſe them in Rings, which afterward they ſend to the great Soldane, and have whatſoever they will demand for them.

The other kind is a moſt precious Stone indeed, which our beſt Lapidaries call the *Helistropium*, the vertue whereof is ſo admirable, as whoſoever beareth it about him, ſo long as he keepeth it, it is impoſſible for any eye to diſcerne him, becauſe he walketh meerely inviſible. O Lord Sir (quoth *Calandrino*) thoſe ſtones are of rare vertue indeed: but where els may a man finde that *Helitropium*? Whereto *Maſo* thus anſwered: That Country only doth not containe the *Helistropium*, for they be many times found upon our plain of *Mugnone*. Of what bigneſſe Sir (quoth *Calandrino*) is the Stone, and what colour? The *Helistropium*, anſwered *Maſo*, is not always of one quality, becauſe ſome are big, and others leſſe; but all are of one colour, namely blacke.

Calandrino committing all theſe things to reſpective memory, and pretending to be called thence by ſome other eſpeciall affaires; departed from *Maſo*, concluding reſolvedly with himſelf, to find this precious ſtone if poſſibly he could: yet intending to doe nothing, untill he had acquainted *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* therewith, whom he loved dearely: he went in all haſte to ſeeke them; becauſe, (without any longer trifling the time) they three might be the firſt men, that ſhould find out this precious ſtone, ſpending almoſt the whole morning, before they were all three met together. For they were painting at the Monaſtery of the Siſters of *Faenza*, where they had very ſerious imployment, and followed their buſineſſe diligently: where having found them, and ſaluting them in ſuch kinde manner, as continually he uſed to doe, thus he began,

Loving friends, if you were pleaſed to follow mine advice, we three will quickly be the richeſt men in *Florence*; becauſe by information from a Gentleman (well deſerving to be credited) on the Plaine of *Mugnone* there is a precious ſtone to be found, which whoſoever carrieth it about him, walketh inviſible, and is not to be ſeen by any one. Let us three be the firſt men to goe and finde it, before any other heare thereof, and goe about it, and aſſure our ſelves that we ſhall find it, for I know it, (by deſcription) ſo ſoon as I ſee it. And when we have it, who can hinder us from bearing it about us? Then will we goe to the Tables of our Bankers, or money

Changers,

changers, which we see dayly with plenty of gold and silver, where we may take so much as we list, for they (nor any) are able to descry us. So, (in short time) we shall all be wealthy, never needing to drudge any more, or paint muddy walls, as hitherto we have done; and as many of our poore profession are forced to doe.

Bruno and *Buffalmaco*, hearing this, began to smile, and looking merrily each on other, they seemed to wonder thereat, and greatly commended the counsell of *Calandrino*. *Buffalmaco* demanding how the stone was called. Now it fortuned, that *Calandrino* (who had but a grosse and blockish memory) had quite forgot the name of the stone, and therefore said, What need have we of the name, when we know and are assured of the stones vertue? Let us make no more ado, but (setting aside all other businesse) go seeke where it is to be found. Well my friend (answered *Bruno*) you say we may finde it, but how and by what meanes?

There are two sorts of them (quoth *Calandrino*) some big others smaller, but all carry a black colour: therefore (in mine opinion) let us gather all such stones as are black, so shall we be sure to finde it among them, without any further losse of time.

Buffalmaco and *Bruno*, liked and allowed the counsel of *Calandrino*, which when they had (by severall commendations) given him assurance of, *Bruno* said, I doe not thinke it a convenient time now, for us to goe about so weighty a businesse: for the Sun is yet in the highest degree, and striketh such a heat on the plaines of *Mugnone*, as all the stones are extreamely dryed, and the very blackest will now seeme whitest But in the morning after the dew is falne, and before the Sun shineth forth, every stone retaineth his true colour. Moreover, there be many Labourers now working on the plaine about such businesse as they are severally assigned who seeing us in so serious a search may imagin what we seeke for, and partake with us in the same inquisition; by which meanes they may chance to speed before us, and so we may lose both our trot and amble. Wherefore by my consent, if your opinion jumpe with mine, this is an enterprize onely to be performed in an earely morning, when the black stones are to be distinguisht from the white, and a Festivall day were the best of all other, for then there will be none to discover us.

Buffalmaco applauded the advice of *Bruno*, and *Calandrino* did no lesse, concluding altogether; that Sunday morning (next ensuing) should be the time, and then they all three would goe seeke the stone. But *Calandrino*

was

was very earneſt with them, that they ſhould not reveale it to any living body, becauſe it was told him as an eſpeciall ſecret, diſcloſing further to them, what he had heard concerning the Countrey of *Bengodi*, maintaining [with ſolemn oaths and proteſtations] that every part thereof was true. Vpon this agreement, they parted from *Calandrino* who hardly enjoyed any reſt at all, either by night or day, ſo greedy he was to be poſſeſſed of the ſtone. On the Sunday morning, he called up his Companions before break of day, and going forth at *S. Galls* Port, they ſtayed not, till they came to the plaine of *Mugnone*, where they ſearched all about to finde this ſtrange ſtone.

Calandrino went ſtealing before the other two, and verily perſwading himſelfe, that he was borne to finde the *Helitropium*, and looking on every ſide about him, he rejected all other Stones but the blacke, whereof firſt he filled his boſome, and afterwards, both his Pockets. Then he tooke off his large painting Apron, which he faſtened with his girdle in the manner of a ſacke, and that he filled full of ſtones likewiſe. Yet not ſo ſatisfied, he ſpred abroad his Cloake, which being alſo full of ſtones, he bound it up carefully, for feare of looſing the very leaſt of them. All which *Buffalmaco* and *Bruno* well obſerving (the day growing on and hardly they could reach home by dinner time) according as merrily they had concluded, and pretending not to ſee *Calandrino*, albeit he was not farre from them: What is become of *Calandrino*? ſaid *Buffalmaco*. *Bruno* gazing ſtrangely every where about him as if he were deſirous to finde him, replyed. I ſaw him not long ſince, for then he was hard by before us; queſtionleſſe, he hath given us the ſlip, is privily gone come to dinner, and making ſtarke fooles of us, hath left us to picke up blacke ſtones, upon the parching plaines of *Mugnone*. Well (quoth *Buffalmaco*) this is but the tricke of an hollow hearted friend, and not ſuch as he proteſted himſelfe to be to us. Could any but we have been ſo ſottiſh, to credit his frivolous perſwaſions, hoping to finde any ſtone of ſuch vertue, and here on the fruitleſs plains of *Mugnone*? No, no, none but we would have beleeved him.

Calandrino (who was cloſe by them) hearing theſe words, and ſeeing the whole manner of their wondering behaviour: became conſtantly perſwaded, that he had not only found the precious ſtone; but alſo had ſome ſtore of them about him, by reaſon hee was ſo neare them, and yet they could not ſee him, therefore he

he walked before them. Now was his joy beyond all compasse of expression, and being exceeding proud of so happy an adventure, did not meane to speake one word to them, but (heavily laden as he was) to steale home faire and softly before them; which indeed he did, leaving them to follow after it they would. *Bruno* perceiving his intent, said to *Buffalmaco*: What remaineth now for us to doe? Why should not we goe home as well as he? And reason too, replyed *Bruno*, It is in vaine to tarry any longer here: but I solemnly protest, *Calandrino* shall no more make an Asse of me: and were I now as neere him, as not long since I was, I would give him such a remembrance on the heele with this Flint-stone, as should sticke by him this moneth, to teach him a lesson for abusing his friends.

He threw the stone and hit him shrewdly on the heel therewith; but all was one to *Calandrino*, whatsoever they said, or did, as thus they still followed after him. And though the blow of the stone was painfull to him; yet he mended his pace so well as he was able, in regard of being over-laden with stones, and gave them not one word all the way, because he tooke himselfe to be invisible, and utterly unseen of them. *Buffalmaco* taking up another Flint stone, which was indifferent heavy and sharpe, said to *Bruno*: *Seest thou this Flint?* Casting it from him, smote *Calandrino* on the back therewith, saying. *Oh that* Calandrino *had beene so neere, as I might have hit him on the backe with the stone.* And thus all the way on the plaine of *Mugnone* they did nothing else but pelt him with stones even so farre as the Port of St. *Gall*; where they threw down what other stones they had gathered, meaning not to molest him any more, because they had done enough already.

Then they stept before him into the Port, and acquainted the Warders with the whole matter, who laughing heartily at the jest, the better to uphold it; would seeme not to see *Calandrino* in his passage by them, but suffered him to goe on, sore wearied with his burthen, and sweating extreamely. Without resting himselfe in any place, he came home to his house, which was neere to the corner of the Milles, Fortune being so favourable to him in the course of this mockery, that as he passed along the Rivers side, and afterward through part of the Citie; he was neither met nor seene by any, in regard they were all in their houses, because it was dinner time.

Calandrino, every minute ready to sinke under the weighty burthen, entred into his owne house, where (by

(by great ill lucke) his wife, being a comely and very honeſt woman, and named *Monna Triſta*, was ſtanding aloft on the ſtaires head. She being ſomewhat angrie for his ſo long abſence, and ſeeing him come in grunting and groaning, frowningly ſaid. *I thought that the Divell would never let thee come home: all the whole City hath dined, and yet we muſt remaine without our dinner;* When *Calandrino* heard this, and perceived that he was not inviſible to his wife: full of rage and wroth, he began to raile, ſaying: Ah thou wicked woman, where art thou? Thou haſt utterly undone me: but (as I live) I will pay thee ſoundly for it. Vp the ſtaires he aſcended into a ſmall Parlour, where when he had ſpread all his burthen of ſtones on the floore: he ran to his wife, catching her by the haire of the head, and throwing her at his feete; giving her ſo many ſpurnes and cruell blowes, as ſhe was not able to move either armes or legges, notwithſtanding all her teares, and humble ſubmiſſion.

Now *Buffalmaco* and *Bruno*, after they had ſpent an indifferent while, with the Warders at the Port in laughter; in a faire and gentle pace, they followed *Calandrino* home to his houſe, and being come to the doore; they heard the harſh bickering betweene him and his wife, and ſeeming as if they were newly arrived they called out aloud to him. *Calandrino* being in a ſweat, ſtamping and raving ſtill at his wife: looking out of the window, entreated them to aſcend up to him, which they did, counterfeiting grievous diſpleaſure againſt him. Being come into the roome, which they ſaw all covered over with ſtones. his wife ſitting in a corner, all the haire (well-neere) torne off her head, her face broken and bleeding, and all her body cruelly beaten; on the other ſide, *Calandrino* ſtanding unbraced and ungirded, ſtrugling and wallowing like a man quite out of breath: after a little pauſing, *Bruno* thus ſpake.

Why how now *Calandrino*? What may the meaning of this matter be? What, art thou preparing for building, that thou haſt provided ſuch plenty of ſtones? How ſitteth thy poore wife? How haſt thou miſuſed her? Are theſe the behaviours of a wiſe or honeſt man? *Calandrino*, utterly over ſpent with travell, and carrying ſuch an huge burthen of ſtones, as alſo the toyleſome beating of his wife, (but much more impatient and offended; for that high good fortune, which he imagined to have loſt:) could not collect his ſpirits together, to anſwer them one ready word, wherefore he fate fretting like a mad man. Whereupon, *Buffalmaco* thus

thus began to him. *Calandrino*, if thou be angry with any other, yet thou shouldest not have made such a mockery of us, as thou hast done: in leaving us (like a couple of Coxcombes) on the plaine of Mugnone, whether thou leadst us with thee, to seeke a precious stone called *Helitropium*. And couldst thou steale home, never bidding us so much as farewell? How can we but take it in very evill part, that thou shouldest abuse two honest neighbours? Well, assure thy selfe, this is the last time that ever thou shalt serve us so.

Calandrino (by this time) being somewhat better come to himselfe, returned them this answer. Alas my good friends, be not you offended, the case is farre otherwise than you imagine. Poore unfortunate man that I am, I found the rare precious stone that you speake of: and marke me well, if I doe not tell you the truth of all. When you asked one another (the first time) what was become of me; I was hard by you: at the most within the distance of two yards length; and perceiving that you saw me not, (being still so neere, and alwayes before you:) I went on smiling to my selfe, to heare you brabble and rage against me.

So, proceeding on in his discourse, he recounted every accident as it hapned, both what they had said and did unto him, concerning the severall blowes, with the two Flint-stones, the one hurting him grievously in the heele, and the other paining him as extreamely in the backe, with their speeches used then, and his laughter, notwithstanding he felt the harm of them both, yet being proud that he did so invisibly beguile them. Nay more (quoth he) I cannot forbeare to tell you, that when I passed thorow the Port, I saw you standing with the Warders; yet, by vertue of that excellent Stone, undiscovered of you all. Beside, going along the streets, I met many of my Gossips, friends, and familiar acquaintance, such as used daily to converse with me, and drinking together in every Taverne: yet not one of them spake to me, neither used any courtesie or salutation; which (indeed) I did the more freely forgive them, because they were not able to see me.

In the end of all, when I was come home into mine owne house, this divellish and accursed woman, being aloft upon my staires head, by much misfortune chanced to see me; in regard (as it is not unknowne to you) that women cause all things to lose their vertue. In which respect, I that could have stil'd my selfe the only happy man in Florence, am now made most miserable.

There-

Therefore did I justly beate her, so long as she was able to stand against me, and I know no reason to the contrary, why I should not yet teare her in a thousand peeces: for I may well curse the day of our marriage, to hinder and bereave me of such an invisible blessednesse.

Buffalmaco and *Bruno* hearing this, made shew of very much mervailing thereat, and many times maintained what *Calandrino* said; being well-neere ready to burst with laughter; considering how confidently he stood upon it, that he had found the wonderfull Stone, and lost it by his wives speaking onely to him. But when they saw him rise in fury once more, with intent to beate her againe: then they stept betweene them; affirming, that the woman had no way offended in this case, but rather he himselfe: who knowing that women cause all things to lose their vertue, had not therefore expressly commanded her, not to be seene in his presence all that day, untill he had made full proofe of the stones vertue. And questionlesse, the consideration of a matter so availeable and important, was quite taken from him, because such an especiall happinesse, should not belong to him onely; but (in part) to his friends, whom he had acquainted therewith, drew them to the plaine with him in company, where they tooke as much paines in search of the stone, as possibly he did, or could; and yet dishonestly he would deceive them, and beare it away covetously, for his private benefit.

After many other, as wise and wholesome persuasions, which he constantly credited, because they spake them, they reconciled him to his wife, and she to him: but not without some difficulty in him: who falling into wonderfull grief and melancholy, for losse of such an admirable precious stone, was in danger to have died within lesse than a moneth after.

The Provost belonging to the Church of Fiesola, falls in love with a Gentlewoman, being a widow, and named Piccarda, who hated him as much as he loved her. He imagining, that he lay with her, by the Gentlewomans Brethren, and the Bishop under whom he served, was taken bed with her mayd, an ugly foule deformed Slut.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is declared, how love oftentimes is so powerfull in aged men, and driving them to such doating, that it redoundeth to their great disgrace and punishment.

Lady

LAdy *Eliza* having concluded the Novell, not without infinite commendations of the whole company: the Queene turning her lookes to Madam *Æmilia*, gave her such an expresse signe, as she must needs follow next after Madam *Eliza*, whereupon she began in this manner.

Vertuous Ladies, I very well remember (by divers Novels formerly related) that sufficient hath been said, concerning Priests and Religious persons; and all other carrying shaven Crowns, in their luxurious desires. But because no one can at any time say so much, as thereto no more may be added: beside them already spoken of, I will tell you another concerning the Provost of a Cathedrall Church, who would needs (in despight of all the world) love a Gentlewoman whether she would or no: and therefore, in due chastisement both unto his age and folly, she gave him such entertainment as he justly deserved.

It is not unknowne unto you all, that the City of *Fiesola*, the mountaine whereof we may very easily hither discerne, hath beene (in times past) a very great and most ancient City: although at this day it is well-neer all ruined: yet nevertheless, it alwayes was, and yet is a Bishops See, albeit not of the wealthiest. In the same City, and no long while since, neare unto the Cathedrall Church, there dwelt a Gentlewoman, being a Widdow, and commonly there stiled Madam *Piccarda*, whose house and inheritance was but small, wherewith yet she lived very contentedly (having no wandering eye, or wanton desires) and no company but her two brethren, Gentlemen of especiall honest and gracious disposition.

This Gentlewoman, being yet in the flourishing condition of her time, did ordinarily resort to the Cathedrall Church, in holy zeale, and religious devotion; where the Provost of the place became so enamoured of her, as nothing (but the sight of her) yeelded him any contentment. Which fond affection of his, was forwarded with such an audacious and bold carriage, as he dared to acquaint her with his love, requiring her enterchange of affection, and the like opinion of him, as he had of her. True it is, that he was very farre entred into yeares, but young and lusty in his own proud conceit, presuming strangely beyond his capacity, and thinking as well of his ability, as the youthfullest gallant in the world could doe. Whereas (in very deed) his person was utterly displeasing, his behaviour immodest and scandalous, and his usuall Language, savouring

of

of such sensuality, as very few or none cared for his company. And if any woman seemed respective of him, it was in regard of his outside and profession, and more for feare, than the least affection, and alwayes as welcome to them, as the head ake.

His fond and foolish carriage still continuing to this Gentlewoman; she being wise and vertuously advised, spake thus unto him: Holy Sir, if you love me according as you protest, and manifest by your outward behaviour: I am the more to thanke you for it, being bound in dutie to love you likewise. But if your love have any harsher or unsavoury taste, which mine is no way able to endure, neither dare entertaine in any kinde whatsoever: you must and shall hold me excused, because I am made of no such temper. You are my ghostly and spirituall Father, an holy Priest. Moreover, yeares have made you honourably aged; all which severall weighty considerations, ought to confirme you in continence and chastity. Remember withall (good Sir) that I am but a child to you in years, and were I bent to any wanton appetites, you should justly correct me by fatherly counsell, such as most beautifieth your sacred profession. Beside, I am a widow, and you are not ignorant, how requisite a thing honestie is in Widdowes. Wherefore, pardon me (holy Father:) for, in such manner as you make the motion: I desire you not to love me, because I neither can or will at any time so affect you.

The Provost gaining no other grace at this time, would not give over for this first repulse, but pursuing her still with unbeseeming importunity; many privat meanes he used to her by Letters, Tokens and insinuating ambassages; yea, whensoever she came to the Church, he never ceased his wearisome solicitings. Whereat she growing greatly offended, and perceiving no likelihood of his desisting; became so tired with his tedious suite, that she considered with her selfe, how she might dispatch him as he deserved, because she saw no other remedy. Yet she would not attempt any thing in this case, without acquainting her Brethren first therewith. And having told them, how much she was importuned by the Provost, and also what course she meant to take (wherein they both counselled and encouraged her:) within a few dayes after, she went to Church as she was wont to doe; where so soone as the Provost espyed her: forthwith he came to her, and according to his continued course, he fell into his amorous courting. She looking upon him with a smiling countenance, and walking aside with him out of any hearing,

after

after he had ſpent many impertinent ſpeeches, ſhee (venting forth many a grievous ſighe) at length returned him this anſwer.

Reverend Father, I have often heard it ſaid: That there is not any Fort or Caſtle, how ſtrongly munited ſoever it be; but by continuall aſſayling, at length (of neceſſity) it muſt and will be ſurprized. Which compariſon, I may full well allude to my ſelfe. For, you having ſo long time ſolicited me, one while with affable language, then againe with tokens and enticements, of ſuch prevailing power, as have broken the very barricado of my former deliberation, and yeelded me up as your priſoner, to be commanded at your pleaſure, for now I am onely devoted yours.

Well may you [Gentle Ladies] imagine, that this anſwer was not a little welcome to the Provoſt, who, ſhrogging with conceite of joy, preſently thus replyed. I thanke you Madam *Piccarda*, and to tell you true, I held it almoſt as a miracle, that you could ſtand upon ſuch long reſiſtance, conſidering, it never ſo fortuned to me with any other. And I have many times ſaid to my ſelfe, that if women were made of ſilver, they hardly could be worth a penny, becauſe there can ſcarcely one be found of ſo good allay, as to endure the teſt and eſſay. But let us breake off this frivolous conference, and reſolve upon a concluſion; How, when, and where we may ſafely meete together. Worthy Sir, anſwered *Piccarda*, your ſelfe may appoint the time whenſoever you pleaſe, becauſe I have no husband to whom I ſhould render any account of my abſence, or preſence: but I am not provided of any place.

A pretty while the Provoſt ſtood muſing, and at laſt ſaid, A place Madam? where can there be more privacie than in your owne houſe? Alas Sir [quoth ſhe] you know that I have two Gentlemen my brethren, who continually are with me, and other of their friends beſide: My houſe alſo is not great, wherefore it is impoſſible to be there, except you could be like a dumbe man, without ſpeaking one word, or making the very leaſt noiſe; beſide, to remaine in darkeneſſe, as if you were blinde, and who can be able to endure all theſe? And yet [without theſe] there is no adventuring, albeit they never come into my Chamber: but their lodging is ſo cloſe to mine, as there cannot any word be ſpoken, be it never ſo low, but they heare it very eaſily. Madam ſaid the Provoſt, for one or two nights I can make hard ſhift. Why Sir [quoth ſhe] the matter only remaineth in you. Let me alone Madam, I will be governed by your

direc-

directions: but in any case, let us begin this night. With all my heart, said she. So appointing him how, and when he should come; he parted from her, and she returned home to her house.

Here I am to tell you, that this Gentlewoman had a servant, in the nature of an old maid, not endued with any well featured face, but in stead thereof, she had the vilest and most counterfeit countenance, as hardly could be seene a worse. She had a wrie mouth, huge great lippes, foule teeth, great and blacke, a monstrous stinking breath, her eyes bleared, and alwayes running, the complexion of her face betweene green and yellow, as if she had not spent the Sommer season in the City, but in the parching countrey under a hedge; and beside all these excellent parts, she was crooke backt, poult footed, and went like a lame Mare in fetters. Her name was *Ciuta*, but in regard of her flat nose, lying as low as a Beagles, she was called *Ciutazza*. Now, notwithstanding all this deformity in her, yet she had a singular opinion of her selfe, as commonly all such foule slutts have: in regard whereof, Madam *Piccarda* calling her aside, Thus began.

Ciutazza, if thou wilt doe for me one nights service, I shall bestow on thee a faire new Smocke. When *Ciutazza* heard her speake of a new Smocke, instantly she answered, Madam, if you please to bestow a new smock on me, were it to runne through the fire for you, or any businesse of farre greater danger, you onely have the power to command me, and I will do it. I will not (said *Piccarda*) urge thee to any dangerous action, but only to lodge in my bed this night with a man, and give him courteous entertainment, who shall reward thee liberally for it. But have an especiall care that thou speake not one word, for feare thou shouldst be heard of my Brethren, who (as thou knowest) lodge so neere by; doe this, and then demand the Smocke of me. Madam (answered *Ciutazza*) if it were to lie with five men, rather than one; if you say the word, it shall be done.

When night was come, the Provost also came according to appointment, even when the two brethren were in their lodging, where they easily heard his entrance, as *Piccarda* (being present with them) had informed them. In went the Provost without any candle or making the least noise to be heard, and being in *Piccardas* Chamber, went to bed: *Ciutazza* tarrying not long from him, but (as her Mistresse had instructed her) she went to bed likewise, not speaking any word at all, and the Provost, imagining to have her there, whom he so highly

highly affected, fell to embracing and kissing *Ciutazza*, who was as forward in the same manner to him, and there for a while I intend to leave them.

When *Piccarda* had performed this hot piece of businesse, she referred the effecting of the remainder to her brethren, in such sort as it was compacted between them. Faire and softly went the two Brethren forth of their Chamber, and going to the Market place, Fortune was more favourable to them than they could wish, in accomplishing the issue of their intent. For the heat being somewhat tedious, the Lord Bishop was walking abroad very late, with purpose to visit the Brethren at the widowes house, because he tooke great delight in their company, as being good Scholars, and endued with other singular parts beside. Meeting with them in the Market place, he acquainted them with his determination; whereof they were not a little joyfull, it jumping so justly with their intent.

Being come to the widows house, they passed through a small nether Court, where lights stood ready to welcome him thither; and entring into a goodly Hall, there was store of good wine and banqueting, which the Bishop accepted in very thankefull manner: and courteous complement being over-passed, one of the Brethren thus spake. My good Lord, seeing it hath pleased you to honour our poore Widowed Sisters house with your presence, for which we shall thanke you while we live: We would intreat one favour more of you, only but to see a sight which we will shew you. The Lord Bishop was well contented with the motion, so the brethren conducting him by the hand, brought him into their Sisters Chamber, where the Provost was in bed with *Ciutazza*, both soundly sleeping, but infolded in his armes, as wearied (belike) with their former wantoning, and whereof his age had but little need.

The Courtaines being close drawn about the bed, although the Season was exceeding hot, they having lighted Torches in their hands; drew open the Courtaines, and shewed the Bishop his Provost, close snugging betweene the armes of *Ciutazza*. Upon a sudden the Provost awaked, and seeing so great a light, as also so many people about him: shame and feare so danted him, that he shrunke downe into the bed, and hid his head. But the Bishop being displeased at a sight so unseemely, made him to discover his head againe, to see whom he was in bed withall. Now the poore Provost perceiving the Gentlewomans deceite, and the pro-

per

per handsome person so sweetly embracing him: it made him so confounded with shame, as he had not the power to utter one word: but having put on his cloathes by the Bishops command, he sent him [under sufficient guard] to his Palace, to suffer due chastisement for his fault committed; and afterward he desired to know, by what meanes he became so favoured of *Ciuttazza*, the whole History thereof, the two brethren related at large to him.

When the Bishop had heard of the discourse, highly he commended the wisedome of the Gentlewoman, and worthy assistance of her brethren, who contenning to soile their hands in the bloud of a Priest, rather sought to shame him as he deserved. The Bishop injoyned a pennance of repentance for forty dayes after, but love and disdaine made him to weepe nine and forty: Moreover, it was a long while after before he durst be seene abroad. But when he came to walke the streets the Boyes would point their fingers at him, saying. *Behold the Provost that lay with Ciuttazza*: Which was such a wearisome life to him, that he became [well neer] distracted of his wits. In this manner the honest Gentlewoman discharged her dutie, and rid her selfe of the Provosts importunity: *Ciuttazza* had a merry night of it, and a new smock also for her labour.

Three pleasant companions, plaid a merry pranke with a lady belonging to Marquesate of Ancona, at Florence; *at such time as he sate on the bench, and hearing criminal causes.*

The fifth Novell.

Giving admonition, that for the managing of publique affaires, no other persons are or ought to be appointed, but such as be honest, and meet to sit upon the seats of Authority.

NO sooner had Madam *Æmilia* finished her Novell, wherein the excellent wisedome of *Piccardo*, for so worthily punishing the old Provost, had generall commendations of the whole Assembly: but the Queene, looking on *Philostratus*, said. *I command you next to supply the place*: whereto he made answer, that he was both ready and willing, and then thus began. Honourable Ladies, the merry Gentlemen, so lately remembred by Madam *Eliza*, being named *Maso del Saggio*; causeth me to passe over an intended Tale, which I had resolved on when it came to my turne:

to report another concerning him, and two men more, his friendly companions. Which although it may appeare to you somewhat unpleasing, in regard of a little grosse and unmannerly behaviour: yet it will move merriment without any offence, and that is the maine reason why I relate it.

It is not unknowne to you, partly by intelligence from our reverend predecessors, as also some understanding of our owne, that many times have resorted to our Citie of Florence, Potestates and officers, belonging to the Marquesate of *Ancona*; who commonly were men of low spirit, and their lives so wretched and penurious, as they might rather be tearmed Misers, than men. And inregard of this their naturall covetousnesse and misery, the Judges would bring also in their company, such Scribes and Notaries, as being paralleld with their Masters, they all seemed Swaines come from the Plough, or bred up in some Coblers quality, rather than Scholars, or Students of Law.

At one time (above all the rest) among other Potestates and Judges, there came an especiall man, as pickt out of purpose, who was named *Messer Nicolao da San Lepidio*, who (at the first beholding) looked rather like a Tinker, than any officer in authority. This handsome man (among the rest) was deputed to heare criminall causes. And, as often it happeneth, that Citizens, although no businesse inviteth them to judiciall Court, yet they still resort thither, sometimes accidentally: So it fortuned, that *Maso del Saggio*, being one morning in search of an especiall friend, went to the Court-house, and being there, observed in what manner *Messer Nicolao* was seated; who looking like some strange Fowle, lately come forth of a farre country; he began to survey him the more seriously, even from the head to the foot, as we use to say.

And albeit he saw his Gowne furred with Miniver, as also the hood about his necke, a Penne and Inkeborne, hanging at his girdle, and one skirt of his garment longer than the other, with more mishapen sights about him, farre unfitting for a man of so civill profession: yet he spyed one error extraordinary, the most notable (in his opinion) that ever he had seene before. Namely, a paultry paire of Breeches, wickedly made, and worse worne, hanging downe so low as half his legge, even as he sate upon the Bench, yet cut so sparingly of the cloth, that they gaped wide open before, as a wheele-barrow might have full entrance allowed it. This strange sight was so pleasing to him, as

leaving off further search of his friend, and scorning to have such a spectacle alone by himselfe: he went upon another Inquisition; Namely, for two other merry Lads like himselfe, the one being called *Ribi*, and the other *Mattenzza*, men of the same mirth-full disposition as he was, and therefore the fitter for his company.

After he had met with them, these were his salutations: *My honest boyes, if ever you did me any kindnesse, declare it more effectually now, in accompanying me to the Court-house, where you shall behold such a single Spectacle, as (I am sure) you never yet saw the like.* Forthwith they went along together. and being come to the Court house, he shewed them the Judges handsome pair of Breeches, hanging downe in such base and beastly manner; that (being as yet farre off from the Bench) their hearts did ake with extremity of laughter. But when they came neere to the seate whereon *Messer Nicolao* sate, they plainly perceived that it was very easie to be crept under, and withall that the board whereon he set his feet, was rotten and broken, so that it was no difficult matter, to reach it and pull it down as a man pleased, and let him fall bare Breech to the ground. Cheere up your spirits (my hearts) quoth *Maso*, and if your longing be like to mine, we will have yonder Breeches a good deale lower, for I see how it may quickly be done.

Laying their heads together, plotting and contriving severall wayes, which might be the likeliest to compass their intent: each of them had his peculiar appointment, to undertake the businesse without failing, and it was to be performed the next morning. At the houre assigned, they met there againe, and finding the Court well filled with people, the Plaintiffes and defendants earnestly pleading: *Mattenzza* (before any body could discry him) was cunningly crept under the Bench, and lay close to the board whereon the Judge placed his feete. Then stept in *Maso* on the right hand of *Maso Nicolao*, and tooke fast hold on his Gowne before; the like did *Ribi* on the left hand, in all respects answerable to the other. Oh my Lord Iudge (cryed *Maso* out aloud) I humbly intreate you for charities sake, before this pilfering Knave escape away from hence; that I may have Iustice against him, for stealing my drawing-over flockings which he stoutly denieth, yet mine own eyes beheld the deed, it being now not above fifteene dayes since, when first I bought them for mine own use.

Worthy Lord Iudge (cryed *Ribi*, on the other side)

cor

doe not beleeve what he sai h, for he is a paltry fellow, and because he knew I came hither to make my complaint, for a Male Cloakebag which hee stole from me: hee urgeth this occasion for a paire of drawing stockings, which he delivered me with his own hands. If your Lordship will not credit me, I can produce as witnesses, *Trecco* the Shoomaker, with *Monna Grassa* the Sow-seller, and he that sweepes the Church of *Santa Maria Vertaia*, who saw him when hee came posting hither. *Maso* hailing and tugging the Iudge by the sleeve would not suffer him to heare *Ribi*, but cryed out still for Iustice against him, as he did the like on the contrary side.

During the time of this their clamorous contending, the Iudge being very willing to heare either party: *Matteuzzo*, upon a signe received from the other, which was a word in *Masos* pleading, laid hold on the broken boord, as also on the Iudges low hanging Breech, plucking at them both so strongly that they fell downe immediately. The Breeches being only tied but with one Point before. He hearing the boards breaking underneathe him, and such maine pulling at his Breeches; strove (as he sate) to make them fast before, but his Point being broken, and *Maso* crying in his eare on the one side, as *Ribi* did the like on the other; he was at his wits end to defend himselfe. My Lord (quoth *Maso*) you may be ashamed that you do me not Iustice, why will you not hear me, but wholly lend your eare to mine adversary? My Lord (said *Ribi*) never was Libel preferr'd in this court, of such a paltry trifling matter, and therefore I must and will have justice.

By this time the Iudge was dismounted from the Bench, and stood on the ground, with his slovenly breeches hanging about his heeles: *Matteuzzo* being cunningly stolne away, and undiscovered by any body. *Ribi* thinking he had shamed the Iudge sufficiently, went away protesting, that he would declare his cause in the hearing of a wiser Iudge. And *Maso* forbearing to tugge his Gowne any longer, in his departing, said. *Fare you well Sir, you are not worthy to be a Magistrate, if you have no more regard of your honour and honesty but will put off poore mens suits at your pleasure.* So both went severall wayes, and soon departed out of sight.

The worshipfull Iudge Messer *Nicolao* stood all this while on the ground; and in presence of all the beholders, trussed up his Breeches, as if he were new risé out of his bed: when bethinking himselfe on the matters in difference, he called for the two men, who con-

tended for the drawing ſtockings and cloake bag; but no one could tell what was become of them. Whereupon, he rapt out a kind of Judges oath, ſaying: I will know whether it be Law here in Florence, to make a Judge ſit bare Breecht on the Bench of Juſtice, and in the hearing of criminall Cauſes; whereat the chiefe Poteſtate, and all the ſtanders by laughed heartily.

Within few dayes after, he was enformed by ſome of his eſpeciall friends, that this had never happened to him, but onely to teſtifie, how underſtanding the Florentines are in their ancient conſtitutions and cuſtomes, to embrace love, and honour, honeſt diſcreet worthy Judges and Magiſtrates; whereas on the contrary, they as much condemne miſerable knaves, fooles, and dolts, who never merit to have any better entertainment. Wherefore it would be beſt for him, to make no more inquiry after the parties, leſt a worſe inconvenience ſhould happen to him.

Bruno and Buffalmaco ſtole a young Brawne from Calandrino, and for his recovery thereof, they uſed a kind of pretended conjuration, with Pils made of ginger and ſtrong Malmeſey. But in ſtead of this application, they gave him the pils of a Dogges dates or douſets, confected in Aloes, which he received each after the other; by meanes whereof they made him beleeve, that he had rob'd himſelfe, And for feare they ſhould report this theft to his Wife, they made him to goe buy another Brawne.

The ſixth Novell.

Wherein is declared, how eaſily a plaine and ſimple man may be made a foole, when he dealeth with crafty companions.

Philoſtratus had no ſooner ended his Novell, and the whole Aſſembly laughed heartily thereat: but the Queene gave command to Madam *Philomena*, that ſhe ſhould follow next in order; whereupon thus ſhe began. Worthy Ladies, as *Philoſtratus*, by calling to memory the name of *Maſo del Saggio*, hath contented you with another merry Novell concerning him: in the ſame manner muſt I entreate you, to remember once againe *Calandrino* and his ſubtile conſorts, by a pretty tale which I meane to tell you; how, and in what manner they were revenged on him, for going to ſeeke the invifible Stone.

Needleſſe were any freſh relation to you, what manner of people thoſe three men were, *Calandrino*, *Bruno*, and *Buffalmaco*, becauſe already you have had ſufficient under-

understanding of them. And therefore as an induction to my discourse, I must tell you that *Calandrino* had a small Countrey-house, in a Village neere to Florence, which came to him by the marriage of his wife. Among other Cattle and Poultry, which he kept there in store, he had a young Boare ready for Brawne, whereof yearely he used to kill one for his owne provision; and alwayes in the moneth of December, he and his wife resorted to their Village house, to have the Brawne both killed and salted.

It came to passe at this time concerning my Tale, that the woman being somewhat crazie and sickly, by her husbands unkinde usage, whereof you heard so lately; *Calandrino* went alone to the killing of his Boare, which comming to the hearing of *Bruno*, and *Buffalmaco*, and that the woman could by no meanes be there: to passe away the time a little in merriment, they went to a friendly companion of theirs, an honest jovial Priest, dwelling not farre off from *Calandrinos* Countrey-house.

The same morning as the Boare was kild, they all three went thither, and *Calandrino* seeing them in the Priests company, bad them all heartily welcome; and to acquaint them with his good Husbandry, he shewed them his house, and the Boare where it hung. They perceiving it to be faire and fat, knowing also that *Calandrino* intended to salt it for his owne store, *Bruno* said unto him: Thou art an Asse *Calandrino*, sell thy Brawne, and let us make merry with the money: then let thy wife know no otherwise, but that it was stolne from thee, by those theeves which continually do haunt Countrey houses, especially in such scattering Villages.

Oh mine honest friends, answered *Calandrino*, your counsell is not to be followed, neither is my wife so easily to be perswaded: this were the readiest way to make our house a hell, and shee to become the Master divell: therefore talke no further, for flatly I will not doe it. Albeit they laboured him very earnestly, yet all prevayled to no purpose: onely he desired them to sup with him, but in so cold a manner, as they denyed him, and parted thence from him. As they walked on the way, *Bruno* said to *Buffalmaco*. Shall we three (this night) rob him of his Brawne? Yea marry (quoth *Buffalmaco*) how is it to be done? I have (said *Bruno*) already found the meanes to effect it, if he take it not from the place, where last we saw it. Let us doe it then (answered *Buffalmaco*) why should we not doe it? Sir *Domine* here and we, will make good cheere with it among our selves. The nimble Priest was as forward as the best;

and the match being fully agreed on, *Bruno* thus ſpake, My delicate Sir Domine, Art and cunning muſt be our maine helps: for thou knoweſt *Buffalmaco*, what a covetous wretch *Calandrino* is, glad to drinke alwayes on other mens expences: let us goe take him to the Taverne, where the Prieſt (for his owne honour and reputation) ſhall offer to make payment of the whole reckoning, without receiving a farthing of his, whereof he will not be a little joyfull, ſo ſhall we bring to paſſe the reſt of the buſineſſe, becauſe there is no body in the houſe, but only himſelfe, for he is beſt at eaſe without company.

As *Bruno* had propounded, ſo was it accordingly performed, and when *Calandrino* perceived, that the Prieſt would ſuffer none to pay, but himſelfe, he dranke the more freely; and when there was no need at all, tooke his Cuppes couragiouſly one after another. Two or three houres of the night were ſpent, before they parted from the Taverne; *Calandrino* going directly home to his houſe, and inſtantly to bed; without any other ſupper, imagining that he had made faſt his doore, which (indeed) he left wide open: ſleeping ſoundly, without ſuſpicion of any harme intended unto him. *Buffalmaco* and *Bruno* ſupt with the Prieſt, and ſo ſoon as ſupper was ended, they took certain Engines, for their better entring into *Calandrinoes* houſe, and ſo went on to effect their purpoſe. Finding the doore ſtanding ready open, they entred in; took the Brawn, carryed it to the Prieſts houſe, and afterward went all to bed.

When *Calandrino* had well ſlept after his Wine, he aroſe in the morning, and being deſcended down the ſtairs; finding the ſtreet door wide open, he looked about him for the Brawn, but it was gone. Enquiring of the neighbours dwelling near about him, he could hear no tidings of his Brawn, but became the woefulleſt man in the world, telling every one that his Brawn was ſtole. *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* being riſen in the morning they went to viſit *Calandrino*, to hear how he took the loſſe of his Brawn: and he no ſooner had a ſight of them, but he called them to him; and with the teares running down his cheeks, ſaid: Ah my dear friends, I am rob'd of my Brawn. *Bruno* ſtepping cloſely to him, ſaid in his ear: It is wonderful, that once in thy life time thou canſt be wiſe. How? anſwered *Calandrino*, I ſpeak to you in good earneſt. Speak ſo ſtill in earneſt (replied *Bruno*) and cry it out ſo loud as thou canſt, then let who liſt believe it to be true.

Calandrino ſtampt and fretted exceedingly, ſaying:

As I am a true man to God, my Prince and Countrey, I tell thee truly, that my Brawn is ſtoln. Say ſo ſtill I bid thee (anſwered *Bruno*) and let all the world beleeve thee, if they liſt to do ſo, for I will not. Wouldſt thou (quoth *Calandrino*) have me damn my ſelf to the Devill? I ſee thou doſt not credit what I ſay: but would I were hanged by the neck if it be not true, that my Brawn is ſtoln. How can it poſſibly be, replied *Bruno*? Did I not ſee it in thy houſe yeſternight? *Wouldſt thou have me beleev that it is flown away* (quoth Calandrino) *yet I am certain that it is ſtolne away: for which I am weary of my life, becauſe I dare not goe home to mine owne houſe, in regard my wife will never beleeve it; and yet if ſhe ſhould credit it, we are ſure to have no peace for a twelve moneths ſpace.*

Bruno, ſeeming as if he were more than half ſorrowfull, yet ſupporting ſtill his former jeſting humor, ſaid: Now truſt me *Calandrino*, if it be ſo, they that did it are much to blame. If it be ſo? anſwered *Calandrino*, Belike thou wouldſt have me blaſpheme heaven, and all the Saints therein: I tell thee once again *Bruno*, that this laſt night my Brawn was ſtolne. Be patient good *Calandrino*, replied *Buffalmaco*, and if thy Brawne be ſtolne from thee, there are means enow to get it again. Means enow to get it again? ſaid *Calandrino*, I would fain hear one likely one, and let all the reſt goe by. I am ſure *Calandrino*, anſwered *Buffalmaco*, thou art verily perſwaded that no theef came from India to ſteal thy Brawn from thee: in which reſpect, it muſt needs then be ſome of thy neighbours: whom if thou couldſt lovingly aſſemble together, I know an experiment to be made with bread and cheeſe whereby he that hath it will quickly be diſcovered.

I have heard (quoth *Bruno*) of ſuch an experiment, and held it to be infallible; but it extendeth only to perſons of Gentility, whereof there are but few dwelling here about, and in the caſe of ſtealing a Brawn, it is doubtful to invite them, neither can there be any certainty of their comming. I confeſſe what you ſay, anſwered *Buffalmaco*, to be very true: but then in this matter ſo neerly concerning us to be done, and for a dear friend, what is your advice? I would have Pils made of Ginger, compounded with your beſt and ſtrongeſt *Malmſey*, then let the ordinary ſort of people be invited (for ſuch only are moſt to be miſtruſted) and they will not fail to come, becauſe they are utterly ignorant of our intention. Beſides the Pils may be hallowed and conſecrated, as bread and cheeſe on the

like occasion. Indeed you say true (replyed *Buffalmaco*) but what is the opinion of *Calandrino*? Is he willing to have this triall made, or no? Yes, by all meanes, answered *Calandrino*, for gladly I would know who hath stolne my Brawne; and your good words have (more than halfe) comforted mee, and doe make me glad in this case.

Well then (quoth *Bruno*) I will take the paines to go to Florence, to provide all things necessary for this secret service; but I must be furnished with money to effect it. *Calandrino* had some forty shillings then about him, which he delivered to *Bruno*, who presently went to Florence to a friend of his an Apothecarie, of whom he bought a pound of white Ginger, which he caused him to make up in small Pilles: and two other beside of Dogges-dates or Dowsets, confected all over with strong Aloes, yet well moulded over with Sugar, as all the rest were: and because they should the more easily be knowne from the other, they were spotted with gold, in very formall and physicall manner. He bought moreover, a big Flaggon of the best Malmesey, returning backe with all these things to *Calandrino*, and directing him in this order.

You must put some friend in trust, to invite your neighbours (especially such as you suspect) to a breakefast in the morning: and because it is done as a feast in kindnesse they will come to you the more willingly. This night will I and *Buffalmaco* take such order, that the Pills shall have the charge imposed on them, and then we will bring them hither againe in the morning: and I my selfe (for your sake) will deliver them to your guests, and performe whatsoever is to be said or done. On the next morning, a goodly company being assembled, under a faire Elme before the Church; as well young Florentines (who purposely came to make themselves merry) as neighbouring Husbandmen of the Village: *Bruno* was to begin this service, with the Pils in a faire Cup, and *Buffalmaco* followed him with another Cup, to deliver the wine out of the Flagon, all the company being set round as in a circle; and *Bruno* with *Buffalmaco* being in the midst of them, *Bruno* thus spake. Honest friends, it is fit that I should acquaint you with the occasion, why we are thus met together, and in this place: because if any thing may seeme offensive to you; afterward you shall make no complaint of me. From *Calandrino* (our loving friend here present) yesternight there was a new-kild fat brawn taken, but who hath done the deed, as yet he knoweth not;

and

and because none other, but some one (or more) here among us, must needs offend in this case: he desiring to understand who they be, would have each man to receive one of these Pils, and afterward to drinke of the wine; assuring you all, that whosoever stole the Brawne hence, cannot be able to swallow the Pill: for it will be so extreame bitter in his mouth, as it will enforce him to cough and spit extraordinarily in which respect, before such a notorious shame be received, and in so goodly an assembly: it were much better for him, or them that have the Brawne, to confesse it to this honest Priest, and I will abstaine in urging it any further.

Every one there present answered, that they were well contented both to eate and drinke, and let the shame fall where it deserved; whereupon *Bruno* appointing them how they should sit, and placing *Calandrino* as one among them: he begin his counterfeit exorcisme, giving each man a Pill, and *Buffalmaco* a Cup of wine after it. But when he came to *Calandrino*, he tooke one of them which was made of the Dogges dates or Dowsets, and delivering it into his hand, presently he put it into his mouth and chewed it. So soone as his tongue tasted the bitter Aloes, he began to cough and spit extreamely, as being utterly unable, to endure the bitternesse and noysome smell. The other men that had received the Pills, begin to gaze one upon another, to see whose behaviour should discover him; and *Bruno* having not (as yet) delivered Pils to them all, proceeded on still in his businesse, as seeming not to heare any coughing, till one behinde him said. What meaneth *Calandrino* by this his most grievous spitting and coughing?

Bruno sodainely turning him about, and seeing *Calandrino* to cough and spit in such sort, said to the rest. *Be not too rash (honest Friends) in judging of any man; some other matter (than the Pill) may procure this coughing, wherefore he shall receive another, the better to cleare your beleefe concerning him.* He having put the second prepared Pill into his mouth, while *Bruno* went to serve the rest of the Guests: if the first were exceeding bitter to his taste, this other made it a great deale worse, for teares streamed forth of his eyes as big as Cherry-stones, and champing and chewing the Pill, as hoping it would overcome his coughing; he coughed and spit the more violently, and in grosser manner than he did before, nor did they give him any wine to helpe it.

Buffalmaco Bruno, and the whole company, perceiving how he continued still his coughing and spitting,

said all with one voice, *That Calandrino was the Thief to himself*: and gave him many grosse speeches beside, all departing home unto their houses, very much displeased and angry with him. After they were gone, none remained with him but the Priest, *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco*, who thus spake to *Calandrino*. *I did ever think, that thou wast the theef thy self, yet thou imputedst thy robbery to some other, for fear we should once drink freely of thy purse as thou hast done many times of ours.* Calandrino, who had not yet ended his coughing and spitting, sware many bitter oathes, that his Brawn was stolne from him. *Talk so long as thou wilt, quoth* Buffalmaco, *thy knavery is both known and seen, and well thou maist be ashamed of thy self.* Calandrino hearing this, grew desperately angry; and to incense him more, *Bruno* thus pursued the matter.

Hear me *Calandrino*, for I speak to thee in honest earnest: there was a man in thy company, who did eat and drink here among thy neighbours, and plainly told me, that thou keptst a young Lad here to do thee service, feeding him with such victuals as thou couldst spare; by him thou didst send away thy Brawn, to one that bought it of thee for four Crowns, only to couzen thy poor wife, and us. Canst thou not yet learn to leave thy mocking and scorning? Thou hast forgot how thou broughtst us to the plain of *Mugnone*, to seek for black invisible stones: which having found, thou concealedst them to thy self, stealing home invisibly before, making us follow like fools after thee.

Now likewise by horrible and lying oathes, and perjured protestations, thou wouldst make us to beleeve, that the Brawn (which thou hadst cunningly sold for ready money) was stolne from thee out of thy house, when thou art only the Theef to thy self, as by that excellent rule of art (which never faileth) hath plainly, to thy shame, appeared. We being so well acquainted with thy delusions, and knowing them perfectly; now do plainly tell thee, that we mean not to be fooled any any more. Nor is it unknown to thee, what pains we have taken in making this singular piece of proof. Wherfore we inflict this punishment on thee, that thou shalt bestow on this honest Priest and us, two couple of Capons and a Flagon of Wine or else we will discover this knavery of thine to thy Wife.

Calandrino perceiving that all his protestations could winn no credit with them, who had now the Law remaining in their own hands, and purposed to deal with him as they pleased: apparently saw, that sighing and

and sorrowing did nothing avail him. Moreover, to fall into his wives tempestuous stormes of chiding, would be worse to him than racking or torturing; he gladly therefore gave them money, to buy the two couple of Capons and wine, being heartily contented likewise, that he was so well delivered from them. So the merry Priest, *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco*, having taken good order for salting the Brawn; closely carried it with them to *Florence*, leaving *Calandrino* to complain of his losse, and well requited, for mocking them with the invisible stones.

A young Gentleman being a Scholar, fell in love with a Lady, named Helena, she being a widow, and addicted in affection to another Gentleman. One whole night in cold winter, she caused the Scholar to expect her coming, in an extreme frost and snow. In revenge whereof, by his imagined Art and skill, he made her stand naked on the top of a Tower, the space of a whole day, and in July, to be Sun-burnt and bitten with Waspes and Flies.

The seventh Novel.

Serving as an admonition to all Ladies and Gentlewomen, not to mock or scorn Gentlemen-Scholars, when they make means of love to them: Except they intend to seek their own shame, by disgracing them.

GReatly did the Ladies commend Madam *Philomenaes* Novell, laughed heartily at poor *Calandrino*, yet grieving withall, that he should be so knavishly cheated, not only of his Brawn, but two couple of Capons, and a Flaggon of Wine beside. But the whole discourse being ended, the Queen commanded Madam *Pampinea*, to follow next with her Novell, and presently she thus began. It happeneth oftentimes (bright beauties) that mockery falleth on him, that intended the same unto another: and therefore I am of opinion, that there is little wisdome declared in him or her, who taketh delight in mocking any person. I must needs confesse, that we have smiled at many mockeries and deceits, related in these excellent Novels, which we have already heard: without any due revenge returned, but only in this last of silly *Calandrino*. Wherefore it is now my determination, to urge a kinde of compassionate apprehension, upon a very just retribution, happening to a Gentlewoman of our City, because her scorn fell deservedly upon her self, remaining mocked, and to the perill of her life. Let me then assure you, that

your

your diligent attention may redound to your benefit, because if you keepe your selves (henceforward) from being scorned, by others; you shall expresse the greater wisedome, and bee the better warned by their mishaps.

As yet there are not many yeares overpast, since there dwelt in *Florence*, a young Lady descended of Noble parentage; very beautifull, of sprightly courage, and sufficiently abounding in the goods of Fortune, she being named Madam *Helena*. Her delight was to live in the estate of Widdow-hood, desiring to match her selfe no more in marriage, because she bare affection to a gallant young Gentleman, whom she had made her private election of, and with whom (having excluded all other amorous cares and cogitations) by means of her Waiting-woman, she had divers meetings, and kinde conference.

It chanced at the very same time, another young Gentleman of our Citty, called *Reniero*, having long studyed in the Schooles at *Paris*, returned home to *Florence*, not to make sale of his Learning and experience, as many doe: but to understand the reason of things, as also the causes and effects of them, which is mervailously fitting for any Gentleman. Being greatly honoured and esteemed of every one, as well for his carriage towards all in generall, as for his knowledge and excellent parts: he lived more like a familiar Citizen, than in the nature of a Courtly Gentleman, albeit he was choysely respected in either estate.

But as oftentimes it commeth to passe, that such as are endued with the best judgement and understanding in naturall occasions, are soonest caught and intangled in the snares of Love: so fell it out with our Scholar *Reniero*, who being invited to a solemne Feast, in company of other his especiall Friends; this Lady *Helena*, attyred in her blacke Garments (as Widowes commonly use to wear) was likewise there a Guest. His eye observing her beauty and gracious demeanour, she seemed in his judgement, to be a Woman so compleat and perfect, as he had never seen her equall before: and therefore, he accounted the man more then fortunate, that was worthy to embrace her in his armes. Continuing this amorous observation of her from time to time, and knowing withall, that rare and excellent things are not easily obtained, but by painfull study, labour, and endeavour: he resolved with himselfe constantly, to put in practise all his best parts of industry, only to honour and please her, and attayning to her contenta-

tion,

tion, it would be the meanes to win her love, and compasse thereby his hearts desire.

The young Lady, who fixed not her eyes on inferiour subjects (but esteemed her selfe above ordinary reach or capacity) could move them artificially, as curious women well know how to doe, looking on every side about her, yet not in a gadding or grosse manner: for she was not ignorant in such darting glaunces, as proceeded from an enflamed affection, which appearing plainely in *Reniero*; with a pretty smile, she said to her selfe. *I am not come hither this day in vain; for, if my judgement fail me not, I think I have caught a Woodcock by the bill.* And lending him a cunning looke for two quaintly carryed with the corner of her eye; she gave him a kinde of perswading apprehension, that her heart was the guide to her eye. And in this artificiall schoole-tricke of hers, she carryed therewith another consideration, to wit, that the more other eies fed themselves on her perfections, and were (well-neere) lost in them beyond recovery: so much the greater reason had he to account his fortune beyond comparison, that was the sole master of her heart, and had her love at his command.

Our witty Scholar having set aside Philosophicall considerations, strove how he might best understand her carriage toward him, and beleeving that she beheld him with pleasing regards; he learned to know the house where she dwelt, passing dayly by the doore divers times, under colour of some more serious occasions: wherein the Lady very proudly gloried, in regard of the reasons before alleadged, and seemed to afford him lookes of good liking. Being led thus with a hopefull perswasion, he found the meanes to gaine acquaintance with her waiting-woman, revealing to her his intire affection, desiring her to worke for him in such sort with her Lady, that his service might be gracious in her acceptance. The Gentlewoman made him a very willing promise, and immediately did his errand to her Lady; who heard her with no small pride and squemishness, and breaking forth into a scorneful laughter, thus she spake.

Aneilla (for so she was named) dost thou not observe, how this Scholar is come to loose all the wit here, which he studyed so long for in the University of *Paris*? Let us make him our only Table argument, and seeing his folly soareth so high, we will feed him with such a dyet as he deserveth. Yet when thou speakest next with him, tell him, that I affect him more than he can doe

me;

me; but it becometh me to be carefull of mine honour, and to walk with an untainted brow, as other Ladies and Gentlewomen do: which he is not to mislike, if he be so wise as he maketh shew of, but rather will the more commend me. Alas good Lady lack-wit, little did she understand (fair assembly) how dangerous a cast it is dealing with Scholars.

At his next meeting with the waiting woman, she delivered the message, as her Lady had commanded her, whereof poor *Reniero* was so joyfull, that he pursued his love-suit the more earnestly, and began to write letters, send gifts, and tokens; all which were still received, yet without any other answer to give hope, but only in general, and thus she dallied with him a long while. In the end she discovered this matter to her secret chosen friend, who fell suddenly sick of the heart-ake, only through meer conceit of jealousie: which she perceiving, and grieved to be suspected without any cause, especially by him whom she esteemed above all other: she intended to rid him quickly of that idle disease. And being more and more solicited by the Scholar, she sent him word by her maid *Ancilla*, that (as yet) she could finde no convenient opportunity, to yeeld him such assurance, as he should not any way be distrustful of her love.

But the Feast of Christmas was now neer at hand, which afforded leisure much more hopefull, then any other formerly passed. And therefore, the next night after the first Feasting day, if he pleased to walk in the open Court of her house she would soon send for him, into a place much better beseeming, and where they might freely converse together.

Now was our Scholar the only jocond man of the world, and failed not the time assigned him, but went unto the Ladies house, where *Ancilla* was ready to give him entertainment, conducting him into the base Court, where she lockt him up fast, untill her Lady should send for him. This night she had privately sent for her friend also, and sitting merrily at supper with him, told him, what welcome she had given the Scholar, and how she further meant to use him, saying, *Now Sir, consider with your self, what hot affection I bear to him, of whom you became so fondly jealous.* The which words were very welcome to him, and made him extraordinarily joyful; desiring to see them as effectually performed, as they appeared to him by her protestations.

Here you are to understand (Gracious Ladies) that according to the season of the year, a great snow had fain

fall the day before, so as the whole Court was covered therewith, and being an extreame frost upon it, our Scholar could not boast of any warm walking, when the teeth quivered in his head with cold, as a dog could not be more discourteously used: yet hope of enjoying loves recompence at length, made him to support all this injury with admirable patience.

Within a while after, Madam *Helena* said to her friend, Walk with me (dear heart) into my Chamber, and there at a secret little window, I shall shew thee what he doth, that drove thee to such a suspicion of me, and we shall hear beside, what answer he will give my maid *Ancilla*, whom I will send to him in his coldnesse.

When she had so said, they went to the appointed window, where they could easily see him clearly, but he not them: and then they heard *Ancilla* also, calling to him forth of another window, saying Signior *Reniero*, My Lady is the wofullest woman in the world, because (as yet) she cannot come to you, in regard that one of her brethren came to visit her, and held her with much longer discourse then she expected: whereby she was constrained to invite him to sup with her, and yet he is not gone; but shortly I hope he will, and then expect her coming presently; till then she entreateth your gentle sufferance.

Poor *Reniero*, our overcredulous Scholar, whose vehement affection to Madam *Helena*, so hood-winkt the sight of his understanding, as he could not be distrustfull of any guile; returned this answer to *Ancilla*. Say to your Lady that I am bound in duty to attend the good hour of her leisure, without so much as the very least prejudicate conceit in me: Nevertheless, entreat her to let it be so soon as she possibly may; because here is miserable walking, and it beginneth again to snow extreamly. *Ancilla* making fast the Casement, went presently to bed; when *Helena* spake thus to her amorous friend. *What sayst thou now? Dost thou think that I loved him as thou wast afraid of? If I did, he should never walk thus in the frost and snow.* So, away went they likewise from their close window; and spent wanton dalliances together, laughing and deriding (with many bitter taunts and jests) the lamentable condition of poor *Reniero*.

About the Court walked he numberlesse times, finding such exercises as he could devise, to compasse warmth in any manner, no seat or shelter had he any where, either to ease himself by sitting down a while, or keep him from the snow, falling continually on him, which made

made him beſtow many curſes on the Ladies brother, for his ſo long tarrying with her, as beleeving him verily to be in the houſe, or elſe ſhe would (long before) have admitted his entrance, but therein his hope was meerely deceived. It grew now to be towards the houre of midnight, and *Helena* had delighted her ſelfe with her friend extraordinarily, till at laſt, thus ſhe ſpake to him, What is thine opinion of my amorous Scholar? Which doſt thou imagine to be the greateſt, either his ſenſe and judgement, or the affection I beare to him? Is not this cold ſufferance of his, able to quench the violent heat of his loves extremity, and having ſo much ſnow-broth to helpe it? Beleeve me (ſweet Lady) quoth her friend, as he is a man, and a learned Scholar, I pity that he ſhould be thus ungeatly dealt withall: but as he is my rivall and loves enemy, I cannot allow him the leaſt compaſſion, reſting the more confidently aſſured of your love to me, which I will alwayes eſteeme moſt precious.

When they had ſpent a long while in this or the like conference with infinite ſweet kiſſes and embraces intermixed; then ſhe began againe in this manner. Deare love (quoth ſhe) caſt thy Cloake about thee as I intend to doe with my night mantle, and let us ſtep to the little window once more to ſee whether the flaming fire that burn'd in the Scholars breſt (as he daily avouched to me in his love letters) be as yet extinct or no. So going to the window againe; and looking downe into the Court, there they ſaw the Scholar dancing in the ſnow, to the cold tune of his teeths quivering and chattering, and clapping his armes about his body, which was no pleaſing melody to him. How thinkeſt thou now ſweet heart (ſaid ſhe) cannot I make a man daunce without the ſound of a Taber or a Bagpipe? yes beleeve me Lady (quoth he) I plainly perceive you can, and would be very loath, that you ſhould exerciſe your cunning on me. Nay, ſaid ſhe, we will yet delight our ſelves a little more; let us ſofily deſcend downe the ſtayres, even ſo far as to the Court doore: thou ſhalt not ſpeak a word, but I will talk to him, and hear ſome part of his quivering language, which cannot chooſe but be paſſing pleaſing for us to hear.

Out of the Chamber went they, and deſcended down the ſtairs to the Court door; where, without opening it, ſhe laid her mouth to a ſmall crany, and in a low ſoft kind of voyce, called him by his name: which the Scholar hearing, was exceeding joyfull, as beleeving verily that the houre of his deliverance was come, and

entrance

entrance now ſhould be admitted him. Upon the hearing of her voyce, he ſtept cloſe to the doore, ſaying. *For charities ſake, good Lady, let me come in, becauſe I am almoſt dead with cold*; whereto thus ſhe anſwered in mocking manner. I make no doubt *Reniero*, but the night is indifferent cold, and yet ſomewhat the warmer by the Snowes falling: and I have heard that ſuch weather as this, is ten times more extreame at *Paris*, than here in our warmer Countrey. And truſt me, I am exceeding ſorrowfull, that I may not (as yet) open the doore, becauſe mine unhappy brother, who came (unexpected) yeſternight to ſup with me, is not yet gone, as within a ſhort while (I hope) he will, and then ſhall I gladly ſet open the doore to you, for I made an excuſe to ſteale a little from him, onley to cheare you with this ſmall kind of comfort, that his ſo long tarrying might be the leſſe offenſive to you.

Alas ſweet Madam, anſwered quaking and quivering *Reniero*, be then ſo favourable to me, as to free me from forth this open Court, where there is no ſhelter or helpe for me, the ſnow falling ſtill ſo exceedingly, as a man might eaſily be more than halfe buried in it: let me be but within your doore, and there I will wait your owne good leiſure. Alas deare *Reniero* (anſwered *Helena*) I dare not doe it, becauſe the doore maketh ſuch a noyſe in the opening, as it will be too eaſily heard by my Brother: but I will goe and uſe ſuch meanes, as ſhortly he ſhall get him gone, and then I dare boldly give you entrance. Doe ſo good Madam, replyed *Reniero*, and let there be a faire fire made ready, that when I am within, I may the ſooner warme my ſelfe; for I am ſo ſtrangely benummed with cold, as well-neere I am paſt all ſenſe of feeling.

Can it be poſſible (quoth Helena) *that you ſhould be ſo benummed with cold? Then I plainely perceive, that men can lie in their love letters, which I can ſhew under your own hand how you fryed in flames, and all for my love, and ſo have you written to me in every letter. Poore credulous women are often deluded, in beleeving what men write and ſpeake out of paſſion, but I will returne backe to my Brother, and make no doubt of diſpatch, becauſe I would gladly have your Company.*

The amorous Friend to *Helena*, who ſtood by all this while, laughing at the Scholars hard uſage, returned up againe with her to her Chamber, where they could not take a jot of reſt, for flouting and ſcorning the betrayed Scholar. As for him poore man, he was become like the Swan, coldly chattering his teeth together, in a ſtrange

ſtrange new kinde of harmony to him. And perceiving himſelf to be meerly mocked, he attempted to get open the door, or how he might paſſe forth at any other place: but being no way able to compaſſe it, he walked up and down like an angry Lion, curſing the hard quality of the time, the diſcourteſie of the Lady, the over-tedious length of the night; but (moſt of all) his own folly and ſimplicity, in being ſo baſely abuſed and guld. Now began the heat of his former affection to *Helena*, altered into as violent a deteſtation of her; Yea, extremity of hatred in the higheſt degree; beating his brains, and ranſacking every corner of invention, by what means he might beſt be revenged on her, which now he much more deſired to effect, than to enjoy the benefit of her love, or to be embraced between her arms.

After that the ſad and diſcomfortable night had ſpent it ſelf, and the break of day was beginning to appear; *Ancilla* the waiting woman, according as ſhe was inſtructed by her Lady, went down and opened the Court door, and ſeeming exceedingly to compaſſionate the Scholars unfortunate night of ſufferance, ſaid unto him,

Alas courteous gentleman, in an unbleſſed hour came my Ladies brother hither yeſternight, inflicting too much trouble upon us, and a grievous time of affliction to you. But I am not ignorant, that you being vertuous, and a judicious Scholar, have an invincible ſpirit of patience, and ſufficient underſtanding withall; that what this night could not afford, another may make a ſound amends for. This I can and dare ſufficiently aſſure you, that nothing could be more diſpleaſing to my Lady, neither can ſhe well be quieted in her minde, untill ſhe have made a double and treble requital, for ſuch a ſtrange unexpected inconvenience whereof ſhe had not the very leaſt ſuſpicion.

Renato ſwelling with diſcontentment, yet wiſely clouding it from open apprehenſion, and knowing well enough, that ſuch golden ſpeeches and promiſes, did alwaies favour of what intemperate ſpleen would more laviſhly have vented forth, and therefore in a modeſt diſſembling manner, without the leaſt ſhew of any anger, thus he anſwered.

In good ſadneſſe *Ancilla*, I have endured the moſt miſerableſt night of cold, froſt and ſnow, that ever any poor Gentleman ſuffered; but I know well enough, your Lady was not in any fault thereof, neither meriteth to be blamed, for in her own perſon (as being compaſſionate of my diſtreſſe) ſhe came ſo far as the door of this Court, to excuſe her ſelf, and comfort me.

me, But as you ſaid, and very well too, what hath failed this night, another hereafter may more fortunately perform: in hope whereof, commend my love and dutious ſervice to her, and (what elſe remaineth mine) to your gentle ſelf.

So, our half frozen Scholar, ſcarcely able to walk upon his legs, returned home, (ſo well as he could) to his own lodging; where, his ſpirits being grievouſly out of order, and his eyes ſtaring gaſtly through lack of ſleep: he lay down on his bed, and after a little reſt, he found himſelf in much worſe condition than before, as meerly taken lame in his armes and his legs. Whereupon he was enforced to ſend for Phyſitians, to be adviſed by their counſell, in ſuch an extremity of cold received. Immediately they made proviſion for his health (albeit the nerves and ſinews could very hardly extend themſelves) yet in regard he was young, and Summer ſwiftly drawing on; they had the better hope of effecting his ſafety out of ſo dangerous a cold.

But after he was become almoſt well and luſty again, he uſed to be ſeldome ſeen abroad for an indifferent while; concealing his intended revenge ſecret to himſelf, yet appearing more affectionate to Madam *Helena*, than ſo merly he had been.

Now it came to paſſe (within no long while after) that Fortune being favourable to our injured Scholar, prepared a new accident, whereby he might fully effect his hearts deſire, For the luſty young Gallant, who was Madam *Helenaes* dear darling and delight, and (for whoſe ſake) ſhe dealt ſo unhumanely with poor *Reniere*, became weary of her amorous ſervice, and was faln in liking of another Lady, ſcorning and diſdaining his former Miſtreſſe; whereat ſhe grew exceedingly diſpleaſed; and began to languiſh moſt grievouſly in ſighs and tears.

But *Ancilla* her waiting woman, compaſſionating the perilous condition of her Lady, and knowing no likely means whereby to conquer this oppreſſing grief, which ſhe ſuffered for the loſſe of her hearts choſen friend: at length ſhe began to conſider, that the Scholar ſtill walked daily by the door, as he formerly uſed to do, and (by him) there might ſome good be done.

A fond and fooliſh opinion overſwayed her, that the Scholar was extraordinarily skilful in the Art of Negromancy, and could thereby ſo over-rule the heart of her loſt friend, as he ſhould be compelled to love her once again, in as effectual manner as before; herewith immediately ſhe acquainted her Lady, who being

as

as rashly credulous, as her maid was opinionative (never considering that if the Scholar had any experience in Negromancy, he would thereby have procured his owne successe) gave releefe to her surmise, in very jo-viall and comfortable manner, and intreated her in all kindnesse, to know of him, whether he could worke such a businesse, or no, and (upon his undertaking to effect it) she would give absolute assurance, that (in recompence thereof) he should unfeignedly obtaine his hearts desire. *Ancilla* was quicke and expeditious in delivering this message to discontented *Renier*; whose soule being ready to mount out of his body, onely by conceit of joy; cheerefully thus he said within himself. *Gracious Fortune! how highly am I obliged to thee for this so great a favour? now thou hast blest me with a happy time, to be justly revenged on so wicked a woman, who sought the vtter ruine of my life, in recompence of the unfeigned affection I bare her. Returne to thy Lady* (quoth he) *and saluting her first on my behalfe, bid to abandon all care in this businesse; for if her amorous friend were in India I would make him come (in meere delight of his heart) and crave mercy of her for his base transgression. But concerning the meane, how, and in what manner it is to be done, especially on her owne behalfe, I will impart it to her so soon as she pleaseth: faile not to tell her so constantly from me, with all my utmost paines at her service.*

Ancilla came jocondly home with her answer, and a conclusion was set downe for their meeting together at *Santa Lucia del prato*, which accordingly was performed, in very solemne conference betweene them. Her affection had such power over her, that she had forgot into what perill she brought his life, by such an unnaturall night walke: but disclosed all her other intention to him, how loth she was to lose so deare a friend, and desiring him to exercise his utmost height of skill, with large promises of her manifold favours to him, whereto our Scholar thus replyed.

Very true it is Madam, that among other studies at Paris, I learned the Art of Negromancy, the depth whereof I am a skilfull in, as any other Scholar whatsoever. But, because it is greatly displeasing unto God, I made a vow never to use it, either for my selfe or any other. Nevertheless, the love I beare you is of such power, as I know not well how to deny, whatsoever you please to command me: in which respect, if in doing you my very best service, I were sure to be seized on by all the Devils, I will not faile to accomplish your desire, you onely having the power to command me. But let me tell you Madam, it is a matter not so easie to be performed, as you

perhaps

...ings may rashly imagine, especially, when a woman would ...ould a man to her, or a man a woman: because it is not ...done, but by the person to whom it properly belongeth. ...nd therefore it behoveth, that such as would have this ...esse effected, must be of a constant minde, without the ...ast scruple of feare: because it is to be accomplished in ...e darke night season, in which difficulties I doe not know, ...e you are able to warrant your selfe, or whether you have ...e courage of spirit, as (with boldnesse) to adventure.

Madam *Helena*, more hot in pursuite of her amorous contentment, than any way governed by temperate discretion, presently thus answered. Sir, Love hath set such a keene edge on my unconquered affection, as there is not any danger so difficult, but I dare resolutely undertake it. for the recovery of him, who hath so unkindly refused my kindnesse: wherefore (if you please) shew me wherein I must be so constant & dreadlesse. The Scholar, who had (more than half) caught Ninny hammer by the beake, thus replyed. Madam, of necessity I must make an Image of Tinne, in the name of him whom you desire to recall. Which when I have sent you, the Moone being then in her full, and your selfe stript starke naked: immediately after your first sleepe, seventimes you must bathe your selfe with in a swift running River. Afterward, naked as you are, you must climbe up upon some tree, or else upon some uninhabited house top, where standing dreadlesse of any perill, and turning your face to the North, with the Image in your hand, seaven times you must speake some certaine words, as I will deliver to you in writing.

After you have so often spoken them, two goodly Ladies (the very faireſt that ever you beheld) will appeare unto you, very graciously saluting you, and demanding what you would have them to performe for you. Safely you may speake unto them, and orderly tell them what you desire: but be very carefull, that you name not one man instead of another. When you have uttered your minde they will depart from you, and then you may descend againe, to the place where you did leave your garments, which having put on, then returne to your house. And undoubtedly, before the midst of the next night following, your friend will come in tears to you and humbly crave your pardon on his knees; being never able afterward to be false to you, or leave your Love for any other whatsoever.

The Lady hearing these words, gave very settled beleefe to them, imagining unfeignedly, that shee had (more than halfe) recovered her friend already, and held

held him embraced between her armes: in which jocond perſwaſion, the cheerfull bloud mounted up into her cheeks, and thus ſhe replied. Never make you any doubt Sir, but that I can ſufficiently perform whatſoever you have ſaid, and am provided of the only place in the world, where ſuch a weighty buſineſſe is to be effected. For I have a Farm, or Dairy houſe, neer adjoyning to the Vale of *Arno*, and cloſely bordering upon the ſame River. It being now the moneth of July the moſt convenienteſt time of all the year to bathe in, I can be the eaſier induced thereunto. Moreover, there is hard by the River ſide a ſmall Tower or Turret uninhabited; whereinto few people do ſeldome enter, but only Heardſmen or Flock-keepers, who aſcend up (by the help of a woodden Ladder) to a Tarraſſe on the top of the ſaid Tower, to look all about for their beaſts, when they are wandred aſtray: it ſtanding in a ſolitary place, or out of the common way or reſort. There dare I boldly adventure to mount up, and with the invincible courage of a wronged Lady (not fearing to look death in the face) do all that you have preſcribed, yea, and much more, to recover my dear loſt lover again, whom I value equal with my own life.

Reniero, who perfectly knew both the Dairy Farm, and the old ſmall Turret, not a little joyful to hear how forward ſhe was to ſhame her ſelf; anſwered in this manner. Madam, I was never in thoſe parts of the Countrey, albeit they are ſo neer to our City, and therefore I muſt needs be ignorant, not only of your Farm, but the Turret alſo. But if they ſtand in ſuch convenient manner as you have deſcribed, all the world could not yeeld the like elſwhere, ſo apt and ſutable to your purpoſe: wherefore, with ſuch expedition as poſſibly I can uſe, I will make the Image, and ſend it you, as alſo the charme, very fairly written. But let me intreat you, that when you have obtained your hearts deſire, and are able to judge truly of my love and ſervice: not to be unmindful of me, but to perform, that you have with ſuch proteſtations promiſed; which ſhe gave him her hand and faith to do, without any impeach or hinderance: and ſo they parted, and ſhe returned home to her houſe.

Our over-joyed Scholar, applauding his happy ſtars, for furthering him with ſo fair a way to his revenge; imagining that it was already half executed, made the Image in due form, and wrote an old Fable, inſtead of a Charme; both which he ſent to the Lady, ſoon as he thought the time to be fitting: and this admonition withall, that the Moon being entering

ness the full, without any longer delay, she might venture upon the busineſſe, the next night following, and remain assured to repoſſeſſe her friend. Afterward for the better pleasing of himself, he secretly, attended only by his servant, went to the house of a trusty friend of his, who dwelt somewhat near to the Turret, there to expect the issue of this Lady-like enterprize. And Madam *Helena* accompanied with none but *Ancilla*, walked on to her dairy Farm, where the night ensuing, pretending to take her rest sooner than formerly she used to do, she commanded *Ancilla* to go to bed, referring her self to her best liking.

After she had slept her first sleep (according to the Scholars direction) departing softly out of her chamber, she went on towards the ancient Tower, standing hard to the River of *Arno*, looking heedfully about her, lest she should be spied by any person. But perceiving her self to be so secure as she could desire; putting off all her garments, she hid them in a small brake of bushes: afterward, holding the Image in her hand, seven times she bathed her body in the River, and then returned back with it to the Tower. The Scholar, who at the nights closing up of day, had hid himself among the Willowes and other trees, which grew very thick about the Tower, saw both her going and returning from the River, and as she passed thus naked by him, he plainly perceived, that the nights obscurity could not cloud the delicate whiteneſſe of her body, but made the Stars themselves to gaze amorously on her, even as if they were proud to behold her bathing, and (like so many twinkling Tapers) shewed her emulation of another *Diana*. Now what conflicts this caused in the minde of our Scholar, one while quenching his hateful spleen towards her, all coveting to imbrace a piece of such perfection: and another while, thinking it a purchase for one of *Cupids* souldiers, to seise and surprise her upon so fair an advantage, none being here to yeeld her rescue: in the fiery triall of such temptations, I am not able to judge, or to say, what resistance flesh and bloud could make, being opposed with such a sweet enemy.

But he well considering what she was, the greatneſſe of his injury, as also how and for whom: he forgot all wanton allurements of love, scorning to entertain a thought of compassion, continuing constant in his resolution, to let her suffer, as he himself had done. So, *Helena* being mounted up on the Turret, and turning her face towards the North; she repeated those idle frivolous

frivolous words (composed in the nature of a Charme) which she had received from the Scholar. Afterward, by soft and stealing steps, he went into the old Tower, and tooke away the Ladder, whereby shee ascended to the Tarras, staying and listening how she proceeded in her amorous exorcisme.

Seven times she rehearsed the charme to the image, looking still when the two Ladies would appeare in their likenesse, and so long she held on her imprecations (feeling greater cold, than willingly she would have done) that breake of day began to shew it selfe and halfe despairing of the Ladies comming, according as the Scholar had promised, she said to her selfe: I much misdoubt, that *Reniero* hath quitted me with such another piece of night-service, as it was my lucke to bestow on him: but if he have done it in that respect, he was but ill advised in his revenge, because the night was now three parts of the length, as then it had: and the cold which he suffered, was farre superior in qualitie to mine, albeit it is more sharpe now in the morning, than all the time of night it hath beene.

And, because day-light should not discover her on the Tarrasse, she went to make her descent down againe: but finding the Ladder to be taken away, and thinking how her publike shame was now inevitable, her heart dismaied, and she fell downe in a swoune on the Tarrasse: yet recovering her senses afterward, her griefe and sorrow exceeded all capacity of utterance. For, now she became fully perswaded that this proceeded from the Scholars malice, repenting for her unkinde usage towards him, but much more condemning her selfe, for reposing any trust in him, who stood bound (by good reason) to be her enemy.

Continuing long in this extreame affliction, and surveighing all likely meanes about her, whereby she might descend from the Tarrasse, whereof shee was wholly disappointed: she began to sigh and weepe exceedingly, and in this heavie perplexity of spirit, thus she complained to her selfe. Miserable and unfortunate *Helena*, what will be said by thy Brethren, Kindred, Neighbours, and generally throughout all Florence, when they shall know, that thou wast found here on this Turret, starke naked? Thine honourable carriage and honesty of life, heretofore free from a thought of suspicion, shall now be branded with detestation; and if thou wouldst cloud this mishap of thine by such lies & excuses, as are not rare amongst women: yet *Reniero* who knoweth all thy privy compacting, will

stand

stand as a thousand witnesses against thee, and shame thee before the whole City, so both thine honour and loved friend are lost for ever.

Having thus consulted with her self, many desperate motions entred her minde, to throw her selfe headlong from off the Tarras; till better thoughts wonne possession of her soule. And the Sunne being risen, she went to every corner of the Tarras, to espie any Lad come abroad with his beasts, by whom she might send for her waiting-woman. About this instant the Scholar, who lay sleeping (all this while) sunder a bush, suddainly awaking; saw her looke over the wall, and she likewise espyed him; whereupon he said unto her. *Good morrow Madam Helena, What? Are the Ladies come yet in?* *Helena* hearing his scorning question, and grieving that he should so delude her: in teares and lamentations, she entreated him to come neere the Tower, because she desired to speake with him. Which courtesie he did not deny her, and she lying groveling upon her breast on the Tarras, to hide her body that no part thereof might be seen, but her head; weeping, she spake thus to him.

Renier, upon my credit, if I gave thee an ill nights rest, thou hast well revenged that wrong on me; for, although we are now in the moneth of *July*, I have been plagued with extremity of cold (in regard of my nakednesse) even almost frozen to death: beside my continuall teares and lamenting, that folly perswaded me to beleeve thy protestations, wherein I account it well-neere miraculous, that mine eyes should be capable of any sight. And therefore I pray thee, not in respect of any love which thou canst pretend to beare me; but for regard of thine own self, being a Gentleman and a Scholar, that this punishment which thou hast already inflicted on me, may suffice for my former injuries towards thee, and to hold thy selfe revenged fully, as also permit my garments to be brought me, that I may descend from hence without taking that from me, which afterward thou canst never restore me, I meane mine honor. And consider, that albeit thou didst not injoy me that unhappy night, yet thou hast power to command me at any time whensoever, with making many diversities of amends, for one nighes offence onely committed. Content thy selfe then good *Renier*, and as thou art an honest gentleman, say thou art sufficiently revenged on me, in making me dearely confesse mine owne errour. Never exercise thy malice upon a poor weake woman, for the Eagle disdaineth to prey on the yeelding Dove:

and therefore in meere pity and for manhoods ſake, be my releaſe from open ſhame and reproach.

The Scholar whoſe envious ſpleene was ſwolne very great in remembring ſuch a malicious cruelty exerciſed on him, beholding her to weepe and make ſuch lamentations; found a fierce conflict in his thoughts, betweene content and pity. It did not a little joy and content him, that the revenge which he ſo earneſtly deſired to compaſſe, was now by him ſo effectually inflicted: And yet (in meere humanity) pity provoked him to commiſerate the Ladies diſtreſſed condition: but clemency being over-weake to withſtand his rigour, thus he replyed. Madam *Helena*, if mine entreaties (which, to ſpeake truely, I never knew how to ſteepe in teares, nor wrap up my words in Sugar-candie, ſo cunningly as you women know how to doe) could have prevailed, that miſerable night when I was well-neere frozen to death with cold, and merely buried with ſnow in your Court, not having any place of reſcue or ſhelter; your complaints would now the more eaſily over-rule me. But if your honour in eſtimation, be now more precious to you than heretofore, and it ſeemeth ſo offenſive to ſtand there naked: convert your perſwaſions and prayers to him, in whoſe armes you were that night embraced, both of your triumphing in my miſery when poore I, trotted about your Court, with the teeth quivering in my head, and beating my armes about my body, finding no compaſſion in him, or you. Let him bring thee thy garments, let him come help thee down with the Ladder, and let him have the care of thine honour, on whom thou haſt been ſo prodigall heretofore in beſtowing it, and now haſt unwomanly thrown thy ſelfe in perill, onely for the maintenance of thine immodeſt deſires. Why doſt thou not call on him to come helpe thee? To whom doth it more belong, than to him? For thou art his, and he thine. Why then ſhould any other but he helpe thee in this diſtreſſe? Call him (foole as thou art) and trie, if the love he beareth thee, and thy beſt underſtanding joyned with his, can deliver thee out of my ſottiſh detaining thee. I have not forgot, that when you both made a paſtime of my miſery, thou didſt demand of him, which ſeemed greateſt in his opinion, either my ſottiſh ſimplicity, or the love thou bareſt him. I am not now ſo liberall or courteous to deſire that of thee, which thou wouldſt not grant, if I did requeſt it: No, no, reſerve thoſe night favours for thy amorous friend, if thou doſt eſcape hence alive to ſee him againe. As for my ſelfe, I leave thee freely to his

his use and service: because I have sufficiently paid for a womans falsehood, and wisemen take such warning, that they scorne to be twice deceived, and by one woman. Proceed on still in thy flattering perswasions, terming me to be a Gentleman and a Scholar, thereby to win such favour from me, that I should think thy wicked villany towards me, to be already sufficiently punished. No, treacherous *Helena*, thy blandishments cannot now hoodwinke the eyes of my understanding, as when thou didst out-reach me with thy disloyall promises and protestations. And let me now tell thee plainely, that all the while I continued in the University of *Paris*, I never attained unto so perfect an understanding of my selfe, as in that one miserable night thou diddest instruct me. But admit, that I were inclined unto a merciful and compassionate mind, yet thou art none of them on whom milde and gracious mercy should any way declare her effects. For, the end of penance among savage beasts, such as thou art, and likewise of due vengeance, ought to be death: whereas among men, it should suffice according to thy saying. Wherefore, in regard that I am neither an Eagle, nor thou a Dove, but rather a most venemous Serpent: I purpose with my utmost hatred, and as an ancient enemy to all such as thou art, to make my revenge famous on thee.

I am not ignorant, that whatsoever I have already done unto thee, cannot properly be called revenge, but rather chastisement; because revenge ought alwayes to exceed the offence, which (as yet) I am farre enough from. For, if I did intend to revenge my wrongs, and remembred thy monstrous cruelty to me: then thy life, if I tooke it from thee, and an hundred more such as thy selfe, were far insufficient, because in killing thee I should kill but a vile inhumane beast, yea, one that deserved not the name of a woman. And to speake truly, art thou any more, or better (setting aside thy borrowed haire, and painted beauty, which in few yeares will leave thee wrinkled and deformed) than the basest beggarly Chamber-stuffe that can be? Yet thou soughtest the death of a Gentleman and Scholar, as (in scorne) not long since, thou didst tearme me: whose life may hereafter be more beneficiall unto the world, than millions of such as thou art, to live in the like multiplicitie of ages. Therefore if this anguish be sensible to thee, learne what it is to mocke men of apprehension, and (amongst them especially) such as are Scholars: to prevent thy falling hereafter into the like extremity, if

it be thy good luck to escape out of this. It appeareth to me thou art very desirous to come downe hither to the ground; the best counsell that I can give thee, is to leap down headlong, that by breaking thy necke (if thy fortune be so faire) thy life and loathsome qualities ending together, I may sit and smile at thy deserved destruction. I have no other comfort to give thee, but only to boast my happinesse, in teaching thee the way to ascend that Tower, and in thy descending down (even by what meanes thou canst devise) make a mockery of me, and say thou hast learned more, than I could instruct thee.

All the while as *Renisero* uttered these speeches, the miserable Lady sighed and wept very grievously; the time running on, and the Sunne ascending higher and higher; but when she heard him silent, thus she answered. Unkind and cruell man, if that wretched night was so grievous to thee and mine offence appeared so great, as neither my youth, beauty, teares, and humble intercessions, are able to derive any mercy from thee; yet let the last consideration move thee to some remorse: namely, that I reposed new confidence in thee (when I had little or no reason at all to trust thee) and discovered the integrity of my soule unto thee, whereby thou didst compasse the meanes, to punish me thus deservedly for my sinne. For, if I had not reposed confidence in thee, thou couldst not (in this manner) have wrought revenge on me, which although thou didst earnestly covet, yet my rash credulity was thy only helpe. Asswage then thine anger, and graciously pardon me, wherein if thou wilt be so mercifull to me, and free me from this fatall Tower: I do here faithfully promise thee, to forsake my most false and disloyall friend, electing thee as my Lord and constant Love for ever.

Moreover, although thou condemnest my beauty greatly, esteeming it as a trifle, momentary, and of slender continuance; yet, such as it is (being comparable with any other womans whatsoever) I am not ignorant, that were there no other reason to induce liking thereof: yet men in the vigour of their youth (as I am sure you think your selfe not aged) do hold it for an especiall delight, ordained by nature for them to admire and honour. And notwithstanding, all thy cruelty extended to me, yet I cannot be perswaded, that thou art so flinty or iron hearted, as to desire my miserable death, by casting my self headlong down (like a mad woman) before thy face, so to destroy that beauty, which (if thy Letters lyed not) was once so pleasing in thine eyes. Take pity then on me for charities sake, because the Sunne begin-

neth

neth to heare extreamely: and as over-much cold (that unhappy night) was mine offence, so let no over-violent warmth be now my utter ruine and death.

The Scholar who (only to delight himselfe) maintained this long discourfing with her, returned her this answer. Madam, you did not repose such confidence in me; for any good will or affection in you towards me, but in hope of recovering him whom you had lost; wherein you merit not a jot of favour, but rather the more sharpe and severe infliction. And whereas you inferre, that your over-rash credulity, gave the onely meanes to my revenge: Alas! therein you deceive yourselfe; for I have a thousand crotchets working continually in my brain, whereby to entrap a wiser creature than a woman, yet veiled all under the cunning cloake of love, but sauced with the bitter Wormewood of hate. So that, had not this harned as now it doth, of necessity you must have falne into another: but, as it hath pleased my happy starres to favour me therein, none could prove more to your eternall scandall and disgrace, than this of your owne devising; which I made choise of, not in regard of any ease to you, but only to content my self.

But if all other devises else had failed, my pen was and is my prevailing Champion, wherewith I would have written such and so many strange matters, concerning you in your very dearest reputation; that you should have curst the houre of your conception, and wisht your birth had been abortive. The powers of the pen are too many and mighty, whereof such weake wits as have made no experience, are the lesse able to use any relation. I sweare to you Lady, by my best hopes, that this revenge which (perhaps) you esteeme great and dishonourable, is no way comparable to the wounding lines of a Pen, which can character downe so infinite infamies (yet none but guilty and true taxations) as will make your own hands immediate instruments to teare your eyes from forth of your head, and so bequeathe your after dayes unto perpetuall darknesse. Now concerning your lost lover, for whose sake you suffer this unexpected penance; although your choise hath proved but bad, yet still continue your affection to him: in regard that I have another Lady and Mistresse, of higher and greater desert than you, and to whom I will continue for ever constant. And whereas you thinke, the warme beames of the Sun will be too hot and scorching for your nice body to indure: remember the extreame cold which you caused me to

feele, and if you can intermixe some part of that cold with the present heate, I dare assure you, the Sun (in his highest heate) will be far more temperate for your fetling.

The disconsolate Lady perceiving, that the Scholars words savoured of no mercy, but rather as coveting her most desperate ending; with the teares streaming down her cheekes, thus she replyed. Well Sir, seeing there is no matter of worth in me, whereby to derive any compassion from you: yet for that Ladies sake, whom you have elected worthy to enjoy your love, and so far excelleth me in Wisedome; vouchsafe to pardon me, and suffer my garments to be brought me, wherewith to cover my nakednesse, and so to descend down from this Tower, if it may stand with your gentle Nature to admit it.

Now began *Reniero* to laugh very heartily, and perceiving how swiftly the day ran on his course, hee said unto her. *Beleeve me Madam* Helena, *you have so conjured me by mine endeered Lady and Mistresse, that I am no longer able to deny you; wherefore, tell me where your garments are, and I will bring them to you, that you may come downe from the Turret.* She beleeving his promise, told him where she had hid them, and *Reniero* departing from the Tower, commanded his servant, not to stirre thence: but to abide still so neere it, as none might get entrance there till his returning. Which charge was no sooner given to his man, but he went to the house of a neere neighbouring friend, where he dined well, and afterward layd him down to sleep.

In the mean while, Madam *Helena* remaining still on the Tower, began to comfort her selfe with a little vaine hope, yet sighing and weeping incessantly, seating her selfe as well as she could, where any small shelter might yeeld the least shade, in expectation of the Scholars returning: one while weeping, then againe hoping, but most of all despairing, by his so long tarrying away with her Garments; so that being over-wearied with anguish and long watching, she fell into a little slumbering. But the Sunne was so extreame hot, the houre of noone being already past, that it meerely parched her delicate body, and burnt her bare head so violently: as not onely it seared all the flesh it touched; but also cleft and chinkt it strangely, besides blisters and other painfull scorchings in the flesh which hindred her sleeping, to helpe her selfe (by all possible meanes) and the Turret being covered with Lead, gave the greater addition to her torment; for, as she removed from

one

one place to another, it yeeld no mitigation to the burning heate, but parched and wrinkled the flesh extraordinarily, even as when a piece of parchment is thrown into the fire, and recovered out again, can never be extended to his former forme.

Moreover she was so grievously pained with the headake, as it seemed to split in a thousand pieces, whereat there needed no great marvell, the Lead of the Turret being so exceedingly hot, that it afforded not the least defence against it, or any repose to qualifie the torment: but drove her still from one place to another, in hope of ease, but none was there to be found.

Nor was there any winde at all stirring, whereby to asswage the Suns violent scalding, or keep away huge swarmes of Waspes, Hornets, and terrible biting Flies, which vexed her extreamely, feeding on those parts of her body that were rift and chinkt, like crannies in a mortered wall, and pained her like so many points of pricking needles, labouring still with her hands to beat them away, but yet they fastened on one place or other, and afflicted her in grievous manner, causing her to curse her own life, her amorous friend, but (most of all) the Scholar, that promised to bring her Garments, and as yet returned not. Now began she to gaze upon every side about her, to espie some labouring Husbandmen in the fields, to whom she might call or cry out for helpe, not fearing to discover her desperate condition: but Fortune therein also was adverse to her, because the heates extremity, had driven all the Village out of the fields, causing them to feed their Cattle about their own houses, or in remote and shadie Valleyes: so that she could see no other creature to comfort her, but Swannes swimming in the River *Arno*, and wishing her selfe there a thousand times with them, for to coole the extremity of her thirst, which so much the more encreased, onely by the sight thereof, and utterly disabled of having any. She saw beside in many places about her goodly Woods, faire coole shades, and Country houses, here and there dispersed; which added the greater violence to her affliction, that her desires (in all these) could no way be accomplished. What shall I say more concerning this disastrous Lady? The parching beames of the Sun above her, the scalding heat of the Lead beneath her, the Hornets and Flies every way stinging her, had made such an alteration of her beautifull body: that, as it checkt and controlled the precedent nights darkenesse, it was now so metamorphosed with rednesse, yea, and blood issuing forth in many places, as she see-

med (almoſt) loathſome to looke on, continuing ſtill in this agonie of torment, quite void of all hope, and rather expecting death, than any other comfort.

Reniero, then when ſome three houres of the afternoone were over paſt, awaked from ſleeping: and remembring Madam *Helena*, he went to ſee in what eſtate ſhe was; as alſo to ſend his ſervant unto dinner, becauſe he had faſted all that day. She perceiving his arrivall, being altogether weake, faint, and wonderouſly over wearied; ſhe crept on her knees to a corner of the Turret, and calling to him, ſpake in this manner. *Reniero*, thy revenge exceedeth all manhood and reſpect. For, if thou waſt almoſt frozen in my Court, thou haſt roaſted me all day long on this Tower, yea, meerely broyled my poore naked body, beſide ſtarving me thorough want of food, and drinke. Be now then ſo mercifull (for manhoods ſake) as to come up hither, and inflict that on me, which mine own hands are not ſtrong enough to doe, I meane the ending of my loathed and wearieſome life, for I deſire it beyond all comfort elſe, and I ſhall honour thee in the performance of it. If thou deny me this gracious favour; at leaſt ſend me up a glaſſe of water, onely to moiſten my mouth, which my teares (being all meerly dryed up) are not able to doe, ſo extreame is the violence of the Sunnes burning heat.

Well perceived the Scholar, by the weakeneſſe of her voyce, and ſcorching of her body by the Suns parching beames, that ſhe was brought now to great extreamity: which ſight as alſo her humble interceſſion, began to touch him with ſome compaſſion, nevertheleſſe, thus replyed. Wicked woman, my hands ſhall be no meanes of thy death, but make uſe of thine owne, if thou beſo deſirous to have it: and as much water ſhalt thou get of me to aſſwage thy thirſt, as thou gaveſt me fire to comfort my freezing, when thou waſt in the luxurious heat of thy immodeſt deſires, and I well-neer frozen to death with extremity of cold. Pray that the evening may rain down Roſe-water on thee, becauſe that in the River of *Arno* is not good enough for thee: for as little pity do I take on thee now, as thou didſt extend compaſſion to me then.

Miſerable woman as I am, anſwered *Helena*; Why did the heavens beſtow beauty on me, which others have admired and honoured, and yet (by thee) is utterly deſpiſed? More cruell art thou than any ſavage beaſt; thus to vexe and torment me in ſuch mercileſſe manner. What greater extreamity couldſt thou inflict

on

on me, if I had beene the deſtruction of all thy kindred, and left no one man living of thy race? I am verily perſwaded, that more cruelty cannot be uſed againſt a Traitor, who was the ſubverſion of an whole City, than this tyranny of thine, roaſting me thus in the beames of the Sun, and ſuffering my body to be devoured with Flies, without ſo ſmall a mercy, as to give me a little coole water, which murtherers are permitted to have, being condemned by Juſtice, and led to execution: yea wine alſo if they requeſt it.

But, ſeeing thou art ſo conſtant in thy pernicious reſolve, as neither thy owne good nature, nor this lamentable ſufferance in me, are able to alter thee: I wil prepare my ſelfe for death patiently, to the end, that heaven may be merciful to my ſoule, and reward thee juſtly according to thy cruelty. Which words being ended, ſhe withdrew her ſelf towards the middeſt of the Tarras, deſpairing of eſcaping (with life) from the violence of heates; and not once onely, but infinite times beſide (among her other grievous extreamities) ſhe was ready to dye with drought, bemoaning inceſſantly, her dolorous condition.

By this time the day was well neere ſpent, and night began to haſten on apace: When the Scholar (imagining that he had afflicted her ſufficiently) took her garments, and wrapping them up in his mans cloak, went thence to the Ladies houſe, where he found *Ancilla* the waiting woman ſitting at the doore, ſad and diſconſolate for her Ladies long abſence, to whom thus he ſpake. How now *Ancilla*? Where is thy Lady and Miſtreſſe? *Alas Sir* (*quoth ſhe*) *I know not. I thought this morning to have found her in her bed, as uſually I was wont to doe, and where I left her yeſternight at our parting: but there ſhe was not, nor in any place elſe of my knowledge, neither can I imagine what is become of her, whicbis to me no meane diſcomfort.*

But can you (*Sir*) *ſay any thing of her*? *Ancilla*, ſaid he, I would thou hadſt beene in her company, and at the ſame place where now ſhe is, that ſome puniſhment for thy fault might have falne upon thee, as already it hath done on her. But beleeve it aſſuredly, that thou ſhalt not freely eſcape from my fingers, till I have juſtly payd thee for thy paines, to teach thee to abuſe any Gentleman as thou didſt me.

Having thus ſpoken, he called to his ſervant, ſaying give her the garments, and let her go looke her Lady, if ſhe will. The Servingman fulfilled his Maſters command, and *Ancilla* having received her Ladies cloathes,

knowing them perfectly, and and remembring (withall) what had beene ſaid: ſhe waxed very doubtfull, leſt they had ſlaine her, hardly refraining from exclaiming on them, but that griefe and heavie weeping overcame her; ſo that upon the Scholars departing ſhe ran in all haſte with the garments towards the Tower.

Upon this fatall and unfortunate day to Madam *Helena*, it chanced that a Clowne or Countrey Peaſant belonging to her Farme or Dairy houſe, having two of his young Heyfers wandred aſtray, and he labouring in diligent ſearch to find them: within a while after the Scholars departure, came to ſeeke them in woods about the Tower, and, notwithſtanding all his crying and calling for his beaſts, yet he heard the Ladies grievous moanes and lamentations. Wherefore, he cryed out ſo loud as he could, ſaying: Who is it that mourneth ſo aloft on the Tower? Full well ſhe knew the voyce of her Peaſant, and therefore called unto him, and ſaid in this manner.

Goe (quoth ſhe) I pray thee for my Waiting woman *Ancilla*, and bid her make ſome meanes to come up hither to me. The Clown knowing his Lady, ſaid, How now Madam? Who hath carryed you up ſo high? Your woman *Ancilla* hath fought for you all this day, yet no one could ever have imagined you to be there. So looking about him he eſpyed the two ſides of the Ladder, which the Scholar had pulled in ſunder; as alſo the ſteppes which he had ſcattered thereabout, placing them in due order againe as they ſhould be; and binding them faſt with Withies and Willowes.

By this time *Ancilla* was come thither, who ſo ſoone as ſhe was (making all poſſible ſpeed ſhe could) entred into the Tower, could not refraine from teares, and grievous complaints, beating her hands one againſt another, and crying out, thus ſhe ſaid. Madam, Madam my deare Lady and Miſtreſſe! Alas, Where are you? So ſoon as ſhe heard the tongue of *Ancilla*, ſhe replyed (ſo well as ſhe could) ſaying: Ah my ſweet Woman, I am here aloft upon the Tarras; weep not, neither make any noiſe, but quickly bring me ſome of my garments. When ſhe heard her anſwere in this comfortable manner, ſhe mounted up the Ladder, which the Peaſant had made very fitme and ſtrong, holding it faſt for her ſafer aſcending; by which meanes ſhe went up on the Tarras. Beholding her Lady in ſo ſtrange a condition, reſembling no humane body, but rather the trunke of a tree halfe burned, lying flat on her face, naked, ſcorched, and ſtrangely deformed: ſhe began

to

to teare the lockes of her owne haire, raving and raging in as pitiful manner, as if her Lady had beene quite dead. Which ſtormy tempeſt, Madam *Helena* ſoon pacified, entreating her to uſe ſilence, and help to put on her garments.

Having underſtood by her, that no one knew of her being there, but ſuch as brought her cloathes, and the poore Peazant, attending there ſtill to do her any ſervice: ſhe became the better comforted, entreating them by all meanes, that it might be concealed from any further diſcovery, which was on either ſide moſt faithfully proteſted.

The poore Clowne holpe to beare downe his Lady upon his backe, becauſe the Ladder ſtood not conveniently enough for her deſcending, neither were her limbes pliable for her owne uſe, by reaſon of their rifts and ſmarting. *Ancilla* following after and being more reſpective of her Lady, than her own ſecurity in deſcending; miſſing the ſtep in the midſt of the ladder, fell downe to the ground, and quite brake her legge in the fall, the pain whereof was ſo grievous unto her, that ſhe cryed and roared extraordinarily, even like a Lyon in the Deſert.

When the Clowne had ſet his Lady ſafe on a faire greene banke, he returned to ſee what the writing-woman ailed, and finding her legge to be quite broken: he carried her alſo to the ſame banke, and there ſeated her by her Lady, who perceiving what a miſchance had hapned, and ſhe (from whom ſhe expected her only beſt hope) to be now in farre greater neceſſitie her ſelf: ſhe lamented exceedingly, complaining on Fortunes cruell malice towards her, in thus heaping one miſerie upon another, and never ceaſing to torment her, eſpecially now in the concluſion of all, and when ſhe thought all future perils to be paſt.

Now was the Sun upon his ſetting, when the poore honeſt Countrey-man, becauſe darke night ſhould not overtake them, conducted the Lady home to his own houſe: and gaining the aſſiſtance of his two brethren and wife, ſetting the waiting-woman in a Chaire, thither they brought her in like manner. And queſtionleſs, there wanted no diligence and comfortable language, to pacifie the Ladies continuall lamentations. The good wife led the Lady into her own poore Lodging, where (ſuch cates as they had to feed on) lovingly ſhe ſet before her: conveying her afterward into her own bed, and taking ſuch good order, that *Ancilla* was carried in the night time to Florence, to prevent all enſuing danger, by reaſon of her legs breaking.

Mas-

Madam *Helena*, to colour this misfortune of her owne, as alſo the great miſhap of her woman: forged an artificiall and cunning Tale, to give ſome formall appearance of her being in the Tower, perſwading the poore Countrey people, that in a ſtrange accident of thunder and lightning, and by the illuſion of wicked ſpirits, all this adventure hapned to her. Then Phyſitians were ſent for; not without much anguiſh and affliction to the Lady (by reaſon of her fleſhes flaying off, with the Medicines and Emplaiſters applyed to the body) who was glad to ſuffer whatſoever they did, beſide falling into a very dangerous Feaver; out of which ſhe was not recovered in a long while after, but continued in dayly deſpaire of her life; beſide other accidents hapning in her time of Phyſicke, utterly unavoidable in ſuch extreamities: and hardly had *Ancilla* her leg cured.

By this unexpected penance impoſed on Madam *Helena*, ſhe utterly forgot her amorous friend; and (from thence forward) carefully kept her ſelf from fond loves allurements, and ſuch ſcornfull behaviour, wherein ſhe was moſt diſorderly faulty. And *Reniero* the Scholar, underſtanding that *Ancilla* had broken her legge, which he reputed as a punniſhment ſufficient for her, held himſelfe ſatisfied, becauſe neither the Miſtreſſe nor her Maid, could now make any great boaſt, of his nights hard entertainment, and ſo concealed all matters elſe.

Thus a wanton headed Lady, could finde no other ſubject to worke her mocking folly on, but a learned Scholar, of whom ſhe made no more reſpect, then any other ordinary men, never remembring, that ſuch men are expert (I cannot ſay all, but the greater part of them) to help the frenzie of fooliſh Ladies, that muſt injoy their looſe deſires, by Negromancy, and the divils meanes. Let it therefore (faire Ladies) be my loving admonition to you, to deteſt all unwomanly mocking and ſcorning, but more eſpecially to Scholars.

Two neere dwelling neighbours, the one being named Spinellocco Tavena, and the other Zeppa di Mino, frequenting each others company dayly together; Spinellocco Cuckolded his Friend and Neighbour which happening to the knowledge of Zeppa, he prevailed ſo well with the wife of Spinelloccio, that he being lockt up in a Cheſt, he revenged his wrong at that inſtant, ſo that neither of them complained of his misfortune.

The

The Eighth Novell.

Wherein is approved, that he which offereth shame and disgrace to his Neighbour; may receive the like injury (if not in worse manner) by the same man.

GRievous and full of compassion, appeared the hard Fortunes of Madam *Helena* to be, having much discontented, and (well neer) wearied all the Ladies in hearing them recounted. But because they were justly inflicted upon her, and according as (in equity) she had deserved, they were the more moderate in their commiseration: howbeit, they reputed the Scholar not only over-obstinate, but also too strict, rigorous and severe. Wherefore, when Madam *Pampinea* had finished her Novell, the Queene gave command to Madam *Fiametta*, that she should follow next with her discourse; whereto she shewing obedience thus began.

Because it appeareth in my judgement (faire Ladies) that the Scholars cruelty much displeased you, making you more melancholy than this time requireth: I hold it therefore very convenient, that your contristed spirits should be cheerefully revived, with matter more pleasing and delightfull. And therefore I meane to report a Novell of a certaine man, who took an injury done him in much milder manner, and revenged his wrong more moderately, than the incensed Scholar did. Whereby you may comprehend, that it is sufficient for any man, and so he ought to esteeme it, to serve another with the same sawce, which the offending party caused him first to taste of: without coveting any stricter revenge, than agreeth with the quality of the injury received.

Know then (Gracious assembly) that, as I have heretofore heard, there lived not long since in *Sienna*, two young men, of honest parentage and equall condition, neither of the best, nor yet the meanest calling in the City: the one being named *Spinellocio Tavina*, and the other tearmed *Zeppa di Mino*, their houses Neighbouring together in the street *Camollia*. Seldome the one walked abroad without the others Company, and their houses allowed equall welcome to them both; so that by outward demonstrations, and inward mutuall affection, as far as humane capacity had power to extend, they lived and loved like two Brethren, they both being wealthy, and married unto two beautifull women.

It came to passe that *Spinellocio* by often resorting to the house of *Zeppa*, as well in his absence, as when he abode at home; began to glance amorous lookes on *Zeppaes* wife, and pursued his unneighbourly purpose in

in such sort: that he being the stronger perswader, and she (belike) too credulous in beleeving or else overfeeble in resisting; from private imparlance, they fell to action; and continued their close fight a long while together, unseen and without suspicion, no doubt to their equal joy and contentment.

But, whether as a just punishment, for breaking so loving a league of friendship and neighbourhood, or rather a fatal infliction evermore attending on the closest Cuckoldry, their felicity still continuing in this kinde: it fortuned on a day, *Zeppa* abiding within doores, contrary to the knowledge of his wife, *Spinelloccio* came to enquire for him, and she answering (as she verily supposed) that he was gone abroad: up they went both together into the Hall, and no body being there to hinder what they intended, they fell to their wonted recreation without any feare, kissing and embracing as Lovers use to doe——

Zeppa seeing all this, spake not one word, neither made any noyse at all, but kept himself closely hidden to observe the issue of this amorous conflict. To be briefe, he saw *Spinelloccio* go with his wife into the Chamber, and make the doore fast after them, whereat he could have been angry, which he held to be no part of true wisedome. For he knew well enough, that to make an out cry in this case, or otherwise to reveale this kind of injury, it could no way make it lesse, but rather give a greater addition of shame and scandall: he thought this no course for him to take; wiser considerations entred his braine, to have his wrong fully revenged, yet with such a discreet and orderly carriage, as no neighbours knowledge should by any meanes apprehend it, or the least signe of discontent in himselfe blab it, because they were two dangerous evils.

Many notable courses wheeled about his conceit, every one promising fairely, and ministring meanes of formall appearance, yet one (above the rest) won his absolute allowance, which he intended to prosecute as best he might. In which resolution, he kept still very close, so long as *Spinelloccio* was with his Wife; but he being gone, he went into the Chamber, where he found his wife, amending the forme of her head attire, which *Spinelloccio* had put into a disordered fashion. Wife (quoth he) what art thou doing? Why? Doe you not see Husband? answered she. Yes that I doe wife, replyed *Zeppa*, and some things else hapned to my sight which I could wish that I had not seen. Rougher Language growing between them, of his avouching, and her

her as ſtout denying, with defending her cauſe over-weakely, againſt the manifeſt proofes both of eye and eare: at laſt ſhe fell on her knees before him, weeping inceſſantly, and no excuſes now availing, ſhe confeſt her long acquaintance with *Spinelloccio*, and moſt humbly entreated him to forgive her. Upon the which penitent confeſſion and ſubmiſſion, *Zeppa* thus anſwered.

Wife, if thy inward contrition be anſwerable to thy outward ſeeming ſorrow, then I make no doubt, but faithfully thou doeſt acknowledge thine own faults and evill doing, for which if thou expecteſt pardon of mee; determine then to fulfill effectually, ſuch a buſineſſe as I muſt enjoyne, and thou muſt performe it. I command thee to tell *Spinelloccio*, that to morrow morning, about nine of the clocke, when we are both abroad walking, he muſt find ſome apt occaſion to leave my company, and then come hither to viſit thee. When he is here, ſodainely will I returne home, and upon thy hearing of my entrance: to ſave his own credit, and thy ſelf from detection, thou ſhalt require him to enter into this Cheſt, untill ſuch time as I am gone forth again; which he doing, for both your ſafeties, ſo ſoon as he is in the Cheſt take the key and locke him up faſt. When thou haſt effected this, then ſhall I acquaint thee with the reſt remaining, which alſo muſt be done by thee, without dread of the leaſt harme to him or thee, becauſe there is no malicious meaning in me, but ſuch as (I am perſwaded) thou canſt not juſtly miſlike. The Wife, to make ſome ſatisfaction for her offence committed, promiſed that ſhe would performe it, and ſo ſhe did.

On the morrow morning, the houre of nine being come, when *Zeppa* and *Spinelloccio* were walking abroad together, *Spinelloccio* remembring his promiſe unto his Miſtris, and the clocke telling him the appointed houre, he ſaid to *Zeppa*. I am to dine this day with an eſpeciall friend of mine, who I would be loath ſhould tarry for my coming, and therefore hold my departure excuſed. How now? anſwered *Zeppa*, the time for dinner is yet farre enough off, wherefore then ſhould we part ſo ſoone? Yea but *Zeppa*, replyed *Spinelloccio*, we have weighty matters to conferre on before dinner, which wil require three houres ſpace at the leaſt, and therefore it behoveth me to reſpect due time.

Spinelloccio being departed from *Zeppa* (who followed faire and ſoftly after him) being come to the houſe, and kindly welcomed by the wife: they were no ſooner

gone

gone up the ſtaires, and entring in at the Chamber doore; but the Woman heard her husband cough, and alſo his coming up the ſtayres. Alas deare *Spinelloccio* (quoth ſhe) what ſhall we doe? My Husband is comming up, and we ſhall be both taken tardy; ſtep into this Cheſt, lye downe there and ſtir not, till I have ſent him forth again, which ſhall be within a very ſhort while. *Spinelloccio* was not a little joyfull for her good advice; downe into the Cheſt lay he: and ſhe lockt him in: by which time *Zeppa* was entred the Chamber. Where are you wife? ſaid he, ſpeaking ſo loud, as he in the cheſt might heare him) What, is it time to goe to dinner? It will be anon Sir, anſwered ſhe, as yet it is over-early, but ſeeing you are come, the more haſte ſhall be made, and every thing will be ready quickly.

Zeppa, ſitting downe upon the Cheſt wherein *Spinelloccio* lay not a little affrighted, ſpeaking ſtill aloud, as formerly he did: Come hither Wife (quoth he) how ſhall we doe for ſome good company to dine with us? *Mine* honeſt kind Neighbour *Spinelloccio* is not at home, becauſe he dineth forth to day with a deare friend of his, by which meanes, his wife is left at home alone; give her a call out at our Window, and deſire her to come dine with us, for we two can make no merry *Muſick*, except ſome more come to fill up the conſort.

His Wife being very timorous, yet diligent to doe whatſoever he commanded, ſo prevailed with the wife of *Spinelloccio*; that ſhe came to them quickly, and ſo much the rather becauſe her Husband dined abroad. She being come up into the Chamber, *Zeppa* gave her moſt kinde entertainment, taking her gently by the hand, and winking on his wife, that ſhe ſhou'd betake her ſelfe to the kitchin, to ſee dinner ſpeedily prepared, while he ſate converſing with his neighbour in the Chamber.

His wife being gone, he ſhut the doore after her; which the newcome Neighbour perceiving ſhe ſaid, Our bleſſed Lady defend me, *Zeppa*, What is your meaning in this? Have you cauſed me to come hither to this intent? Is this the love you beare to *Spinelloccio*, and your profeſſed loyalty in friendſhip? *Zeppa*, ſeating her downe on the Cheſt wherein her husband was incloſed, entreating her patience, thus began. Kinde and loving Neighbour, before you adventure too farre in anger, vouchſafe to heare what I ſhall tell you.

I have loved and ſtill do love *Spinelloccio* as my brother, but yeſterday (albeit he knoweth it not) I found the honeſt truſt I repoſed in him, deſerved no other, or better recompence, but even to be bold with my wife, in the ſelfe ſame manner as I am, and as he ought to doe with none but you. Now in regard of the love which I beare him, I intend to be no otherwiſe revenged on him, but in the ſame kind as the offence was committed. He hath been more than familiar with my wife, I muſt borrow the ſelfeſame courteſie of you, which in equity you cannot deny me, weighing the wrong you have ſuſtained by my wife. Our injuries are alike in your Husband to me, and in my wife to you: let then their puniſhment and ours be alike alſo; as they, ſo we; for in this caſe there can be no juſter revenge.

The Woman hearing this, and perceiving the manifold confirmations thereof, proteſted (on ſolemne oath) by *Zeppa*; her beliefe grew ſetled, and thus ſhe anſwered. *My* loving neighbour *Zeppa*, ſeeing this kind of revenge is (in meere juſtice) impoſed on me, and ordained as a due ſcourge, as well to the breach of friendſhip and neighbour-hood, as abuſe of his true and loyall wife: I am the more willing to conſent: alwayes provided, that it be no imbarrement of love between your wife and me, albeit I have reaſon to alledge, that ſhe began the quarrell firſt: and what I do, is but to right my wrong, as any other woman of ſpirit would do: Afterwards we may the more eaſily pardon one another. For breach of peace (anſwered *Zeppa*) between my wife and you, take my honeſt word for your warrant. Moreover, in requitall of this favour to me, I will beſtow a deare and precious Jewell on you, excelling all the reſt which you have beſide.

In delivering theſe words, he ſweetly kiſſed and embraced her, as ſhe ſate on the Cheſt wherein her husband lay: now, what they did elſe beſide, in recompence of the wrong received, I leave to your imagination, as rather deſerving ſilence, than immodeſt blabbing. *Spinelloccio*, being all this while in the Cheſt, hearing eaſily all the words which *Zeppa* had uttered, the anſwer of his wife, as alſo what muſicke they made over his head: you may gueſſe in what a caſe he was, his heart being ready to ſplit with rage, and but that he ſtood in feare of *Zeppa* he would have rail'd and exclaimed on his wife, as thus he lay ſhut up the Cheſt. But entring into better conſideration, that ſo great an injury was firſt begunne by himſelfe, and *Zeppa* did no

more

more than in reason and equity he might well do (having evermore carried himself like a kinde neighbour and friend toward him, without the least offer of distast) he faithfully resolved, to be a firmer friend to *Zeppa* than formerly he had bin, if it might be embraced and accepted on the other side.

Delights and pleasures, be they never so long in contenting and continuance, yet they come to a period and conclusion at last: So *Zeppa* having ended his amorous combate, and over the head of his perfidious friend, thought himself sufficiently revenged But now in consideration of a further promise made on the bargaine; *Spinelloccios* wife challenged the Jewell, than which kinde of recompence, nothing can be more welcome to women, Hereupon *Zeppa* calling for his owne wife, commanded her to open the Chest; which she did, and he merrily smiling, said, Well wife, you have given me a Cake in stead of bread, and you shall lose nothing for your labour. So *Spinelloccio* coming forth of the chest, it requireth a better wit than mine, to tell you which of them stood most confounded with shame, either *Spinelloccio* seeing *Zeppa*, and knowing well enough what he had done: or the woman beholding her husband, who easily heard all their familiar conference, and the action thereupon so deservedly performed.

See neighbour, is not this your dearest Jewel? Having kept it a while in my wives custody; according to my promise, here I deliver it you. *Spinelloccio* being glad of his deliverance out of the Chest, albeit not a little ashamed of himself without using many impertinent words said. *Zeppa*, our wrongs are equally requited on each other, and therefore I allow thy former speeches to my Wife, that thou wast my friend, as I am the like to thee, and so I pray thee let us still continue. For nothing else is now to be divided between us, seeing we have shared alike in our wives, which none knowing but our selves, let it be as closely kept to our selves. *Zeppa* was well pleased with the motion, and so all foure dined lovingly together, without any variance or discontentment. And thence forward, each of the Women had two Husbands, and either Husband enjoyed two Wives, without further contention or debate.

Master Simon, an idle headed Doctor of Physicke, was throwne by Bruno and Buffalmaco into a common Leystall of filth: the Physitian fondly beleeving that (in the night time) he should be made one of a new created company, who usually went to see wonders at Corsica; and there in the Leystall they left him. The

The Ninth Novell.

Wherein is approved, that Titles of Honour, Learning, and Dignity, are not alwayes bestowed on wisest men.

After that the Ladies had a while considered, on the communication betweene the two wives of *Sienna*, and the falshood in friendship of their Husbands: the Queene, who was the last to recount her Novell, without offering injury to *Dioneus*, began to speake thus.

The reward for a precedent wrong committed, which *Zeppa* retorted upon *Spinelloccio*, was answerable to his desert, and no more than equity required: in which respect, I am of opinion, that such men ought not to be over-sharpely reprooved, as doe injury to him who seeketh for it, and justly should have it, although Madam *Pampinea* (not long since) avouched the contrary. Now, it evidently appeareth, that *Spinelloccio* well deserved what was done to him, and I purpose to speake of another who needs would seek after his own disgrace. The rather to confirme my former speeches, that they which beguile such wilfull foolish men, are not to be blamed but rather commended. And he unto whom the shame was done, was a Physitian, which came from *Bologna* to *Florence*; and returned thither again like unto a Beast, notoriously baffulled and disgraced.

It is a matter well known unto us, and (almost) observed day by day, that divers of our Citizens, when they returne from their studying at *Bologna*, one becommeth an Advocate, another a Physitian, and a third a Notary, with long and large gownes, some of Scarlet, and hoods furred with miniver, beside divers other great apparances, succeeding effectually daily in their several kinds. Among whom there returned (not long since) thence, one Master *Simon da Villa*, more rich in possessions left him by his parents, than any knowledge thereto obtained; yet cloathed in Scarlet, with his Miniver hood, and styled a Doctor of Physicke. which title he onely bestowed on himselfe, and tooke a goodly house for his dwelling, in the street which we commonly call *La via del Cocomero*. This Master Doctor *Simon*, being newly come thither, among other notable qualities in him, had one more especiall than any of the rest, namely to know the names and conditions of such persons, as dayly passed by his doore, and what professions they were of, whereby any likelihoode might be gathered of needing his helpe, and being his Patients, observing them all with very great vigilant care.

But

But among all the reſt by him thus warily noted, he moſt obſerved two Painters, of whom we have heretofore twice diſcourſed, *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco*, who walked continually together, and were his neere dwelling neighbours. The matter which moſt of all he noted in them, was, that they lived merrily, and with much leſſe care, then any elſe in the City beſide, and verily they did ſo indeed. Wherefore he demanded of divers perſons, who had good underſtanding of them both, of what eſtate and condition they were. And hearing by every one, that they were but poore men and Painters: he greatly mervailed, how it could be poſſible for them, that they ſhou'd live ſo jocondly, and in ſuch poverty. It was related to him further beſide, that they were men of a quicke and ingenious apprehenſion, whereby he politickly imagined, that their poore condition could not ſo well maintaine them; without ſome courſes elſe, albeit not publiquely knowne unto men, yet redounding to their great commodity and profit. In which regard, he grew very deſirous, by what meanes he might become acquainted, and grow into familiarity with them both or any of them, at the leaſt; wherein (at the length) he prevailed, and *Bruno* proved to be the man.

Now *Bruno* plainly perceiving (within a ſhort while of this new begun acquaintance) that the Phyſitian was a Logger-head, and meerely no better than a *Gregorian* Animall: he began to have much good paſtime with him, by telling him ſtrange and incredible tales, ſuch as none but a Coxcombe would give credit to; yet they delighted Doctor Dunce extraordinarily, and *Brunoes* familiarity was ſo highly pleaſing to him, that he was a dayly gueſt at dinner and ſupper with him, and he was not meanely proud of enjoying his company. One day as they ſate in familiar conference together, he told *Bruno* that he wondred not a little at him and *Buffalmaco*, they being both ſo poore people, yet lived far more jovially than Lords, and therefore deſired to underſtand, by what meanes they compaſſed ſuch mirthfull maintenance. *Bruno* hearing the Doctors demand, and perceiving that it ſavoured more of the foole, than any the very leaſt taſte of wiſedome: ſmiled unto himſelfe, and determined to returne him ſuch an anſwer, as might be fitting for his folly, whereupon, thus he replyed.

Beleeve me *Maſter* Doctor, I would not impart to many people, what private helpes we have for our maintenance; but yet I dare boldly acquaint you therewith

in regard you are one of our most intimate friends, and of such secresie, as (I know) you will not reveale it to any. True it is, that mine honest neighbour and my selfe, doe lead our lives in such merry manner as you see, and better than all the world is aware of; for I cannot imagine you to be so ignorant, but are certainly perswaded, that if we had no better meanes, than our poore manuall trade and profession; we might sit at home with bread and water, and be nothing so lively spirited as we are. Yet Sir, I would not have you to conceive, that we do either rob, or steale, or use any other unlawfull courses: onely we travell to *Corsica*, from whence we bring (without the least prejudice to any other) all things we stand in need of or whatsoever we can desire. Thus do we maintain our selves well and honestly, and live in this mirthfull disposition.

Master Doctor hearing this discourse, and beleeving it constantly, without any further instruction or intelligence: became possessed with very much admiration, and had also the most earnest desire in the world, to know what this travelling to *Corsica* might be: entreating *Bruno* with very great instances, to tell him what it was, and made many protestations never to disclose it to any one. How now Master Doctor? answered *Bruno*. What a strange motion doe you make to me? It is too great a secret which you desire to know, yea, a matter of mine own ruine, and an utter expulsion out of this world, with condemnation into the mouth of *Lucifer la Son Gallo*, if any man whatsoever should know it from me, therefore I pray you to urge it no more. O my deare and honest neighbour *Bruno* (quoth the Doctor) assure thy self upon my soule, that whatsoever thou revealest to me, shall be under seale from all, but only our selves. Fie, fie, Master Doctor, answered *Bruno*, you are too pressing and importunate. So sitting smiling to himselfe, shaking his head, and beating his brest, as if he were in some strange distraction of mind, stamping with his feet, and beating his Fist oftentimes on the Table, at last he started up, and spake in this manner.

Ah Master Doctor, the love I beare to your capricious and rarely circumcised experience, and likewise, the confidence I repose in your scrutinous taciturnity, are both of such mighty and prevailing powers as I cannot conceale any thing from you, which you covet to know. And therefore if you will sweare unto me by the crosse of *Monteson*, that never (as you have already faithfully promised) you will disclose a secret so admi-

rable

rable; I will relate it unto you, and not otherwise. The Doctor sware, and sware again, then *Bruno* thus began.

Know then my learned and judicious Doctor, that it is not long time since, when there lived in this Citie of ours, a man very excellent in the Art of Negromancy, who named himselfe *Michale Scotto*, because he was a Scottishman borne: of many worthy Gentlemen (very few of them being now living) he was much honoured and respected. When he grew desirous to depart from hence, upon their earnest motion and entreaty, he left two of his Scholars behinde him, men of absolute skill and experience: giving them especiall charge and command, to doe all possible services they could devise, for those Gentlemen who had so highly honored him. The two famous Scholars, were very helpfull to those Gentlemen, in divers of their amorous occasions, and very many other matters beside.

Not long after, they finding the City, and behaviour of the people sufficiently pleasing to them; they resolved on their continuance here, entring into a league of love and friendship with divers, never regarding whether they were Gentlemen, or no, or distinguishing the poore from the rich: but onely in being conformable to their complexions, sociable and fit for friendship.

They created a kind Society, consisting of about five and twenty men, who should meet together twice in a moneth, and in a place reputed convenient for them: where being so assembled, every man uttered his minde to those two Scholars, in such cases as they most desired to have, wherewith they were all satisfied the selfsame night. It came so to passe that *Buffalmaco* and I, grew into acquaintance with those two worthy Scholars, and our private familiarity together proved so prosperous, that we were admitted into the same Society, and so have ever since continued. Now Sir, I am to tell you a matter deserving admiration, and which (in very good judgements) would seeme to exceed all beleef.

For, at every time when we were assembled together, you are not able to imagine, what sumptuous hangings of Tapestrie, did adorne the Hall where we sate at meat, the Tables covered in such Royall manner, waited on by numberlesse Noble and goodly attendants, both men and women, serving readily, at each mans command of the company. The Basins, Ewers, Pots, Flaggons, and all the vessels else which stood before, and for the service of our diet, being composed only of gold and silver, and out of no worse did we both eat

eate and drinke: the viands being very rare and dainty, abounding in plenty and variety, according to the appetite of every person, as nothing could bewished for or desired here in this world, but it was instantly obtained.

In good sadnesse Sir, I am not able to remember and tell you (within the compasse of a thousand yeares) what, and how many severall kinds of Musicall Instruments, were continually played on before us; what multiplicity of Waxe lights burned in all parts of the roomes; neither the excessive store of rich Drugs, Marchpanes, Comfits, and rare Banquetting stuffe, consumed there at one feasting, wherein there wanted no bounty of the best and purest Wines. Nor doe I (Master Doctor) repute you so weakely witted, as to think that when we were assembled there, any of us all were cloathed in such simple and meane Garments as ordinarily are worne in the streets on mens bodies, or any so silly as the very best you have. No Sir, not any one man among us, but appeared by his apparell, equall to the greatest Emperour on the earth, his robe most sumptuously imbroidered with precious Stones, Pearles, and Carbuncles, as all the World afforded not the like. But above all the rest, the delights and pleasures there are beyond my capacity to expresse, or (indeed) any comparison: as namely store of goodly and beautifull women, brought thither from all parts of the world; alwayes provided, if men be desirous of their company: but for your easier comprehension, I will make some brief relation of them to you, according as I heard them there named.

There is the great Lady of *Barbanisthia*; the Queen of *Ruschia*, the wife to the great *Soldans*, the Empresse of *Otbecbo*; the *Cianciafara* of *Nornisera*; the *Semifanta* of *Berlinzona*; and the *Scalpedra* of *Narsia*. But why do I breake my braine, in numbring up so many to you? All the Queenes of the world are there, even so farre as to the *Schinchimurra* of *Prester Iohn*, that hath a horne in the midst of her posteriores, albeit not visible to every eye.

Now I am further to to tell you, that after we have tasted a Cup of precious Wine, fed on a few delicate Comfits, and danced a dance or two to the rare Musick: every one taketh a Lady by the hand, of whom he pleaseth to make his election, and she conducteth him to her Chamber, in very grave and gracious manner. Concerning the Chambers there, each of them resembleth a Paradise to look on, they are so faire and goodly

goodly; and no leſſe odoriferous in ſmell, than the ſweeteſt perfumes in your Apothecaries Shoppes, or the rare compounds of Spices, when they are beaten in an open Morter. And as for the beds, they are infinitly richer, than the very coſtlieſt belonging to the Duke of *Venice*: yet (in ſuch) each man is appointed to take his reſt, the Muſicke of rare Cymbals laſting all night long, much better to be by you conſidered, than in my rude eloquence expreſſed.

But of all thoſe rich and ſumptuous beds (if pride of mine owne opinion do not deceive me) them two provided for *Buffalmaco* and me, had hardly any equall: he having the Queen of *France* as his Lady and Miſtreſſe; and I, the renowned Queene of *England*, the onely two choice beauties of the whole world, and we appeared ſo pleaſing in their eyes, as they would have refuſed the greateſt Monarkes on the earth, rather than to be rejected by us. Now therefore, you may eaſily conſider with your ſelfe, what great reaſon we have to live more merrily, than any other men can doe: in receiving alſo from them (whenſoever we pleaſe to command them) a thouſand or two thouſand Florines at the leaſt, which are both truely and duly ſent us. Enjoying thus the benefit of this high happineſſe, we that are companions of this Society, doe tearme it in our vulgar Language, *The Pyrates voyage to Corſica*. Becauſe, as Rovers or Pyrates robbe and take away the goods of ſuch as they meet withall, even ſo do we: onely there remaineth this difference between us, that they never reſtore what they have taken: which we do immediately afterward, whether it be required or no. And thus Maſter Doctor, as to my moſt indeared friend, I have now revealed the meaning of ſayling to *Corſica*, after the manner of our private Pyracie, and how important the cloſe retention of the voyage is, you are beſt able your ſelf to judge: In which regard, remember your Oathes and faithfull promiſes, or elſe I am undone for ever.

Our worthy wiſe Doctor, whoſe beſt skill ſcarcely extended ſo farre as to cure the itch in children; gave ſuch ſound beleefe to the relation of *Bruno*, as any man could doe, to the moſt certain truth of life and death: having his deſire immeaſurably inflamed to be made a member of this ſtrange Society, which he more coveted, than any thing in the world beſide, accounting it a felicity farre beyond all other.

Whereupon he anſwered *Bruno*, that it was no great matter of marvell, if he lived ſo merrily as he did, having

ving ſuch a ſingular ſupply, to avoid what neceſſities whatſoever: and very hardly could he refraine from immediate requeſt, to be accepted into the company. But yet he thought fit to deferre it further, untill he had made *Bruno* more beholden to him, by friendly entertainments and other courteſies, when he might (with better hope) be bold to move the motion

Will may you conceive, that nothing more hammer'd in the Doctors head, than this rare voyage to Corſica, *and* Bruno *to be daily Gueſt at dinner and Supper, with ſuch extraordinary appearances of kindneſſe and courteſie, as if the Phyſitian could not live, except he had the company of* Bruno. Who ſeeing himſelfe to be ſo lovingly reſpected, and hating ingratitude, for favours ſo abundantly heaped on him: he painted the whole ſtory of Lent about his Hall, and an *Agnus Dei* fairely guilt, on the Portall of his Chamber, as alſo a goodly Urinall on his ſtreet doore, to the end that ſuch as had need of his counſell, might know where ſo judicious a Doctor dwelt. In a Gallery likewiſe by his Garden, he painted the furious battell between the Rats and Cats, which did (not a little) delight Maſter Doctor.

Moreover at ſuch times as *Bruno* had not ſupt with our Phyſitian, he would be ſure to tell him on the morrow, that the night paſſed he had been in the company which he did wot of. And there (quoth he) the Queen of *England* having ſomewhat offended me, I commanded, that the *Gomedra*, belonging to the *Grand Cham* of *Tartaria*, ſhould be brought me, and inſtantly ſhe was. What may the meaning of *Gomedra* be? ſaid the Doctor, I underſtand not thoſe difficult names. I believe you Sir, anſwered *Bruno*, nor doe I need to marvell thereat: and yet I have heard *Porcegroſſo* ſpeake, and alſo *Vannacenna*, and both unexperienced in our Language. You would ſay (replyed the Doctor) *Hippocrates* and *Avicenna*, who were two admirable Phyſitians. It may be ſo (ſaid *Bruno*) and as hardly do I underſtand your names: but *Gomedra* in the *Grand Chams* Language, ſignifies Empereſſe in ours But had you once ſeen her Sir, ſhe would make you forget all Phyſical obſervations, your arguments, receipts, and medicines, onely to be in her heavenly preſence, which words he uſed (perceiving his forward longing) to enflame him the more. Not long after, as the Doctor was holding the Candle to *Bruno*, at the perfecting the bloudy battell of the Cars and Rats, becauſe he could never be wearyed in his company, and therefore was the more willing to undergo the office of the Candle-holder: he re-

reſolved to acquaint him with his mind, being alone by themſelves, thus he began.

Bruno, as heaven knoweth, there is not this day any creature living, for whom I would gladly doe more, than for thee, and the very leaſt word of thy mouth, hath power to command me to goe bare footed, even from hence ſo far as to *Peretola*, and account my labour well employed for thy ſake, wherefore never wonder at my continuall kindneſſe towards thee, uſing thee as my Domeſticke companion, and embracing thee as my boſome friend, and therefore I am the bolder in moving one requeſt unto thee. As thou well knoweſt, it is no long while ſince, when thou didſt acquaint me with the behaviour of the *Corſican* Roving Company, to be one in ſo rare and excellent a Society, ſuch hath been my earneſt longing ever ſince, as day nor night have I enjoyed any reſt, but ſhould thinke my felicity beyond all compare, if I ſhould be entertained in fellowſhip among you.

Nor is this deſire of mine but upon great occaſion, as thy ſelf ſhalt perceive, if I prove accepted into your Society, and let me then be made a mocking ſtocke for ever, if I cauſe not to come thither, one of the moſt delicate young women, that ever any eye beheld, and which I my ſelf ſaw (not above a yeare ſince) at *Cavinciglia*, on whom I beſtowed my intireſt affection, and by the beſt Urinall that ever I gazed on, would have given her ten faire *Bologninaes*, to yeeld the matter I moved to her, which yet I could not (by any meanes) compaſſe. Therefore, with all the flowing faculties of my ſoule I intreat thee, and all the very uttermoſt of my all indeed, to inſtruct me in thoſe wayes and means, whereby I may hope to be a member of you. Which if thou doſt accompliſh for me, and I may find it effectually performed: I ſhall not only be thy true and loyall friend for ever, but will honour thee beſide, beyond all men living.

I know thee to be a man of judgement, deeply informed in all well grounded experience: thou ſeeſt what a proper, portly, and comely man I am, how fitly my legges are anſwerable to my body, my looks amiable, lovely, and of a Roſie colour: beſide I am a Doctor of Phyſick, of which profeſſion (being onely moſt expedient) I thinke you have not one in your Society. I have many commendable qualities in me, as, playing on divers inſtruments, exquiſite in ſinging, and compoſing rare ditties, whereof I will inſtantly ſing you one. And ſo he began to ſing.

Bruno

Bruno was swolne so bigge with desire of laughter, that he had scarsely any power to refraine from it: nevertheless, he made the best meanes he could devise: and the Song being ended, the Physitian said. How now *Bruno*? What is thine opinion of my singing? Beleeve me Sir, replyed *Bruno*, the Vials of *Sagginale*, will loose their very best tunes, in contending against you, so mirifficially are the sweet accents of your voice heard. I tell thee truely *Bruno* (answered *Master Doctor*) thou couldest not by any possibility have beleeved it, if thou hadst not heard it. In good sadnesse Sir (said *Bruno*) you speake most truely. I could (quoth the Doctor) sing thee infinite more beside, but at this time I must forbeare them. Let me then further informe thee *Bruno*, that beside the compleat perfections thou seest in me, my Father was a Gentleman, although he dwelt in a poore Countrey Village, and by my mothers side, I am derived from them of *Vallecchio*. Moreover, as I formerly shewed thee, I have a goodly Library of Books, yea, and so faire and costly garments, as few Physitians in Florence have the like. I protest to thee upon my faith, I have one Gowne, which cost me (in ready money) almost an hundred pounds in *Bagattines*, and it is not yet above ten yeares old. Wherefore let me prevaile with thee good *Bruno*, to worke so with the rest of thy friends, that I may be one of your singular Society; and, by the honest trust thou reposest in me, be boldly sicke whensoever thou wilt, my paines and Physick shall be freely thine, without the payment of one single penny. *Bruno* hearing his importunate words, and knowing him (as all men else did beside) to be a man of more words than wit, said. *Master Doctor*, snuffe the candle I pray you, and lend me a little more light with it hitherward, untill I have finished the tailes of these Rats, and then I will answer you.

When the Rats tailes were fully finished. *Bruno* declaring by outward behaviour, that he greatly distasted the matter moved, thus answered. Worthy *Master Doctor*, the courtesies you have already extended towards me, and the bountifull favours promised beside, I know to be exceeding great, and farre beyond the compasse of any merit in me. But concerning your request, albeit in respect of your admired braine and wisedome, it is of little or no moment at all; yet it appeareth over-mighty to me, and there is not any man now living in the world, that hath the like authority over me, and can more command me, than you (with one poore sylable) easily may doe: as well in regard of my Love and Dutie,

as alſo your ſingular and ſententious ſpeeches, able not only to make me breake a ſound and ſetled reſolution, but almoſt to remove mountaines out of their places; and the more I am in your Learned company, ſo much the faſter am I linked unto you, in immoveable affection, ſo farre am I in love with your admirable qualities. And had I no other reaſon to affect you in ſuch endeared manner, as I doe; yet becauſe you are enamoured of ſo rare a beauty, as you have already related to me, it onely were a motive ſufficient to compell me. But indeed I muſt needs tell you, that I have not ſo much power in this caſe, as you (perhaps) doe imagine, which barreth me from ſuch forward readineſſe, as otherwiſe needed not to be urged. Nevertheleſſe, having ſo ſolemnly ingaged your faith to me, and no way miſdoubting your faithfull ſecrecy, I ſhall inſtruct you in ſome meanes to be obſerved; and it appeareth plainly to me, that being furniſhed with ſuch plentie of Bookes as you are, and other rich endowments, as you have before rehearſed, you cannot but attain to the full underſtanding and period of your longing deſire.

Speake boldly thy minde *Bruno*, anſwered the Doctor: for, I perceive thou haſt no perfect knowledge of me as yet, neither what an eſpeciall gift I have of ſecrecie. *Meſſer Gaſparino da Salicete*, when he was Judge and Poteſtate over the people of *Forliui*, made choiſe of me (among infinite of his moſt endeared friends) to acquaint with a ſecret of no meane moment. And ſuch a faithfull Secretary he found me, as I was the onely man, that knew his marriage with *Bergamino*; Why then ſhould any diſtruſt be made of me? If it be ſo as you ſay Sir, (anſwered *Bruno*,) your credit is the ſounder, and I dare the better adventure on your fidelity: the meanes then which you are to worke by, I ſhall now direct you in.

We have alwayes in this noble Society of ours, a Captain, and two Counſellers, which are changed at every ſix moneths end; and now at Chriſtmas next (ſo neere drawing on) *Buffalmaco* ſhall be elected Captain, and my ſelfe one of the Counſellers; for ſo it is already agreed on, and orderly ſet downe. Now he that is Captaine, may do much more than any other can, and appoint matters as himſelfe pleaſeth. Wherefore, I thinke it very expedient, that ſo ſoon as poſſibly you may, you procure acquaintance with *Buffalmaco*, entreating him with all reſpective courteſie. He is a man, who when he perceiveth you to be ſo wonderfully wiſe and diſcreet,

creet, he will immediately be in love with you: ſo, when you have your beſt ſenſes about you, and your richeſt Garments on (alwayes remembred) that your acquaintance firſt be fully confirmed, then never feare to urge your requeſt, for he can have no power at all to deny you; becauſe I have already ſpoken of you to him, and finde him to ſtand affected to you very intirely: thus when you have begun the buſineſſe, leave me to deale with him in the reſt.

Now truſt me kind friend *Bruno*, replyed the Phyſitian, I like your advice exceeding well. For, if he be a man, that taketh delight to converſe with men of skill and judgement, and you have made the way for his knowing me; he will even thirſt, and long to follow after me, to underſtand the incredible eloquence flowing from me, and the rare compoſition of my Muſicall Ditties, out of which he may learne no meane wiſedome. When the matter was thus agreed on between them, *Bruno* departed thence, and acquainted *Buffalmaco* with every circumſtance: which made him think every day a yeare, untill he might joyne in the fooling of Maſter Doctor, according to his owne fancy. Who being alſo as deſirous on the other ſide, to make one in the *Corſican* Voyage; could take no manner of reſt, either by day or night, till he was greatly linked in friendſhip with *Buffalmaco*, which very quickly he compaſſed.

For now there wanted no coſtly dinners and ſuppers, with all delicates could be deviſed, for the entertainment of *Buffalmaco* and *Bruno*; who like Gueſts very eaſie to be invited (where rich wines and good cheere are never wanting) needed little ſending for, becauſe his houſe was as familiar to them, as their own. In the end, when the Phyſitian eſpyed an opportunity apt for the purpoſe, he made the ſame requeſt to *Buffalmaco*, as formerly he had done to *Bruno*. Whereat *Buffalmaco* ſodainly ſtarting, and looking frowningly on *Bruno*, as if he were extraordinarily incenſed againſt him: clapping his hand furiouſly on the Table, he ſaid, I ſweare by the great God of *Paſignano*, that I can hardly refraine from giving thee ſuch a blow on the face, as to make thy Noſe fall at thy heeles: vile traitor as thou art: for none beſide thy ſelf, could diſcover ſo rare and excellent a ſecret unto this famous Phyſitian. The Doctor, with very plauſible and pleaſing tearms, excuſed the matter very artificially; proteſting that another had revealed it unto him: and after many wiſe circumſtantiall allegations, at length he prevailed ſo farre,

that *Buffalmaco* was pacified; who afterwards turning in kind manner, thus he began.

Maſter Doctor, you have lived both at *Bologna*, and here in theſe parts with us, having (no doubt) ſufficiently underſtood, what it is to keep a cloſe mouth, I meane the true Character of taciturnity. Queſtionleſſe, you never learned the A. B. C. as now fooliſh Ideots doe, blabbing their leſſons all about the Towne, which is much better apprehended by rumination; and ſurely (if I be not much deceived) your Nativity happened upon a Sunday morning. *Sol* being at that time Lord of the aſcendent, joyned with *Mercurie* in a fiery Triplicity. By ſuch conference as I have had with *Bruno*, I conceived (as he himſelf did) that you were very ſingular in Phyſick onely: but it ſeemeth, your Studies reached a higher ſtraine, for you have learned, and know very skilfully, how to ſteale mens hearts from them, yea, to bereave them of their very ſoules; which I perceive that you can farre better doe, than any man elſe living to my knowledge, onely by your wiſe, witty, judicious, and more than meere *Mercurian* eloquence, ſuch as I never heard before.

The Phyſitian interrupting him baſhfully, turned himſelf to *Bruno*, ſaying, Did I not tell thee this before? Obſerve what a notable thing it is, to ſpeake well, and to frequent the company of the Wiſe. A thouſand other meerely blockes and dullards by nature, could never ſo ſoone comprehend all the peculiarities of my knowledge, as this honeſt and apprehenſive man hath done. Thou didſt not ſearch into it half ſo ſoon, nor (indeed) did I expreſſe a quarter of my ingenuity to thee, as (ſince his coming) hath prodigally flowne from me.

Well doe I remember thy words that *Buffalmaco* delighted to be among men of wiſedome: and have I not now fitted him unto his owne deſire? How thinkeſt thou *Bruno*? The beſt (quoth *Bruno*) that any man living in the World could doe. Ah worthy *Buffalmaco*, anſwered the Phyſitian: What wouldſt thou then have ſaid, if thou hadſt ſeen me at *Bologna*, where there was neither great nor ſmall, Doctor, nor Scholar, but thought themſelves happy by being in my company? If I ought any debts I diſcharged them with my witty words: and whenſoever I ſpake, I could ſet them all on a hearty laughter; ſo much pleaſure they tooke in hearing me. And when I departed thence, no men in the world could be more ſorrowfull then they, as deſiring nothing more than my remaining among them;

them; which they expreſſed ſo apparently, that they made humble ſuite and interceſſion to me, to be chief Reader of the Phyſicke Lecture, to all the Scholars ſtudying our profeſſion. But I could not be ſo perſwaded, becauſe my minde was wholly addicted hither, to enjoy thoſe goods, Lands, and Inheritances, belonging lineally to them of our houſe, and accordingly I did performe it.

How now Buffalmaco (*quoth* Bruno) *what is thine opinion now? Thou wouldeſt not beleeve me when I told thee, that there is not a Doctor in all theſe parts, more skillfull in diſtinguiſhing the Urine of an Aſſe, from any other, than this expert and ſingular man: and I dare boldly maintaine it, that his fellow is not to be found, from hence to the very gates of Paris. Goe then, and doe thy uttermoſt endeavour that thou canſt, to grant the requeſt which he hath made.*

Beleeve me *Buffalmaco*, ſaid the Doctor, *Bruno* hath ſpoken nothing but truth, for I am ſcarcely known here in this City, where (for the moſt part) they are all groſſe witted people, rather than any jot judicious: but I would thou hadſt ſeen me among the Doctors, in manner as I was wont to be. Introth Sir, replyed *Buffalmaco*, you are much more learned than ever I imagined, in which reſpect, ſpeaking unto you as it becometh me, to a man ſo excellent in wit and underſtanding, I dare aſſure you that (without any faile) I will procure you to be one of our Company.

After this promiſe made, the good cheere, favours and kindneſſes done by the Doctor to them, was beyond the compaſſe of all relation: whereof they made no more than a meere mockery, flouting him to his face, and yet his wiſedome could not diſcerne it. Moreover, they promiſed that they would give him to Wife, the faire Counteſſe *di Civillari*, who was the only goodlieſt creature to be found in the whole *Culattaria* of humane generation. The Doctor demanded what Counteſſe that was; Oh Sir, anſwered *Buffalmaco*, ſhe is a great Lady, one worthy to have iſſue by; and few houſes are there in the world, where ſhe hath not ſome juriſdiction and command: ſo that not meane people onely, but even the greateſt Lords, at the ſound of her Trumpets, doe very gladly pay her tribute. And I dare boldly affirme, that whenſoever ſhe walketh to any place, ſhe yeeldeth a hot and ſenſible ſavour, albeit ſhe keepeth moſt of all cloſe. Yet once every night, ſhe duly obſerveth it (as a Cuſtome) to paſſe from her own houſe, to bathe her feet in the River of *Arno*, and

take a little of the ſweet Aire: albeit her continual reſidence, is within the Kingdome of *Laterino*.

She ſeldome walketh abroad, but goeth with her attending Officers about her, who (for more demonſtration of her greatneſſe) do carrie the Rod and Plummet of Lead. Store of her Lords and Barons are every where to be ſeen; as the *Tamagnino della porta, Don Metadi Simopa; Manico di Scopa; Siguior Squaccbera*, and others beſide, who are (as I ſuppoſe) oftentimes your dayly viſitants, when of neceſſity they muſt be remembred. All our care and courteſie ſhall extend ſo far (if we do not faile in our enterprize) to leave you in the armes of ſo majeſticke a Lady, quite forgetting her of *Cacavinciglia*.

The Phyſitian that was borne and brought up at *Bologna*, and therefore underſtood not theſe *Florentine* tearmes, became fully contented to enjoy the Lady; and, within ſome few dayes following, the Painters brought him tidings, that they had prepared the way for his entertainment into the Society of Rovers. The day being come, when the ſuppoſed aſſembly was to be made the night following: The Phyſitian invited them both to dinner; when he demanding, what proviſion he ſhould make for his entrance into their company, *Biffalmaco* returned him this anſwer, whereto he gave heedfull attention.

Maſter Doctor, you muſt be firſt of all, ſtrongly armed with reſolution and confidence: for, if you be not, you may not onely receive hinderance, but alſo doe us great harme beſide: and now you ſhall heare, in what-manner, and how you are to be bold and conſtant. You muſt procure the means this inſtant night, when all the people be in their ſoundeſt ſleep, to ſtand upon one of thoſe high exalted Tombs or Monuments, which are in the Churchyard of *Santa Maria Novella*, with the very faireſt Gowne you have about you, becauſe you may appear in the more honourable condition, before the aſſembly ſeated together, and likewiſe to make good our ſpeeches already delivered of you, concerning your quality and profeſſion: that the Counteſſe, perceiving you to be a worthy Gentleman, may have you firſt honoured with the Bathe, and afterward Knighted at her owne coſt and charge. But you muſt continue ſtill upon the Tombe (dreadleſſe of nightly apparitions and viſions) untill ſuch time as we ſend for you.

And for your better information in every particular; a Beaſt blacke and horned, but of no great ſtature, will come

come to fetch you: perhaps he will uſe ſome gaſtly noyſes, ſtrange leapes, and lofty trickes, onely to terrifie and affright you: but when he perceiveth that he cannot daunt you: he will gently come neere you. which when he hath done, you may deſcend from off the Tombe; and without naming or thinking on God, or any of his Saints, mount boldly on his backe; for he will ſtand ready to receive you. Being ſo ſeated, cloſe your armes over your breſt, without preſuming to touch or handle the Beaſt, for he will carry you thence ſoftly, and bring you along to the company. But if in all this time of your travell, you call on heaven, any Saint, or be poſſeſſed with the leaſt thought of feare: I muſt plainely tell you, that either he will caſt you dangerouſly, or throw you into ſome noiſome place. And therefore, if you know your ſelfe, not to be of a conſtant courage, and ſprightly bold, to undertake ſuch an adventure as this: never preſume any further, becauſe you may doe us a great deale of injurie, without any gaine or benefit to your ſelf, but rather ſuch wrong, as we would be very ſorry ſhould happen unto ſo deare a friend.

Alas honeſt *Buffalmaco*, anſwered the Phyſitian, thou art not halfe acquainted with me as yet: becauſe I walke with gloves upon my hands, and in a long Gowne, thou perhaps doeſt imagine me a faint hearted fellow. If thou didſt know, what I have heretofore done at *Bologna* in the night-time, when I and my Conſorts went to viſit pretty wenches, thou wouldſt wonder at my couragious attempts. As I am a Gentleman, one night we met with a young *Bona Roba*, a paltry green-ſickneſſe baggage, ſcarſely above a Cubit in height, and becauſe ſhe refuſed to goe with us willingly, I gave her a kicke on the Bum, and ſpurn'd her more than a Croſſe bow ſhoot in diſtance from me, and made her walke with us whether ſhe would, or no. Another time I remember, when having no other company but my Boy, I went through the Churchyard of the Fryers Minors, after the ſounding of *Ave Marie*: a woman had been buryed there the very ſame day, and yet I was not a jot afraid.

Wherefore, never be diſtruſtfull of me, but reſolutely build upon my courage. And in regard of my more honourable entertainment, I will then weare my Scarlet Gowne and Hood, wherein I receyved my graduation; and then doe both of you obſerve, what a rejoycing will there be amongſt the whole company, at the entertaining of ſuch a man as I am, enough to cre-

ate me Captaine immediately. You shall perceive also how the case will goe, after I have beene there but a while, in regard that the Countesse (having as yet never seene me) is so deeply enamoured of me: she cannot chuse but bestow the Bathe and Knight-hood on me, which she shall have the more honour of, in regard I am well able to maintaine it, therefore referre all the rest to me, and never misdoubt your injury or mine.

Spoken like a Gallant, replyed *Buffalmaco*, and I feare not now, but we shall winne credit by your company. But be carefull I pray you, that you make not a mockery of us, and come not at all, or faile to be there, when the Beast shall be sent for you; I speake it the rather, because it is cold weather, and you Gentlemen Physitians can hardly endure it. You are carefull of me (quoth the Doctor) and I thanke you for it, but I applaud my faire Starres. I am none of your nice or easie frozen fellowes, because cold weather is very familiar to me. I dare assure you, when I arise in the night time for that naturall office whereto all men are subject, I weare no warmer defence, than my thin wastcoat over my shirt, and finde it sufficient for the coldest weather at any time.

When *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* had taken their leave, the Physitian, so soon as night drew neere, used many apt excuses to his wife, stealing forth his Scarlet Gown, and hood unseen of any, wherewith being cloathed: at the time appointed, he got upon one of the Marble Tombes, staying there (quaking with cold) awaiting when the Beast should come. *Buffalmaco*, being a lusty tall man of person, had got an ugly masking suite, such as are made use of in Tragedies and Playes, the outside being of blacke shagged haire, wherewith being cloathed, he seemed like a strange deformed Beare, and a divels vizard over his face, with two ghastly horrible hornes: and thus disguised, *Bruno* following him, they went to behold the issue of the businesse, so farre as the new Market place, close to *Santa Maria Novella*.

Having espyed Master Doctor upon the Tombe, *Buffalmaco* in his misshapen habit, began to bound, leap, and carriere, snuffing and blowing in mad and raging manner: which when the Physitian saw, his haire stood on end, he quaked and trembled, as being more fearefull than a woman, wishing himselfe at home again in his house, rather than to behold a sight so dreadfull. But because he was come forth, and had such an earnest desire, to see the wonders related to him; he made himselfe so couragious as possibly he could, and bare

bare all out in formall manner. After that *Buffalmaco* had (an indifferent while) playd his horſe-trickes, ramping and ſtamping ſomewhat ſtrangely: ſeeming as become of much milder temper, he went neere to the Tombe whereon the Phyſitian ſtood, and there appeard to ſtay contentedly.

Maſter Doctor, trembling and quaking ſtil extreamely, was ſo far diſmayed, as he knew not what was beſt to be done, either to mount on the beaſts backe, or not to mount at all. In the end, thinking no harme could happen to him, if he were once mounted, with the ſecond feare, he expelled the former, and deſcending downe ſoftly from the Tombe, mounted on the beaſt, ſaying out aloud: *God*, Saint *Dominicke*, and my bleſſed *Angell* helpe to defend me. Seating himſelfe ſo well as he could, but trembling ſtill exceedingly he croſſed his armes over his ſtomack, according to the Leſſon given him.

Then *Buffalmaco* ſhaped his courſe in milde manner, toward *Santa Maria della Scala*, and groping to finde his way in the darke, went on ſo farre as the Siſters of *Ripole*, commonly called the *Virgin Sanctuary*. Not far off from thence, were divers trenches and ditches wherein ſuch men as are employed in neceſſary night ſervice, uſed to emptie the Counteſſe *di Cimmillari*, and afterward imployed it for manuring of Hbsbandmens grounds. *Buffalmaco* being come neere one of them, he ſtayed to breathe himſelf a while, and then catching faſt hold on one of the Doctors feet, raiſed him ſomewhat higher on his backe for the eaſier diſcharging of his burthen, and ſo pitched him (with his head forwards) into the Leyſtall.

Then began he to make a dreadfull kind of noiſe, ſtamping and trampling with his feet, paſſing backe again to *Santa Maria della Scala*, and to *Prato d'Ognifſanti*, where he met with *Bruno*, who was conſtrained to forſake him, becauſe he could not refraine from loud laughter; then both together went backe once more, to ſee how the Phyſitian would behave himſelfe, being ſo ſweetly embrued.

Maſter Doctor ſeeing himſelfe to be in ſuch an abominable ſtinking place, laboured with all his utmoſt endeavour, to get himſelfe releaſed thence: but the more he contended and ſtrove for getting forth, he plunged himſelfe the further in, being moſt pitifully myred from head to foot, ſighing and ſorrowing extraordinarily, becauſe much of the foule water entred in at his mouth. In the end, being forced to leave his hood

be-

behinde him, ſcrambling both with his hands and feet, he got landing out of his ſtinking Labyrinth, and having no other meanes, home he returned to his owne houſe, where knocking at the doore, he was at length admitted entrance. The doore being ſcarſe made faſt again after his letting in, *Buffalmaco* and *Bruno* were there arrived, liſtning how Maſter Doctor ſhould be welcomed home by his angry wife: who ſcoulding and railing at him with wonderfull impatience, gave him moſt hard and bitter ſpeeches, terming him the vileſt man living.

Where have you been Sir? quoth ſhe. Are you become a night-walker after other women? And could no worſe garments ſerve your turne, but your Doctors Gown of Scarlet? Am I to ſuffer this behaviour? Or am not I ſufficient for you, but you muſt be longing after change? I would thou hadſt been ſtifled in that foule filth, where thy fouler life did juſtly caſt thee. *Behold, goodly Maſter Doctor of the Leyſtall*; who being married to an honeſt woman, muſt yet goe abroad in the night time, inſatiately luſting after whores and harlots. With theſe and the like intemperate ſpeeches, ſhe ceaſed not to afflict and torment him, till the night was almoſt ſpent, and the Doctor brought into a ſweeter ſavour.

The next morning, *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco*, having coloured their bodies with a ſtrange kinde of painting, reſembling bliſters, ſwellings, and bruiſes, as if they had been extreamely beaten; came to the Phyſitians houſe, finding him to be newly up, all the houſe yet ſmelling of his foule ſavour (although it had been very well perfumed) and being admitted to him in the Garden, he welcomed them with the mornings ſalutations. But *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* (being otherwiſe provided for him) delivering ſtearne and angry lookes, ſtamping and chafing *Bruno* thus replyed.

Neve ſpeake ſo faire and flattering to us, for we are moved beyond all compaſſe of patience. All misfortunes in the world fall upon you, and an evill death may you die like the moſt falſe and perfidious Traitor living on the earth. We muſt beate our braines, and move all our moſt endeared friends, onely for your honour and advancement: while we were well neere ſtarved to death in the cold like Dogs, and, by your breach of promiſe, have been this night ſo extreamely beaten, as if (like Aſſes) we ſhould have been driven to *Rome*.

But that which is moſt grievous of all, is danger of exclud ng out of the Society, where we tooke good or-

der

der for your admittance, and for your moſt honourable entertainment. If you will not credit us, behold our bodies, and let your owne eyes be witneſſes, in what cruell manner we have been beaten. So taking him aſide under the Gallery, where they might not be diſcovered by over-much light, they opened their boſomes, ſhewed him their painted bodies, and ſodainely cloſed them up again.

The Phyſitian laboured to excuſe himſelfe, declaring his misfortunes at large, and into what a filthy place he was throwne. It maketh no matter (anſwered *Baſſalmaco*) I would you had been throwne from off the Bridge into *Arno*, where you might have been recommended to the Devil, and all his Saints. Did I not tell you ſo much before? In good ſadneſſe (quoth the Doctor) I neither commended my ſelfe to God, nor any of his ſaints. How? ſaid *Baſſalmaco*, I am ſure you will maintaine an untruth: you uſed a kinde of recommendation: for our meſſenger told us, that you talked of God, Saint *Dominicke*, and your good *Angell*, whom you deſired to aſſiſt you, being ſo affrighted with feare, that you trembled like a leafe upon a tree, not knowing indeed where you were. Thus have you unfaithfully dealt with us, as never any man ſhall doe the like again in ſeeking honour, and loſing it through your own negligence.

Maſter Doctor humbly entreated pardon, and that they would not revile him any more, labouring to appeaſe them by all the beſt words he could uſe, as fearing leaſt they ſhould publiſh this great diſgrace of him. And whereas (before) he gave them gracious welcomes, now he redoubled them with farre greater courteſies, feaſting them dayly at his own Table, and evermore delighting in their company. Thus (as you have heard) two poore Painters of *Florence*, taught Maſter Doctor better wit, than all he learned at *Bologna*.

A Curteſan, named Madam Biancaſiore, by her ſubtle policy deceived a young Marchant called Salabetto, of all his money he had taken for his wares at Palermo. Afterward he making ſhew of coming thither again with farre richer Merchandiſes than before: made the meanes to borrow a great ſum of money of her, leaving her ſo baſe a pawne, as well requited her for her former courteſie.

The

The tenth Novell.

Wherein appeareth, that such as meet with cunning Harlots, and suffer themselves to be deceived by them, must sharpen their wits, to make them requitall in the self-same kind.

NEedlesse it were to question, whether the Novell related by the Queene, in divers passages thereof, moved the Ladies to hearty laughter, and likewise to compassionate sighes and teares; as pitying Madam *Helena* in her hard misfortune, and yet applauding the Scholar for his just revenge. But the Discourse being ended, *Dioneus*, who knew it was his Office to be the last speaker every day, after silence was commanded, he began in this manner.

Worthy Ladies, it is a matter very manifest, that deceits doe appeare so much the more pleasing, when (by the selfe-same meanes) the subtle deceiver is deceifically deceived. In which respect, though you all have reported very singular deceipts: yet I meane to tell you one, that may prove as pleasing to you, as any of your owne. And so much the rather, because the woman deceived, was a great and cunning Mistris in beguiling others; equalling (if not excelling) any of your former beguilers.

It hath been observed heretofore, and (happily) at this very day it is as frequent, that in all Cities and Townes upon the Sea-coasts, having Ports for the benefit and venting of Merchandises, Merchants use to bring their wealthy laden Vessels thither. And when they unlade any ship of great fraught, there are prepared Store-houses, which in many places are called *Magazines* or *Doganaes*, at the charge of the Communalty, or Lord of the Towne or City, for the use whereof, they receive yearly gain and benefit. Into those ware-houses, they deliver (under writing, and to the owners of them in especiall charge) all their goods and merchandises, of what price and value soever they are.

Such as be the Owners of these *Magazines*, when the wares are thus stored up in them, doe safely lock them up there with their keyes, having first registred downe truly all the goods, in the Register belonging to the Custome-house, that the Merchant may have a just account rendred him, and the rights payd to the Custome-house, according to the Register, and as they are either in part, or in all made sale of.

Brokers are continually there attending, being informed in the quality of the *Merchandises* stored, and likewise

wise to what *Merchants* they appertain: by meanes of these men, and according as the goods come to their hands, they devise to have them exchanged, trucked, vented, and such other kinds of dispatches, answerable to the mens minds, and worth of the Commodities. As in many other Kingdomes and Countryes, so was this custome observed at *Palermo* in *Sicily*, where likewise then were, and (no doubt) now adayes are, store of women, faire and comely of person, but yet vowed enemies to honesty.

Nevertheless, by such as know them not, they are held and reputed to be blamelesse women, and by yeelding their bodies unto generall use, are the occasion of infinite misfortunes to men. For so soone as they espie a *Merchant* stranger there arrived, they win information from the Book belonging to the *Magazin*, what wares are therein stored, of what valew they be, and who is the Owner of them. Afterwards, by amorous actions, and affable speeches, they allure young *Merchants* to take knowledge of them, to be familiar in their company, till from some they get most part of their wealth, from others all. Nay, divers have gone so far, as to make Port-sale of Ship, Goods, and Person: so cunningly they have been shaven by these Barbers, and yet without any Razor.

It came to passe, and no long time since, that a young *Florentine* of ours, named *Nuccolo da Ciguano*, but more usually called *Salabetto*, imployed as Factor for his *Master*, arrived at *Palermo*; his Ship stored with many woollen Cloathes, a remainder of such as had beene sold at the *Mart* of *Salerno*, amounting in valeue to above five hundred Florines of gold. When he had given in his packet to the Custome house, and made them up safe in his warehouse; without making shew of desiring any speedy dispatch, he delighted to view all parts of the City, as mens minds are continually addicted to Novelties. He being a very faire and affable young man, easie to kindle affection in a very modest eye: it fortuned, that a Courtezan, one of our before remembered shavers, who tearmed her selfe *Madam Biancafiore*, having heard somewhat concerning his affaires, began to dart amorous glances at him. Which the indiscreet young youth perceiving, and thinking her to be some great Lady: began also to grow halfe perswaded that his comely person was pleasing to her, and therefore he would carry this good fortune of his somewhat cautiously. Without imparting his mind unto any one, he would daily pass to and fro before her doore; which

she observing, and having indifferently wounded him with her wanton piercing lookes: she began to use the first tricke of her trade, by pretending her enflamed affection towards him, which made her pine and consume away in care, except he might be moved to pitie her. Whereupon she sent one of her *Pandoraes* unto him, perfectly instructed in the Art of a *Maquerella*, who (after many counterfeited sighes and teares which she had alwayes ready at command,) told him; that his comely person and compleat perfections, had so wounded the very soule of her Mistresse, as she could enjoy no rest in any place, either by day or night. In regard whereof, she desired (above all things else) to meet with him privately in a Bathe: with which words, she straightway tooke a Ring forth of her purse, and in most humble manner, delivered it unto him, as a token from her Mistresse.

Salabetto having heard the message was the onely joyfull man that could be: and having received the Ring, looking on it advisedly; first kissed it, and then put it upon his finger. Then in answer to the messenger, he said: That if her Mistresse *Biancafiore* affected him, she sustained no losse thereby, in regard he loved her as fervently, and was ready to be commanded by her, at any time whensoever she pleased, with his best services.

She having delivered the message of her mistresse, was presently (with all speed) returned backe again to him, to let him understand, in which of the Bathes she meant to meet him, on the next morrow in the evening. This being counsell for himselfe onely to keep, he imparted it not to any friend whatsoever; but when the houre appointed for their private meeting was come, he went into the place where he was appointed, a Bathe belike best agreeing with such kind of businesse.

Not long had he tarryed there, but two women slaves came laden to him, the one bearing a *Matteresse* of fine Fustian on her head, and the other a great Basket filled with many things. Having spread the *Matteresse* in a faire Chamber on a Couch bed, they covered it with delicate white Linnen sheets, all about embroidred with faire Fringes of gold; then laid they on costly quilts of fine and rich Silkes, artificially wrought with gold and silver knots, having pearles and precious stones interwoven among them, and two such rich Pillowes, as seldome before the like had been seen.

Salabetto putting off his garments, entred the Bathe prepared for him, where the two Slaves washed his body

body very neately. Soone after came *Biancafiore* her ſelfe, attended on by two other women ſlaves, and ſeeing *Salabetto* in the Bathe; making him a lowly reverence, breathing forth infinite diſſembling ſighes and grievous groanes, the teares trickleing down her cheeks emaine, kiſſing and embracing him thus ſhe ſpake.

I know not what man in the world, beſide thy ſelfe, could have the power to bring me hither: the fire flew from thy faire eyes (O thou incomparable lovely *Tuſcane*) that melted my ſoul, and makes me onely live at thy command. Then hurling off her light wearing garments (becauſe ſhe came prepared for the purpoſe) ſhe ſtept into the Bathe to him, and, not permitting the Slaves a while to come neere, none but her ſelfe muſt now lave his body, with Muske compounded Sope and Gilly flowers. Afterward, the ſlaves waſhed both him and her, bringing two goodly ſheets, ſoft, and white, yeelding ſuch a delicate ſmell of Roſes, even as if they had been made of Roſe-leaves. In the one they folded *Salabetto*, and her in the other, and ſo preſently conveighed them on their ſhoulders unto the prepared Bed Couch, where, becauſe they ſhould not ſweat any longer, they tooke the ſheets from about them, and circumſpectly laid them both together gently in the bed.

Then they opened the Basket, wherein were divers goodly Silken bottles, ſome filled with Roſewaters, others with flowers of Oranges, and waters diſtilled of Gelſomnie, Muske, and Amber-greece, wherewith (again) the ſlaves bathed their bodies in the bed, and afterward preſented them with variety of Comfits, as alſo very precious Wines, ſerving them in ſtead of a little Collation. *Salabetto* ſuppoſed himſelfe to be in Paradiſe: for this appeared to be no earthly joy, beſtowing a thouſand gladſome gazes on her, who (queſtionleſſe) was a moſt beautifull creature, and the carrying of the ſlaves, ſeemed millions of yeares to him, that he might more freely embrace his *Biancafiore*. Leaving a waxe Taper lighted in the Chamber, the ſlaves departed, and then ſhe ſweetly embracing *Salabetto* beſtowed thoſe favours on him, and was not ſquemiſh in affording; whereof he was exceeding joyfull, becauſe he imagined that they proceeded from the integrity of her affection towards him.

When ſhe thought it convenient time to depart thence, the ſlaves returned; they cloathed themſelves, and had a Banquet ſtanding ready prepared for them;

them; wherewith they cheered their wearied ſpirits, after they had firſt waſhed in odoriferous waters. At parting: *Salabetto* (quoth ſhe) whenſoever thy leaſure ſhall beſt ſerve thee, I will repute it as my chiefeſt happineſſe, that thou wilt accept a Supper and Lodging in my houſe, which let it be this inſtant night, if thou canſt. He being abſolutely caught, both by her beauty and flattering behaviour: beleeved faithfully, that he was as intirely beloved of her, as the heart is of the body: whereupon he thus anſwered. Madam, whatſoever pleaſeth you, muſt needs be much more acceptable unto me: and therefore, not onely may command my ſervice this night, but likewiſe the whole employment of my life, to be only yours in my very beſt ſtudies and endeavours.

No ſooner did ſhe heare this anſwer, but ſhe returned home to her owne houſe, which ſhe decked in moſt ſumptuous manner, and alſo made ready a coſtly Supper, expecting the arrivall of *Salabetto*: who when the darke night was indifferently well entred, went thither, and was welcomed with wonderfull kindneſſe, wanting no coſtly Wines and Delicates all the Supper while. Being afterward conducted into a goodly Chamber, he ſmelt there admirable ſweet ſenting ſavours, ſuch as might well beſeeme a Princes Palace. He beheld a moſt coſtly bed, and very rich furniture round about the roome: which when he had conſidered to himſelfe, he was conſtantly perſwaded, that ſhe was a Lady of infinite wealth; And although he had heard divers flying tales and reports concerning her life; yet he would not credit any thing amiſſe of her, for albeit ſhe might (perhaps) beguile ſome other; yet ſhe affected him (he thought) in better manner, and no ſuch misfortune could happen him.

Having ſpent all the night with her in wanton dalliances, and being riſen in the morning; to enflame his affection more and more towards her, and to prevent any ill opinion he might conceive of her, ſhe beſtowed a rich and coſtly Girdle on him, as alſo a purſe moſt curiouſly wrought, ſaying to him. My ſweet *Salabetto*, with theſe teſtimonies of my true affection to thee, I give thee faithfully to underſtand, that as my perſon is only ſubjected thine; ſo this houſe and all the riches in it, remaineth abſolutely at thy diſpoſition, or whatſoever hereafter ſhall happen within the compaſſe of my power.

He being not a little proud of this her bountifull offer (having never beſtowed any gift on her, becauſe by no

no meanes ſhe would admit it) after many ſweet kiſſes and embraces; departed thence, to the place where the Merchants uſually frequented: reſorting to her (from time to time) as occaſion ſerved, and paying not one ſingle peny for all his wanton pleaſure, by which cunning baytes (at length) ſhe caught him.

It came to paſſe, that having made ſale of all his Cloathes, whereby he had great gains, and the moneys juſtly payed him at the the juſt times appointed: *Biancafiore* got intelligence thereof: yet not by him, but from one of the Brokers. *Salabetto* coming one night to ſup with her, ſhe embraced and kiſſed him as ſhe was wont to do, and ſeeming ſo wonderfully addicted in love to him, even as if ſhe would have dyed with delight in his armes. Inſtantly, ſhe would needs beſtow two goodly gilt ſtanding Cups on him, which *Salabetto* by no meanes would receive, becauſe ſhe had formerly been very bountifull to him, to above the value of an hundred Crowns, and yet ſhe would not take of him ſo much as a mite. At length, preſſing ſtill more tokens of her love and bounty on him, which he as courteouſly denyed, as ſhe kindly offered: one of her Women-ſlaves (as ſhe had before cunningly appointed) ſodainly calling her, forthwith ſhe departed out of the Chamber. And when ſhe had continued a pretty while abſent, ſhe returned again weeping, and throwing her ſelfe down upon her pallet, breathed forth ſuch ſighes and woful lamentations, as no Woman could poſſibly do the like.

Salabetto amazedly wondering thereat, took her in his Armes, and weeping alſo with her, ſaid. Alas my dear Love, what ſodain accident hath befalne you, to urge this lamentable alteration? If you love me, hide it not from me. After he had often entreated her in this manner, caſting her armes about his necke, and ſighing as if her heart would breake, thus ſhe replyed.

Ah *Salabetto*, the only Jewell of my joy on earth, I know not what to doe, or ſay, for (even now) I received Letters from *Meſſina*, wherein my Brother writes to me, that although it coſt the ſale of all my goods, or whatſoever els I have beſide, I muſt (within eight dayes ſpace) not faile to ſend him a thouſand Florines of gold, or elſe he muſt have his head ſmitten off, and I know not by what meanes to procure them ſo ſoon. For, if the limitation of fifteen dayes might ſerve the turne, I could borrow them in a place, where I can command a farre greater ſum, or elſe I would ſell ſome part of our Lands. But being no way able to furniſh him ſo ſoon, I would I had dyed before I heard theſe diſmall tydings.

And

And in uttering these words, she graced them with such cunning dissembled sorrow, as if she had meant truly indeed.

Salabetto, in whom the fury of his amorous flames, had consumed a great part of his necessary understanding, beleeving these counterfeited teares and complaints of hers, to proceed from an honest meaning soule; rashly and foolishly thus replyed. Dear *Biancafiore*, I cannot furnish you with a thousand golden Florines, but am able to lend you five hundred, if I were sure of their repayment at fifteen dayes, wherein you are highly beholding to Fortune, that I have made sale of all my Cloathes: which if they had lyen still on my hand, my power could not stretch to lend you five Florines. Alas deare heart (quoth she) would you be in such want of money, and hide it from her that loves you so loyally? Why did you not make your need known to me? Although I am not furnished of a thousand Florines, yet I have alwayes ready three or foure hundred by me, to do any kinde office for my friend. In thus wronging me, you have robbed me of all boldnesse, to presume upon your offer made me. *Salabetto*, farre faster inveigled by these words then before, said, Let not my folly (bright *Biancafiore*) cause you to refuse my friendly offer, in such a case of extreame necessity; I have them ready prepared for you, and am heartily sorry, that my power cannot furnish you with the whole sum.

Then catching him fast in her armes, thus she answered. Now I plainly perceive, my deareſt *Salabetto*, that the love thou beareſt me is true and perfect; when without expectation of being requested, thou art ready to succour me in such an urgent need, and with so faire a sum of Florines. Sufficiently was I thine owne before, but now am much more engaged by so high deservings; with this particular acknowledgement for ever that my Brothers head was redeemed by thy goodnesse onely. Heaven beareth me record, how unwilling I am to be beholding in this kind, considering that you are a Merchant, and Merchants furnish all their affaires with ready mony: but seeing necessity constraineth me, and I make no doubt of repayment at the time appointed: I shall the more boldly accept your kindnesse, with this absolute promise beside, that I will rather sell all the houses I have then breake my honest word with you.

Counterfeit teares still drayning down her cheeks, and *Salabetto* kindly comforting her; she continued there with her all that night, to expresse himself her most liberall

liberall servant. And, without expecting any more reasking, the next morning he brought her the five hundred Florines, which she received with a laughing heart, but outward dissembled weeping eyes; *Salabetto* never demanding any other security, but only her single promise.

Biancafiore, having thus received the five hundred Florines, the indiction of the Almanack began to alter: and whereas (before) *Salabetto* could come see her whensoever he pleased, many occasions now happened, whereby he came seven times for once, and yet his entrance was scarsely admitted, neither was his entertainment so affable, or his cheare so bountifull, as in his former accesses thither. Moreover when the time of repaymente was come, yea a moneth or two over past, and he demanded to have his money; he could have nothing but words for payment. Now he began to consider on the craft and cunning of this wicked woman, as also his own shallow understanding, knowing he could make no proofe of his debt, but what her selfe listed to say, having no witnesse, specialty, bill or bond to shew, which made his folly so shamefull to him, that he durst not complaine to any person, because he had received some advertisements before, whereto he would by no means listen, and now should have no other amends, but publick infamy, scorne and disgrace, which made him almost weary of his life, and much to bemoane his owne unhappinesse. He received also divers Letters from his Master, to make returne of the 500 Florins over by way of banke, according as he had used to do, but now could performe no such matter.

Hereupon, because his error should not be discovered, he departed in a small vessell thence, not making for *Pisa*, as he should have done, but directly for *Naples* he shaped his course. At that instant lodged there, *Don Pietro della Conigiano*, Treasurer of the Empresse of *Constantinople*, a man of great wisedome and understanding, as also very ingenious and politick he being an especial Favourer of *Salabetto* and all his friends, which made him presume the more boldly (being urged thereto by meere necessity, the best corrector of wandring wits) to acquaint him with his lamentable misfortune, in every particular as it had happened, requesting his ayd, and advice, how he might best weare out the rest of his dayes, because he never meant to visit *Florence* any more.

Conigiano being much displeased at the repetition of his folly, sharpely reproved him, saying. Thou hast done lewdly,

lewdly, in carrying thy selfe so loosely, and spending thy Masters goods so carelesly; which though I cannot truely tearme spent, but rather art meerely cousened and cheated of them, yet thou seest at what a dear rate thou hast purchased pleasure, which yet is not utterly helplesse, but may by one meanes or other be recovered. And being a man of wonderfull apprehension, advised him instantly what was to be done, furnishing him also with a summe of money, wherewith to adventure a second losse, in hope of recovering the first again: he caused divers Packes to be well bound up, with the Merchants markes orderly made on them, and bought about twenty Buts or barrels, all filled (as it were) with Oyle; and these pretended commodities being shipt, *Salabetto* returned with them to *Palermo*. Where having given in his packes to the Custome-house, and entred them all under his own name, as being both owner and factor; all his Wares were lockt up in his *Magazine* with open publication, that he would not vent any of them, before other merchandises (which he dayly expected) were there also arrived.

Bianca fiore having heard thereof, and understanding withall, that he had brought Merchandises now with him, amounting to above two thousand Florines, staying also in expectation of other commodities, valueing better than three thousand more, she began to consider with her selfe, that she had not yet gotten money enough from him, and therefore would cast a figure for a far bigger booty. Which that she might the better effect, without so much as an imagination of the least mistrust: she would repay him backe his five hundred Florines, to win from him a larger portion of two or three thousand at the least, and having thus setled her determination, she sent to have him come speake with her. *Salabetto* having been soundly bitten before, and therefore the better warranted from the like rankling teeth, willingly went to her, not shewing any signe of former discontent; and she, seeming as if she knew nothing of the wealth he brought with him, gracing him in as loving manner as ever she had done, thus she spake.

I am sure *Salabetto* you are angry with me, because I restored not your Florines at my promised day. *Salabetto* smiling, presently answered. Beleeve me Lady, (quoth he) it did a little distaste me, even as I could have been offended with him, that should plucke out my heart and bestow it on you, if it would yeeld you any contentment. But to let you know unfaignedly, how

how much I am incenſed with anger againſt you: ſuch and ſo great is the affection I beare you, that I have ſold the better part of my whole eſtate, converting the ſame into Wealthy Merchandizes, which I have already brought hither with me, and valueing above two thouſand Florines, all which are ſtored up in my *Magazine*. There muſt they remaine, till another Ship come forth of the Weſterne parts, wherein I have a much greater adventure, amounting unto more than three thouſand Florines. And my purpoſe is, to make my aboade here in this City, which hath wonne the ſole poſſeſſion of my heart, only in regard of my *Biancafiore*, to whom I am ſo intirely devoted, as both my ſelfe, and whatſoever elſe is mine (now or hereafter) is dedicated only to her ſervice; whereto thus ſhe replyed.

Now truſt me *Salabetto*, whatſoever redoundeth to thy good and benefit, is the chiefeſt comfort of my ſoule in regard I prize thy love dearer than mine owne life, and am moſt joyfull of thy returne hither again; but much more of thy ſtill abiding here, becauſe I intend to live onely with thee, ſo ſoon as I have taken order for ſome buſineſſe of import. In the mean while, let me entreat thee to hold me excuſed, becauſe, before thy departure hence, thou cameſt ſometimes to ſee me, without thy entrance admitted; and other whiles again, found not ſuch friendly entertainment, as formerly had been afforded. But indeed and above all the reſt, in not repaying the money according to my promiſe. But conſider my ſweet *Salabetto*, in what great trouble and affliction of mind I then was in, both in regard of my Brothers danger, and other important occurrences beſide, which moleſtations doe much diſtract the ſenſes, and hinder kind courteſies, which otherwiſe would be extended liberally.

Laſt of all conſider alſo, how difficult a thing it is for a woman ſo ſodainly to raiſe the ſum of a thouſand golden Florines when one friend promiſeth, and performeth not; another proteſteth, yet hath no ſuch meaning; a third ſweareth, and yet proveth a falſe Lyer: ſo that by being thus ungently uſed a breach is made between the beſt friends living. From hence it proceeded, and no other defect elſe, that I made not due returne of your five hundred Florines. No ſooner were you departed hence, but I had them ready, and as many more, and could I have knowne whither to ſend them, they had bin with you long time ſince, which becauſe I could not (by any meanes) compaſſe, I kept them ſtil for

you

you in continuall readineſſe, as hoping of your coming again. So cauſing a purſe to be brought, wherein the ſame Florines were, which he had delivered her; ſhe gave it into his hand, and prayed him to count them over, whether there were ſo many, or no.

Never was *Salabettoes* heart halfe ſo joyfull before; and having counted them, found them to be his owne five hundred Florines: then, putting them up into his pocket, he ſaid. Comfort of my life, Full well I know that whatſoever you have ſaid, is moſt certaine: but let us talke no more of falſhhood in friendſhip, or caſual accidents happening unexpected: you have dealt with me like a moſt loyal Miſtreſs, and here I proteſt unfeignedly to you, that as well in reſpect of this kind courteſie, as alſo the conſtancy of mine affection to you, you cannot requeſt hereafter a farr greater ſum of me, to ſupply any neceſſary occaſion of yours; but (if my power can performe it) you ſhall aſſuredly find it certain: make proofe thereof whenſoever you pleaſe, after my other goods are Landed, and I have eſtabliſhed my eſtate here in your City.

Having in this manner renewed his wonted amity with her, and with words far enough off from all further meaning, *Salabetto* began again to frequent her company. ſhe expreſſing all former familiarity, and ſhewing her ſelfe as laviſhly bountifull to him, in all reſpects as before ſhe had done, nay many times in more magnificent manner.

But he intending to puniſh her notorious treachery towards him, when ſhe left him as an open ſcorne to the world, wounded with diſgrace, and quite out of credit with all his friends: ſhe having (on a day) ſolemnly invited him to ſup and lodge in her houſe all night; he went, both with ſad and melancholly lookes, ſeeming as overcome with extremity of ſorrow. *Biancafiore* mervayling at this ſtrange alteration in him, ſweetly kiſſing and embracing him: would needs know the reaſon of his paſſionate affliction, and he permitting her to urge the queſtion oftentimes together, without returning any direct anſwer; to quit her in her kind, and with coyne of her own ſtamp, after a few diſſembled ſighes, he began in this manner.

Ah my deareſt Love, I am utterly undone, becauſe the Ship containing the reſt of mine expected Merchandiſes, is taken by the Pirates of *Monaco*, and put to the ranſome of ten thouſand Florins of Gold, and my part particularly, is to pay one thouſand. At this inſtant I am utterly deſtitute of money, becauſe the five hundred Florines

rines which I received of you, I sent hence the next day following to *Naples*, to buy more cloathes, which likewise are to be sent hither. And if I should now make sale of the Merchandises in my Magazine (the time of generall utterance being not yet come) I shall not make a penyworth for a penny. And my misfortune is the greater, because I am not so wel known here in your City, as to find some succour in such an important distress; wherefore I know not what to doe or say. Moreover, if the money be not speedily sent, our goods will be carryed into *Monago*, and then they are past all redemption utterly.

Biancafiore appearing greatly discontented, as one verily perswaded, that this pretended losse was rather hers then his, because she aymed at the maineſt part of all his wealth: began to consider with her selfe, which was the likelieſt course to be taken, for saving the goods from carriage to *Monago*: whereupon thus she replyed, Heaven knoweth (my deareſt *Salabetto*) how thy love maketh me sorrowfull for this misfortune, and it grieveth me to see thee any way distressed: for if I had mony lying by me (as many times I have) thou shouldeſt find succour from my selfe onely, but indeed I am not able to helpe thee. True it is, there is a friend of mine, who did lend me five hundred Florines in my need, to make up the other sum which I borrowed of thee: but he demandeth extreame interest, because he will not abate any thing of thirty in the hundred, and if you should be forced to use him, you muſt give him some good security. Now for my part, the moſt of my goods here I will pawne for thee; but what pledge can you deliver in to make up the reſt? Well did *Salabetto* conceive the occasion why she urged this motion, and was so diligent in doing him such a pleasure: for it appeared evidently to him, that her self was to lend the money, whereof he was not a little joyfull, seeming very thankful to her. Then he told her, that being driven to such extremity, how unreasonable soever the usury was, yet he would pay for it. And for her friends further security, he would pawne him all the goods in his *Magazine*, entering them down in the name of the party, who lent the money. Onely he desired to keep the Keyes of the Warehouse, as well to shew his *Merchandises*, when any *Merchant* should be so desirous: as also to preserve them from ill using, transporting or changing, before his redemption of them.

She found no fault with his honeſt offer, but said, he shewed himselfe a well meaning man, and the next

morning she sent for a Broker in whom she reposed especiall trust; and after they had privately consulted together, she delivered him a thousand Golden Florins, which were carryed to *Salabetto*, and the Bond made in the Brokers name, of all the goods remaining in *Salabettoes* Ware-house, with composition and absolute agreement, for the prefixed time of the moneys repayment. No sooner was this tricke fully accomplished, but *Salabetto* seeming as if he went to redeeme his taken goods: set saile to *Naples* towards *Pietro della Conigiano*, with fifteen hundred Florines of Gold; from whence also he sent contentment to his Master at *Florence* (who employed him as his Factor at *Palermo*) beside his own packes of Cloathes. He made repayment likewise to *Conigiano*, for the moneys which furnished him in this last voyage, and any other to whom he was indebted. So there he stayed a while with *Conigiano*, whose counsell thus holpe him to out-reach the *Sicilian* Courtezane: and meaning to deale in Merchandise no more, afterward he returned to *Florence*, and there lived in good reputation.

Now as concerning *Biancafiore*, when she saw that *Salabetto* returned not again to *Palermo*, she began to grow somewhat abashed, as halfe suspecting that which followed. After she had tarryed for him above two moneths space, and perceiving he came not, nor any tydings heard of him; she caused the Broker to break open the Magazine, casting forth the Buttes or Barrels, which she beleeved to be full of good Oyles. But they were filled with Sea-water, each of them having a small quantity of Oyle floating on the toppe, onely to serve when a tryall should be made. And then unbinding the Packes, made up in formall and Merchantable manner: there was nothing else in them, but Logs and stumps of Trees, wrapt handsomely in hurdles of Hemp and Tow; onely two had Cloathes in them. So that (to be briefe) the whole did not value two hundred Crowns: which when she saw and observed, how cunningly she was deceived: a long while after she sorrowed, for repaying backe the five hundred Florines, and folly in lending a thousand more; using it as a Proverb alwayes after to her selfe: That whosoever dealt with a *Tuscane*, had need to have sound sight and judgement. So remaining contented (whether she would or no) with her losse: she plainly perceived, that although she lived by cheating others, yet now at the length she had met with her match.

So

So soone as *Dioneus* had ended his Novell, Madam *Lauretta* also knew, that the conclusion of her Regiment was come; whereupon, when the counsell of *Covigiano* had past with generall commendation; and the wit of *Salabetto* no lesse applauded, for fitting it with such an effectual prosecution; she tooke the Crown of Lurell from her owne head, and set it upon Madam *Emilia's*, speaking graciously in this manner. Madam, I am not able to say, what a Queen we shal have of you, but sure I am, that we shall enjoy a faire one: let matters therefore be so carryed, that your government may be answerable to your beautifull perfections; which words were no sooner delivered, but she sate down in her mounted seat.

Madam *Emilia* being somewhat bashful, not so much of her being created Queene, as to heare her self thus publickly praysed, with that which Women doe most of all desire: her face then appearing, like the opening of the Damaske Rose, in the goodlyest morning. But after she had a while dejected her lookes, and the Vermillion blush was vanished away: having taken order with the Master of the household, for all needfull occasions befitting the assembly, thus she began.

Gracious Ladies, we behold it dayly, that those Oxen which have laboured in the yoake most part of the day, for their more convenient feeding, are let forth at liberty, and permitted to wander abroad in the Woods. We see moreover, that Gardens and Orchards, being planted with variety of the faireſt fruit Trees, are equalled in beauty by Woods and Forrests, in the plentifull enjoying of as goodly spreading branches. In consideration whereof, remembring how many dayes we have already spent (under the severity of Lawes imposed) shaping all our discourses to a forme of observation: I am of opinion, that it will not onely well become us, but also prove beneficiall for us, to live no longer under such restraint, and like enthralled people, desirous of liberty we should no more be subjected to the yoke, but recover our former strength in walking freely.

Wherefore, concerning our pastime purposed for to morrow, I am not minded to use any restriction, or tye you unto any particular ordination: but rather do liberally grant, that every one shall devise and speake of arguments agreeing with your own dispositions.

Besides, I am verily perswaded, that variety of matter uttered so freely, will be much more delightfull, than restraint to one kind of purpose onely. Which being

thus granted by me, whosoever shall succeed me in the government, may (as being of more power and preheminence) restraine all backe again to the accustomed Lawes. And having thus spoken, she dispensed with their any longer attendance, untill it should be Supper time.

Every one commended the Queens appointment, allowing it to relish of good wit and judgement: and being all risen fell to such exercises as they pleased. The Ladies made Nosegayes and Chaplets of Flowers, the men played on their instruments, singing divers sweet Ditties to them, and thus were busied untill Supper time. Which being come, and they Supping about the beautifull Fountaine, after Supper they fell to singing and dancing. In the end, the Queen, to imitate the order of her predecessors, commanded *Pamphilus*, that notwithstanding all the excellent Songs formerly sung, he should now sing one, whereunto dutifully obeying, thus he began.

The Song.

The Chorus sung by all.

Love, I found such felicity,
And joy in thy captivity:
As I before did never prove,
And thought me happy, being in Love.

Comfort abounding in my heart,
Joy and Delight,
In soule and spright,
I did possesse in every part,
O Soveraigne Love by thee,
Thy Sacred fires,
Fed my desires,
And still aspires
Thy happy thrall to be.
Love I found such felicity, &c.

My Song wants power to relate.
The sweets of mind,
Which I did find
In that most blissefull state,
O Soveraign Love by thee.

No

No ſad deſpaire,
Or killing care,
Could me prepare;
Still thou didſt comfort me.
Love I found ſuch felicity, &c.
I hate all ſuch as doe complain,
Blaſpheming thee
With Cruelty,
And ſleights of coy diſdaine.
O Soveraigne Love, to me
Thou haſt been kind:
If others find
Thee worſe inclin'd,
Yet I will honour thee.
Love I found ſuch felicity,
And joy in thy Captivity, &c.

Thus the Song of *Pamphilus* ended, whereto all the reſt (as a Chorus) anſwered with their Voyces, yet every one particularly (according as they felt their love-ſicke paſſions) made a curious conſtruction thereof perhaps more then they needed, yet not divining what *Pamphilus* intended. And although they were tranſported with variety of imaginations: yet none of them could arrive at his true meaning indeed. Wherefore the Queen perceiving the Song to be fully ended, as alſo the young Gentlemen, willing to go take their reſt: ſhe commanded them ſeverally to their Chambers.

THE NINTH DAY.

Wherein, under the Government of Madam Æmilia, the Argument of each ſeverall Diſcourſe, is not limited to any one peculiar ſubject; but every one remaineth at liberty, to ſpeake of whatſoever themſelves beſt pleaſeth.

The Induction.

FAire *Aurora*, from whoſe bright and cheerefull lookes, the dusky darke night flyeth as an utter enemy, had already reached ſo high as the eighth Heaven, converting it all into an Azure colour, and the pretty Flowrets began to ſpread open their Leaves.

when *Madam Æmilia*, being risen, caused all her female attendants, and the young Gentlemen likewise, to be summoned for their personall appearance. Who being all come, the Queene leading the way, and they following her *Majestick* pace, walked into a little Wood, not far off distant from the place.

No sooner were they there arrived, but they beheld store of wilde beasts, as Hindes, Hares, Goats, and such like; so safely secured from the pursuit of Huntsmen, (by reason of the violent Pestilence then reigning) that they stood gazing boldly at them, as dreadlesse of any danger, or as if they were become tame and Domestick.

Approaching neerer them, first to one, then unto another, as if they purposed to play gently with them, they then began to skip and run, making them such pastime with their pretty tripping, that they conceived great delight in beholding of them.

But when they beheld the Sun to exalt it selfe, it was thought convenient to returne backe again, shrouding themselves under the Trees spreading arms, their hands full of sweet Flowers and odoriferous Hearbs, which they had gathered in their walking. So that such as chanced to meet them could say nothing else: but that death knew not by what meanes to conquer them, or else they had set down an absolute determination, to kill him with their joviall disposition.

In this manner, singing, dancing, or prettily prating, at length they arrived at the Palace, where they found all things readily prepared, and their Servants duly attending for them. After they had reposed themselves a while, they would not (as yet) sit downe at the Table, untill they had sung halfe a dozen of Canzonets, some more pleasant than another, both the women and men together.

Then they fell to washing hands, and the *Master* of the Houshold caused them to sit down, according as the Queen had appointed, and Dinner was most sumptuously served in before them. Afterward, when the Tables were with-drawn, they all took hands to dance a Roundelay; which being done, they played on their Instruments a while; and then such as so pleased took their rest. But when the accustomed houre was come, they all repaired to the place of discoursing, where the Queen, looking on *Madam Philomena*, gave her the honour of beginning the first Novell for that day: whereto she dutifully condescending, began as followeth.

Madam

Madam Franceſca, a Widow of Piſtoya, being affected by two Florentine Gentlemen, the one named Rinuccio Palermini, and the other Aleſſandro Chiarmonteſi, and ſhe bearing no good will to either of them, ingeniouſly freed her ſelfe from both their importunate ſuites. One of them ſhe cauſed to lye as dead in a grave, and the other to fetch him from thence: ſo neither of them accompliſhing what they were enjoyned, failed of their expectation.

The Firſt Novell.

Approving, that chaſte and honeſt Women ought rather to deny importunate ſuiters by ſubtile and ingenious meanes, than fall into the danger of ſcandal and ſlander.

MAdam it can no way diſcontent me (ſeeing it is your moſt gracious pleaſure) that I ſhould have the honour, to breake the firſt ſtaffe of freedome in this faire company (according to the injunction of your *Majeſty*) for liberty of our owne beſt liking Arguments; wherein I diſmay not (if I can ſpeake well enough) but to pleaſe you all as well, as any other that is to follow me. Nor am I ſo oblivious (worthy Ladies) but full well I remember, that many times hath been related in our paſſed demonſtrations, how mighty and variable the powers of love are: and yet I cannot be perſwaded, that they have all been ſo ſufficiently ſpoken of, but ſomething may be added, and the bottome of them never dived into, although we ſhould ſit arguing a whole yeare together. And becauſe it hath been already approved, that lovers have been led into divers accidents, not only inevitable dangers of death, but alſo have entred into the very houſes of the dead, thence to conveigh their amorous friends: I purpoſe to acquaint you with a Novell, beſide them which have been diſcourſed; whereby you may not onely comprehend the power of Love, but alſo the wiſdome uſed by an honeſt Gentlewoman, to rid her ſelfe of two importunate ſuiters, who loved her againſt her own liking, yet neither of them knowing the others intent or affection.



In the City of *Pißoya*, there dwelt ſometimes a beautifull Gentlewoman, being a Widow, whom two of our *Florentines* (the one named *Rinuccio Palermini*, and the other *Aleſſandro Chiarmonteſi*, having withdrawne themſelves to *Piſtoya*) deſperately affected, the one ignorant of the others intention, but each carryed his caſe cloſely, as hoping to be poſſeſſed of her. This Gentlewoman, named *Madam Franceſca da Laſſari*, being often ſolicited by their meſſages, and troubleſomely peſtered with their importunities: at laſt (leſſe adviſedly then ſhe intended) ſhe granted admittance to heare either of them ſpeake. Which ſhe repenting, and covetting to be rid of them both, a matter not eaſie to be done: ſhe wittily deviſed the onely meanes, namely, to

move

move such a motion to them, as neither would willingly undertake, yet within the compasse of possibility; but they failing in the performance, she might have the more honest occasion to be free from all further molestation by them, and her politick intention was thus projected.

On the same day when she devised this piece of service, a man was buryed in *Pistoya*, and in the Church-yard belonging unto the gray Fryers, who being descended of good and worthy parentage: yet himself was very infamous, and reputed to be the vilest man living, not onely there in *Pystoya*, but throughout the whole World beside. Moreover, while he lived, he had such a strange mishapen body, and his face so ugly deformed, that such as knew him not, would stand gastly affrighted at the first sight of him. In regard whereof, she considered with her selfe, that the foule deformity of this loathed fellow would greatly availe in her determination, and consulting with her Chamber-mayd, thus she spake.

Thou knowest (my most true and faithfull servant) what trouble and affliction of minde I suffer dayly, by the messages and Letters of the two *Fiorentines Ranuccio*, and *Alessandro*, how hatefull their importunity is to me, as being utterly unwilling to heare them speake, or yeeld to any thing which they desire. Wherefore, to free my self from them both together, I have devised (in regard of their liberall offers) to make triall of them in such a matter as I am sure they will never performe.

It is not unknowne to thee, that in the Church-yard of the Gray Fryers, and this instant morning, *Scannadio* (for so was the ugly fellow named) was buried; of whom when he was living, as also now being dead, both men, women and children, doe yet stand in feare, so gastly and dreadfull alwayes was his personall appearance to them. Wherefore first of all goe thou to *Alessandro* and say to him thus. *My Mistresse Francesca* hath sent me to you, to tell you, that now the time is come, wherein you may deserve to enjoy her love, and gain the possession of her person, if you will accomplish such a motion as she maketh to you. For some especiall occasion, wherewith hereafter you shall be better acquainted, a neere Kinsman of hers must needs have the body of *Scannadio* (who was buryed this morning) brought to her house. And she, being as much afraid of him now he being dead, as when he was living, by no means would have his body brought hither.

In which respect, as a Token of your unfeigned love to her, and the lateſt ſervice you ſhall ever do for her: ſhe earneſtly entreateth you, that this night, in the very dead deſt time thereof, you would go to the grave, where *Scannadio* lyeth yet uncovered with earth untill to morrow, and attyring your ſelfe in his garments, even as if you were the man himſelfe, ſo to remaine there untill her kinſman do come.

Then, without ſpeaking any one word, let him take you forth of the grave, and bring you thence (inſtead of *Scannadio*) to her houſe: where ſhe will give you gentle welcome, and diſappoint her Kinſman in his hope, by making you Lord of her, and all that is hers, as afterward ſhall plainly appear. If he ſay he will do it, it is as much as I deſire: but if he trifle and make denyall, then boldly tell him, that he muſt refraine all places whereſoever I am, and forbeare to ſend me any more Letters, or meſſages.

Having done ſo, then repaire to *Rinuccio Palermini*, and ſay, My Miſtris *Franceſca* is ready to make acceptance of your love; provided, that you will do one thing for her ſake. Namely, this enſuing night, in the midſt and ſtilleſt ſeaſon thereof, to goe to the grave where *Scannadio* was this morning buryed, and (without making any noyſe) or ſpeaking one word, whatſoever you ſhall heare or ſee: to take him forth of the grave, and bring him home to her houſe, where you ſhall know the reaſon of this ſtrange buſineſſe, and enjoy her freely as your own for ever. But if he refuſe to do it, then I command him never hereafter to ſee me, or move further ſuite unto me, by any meanes whatſoever.

The Chamber-mayd went to them both, and delivered the ſeverall meſſages from her Miſtreſſe, according as ſhe had given her in charge; whereunto each of them anſwered, that they would (for her ſake) not only deſcend into a Grave, but alſo into hell, if it were her pleaſure.

She returning with this anſwer unto her Miſtreſſe, *Franceſca* remained in expectation, what the iſſue of thoſe fond attempts in them would ſort unto. When night was come, and the middle houre thereof already paſt, *Aleſſandro Chiarmonteſi*, having put off all other garments to his doublet and hoſe; departed ſecretly from his lodging, walking towards the Church-yard, where *Scannadio* lay in his grave: but by the way as he went he became ſurprized with divers dreadfull conceits and imaginations, and queſtioned with himſelf thus,

What

What a beast am I? What a businesse have I undertaken? and whither am I going? What doe I know, but that the Kinsman unto this woman, perhaps understanding mine affection to her, and crediting some such matter, as is nothing so: hath laid this politicke train for me, that he may murther me in the grave; which (if it should so happen) my life is lost, and yet the occasion never knowne whereby it was done. Or what know I, whether some secret enemy of mine (affecting her in the manner, as I do) have devised this stratagem (out of malice) against me, to draw my life in danger, and further his own good fortune? Then contrary motions oversswaying these suspicions, he questioned his thoughts in another nature.

Let me (quoth he) admit the case; that none of these surmises are intended, but her Kinsman (by and in this manner devised) must bring me into her house: I am not therefore perswaded, that he or they doe covet, to have the body of *Scannadio*, either to carry it thither, or present it to her, but rather doe aime at some other end. May not I conjecture, that my close muthering is purposed, and this way acted, as on him that (in his life time) had offended them? The maid hath straitly charged me, that whatsoever is said or done unto me, I am not to speake a word. What if they pull out mine eyes, teare out my teeth, cut off my hands, or doe me any other mischief: Where am I then? Shall all these extremities barre me of speaking? On the other side, if I speake, then I shall be known, and so much the sooner (perhaps) be abused. But admit that I sustain no injury at all, as being guilty of no transgression: yet (perchance) I shall not be carryed to her house, but to some other baser place, and afterward she shall reprove me, that I did not accomplish what she commanded, and so all my labour is utterly lost.

Perplexed with these various contradicting opinions he was willing divers times to turne home backe again: yet such was the violence of his love, and the power thereof prevailing against all sinister arguments; as he went to the grave, and removing the boards covering it, whereinto he entred; and having despoiled *Scannadio* of his garments, cloathed himselfe with them, and so laid him downe, having first covered the grave again. Not long had he tarryed there, but he began to bethinke him, what manner of man *Scannadio* was, and what strange reports had been noysed of him, not only for ransacking dead mens graves in the night season, but many other abominable Villanies committed by him

him, which so fearefully assaulted him; that his haire stood an end, every member of him quaked, and every minute he imagined *Scannadio* rising, with intent to strangle him in the grave. But his fervent affection overcomming all these idle feares, and lying stone still, as if he had been the dead man indeed; he remained to see the end of his hope.

On the contrary side, after midnight was past, *Rinuccio Palermusi* departed from his lodging, to do what he was enjoyned by his hearts Mistresse, and as he went along, divers considerations also ran in his minde, concerning occasions possible to happen. As, falling into the hands of Justice, with the body of of *Scannadio* upon his backe, and being condemned for sacriledge, in robbing graves of the dead; either to be burned, or otherwise so punished, as might make him hatefull to his best friends, and meerely a shame to himselfe. Many other the like conceits molested him, sufficient to alter his determination: but affection was much more prevailing in him, and made him use this consultation. How now *Rinuccio*? Wilt thou dare to deny the first request, being moved to thee by a Gentlewoman, whom thou dearely lovest, and is the onely meanes, to gain assurance of her gracious favour? Undoubtedly, were I sure to die in the attempt, yet I will accomplish my promise. And so he went on with courage to the grave.

Alessandro hearing his arrivall, and also the removall of the boards, although he was exceedingly afraid; yet he lay quietly still, and stirred not, and *Rinuccio* being in the grave, tooke *Alessandro* by the feet haling him forth, and (mounting him upon his back) went on thus loaden, towards the house of Madam *Francesca*. As he passed along the streets, unseen, or unmet by any, *Alessandro* suffered many shrewd rushings, and punches, by turnings at the street corners, and jolting against bulks, posts, and stalls, which *Rinuccio* could not avoid, in regard the night was so wonderfully darke, as he could not see what way he went.

Being come somewhat neere the Gentlewomans house, and she standing ready in the window with her maid to see when *Rinuccio* should arrive there with *Alessandro*; provided also of an apt excuse, to send them thence like a couple of Coxcombs; it fortuned, that the Watchmen, attending there in the same street, for the apprehension of a banished man, stolne into the city contrary to order; hearing the trampling of *Rinuccios* feet, directed their course as they heard the noise, having their Lanthorne and light closely covered,

ed, to see who it should be, and what he intended, and bearing their weapons upon the ground, demanded, Who goes there? *Rinuccio* knowing their voices, and that now was no time for any long deliberation, let fall *Alessandro*, and ran away as fast as his legges could carry him.

Alessandro being risen again (although he was cloathed in *Scannadises* Garments, which were long and too big for him) fled away also as *Rinuccio* did. All which Madam *Francesca* easily discerned by help of the Watchmens Lanthorne, and how *Rinuccio* carryed *Alessandro* on his backe, being attired in the Garments of *Scannadio*: whereat she marvelled not a little, as also the great boldnesse of them both. But in the midst of her mervailing, she laughed very heartily, when she saw the one let the other fall, and both to run away so manfully. Which accident pleasing her beyond all comparison, and applauding her good fortune, to be so happily delivered from their dayly molestation: she betook her selfe to her Chamber with the maid, avouching solemnly to her, that (questionlesse) they both affected her dearly, having undertaken such a strange imposition, and very neer brought it to a finall conclusion.

Rinuccio, being sadly discontented, and cursing his hard fortune, would not yet return home to his lodging: but, when the watch was gone forth of that street, came backe to the place where he let fall *Alessandro*, purposing to accomplish the rest of his enterprize. But not finding the body, and remaining fully perswaded, that the Watchmen were possessed thereof; he went away, grieving extreamely. And *Alessandro*, not knowing now what should become of him, confounded with the like griefe and sorrow, that all his hope was thus utterly overthrown, retired thence unto his owne house, not knowing who was the Porter which carryed him.

The next morning, the grave of *Scannadio* being found open, and the body not in it, because *Alessandro* had throwne it into a deep ditch neere adjoyning: all the people of *Pistoya* were possessed with sundry opinions, some of the more foolish sort verily beleeving, that the divell had carryed away the dead body. Nevertheless, each of the Lovers, severally made knowne to Madam *Francesca*, what he had done, and how disappointed, either excusing himselfe, that though her command hasd not been fully accomplished, yet to continue her favour towards him. But she, like a wise and discreet Gentlewoman, seeming not to credit either one or other, discharged her self honestly of them both, with

with a cutting anſwer, That ſhe would never (afterward) expect any other ſervice from them, becauſe they had failed in their firſt injunction.

Madam Uſimbalda, Lady Abbeſſe of a Monaſtery of Nuns in Lombardie, ariſing haſtily in the night time without a Candle, to take one of her Daughter Nuns in bed with a young Gentleman, whereof ſhe was enviouſly accuſed, by certain of her other Siſters: The Abbeſſe her ſelf (being at the ſame time in bed with a Prieſt) imagining to have put on her head a plaited vaile, put on the Prieſts breeches. Which when the poore Nunne perceived; by cauſing the Abbeſſe to ſee her own error, ſhe got her ſelf to be abſolved, and had the freer liberty afterward, to be more familiar with her friend, then formerly ſhe had been.

The Second Novell.

Whereby is declared, that whoſoever is deſirous to reprehend ſin in other men, ſhould firſt examine himſelfe, that he is not guilty of the ſame crime.

BY this time Madam *Philomena* ſate ſilent, and the wit of *Franceſca*, in freeing her ſelfe from them whom ſhe could not fancie, was generally commended: as alſo on the contrary, the bold preſumption of the two amorous ſuiters, was reputed not to be love, but meerely folly. And then the Queene, with a gracious admonition, gave way for Madam *Eliſa* to follow next; who preſently thus began.

Worthy Ladies Madam *Franceſca* delivered her ſelfe diſcreetly from trouble, as already it hath been related: but a young Nun, by the helpe and favour of Fortune, did alſo free her ſelfe (in ſpeaking adviſedly) from an inconvenience ſodainely falling on her. And as you well know, there wants none of them, who (like bold Bayards) will be very forward in checking other mens miſdemeanors, when themſelves (which my Novell will approve) deſerve much more juſtly to be corrected. As hapned to a Lady Abbeſſe, under whoſe government the ſame young Nun was, of whom I am to ſpeake.

You are then to underſtand (Gracious Auditors) that in *Lumbardie* there was a goodly Monaſtery, very famous for Holineſſe and Religion, where, among other ſanctified Siſters, there was a young Gentlewoman endued with very ſingular beauty, being named *Iſabella*, who on a day, when a Kinſman of hers came to ſee her at the gate, became enamoured of a young Gentleman being then in his company.

He likewiſe, beholding her to be ſo admirably beautifull, and perceiving by the pretty glances of her eye, that they appeared to be ſilent intelligencers of the hearts meaning, grew alſo as affectionately inclined towards her; and this mutuall love continued thus concealed a long while, but not without great affliction unto them both. In the end, either of them being circumſpect and provident enough, the Gentleman contrived a meanes, whereby he might ſecretly viſit his Nunne, wherewith ſhe ſeemed no way diſcontented: and this viſitation was not for once or twice, but very often, and cloſely concealed to themſelves.

At length it came to paſſe, that either through their own indiſcreet carriage, or jealous ſuſpicion in ſome others: it was eſpyed by one of the Siſters, both the Gentlemans coming and departing, yet unknowne to him or *Iſabella*. The ſaid Siſter, diſcloſing the ſame to two or three more: they agreed together, to reveale it to the Lady Abbeſſe, who was named Madam *Uſimbalda*, a holy and devout Lady, in common opinion of all the Nuns, and whoſoever elſe knew her.

They further concluded (becauſe *Iſabella* ſhould not deny their accuſation) to contrive the buſineſſe ſo cunningly, that the Lady Abbeſſe ſhould come her ſelfe in perſon, and take the young Gentleman in bed with the Nun. And upon this determination, they agreed to watch nightly by turnes, becauſe by no meanes they would be prevented: ſo to ſurpriſe poore *Iſabella*, who being ignorant of their treachery, ſuſpected nothing. Preſuming thus ſtill on this ſecret felicity, and fearing no diſaſter to befall her: it chanced (on a night) that the young Gentleman being entred into the Nuns Dorter, the Scouts ſoon deſcryed him.

After ſome part of the night was overpaſt, they divided themſelves into two bands, one to guard *Iſabellaes* Dorter doore, the other to carry newes to the Abbeſſe, and knocking at her Cloſet doore, ſaid. Riſe quickly, and uſe all the haſte you may, for we have ſeen a man enter our Siſter *Iſabellaes* Dorter, and you may take her in bed with him. The Lady Abbeſſe, who, (the very ſame night) had the company of a luſty Prieſt in bed with her ſelfe, as often times before ſhe had, and he being alwayes brought thither in a Cheſt: hearing theſe tidings, and fearing alſo, leſt the Nuns haſtie knocking at her doore might cauſe it to fly open, and ſo (by their entrance have her own ſhame diſcovered: aroſe very haſtily, and thinking ſhe had put on her plaited vaile, which always ſhe walked with in the night ſeaſon,

and

and used to tearme her Psalter; she put the Priests breeches upon her head, and so went away in all haste with them, supposing them verily to be her Psalter: but making fast the Closet doore with her key, because the Priest should not be discovered.

Away she went in all haste with the Sisters, who were so forward in the detection of poore *Isabella*, as they never regarded what manner of vaile the Lady Abbesse wore on her head. And being come to the Dorter doore, quickly they lifted it off from the hookes, and being entred, found the two Lovers sweetly embracing: but yet so amazed at this sodain surprisall, as they durst not stirre, nor speake one word. The young Nunne *Isabella*, was raised forthwith by the other Sisters, and according as the Abbesse had commanded, was brought by them into the Chapter house: the young Gentleman remaining still in the Chamber, where he put on his garments, awaiting to see the issue of this businesse, and verily intending to act severe revenge on his betrayers, if any harme were done to *Isabella*, and afterward to take her thence away with him, as meaning to make her amends by marriage.

The Abbesse being seated in the Chapter house: and all the other Nunnes then called before her, who minded nothing else but the poore offending Sister: she began to give her very harsh and vile speeches, as never any transgressor suffered the like, and as to her who had (if it should be openly knowne abroad) contaminated by her lewd life and actions, the sanctity and good renown of the whole Monastery, and threatned her with very severe chastisement. Poore *Isabella*, confounded with feare and shame, as being no way able to excuse her fault, knew not what answer to make, but standing silent made her case compassionable to all the rest, even those hard-hearted Sisters which betrayed her.

And the Abbesse still continuing her harsh speeches, it fortuned, that *Isabella* raising her head, which before she dejected into her bosome, espyed the breeches on her head, with the stockings hanging on either side of her; the sight whereof did so much encourage her, that boldly she said. Madam, let a poore offender advise you for to mend your veile, and afterward say to me what you will. The Abbesse being very angry; and not understanding what she meant, frowningly answered. Why how now sawcy companion? What veile are you prating of? Are you so malapert to be chatting already? Is the deed you have done, to be answered in such im-

modest

modeſt manner? *Iſabella* not a jot danted by her ſterne behaviour, once again ſaid. Good Madam let me perſwade you to ſet your veile right, and then chide me as long as you will. At theſe words all the reſt of the Nunnes exalted their looks, to behold what veile the Abbeſſe wore on her head, wherewith *Iſabella* ſhould find ſuch fault, and ſhe her ſelf lift up her hand to feele it: and then they all perceived plainly the reaſon of *Iſabellas* ſpeeches, and the Abbeſſe ſaw her owne error.

Hereupon, when the reſt obſerved, that ſhe had no help to cloud this palpable ſhame withall, the tide began to turne, and her tongue found another manner of Language, than her former fury to poore *Iſabella*, growing to this concluſion, that it is impoſſible to reſiſt againſt the temptations of the fleſh. And therefore ſhe ſaid: Let all of you take occaſion, according as it offereth it ſelf, as both we and our predeceſſors have done, to be provident for your ſelves: take time while you may, having this ſentence alwayes in remembrance, *Si non caſte, tamen caute.*

So, having granted the young Nunne *Iſabella* free abſolution: the Lady Abbeſſe returned backe again to bed to the Prieſt, and *Iſabella* to the Gentleman. As for the other Siſters, who (as yet) were without the benefit of friends; they intended to provide themſelves ſo ſoon as they could, being enduced thereto by ſo good example.

Maſter Simon the Phyſitian, by the perſwaſions of Bruno, Buffalmaco and a third named Nello, made Calandrino beleeve that he was conceived with child. And having Phyſick miniſtred to him for the diſtaſt: they get both good fat Capons and many of him, and ſo cured him, without any other manner of deliverance.

The Third Novell.

Diſcovering the ſimplicity of ſome ſilly witted men, and how eaſie a matter it is to abuſe and beguile them.

AFter that Madam *Elriza* had concluded her Novell, and every one of the Company gave thanks to Fortune, for delivering poore *Iſabella* the faire young Nun, from the bitter reprehenſions of the as faulty Abbeſſe, as alſo the malice of her envious Siſters: the Queen gave command unto *Philoſtratus*, that he ſhould be the next in order, and he (without expecting any other warning) began in this manner.

Faire Ladies, the paltry Judge of the Marqueſate, whereof

whereof yesterday I made relation to you; hindred me then of another Novell, concerning silly *Calandrino*, wherewith I purpose now to acquaint you. And because whatsoever hath already been spoken of him, tended to no other end but matter of merriment, he and his companions duly considered: the Novell which I shall now report, keepeth within the selfe-same compasse, and aimeth also at your contentment, according to the scope of imposed variety.

You have already heard what manner of man *Calandrino* was, and likewise the rest of his pleasant Companions, who likewise are now again to be remembred, because they are actors in our present discourse. It came so to passe, that an Aunt of *Calandrinoes* dying, left him a legacie of two hundred Florines, wherewith he purposed to purchase some small farme house in the Countrey, or else to enlarge the other, whereof he was possessed already. And as if he were to disburse some ten thousand Florines, there was not a Broker in all *Florence*, but understood what he intended to doe: and all the worst was, that the strings of his purse could stretch no higher. *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* (his antient Confederates) who heard of this good Fortune befalne him, advised him in such manner as they were wont to doe; allowing it much better for him to make merry with the money in good cheere among them, than to lay it out in paltry Land; whereto he would not by any meanslisten, but ridde himselfe of them with a dinners cost, as loth to be at any further charge with them.

These merry Laddes meant not to leave him so; but sitting one day in serious consultation, and a third man in their company, named *Nello*; they all three laid their braines in steep, by what meanes to wash their mouthes well, and *Calandrino* to be at the cost thereof.

And having resolved what was to be done, they met together the next morning, as *Calandrino* was coming forth of his house, and sundering themselves to avoid all suspicion, yet being not farre distant each from other; *Nello* first met him, and said unto him, *Good morrow Calandrino*: which he requited backe again with the same salutation. But when *Nello* standing still, looked him stedfastly in the face: whereat *Calandrino* mervailing, said. Nello, *Why dost thou behold me so advisedly?* Whereunto *Nello* answered, saying. *Hast thou felt any pain this last night past? Thou lookest nothing so well, as thou didst yesterday.* *Calandrino* began instantly to waxe doubtfull, and replyed thus. *Dost thou see any alteration in my face, whereby to imagine I should feele some paine? In good faith*

Ca-

Calandrino (*quoth* Nello) *me thinkes thy countenance is strangely changed, and surely it proceedeth from some great cause, and so he departed away from him.*

Calandrino being very mistrustfull, scratched his head, yet felt he no grievance at all; and going still on; *Bufalmaco* sodainely encountred him, upon his departure from *Nello*, and afterward salutations passing between them; in a manner of admiration, demanded what he ailed?

Truly (quoth *Calandrino*) well enough to mine owne thinking, yet notwithstanding, I met with *Nello* but even now; and he told me, that my countenance was very much altered; Is it possible that I should be sicke, and feele no paine or distaste in any part of me? *Bufalmaco* answered; I am not so skilfull in judgement, as to argue on the nature of distemper in the body: but sure I am, that thou hast some dangerous inward impediment, because thou lookest (almost) like a man more than halfe dead.

Calandrino began presently to shake, as if he had had a Feaver hanging on him, and then came *Bruno* looking fearefully on him, and before he would utter any words, seemed greatly to bemoane him; saying at length. *Calandrino*? Art thou the same man or no? How wonderfully art thou changed since last I saw thee, which is no longer than yesterday? I pray thee tell me, How dost thou feele thy health?

Calandrino hearing, that they all agreeed in one opinion of him; he began verily to perswade himselfe, that some sodaine sickenesse had seised upon him, which they could discerne, although he felt no anguish at all: and therefore like a man much perplexed in minde, demanded of them, what he should doe? Beleeve me *Calandrino* (answered *Bruno*) if I were worthy to give thee counsell, thou shouldst returne home presently to thy house, and lay thee down in thy warme bed, covered with so many cloathes as thou canst well endure. Then to morrow morning, send thy water unto learned Master Doctor the Physitian,, who (as thou knowest) is a man of most singular skill and experience: he will instruct thee presently what is the best course to be taken, and we that have ever been thy loving friends, will not faile thee in any thing that lyeth in our power.

By this time, *Nello* being come again unto them, they all returned home with *Calandrino* unto his owne house, whereinto he entering very faintly, he said to his wife: Woman, make my bed presently ready, for I feele my self to be growne extreamely sicke, and see

that

that thou layeſt cloathes enow upon me. Being thus layd in his bed, they left him for that night, and returned to viſit him again the very next morning, by which time he had made a reſervation of his watter, and ſent it by a young Damoſell unto Maſter Doctor, who dwelt then in the old market place, at the ſigne of the Muske Mellone. Then ſaid *Bruno* unto his Companions; Abide you here to keep him company, and I will walke along to the Phyſitian, to underſtand what he will ſay: and if need be, I can procure him to come hither with me. *Calandrino* very kindly accepted his offer, ſaying withall. Well *Bruno*, thou ſheweſt thy ſelf a friend in the time of neceſſity, I pray thee know of him, how the caſe ſtands with me, for I feele a very ſtrange alteration within me, farre beyond all compaſſe of my conceit.

Bruno being gone to the Phyſitian, he made ſuch expedition, that he arrived there before the Damoſell, who carryed the water, and informed Maſter *Simon* with the whole tricke intended: wherefore, when the Damoſell was come, and he had paſſed his judgement concerning the water, he ſaid to her,

Maid, goe home again and tell *Calandrino*, that he muſt keep himſelf very warme: and I my ſelf will inſtantly be with him, to inſtruct him further in the quality of his ſickneſſe.

The Damoſel delivered her meſſage accordingly, and it was not long before Maſter Doctor *Simon* came, with *Bruno* alſo in his company, and ſitting down on the beds ſide by *Calandrino*, he began to taſte his pulſe, and within a ſmall while after, his Wife being come into the Chamber, he ſaid, Obſerve me well *Calandrino*, for I ſpeake to thee in the nature of a true friend; thou haſt no other diſeaſe, but onely thou art great with child.

So ſoon as *Calandrino* heard theſe words, in deſpairing manner he began to rage, and cry out aloud, ſaying to his wife. Ah thou wicked woman, this is long of thee, and thou haſt done me this miſchief: for alwayes thou wilt be upon me, ever railing at me, and fighting, untill thou haſt gotten me under thee. Say thou deviliſh creature, doe I not tell thee true? The woman being of very honeſt and civill converſation, hearing her husband ſpeake ſo fooliſhly: bluſhing with ſhame, and hanging down her head in baſhfull manner; without returning any anſwer, went forth of her Chamber.

Calandrino continuing ſtill in his angry humour, wringing his hands, and beating them upon his breſt, ſaid: Wretched man that I am, What ſhall I doe? How

ſhall

shall I be delivered of this child? Which way can it come from me into the world; I plainly perceive, that I am none other then a dead man, and all through the wickednesse of my wife: heaven plague her with so many mischiefs as I am desirous to find ease. Were I now in as good health, as heretofore I have been, I would rise out of my bed and never cease beating her, untill I had broken her in a thousand pieces. But if Fortune will be so favourable to me, as to help me out of this dangerous agony, hang me, if ever she get me under her again, or make me such an Asse, in having the mastery over me, as divers times she hath done.

Bruno, *Buffalmaco*, and *Nello*, hearing these raving speeches of *Calandrino*, were swollen so bigge with laughter, as if their ribbes would have burst in sunder; nevertheleesse, they abstained so well as they were able; but Doctor *Simon* gaped so wide with laughing, as one might easily have pluckt out all his teeth. In the end, because he could tarry there no longer, but was preparing to depart, *Calandrino* thanked him for his paines; requesting that he would be carefull of him, in aiding him with his best advise and counsell, and he would not be unmindfull of him. Honest neighbour *Calandrino*, answered the Phyfitian, I would not have you torment your selfe, in such an impatient and tempestuous manner, because I perceive the time so to hasten on, as we shall soon perceive (and that within very few dayes space) your health well restored, and without the sense of much paine; but indeed it will cost expences. Alas Sir, said *Calandrino*, make not any spare of my purse, to procure that I may have safe deliverance. I have two hundred Florines lately falne to me by the death of mine Aunt, wherewith I intended to purchase a Farme in the Countrey: take them all if need be, onely reserving some few for my lying in Child bed. And then Master Doctor, Alas, I know not how to behave my self, for I have heard the grievous complaint of women in that case, oppressed with bitter pangs and throwes; as questionlesse they will be my death, except you have the greater care of me.

Be of good cheere Neighbour *Calandrino*, replyed Doctor *Simon*, I will provide an excellent distilled drink for you, marvellously pleasing in taste, and of soveraigne vertue, which will resolve all in three mornings, making you as whole and as sound as a Fish newly spawned. But you must have an especiall care afterward being providently wise, lest you fall into the like follies

again;

again. Concerning the preparation of this precious drinke, halfe a dozen of Capons, the very faireſt and fatteſt, I muſt make uſe of in the diſtillation: what other things ſhall be employed beſide, you may deliver fortie Florines to one of theſe your honeſt friends, to ſee all the neceſſaries bought, and ſent me home to my houſe. Concerning my buſineſſe, make you no doubt thereof, for I will have all diſtilled againſt to morrow, and then do you drinke a great Glaſſe full every morning, freſh and faſting next your heart. *Calandrino* was highly pleaſed with his words, returning Maſter Doctor Infinite thankes, and referring all to his diſpoſing. And having given forty Florines to *Bruno*, with other money beſide, to buy the half dozen of Capons: he thought himſelfe greatly beholding to them all, and proteſted to requite their kindneſſe.

Maſter Doctor being gone home to his houſe, made ready a bottell of very excellent Hypocraſſe, which he ſent the next day according to his promiſe: and *Bruno* having bought the Capons, with other junkets fit for the turne, the Phyſitian and his merry Companions, fed on them heartily for the givers ſake. As for *Calandrino*, he liked his diet drinke excellently well; quaffing a large Glaſſe full off three mornings together: afterward Maſter Doctor and the reſt came to ſee him, and having felt his pulſe, the Phyſitian ſaid. *Calandrino*, thou art now as ſound in health, as any man in all Florence can be: thou needeſt not to keep within doores any longer, but walke abroad boldly, for all is well, and the child is gone.

Calandrino aroſe like a joyfull man, and walked daily through the ſtreets, in the performance of ſuch affaires as belonged to him: and every acquaintnce he met wiehall, he told the condition of his ſodaine ſickeneſſe; and what a rare cure Maſter Doctor *Simon* had wrought on him, delivering him (in three dayes ſpace) of a child, and without the feeling of any pain. *Bruno*, *Buffalmaco*, and *Nello*, were not a little jocond, for meeting ſo well with covetous *Calandrino*: but how the wife liked the folly of her husband, I leave to the judgement of all good women.

Franceſco Fortarigo, played away all that he had at Ruſcumvento, and likewiſe the money of Franceſco Aniollieri his Maſter. Then running after him in his ſhirt, and avouching that he had robbed him: he cauſed him to be taken by Peaſants of the Countrey, cloathed himſelfe in his

Maſters

Maſters wearing garments, and (mounted on his horſe) rode thence to Sienna; leaving Aniolliero in his ſhirt, and walking bare-footed.

The Fourth Novell.

Serving as an admonition to all men, for taking Gameſters and Drunkards into their ſervice.

THe ridiculous words given by *Calandrino* to his wife, all the whole company laughed at: but *Philoſtratus* ceaſing, Madam *Neiphila* (as it pleaſed the Queen to appoint) began to ſpeake thus. Vertuous Ladies, if it were not more hard and more uneaſie for men, to make good their underſtanding and vertue, than apparent publication of their diſgrace and folly; many would not labour in vaine, to curb in their idle ſpeeches with a bridle, as you have manifeſtly obſerved by the weake wit of *Calandrino*. Who need no ſuch fantaſtick circumſtance, to cure the ſtrange diſeaſe which he imagined (by ſottiſh perſwaſions) to have: had he not been ſo laviſh of his tongue, and accuſing his wife of overmaſtering him. Which maketh me to remember a Novell, quite contrary to this laſt related, namely, that one man may ſtrive to ſurmount another in malice; yet he to ſuſtain the greater harme, that had (at the firſt) the moſt advantage of his enemy, as I will preſently declare unto you.

There dwelt in *Sienna*, and not many yeares ſince, two young men of equall age, both of them bearing the name of *Franceſco*: but the one was deſcended of the *Aniollieri*, and the other likewiſe of the *Forzarigi*; ſo that they were commonly called *Aniolliero*, and *Forzaigo*, both Gentlemen, and well derived. Now, although in many other matters, their complexions did differ very much, yet notwithſtanding, they varyed not in one bad quality, namely, too great neglect of their Fathers, which cauſed their more frequent converſation, as very familiar and reſpective friends. But *Aniolliero* (being a very goodly and faire conditioned young Gentleman) apparently perceiving, that he could not maintaine himſelfe at *Sienna*, in ſuch eſtate as he liked, and upon the penſion allowed him by his Father, hearing alſo, that at the Marqueſate of *Ancona*, there lived the Popes Legate, a worthy Cardinall, his much endeared good Lord and friend; he intended to go viſit him, as hoping to advance his fortunes by him.

Having acquainted his Father with this determination, he concluded with him, to have that from him in a moment which might ſupply his wants for many moneths,

moneths, becauſe he would be cloathed gallantly, and mounted honourably. And ſeeking for a ſervant neceſſary to attend on him, it chanced that *Fortarigo* hearing thereof, came preſently to *Aniolliero*, intreating him in the beſt manner he could, to let him wait on him as his ſerving man, promiſing both dutifull and diligent attendance: yet not to demand any other wages, but onely payment of his ordinary expences. *Aniolliero* made him anſwer, that he durſt not give him entertainment, not in regard of his inſufficiency, and unaptneſſe for ſervice: but becauſe he was a great Gameſter, and divers times would be beaſtly drunke: whereto *Fortarigo* replyed that he would refraine from both theſe foule vices, and addict all his endeavour wholly to pleaſe him, without taxation of any groſſe errour; making ſuch ſolemne vowes and proteſtations beſide, as ſoon did conquer *Aniolliero*, and wonne his conſent.

Being entred upon his journey, and arriving in a morning at *Buonconvento*, there *Aniolliero* determined to dine, and afterward, finding the heat to be unfit for travell; he cauſed a bed to be prepared, wherein being laid to reſt by the help of *Fortarigo*, he gave him charge, that after the heats violence was overpaſt, he ſhould not faile to call and awake him. While *Aniolliero* ſlept thus in his bed, *Fortarigo*, never remembring his ſolemne vowes and promiſes: went to the Taverne, where having drunke ſufficiently, and finding company fit for the purpoſe, he fell to play at the Dice with them. In a very ſhort while he had not only loſt his money but all the cloathes on his backe likewiſe, and coveting to recover his loſſes again; naked in his ſhirt, he went to *Aniollieros* Chamber, where finding him yet ſoundly ſleeping, he tooke all the money he had in his purſe, and then returned backe to play, ſpeeding in the ſame manner as he did before, not having one poor penny left him.

Aniolliero chancing to awake, aroſe and made him ready, without any ſervant to helpe him; then calling for *Fortarigo* and not hearing any tydings of him: he began immediately to imagine that he was become drunke, and ſo he had falne aſleep in one place or other, as very often he was wont to doe. Wherefore, determining ſo to leave him, he cauſed the Mule and Saddle to be ſet on his horſe, and ſo to furniſh himſelf with a more honeſt ſervant at *Corſignano*

But when he came to pay his Hoſte, he found not a penny left him; whereupon (as well he might) he grew

grew greatly offended, and raised much trouble in the house, charged the Hosts people to have robbed him, and threatning to have them sent as prisoners to *Siena*. Suddenly entred *Fortarigo* in his shirt, with intent to have stolne *Aniolliseros* garments, as formerly he did the money out of his purse. and seeing him ready to mount on horseback, he said.

How now *Aniolliero*, What shall we go away so soon, I pray you Sir tarrie a little while, for an honest man is coming hither, who hath my Doublet engaged for eight and thirtie shillings; and I am sure he will restore it me back for five and thirtie, if I could presently pay him down the money.

During the speeches, another entred among them, who assured *Aniolliero*, that *Fortarigo* was the Theef which robbed him of his money, shewing him also how much he had lost at the Dice: wherewith *Aniolliero* being much moved, very angerly reproved *Fortarigo*, and, but for feare of the Law, would have offered him outrage, threatning to have him hanged by the neck, or else condemned to the Gallies belonging to Florence, and so mounted on horseback *Fortarigo* making shew to the standers by, as if *Aniolliero* menaced some other body, and not him, said. Come *Aniolliero*, I pray thee let us leave this frivolous prating, for (indeed) it is not worth a Button, and mind a matter of more importance: my Doublet will be had again for five and thirty shillings, if the money may be tendred down at this very instant, whereas if we deferre it till to morrow, perhaps he will have the whole eight and thirty which he lent me, and he doth me this pleasure, because I am ready (at another time) to afford him the like courtesie; why should we loose three shillings, when they may be so easily saved?

Aniolliero hearing him speak in such confused manner, and perceiving also, that they which stood gazing by, beleeved (as by their looks appeared) that *Fortarigo* had not played his Masters money at the dice, but rather that he had some stock of *Fortarigues* in his custody; angerly answered: Thou sawcy companion, what have I to do with thy Doublet? I would thou were hang'd, not only for playing away my money, but also by delaying thus my journey, and yet boldly, thou standest outfacing me as if I were no better then thy fellow. *Fortarigo* held on still his former behaviour, without using any respect and reverence to *Aniolliero*, as if all the accusations did not concern him, but saying, Why should not we take the advantage of three shil-

lings profit? Thinkeſt thou that I am not able to do as much for thee? Why, lay out ſo much money for my ſake, and make no more haſte than needs we muſt, becauſe we have day-light enough to bring us (before night) to *Torreniero*. Come, draw thy purſe, and pay the money; for upon mine honeſt word, I may enquire throughout all *Sienna*, and yet not find ſuch another Doublet as this of mine is. To ſay then, that I ſhould leave it, where it now lyeth pawned, and for eight and thirty ſhillings, when it is richly more worth than fifty, I am ſure I ſhall ſuffer a double endammagement thereby.

You may well imagine, that *Aniolliero* was now enraged beyond all patience, to ſee himſelf both robb'd of his money, and overborne with preſumptuous language: wherefore, without making any more replications, he gave the ſpurre to his horſe, and rode away towards *Torreniero*. Now ſell *Fortarigo* into a more knaviſh intention againſt *Aniolliero*, and being very ſpeedy in running, followed apace after him in his ſhirt, crying out ſtill aloud to him all the way, to let him have his Doublet again. *Aniolliero* riding on very faſt, to free his eares from this idle importunity, it fortuned that *Fortarigo* eſpyed divers countrey Peazants, labouring in the fields about their buſineſſe, and by whom *Aniolliero* (of neceſſity) muſt paſſe: To them he cryed out ſo loud as he could; Stay the Theef, Stop the Theeſe, he rides away ſo faſt having rob'd me.

They being provided, ſome with Prongges, Pitchforkes and Spades, and others with the like weapons fit for Husbandry, ſtept into the way before *Aniolliero*: and believing undoubtedly, that he had rob'd the man wh ch purſued him in his ſhirt, ſtayed and apprehended him. Whatſoever *Aniolliero* could doe or ſay, prevailed not any thing with the unmannerly Clowns, but when *Fortarigo* was arrived among them, he braved *Aniolliero* moſt impudently ſaying.

What reaſon have I to ſpoile thy life (thou traiterous Villaine) to rob and ſpoile thy Maſter thus on the high-way? Then turning to the Countrey Boores: How much deere friends (quoth he) am I beholding to you for this unexpected kindneſſe? You behold in what manner he left me in my Lodging having firſt played away all my money at the Dice, and then deceiving me of my horſe and garments alſo: but had not you (by great good lucke) thus holpe me to ſtay him; a poor Gentleman had been undone for ever, and I ſhould never have found him again.

Ani-

Aniolliero avouched the truth of his wrong received, but the base Peazants, giving credit only to *Fortarigo*'s lying exclamations: tooke him from his horse, despoyled him of all his wearing apparell, even to the very Boots from off his Legges: suffered him to ride away in that manner, and *Aniolliero* left so in his shirt, to dance a bare-footed Galliard after him, either towards *Sienna*, or any place else.

Thus *Aniolliero*, purposing to visit his Cousen the Cardinall like a Gallant, and at the Marquesate of *Ancona*, returned backe poorely in his shirt unto *Buoncontento*, and durst not (for shame) repaire to *Siena*. In the end, he borrowed money on the other horse which *Fortarigo* rode on, and remained there in the Inne, whence riding to *Corsignano*, where he had divers Kinsmen and Friends, he continued there so long with them, till he was better furnished from his Father.

Thus you may perceive that the cunning Villanies of *Fortarigo*, hindred the honest intended enterprise of *Aniolliero*, howbeit in fit time and place, nothing afterward was left unpunished.

Calandrino became extraordinarily enamoured of a young Damosell, named Nicholetta. Bruno prepared a charme or writing for him, avouching constantly to him, that so soon as he touched the Damosell therewith, she should follow him whithersoever he would have her. She being gone to an appointed place with him, he was found there by his wife, and dealt withall according to his deserving.

The Fifth Novell.

Is just reprehension of those vain-headed fooles, that are led and governed by idle perswasions.

BEcause the Novell reported by Madam *Neiphila* was so soone concluded, not without much laughter, or commendation of the whole Company: the Queene turned her selfe towards Madam *Fiammetta*, enjoyning her to succeed in apt order; and she being as ready as sodainly commanded, began as followeth. Most gracious Ladies, I am perswaded of your opinion in judgement with mine, that there is not any thing, which can be spoken pleasingly, except it be conveniently suited with apt time and place: in which respect, when Ladies and Gentlewomen are bent to discoursing, the due election of them both are necessarily required. And therefore I am not unmindfull, that our meeting here (aiming at nothing more, than to out-weare the time

with our generall contentment) ſhould tye us to the courſe of our pleaſure and recreation, to the ſame convenience of time and place; not ſparing, though ſome have been nominated oftentimes in our paſſed arguments; yet if occaſion ſerve, and the nature of variety be well conſidered, we may ſpeak of the ſelf ſame perſons again.

Now notwithſtanding the actions of *Calandrino* have been indifferently canvaſſed among us; yet remembring what *Philoſtratus* not long ſince ſaid, That they intended to nothing more then matter of mirth: I preſume the bolder, to report another Novell of him beſide the n already paſt. And were I willing to conceale the truth, and cloath it in more circumſtantiall manner: I could make uſe of contrary names, and paint it in a Poeticall fiction, perhaps more probable, though not ſo pleaſing. But becauſe wandring from the truth of things doth much diminiſh (in relation) the delight of the hearers: I will build boldly on my fore-alledged reaſon, and tell you truly how it hapned.

Niccholao Cornacchini was once a Citizen of ours, and a man of great wealth; who, among other his rich poſſeſſions in *Camerata*, builded there a very goodly houſe, which being perfectly ready for painting: he compounded with *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco*, who becauſe their work required more help than their own, they drew *Nello* and *Calandrino* into their aſſociation, and began to proceed in their buſineſſe. And becauſe there was a Chamber or two, having old moveables in them, as Bedding, Tables and other houſhold-ſtuffe beſide, which were in the cuſtody of an old woman that kept the houſe, without the help of any other ſervant elſe; a Son unto *Niccholao*, being named *Phillippo*, reſorted thither divers times, with one or other pretty Damoſel in his company (in regard he was unmarryed) where he would abide a day or two with her, and then conveigh her home again.

At one time among the reſt, it chanced that he brought a Damoſell thither named *Nicholetta*, who was maintained by a wily companion, called *Magione*, in a dwelling which he had at *Camaldoli*, and (indeed) no honeſter than ſhe ſhould be. She was a very beautiful young woman wearing garments of great value, and (according to her quality) well ſpoken, and of commendable carriage. Comming forth of her Chamber one day covered with a white veil, becauſe her hair hung looſe about her, which ſhe went to waſh at a Wel in the middle Court, bathing there alſo her face and hands: (*Landrino*

drino going (by chance) to the same Well for water, gave her a secret salutation. She kindly returning the like courtesie to him, began to observe him advisedly: more, because he looked like a man newly come thither, than any great handsomenesse she perceived in him.

Calandrino threw wanton glances at her, and seeing she was both fair and lovely, began to find some occasion of tarrying, so that he returned not with water to his other associates, yet neither knowing her, or daring to deliver one word. She, who was not to learn her lesson in alluring, noting what affectionate regards (with bashfulnesse) he gave her, answered him more boldly with the like; but meerly in scorning manner, breathing forth divers dissembling sighes among them: so that *Calandrino* became foolishly enveagled with her love, and would not depart out of the Court, until *Phillippo*, standing above in the Chamber window called her thence.

When *Calandrino* was returned back to his businesse, he could do nothing else, but shake the head, sigh, puffe, and blow, which being observed by *Bruno* (who alwayes fitted him according to his folly, as making a meer mockery of his best behaviour) sodainly he said. Why how now *Calandrino*? Sigh, puffe, and blow man? What may be the reason of these unwonted qualities? *Calandrino* immediately answered, saying: My friendly companion *Bruno*, if I had one to lend me a little help, I should very quickly become well enough. How? quoth *Bruno*, doth any thing offend thee, and wilt thou not reveal it to thy friends? Dear *Bruno*, said *Calandrino*, there is a proper handsome woman here in the house, the goodlyest creature that ever any eye beheld, much fairer than the Queen of Fairies her self, who is so deeply falne in love with me, as thou wouldest think it no lesse then a wonder; and yet I never saw her before, till yer while when I was sent to fetch water. A very strange case, answered *Bruno*, take heed *Calandrino*, that she be not the lovely friend to *Phillippo*, our young Master, for then it may prove a dangerous matter, and it will not go unpunished.

Calandrino stood scratching his head an indifferent while, and then sodainly replyed thus. Now trust me *Bruno*, it is to be doubted, because he called her at his window, and she immediately went up to his Chamber. But what do I care if it be so? Have not the Gods themselves been beguiled of their Wenches, who were better men than ever *Phillippo* can be, and shall I stand in

feare of him? *Bruno* replyed: Be patient *Calandrino*, I will enquire what Woman she is, and if she be not the wife or friend to our young Master *Phillippo*, with faire perswasions I can over-rule the matter; because she is a familiar acquaintance of mine. But how shall we doe that *Buffalmaco* maynot know hereof? I can never speake to her if he be in my company. For *Buffalmaco* (quoth *Calandrino*) I have no feare at all, but rather of *Nello*, because he is a neer Kinsman to my wife, and he is able to undoe me quite, if once it should come to his hearing. Thou sayst well, replyed *Bruno*, therefore the matter hath need to be very cleanely carryed.

Now let me tell you, the woman was well enough known to *Bruno*, as also her quality of life, which *Phillippo* had acquainted him withall, and the reason of her resorting thither. Wherefore, *Calandrino* going forth of the roome where they wrought, only to gain another sight of *Nicholetta*, *Bruno* revealed the whole history to *Buffalmaco* and *Nello*; they all concluding together, how this amorous fit of the fool should be followed. And when *Calandrino* was returned backe again; in whispering manner *Bruno* said to him. Hast thou once more seen her? Yes, yes *Bruno*, answered *Calandrino*: Alas she hath slaine me with her very eye, and I am no better than a dead man. Be patient, said *Bruno*. I will go and see whether she be the same woman which I take her for or no: and if it prove so, then never feare, but refer the businesse unto me.

Bruno descending down the staires, found *Phillippo* and *Nicholetta* in conference together, and stepping unto them, discoursed at large, what manner of man *Calandrino* was, and how farre he was falne in love with her: so that they made a merry conclusion, what should be performed in this case, only to make a pastime of his hot begun love. And being come backe againe to *Calandrino*, he said It is the same woman whereof I told thee, and therefore we must worke wisely in the businesse: for if *Philippo* perceive any thing, all the water in *Arno* will hardly serve to quench his fury. But what wouldst thou have me to say to her on thy behalfe, if I compasse the meanes to speake with her? First of all (quoth *Calandrino*) and in the prime place, tell her that I wish infinite bushels of those blessings, which makes Mayds Mothers, and begetteth children. Next, that I am only hers, in any service she will command me. Dost thou understand me what I say? Sufficiently answered *Bruno*, leave all to me.

When supper time was come, that they gave over work-

working, and were descended down into the Court: there they found *Phillippo* and *Nicholetta* readily attending to expect some beginning of amorous behaviour, and *Calandrino* glanced such leering looks at her, coughing and spetting with hummes and haes, in such close and secret manner, that a starke blinde sight might very easily have perceived it.

She also on the other side, returned him such queint and cunning carriage, as enflamed him far more furiously, even as if he were ready to leape out of himself. In the meane while, *Phillippo*, *Buffalmaco*, and the rest that were there present, seeming as if they were seriously consulting together, and perceived nothing of his fantastick behaviour, according as *Bruno* had appointed, could scarse refraine from extremity of laughter, they noted such antick trickes in *Calandrino*.

Having spent an indifferent space in this foppish folly, the houre of parting came, but not without wonderfull affliction to *Calandrino*; and as they were going towards Florence, *Bruno* said closely to *Calandrino*, I dare assure thee, that thou hast made her to consume and melt, even like ice against the warme Sunne. On my word, if thou wouldst bring thy Gitterne, and sit down by us, singing some few amorous songs of thine own making, when we are beneath about our businesse in the Court: she would presently leap out of the window, as being unable to tarry from thee.

I like thy counsell well *Bruno*, answered *Calandrino*, but shall I bring my Gitterne indeed? Yes, in any case replyed *Bruno*, for Musick is a matter of mighty prevailing. Ah *Bruno* (quoth *Calandrino*) thou wouldest not credit me in the morning, when I told thee, how the very sight of my person had wounded her: I perceived it at the very first looke of her owne, for she had no power to conceale it. Who but my selfe could so soon have enflamed her affection, and being a woman of such worth and beauty as she is? There are infinite proper handsome fellowes, that dayly haunt the company of dainty Damosels, yet are so shallow in the the affairs of love, as they are not able to winne one wench of a thousand, no, with all the wit they have; such is their extreame folly and ill fortune.

Then pausing a while, and sodainly rapping out a Lovers oath or two, thus he proceeded. My dearest *Bruno*, thou shalt see how I can tickle my Gitterne, and what good sport will ensue thereon, if thou dost observe me with judgement; why man, I am not so old as I seeme to be, and she could perceive it at the very view;

yea, and she shall find it so too, when we have leisure to consult upon further occasions: I find my self in such a free and frolick jocundity of spirit, that I will make her to follow me, even as a fond woman doth after her child.

But beware, said *Bruno*, that thou do not gripe her over-hard, and in kissing, be carefull of biting, because the teeth stand in thy head like the pegges of a Lute, yet make a comely shew in thy fair wide mouth, thy cheeks looking like two of our artificiall Roses, swelling amiably, when thy jawes are well fill'd with meat. *Calandrino* hearing these handsome commendations, thought himself a man of action already, going, singing, and frisking before his company so lively, as if he had not been in his skin.

On the morrow carrying his Gittern thither with him, to no little delight of his companyons, he both played and sung a whole Bed-role of Songs, not addicting himself to any work all the day: but loytering fantastically, one while he gazed out of the window, then ran to the gate, and oftentimes down into the Court, only to have a sight of his Mistresse. She also (as cunningly) encountred all his follies, by such directions as *Bruno* gave her, and many more beside of her own devising, to quicken him still with new occasions: *Bruno* playd the Ambassadour between them, in delivering the messages from *Calandrino*, and then returning her answers to him. Sometimes when she was absent thence (which often hapned as occasions called her) then he would write letters in her name, and bring them as if they were sent by her, to give him hope of what he desired, but because she was then among her Kindred, yet she could not possibly be unmindful of him.

In this manner, *Bruno* and *Buffalmaco* (who had the managing of this businesse) made a meer Gregory of poor *Calandrino*, causing him sometimes to send her one while a pretty piece of Ivory, then a fair wrought purse, and a costly pair of knives, with other such like friendly tokens: bringing him back again, as in requitall of them, counterfeited Rings of no value, bugles and bables, which he esteemed as matters of great moment. Moreover, at divers close and sodain meetings, they made him pay for many dinners and suppers, amounting to indifferent charges, only to be careful in the furtherance of his love-suit, and so conceal it from his wife.

Having worn out three or four moneths space in this fond and frivolous manner, without any other successe than

thanks hath been declared; and *Calandrino* perceiving, that the work undertaken by him and his fellowes grew very neer upon the finishing, which would barre him of any longer resorting thither: he began to solicit *Bruno* more importunately, than all the while before he had done. In regard whereof, *Nicholetta* being one day come thither, and *Bruno* having conferred both with her and *Phillippo*, with full determination what was to be done, he began with *Calandrino*, saying. My honest Neighbour, and loving Friend, this Woman hath made more then a thousand promises, to grant what thou art so desirous to have, and I plainly now perceive, that she hath no such intent or meaning, but meerly playes with both our noses, in which respect, seeing she is so perfidious, and unconstant, and will not performe one of all her faithfull made promises, if thou wilt consent to have it so, she shall be compelled to do it, whether she will or no. Yea marry *Bruno*, answered *Calandrino*, that were an excellent course indeed, if it could be done, and with expedition.

Bruno stood musing a while to himself, as if he had some strange stratagem in his brain, and afterward said. Hast thou so much courage *Calandrino*, as but to handle a peece of written parchment, which I will give thee? Yes, that I have, answered *Calandrino*, I hope that needed not to be doubted. Well then said *Bruno*, procure that I may have a piece of Virgin Parchment, with a living Bat or Reremouse, three grains of Incense, and an hallowed Candle, then leave me to effect what shall content thee. *Calandrino* watched all the next night following, with such preparation as he could make, only to catch a Bat; which being taken at the last, he brought it alive to *Bruno* (with all the materials appointed) who taking him alone into a backer Chamber, there he wrote divers follies on the Parchment, in the shape of strange and unusuall Characters, which he delivered to *Calandrino*, saying; Be bold *Calandrino*, and of a couragious Spirit, and build constantly upon my words, that if thou canst but touch her with this sacred Charracktered charme, she will immediately follow thee, and fulfill whatsoever thou pleasest to command her. Wherefore, if *Phillippo* do this day walk any whither abroad from his house, presume to salute her, in any manner whatsoever it be and touching her with the written lines, go presently to the barn of hay, which thou perceivest so neer adjoyning; the onely convenient place that can be, because

few or none resort thither. She shall (in despight of her bloud) follow thee; and when thou hast her there, I leave thee then to thy valiant victory. *Calandrino* stood on tiptoe, like a man newly molded by Fortune, and warranted *Bruno* to fulfill all effectually.

Nello, whom *Calandrino* most of all feared, had a hand as deep as any of the rest in this deceit, and was as forward also to have it performed, by *Brunoes* direction he went unto *Florence*, where being in company with *Calandrinoes* Wife, thus he began.

Cousin, thine unkind usage by thine Husband, is not unknown to me, how he did beat thee, (beyond the compasse of all reason) when he brought home stones from the plain of *Mugnone*; in which regard, I am very desirous to have thee revenged on him: which if thou wilt not do, never repute me hereafter for thy Kinsman and Friend. He is falne in love with a Woman of the common gender, one that is to be hired for money: he hath his private meetings with her, and the place is partly known to me, as by a secret appointment (made very lately) I am credibly given to understand; wherefore walke presently along with me, and thou shalt take him in the heat of his knavery.

All the while as these words were uttering to her, she could not dissemble her inward impatience, but starting up as half frantick with fury, she said. O notorious villain! Dareſt thou abuse thine honest wife so basely? I sweare by blessed Saint *Bridget*, thou shalt be paid with coyn of thine own stamp. So casting a light wearing Cloak about her, and taking a young woman in her company; she went away with *Nello* in no mean haste. *Bruno* seeing her coming afarre off, said to *Phillippo*; you Sir, you know what is to be done, act your part according to your appointment. *Phillippo* went immediately into the Room, where *Calandrino* and his other Consorts were at work, and said to them. Honest friends, I have certain occasions which command mine instant being at *Florence*; work hard while I am absent, and I will not be unthankfull for it. Away he departed from them, and hid himself in a convenient place where he could not be descryed, yet see whatsoever *Calandrino* did: who when he imagined *Phillippo* to be farre enough off, descended down into the Court, where he found *Nicholetta* sitting alone, and going towards her, began to enter into discourſing with her.

She knowing what remained to be done on her behalf, drew somewhat neer him, and shewed her self more familiar then formerly she had done; by which fa-

favourable means, he touched her with the charmed Parchment; which was no sooner done, but without using any other kind of language, he went to the Hay-Barne, whither *Nicholletta* followed him, and both being entred, he closed the Barne doore and then stood gazing on her, as if he had never seen her before. Standing still as in a study, or be hinking himself what he should say: she began to use affable gesture to him, and taking him by the hand, made shew as if she meant to kiss him which yet she refrained, though he (rather then his life) would gladly have it. Why how now deare *Calandrino* (quoth she) jewell of my joy, comfort of my heart, how many times have I longed for thy company? And enjoying it now, according to mine own desire, dost thou stand like a Statue, or man *alla morra*? The rare tunes of the Gittern, but (much more) the melodious accents of thy voyce, excelling *Orpheus* or *Amphion*, o ravished my soule, as I know not how to expresse the depth of mine affection; and yet hast thou brought me hither, only to look babies in mine eyes, and not so much as speak one kind word to me?

Bruno and *Buffalmaco*, having hid themselves close behind *Phillippo*, they both heard and saw all this amorous conflict, and as *Calandrino* was quickning his courage, and wiping his mouth, with intent to kisse her: his wife and *Nello* entred into the Barn, which caused *Nicholletta* to get her gone presently, sheltering her self where *Philippo* lay scouting. But the enraged woman ran furiously upon poor daunted *Calandrino* making such a pitifull massacre with her nailes, and tearing the haire from his head, as he meerly looked like an infected Anatomy. Fowle loathsome dog (quoth she) must you be at your minions, and leave me hungerstarved at home? An old knave with almost never a good tooth in thy head, and yet art thou peighing after young wenches? hast thou not work enough at home, but must he gadding into other mens grounds? Are these the fruits of wandring abroad?

Calandrino being in this pitifull perplexity, stood like one neither alive nor dead, not daring to use any resistance against her; but fell on his knees before his wife, holding up his hands for mercy, and entreating her (for charities sake) not to torment him any more: for he had committed no harme at all, and the Gent'lewoman was his Masters Wife, who came with no such intent thither as she foolishly imagined. Wife, or wife not (quoth she) I would have none to meddle with my Husband, but I that have the most right to him.

Bruno

Bruno and *Buffalmaco*, who had laughed all this while heartily at this pastime, with *Philippo* and *Nicholetta*; came running in haste to know the reason of this loud noyse, and after they had pacified the woman with gentle perswasions: they advised *Calandrino*, to walk with his Wife to *Florence*, and return no more to work there again, lest *Philippo* hearing what had hapned, should be revenged on him with some outrage. Thus poor *Calandrino* miserably misused and beaten, went home to *Florence* with his Wife, scoulded, and railed at all the way, beside his other molestations (day and night) afterward: his Companions, *Philippo* and *Nicholetta*, making themselves merry at his misfortune.

Two young Gentlemen, the one named Pamuccio, and the other Adriano, lodged one night in a poor Inne, where one of them went to bed to the Hosts Daughter, and the other (by mistaking his way in the dark) to the Hosts Wife. He which lay with the Daughter, hapned afterward to the Hosts bed, and told him what he had done, as thinking he spake to his own companion. Discontentment growing between them, the Mother perceiving her errour, went to bed to her Daughter, and with discreet language, made a generall pacification.

The Sixt Novell.

Wherein is manifested, that an offence committed ignorantly, and by mistaking, ought to be covered with good advice, and civil discretion.

Calandrino, whose mishaps had so many times made the whole assembly merry, and this last passing among them with indifferent commendations: upon a generall silence commanded, the Queen gave order to *Pamphilus*, that he should follow, as indeed he did, beginning thus.

Praise-worthy Ladies, the name of *Nicholetta*, so fondly affected by *Calandrino*, putteth me in mind of a Novell, concerning another *Nicholetta*, of whom I purpose to speak: to the end you may observe how by a sudden wary foresight, a discreet woman compassed the means to avoyd a notorious scandall.

On the plain of *Mugnone*, neer to *Florence*, dwelt (not long since) an honest mean man, who kept a poor Inne or Ostery for Travellers, where they might have some slender entertainment for their money. As he was but a poor man, so his house afforded but very small receit of guests, not lodging any but of necessity, and such

than

such as he had some knowledge of. This honest poor Hoste had a woman (sufficiently fair) to his wife, by whom he had also two Children, the one a comely young Maiden, aged about fifteen years, and the other a son, not fully (as yet) a year old, and sucking on the mothers brest.

A comely youthfull Gentleman of our City, became amorously affected to the Damosell, resorting thither divers times as he travailed on the way, to expresse how much he did respect her. And she accounting her fortune none of the meanest, that she should be beloved by so youthfull a Gallant declared such vertuous and modest demeanour, as might deserve his best opinion of her: so that their love grew to an equall sympathy, and mutuall contentment of them both, in expectation of further effects; he being named *Panuccio*, and she *Nicholetta*.

The heat of affection thus encreasing day by day, *Panuccio* grew exceedingly desirous to enjoy the fruits of his long continued liking, and divers devises mustred in his brain, how he might compasse one nights lodging in her fathers house, whereof he knew every part and parcell, as not doubting to effect what he desired, yet undiscovered by any, but the Mayd her self.

According as his intention aimed, so he longing to put it in execution, and having imparted his mind to an honest loyal friend, named *Adriano*; who was acquainted with the course of his love: hyring two horses, and having Portmantues behind them, filled with matters of no moment, they departed from *Florence*, as if they had some great journey to ride. Having spent the day time where themselves best pleased, dark night being entred, they arrived on the plain of *Mugnone*, where, as if they were come from the parts of *Romanie*, they rode directly to this poor Inne, and knocking at the door, the honest Hoste (being familiar and friendly to all comers) open'd the door, when *Panuccio* spake in this manner to him. Good man we must request one nights lodging with you, for we thought to have reached so far as *Florence*, but dark night preventing us, you see at what a late hour we are come hither. *Signior Panuccio*, answered the Hoste, it is not unknown to you, how unfitting my poor house is, for entertaining such guests as you are: Nevertheless seeing you are overtaken by so unreasonable an hour, and no other place is neer for your receit; I will gladly lodge you so well as I can.

When they were dismounted from their horse, and entred into the simple Inne, having taken order for feeding their horses, they accepted such provision as the

place

place and time afforded, requesting the Hoste to suppe with them. Now I am to tell you, that there was but one small Chamber in the house, wherein stood three beds, as best the Hoste had devised to place them, two of them standing by the walls side, and the third fronting them both, but with such close and narrow passage, as very hardly, could one step between them. The best of these three beds was appointed for the Gentlemen, and therein they laid them down to rest, but sleep they could not albeit they dissembled it very formally. In the second Bed was *Nicholetta* the daughter, lodged by her self, and the father and mother in the third, and because she was to give the Child suck in the night time, the Cradle (wherein it lay) stood close by their beds side, because the childs crying or any other occasion concerning it, should not disquiet the Gentlemen.

Panuccio having subtilly observed all this and in what manner they went to bed; after such a space of time, as he imagined them to be all asleep, he arose very softly, and stealing to the bed of *Nicholetta*, lay down gently by her. And albeit she seemed somewhat afraid at the first, yet when she perceived who it was, she rather bad him welcome, then shewed her self any way discontented. Now while *Panuccio* continued thus with the maid, it fortuned that a Cat threw down somewhat in the house, the noise whereof awaked the wife, and fearing greater harme, than (indeed) had hapned, she arose without a Candle, and went groping in the dark, towards the place where she heard the noyse. *Adriano*, who had no other meaning but well, found occasion also to rise about some naturall necessity, and making his passage in the dark, stumbling on the childs Cradle (in the way) where the woman had set it, and being unable to passe by, without removing it from the place: took it and set it by his own beds side, and having done the businesse for which he rose, returned to his bed again, never remembring to set the Cradle where first he found it.

The Wife having found the thing thrown down, being of no value or moment, cared not for lighting any candle; but rating the Cat, returned back, seeking for the bed where her Husband lay, but finding not the Cradle there, she said to her self. What a foolish woman am I, that cannot well tell my self what I doe? In stead of my Husbands bed, I am going to both my Guests.

So, stepping on a little further, she found the childs Cradle, and laid her self down by *Adriano*, thinking she had gone right to her Husband. *Adriano* being not

than

as yet falne asleep, feeling the hostesse in bed with him, took advantage of so faire an occasion offered, and what he did is no businesse of mine, (as I heard) neither found the woman any fault. Matters coming to passe in this strange manner, and *Panuccio* fearing, lest sleep seizing on him he might disgrace the maids reputation: taking his kind farewel of her, with many kisses, and sweet embraces: returned again to his own bed, but meeting with the Cradle in his way, and thinking it stood by the hosts bed, (as truely it did so at the first) went back from the Cradle, and stept into the Hosts Bed indeed, who awaked upon his very entrance, albeit he slept very soundly before.

Panuccio supposing that he was laid down by his loving friend *Adriano*, merrily said to the host: I protest to thee, as I am a Gentleman, *Nicholetta* is a dainty delicate wench, and worthy to be a very good mans wife: this night she hath given me the sweetest entertainment, as the best Prince in the world can wish no better, and I have kist her most kindly for it. The Host hearing these news, which seemed very unwelcome to him; said first to himself: What makes such a devill here in my bed? Afterward being more rashly angry, than well advised, he said to *Panuccio*. Canst thou make vaunt of such a monstrous villany? Or thinkest thou that heaven hath not due vengeance in store, to requite all wicked deeds of darknesse? If all should sleep, yet I have courage sufficient to right my wrong, and yet as old as I am thou shalt be sure to find it.

Our amorous *Panuccio* being none of the wisest yong men in the world, perceiving his error; sought not to amend it, (as well he might have done) with some quaint strain of wit, carryed in quick and cleanly manner, but angerly answered. What shall I find that thou darest do to me? am I any way afraid of thy threatnings? The Hostesse imagining she was in bed with her Husband, said to *Adriano*: Hark Husband, I think our Guests are quarrelling together, I hope they will do no harme to one another. *Adriano* laughing outright, answered. Let them alone, and become friends again as they fell out: perhaps they drank too much yesternight.

The woman perceiving that it was her husband that quarrelled, and distinguishing the voyce of *Adriano* from his: knew presently where she was, and with whom; wherefore having wit at will, and desirous to cloud an error unadvisedly committed, and with no willing consent of her self; without returning any more words,

pre

presently she rose, and taking the Cradle with the child in it, removed it thence to her daughters bed side, although she had no light to help her, and afterward went to bed to her, where as if she were but newly awaked) she called her Husband, to understand what angry speeches had past between him and *Panuccio*. The Host replyed, saying. Didst thou not hear him wife, brag and boast, how he hath lyen this night with our Daughter *Nicholetta*? Husband (quoth she) he is no honest Gentleman; if he should say so, and believe me it is a manifest lye, for I am in bed with her my self, and never yet closed mine eyes together, since the first hour I laid me down: it is unmannerly done of him to speak it: and you are little lesse than a logger-head, if you do believe it. This proceedeth from your bibbing and swilling yesternight, which (as it seemeth) maketh you to walk about the room in your sleep, dreaming of wonders in the night season: it were no great sin if you brake your neck, to teach you to keep a fairer quarter; and how commeth it to passe, that Signior *Panuccio* could not keep himself in his own bed?

Adriano (on the other side) perceiving how wistly the woman excused her own shame and her daughters, to back her in a businesse so cunningly begun, he called to *Panuccio*, saying. Have not I told thee an hundred times, that thou art not free to lye any where, out of thine own lodging? What a shame is this base imperfection to thee by rising and walking thus in the night time, according as thy dreams do wantonly delude thee, and cause thee to forsake thy bed, telling nothing but lies and fables, yet avouching them for manifest truths? Assuredly this will procure no mean perill unto thee: Come hither, and keep in thine own bed for meer shame.

When the honest meaning Host heard what his own Wife and *Adriano* had confirmed, he was verily perswaded, that *Panuccio* spake in a Dream all this while: And to make it the more constantly apparent, *Panuccio* (being now grown wiser by others example) lay talking and blundering to himself, even as if dreams or perturbations of the mind did much molest him, with strange distractions in frantick manner. Which the Host perceiving, and compassionating his case, as one man should do another's, he took him by the shoulders, jogging and hunching him, saying Awake Signior *Panuccio*, and get you gone hence to your own bed.

Panuccio, yawning and stretching out his limbs, with unusual groans and respirations, such as (better) could be

hardly dissembled, seeming to wake as out of a sleep, and calling his Friend *Adriano*, said.

Adriano, is it day, that thou dost waken me? It may be day or night replyed *Adriano*, for both (in these fits) are alike to thee. Arise man for shame and come to thy lodging. Then faining to be much troubled and sleepy, he arose from the Host, and went to *Adrianus* bed.

When it was day, and all in the house risen, the host began to smile at *Panuccio*, mocking him with his idle dreaming and talking in the night.

So, falling from one merry matter to another, yet without any mislike at all, the Gentlemen having their horses prepared, and their Portmantues fastened behind, thinking to their host, mounted on horseback, they rode away towards *Florence*, no lesse contented with the manner of occasions hapned, than the effects they sorted to. Afterward, other courses were taken, for the continuance of this begun pleasure with *Nicholetta*, who made her mother believe that *Panuccio* did nothing else but dream. And the mother her self remembring how kindly *Adriano* had used her (a fortune not expected by her before) was more than half of the mind, that she did then dream also, while she was waking.

Talano de Molise dreamed, that a Wolf tore his wives face and throat. Which dream he told to her, with advice to keep her out of danger; which she refusing to do, received what followed.

The Seventh Novell.

Whereby (with some indifferent reason) it is concluded, that Dreams do not alwayes fall out to be leasings.

BY the conclusion of *Pamphilus* his Novell, wherein the Womans ready wit, at a time of such necessity, carryed deserved commendations: the Queen gave command to Madam *Pampinea*, that she should next begin with hers, and so she did, in this manner. In some discourses (gracious Ladies) already past among us, the truth of apparitions in dreams hath partly been approved, whereof very many have made a mockery. Nevertheless, whatsoever hath heretofore been said, I purpose to acquaint you with a very short Novell, of a strange accident happening unto a Neighbour of mine, in not crediting a Dream which her Husband told her.

I cannot tell, whether you knew *Talano de Molese*, or no, a man of very much honour, who took to wife a young Gentle-

Gentlewoman named *Margarita*, as beautifull as th
beſt: but yet ſo peeviſh, ſcornfull, and fantaſticall, th
ſhe diſdained any good advice given her; neither cou
any thing be done, to cauſe her contentment; which ab
ſurd humours were highly diſpleaſing to her husband
but in regard he knew not how to help it, conſtrayne
ly he did endure it. It came to paſſe, that *Talano* bein
with his wife, at a ſummer-houſe of his own in th
country, he dreamed one night, that he ſaw his Wif
walking in a faire wood, which adjoyned neer unto h
houſe, and while ſhe thus continued there, he ſeemed t
ſee iſſue forth from a corner of the ſame Wood, a gre
and furious Wolf, which leaping ſuddainly on her caugh
her by the face and throat, drawing her down to th
earth, and offering to drag her thence. But he crying ou
for help, recovered her from thence But he crying ou
for help, recovered her from the Wolf, yet having be
face and throat very pitifully rent and torne.

In regard of this terrifying dreame, when *Talano* wa
riſen in the morning, and ſate converſing with his wife
he ſpake thus unto her. Woman, although thy frowar
wilfull Nature be ſuch, as hath not permitted me on
pleaſing day with thee, ſince we became man and wife
but rather my life hath been moſt tedious to me, fearin
ſtill ſome miſchief ſhould happen unto thee: yet let m
how in loving manner adviſe thee to follow my counſe
and (this day) not to walk abroad out of this houſe
She demanded a reaſon for this advice of his. He tol
ted to her every particular of his dreame, adding with
theſe ſpeeches.

True it is wife (quoth he) that little credit ſhould b
given to dreames: nevertheleſſe, when they deliver ad
vertiſement of harmes to enſue, there is nothing loſt b
ſhunning and avoiding them. She fleering in his face
and ſhaking her head at him, replyed: ſuch harmes a
thou wiſheſt, ſuch thou dreameſt of. Thou pretendeſt
much pity and care of me, but all to no other end, bu
what miſchiefs thou dreameſt happening unto me, ſ
wouldeſt thou ſee them effected on me. Wherefore, I
will well enough look to my ſelf, both this day, an
at all times elſe, becauſe thou ſhalt never make thy ſel
merry with any ſuch misfortune as thou wiſheſt unt
me.

Well wife, anſwered *Talano*, I knew well enough be
fore, what thou wouldeſt ſay: An unſound head is ſoo
ſcratcht with the very gentleſt Combe: but beleeve a
thou pleaſeſt. As for my ſelf, I ſpeak with a true an
an honeſt meaning ſoule; and once again, I do advi
th

thee to keep within our doores all this day: at leaſt wiſe beware that thou walk not into our Wood, be it but in regard of my dreame. Well Sir, (quoth ſhe ſcoffingly) once you ſhall ſay, I followed your counſell: but within her ſelf ſhe fell to this murmuring. Now I perceive my husbands colouring, and why I muſt not walk this day into our wood: he hath made a compact with ſome common Queen, cloſely to have her company there, and is afraid leſt I ſhould take them tardy. Belike he would have me feed among blind folk, and I were worthy to be thought a ſtark fool, if I ſhould not prevent a manifeſt treachery, being intended againſt me. Go thither therefore I will, and tarry there all the whole day long; but I will meet with him in his merchandize, and ſee the Pink wherein he adventures.

After this her ſecret conſultation, her husband was no ſooner gone out of one doore, but ſhe did the like at another, yet ſo ſecretly as poſſibly ſhe could deviſe to do, and (without delay) ſhe went to the wood wherein ſhe hid her ſelf very cloſely, among the thickeſt of the buſhes, yet could diſcerne every way about her, if any body ſhould offer to paſſe by her. While ſhe kept her ſelf in this concealement, ſuſpecting other myſterious matters, as her idle imaginations had tutor'd her, rather than the danger of any Wolf: out of a brakie thicket by her ſodainly ruſhed a huge and dreadfull Wolf, as having found her by the ſent, mounting up, and graſping her throat in his mouth, before ſhe ſaw him, or could call to heaven for mercy.

Being thus ſeiſed of her, he carryed her as lightly away, as if ſhe had been no heavier than a Lambe, ſhe being (by no means) able to cry, becauſe he held her ſo faſt by the throat, and hindred any helping of her ſelf. As the Wolf carryed her thus from thence, he had quite ſtrangled her, if certain Shepheards had not met him, who with their outeries and exclaimes at the Wolf, cauſed him to let her fall, and haſt away to ſave his own life. Notwithſtanding the harme done to her throat and face, the Shepheards knew her, and carryed her home to her own houſe, where ſhe remained a long while after, carefully attended by Phyſitians and Chirurgions.

Now, although they were very expert and cunning men all, yet could they not ſo perfectly cure her, but both her throat, and part of her face were ſo blemiſhed that whereas ſhe ſeemed a rare creature before, ſhe was now deformed and much unſightly. In regard of which ſtrange alteration, being aſhamed to ſhew her ſelf in

any

any place, where formerly she had been seen: she spent her time in sorrow and mourning, repenting her lasciuient and scornfull carriage, as also her rash running into danger, upon a foolish and jealous surmise, believing her Husbands dreams the better for ever after.

Blondello (in a merry manner) caused Guiotto to beguile himself with a good dinner: for which deceit, Guiotto became cunningly revenged, by procuring Blondello to be wickedly beaten and misused.

The Eighth Novell.

Whereby plainly appeareth, that they which take delight in deceiving, do well deserve to be deceived themselves.

IT was a generall opinion in the whole Joviall company, that whatsoever *Talano* saw in his sleep, was not any dream, but rather a vision, considering every part thereof fell out so directly, without the least failing: but when silence was enjoyned, then the Queen gave out by evident demonstration, that Madam *Lauretta* was next to succeed, whereupon she thus began. As all they (Judicious hearers) which have this day spoken before me, derived the ground and project of their Novels from some other argument spoken of before: even so, the cruel revenge of the Scholar, yesterday discoursed at large by Madam *Pampinea*, maketh me to remember another Tale of like nature, somewhat grievous to the sufferer, yet not in such cruel manner inflicted, as that on Madam *Helena*.

There dwelt sometime in *Florence*, one that was generally called by the name of *Guiotto*, a man being the greatest Gourmand, and grossest feeder, as ever was seen in any Country, all his means and procurements meerly unable to maintain expences for filling his belly. But otherwise he was of sufficient and commendable carriage, fairly demeaned, and well discourfing on any argument: yet not as a curious and spruce Courtier, but rather, a frequenter of rich mens Tables, where choice of good cheer is seldome wanting, and such should have his company, albeit not invited, he had the courage to bid himself welcome.

At the same time, and in our City of *Florence* also, there was another man, named *Blondello*, very low of stature, yet comely formed, quick witted, more neat & brisk than a Butter-flie, alwayes wearing a wrought silk Cap on his head, and not a haire standing out of order, but the tuft flourishing above the forehead, and

such another trencher-flie for the Table, as our fore-named *Guiotto* was. It so fell out on a morning in the time, that he went into the Fish-market, where he bought two goodly Lampreyes, for *Messer Viero de Vieri*, and was espyed by *Guiotto*, who (coming to *Blondello*) said. What is the meaning of this cost, and for whom is it? Whereto *Blondello* thus answered. Yesterday, three other Lampreyes, far fairer then these, and a whole Sturgeon, were sent unto *Messer Corso Donati*, and being not sufficient to feed divers Gentlemen, whom he hath invited this day to dine with him, he willed me to buy these two beside: Dost not thou intend to make one of them? Yes I warrant thee, replyed *Guiotto*, thou knowest I can invite my self thither, without any other bidding.

So parting; about the hour of dinner time, *Guiotto* went to the house of *Messer Corso*, whom he found sitting and talking with certain of his Neighbours, but dinner was not (as yet) ready, neither were they come thither to dinner. *Messer Corso* demanded of *Guiotto*, what newes with him, and whither he went? Why Sir (said *Guiotto*) I come to dine with you, and your good company. Whereto *Messer Corso* answered, That he was welcome: and his other friends being gone, dinner was served in, none else thereat present but *Messer Corso* and *Guiotto*: all the diet being a poor dish of Pease, a little piece of Tunny, and a few small fishes fryed, without any other dishes to follow after. *Guiotto* seeing no better fare, but being disappointed of his expectation, as hoping to feed on the Lampreyes and Sturgeon, and so to have made a full dinner indeed, was of a quick apprehension, and apparently perceived, that *Blondello* had merely gull'd him in a knavery, which did not a little vexe him, and made him vow to be revenged on *Blondello*, as he could compasse occasion afterward.

Before many dayes were past, it was his fortune to meet with *Blondello*, who having told his jest to divers of his friends, and much good merryment made thereat: he saluted *Guiotto* in a kind manner, saying. How didst thou like the fat Lampreyes and Sturgeon which thou feddst on, at the house of *Messer Corso*? Wel Sir (answered *Guiotto*) perhaps before eight dayes passe over my head, thou shalt meet with as pleasing a dinner as I did. So, parting away from *Blondello*, he met with a Porter, such as are usually sent on errands; and hyring him to do a message for him, gave him a glass bottle, and bringing him neer to the Hall-house of *Caviceiuli*, shewed him where a Knight, called Signior *Phillippo Argenti*, a man

of

of huge ſtature, very cholerick, and ſooner moved to anger than any other man. To him thou muſt go with this bottle in thy hand, and ſay thus to him. Sir, *Blondello* ſent me to you, and courteouſly entreateth you, that you would erubinate this glaſſe bottle with your beſt Claret wine; becauſe he would make merry with a few friends of his. But beware he lay no hand on thee, becauſe he may be eaſily induced to miſuſe thee, and ſo my buſineſſe be diſappointed. Well Sir, ſaid the Porter, ſhall I ſay any thing elſe unto him? No (quoth *Guiotto*) only go and deliver this meſſage, and when thou art returned, Ile pay thee for thy pains. The Porter being gone to the houſe, delivered his meſſage to the Knight, who being a man of no great civil breeding, but very furious, preſently conceived that *Blondello* (whom he knew well enough) ſent this meſſage in meer mockage of him, and ſtarting up with fierce looks, ſaid; What erubination of Claret ſhould I ſend him? and what have I to doe with him or his drunken friends? Let him and thee go hang your ſelves together. So he ſtept to catch hold on the Porter, but he being nimble, and eſcaping from him, returned to *Guiotto*, and told him the anſwer of *Phillippo*. *Guiotto* not a little contented, payed the Porter, tarryed in no place till he met with *Blondello*, to whom he ſaid. When waſt thou at the Hall of *Cavicciuli*? Not a long while, anſwered *Blondello*; but why doſt thou demand ſuch a queſtion? Becauſe (quoth *Guiotto*) Signior *Phillippo* hath fought about for thee, yet know not I what he would have with thee. Is it ſo? replyed *Blondello*, then I will walk thither preſently, to underſtand his pleaſure.

When *Blondello* was thus parted from him, *Guiotto* followed not far off behind him, to behold the iſſue of this angry buſineſſe; and Signior *Phillippo*, becauſe he could not catch the Porter, continued much diſtempered, fretting and fuming, becauſe he could not comprehend the meaning of the Porters meſſage: but only ſurmixed, that *Blondello* (by the procurement of ſome body elſe) had done this in ſcorne of him: While he remained thus deeply diſcontented, he eſpyed *Blondello* coming towards him, and meeting him by the way, he ſtept cloſe to him, and gave him a cruell blow on the face, cauſing his noſe to fall out a bleeding. Alas Sir, ſaid *Blondello*, wherefore do you ſtrike me? Signior *Phillippo* catching him by the haire of the head, trampled his night-cap in the dirt, and his Cloak alſo, when, laying many violent blowes on him, he ſaid. Vile vous Traitor as thou art, Ile teach thee what it is to erubinate with Claret,

Claret, either thy self or any of thy cupping compani-ons: Am I a child to be jested withall?

Not was he more furious in words, than in ſtroaks ſo, beating him about the face, hardly leaving any hair on his head, and dragging him along in the mire, ſpoiling all his garments, and he not able (from the firſt blow given) to ſpeak a word in defence of him-ſelf. In the end, Signior *Phillippo* having extreamely beaten him, and many people gathering about them, to reſcue a man ſo much miſuſed, the matter was at large cleared, and manner of the meſſage ſending. For which, they all did greatly reprehend *Blondello*, conſidering he knew what kind of man *Phillippo* was, not any way to be jeſted withall. *Blondello* in tears, maintained, that he never ſent any ſuch meſſage for Wine, or intended it in the leaſt degree: ſo, when the tempeſt was more fully calmed, and *Blondello* (thus cruelly beaten and hurted) had gotten home to his own houſe, he could then remember, that (queſtionleſs) this was occaſioned by *Guiotto*.

After ſome few dayes were paſſed over, and the hurts in his face indifferently cured; *Blondello* beginning to walk abroad again, chanced to meet with *Guiotto*: who laughing heartily at him, ſaid. Tell me *Blondello*, how doſt thou like the erubinating Claret of Signior *Phillippo*; As well (quoth *Blondello*) as thou didſt the Surgeon and Lamprеyes at *Meſſer Corſo Donaties*. Why then (ſaid *Guiotto*) let theſe tokens continue familiar between thee and me, when thou wouldeſt beſtow ſuch another dinner on me, then will I erubinate thy noſe with a bottle of the ſame Claret. But *Blondello* perceived (to his coſt) that he had met with the worſer bargain, and *Guiotto* got cheere without any blowes: and there-fore deſired a peacefull attonement, each of them (al-ways after) abſtaining from flouring one another.

Two young Gentlemen, the one named Meliſſo, borne in the City of Laiazzo: and the other Gioſeſo of Antioch, travelled unto Salomon, the famous King of Great Britain. The one deſiring to learne what he ſhould doe, whereby to compaſſe and winne the love of men. The other craved to be inſtructed, by what means he might reclaime an head-ſtrong and unruly Wife. And what anſwers the wiſe King gave unto them both, before they departed away from him.

The

The Ninth Novell.

Containing an excellent admonition, that such as covet to have the love of other men, must first learne themselves how to love: Also, by what means such women as are curst and self willed, may be reduced to civill obedience.

UPon the conclusion of Madam *Laurettaes* Novell, none remained to succed next in order, but only the Queen her self, the priviledge reserved, granted to *Dioneus*; wherefore, after they had all smiled at the folly of *Blondello*, with a chearfull countenance thus the Queen began.

Honourable Ladies, if with advised judgement we doe duly consider the order of all things, we shall very easily perceive, That the whole universall multiplicity of women, by Nature, Custome, and Lawes, are and ought to be subject to men, yea, and to be governed by their discretion. Because every one desiring to enjoy peace, repose and comfort with them, under whose charge they are; ought to be humble, patient and obedient, over and beside her spotlesse honesty, which is the crown and honour of every good woman: and although those lawes, which respect the common good of all things, or rather use and custome (as our wonted saying is) the powers whereof are very great, and worthy to be reverenced, should not make us wise in this case: yet Nature hath given us a sufficient demonstration, in creating our bodies more soft and delicate, yea, and our hearts timorous, fearefull, benigne and compassionable, our strength feeble, our voyces pleasing, and the motion of our members sweetly pliant: all which are apparent testimonies that we have need of others government.

Now it is not to be denyed, that whosoever hath need of help, and is to be governed, meerl reason commandeth, that they should be subject and obedient to their governour. Who then should we have for our helps and governours, if not men? Wherefore, we should be intirely subject to them, in giving them due honour and reverence: and such a one as shall depart from this rule, she (in mine opinion) is not only worthy of grievous reprehensions, but also severe chastisements beside. And to this exact consideration (over and above divers other important reasons) I am the rather induced, by the Novell which Madam *Pampinea* so lately reported, concerning the froward and wilfull wife of *Talano*, who had a heavier punishment inflicted on her, than her husband could devise, to doe. And therefore

it is my peremptory sentence, that all such women as will not be gracious, benigne and pleasing: do justly deserve (as I have already said) rude, rough and harsh handling, as both Nature, Custome, and Lawes have commanded.

To make good what I have said, I will declare unto you the counsell and advise given by *Solomon*, the wise and famous King of Great Brittain, as a most wholesome and soveraign medicine for the cure of such a dangerous disease, in any woman so foully infected. Which counsell notwithstanding) all such women as have no need of his Physick, I would not have them to imagine, that it was meant for them, albeit men have a common Proverbe, to wit,

As the good horse and bad horse, do both need the spur:
So a good wife and bad wife, a wand will make stir.

Which saying whosoever doth interpret it in such pleasing manner as they ought, shall finde it (as you all will affirme no lesse) to be very true: especially in the generall meaning, it is beyond all contradiction. Women are naturally all unstable, and easily enclined to misgovernment; wherefore to correct such a distemperature in them that out-step the termes and bounds of woman-hood, a wand hath been allowed for especiall physick. As in the like manner, for support of virtue, in those of contrary condition, shaming to be sullyed with so grosse a sin: the correcting wand may serve as a walking staffe to protect them from all other fears. But, forbearing to teach any longer; let me proceed to my purpose, and tell you my Novell.

In those ancient and reverend days, whereof I am now to speak, the high renowned and admirable wisdome of *Salomon*, King of Great Brittain, was most famous throughout all parts of the world, for answering all doubtfull questions and demands whatsoever, that possibly could be propounded to him. So that many resorted to him, from the most remote and furthest off countries, to hear his miraculous knowledge and experience, yea and to crave his counsell, in matters of greatest importance. Among the rest of them which repaired thither, was a rich young Gentleman, honourably descended, named *Melisso*, who came from the City of *Liazzo*, where he was both borne, and dwelt.

In his riding towards *France*, as he passed by *Naples*, he overtook another young Gentleman, a native of

Antioch, and named *Gioſepho*, whoſe journey lay the ſame way as the others did. Having ridden in company ſome few dayes together, as it is a cuſtome commonly obſerved among Travailers, to underſtand one anothers Countrey and condition, as alſo to what part his occaſions call him: ſo hapned it with them, *Gioſepho* directly telling him, that he journyed towards the wiſe King *Salomon*, to deſire his advice, what means he ſhould obſerve, in the reclaiming of a wilfull wife, the moſt froward and ſelf willed woman that ever lived; whom neither fair perſwaſions, nor gentle courteſies could in any manner prevail withall. Afterward he demanded of *Meliſſo*, to know the occaſion of his travel, and whither.

Now truſt me Sir, anſwered *Meliſſo*, I am a native of *Laiazzo*, and as you are vexed with one great miſ-fortune, even ſo am I offended at another. I am young, wealthy, well derived by birth, and allow liberall expences, for maintaining a worthy Table in my houſe, without diſtinguiſhing perſons by their rank and quality, but make it free for all commers, both of the City and all places elſe. Notwithſtanding all which bounty, and honourable entertainment, I cannot meet with any man that loveth me. In which reſpect I journey to the ſame place as you do, to crave the counſell of ſo wiſe a King, what I ſhould do, whereby I might procure men to love me. Thus like two well met friendly companions, they rode on together, untill they arrived in *Great Britain*, where, by means of the noble Barons attending on the King, they were brought before him. *Meliſſo* delivered his mind in very few words, whereto the King made no other anſwer, but this: *Learn to love.* Which was no ſooner ſpoken, but *Meliſſo* was diſmiſſed from the Kings preſence.

Gioſepho alſo relating, wherefore he came thither; the King replyed only thus: *Go to the Gooſe Bridge*: and preſently *Gioſepho* had alſo his diſmiſſion from the King. Coming forth, he found *Meliſſo* attending for him, and revealed in what manner the King had anſwered him: whereupon, they conſulted together, concerning both their Anſwers, which ſeemed either to exceed their comprehenſion, or elſe was delivered in meer mockery, and therefore (more than half diſcontented) they returned homeward again.

After they had ridden on a few dayes together, they came to a River, over which was a goodly Bridge, and becauſe a great company of Horſes and Mules (heavily laden, and after a manner of a *Caravan* of Camels in Egypt,

Egypt) were first to passe over the said Bridge; they gladly stayed to permit their passe. The greater number of them being already past over, there was one shie and skittish Mule (belike subject to fearfull starting, as oftentimes we see horses have the like ill quality) that would not passe over the Bridge by any means, wherefore one of the Muliters took a good Cudgell, and smote her at the first gently, as hoping so to procure her passage. Notwithstanding, starting one while backward, then again forward, sideways, and every way indeed, but the direct rode way she would not goe.

Now grew the Muliter extreamely angry, giving her many cruel stroaks, on the head, sides, flancks, and all parts else, but yet they proved to no purpose; which *Meliſſo* and *Gioſepho* seeing, and being (by this means) hindred of their passage, they called to the Muliter, saying. Fooliſh Fellow, what doſt thou? Intendeſt thou to kill the Mule? Why doſt thou not lead her gently, which is the likelyer course to prevail by, than beating and misusing her as thou doſt? Content your selves Gentlemen (answered the Muliter) you know your horses qualities, as I do my Mules, let me deal with her as I please. Having thus spoken, he gave her so many violent stroakes, on head, sides, hippes, and every where else, as made her at last passe over the Bridge quietly, so that the Muliter wonne the maſtery of his Mule.

When *Meliſſo* and *Gioſepho* had past over the Bridge, where they intended to part each from other; a sudden motion hapned into the mind of *Meliſſo*, which caused him to demand of an aged man (who sate craving almes of Passengers at the Bridge-foot) how the Bridge was called Sir, answered the old man, this is called, The *Goose Bridge*. Which words when *Gioſepho* heard, he called to mind the saying of King *Salomon*, and therefore immediately said to *Meliſſo*, Worthy friend and partner in my travail, I dare now assure you, that the counsel given me by King *Salomon*, may fall out most effectuall and true; For I plainly perceive, that I knew not how to handle my self-willed wife, untill the Muliter did enstruct me. So, requesting still to enjoy the others company, they journyed on, till at the length they came to *Laiazzo*, where *Gioſepho* retained *Meliſſo* still with him, for some repose after so long a journey, and entertained him very honourably.

One day *Gioſepho* said to his wife, Woman, this Gentleman is my intimate friend, and hath born me company in all my travail: such diet as thou wilt welcome

him withall, I would have it ordered (in dreſſing) according to his direction. *Meliſſo* perceiving that *Gioſefo* would have it ſo; in few words directed her ſuch a courſe, as (for ever) might be to her husbands contentment. But ſhe, not altering a jot from her former diſpoſition, but rather far more froward and tempeſtuous: delighting to vex and croſſe, doing every thing quite contrary to the order appointed. Which *Gioſefo* obſerving, angerly he ſaid unto her. Was it not told you by my friend in what manner he would have our Supper dreſt? She turning fiercely to him, replyed, Am I to be directed by him or thee? Supper muſt and ſhall be dreſt as I will have it: if it pleaſeth me, I care not who doth miſlike it; if thou wouldſt have it otherwiſe, go ſeek both your Suppers where you may have it, according to your liking.

Meliſſo marvelling at her froward anſwer, rebuked her for it in very kinde manner: whereupon, *Gioſefo* ſpake thus to her. I perceive wife you are the ſame woman as you were wont to be: but believe me on my word, I ſhall quite alter you from this curſt complexion. So turning to *Meliſſo*, thus he proceeded. Noble friend, we ſhall trie anone whether the counſel of King *Salomon* be effectuall, or no: and I pray you, let it not be offenſive to you to ſee it; but rather hold all to be done in merriment. And becauſe I would not be hindered by you, do but remember the anſwer which the Muletter gave us, when we took compaſſion on his Mule. Worthy friend replyed *Meliſſo*, I am in your own houſe, where I will not impeach whatſoever you do.

Gioſefo, having provided a good Holly-wand, went into the Chamber, where his wife ſate railing, and deſpightfully grumbling, where taking her by the hair of her head, he threw her at his feet, beating her extremely with the wand. She crying, then curſing, next railing, laſtly fighting, biting and ſcratching, when ſhe felt the cruel ſmart of the blows, and that all her reſiſtance ſerved to no end: then ſhe fell on her knees before him, and deſired mercy for charities ſake. *Gioſefo* fought ſtill more and more on head, armes, ſhoulders, ſides, and all parts elſe, pretending as if he heard not her complaints, but wearied himſelf well-neer out of breath: ſo that (to be brief) ſhe that never felt his fingers before, perceived and confeſſed it was now too ſoon. This being done, he returned to *Meliſſo* and ſaid: To morrow we ſhall ſee a miracle, and how available the counſell is of going to the Gooſe Bridge So ſitting a while together, after they had waſhed their hands, and ſupt, they withdrew to their lodgings.

The

The poor beaten woman could hardly raise her self from the ground, which yet (with much ado) she did, and threw her self upon the bed, where she took such rest as she could: but arising early the next morning, she came to her Husband, and making him a very low courtesie, demanded what he pleased to have for his dinner; he smiling heartily thereat, with *Meliso*, told her his mind. And when dinner time came, every thing was ready according to the directions given: in which regard they highly commended the counsel, whereof they made such a harsh construction at the first.

Within a while after, *Meliso* being gone from *Giosefo*, and returned home to his own house: he acquainted a wise and reverend man, with the answer which King *Salomon* gave him, whereto he received this reply. No better or truer advise could possibly be given you: for well you know, that you love not any man; but the bountifull Banquets you bestow on them, is more in respect of your vain-glory, then any kind affection you bear to them: Learn then to love men, as *Salomon* advised, and you shall be beloved of them again. Thus our unruly wife became mildly reclaimed, and the young Gentleman, by loving others, found the fruites of reciprocall affection.

John de Barale at the instance and requeſt of his Goſip Pietro da Treſanti, made an enchantment, to have his wife become a Mule. And when it came to the faſtening on of the tail, Goſip Pietro by ſaying ſhe ſhould have no tail at all, ſpoiled the whole enchantment.

The tenth Novell.

In juſt reproof of ſuch fooliſh men, as will be governed by by over light belief.

THis novell reported by the Queen, cauſed murmuring among the Ladies, albeit the men laughed heartily thereat: but after they were all grown silent, *Dioneus* began in this manner. Gracious beauties, among many white Doves, one black Crow will seem more sightly, than the very whiteſt Swan can do. In like manner, among a multitude of wiſe men, sometime one of much leſſe wiſdom and diſcretion, ſhall not only increaſe the ſplendor and Majeſty of their maturity, but alſo give an addition of delight and greateſolace.

In which regard, you all being modeſt and diſcreet Ladies, and my ſelf much more defective in brain, than

than otherwiſe able: in making your vertues ſhine gloriouſly, through the evident appearance of mine own weakneſſe, you ſhould eſteem the better of me, by how much I ſeem the more cloudy and obſcure. And conſequently, I hope to have the larger ſcope of liberty, by plainly expreſſing what I am, and be the more patiently endured by you all, in ſaying what abſurdly I ſhall; than I ſhould be if my ſpeeches favoured of abſolute wiſdome. I will therefore tell you a Tale, which ſhall not be of any great length, whereby you may comprehend, how carefully ſuch things ſhould be obſerved, which are commanded by them, as can effect matters by the power of enchantment, and how little delayance alſo, ought to be in ſuch, as would not have an enchantment to be hindered.

About a year already paſt ſince, there dwelt at *Barletta*, an honeſt man, called *John de Barolo*, who becauſe he was of poor condition, for maintenance in his contented eſtate, provided himſelf of a Mule, to carry commodities from place to place, where Fairs and Markets were in requeſt, but moſt eſpecially to *Apuglia*, buying and ſelling in the nature of a petty Chapman. Travelling thus through the Countreyes, he grew into great and familiar acquaintance, with one who named himſelf *Pietro da. Treſanti*, following the ſame trade of life as he did, carrying his commodities upon an Aſſe. In ſign of amity, according to the Countryes cuſtome, he never termed him otherwiſe, than by the name of Goſſip *Pietro*. and alwayes when he came to *Barletta*, he brought him to his own houſe, taking it as his Inne, entreating him very friendly, and in the beſt manner he could deviſe to do. On the other ſide, Goſſip *Pietro* being very poor, having but one ſimple habitation in the Village of *Treſanti*, hardly ſufficient for him, and an handſome young woman which he had to his wife, as alſo his Aſſe: evermore when *John de Barolo* came to *Treſanti*, he would bring him to his poor abiding, with all his uttermoſt ability of entertainment, in due acknowledgement of the courteſie he afforded to him at *Barletta*. But when he came to take repoſe in the night ſeaſon, Goſſip *Pietro* could not lodge him as gladly he would, becauſe he had but one ſily bed, wherein himſelf and his wife lay: ſo that *John de Barolo* was fain to lye on a little ſtraw, in a ſmall ſtable cloſe adjoyning, by his own Mule and Aſſe.

The woman underſtanding what good and honeſt welcome Goſſip *John* afforded her husband, when he came to *Barletta*, was often very willing to go lodge with

with an honeſt neighbour of hers, called *Carapreſa di-Guidice Leo*, becauſe the two Goſſips might both lie together in one bed; wherewith divers times ſhe acquainted her husband, but by no means he would admit it.

At one time among the reſt, as ſhe was making the ſame motion again to her husband, that his friend might be lodged in better manner: Goſſip *John* thus ſpake to her. Good *Zita Carapreſa*, never moleſt your ſelf for me, becauſe I lodge to mine own contentment, and ſo much the rather, in regard that whenſoever I liſt, I can convert my Mule into a fair young woman, to give me much delight in the night-ſeaſon, and afterward make her a Mule again: thus I am never without her company.

The young woman wondring at theſe words, and beleeving he did not fable to them: ſhe told them to her husband, with this addition beſide, *Pietro* (quoth ſhe) if he be ſuch a dear friend to thee, as thou haſt often avouched to me, wiſh him to inſtruct thee in ſo rare a cunning, that thou mayſt make a Mule of me; then ſhalt thou have both an Aſſe and a Mule to travel withall about thy buſineſſe, whereby thy benefit will be double: and when we return home to our houſe, then thou mayſt make me thy wife again, in the ſame condition as I was before. Goſſip *Pietro*, who was (indeed) but a very Coxcomb, beleeved alſo the words to be true, yeelding therefore the more gladly to her advice, and moving the matter to his Goſſip *John*, to teach him ſuch a wonderfull ſecret, which would redound ſo greatly to his benefit: but *John* began to diſſwade him from it, as having ſpoken it in merriment, yet perceiving that no contradiction would ſerve to prevail, thus he began. Seeing you will needs have it ſo, let us riſe to morrow morning before day, as in our travel we uſe to do and then I will ſhew you how it is to be done: onely I muſt and do confeſſe, that the moſt difficult thing of all the reſt, is, to faſten on the Tail, as thou ſhalt ſee.

Goſſip *Pietro* and his Wife, could hardly take any reſt all the night long, ſo deſirous they were to have the deed done; and therefore when it drew towards day, up they roſe, and calling Goſſip *John*, he came preſently to them in his ſhirt, and being in the Chamber with them, ſaid I know not any man in the world, to whom I would diſcloſe this ſecret, but to you, and therefore becauſe you ſo earneſtly deſire it, I am the more willing to do it; only you muſt conſent, to do whatſoever I ſay, if you are deſirous to have it done. Faithfully they promiſed to perform all; whereupon *John* delivering a lighted

Candle to Gossip *Pietro*, to hold in his hand, said, Marke well what I do, and remember all the words I say: but be very carefull, that whatsoever thou hearest or seest, thou do not speak one word, for then the enchantment will be utterly overthhown, only wish that the tail may be well set on, for therein consisteth all the cunning.

Gossip *Pietro* holding the Candle, and the woman being prepared as *John* had appointed her, she bowed her self forwards with her hands set to the ground, even as if she had stood upon four feet. First with his hands he touched her head and face, saying, Here is the goodly face of a Mule: then handling her dishevelled hair, termed them the goodly mane of a Mule. Afterwards, touching the body, armes, legs, and feet, gave them all the apt names (for those parts) belonging to a Mule, nothing else remaining, but only the forming of the taile, which when *Pietro* perceived, how *John* was prepated to fasten it on (having no way misliked all his former proceedings) he called to him, saying, Forbear Gossip *John*, my Mule shall have no taile at all, I am contented to have her without a taile. How now Gossip *Petro*? answered *John*, What hast thou done? Thou hast mard all by this unadvised speaking, even when the work was almost fully finished. It is no matter Gossip (answered *Pietro*) I can like my Mule much better without a taile, than to see it set on in such manner.

The fond young woman, more covetously addicted to gain and commodity, then looking into the knavish intention of her Gossip *John*; began to grow greatly offended. Beast as thou art (quoth she to her husband) Why hast thou overthrown both thine own good fortune and mine? Diddest thou ever see a Mule without a taile? Wouldst thou have had him made me a Monster? Thou art wretchedly poor, and when we might have been enriched for ever, by a secret known to none but our selves, thou art the Asse that hath defeated all, and made thy friend to become thine enemy. Gossip *John* began to pacifie the woman, with solemn protestations of his still continuing friendship, albeit (afterwards) there was no further desiring of any more Mule-making: but Gossip *Pietro* fell to his former Trading only with his Asse, as he was no lesse himself, and he went no more with Gossip *John* to the Faires in *Apuglia*, neither did he ever request, to have the like peece of service done for him.

Although

Although there was much laughing at this Novell, the Ladies understanding it better, than *Dioneus* intended that they should have done, yet himself scarsely smiled. But the Novels being all ended, and the Sun beginning to lose his heat; the Queen also knowing, that the full period of her government was come: dispossessing her self of the Crowne, she placed it on the head of *Pamphilus*, who was the last of all to be honoured with this dignity; wherefore (with a gracious smile) thus she spake to him.

Sir, it is no mean charge which you are to undergo, in making amends (perhaps) for all the faults committed by my self and the rest, who have gone before you in the same authority; and, may it prove as prosperous unto you, as I was willing to create you our King. *Pamphilus* having received the Honour with a cheerfull minde, thus answered, Madam, your sacred virtues, and those (beside) remaining in my other subjects, will (no doubt) work so effectually for me, that (as the rest have done) I shall deserve your generall good opinion. And having given order to the Master of the Houshold (as all his predecessors had formerly done for every necessary occasion;) he turned to the Ladies, who expected his gracious favour, and said.

Bright Beauties, it was the discretion of your late Soveraign and Queen, in regard of ease and recreation unto our tired spirits, to grant you free liberty for discoursing on whatsoever your selves best pleased: wherefore having enjoyed such a time of rest, I am of opinion, that it is best to return once more to our Law, in which respect I would have every one to speak in this manner to morrow. Namely, of those men or women, who have done any thing bountifully or magnificently, either in matters of amity or otherwise. The relation of such worthy arguments, will (doubtlesse) give an addition to our best desires, for a free and forward inclination to good actions, whereby our lives (how short so ever they be) may perpetuate an eve living renown and fame, after that our mortall bodies are converted into dust, which (otherwise) are no better than those of brute beasts, reason only distinguishing this difference, that as they live to perish utterly, so we respire to reign in eternity.

The theam was exceedingly pleasing to the whole Company; who being all risen, by permission of the new King, every one fell to their wonted recreations, as best agreed with their own disposition, untill the hour of Supper came, wherein they were served very

sumptuously. But being risen from the Table, they began their dances, among which, many sweet Sonets were enterlaced, with such delicate Tunes, as moved admiration. Then the King commanded Madam *Neophila*, to sing a Song in his name, or how her self stood best affected. And immediately with a clear and rare voice, thus she began.

THE SONG.

The *Chorus* sung by all the Company.

In the Spring season,
Maids have best reason,
To dance and sing;
With Chaplets of Flowers,
To deck up their Bowers,
And all in honour of the Spring.

I Heard a Nymph that sate alone,
By a Fountains side,
Much her hard Fortune to bemoan,
For still she cry'd:
Ah! Who will pity her distresse,
That finds no foe like fickleness?
For truth lives not in men,
Poor soul, why live I then?
In the Spring season, &c.

Ah, how can mighty Love permit,
Such a faithlesse deed,
And not in justice punish it,
As treasons meed?
I am undone through perjury,
Although I loved constantly:
But truth lives not in men;
Poor soul, why live I then?
In the Spring season, &c.

When I did follow Dian's *traine,*
As a loyall Maid,
I never felt oppressing pain,
Nor was dismaid.
But when I listened Loves alluring,
Then I wandred from assuring.
For truth lives not in men,
Poor soul, why live I then?
In the Spring season, &c.

Then

Adiew to all my former joyes,
When I lived at eaſe,
And welcome now thoſe ſad annoyes,
Which do moſt diſpleaſe.
And let none pity her diſtreſſe,
That fell not but by ſickleneſſe.
For truth lives not in men,
Alas! why live I then?
In the Spring ſeaſon, &c.

The Song moſt ſweetly ſung by *Madam Neiphila*, was eſpecially commended both by the King, and all the reſt of the Ladies. Which being fully finiſhed the King gave order, that every one ſhould repair to their Chambers, becauſe a great part of the night was already ſpent.

The Tenth and laſt Day.

Wherein, under the Government of Pamphilus, the ſeverall Arguments do concern ſuch perſons as either by way of Liberality, or in Magnificent manner performed any worthy action, for love, favour, friendſhip, or any other honourable occaſion.

The Induction.

ALready began certain ſmall Clouds in the Weſt, to bluſh with a Vermillion tincture, when thoſe in the Eaſt (having reached to their full height) looked like bright burniſhed Gold, by reflendor of the Sun beams, drawing neer unto them: when *Pamphilus* being riſen, cauſed the Ladies, and the reſt of his honourable companions to be called. When they were all aſſembled, and had concluded together on the place, whither they ſhould walk for the mornings recreation, the King led on the way before, accompanyed with the two noble Ladies, *Philomena* and *Fiammetta*, all the reſt following after them, deviſing, talking, and anſwering to divers demands, both what that day was to be done, as alſo concerning the propoſed impoſition.

After they had walked an indifferent ſpace of time, and found the rayes of the Sun to be over-piercing for them: they returned back again to the Palace as fearing to have their bloud immoderately heated. Then

rinsing their Glasses in the cool cleer running current each took their mornings draught, and then walked into the milde shades about the Garden, untill they should be summoned to dinner: which was no sooner over-past, and such as slept, returned waking: they met together again in their wonted place, according as the King had appointed, where he gave command unto *Madam Neiphila*, that she should (for that day) begin the first Novel, which she humbly accepting, thus began.

A Florentine Knight named Signior Ruggiero de Figiovanni, became a servant to Alphonso, King of Spain, who (in his opinion) seemed but sleightly to respect and reward him, in regard whereof, by a notable experiment, the King gave him a manifest testimony, that it was not through any defect in him, but only occasioned by the Knights ill fortune; most bountifully recompensing him afterward.

The First Novell.

Wherein may evidently be discerned, that servants to Princes and great Lords, are many times recompensed rather by their good fortune, than in any regard of their dutifull services.

I Do accept it (Worthy Ladies) as no mean favour, that the King hath given me the first place, to speak of such an honourable Argument, as Bounty and *Magnificence* is; which precious Jewel, even as the Sun is the beauty or ornament and bright glory of all heaven; so is bounty and magnificence the Crown of all vertues. I shall then recount to you a short Novell, sufficiently pleasing in mine own opinion, and I hope (so much I dare rely on your judgements) both profitable, and worthy to be remembred.



You are to know then, that among other valiant Knights, which of long have lived in our City, one of them, and (perhaps) of as great merit as any, was one named Signior *Ruggiero d' Figiovanni*. He being rich, and of great courage, and perceiving, that (in due consideration) the quality belonging to life, and the customes observed among our *Tuscanes*, were not answerable to his expectation, nor agreed with the disposition of his valour; determining to leave his native Country, and belong in service (for some time) to *Alphonso* King of *Spain*, whose fame was generally noised in all places, for excelling all other Princes in those times, for respect of mens well deservings, and bountiful requitall of their pains. Being provided in honourable order, both with horses, arms, and a competent train, he travelled to *Spain*, where he was worthily entertained.

Signior *Regiero* continuing there, living in honourable manner, and performing many admirable actions of arms; in short time he made himself sufficiently known, for a very valiant and famous man. And having remained there an indifferent long while, observing divers behaviours in the King, he saw how he inclined himself, first to one man, then to another, bestowing on one a Castle, a Town on another, and Baronies on divers, somewhat indiscreetly, as giving away bountifully to men of no merit, and restraining all his favours from him, as seeming close fisted, and parting with nothing: he took it as a diminishing of his former reputation, and a great empairing of his fame, wherefore he resolved on his departure thence. & made his suit to the King that he might obtain it The King did grant it, bestowing on him one of the very best Mules, and the goodliest that ever was backt, a gift most highly pleasing to *Regiero* in regard of the long journey he intended to ride. Which being delivered, the King gave charge to one of his Gentlemen, to compasse such convenient means, as to ride through the Country with *Regiero*; yet in such manner, as he should not perceive that the King had purposely sent him so to do. Respectively he should observe whatsoever he said concerning the King his gestures, smiles, and other behaviour, shaping his answers accordingly, and on the next morning, to command his return back with him to the King.

Nor was the Gentleman slack in this command but noting *Regiero*'s departing forth of the City, he mounted on horse-back likewise, and immediately after came into his company, making him believe that he journyed towards *Italy*. *Regiero* rode on the Mule which the King had given him, with diversity of speeches passing between them. About three of the clock in the afternoon, the Gentleman said. It were not amisse Sir, (having such fit opportunity) to stable our horses for a while, till the heat be a little overpast. So taking an Inne, and the horses being in the stable, they all staled, except the Mule.

Being mounted again, and riding on further, the Gentleman duely observed whatsoever *Regiero* take, and comming to the passage of a small River or Brook: the rest of the beasts drank, and not the Mule, but staled in the River, which Signior *Regiero* seeing, clapping his hands on the *Mules* mane, he said, What a wicked beast art thou? Thou art just like thy Master that gave thee to me. The Gentleman committed the words to memory, as he did many other passing from *Regiero*, riding

riding along the rest of the day, yet none in disparagement of the King, but rather highly in his commendation And being the next morning mounted on horseback, seeming to hold on still the way for *Tuscane*: the Gentleman fulfilled the Kings command, causing *Regiero* to return back again with him, which willingly he yeelded to do.

When they were come to the Court, and the King made acquainted with the words which *Regiero* spake to his *Mule*, he was called into the presence, where the King shewed him a gracious countenance, and demanded of him, why he had compared him to his *Mule*? Signior *Rugiero* nothing daunted, but with a bold and constant spirit, thus answered. Sir, I made the comparison, because, like as you give, where there is no conveniency, and bestow nothing where reason requireth, even so, the *Mule* would not stale where she should have done, but where was water too much before, there she did it Beleeve me Signior *Regiero*, replyed the King, if I have not given you such gifts, as (perhaps) I have done to divers others far inferiour to you in honour and merit, this hapned not through any ignorance in me, as not knowing you to be a most valiant Knight, and well worthy of speciall respect, but rather through your own ill fortune, which would not suffer me to do it, whereof she is guilty, and not I, as the truth thereof shall make it self apparent to you. Sir, answered *Regiero*, I complain not, because I have received no gift from you, as desiring thereby covetously to become the richer, but in regard you have not as yet any way acknowledged what vertue is remaining in me. Nevertheless, I allow your excuse for good, and reasonable, and am heartily contented, to behold whatsoever you please, although I do confidently credit you, without any other testimony.

The King conducted him then into the great Hall, where (as he had before given order) stood two great Chests fast lockt, and in the presence of all his Lords, the King thus spake. Signior *Regiero*, in one of these Chests is mine imperiall Crown, the Scepter Royall, the mound, and many more of my richest girdles, rings, plate and Jewels, even the very best, that are mine: the other is full of earth only. Chuse one of these two, and which thou makest election of, upon my Royall word thou shalt enjoy it. Hereby shalt thou evidently perceive who hath been ingratefull to thy deservings, either I, or thine own bad fortune. *Regiero* seeing it was the Kings pleasure to have it so, chose one of them, which

which the King cauſed preſently to be opened, it approving to be the ſame that was full of earth, whereat the King ſmiling, ſaid thus unto him.

You ſee Signior *Regiero* that which I ſaid concerning your ill fortune, is very true: but queſtionleſſe, your valour is of ſuch deſert, as I ought to oppoſe my ſelf againſt all her malevolence. And becauſe I know right, that you are not minded to become a Spaniard; I will give you neither Caſtle nor dwelling place: but I will beſtow the Cheſt on you (in meer deſpight of your malicious fortune) which ſhe ſo unjuſtly took away from you. Carry it home with you into your Countrey, that there it may make an apparent teſtimony, in the ſight of all your well-willers, both of your own virtuous deſervings, and my bounty. Signior *Regiero* humbly receiving the Cheſt, and thanking his Majeſty for ſo liberall a gift, returned home joyfully therewith, into his native countrey of *Tuſcany*.

Ghinotto di Tacco, took the Lord Abbot of Clugni as his priſoner, and cured him of a moſt grievous diſeaſe, which he had in his ſtomach, and afterwards ſet him at liberty The ſame Lord Abbot, when he returned to the Court of Rome, reconciled Ghinotto to Boniface; who made him a Knight, and Lord Prior of a goodly Hoſpitall.

The ſecond Novell.

Wherein is declared that good men do ſometimes fall into bad conditions, only occaſioned thereto by neceſſity: and what meanes are to be uſed, for their reducing to goodneſſe again.

THe magnificence and Royall bounty, which King *Alphonſo* beſtowed on the Florentine Knight, paſſed through the whole aſſembly with no meen applauſe, and the King (who gave it the greateſt praiſe of all) commanded Madam *Eliſa* to take the ſecond turn in order; whereupon thus ſhe began.

Fair Ladies, if a King ſhewed himſelf magnificently minded, and expreſſed his liberall bounty to ſuch a man, as had done him good and honourable ſervices: it can be termed no more than a virtuous deed well done, and becomming a King. But what will we ſay when we hear of a Prelate of the Church, ſhewed himſelf wonderfully magnificent, and to ſuch a one as was his enemy: can any malicious tongue ſpeak ill of him? undoubtedly, no other anſwer is to be made, but the

ation of the King was meerly virtue, and that of the Prelate, no leſſe then a miracle: for how can it be otherwiſe, when they are more greedily covetous then women, and deadly enemies to all liberality? And although every man (naturally) deſireth revenge for injuries and abuſes done unto him, yet men of the Church, in regard that they daily preach patience, and command (above all things elſe) remiſſion of ſins, it would appear a mighty blemiſh in them, to be more froward and furious then other men. But I am to ſpeak of a reverend Prelate of the Church, as alſo concerning his magnificent bounty, to one that was his enemy, and yet became his reconciled friend, as you ſhall perceive by my Novell.

Ghinotto di Tacco for his inſolent and ſtout robberies, became a man very far famed, who being baniſhed from *Sienna*, and an enemy to the Counteſſe *Diſanto Fiore*: prevailed ſo by his bold and head-ſtrong perſwaſions, that the Town of *Raticonfani* rebelled againſt the Church of Rome; wherein he remaining, all paſſengers whatſoever, travelling any way thereabout, were robed and rifled by his theeving Companions. At the time whereof I now ſpeak, *Boniface* the eight, governed as Pope at Rome, and the Lord Abbot of *Cluni* (accounted to be one of the richeſt Prelates in the world) came to Rome, and there either by ſome ſurfet, exceſſe of feeding, or otherwiſe, his ſtomach being grievouſly offended and pained; the Phyſitians adviſed him, to travell to the Baths at *Sienna*, where he ſhould receive immediate cure. In which reſpect, his departure being licenced by the Pope, he ſet onward thither, with great and pompous carriages, of Horſes, Mules, and a goodly train, without hearing any rumour of the theeviſh Conſorts.

Ghinotto di Tacco, being advertiſed of his coming, ſpred about his ſcouts and nets, and without miſſing ſo much as one Page, ſhut up the Abbot with all his train and baggage, in a Place of narrow reſtraint, out of which he could by no means eſcape. When this was done, he ſent one of his moſt ſufficient attendants, (well accompanied) to the Lord Abbot, who ſaid to him in his Maſters name, that if his Lordſhip were ſo pleaſed, he might come and viſit *Ghinotto* at his Caſtle. Which the Abbot hearing, anſwered cholerickly, that he would not come thither, becauſe he had nothing to ſay to *Ghinotto*: but meant to proceed on his journey, and would fain ſee who durſt preſume to hinder his paſſe. To which rough words, the meſſenger thus mildely anſwred. My Lord (quoth he) you are arrived in ſuch a

place, where we fear no other force, but the ill controlling power of heaven, clearly exempted from the Popes thunder-cracks, of maledictions, interdictions or whatsoever else: and therefore it would be much better for you, if you pleased to do as *Ghinotto* advised you.

During the time of this their interparlance, the place was suddenly round engirt with strong armed theeves, and the Lord Abbot perceiving, that both he and all his followers were surprized, took his way (though very impatiently) towards the Castle, and likewise all his company and carriages with him. Being dismounted, he was conducted (as *Ghinotto* had appointed) all alone into a small Chamber of the Castle, it being very dark and uneasie, but the rest of his train, every one according to his rank and quality, were all well lodged in the Castle, their horses, goods, and all things else, delivered into secure keeping, without the least touch of injury or prejudice. All which being orderly done, *Ghinotto* himself went to the Lord Abbot, and said. *My* Lord, *Ghinotto* to whom you are a welcome guest, requesteth, that it might be your pleasure to tell him whither you are travelling, and upon what occasion?

The Lord Abbot being a very wise man, and his angry distemper more moderately qualified; revealed whither he went, and the cause of his going thither. Which when *Ghinotto* had heard, he departed courteously from him, and began to consider with himself, how he might cure the Abbot, yet without any Bathe. So commanding a good fire to be kept continually in his small Chamber, and very good attendance on him; the next morning he came to visit him again, bringing a fair white Napkin on his arme, and in it two slices of toastes of fine mancher, a goodly clear glasse full of the purest white-Bastard of *Carniglia* (but indeed of the Abbots own provision brought thither with him) and then he spake to him in this manner.

My Lord, when *Ghinotto* was younger than now he is, he studyed Physick, and he commanded me to tell you, that the very best medicine, he could ever learn against any disease in the Stomack, was this which he had provided for your Lordship, as an especiall preparative and which he should find to be very comfortable. The Abbot, who had a better stomack to eat, than any will or desire to talk, although he did it somewhat disdainfully, yet he eat up both the toastes, and round drank off the glasse of Bastard. Afterward divers other speeches passed between them, the one still a vi-

ing in Physicall manner, and the other seeming to
e little for it: but moved many questions concerning
otto, and earnestly desired to see him. Such speech-
s favoured of the Abbots discontentment, and came
him in passion, were clouded with courteous ac-
ntance, and not the least sign of any mislike: but
ring his Lordship, that *Ghinotto* intended very short-
o see him, and so they parted for that time.

Nor returned he any more till the next morning with
like two toastes of bread, and such another Glasse
hite Bastard, as he had brought him at the first,
ntinuing the same course for divers dayes after: till
Abbot had eaten (and very huugerly too) a prete
store of dryed Beans, which *Ghinotto* purposely,
e secretly) had hidden in the Chamber. Whereupo
e demanded of him (as seeming to be so enjoyned
his pretended master) in what temper he found his
mack now? I should find my stomack well enough
nswered the Lord Abbot) if I could get forth of thy
fters fingers, and then have some good food to feed
: for his medicines have made me so soundly sto-
ckt, that I am ready to starve with hunger.

When *Ghinotto* was gone from him, he then prepa-
d a very fair Chamber for him, adorning it with the
bots own rich hangings, and also his Plate and o-
r moveables, such as were alwayes used for his ser-
. A costly dinner he prepared likewise, whereto he
ited divers of the Town, and many of the Abbots
iefest followers: then going to him again the next
rning, he said. My Lord, seeing you do feel your
mack so well, it is time you should come forth of
e Infirmary. And taking him by the hand, he brought
m to the prepared Chamber, where he left him with
s own people, and went to give order for the dinners
ring in, that it might be prepared in magnificent
nner.

The Lord Abbot recreated himself a while with his
n people, to whom he recounted the course of his
e since he saw them; and they likewise told him,
w kindly they had been entreated by *Ghinotto*. But
en dinner time was come, the Lord Abbot and all
s company, were served with costly viands and excel-
t Wines, without *Ghinottoes* making himself known
the Abbot: till after he had been entertained some
w dayes in this order: into the great Hall of the
stle *Ghinotto* caused all the Abbots goods and fur-
ture to be brought, and likewise into a spacious court,
reon the windowes of the same court gazed, all his

mules

mules and horſes, with their ſumpters, even to the v
ſilleſt of them: which being done, *Ghinotto* went
the Abbot, and demanded of him how he felt his
mach now, and whether he would ſerve him to ve
on horſeback as yet, or no? The Lord Abbot anſwer
that he found his ſtomack perfectly recovered, his b
ſtrong enough to endure travell, and all things well
he were delivered from *Ghinotto*.

Hereupon, he brought him into the hall where
furniture was, as alſo all his people, and command
a window to be opened, whereat he might behold
horſes, he ſaid, My Lord, let me plainly give yo
underſtand, that neither cowardiſe, or baſeneſs
minde induced *Ghinotto di Tacco* (which is my ſelf)
become a lurking robber on the high-wayes, as t
my to the Pope, and ſo (conſequently) to the Ro
Court: but only to ſave his own life and hono
knowing himſelf to be a Gentleman caſt out of his o
houſe, and having (beſide) infinite enemies. But beca
you ſeem to be a worthy Lord, I will not (although
have cured your ſtomachs diſeaſe) deal with you t
do to others, whoſe goods (when they fall into
power) I take ſuch part of as I pleaſe: but rather am w
contented that my neceſſities being conſidered by y
ſelf, you ſpare me out a portion of the things you h
here, anſwerable to your own liking. For all are preſe
here before you, both in this Hall, and in the Court b
neath, free from any ſpoil, or the leaſt impairing. Whe
fore, give a part, or take all, if you pleaſe, and then d
part hence when you will, or abide here ſtill, for now y
are at your own free liberty.

The Lord Abbot wondred not a little, that a robb
on the high ways, ſhould have ſuch a bold and liber
ſpirit, which did very well pleaſe him; and inſtantly,
former hatred and ſpleen againſt *Ghinotto*, became co
verted into cordiall love & kindneſſe, ſo that (embrac
him in his armes) he ſaid, I proteſt upon my vow ma
to Religion, that to win the love of ſuch a man, as
plainly perceive thee to be, I would undergo far great
injuries, then thoſe which I have received at thy han
Accurſed be cruell deſtiny, that forced thee to ſo bad
kind of life, and did not bleſſe thee with a fairer Fo
tune. After he had thus ſpoken, he left there the great
part of all his goods, and returned back again to Ro
with fewer horſes and a mearer train.

During theſe paſſed accidents, the Pope had receiv
intelligence of the Lord Abbots ſurprizall, which w
not a little diſpleaſing to him: but when he ſaw h
retur

rned, he demanded, what benefit he received at the hes? Whereto the Abbot merrily ſmiling, thus re-d, Holy Father, I met with a moſt skilfull Phyſitian er hand, whoſe experience is beyond the power of Arches, for by him I am perfectly cured: and ſcourſed all at large. The Pope laughing heartily, he Abbot continuing on ſtill his report: moved n high and magnificent courage, he demanded racious favour of the Pope: who imagining he would requeſt a matter of greater moment, he did, freely offered to grant whatſoever he de-

oly Father, anſwered the Lord Abbot, all the hum-e which I make to you, is, that you would be ed to receive into your grace and favour, *Ghinotto* my Phyſitian, becauſe amongſt all the virtuous deſerving to have ſpeciall account made of them, er met with any equall to him, both in honour and ty. Whatſoever injury he did to me, I impute it as a er infortune, than any way he deſerveth to be ed withall. Which wretched condition of his, if you pleaſed to alter, and beſtow on him ſome better s of maintenance, to live like a worthy man, as he leſſe: I make no doubt, but (in very ſhort time) ll appear as pleaſing to your Holineſſe, as (in my dgment) I think him to be.

he Pope, who was of a magnanimous ſpirit, and hat highly affected men of virtue, hearing the com-dable motion made by the Abbot; returned anſwer, he was as willing to grant it, as the other deſired nding Letters of ſafe conduct for his coming thi-. *Ghinotto* receiving ſuch aſſurance from the Court ame, came thither immediatly, to the great joy the Lord Abbot: and the Pope finding him to be a of valour and worth, upon reconciliation, remit-ll former errors, creating him Knight, and Lord of the very chiefeſt Hoſpitall in Rome: In which he lived long time after, as a loyall ſervant to the ch, and an honeſt friend to the Lord Abbot of

---

Milanet envying the life and liberality of Nathan, and willing thither, with a ſetled reſolution to kill him: forced to confer with Nathan unknown. And being in-quired by him, in what manner he might beſt perform the ſame deed, according as he gave direction, he meet-eth him in a ſmall Thicket or Wood, where knowing him

to

to be the same man, that taught him how to take away his life: Confounded with shame, he acknowledgeth his horrible intension, and becometh his loyall friend.

The third Novell.

Shewing in an excellent and lively demonstration, that especiall honourable virtues, persevering and dwelling in a truly noble soul, cannot be violenced or confounded, by the most politick attempts of malice and envie.

IT appeared to the whole Assembly, that they had heard a matter of marvaile, for a Lord Abbot to performe any magnificent action: but their admiration ceasing in silence, the King commanded *Philostrato* to follow next, who forthwith thus began.

Honourable Ladies, the bounty and magnificence of *Alphonso* King of Spain, was great indeed, and that done by the Lord Abbot of *Clugni*, a thing (perhaps never heard of in any other. But it will seem no less marvellous to you, when you hear, how one man, in expression of great liberality to another man, that earnestly desired to kill him; should be secretly disposed to give him his life, which had been lost, if the other would have taken it, as I purpose to acquaint you withall, in a short Novell.

Most certain it is, at least, if Faith may be given to the report of certain *Genewayes*, and other men resorting to those remote parts; that in the Countrey of Carthage there lived sometimes a Gentleman, rich beyond comparison, and named *Nathan*. He having his living adjoyning to a common rode-way, whereby men travelled from the East to the West (as they did the like from the West unto the East, as having no other passage) and being of a bountifull and chearfull disposition, which he was willing to make known by experience, he summoned together many Master Masons and Carpenters, and there erected (in a short time) one of the greatest, and goodliest, and most beautifull houses (in manner of a Princes Palace) that ever was seen in those quarters.

With moveables and all kinde of furnishment, befitting a house of such outward appearance, he caused it to be plentifully stored, only to receive, entertain, and honour all Gentlemen, or other Travellers whatsoever, as had occasion to passe that way; being not unprovided also of such a number of servants, as might continually give attendance on all commers and goers. Two hundred fifty severall gates, standing alway wide open; and over each of them in great golden Characters was

LIBRI

Welcome, Welcome, and gave free admiſſion to all comers whatſoever. In this honorable order (obſerved as his eſtated cuſtome) he perſevered ſo long while, as not only the Eaſt parts, but alſo thoſe in the Weſt, were every where acquainted with his fame and renown. Being already well ſtept into years, but yet not weary of his great charge and liberality: it fortuned, that the rumor of his noble hoſpitality, came to the eare of another gallant Gentleman, named *Mithridanes*, living in a countrey not far off from the other.

The Gentleman, knowing himſelf no leſſe wealthy then *Nathan*, and enviouſly repining at his virtue and liberality, determined in his mind, to dim and obſcure the others bright ſplendor, by making himſelf far more famous. And having built a Palace anſwerable to that of *Nathans*, with like winding of gates, and welcome inſcriptions; he began to extend immeaſurable courteſie unto all ſuch as were diſpoſed to viſite him: ſo that (in a ſhort while) he grew very famous in infinite places. It chanced on a day, as *Mithridanes* ſat all alone within the goodly Court of his Pallace, a poor woman entred at one of the gates, craving an almes of him, which ſhe had; and returned in again at a ſecond gate, craving alſo to him, and had a ſecond almes; continuing ſo ſtill a dozen times; but in the thirteenth returning *Mithridanes* ſaid to her: Good woman, you go and come very often, and ſtill you are ſerved with almes. When the old woman heard theſe words, ſhe ſaid, O the liberality of *Nathan*! How honourable and wonderfull is that? I have paſt through two and thirty gates of his Palace, even ſuch as are here, and at every one I received an almes, without any knowledge taken of me, either by him, or any of his followers; and here I have paſt now through thirteen gates, and am there both acknowledged and taken. Farewell to this houſe, for I never mean to viſite it any more; with which words ſhe departed thence, and never after came thither again.

When *Mithridanes* had a while pondered on her ſpeeches, he waxed much diſcontented, as taking the words of the old woman, to extoll the renown of *Nathan*, and darken and eclipſe his glory, whereupon he ſaid to himſelf, Wretched man as I am, when ſhall I attain to the height of liberality, and performe ſuch wonders, as *Nathan* doth? In ſeeking to ſurmount him, I cannot come neer him in the very meaneſt. Undoubtedly, I ſpend all my endevour but in vain, except I rid the world of him, which (ſeeing his age will not make an end of him) I muſt needs do with mine own

hands.

hands. In which bloudy determination (without revealing his intent to any one) he mounting on horseback, with few attendants in his company, and after three dayes journey, arrived where *Nathan* dwelt. He gave order to his men, to make no shew of being his servants, or any way to acknowledge him: but to provide themselves of convenient lodgings, untill they heard other tidings from him.

About evening, and (in this manner) alone by himself, near to the Palace of *Nathan*, he met him solitarily walking, not in pompous apparell, whereby to be distinguished from a meaner man: and, because he knew him not, neither had heard any relation of his description, he demanded of him, if he knew where *Nathan* then was? *Nathan* with a cheerfull countenance, thus replyed, Fair Sir, there is no man in these parts, that knoweth better how to shew you *Nathan* then I do; and therefore if you be so pleased, I will bring you to him. *Mithridanes* said, therein he should do him a great kindnesse: albeit (if it were possible) he would be neither known or seen of *Nathan*. And that (quoth he) can I also do sufficiently for you, seeing it is your will to have it so, if you will go along with me.

Dismounting from his horse, he walked on with *Nathan*, diversly discoursing, untill they came unto the Palace, where one of the servants taking *Mithridanes* his horse, *Nathan* rounded the fellow in the eare, that he should give warning to all in the house, for revealing to the Gentleman that he was *Nathan*; as accordingly it was performed. No sooner were they within the Palace, but he conducted *Mithridanes* into a goodly chamber, where none (as yet) had seen him, but such as were appointed to attend on him reverently; yea, and he did himself greatly honour him, as being loth to leave his company.

While thus *Mithridanes* conversed with him, he desired to know (albeit he respected him much for his years) what he was. In troth Sir, answered *Nathan*, I am one of the meanest servants to *Nathan*, and from my child-hood, have made my self thus old in his service: yet never hath he bestowed any other advancement on me, than as you now see; in which respect, howsoever other men may commend him, yet I have no reason at all to do it. These words, gave some hope to *Mithridanes*, that with a little more counsell, he might securely [put in execution] his wicked determination. *Nathan* likewise demanded of him (but in very humble manner) of whence and what he was, as also the business

inviting him thither: offering him his utmoſt aid and counſell, in whatſoever conſiſted in his power.

Mithridanes ſate an indifferent while meditating with his thoughts before he would return any anſwer: but at the laſt, concludiag to repoſe confidence in him (in regard of his pretended diſcontentment) with many circumſtantiall perſwaſions, firſt for fidelity, next for conſtancy, and laſtly for counſell and aſſiſtance, he declared to him truly what he was, the cauſe of his coming thither, and the reaſon urging him thereto. *Nathan* hearing theſe words, and the deteſtable deliberation of *Mithridanes*, became quite changed in himſelf: yet wiſely making no outward appearance thereof, with a bold courage, and ſetled countenance, thus he replied.

Mithridanes, thy Father was a noble Gentleman, and (in vertuous qualities) inferiour to none, from whom (as now I ſee) thou deſireſt not to be degenerate, having undertaken ſo bold and high an enterpriſe, I mean, in being liberall and bountifull unto all men. I do greatly commend the envy which thou beareſt to the vertue of *Nathan*: becauſe if there were many more ſuch men, the world that is now wretched and miſerable, would become good and conformable. As for the determination which thou haſt diſcloſed to me, I have ſealed it up ſecretly in my Soul, wherein I can better give thee counſell, than any eſpeciall help or furtherance: and the courſe which I would have thee to obſerve, followeth thus in few words. This window which we now look forth at, ſheweth thee a ſmall wood or thicket of trees, being little more than a quarter of a miles diſtance hence; whereto *Nathan* uſually walketh every morning, and there continueth time long enough: there maiſt thou very eaſily meet him, and do whatſoever thou intendeſt to him. If thou kilſt him, becauſe thou maiſt with ſafety return home unto thine own abiding, take not the ſame way which guided thee thither, but another lying on the left hand, and directing ſpeedily out of the Wood, as being not ſo much haunted as the other, but rather free from all reſort, and ſureſt for viſiting thy own Country, after ſuch a diſmall deed is done.

When *Mithridanes* had received this inſtruction, and *Nathan* was departed from him; he ſecretly gave intelligence to his men, (who likewiſe were lodged, as welcome ſtrangers, in the ſame houſe) at what place they ſhould ſtay for him the next morning. Night being paſſed over, and *Nathan* riſen, his heart altered not a jot from his counſell given to *Mithridanes*, much leſſe changed from any part thereof: but all alone by himſelf,

walked on to the wood, the place appointed for his death. *Mithridanes* also being risen, taking his Bow and Sword (for other weapons had he none) mounted on horseback, and so came to the wood, where (somewhat far off he espyed *Nathan* walking, and no creature with him. Dismounting from his horse, he had resolved (before he would kill him) not only to see, but also to hear him speak: so stepping roughly to him, and taking hold of the Bonnet of his head, his face being then turned from him, he said. Old man, thou must die. Whereunto *Nathan* made no other answer but thus: Why then (belike) I have deserved it.

When *Mithridanes* heard him speak, and looked advisedly on his face, he knew him immediately to be the same man, that had entertained him so lovingly, conversed with him so familiarly, and counselled him so faithfully: all which overcoming his former fury, his harsh nature became meerly confounded with shame: So throwing down his drawn Sword, which he held readily prepared for the deed: he prostrated himself at *Nathans* feet, and in tears, spake in this manner. Now do I manifestly know, (most loving Father) your admirable bounty and liberality; considering with what industrious providence, you made the means for your coming hither, prodigally to bestow your life on me, which I have no right unto, although you were so willing to part with it. But those high and supream powers, more carefull of my duty, than I my self: even at the very instant, and when it was most needfull, opened the eyes of my better understanding, which infernall envy had closed up before. And therefore look how much you have been forward to pleasure me; so much the more shame and punishment, I confesse my haineous transgression hath justly deserved: take therefore on me (if you please) such revenge, as you think (in justice) answerable to my sinne.

Nathan lovingly raised *Mithridanes* from the ground, then kissing his cheek, and tenderly embracing him, he said. Sonne, thou needest not to ask, much lesse to obtain pardon, for any enterprise of thine, which thou canst not yet tearm to be good or bad: because thou soughtest not to bereave me of my life, for any hatred thou beares me, but only in covering to be reputed the worthier man. Take then this assurance of me, and beleeve it constantly, that there is no man living, whom I love and honour, as I do thee: considering the greatnes of thy mind, which consisteth not in the heaping up of money, as wretched and miserable Worldlings make it their

their only felicity; but, contending in bounty to ſpend what is thine, dieſt hold it for no ſhame to kill me, thereby to make thy ſelf ſo much the more worthily famous.

Nor is it any matter to be wondred at, in regard that the moſt puiſſant and the greateſt Kings, had never made ſuch extendure of their Dominions, and conſequently of their renown, by any other Art, than killing; yet not one man only, as thou wouldeſt have done, but infinite numbers, burning whole Countreys, and making deſolate huge Towns and Cities, only to enlarge their Dominion, and further ſpreading of their fame. Wherefore, if for the increaſing of thine own renown, thou waſt deſirous of my death: it is no matter of novelty, and therfore deſerving the leſſe marvell, ſeeing men are ſlain dayly, and all for one purpoſe or other.

Mithridanes, excuſing no further his malevolent deliberation, but rather commending the honeſt defence, which *Nathan* made on his behalf; proceeded ſo far in their diſcourſing, as to tell him plainly, that it did wondrouſly amaze him, how he durſt come to the fatal appointed place, himſelf having ſo exactly plotted and contrived his own death: whereunto *Nathan* returned this anſwer.

I would not have thee *Mithridanes*, to wonder at my counſell or determination; becauſe ſince age hath made me Maſter of mine own will, and I reſolved to do that, wherein thou haſt begun to follow me; never came any man to me, whom I did not content (if I could) in any thing he demanded of me. It was thy fortune to come for my life, which when I ſaw thee ſo deſirous to have it, I reſolved immediately to beſtow it on thee: and to much the rather, becauſe thou ſhouldſt not be the only man, that ever departed hence, without enjoying whatſoever he demanded. And to the end thou mighteſt the more aſſuredly have it, I gave thee that advice, leaſt by not enjoying mine, thou ſhouldeſt chaunce to loſe thine own. I have had the uſe of it full fourſcore years, all this while, with the conſummation of all my delights and pleaſures: and well I know, that according to the courſe of Nature (as it fares with other men, and generally with all things elſe) it cannot be long before it muſt leave me,

Wherefore, I hold it much better for me to give it away freely, as I have alwayes done my goods and treaſure; than be curious in keeping it, and ſuffer it to be taken away from me (whether I will or no) by Nature. A ſmall gift it is, if time make me up the full ſumme of an hundred years: how miſerable is it then, to ſtand beholding

ing for four or five, and all of them vexation too? Take it then I intreat thee, if thou wilt have it; for I never met with any man before (but thy self) that did desire it, nor (perhaps) shall find any other to request it: for the longer I keep it, the worse it will be esteemed: and before it grow contemptible, take it I pray thee.

Mithridanes being exceedingly confounded with shame, bashfully said: Fortune fore-fend, that I should take away a thing so precious as your life is, or once to have so vile a thought of it, as lately I had; but rather than I would diminish one day thereof, I could wish, that my time might more amply enlarge it. Forthwith answered *Nathan*, saying, Wouldst thou (if thou couldst) shorten thine own dayes, only to lengthen mine? Why then thou wouldest have me to do that to thee, which (as yet) I never did unto any man, namely robbe thee, to enrich my self. I will instruct thee in a far better course, if thou wilt be advised by me. Lusty and young, as now thou art, thou shalt dwell here in my house, and be called by the name of *Nathan*. Aged and spent with years, as thou seest I am, I will go live in thy house, and be called by the name of *Mithridanes*. So, both the name and place shall illustrate thy glory, and I live contentedly, without the very least thought of envy.

Dear Father, answered *Mithridanes*, if I knew so well how to direct mine own actions, as you do, and alwayes have done, I would gladly accept your most liberall offer: but because I plainly perceive, that my very best endeavours must remain darkned by the bright renown of *Nathan*: I will never seek to impair that in another, which I cannot (by any means) encrease in my self, but (as you have worthily taught me) live contented with my own condition.

After these, and many more like loving speeches had passed between them; according as *Nathan* very instantly requested, *Mithridanes* returned back with him to the Palace, where many dayes he highly honoured and respected him, comforting and counselling him to persevere alwayes in his honourable determination. But in the end, when *Mithridanes* could abide there no longer, because necessary occasions called him home: he departed thence with his men, having found by good experience, that he could never go beyond *Nathan* in liberality.

Signior Gentile de Carisendi, being come from Modena, to a Gentlewoman, named Madam Catharina, forth of a grave, wherein she was buried for dead: which act he did

in regard of his former honeſt affection to the ſaid Gentlewoman. Madam Catharina remaining there afterward, and delivered of a goodly Sonne: was (by Signior Gentile) delivered to her own Husband, named Signior Nicoluccio Caſtelanimico, and the young Infant with her.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is ſhewn, that true love hath always been, and ſo ſtill is, the occaſion of many worthy courteſies.

BY judgement of all the aſſembly, it was reputed wonderfull, that a man ſhould be ſo bountifull, as to give away his own life, and to his hatefull enemy. In which reſpect, it paſſed with generall affirmation, that *Nathan* (in the vertue of liberality) had exceeded *Alfonſo* King of *Spain*, but eſpecially the Abbot of *Cligni*. So after every one had delivered their opinion, the King turning himſelf to Madam *Lauretta*, gave her ſuch a ſign, as well inſtructed her underſtanding, that ſhe ſhould be the next in order, whereto ſhe gladly yielding, began in this manner.

Youthfull Ladies, the diſcourſes already paſt, have been ſo worthy and magnificent, yea, reaching to ſuch a height of glorious ſplendour; as (me thinks) there remaineth no more matter for us that are yet to ſpeak, whereby to enlarge ſo famous an argument, and in ſuch manner as it ought to be: except we lay hold on the actions of love, wherein is never any want of ſubject, this ſo fair and ſpacious a field to walk in. Wherefore, I well in behalf of the one, as advancement of the other, whereto our inſtant age is moſt of all inclined: I purpoſe to acquaint you with a generous and magnificent act, of an amorous Gentleman, which when it ſhall be duely conſidered on, perhaps will appear equall to any of the reſt, at leaſt, if it may paſſe for currant, that men may give away their treaſures, forgive mighty injuries, and lay down life it ſelf, honour and renown, (which is farre greater) to infinite dangers, only to attain any thing eſteemed and affected.

Underſtand then (Gracious hearers) that in *Bologna*, a very famous City of *Lombardy*, there lived ſometime a Knight, highly reſpected for his vertues, named Signior *Gentile de Carzſendi*, who (in his younger dayes) was enamoured of a Gentlewoman called Madam *Catharina*, the wife of Signior *Nicolucio Caſtelanimico*. And becauſe during the time of his amorous purſuit, he found but a ſcarſe enterchange of affection from the Lady; he went (as hopeleſſe of any ſucceſſe) to be Poteſtate of *Modena*, whereto he was called by place and order.

At the ſame time, Signior *Nicolucio* being abſent

from *Bologna*, and his Lady at a Farme-house in the Countrey, about three miles distant from the City, because she was great with Child, and somewhat neer the time of her teeming: it came to passe, that some dangerous accident befell her, which was so powerfull in operation, as no sign of life appeared remaining in her, but she was reputed (even in the judgement of the best Phylitians, whereof she wanted no attendance) to be verily dead. And because in the opinion of her Parents and nee eft Kindred, the time for her deliverance was yet so far off, as the Infant within her wanted much of a perfect creature; they made the less mourning; but in the next Church, as also the vault belonging to her Ancestors, they gave her buriall very speedily.

Which tidings coming to the hearing of Signior *Gentile*, by one that was his endeared friend: Although (while she lived) he could never be gracious in her favour, yet her so sudden death did greatly grieve him, whereupon he discoursed in this sort with himself. Dear Madam *Catharina*, I am not a little sorry for thy death, although (during thy life-time) I was scarcely worthy of one kind look. Yet even now being dead, thou canst not prohibit me, but I may robbe thee of a kisse. No sooner had he spoke the words, but it being then night, and taking such order as none might know of his departure: he mounted on horse-back accompanied only with one servant, and stayed no where till he came to the Vault where the Lady was buryed. Which when he had opened, with instruments convenient for his purpose, he descended down into the vault, and kneeled down by the Biere whereon she lay, and in her wearing Garments, according to the usuall manner; with tears trickling mainly down his cheeks he bestowed infinite sweet kisses on her.

But as we commonly see, that mens desires are never contented, but still will presume on further advantage, especially such as love entirely: so fared it with *Gentile*, who being once minded to get him gone, as satisfied with the oblation of his kisses, would needs yet step back again, saying, Why should I not touch her Ivory breast, the Adamant that drew all desires to adore her? Ah let me touch it now, for never hereafter can I be half so happy. Overcome with this alluring appetite, gently he laid his hand upon her breast, with the like awfull respect as if she were living, and holding it so an indifferent while: either he felt, or his imagination so perswaded him, the heart of the Lady to beat and pant. Casting off all fond fear, and the warmth of his encreasing af-

motion: his inward soul assured him, that she was not dead utterly, but had some small sense of life remaining in her, whereof he would needs be further informed. So gently as possible he could, and with the help of his man, he took her forth of the monument, and laying her softly on his horse before him, conveyed her closely to his house in *Bologna*. Signior *Gentile* had a worthy Lady to his Mother, a woman of great wisdome and vertue, who understanding by her sonne, how matters had happened, moved with compassion, and suffering none in the house to know what was done, made a good fire, and very excellent Bathe, which recalled back again wrong wandring life. Then fetching a vehement sigh, opening her eyes, and looking very strangely about her, she said. Alas! where am I now? whereto the the good old Lady kindly replyed, saying. Comfort your self Madam, for you are in a good place. Her spirits being in a better manner met together, and she gazing every way about her, not knowing well where she was, and seeing Signior *Gentile* standing before her; he entreated his mother to tell her by what means she came thither; which the good old Lady did, *Gentile* himself helping to relate the whole history. A while she grieved and lamented, but afterward gave them most hearty thanks, humbly requesting, that in regard of the love he had formerly born her, in his house she might find no other usage, varying from the honour of her self and her Husband, and when day was come, to be conveyed home to her own house. Madam, answered Signior *Gentile*, whatsoever I sought to gain from you in former days I never mean either here, or in any place else to motion any more. But seeing it hath been my happy fortune, to prove the blessed means, of reducing you from death to life: you shall find no other entertainment here, than as if you were my own Sister. And yet the good deed which I have this night done for you, doth well deserve some courteous requitall: in which respect I would have you not to deny me one favour, which I will presume to crave of you. Whereto the Lady lovingly replyed, that she was willing to grant it, provided it were honest, and in her power: whereto Signior *Gentile* thus answered.

Madam, your Parents, Kindred and friends, and generally all throughout *Bologna*, do verily think you to be dead, wherefore, there is not any one, that will make any inquisition after you: in which regard, the favour I desire from you, is no more but to abide secretly with my Mother, untill such time as I return from *Modena*,

which shall be very speedily, The occasion why I move this motion, aimeth at this end, that in presence of the chiefest persons of our City, I may make a gladsome present of you to your Husband. The Lady knowing her self highly beholding to the Knight, and the request he made to be very honest, disposed her self to do as he desired (although she earnestly longed to glad her Parents and Kindred with seeing her alive) and made her promise him on her faith, to effect it in such manner, as he pleased to appoint and give her direction.

Scarcely were these words concluded, but she felt the custome of women to come upon her, with pains and throwes incident to childing: wherefore, with help of the Aged Lady, Mother to Signior *Gentile*, it was not long before her deliverance of a goodly Sonne, which greatly augmented the joy of her and *Gentile*, who took order, that all things belonging to a woman in such a case, were not wanting, but she was as carefully respected, even as if she had been his own wife. Secretly he repaired to *Modena*, where having given direction for his place of authority; he returned back again to *Bologna*, and there made preparation for a great and solemn feast, appointing who should be his invited guests, the very chiefest persons in *Bologna*, and among them, Signior *Nicolucio Caccianimico* the especiall man.

After he was dismounted from horseback, and found so good company attending for him (the Lady also, more fair and healthfull than ever, and the Infant lively disposed) he sate down at the Table with his guests, causing them to be served in most magnificent manner, with plenty of all delicates that could be devised, and never before was there such a Joviall feast. About the ending of dinner, closely he made the Lady acquainted with his further intention, and likewise in what order every thing should be done, which being effected, he returned to his company, and used these speeches.

Honourable friends, I remember a discourse sometime made unto me, concerning the Countrey of *Persia*, and a kind of custome there observed, not to be misliked in mine opinion. When any one intended to honour his friend in effectuall manner, he invited him home to his house, and there would shew him the thing, which with greatest love he did respect; were it Wife, Friend, Sonne, Daughter, or any thing else whatsoever; wherewithall he spared not to affirme, that as he had shewed him those choise delights, the like view he should have of his heart, if with any possibility it could be done; and the very same custome I mean now to observe

ſerve here in our City. You have vouchſafed to honour me with your preſence, at this poor homely dinner of mine, and I will welcome you after the *Perſian* manner, in ſhewing you the Jewel, which (above all things in the world) I ever have moſt reſpectively eſteemed. But before I do it, I crave your favourable opinion in a doubt, which I will plainly declare unto you.

If any man having in his houſe a good and faithfull ſervant, who falling into extremity of ſickneſſe, ſhall be thrown forth into the open ſtreet, without any care or pitty taken on him: A ſtranger chanceth to paſſe by, and (moved with compaſſion of his weakneſſe) carryeth him home to his own houſe, where uſing all charitable diligence, and not ſparing any coſt, he recovereth the ſick perſon to his former health. I now deſire to know, if keeping the ſaid reſtored perſon, and imploying him about his own buſineſſe: the firſt Maſter (by pretending his firſt right) may lawfully complain of the ſecond, and yeeld him back again to the firſt Maſter, albeit he do make challenge of him?

All the Gentlemen, after many opinions paſſing among them, agreed altogether in one ſentence, and gave charge to Signior *Nicoluccio Cacciamico*, (becauſe he was an excellent and elegant ſpeaker) to give anſwer for them all. Firſt, he commended the cuſtome obſerved in *Perſia*, ſaying, he jumpt in opinion with all the reſt, that the firſt Maſter had no right at all to the ſervant, having not only (in ſuch neceſſity) forſaken him, but alſo caſt him forth into the comfortleſſe ſtreet. But for the benefit, and mercies extended to him; it was more than manifeſt, that the recovered perſon, was become juſtly ſervant to the ſecond Maſter, and in detaining him from the firſt, he did not offer him any injury at all. The whole company ſitting at the Table (being all very wiſe and worthy men) gave their verdict likewiſe with the confeſſion of Signior *Nicoluccio Cacciamico*. Which anſwer did not a little pleaſe the Knigh; and ſo much the rather, becauſe *Nicoluccio* had pronounced it, affirming himſelf to be of the ſame mind.

So, ſitting in a pretended muſing a while, at length he ſaid. My honourable gueſts, it is now more than half time, that I ſhould do you ſuch honour, as you have moſt juſtly deſerved, by performing the promiſe made unto you. Then calling two of his ſervants, he ſent them to Madam *Caſparina* (whom he had cauſed to adorn her ſelf in excellent manner) entreating her, that ſhe would be pleaſed to grace his gueſts with her preſence. *Caſparina* having deckt her child in coſtly

habiliments; laid it in her armes, and came with the ſervants into the dining Hall, and ſate down (as the Knight had appoimed) at the upper end of the Table, and then Signior *Gentile* ſpake thus. Behold, worthy Gentlemen, this is the Jewel which I have moſt affected, and intend to love none other in the world; be you my Judges, whether I have juſt occaſion to do ſo or no? The Gentlemen ſaluting her with a reſpective reverence, ſaid to the Knight, that he had great reaſon to affect her: And viewing her advisedly, many of them thought her to be the very ſame woman (as indeed ſhe was) but that they believed her to be dead.

But above all the reſt, *Nicoluccio Caccianimico* could never be ſatisfied with beholding her; and enflamed with earneſt deſire to know what ſhe was, could not refrain (ſeeing the Knight was gone out of the room) but demanded of her, whether ſhe was of *Bologna*, or a ſtranger? When the Lady heard her ſelf to be thus queſtioned, and by her husband, it ſeemed painfull to her, to contain from anſwering: Nevertheleſſe to perfect the Knights intended purpoſe, ſhe ſate ſilent. Others demanded of her, whether the ſweet Boy were hers or no; and ſome queſtioned if ſhe were *Gentile's* Wife, or no, or elſe his Kinſwoman; to all which demands, ſhe returned not any anſwer. But when the Knight came to them again, ſome of them ſaid to him. Sir, this woman is a goodly creature, but ſhe appeareth to be dumb, which were great pity, if it ſhould be ſo. Gentlemen (quoth he) it is no ſmall argument of her vertue, to ſit ſtill and be ſilent at this inſtant. Tell us then (ſaid they) of whence, and what ſhe is. Therein (quoth he) I will quickly reſolve you, upon your conditional promiſe, that none of you do remove from his place, whatſoever ſhall be ſaid or done, untill I have fully delivered my mind. Every one bound himſelf by ſolemn promiſe, to perform what he had appointed, and the Tables being voided, as alſo the Carpets laid; then the Knight (ſitting down by the Lady) thus he began.

Worthy Gentlemen, this Lady is that true and faithfull ſervant whereof I moved the queſtion to you, whom I took out of the cold ſtreet, where her Parents, Kindred, and Friends (making no account at all of her) threw her forth, as a thing vile and unprofitable. Nevertheleſs, ſuch hath been my care and coſt, that I have reſcued her out of deaths griping power; and in a meer charitable diſpoſition, which honeſt affection cauſed me to bear her; of a body, all full of terror and affrighting (as then ſhe was) I have cauſed her to become thus lovely

as

as you see. But because you may more apparently discern, in what manner this occasion hapned; I will lay it open to you in more familiar manner. Then he began the whole history from the originall of his unbeseeming affection to her (in regard she was a worthy mans wife) and consequently how all had happened to the instant hour, to the no mean admiration of all the hearers, adding withall. Now Gentlemen (quoth he) if you vary not from your further opinion, and especially Signior *Nicoluccio Caccianimico*, this Lady (by good right) is mine, and no man else, by any just title, can lay any claim to her.

All sate silent, without answering one word, as expecting what he intended further to say: but in the mean while, *Nicoluccio*, the parents and kindred, but chiefly the Lady her self, appeared as half melted into tears with weeping. But Signior *Gentile* starting up from the Table, taking the Infant in his arm, and leading the Lady by the hands, going to *Nicoluccio*, thus spake. Rise Sir, I will not give thee thy wife, whom both her kindred and thine threw forth into the street: but I will bestow this Lady on thee, being my Gossip, and this sweet Boy my God-sonne, who was (as I am verily perswaded) begotten by thee, I standing witnesse for him at the Font of Baptisme, and gave him mine own name *Gentile*. Let me entreat thee, that although she have lived here in mine house, for the space of three moneths, she should not be lesse welcome to thee than before: for I swear to thee upon my soul, that my former affection to her (how unjust soever) was the only means of preserving her life: and more honestly she could not live with Father, Mother, or thy self, than she hath done here with mine own Mother.

Having thus spoken he turned to the Lady, saying, Madam, I now discharge you of all promises made me, delivering you to your husband frank and free: And when he had given him the Lady, and the child in his arms, he returned to his place, and sate down again. *Nicoluccio*, with no mean joy and hearty contentment received both his wife and child, being before far from expectation of such an admirable comfort; returning the Knight infinite thanks (as all the rest of the Company did the like) who could not refrain from weeping for meer joy, for such a strange and wonderfull accident: every one highly commending *Gentile*, and such also as chanced to hear thereof. The Lady was welcomed home to her own house with many moneths of jovial feasting, and as she passed through the streets, all be-

beheld her with admiration, to be so happily recovered from her grave. Signior *Gentile* lived long after, a loyall friend to *Nicolucci*o and his Lady, and all that were well willers to them.

What think you now Ladies? Can you imagine, because a King gave away his Crown and Scepter; and an Abbot (without any cost to himself) reconciled a Malefactor to the Pope; and an old idle headed man, yeelding to the mercy of his enemy: that all those actions are comparable to this of Signior *Gentile*? Youth and ardent affection, gave him a just and lawfull title, to her who was free (by imagined death) from Husband, Parents, and all friends else, she being so happily wonne into his own possession. Yet honesty not only overswayed the heat of desire, which in many men is violent and immoderate: but with a bountifull and liberall soul, that which he coveted beyond all hopes else, and had within his own command; he freely gave away. Beleeve me (bright Beauties) not any of the other (in true and upright judgement) are worthy to be equalled with this, or stiled by the name of magnificent actions.

Madam Dianora, the wife of Signior Gilberto, being immoderatly affected by Signior Ansaldo, to free her self from his tedious importunity, she appointed him to perform (in her judgement) an act of impossibility; namely, to give her a Garden, as plentifully stored with fragrant Flowers in January, *as in the flourishing moneth of* May. *Ansaldo by means of a bond which he made to a Magitian, performed her request. Signior Gilberto, the Ladies Husband, gave consent, that his wife should fulfill her promise made to Ansaldo. Who hearing the bountifull mind of her husband, released her of her promise: And the Magitian likewise discharged Signior Ansaldo, without taking ought of him.*

The fifth Novell.

Admonishing all Ladies and Gentlewomen, that are desirous to preserve their chastity, free from all blemish and taxation, to make no promise of yeelding to any, under a compact or covenant, how impossible soever it seem to be.

NOt any one in all the Company, but extolled the worthy act of Signior *Gentile* to the skies; till the King gave command to Madam *Emilia*, that she should follow next with her Tale, who boldly stepping up, began in this order.

Gracious Ladies, I think there is none here present among us, but (with good reason) may maintain, that,

Signior

Signior *Gentile* performed a magnificent deed: but whosoever saith, it is impossible to be more, perhaps is ignorant in such actions, as can and may be done, as I mean to make good unto you, by a Novell not overlong or tedious.

The Countrey of *Fretulium*, better known by the name of *Forum Julii*; although it be subject to much cold, yet it is pleasant, in regard of many goodly Mountains, Rivers, and clear running Springs, wherewith it is not meanly stored. Within those Territories is a City called *Udina*, where sometime lived a fair and noble Lady, named Madam *Dianora*, Wife to a rich and worthy Knight, called Signior *Gilberto*, a man of very great fame and merit.

This beautifull Lady, being very modest and vertuously inclined, was highly affected by a noble Baron of those parts, tearmed by the name of Signior *Ansaldo Gradense*; a man of very great spirit, bountifull, active in arms, and yet very affable and courteous, which caused him to be the better respected. His love to this Lady was extraordinary, hardly to be contained within any moderate compasse, striving to be in like manner affected of her: to which end, she wanted no daily solicitings, Letters, Ambassages, and Love-tokens, all proving to no purpose.

This vertuous Lady, being wearied with his often temptations, and seeing, that by denying whatsoever he demanded, yet he would not give over his suit, but so much the more importunately still pursued her: began to bethink her self, how she might best be rid of him, by imposing some such task upon him, as should be impossible (in her opinion) for him to effect. An old woman whom he employed for his continuall messenger to her, as she came one day about her ordinary errand, with her she communed in this manner. Good woman, (quoth she) thou hast so often assured me, that Signior *Ansaldo* loveth me above all other women in the world, offering me wonderfull gifts and presents in his name, which I have alwayes refused, and so still will do, in regard I am not to be wonne by any such allurements: yet if I could be soundly perswaded, that his affection is answerable to thy peremptory protestations, I should (perhaps) be the sooner wonne, to listen to his suit in milder manner, than hitherto I have done. Wherefore, if he will give me assurance to perform such a businesse as I mean to injoyn him, he shall the speedier hear better answer from me, and I will confirm it with mine Oath.

Wonder-

Wonderfully pleased was Mistresse *Magarita*, to hear a reply of such comfortable hope; and therefore desired the Lady, to tell her what she would have done. Listen to me well (answered Madam *Dianora*) the matter which I would have him to effect for me, is; without the walls of our City, and during the moneth of *January* next ensuing, to provide me a Garden, as fairly furnished with all kind of fragrant flowers, as the flourishing Moneth of *May* can yeeld no better. If he be not able to accomplish this imposition, then I command him, never hereafter to solicit me any more, either by thee, or any other whatsoever: for, if you do importune me afterward, as hitherto I have concealed his secret conspiring both from my husband, and all my friends; so will I then lay this dishonest suit open to the world, that he may receive punishment accordingly, for offering to wrong a Gentleman in his Wife.

When Signior *Ansaldo* heard her demand, and the offer beside thereupon made him (although it seemed no easie matter, but a thing meerly impossible to be done) he considered advisedly, that she made this motion to no other end, but only to bereave him of all his hope, ever to enjoy what so earnestly he desired: nevertheless, he would not so give it utterly over, but would needs approve what could be done. Hereupon, he sent into d vers parts of the World, to find out any one that was able to advise him in this doubtfull case. In the end one was brought to him, who being well recompensed for his pains, by the Art of Nigromancy would undertake to do it. With him Signior *Ansaldo* covenanted, binding himself to pay a great summe of money, upon performance of so rare a deed, awaiting (in hopefull expectation) for the moneth of *Ianuaries* coming.

It being come, and the weather then in extremity of cold, every thing being covered with ice and snow, the Magician p evailed so by his Art, that after the Christmas holy dayes were past, and the Calends of *Ianuary* entred: in one night, and without the City walls, the goodliest Garden of flowers and fruits, was suddenly sprung up, as (in opinion of such as beheld it) never was the like seen before. Now Ladies, I think I need not demand the question whether Signior *Ansaldo* were well pleased, or no, who going to it, saw it most plenteously stored with all kind of fruit trees, flowers, herbs and plants, as no one could be named that was wanting in this artificiall Garden. And having gathered some pretty store of them, secretly he sent them to *Madam Dianora*, inviting her to come see her Garden perfected

accor-

cording to her own desire, and upon view thereof, to
assess the Integrity of his love to her; considering and
remembring withall, the promise she had made under
solemn Oath, that she might be reputed for a woman of
her word.

When the Lady beheld the fruits and flowers, and
had heard many things recounted, so wonderfully
growing in the same Garden: she began to repent her
with promise made; yet notwithstanding her repen-
tance, as women are covetous to see all rarities; so ac-
companyed with divers Ladies and Gentlewomen more,
she went to see the Garden, and having commended it
with much admiration, she returned home again, the
most sorrowfull woman that ever lived, considering
what she had tyed her self to, for enjoying this Garden.
So excessive grew her grief and affliction, that it could
not be so clouded or concealed, but her Husband took
notice of it, and would needs understand the occasion
thereof. Long the Lady (in regard of shame and mo-
desty) sate without returning any answer; but being in
the end constrained, she disclosed the whole history to
him.

At the first Signior *Gilberto* waxed exceeding angry,
but when he further considered withall, the pure and
honest intention of his Wife; wisely he pacified his for-
mer distemper, and said. *Diamora*, it is not the part of a
wise and honest woman, to lend an ear to ambassages of
such immodest nature, much lesse to compound or make
agreement for her honesty, with any person, under any
condition whatsoever. Those perswasions which the
heart listneth to, by allurement of the ear, have greater
power than many do imagine, and nothing is so uneasie
or difficult, but in a lovers judgement it appeareth pos-
sible. Ill didst thou therefore first of all to listen, but
worse (afterward) to contract.

But, because I know the purity of thy soul, I will
yield (to dischoblige thee of thy promise) as perhaps no
wise man else would do: moved thereto only by fear of
the *Magician*, who seeing Signior *Ansaldo* displeased,
because thou madest a mockage of him; will do some
such violent wrong to us, as we shall be never able to
recover. Wherefore, I would have thee to go to Signi-
or *Ansaldo*, and if thou canst (by any means) obtain
of him the safe keeping of thy honour, and full dis-
charge of thy promise; it shall be an eternall fame to
thee, and the crown of a most victorious conquest. But
if it must needs be otherwise, lend him thy body only
for once, but not thy will; for actions committed by

some

constraint, wherein the will is no way guilty, are half pardonable by the necessity.

Madam *Dianora* hearing her husbands words, wept exceedingly, and avouched, that she had not deserved any such especiall grace of him, and therefore she would rather die, than do it. Nevertheless it was the will of her husband to have it so, and therefore (against her will) she gave consent. The next morning, by the break of day, *Dianora* arose, and attiring her self in her very meanest garments, with two serving men before her, and a waiting woman following, she went to the lodging of Signior *Ansaldo*, who hearing that Madam *Dianora* was come to visit him, greatly marvelled, and being risen, he called the Magitian to him, saying. Come go with me, and see what effect will follow upon thine Art. And being come into her presence, without any base or inordinate appetite, he did her humble reverence, embracing her honestly, and taking her into a goodly Chamber, where a fair fire was readily prepared, causing her to sit down by him, he said unto her as followeth.

Madam, I humbly intreat you to resolve me, if the affection I have long time born you, and yet do still, deserve any recompence at all: you would be pleased then to tell me truly, the occasion of your instant coming hither, and thus attended as you are. *Dianora* blushing with a modest shame, and the tears trickling mainly down her fair cheeks, thus answered. Signior *Ansaldo*, not for any love I bear you, or care of my faithfull promise made to you, but only by the command of my husband (who respecting more the pains and travels of your inordinate love, than his own reputation and honour, or mine) hath caused me to come hither: and by vertue of his command, am ready (for once only) to fulfill your pleasure, but farre from any will or consent in my self. If Signior *Ansaldo* were abashed at the first, he began now to be more confounded with admiration, when he heard the Lady speak in such strange manner: and being much moved with the liberall command of her husband, he began to alter his inflamed heat, into most honourable respect and compassion, returning her this answer.

Most noble Lady, the gods forbid (if it be so as you have said) that I should (Villain-like) foil the honour of him, that takes such unusuall compassion of my unchaste appetite. And therefore, you may remain here so long as you please, in no other condition, but as mine own naturall born Sister; and likewise, you

may

may depart freely when you will: conditionally, that (on my behalf) you render such thanks to your husband, as you think convenient for his great bountie towards me, accounting me for ever hereafter, as his loyall Brother and faithfull servant. *Dianora* having well observed his answer, her heart being ready to mount out at her mouth with joy, said All the world could never make me beleeve (considering your honourable mind and honestly) that it would happen otherwise to me, than now it hath done; for which noble courtesie, I will continually remain obliged to you. So, taking her leave, she returned home honourably attended to her husband, and relating to him what had happened, it proved the occasion of begetting intire love and friendship, between himself and the Lord *Ansaldo*.

Now concerning the skilfull Magician, to whom *Ansaldo* meant to give the bountiful recompence agreed on between them, he having seen the strange liberality, which the husband expressed to Signior *Ansaldo*, and that of *Ansaldo* to the Lady, he presently said. Great *Jupiter* strike me dead with thunder, having my self seen a husband so liberall of his honour, and you Sir, of true noble kindnesse, if I should be not the like of my recompense: for, perceiving it to be so worthily imployed, I am well contented that you shall keep it. The noble Lord was modestly ashamed, and strove (so much as in him lay) that he should take all, or the greater part thereof: but seeing he laboured meerly in vain, after the third day was past, and the Magician had destroyed the Garden again, he gave him free liberty to depart, quite controlling all fond and unchaste affection in himself, either towards *Dianora*, or any Lady else, and living (ever after) as best becometh any noble man to do.

What say you now Ladies? Shall we make any account of the woman well-neer dead, and the kindnesse grown cold in Signior *Gentile*, by losse of his former hopes, comparing them with the liberality of Signior *Ansaldo*, affecting more fervently, than ever the other did? And being (beyond hope) possessed of the booty, which (above all things in the world) he most desired to have, to part with it meerly in fond compassion? I protest (in my judgement) the one is no way comparable to the other; that of *Gentile*, with this last of Signior *Ansaldo*.

Victorious King Charles surnamed the Aged, and first of that name, fell in love with a young Maiden, named Geno-

Genevera, daughter to an antient Knight, called Signior Neri degli Uberti. And waxing ashamed of his amorous folly, caused both Genevera, and her fair Sister Isotta, to be joyned in mariage with two noble Gentlemen; the one named Signior Maffeo da Palazzi, and the other, Signior Gulielmo della Magna.

The sixth Novell.

Sufficiently declaring, that how mighty soever the power of Love is: yet a magnanimous and truly generous heart, it can by no means fully conquer.

WHo is able to expresse ingenuously, the diversity of opinions, which hapned among the Ladies, in censuring on the act of *Madam Dianora*, and which of them was most liberall, either Signior *Gilberto* the husband, Lord *Ansaldo* the importunate suiter, or the *Magician*, expecting to be bountifully rewarded. Surely, it is matter beyond my capacity: but after the King had permitted their disputation a long while, looking on *Madam Fiammetta*, he commanded that she should report her Novell to make an end of their controversie; and she (without any further delaying) thus began.

I did alwayes (noble Ladies) hold it fit and decent, that in such an assembly as this of ours is, every one ought to speak so succinctly and plainly, that the obscure understanding, concerning the matters spoken of, should have no cause of disputation. For disputes do much better become the Colledges of Scholars, than to be among us, who hardly can manage our Distaves or Samplars. And therefore I do intend to relate something, which peradventure might appear doubtfull: will forbear (seeing you in such a difference, for that which hath been spoken already) to use any difficult discourse; but will speak of one, a man of no mean rank and quality, being both a valiant and vertuous King, and what he did, without any impeach or blemishment to his honour.

I make no doubt, but you have often heard report of King *Charles* the Aged, and first of that name, by reason of his magnificent enterprises, as also his most glorious victory which he obtained against King *Manfred*, when the *Ghibellines* were expulsed forth of *Florence*, and the *Guelphes* returned thither again. By which occasion, an antient Knight named Signior *Neri degli Uberti*, forsaking then the City with all his Family and great store of wealth, would live under any other obedience, than the awfull power and command of King *Charls*. And coveting to be in some solitary place, where he might finish the remainder of his dayes in peace, he

went

went to *Castello de Mare*; where, about a Bow-shoot distance from all other dwelling houses, he bought a parcell of ground, plentifully stored with variety of Trees, bearing Olives, Chesnuts, Oranges, Lemmons, Pomcitrons, and other excellent fruitages, wherewith the Countrey flourisheth abundantly. There he built a fair and commodious house, and planted (close by it) a pleasant Garden, in the middest whereof, because he had plenty of water: according as other men use to do, being in the like case so well provided; he made a very goodly Pond, which forthwith had all kind of Fish swimming in it, it being his dayly care and endeavour to tend his Garden, and increase his Fish pond.

It fortuned that King *Charls* (in the Summer time) for his pleasure and recreation went to repose himself (for some certain dayes) at *Castello de Mare*, where having heard report of the beauty and singularity of *Neries* Garden; he grew very desirous to see it. But when he understood to whom it belonged, then he entred into consideration with himself, that he was an antient Knight, maintaining a contrary faction to his: wherefore, he thought it fit to go in some familiar manner, and with no train attending on him. Whereupon he sent him word, that he would come visit him, with four Gentlemen only in his company, meaning to sup with him in his Garden the next night ensuing. The newes was very welcome to Signior *Neri*, who took order in costly manner, for all things to be done, entertaining the King joyfully into his beautifull Garden.

When the King had surveyed all, and the house likewise, he commended it beyond all other comparison, and the Tables being placed by the Ponds side, he washed his hands therein, and then sate down at the Table, commanding the Count, Sir *Guy de Montforte* (who was one of them which came in his company) to sit down by him, and Signior *Neri* on the other side. As for the other three of the train, he commanded them to attend on his service, as Signior *Neri* had given order. There wanted no exquisite Viandes, and excellent Wines, all performed in most decent manner, and without the least noise or disturbance, wherein the King took no little delight.

Feeding thus in this contented manner, and fancying the solitude of the place; sodainly entred into the Garden, two young Damosels, each aged about some fifteen years, their hair resembling wiars of Gold, and curiously cutled, having Chaplets (made like provinciall Crowns) on their heads, and their delicate faces,

ex-

expreſſing them to be rather Angels, than mortall creatures, ſuch was the appearance of their admired beauty. Their under garments were of coſtly ſilk, yet white as the fineſt ſnow, framed (from the girdle upward) cloſe to their bodies, but ſpreading largely downward, like the extendure of a Pavilion, and ſo deſcending to the feet. She that firſt came in ſight, carryed on her ſhoulder a couple of fiſhing Nets, which ſhe held faſt with her left hand, and in the right ſhe carried a long ſtaffe, the other following her, had on her left ſhoulder a Frying pan, and under the ſame arm a ſmall Faggot of wood, with a Trevit in her hand; and in the other hand a Pot of Oyle, as alſo a brand of fire.

No ſooner did the King behold them, but he greatly wondered what they ſhould be; and, without uttering one word, attended to liſten what they would ſay. Both the young Damoſels, when they were come before the King, with modeſt and baſhfull geſture, they performed very humble reverence to him and going to the place of entrance into the Pond, ſhe who had the Trevit, ſet it down on the ground, with the other things alſo; and taking the ſtaffe, which the other Damoſell carryed: they both went into the Pond, the water whereof reached ſo high as to their boſoms. One of the ſervants to Signior *Neri*, preſently kindled the fire, ſetting the Trevit over it, and putting Oyle into the Frying-pan, held it upon the Trevit, awaiting untill the Damoſels ſhould caſt him up Fiſh. One of them did beat a place with the ſtaffe, where ſhe was aſſured of the Fiſhes reſort, and the other had alſo lodged the Nets ſo conveniently, as they quickly caught great ſtore of Fiſh, to the Kings high contentment, who obſerved their behaviour very reſpectively.

As the Fiſhes were thrown up to the ſervant, alive as they were he took the beſt and faireſt of them, and brought them to the Table, where they skipt and mounted before the King, Count *Guy de Montfort*, and the Father: ſome leaping from the Table into the Pond again, and others, the King (in a pleaſing humour) voluntarily threw back to the Damoſels. Jeaſting and ſporting in this manner, till the ſervant had dreſt divers of them in exquiſite order, and ſerved them to the Table, according as Signior *Neri* had ordained. When the Damoſels ſaw the Fiſhes ſervice performed, and perceived that they had fiſhed ſufficiently: they came forth of the water, their garments then (being wet) hanging cloſe about them, even as if they hid no part of their bodies. Each having taken thoſe things again,

which

which at first they brought with them, and saluting the King in like humility as they did before, returned home to the mansion house.

The King and Count likewise, as also the other attending Gentlemen, having duely considered the behaviour of the Damosels: commended extraordinarily their beauty and fair feature, with those perfections of Nature, so gloriously shining in them. But (beyond all the rest) the King was boundlesse in his praises given of them, having observed their going into the water, the equall carriage there of them both, their coming forth, and gracious demeanour at their departing (yet neither knowing of whence or what they were) he felt his affection very violently flamed, and grew into such an amorous desire to them both, not knowing which of them pleased him most, they so choisely resembled one another in all things.

But after he had dwelt long enough upon these thoughts, he turned himself to Signior *Neri*, and demanded of him, what Damosels they were. Sir (answered *Neri*) they are my Daughters, both brought into the world at one birth, and Twinnes, the one being named *Genevera* the fair, and the other *Isotta* the amiable. The King began again to commend them both, and gave him advice to get them both marryed: wherein he excused himself, alleadging, that he wanted power to doe it. At the same instant time, no other service remaining to be brought to the Table, except Fruit and Cheese, the two Damosels returned again, attired in goodly Robes of Carnation Sattin, formed after the Turkish fashion, carrying two fair silver dishes in their hands, filled with divers delicate fruits, such as the season then afforded, setting them on the Table before the King. Which being done, they retired a little backward, and with sweet melodious voyces, sung a Ditty, beginning in this manner:

When Love presumeth into place,
Let no one sing in Loves disgrace.

So sweet and pleasing seemed the Song to the King (who took no small delight, both to hear and behold the Damosels) even as if all the Hierarchies of Angels, were descended from the heavens to sing before him. No sooner was the song ended, but (humbly on their knees) they craved favour of the King for their departing. Now, although that their departure was greatly grieving to him, yet (in outward appearance) he seemed willing to grant it.

When

When supper was concluded, and the King and his company remounted on horseback: thankfully departing from Signior *Neri*, the King returned to his lodging, concealing there closely his affection himself, and whatsoever important affairs happened, yet he could not forget the beauty, and gracious behaviour of *Genevera* the fair (for whose sake he loved her sister likewise) but became so linked to her in vehement manner, as he had no power to think on any thing else. Pretending other urgent occasions, he fell into great familiarity with Signior *Neri*, visiting very often his goodly Garden; only to see his fair Daughter *Genevra*, the Adamant which drew him thither.

When he felt his amorous assaults to exceed the power of longer sufferance: he resolved determinately with himself, (being unprovided of any better means) to take her away from her Father, and not only she, but her sister also; discovering both his love and intent to Count *Guy de Montforte*, who being a very worthy and vertuous Lord, and meet to be a Counseller for a King, delivered his mind in this manner.

Gracious Lord, I wonder not a little at your speeches, and so much the greater is my admiration, because no man else can be subject to the like, in regard I have known you from the time of your infancy, even to this instant hour, alwayes your carriage to be one and the same. I could never perceive in your youthfull dayes, (when love should have the greatest means to assail you) any such oppressing passions: which is now the more novell and strange to me, to hear it but said, that you being old, and called the Aged, should be grown amorous; surely to me it seemeth a miracle. And if it appertained to me to reprehend you in this case, I know well enough what I could say. Considering, you have yet your Armeur on your back, in a Kingdom newly conquered, among a Nation not known to you, full of falshoods, breaches, and treasons; all which are no mean motives to care and needfull respect. But having now wonne a little leisure, to rest your self a while from such serious affairs; can you give way to the idle suggestions of love? Beleeve me Sir, it is no act becoming a magnanimous King; but rather the giddy folly of a young brain.

Moreover you say (which most of all I mislike) that you intend to take the two Virgins from the Knight, who hath given you entertainment in his house beyond his ability; and to testifie how much he honoured you, he suffered you to have a sight of them, meerly (almost)

in

a naked manner: witneſſing thereby, what conſtant faith he repoſed in you, beleeving verily, that you were a juſt King, and not a ravenous Wolf. Have you ſo ſoon forgot, that the rapes and violent actions, done by King *Manfred* to harmleſſe Ladies, made your only way of entrance into this Kingdom? What treaſon was ever committed, more worthy of eternall puniſhment, than this will be in you: to take away from him (who hath ſo highly honoured you) his chiefeſt hope and conſolation? What will be ſaid by all men, if you do it?

Peradventure you think, it will be a ſufficient excuſe for you, to ſay: I did it in regard he was a *Ghibelline*. Can you imagine this to be juſtice in a King, that hath get into their poſſeſſion in this manner (whatſoever it be) ought to uſe it in this ſort? Let me tell you Sir, it was a worthy victory for you to conquer King *Manfred*: but it is far more famous victory, for a man to conquer himſelf. You therefore, who are ordained to correct vices in other men, learn to ſubdue them in your ſelf, and (by bridling this inordinate appetite) ſet not a ſoul blemiſh on ſo fair a fame, as will be honour to you to preſerve ſpotleſs.

Theſe words pierced the heart of the King deeply, and ſo much the more afflicted him, becauſe he knew them to be moſt true: wherefore after he had vented a very vehement ſigh, thus he replyed. Beleeve me noble Count, there is not any enemy, how ſtrong ſoever he be, but I hold him weak and eaſie to be vanquiſhed, by him who is skilfull in the warre, where a man may learn to conquer his own appetite. But becauſe he ſhall find it a laborious task, requiring ineſtimable ſtreagth and courage: your words have ſo toucht me to the quick, that it becometh me to let you effectually perceive (and within the compaſſe of a few dayes) that as I have learned to conquer others, ſo I am not ignorant, in expreſſing the like power upon my ſelf.

Having thus ſpoken, within ſome few dayes after, the King being returned to *Naples*, he determined, as well to free himſelf from any the like enſuing folly, as alſo to recompenſe Signior *Neri*, for the great kindneſſe he had ſhewn to him (although it was a difficult thing, to let another enjoy what he rather deſired for himſelf) to have the two Damoſels maried, not as the Daughters of Signior *Neri*, but even as if they were his own. And by conſent of the Father, he gave *Genevera* the fair, to Signior *Maffeo da Palizzi*, and *Iſotta* the amiable, to Signior *Guiſelmo della Magna*, two noble Knights, and honourable Barons. After he had thus given them in mar-

marriage, in ſad mourning he departed thence into *Apuglia*, where by following worthy and honourable actions, he ſo well overcame all inordinate appetites: that ſhaking off the enthralling fetters of love, he lived free from all paſſions, the reſt of his life time, and dyed as an honourable King.

Some perhaps will ſay, it was a ſmall matter for a King, to give away two Damoſels in marriage, and I confeſſe it: but I maintain it to be great, and more than great, if we ſay, that a King, being ſo earneſtly enamoured as this King was; ſhould give her away to another, whom he ſo dearly affected himſelf, without receiving (in recompenſe of his affection) ſo much as a ſeat, flowre, or the leaſt fruit of love. Yet ſuch was the vertue of this magnificent King, expreſſed in ſo highly recompenſing the noble Knights courteſie, honouring the two Daughters ſo royally, and conquering his own affections ſo vertuouſly.

Liſma, the Daughter of a Florentine Apothecary, named Bernardo Puccio, being at Palermo, and ſeeing Pyre, King of Aragon run at the Tilt; fell ſo affectionately enamoured of him, that ſhe languiſhed in an extreame and long ſickneſs. By her own device, and meane of a Song, ſung in the hearing of the King: he vouchſafed to viſit her, and giving her a kiſſe, terming himſelf alſo to be her Knight for ever after, he honourably beſtowed her in marriage on a young Gentleman, who was called Perdicone, and gave him liberall endowments with her.

The ſeventh Novell.

Wherein is covertly given to underſtand, that howſoever a Prince may make uſe of his abſolute power and authority, towards Maids or Wives that are his Subjects: yet he ought to deny and reject all things as ſhall make him forgetfull of himſelf, and his true honour.

MAdam *Fiammetta* being come to the end of her Novel, and the great magnificence of King *Charles* much commended (howbeit ſome of the company, affecting the *Gibelline* faction, were otherwiſe minded) Madam *Pampinea*, by order given from the King, began in this manner.

There is no man of good underſtanding (honorable Ladies) but will maintain what you have ſaid of victorious *Charles*; except ſuch as cannot wiſh well to any. But becauſe my memory hath inſtantly informed me, of an action (perhaps) no leſſe commendable than this, done by an enemy of the ſaid King *Charles*, and to

no young Maiden of our City, I am the more willing to relate it upon your gentle attention vouchsafed, as hitherto it hath been courteously granted.

At such time as the *French* were driven out of *Sicily*, there dwelt at *Palermo* a *Florentine* Apothecary, named *Bernardo Puccio*, a man of good wealth and reputation, who had by his wife one only Daughter of marriageable years, and very beautifull. *Piero* King of *Aragon*, being then become Lord of that Kingdome, he made a Feast Royall at *Palermo*, accompanyed with his Lords and Barons. In honour of which publique Feast, the King kept a triumphall day (of Justs and Turnament) at *Catalano*, and whereat, it chanced, that the Daughter of *Bernardo*, named *Lisana*, was present. Being in a window, accompanyed with other Gentlewomen, she saw the King run at the Tilt, who seemed so goodly a person in her eye, that being never satisfied with beholding him, she grew enamoured, and fell into extremity of affection towards him.

When the Festivall was ended, she dwelling in the house of her Father, it was impossible for her to think on any thing else, but only the love, which she had fixed on a person of such height. And that which most tormented her in this case, was the knowledge of her own condition, being but mean and humble in degree; whereby she confessed, that she could not hope for any successefull issue of her proud love. Nevertheless she would not refrain from affecting the King, who taking no note of this kindnesse in her, by any perceivable means, must needs be the more regardlesse, which procured (by wary observation) her afflictions to be the greater and intolerable.

Whereupon it came to passe, that this earnest love increasing in her more and more, and one melancholly conceit taking hold on another; the fair Maid, when she could bear the burthen of her grief no longer; fell into a languishing sicknesse, consuming away daily (by evident appearance) even as the Snow melteth by the warm beams of the Sunne.

The Father and Mother much dismaied and displeased at this hapelesse accident, applying her with continuall comforts, Physick and the best skill remaining in all the Physitians, sought all possible means to give her succour: but all proved to no effect, because in regard of her choise (which could sort to none other than a desperate end) she was desirous to live no longer. Now it fortuned, that her Parents offering her whatsoever remained in their power to perform, a sudden ap-

prehenſion, entred her mind, to wit, that (if it might poſſibly be done) before ſhe died, ſhe would firſt have the King to know, in what manner ſhe ſtood affected to him Wherefore, one day ſhe entreated her Father, that a Gentleman, named *Manutio de Arezzo*, might be permitted to come ſee her. This *Manutio* was (in thoſe times) held to be a moſt excellent Muſitian, both for his voyce in ſinging, and exquiſite skill in playing on Inſtruments, for which he was highly in favour with King *Piero*, who made (almoſt) daily uſe of him, to hear him both ſing and play.

Her tender and loving Father conceived immediately, that ſhe was much deſirous to hear his playing and ſinging, both being comfortable to a body in a languiſhing ſickneſſe, whereupon he ſent preſently for the Gentleman, who came accordingly, and after he had comforted *Liſana* with kind and courteous ſpeeches; he played dexteriouſly on his Lute, which purpoſely he had brought with him, and likewiſe he ſung divers excellent Ditties, which inſtead of his intended conſolation to the Maid, did nothing elſe but increaſe her fire and flame.

Afterward ſhe requeſted to have ſome conference with *Manutio* alone, and every one being gone forth of the Chamber, ſhe ſpake unto him in this manner.

Manutio I have made choiſe of thee, to be the faithfull Guardian of an eſpeciall ſecret, hoping firſt of all, that thou wilt never reveal it to any living body, but only to him whom I ſhall bid thee: And next, to help me ſo much as poſſibly thou canſt, becauſe my only hope relyeth in thee. Know then my deareſt friend *Manutio*, that on the ſolemn Feſtivall day, when our Soveraign Lord the King, honoured his exaltation with the noble exerciſes of Tilt and Turney; his brave behaviour kindled ſuch a ſpark in my ſoul, as ſince brake forth into a violent flame, and brought me to this weak condition as now thou ſeeſt. But knowing and confeſſing, how farre unbeſeeming my love is, to aim ſo ambitiouſly at a King, and being unable to controul it, or in the leaſt manner to diminiſh it: I have made choice of the only and beſt remedy of all, namely, to die, and ſo I am moſt willing to do. True it is, that I ſhall travell in this my lateſt journey, with endleſſe affliction of ſoul, except he have ſome underſtanding thereof before, and not knowing by whom to give him intelligence, in ſo due and convenient order, as by thee: I do therefore commit this laſt office to thy truſt, deſiring thee, not to refuſe me in the performance thereof. And

when

when thou haſt done it, to let me underſtand what he ſaith, that I may die the more contentedly, and diſburdened of ſo heavy an oppreſſion, the only comfort to a parting ſpirit: and ſo ſhe ceaſed, her tears flowing forth abundantly.

Mauutio did not a little wonder at the *Maids* great ſpirit, and her deſperate reſolution, which moved him in exceeding commiſeration, and ſuddenly he conceived, that honeſtly he might diſcharge his duty for her, whereupon he returned her this anſwer. *Liſana*, here I engage my faith to thee, that thou ſhalt find me firm and conſtant, and die I will, rather than deceive thee. Greatly I do commend thy high attempt, in fixing thy affection on ſo potent a King, wherein I offer thee my utmoſt aſſiſtance and I make no doubt (if thou would'ſt be of good comfort) to deal in ſuch ſort, as before three dayes are fully paſt, to bring ſuch newes as will content thee; and becauſe I am loath to loſe the leaſt time, I will go about it preſently. *Liſana* the young Maiden, once again entreated his care and diligence, promiſing to comfort her ſelf ſo well as ſhe could, commending him to his good fortune. When *Mauutio* was gone from her, he went to a Gentleman, named *Mico Senna*, one of the beſt Poets in compoſing of verſes, in all thoſe parts yeelded not the like. At his requeſt, *Mico* made for him this enſuing Ditty.

The Song ſung in the hearing of King Piero *on the behalf of Love ſick* LISANA.

Go Love, and tell the torments I endure,
Say to my Soveraign Lord, that I muſt die,
Except he come, ſome comfort to procure,
For tell I may not, what I feel, and why.

With heaved hands Great Love I call to thee,
Go ſee my Soveraign where he doth abide,
And ſay to him, in what extreamity,
Thou haſt (for him) my ſi m affections tri'd.
To die for him, it is my ſole deſire,
To live with him, I may not, nor aſpire
To have my fortunes thereby dignified;
Only his ſight would lend me life a while:
Grant it (great Love) mine anguiſh to beguile.
Go Love, and tell the torments, &c.

Since the firſt hour that love enthralled me,
I never had the heart to tell my grief.
My thoughts did ſpeak, for thoughts be always free,
Yet hopefull thoughts do find but poor relief.

When Gnats will mount to Eagles in the air,
Alas! they scorn them, for full well they know,
They were not bred to prey so base and low.
Aloft they look, to make their flight more fair.
And yet his sight will lend me life a while:
Grant it (great love) mine anguish to beguile.
Go love, and tell the torments, &c.

If sight shall be denyed, then tell them plain,
His high triumphall day procur'd my death,
The Launce that wonne him honour hath me slain,
For instantly it did bereave my breath.
That speak I could not, nor durst be so bold,
To make the air acquainted with my woe:
Alas! I look'd so high, and doing so,
Justly deserve by death to be control'd.
Yet mercies sight would lend me life a while,
Grant it (great Love) mine anguish to beguile.
Go love, and tell the torments, &c.

The lines contained in this Ditty, *Manutio* fitted with notes so moving and singularly musicall, that every word had the sensible motion of life in it, where the King being (as yet) not risen from the Table, he commanded him to use both his Lute and voyce.

This seemed a happy opportunity to *Manuccio*, to sing the Ditty so purposely done and devised: which he delivered in such excellent manner, the voyce and Instrument concording so extraordinary pleasing; that all the persons then in the Presence, seemed rather Statues, than living men, so strangely they were wrapt with admiration, and the King himself, farre beyond all the rest, transported with a rare kind of change and alteration.

When *Manutio* had ended the Song, the King demanded of him, whence this Song came, because he had never heard it before? My gracious Lord, answered *Manutio*, it must needs seem strange to your Majesty, because it is not fully three dayes since it was invented, made, and set to the notes. Then the King asked, whom it concerned? Sir (quoth *Manutio*) I dare not disclose that to any, but only your self. Which answer made the King much more desirous, and being risen from the Table, he took him into his Bed-chamber, where *Manutio* related all at large to him, according to the trust reposed to him. Wherewith the King was wonderfully well pleased, greatly commending the courage of the Maid, and said, that a Virgin of such a valiant spirit, did well deserve to have her case commiserated: and commanded him

him alſo, to go (as ſent from him) and comfort her, with promiſe, that the very ſame day in the evening, he would not fail to come and ſee her.

Mauntio, more than contented, to carry ſuch glad tidings to *Liſana*; without ſtaying in any place, and taking his Lute alſo with him, went to the Apothecaries houſe, where ſpeaking alone with the Maid: he told her what he had done, and afterward ſung the Song to her, in as excellent manner as he had done before, wherein *Liſana* conceived ſuch joy and contentment, as even in the very ſame moment, it was obſerved by apparent ſigns, that the violence of her fits forſook her, and health began to get the upper hand of them. So, without ſuffering any one in the houſe to know it, or by the leaſt means to ſuſpect it; ſhe comforted her ſelf till the evening, in expectation of her Soveraigns arrivall.

Piero being a Prince, of moſt liberall and benign nature, having afterward divers times conſidered on the matters which *Mauntio* had revealed to him, knowing alſo the young Maiden, to be both beautifull and vertuous; was ſo much moved with pity of her extremity, as mounting on horſe-back, in the evening, and ſeeming as if he rode abroad for his private recreation, he went directly to the Apothecaries houſe, where deſiring to ſee a goodly Garden, appertaining then to the Apothecary, he diſmounted from his horſe. Walking into the Garden, he began to queſtion with *Bernardo*, demanded him for his Daughter, and whether he had (as yet) married her, or no? My Gracious Lord, anſwered *Bernardo*, as yet ſhe is not married, neither likely to be, in regard ſhe hath had a long, and tedious ſickneſs: but ſince dinner time, ſhe is indifferently eaſed of her former violent pain, which we could not diſcern the like alteration in her, a long while before.

The King underſtood immediately, the reaſon of this ſo ſudden alteration, and ſaid. In good faith *Bernardo*, the world would ſuſtain a great main and imperfection, by the loſſe of thy fair Daughter; wherefore, we will go our ſelf in perſon to viſit her. So, with two of his Lords only, and the Father, he aſcended to the Maids Chamber, and being entred, he went to the beds ſide, where ſhe ſate, ſomewhat raiſed, in expectation of his coming, and taking her by the hand, he ſaid. Fair *Liſana*, how cometh this to paſſe? You being ſo fair a Virgin, young, and in your delicacie of your dayes, which ſhould be the chiefeſt comfort to you, will you ſuffer your ſelf to be over-awed with ſickneſſe? Let us intreat you, that (for our ſake) you will

be of good comfort, and thereby recover your health the sooner, especially, when it is requested by a King, who is sorry to see so bright a beauty sick, and would help it, if it lay in his power.

Lisana feeling the touch of his hand, whom she loved above all things in the world, although a bashfull blush mounted up into her cheeks: yet her heart was seazed with such a rapture of pleasure, that she thought her self translated into Paradise, and so well as she could thus she replyed. Great King, by opposing my feeble strength, against a burthen of over ponderous weight, it became the occasion of this grievous sickness: but I hope that the violence thereof is (almost) already kild, only by this soveraign mercy in you, and doubtlesse it will cause my speedy deliverance. The King did best understand this so well palliated answer of *Lisana*, which as he did much commend, in regard of her high adventuring; so he did again as greatly condemn Fortune, for not making her more happy in her birth.

So, after he had stayed there a good while and given her many comfortable speeches, he returned back to the Court. This humanity of the King was reputed a great honour to the Apothecary and his daughter, who (in her own mind) received as much joy and contentment thereby, as ever any wife could have of her own Husband.

And being assisted by better hopes, within a short while after, she became recovered, and far more beautifull (in common judgement) than ever she was before.

Lisana being now in perfect health, the King consulted with his Queen, what meet recompence he should gratifie her withall for loving and affecting him in such fervent manner. Upon a day determined, the King mounted on horseback, accompanyed with many of his chiefest Lords and Barons, he rode to the Apothecaries house, where walking in his beautifull Garden, he called for *Bernardo* and his daughter *Lisana*. In the mean space, the Queen also came thither, royally attended on by her Ladies, and *Lisana* being admitted into their company, they expressed themselves very gracious to her. Soon after, the King and the Queen called *Lisana*, and the King spake in this manner.

Fair Virgin, the extraordinary love which you bare to us, calleth for as great honour from us to you; in which respect, it is our Royall desire, by one means or other to requite your kind love. In our opinion the chiefest honour we can extend to you, is, that being of sufficient years for marriage, you would grace us so much

much, as to accept him for your Husband, whom we intend to bestow on you. Beside this further grant from us, that (no withstanding whatsoever else) you shall call us your Knight; without covering any thing else from you, for so great favour, but only one kisse, and think not to bestow it nicely on a King, but grant it the rather, because he begges it.

Lisana, whose looks were dyed with a vermilian tincture or rather converted into a pure maiden blush, reputing the Kings desire to be her own; in a low and humble voice thus answered. My Lord, most certain am I, that if it had been publikly known how none but your Highnesse might serve for me to fix me love on, I should have been termed the fool of all fools; they perhaps beleeving, that I was forgetfull of my self, in being ignorant of my own condition, and much lesse of yours. But the gods are my witnesses (because they know the secrets of all hearts) that even in the very instant, when Loves fire took hold on my yeelding affection: I knew you to be a King, and my self the daughter of poor *Bernardo* the Apothecary: likewise, how farre unfitting it was for me, to be so ambitious in my loves presuming. But I am sure your Majesty doth know (much better than I am able to expresse) that no one becometh amorous, according to the duty of election, but as the appetite shapeth his course, against whose Lawes my strength made many resistances, which not prevailing, I presumed so love, did, and so for ever shall do, your Majesty.

Now Royall Soveraign, I must needs confesse, that so soon as I felt my self thus wholly conquered by loving you, I resolved for ever after, to make your will mine own, and therefore am not only to accept him for my husband, whom you shall please to appoint, befitting my honour and degree: but if you will have me to live in a flaming fire, my obedience shall sacrifice it self to your will, with the absolute conformity of mine own. To stile you by the name of my Knight, whom I know to be my lawfull King and Soveraign; you are not ignorant, how farre unfitting a word that were for me to use: As also the kisse which you request, in requitall of my love to you; to these two I will never give consent, without the Queens most gracious favour and license first granted. Nevertheless for such admirable benignity used to me, both by your Royall self, and by your vertuous Queen, heaven showre down all boundless graces on you both, for it exceedeth all merit in me: and so she ceased speaking, in most dutifull manner.

The anſwer of *Liſana* pleaſed the Queen exceedingly, in finding her to be ſo wiſe and fair, as the King himſelf had before informed her: who inſtantly called for her Father and Mother, and knowing they would be well pleaſed with whatſoever he did; he called for a proper young Gentleman, but ſomewhat poor, being named *Perdicano*, and putting certain Rings into his hand, which he refuſed not to receive, cauſed him there to eſpouſe *Liſana*. To whom the King gave immediately (beſides Chains and Jewels of ineſtimable value, delivered by the Queen to the Bride) *Ceffalu* and *Catabelotta*, two great Territories abounding in divers wealthy poſſeſſions, ſaying to *Perdicano*. Theſe we give thee, as a dowry in marriage with this beautifull Maid, and greater gifts we will beſtow on thee hereafter, as we ſhall perceive thy love and kindneſs to her.

When he had ended theſe words, he turned to *Liſana*, ſaying. Here do I freely give over all further fruits of your affect. o towards me, thanking you for your former love: ſo taking her head between his hands, he kiſſed her fair forehead, which was the uſuall cuſtome in thoſe times. *Perdicano*, the Father and Mother of *Liſana*, and ſhe her ſelf likewiſe, extraordinarily joyfull for this ſo fortunate a marriage, returned humble & hearty thanks both to the King and Queen, and (as many credible Authors do affirm) the King kept his promiſe made to *Liſana*, becauſe (ſo long as he lived) he always termed himſelf by the name of her Knight, and in all act ons of Chivalry by him undertaken, he never carried any other deviſe, but ſuch as he received from her.

By this, and divers other like worthy deeds, not only did he winne the hearts of his ſubjects; but gave occaſion to the whole world beſide, to renown his fame to all ſucceeding poſterity. Whereto (in theſe more wretched times of ours) few or none bend the ſway of underſtanding: but rather how to be cruell and tyrannous Lords, and therefore win their peoples hatred.

Sophronia thinking her ſelf to be the married wife of Giſippus, was (indeed) the wife of Titus Quintus Fulvius, and departed thence with him to Rome. *Within a while after, Giſippus alſo came thither in very poor condition, and thinking that he was deſpiſed by Titus, grew weary of his life, and confeſſed that he had murdered a man, with full intent to die for the fact. But Titus taking knowledge of him, and deſiring to ſave the life of Giſippus, charged himſelf to have done the bloody deed. Which the Murderer himſelf (ſtanding then among the multi-*

multitude) seeing, truely confessed the deed. By means whereof, all three were delivered by the Emperor Octavius: and Titus gave his Sister in marriage to Gisippus giving them also the most part of his goods and inheritances.

The eighth Novell.

Declaring, that notwithstanding the frowns of Fortune; diversity of occurrences, and contrary accidents happening: yet love and friendship ought to be precisely preserved among men.

BY this time Madam *Philomena*, at command of the King, (Madam *Pampinea* ceasing) prepared to follow next in order, whereupon thus she began. What is it (Gracious Ladies) that Kings cannot do (if they list) in matters of greatest importance, and especially unto such as most they should declare their magnificence? He then that performeth what he ought to do, when it is within his own power, doth well. But it is not so much to be admired, neither deserveth half the commendations, as when one man doth good to another, when least it is expected, as being out of his power, and yet performed. In which respect, because you have so extolled King *Piero* as appearing not meanly meritorious in your judgements: I make no doubt but you will be much more pleased, when the actions of our equalls are duely considered, and shall parallell any of the greatest Kings. Wherefore I purpose to tell you a Novell, concerning a honourable courtesie of two worthy friends.

At such time as *Octavius Cæsar* (not as yet named *Augustus*, but only in the office called *Triumviri*) governed the *Roman* Empire, there dwelt in *Rome* a Gentleman, named *Publius Quintus Fulvius*, a man of singular understanding, who having one Sonne named *Titus Quintus Fulvius*, of towardly years and apprehension, sent him to *Athens* to learn Philosophy, but with letters of familiar commendations, to a noble *Athenian* Gentleman, named *Chremes*, being his antient friend, of long acquaintance. This Gentleman lodged *Titus* in his own house, as a companion to his Son, named *Gisippus*, both of them studying together, under the tutoring of a Philosopher, called *Aristippus*. These two young Gentlemen living thus in one City, house and School, fed between them such a brother hood and amity, as they could not be severed from one another but only by the accident of death; nor could either of them enjoy any content, but when they were both together in company.

Being each of them endued with gentle spirits, and

having begun their ſtudies together: they aroſe (by degrees) to the glorious height of Philoſophy, to their much fame and commendation. In this manner they lived, to the no mean comfort of *Chremes*, hardly diſtinguiſhing the one from the other for his Son, and thus the Scholars continued the ſpace of three years. At the ending whereof, (as it hapneth in all things elſe) *Chremes* died, whereat both the young Gentlemen conceived ſuch hearty grief, as if he had been their common father; nor could the kindred of *Chremes* diſcern, which of the two had moſt need of comfort, the loſſe touched them ſo equally.

It chanced within ſome two moneths after, that the kindred of *Giſippus* came to ſee him, and (before *Titus*) adviſed him to marriage, and with a young Gentlewoman of ſingular beauty, derived from a moſt noble houſe in *Athens*, and ſhe named *Sophronia*, aged about fifteen years. This marriage drawing neer, *Giſippus* on a day, intreated *Titus* to walk along with him thither, becauſe (as yet) he had not ſeen her. Coming to the houſe, and ſhe ſitting in the midſt between them, *Titus* making himſelf a conſiderator of beauty, and eſpecially on his friends behalf; began to obſerve her very judiciouſly, and every part of her ſeemed ſo pleaſing in his eye, that giving them all a private praiſe, yet anſwerable to their due deſerving; he became ſo enflamed with affection to her, as never any Lover could be more violently ſurprized, ſo ſodainly doth beauty beguile our beſt ſenſes.

After they had ſate an indifferent while with her, they returned home to their lodging, while *Titus* being alone in his Chamber, began to bethink on her whole perfections had ſo powerfully pleaſed him: and the more he entred into this conſideration, the fiercer he felt his deſires enflamed, which being unable to quench, by reaſonable perſwaſions, after he had vented forth infinite ſighs, thus he queſtioned.

Moſt unhappy *Titus* as thou art, whither doeſt thou tranſport thine underſtanding, love and hope? Doſt thou not know as well by the honourable favours, which thou haſt received of *Chremes* and his houſe, as alſo the intire amity between thee and *Giſippus* (unto whom fair *Sophronia* is the affianced friend) that thou ſhouldſt hold her in the like reverent reſpect, as if ſhe were thy true born Siſter? Dareſt thou preſume to fancy her? Whither ſhall beguiling love allure thee, and vain imagining hopes carry thee? Open the eyes of thy better underſtanding, and acknowledge thy ſelf to be a

moſt

most miserable man, give way to reason, bridle thine intemperate appetites, reform all irregular desires, and guide thy fancy to a place of better direction. Resist thy wanton and lascivious will in the beginning, and be Master of thy self, while thou hast opportunity; for what thou aimest at, is neither reasonable nor honest. And if thou were assured to prevail upon this pursuit, yet thou ought'st to avoid it, if thou hast any regard of true friendship, and the duty therein justly required. What wilt thou do then *Titus*? Fly from this inordinate affection, if thou wilt be reputed to be a man of sensible judgement.

After he had thus discoursed with himself, remembring *Sophronia*, and converting his former allegations, into a quite contrary sense, in utter detestation of them, and guided by his idle appetite, thus he began again. The lawes of love are of greater force, than any other whatsoever, they not only break the bands of friendship, but even those also of more divine consequence. How many times it hath been noted, the Father to affect his own daughter, the brother his sister, and the stepmother her son in law, matters far more monstrous, than to see one friend love the wife of another, a case happening continually? Moreover, I am young, and youth is wholly subjected to the passions of Love: is it reasonable then, that those should be barred from me, which are fitting and pleasing to Love? Honest things belong to men of more years and maturity, than I am troubled withall, and I can covet none, but only those wherein Love is directer. The beauty of *Sophronia* is worthy of generall love, and if I that am a young man do love her, what man living can justly reprove me for it? Should not I love her because she is affianced to *Gisippus*? That is no matter to me. I ought to love her because she is a woman, and women were created for no other occasion, but to be loved. Fortune hath sinned in this case, and not I, in directing my friends affection to her rather than any other; and if she ought to be loved, as her perfections do challenge, *Gisippus* understanding that I affect her may be the better contented that it is I, rather than any other.

With these and the like entercourses, he often mocked himself, falling into the contrary, and then to this again, and from the contrary into another kind of alteration, wasting and consuming himself, not only this day and the night following, but many more afterward, till he lost both his feeding and his sleep, so that through debility of body, he was constrained to keep his

b.d.

bed. *Gisippus* who had divers dayes noted his melancholly disposition, and now his falling into extremity of sickneſſe, was very sorry to behold it: and with all means and inventions he could deviſe to uſe, he both queſtioned the cauſe of this ſtrange alteration, and eſſayed every way, how he might beſt comfort him, never ceaſing to demand a reaſon, why he ſhould be thus ſad and ſickly. But *Titus* after infinite importuning (which ſtill he anſwered with idle and frivolous excuſes, farre from the truth indeed, and (to the no mean affliction of his friend) when he was able to uſe no more contradictions; at length, in ſighs and tears, thus he replyed.

Giſippus, were the gods ſo well pleaſed, I could more gladly yeeld to die, than continue any longer in this wretched life; conſidering that Fortune hath brought me to ſuch an extremity, as proof is now to be made of my conſtancy and vertue; both which I find conquered in me, to my eternall confuſion and ſhame. But my beſt hope is, that I ſhall ſhortly be requited as I have in juſtice deſerved, namely with death, which will be a thouſand times more welcome to me, that a loathed life with remembrance of my baſe dejection in courage; which becauſe I can no longer conceal from thee, nor without bluſhing ſhame, I am well contented for to let thee know it.

Then began he to recount the whole occaſion of this ſtrange conflict in him, what a main battell he had with his private thoughts, confeſſing that they got the victory, cauſing him to die hourly for the love of *Sophronia*, and affirming withall, that in due acknowledgement, how greatly he had tranſgreſſed againſt the lawes of friendſhip, he thought no other penance ſufficient for him, but only death, which he willingly expected every hour, and with all his heart would gladly bid welcome.

Giſippus hearing this diſcourſe, and ſeeing how *Titus* bitterly wept, in agonies of moving afflictions; ſate an indifferent while ſad and penſive, as being wounded with affection to *Sophronia*, but yet in a well governed and temperate manner. So, without any long delaying, he concluded with himſelf; that the life of his friend ought to be accounted much more dear, than any love he could bear unto *Sophronia*: And in this reſolution, the tears of *Titus* forcing his eyes to flow forth like two fountains, and running down his Cheeks, thus he replyed.

Titus, if thou hadſt not need of comfort, as plainly ſeeth my heart, I would juſtly complain of thee to my ſelf,

self, as of the man who hath violated our friendship, in keeping thine extremity so long time concealed from me, which hath been over-tedious for thee to endure. And although it might seem to thee a dishonest case, and therefore kept from the knowledge of thy friend, yet I plainly tell thee, that dishonest courses (in the league of amity) deserve no more concealment, than those of the honestest nature. But leaving these impertinent wandrings, let us come to them of much greater necessity.

If thou doest earnestly love fair *Sophronia*, who is betrothed and affianced to me, it is no matter for me to marvell at: but I should rather be much abashed, if thou couldst not intirely affect her, knowing how beautifull she is, and the nobility of her mind, being as able to sustain passion, as the thing pleasing is fullest of excellency. And look how reasonably thou sanctest *Sophronia*, as unjustly thou complainest of thy Fortune, in ordaining her to be my wife, although thou doest not speak it expressly: as being of an opinion, that thou mightest with more honesty love her, if she were any others, than mine. But if thou art so wise, as I have always held thee to be, tell me truely upon thy faith, to whom could Fortune better guide her, and for which thou oughtest to be more thankfull, than in bestowing her on me? Any other that had enjoyed her, although thy love was never so honest, yet he would better affect her himself, than for thee, which thou canst not (in like manner) look for from me, if thou doest accounte me for thy friend, and as constant now as ever.

Reason is my warrant in this case, because I cannot remember, since first our entrance into friendship, that ever I enjoyed any thing, but it was as much thine, as mine. And if our affairs had such an equall course before, as otherwise they could not subsist; must they not now be kept in the same manner? Can any thing more particularly appertain to me, but thy right therein is as absolute as mine? I know not how that thou mayst esteem of my friendship, if in any thing concerning myself, I can plead my priviledge to be above thine. True it is, that *Sophronia* is affianced to me, and I love her dearly, daily expecting when our Nuptials shall be celebrated. But seeing thou doest more fervently affect her, as being better able to judge of the perfection, remaining in so excellent a creature as she is, than I do: assure thy self, and beleeve it constantly, that she shall come to my bed, not as my wife, but only thine. And therefore leave these despairing thoughts, shake off this

cloudy

cloudy disposition, reassume thy former joviall spirit, with comfort and what else can content thee: in expectation of the happy hour, and the just requitall of thy long, loving, and worthy friendship, which I have alwayes valued as mine own life.

Titus hearing this answer of *Gisippus*, look how much the sweet hope of that which he desired gave him pleasure, as much both duty and reason affronted him with shame; setting before his eyes this due consideration, that the greater the liberality of *Gisippus* was, far greater and unreasonable it appeared to him in disgrace, if he should unmannerly accept it. Wherefore, being unable to refrain from tears, and with such strength as his weaknesse would give leave, thus he replyed.

Gisippus, thy bounty and firm friendship sufferreth me to see apparently, what (on my part) is no more than ought to be done. All the gods forbid, that I should receive as mine, her whom they have adjudged to be thine, by true respect of birth and desert. For if they had thought her a wife fit for me, do not thou or any else imagine, that ever she should have been granted to thee. Use freely therefore thine own election, and the gracious favour wherewith they have blessed thee: leave me to consume away in teares, a mourning garment by them appointed for me as being a man unworthy of such happinesse; for either I shall conquer this disaster, and that will be my Crown, or else it will vanquish me, and free me from all pain: whereto *Gisippus* presently thus answered.

Worthy *Titus*, if our amity would give me so much license, as but to contend with my self in pleasing thee with such a thing as I desire, and could also induce thee therein to be directed: it is the only end whereat I aim, and am resolved to pursue it. In which regard, let my perswasions prevail with thee, and thereto I conjure thee, by the faith of a friend, suffer me to use mine authority, when it extendeth both to mine own honour, and thy good, for I will have *Sophronia* to be only thine. I know sufficiently, how farre the forces of love do extend in power, and am not ignorant also, how not once, or twice, but very many times, they have brought Lovers to unfortunate ends, as now I see thee very neer it, and so farre gone, as thou art not able to turn back again, nor yet to conquer thine own teares, but proceeding on further in this extremity, thou wilt be left vanquished, sinking under the burthen of loves tyrannical oppression, and then my turn is next to follow thee. And therefore had I no other rea-

son

son to love thee, yet because this life is dear to me, in regard of mine own depending thereon; I stand the neerer thereto obliged. For this cause, *Sophronia* must and shall be thine, for thou canst not find any other so conform to thy fancy. Albeit I who can easily convert my liking to another wife, but never to have the like friend again, shall hereby content both thee, and my self.

Yet perhaps this is not a matter so easily done, nor I to expresse such liberality therein, if wives were to be found with the like difficulty, as true and faithfull friends: but (being able to recover another wife) though never such a worthy friend; I rather chuse to change, I do not say lose her (for in giving her to thee, I lose her not my self) and by this change, make that which was good before, ten times better, and so preserve both thee and my self. To this end therefore, if my prayers and perswasions have any power with thee, I earnestly entreat thee, that by freeing thy self out of this affliction thou wilt (in one instant) make us both truely comforted, and dispose thy self (living in hope) to embrace that happinesse, which the fervent love thou bearest to *Sophronia* hath justly deserved.

Now although *Titus* was confounded with shame, to yeeld consent, that *Sophronia* should be accepted as his wife, and used many obstinate resistances: yet notwithstanding, love pleading on the one side powerfully, and *Gisippus* as earnestly perswading on the other, thus he answered. *Gisippus*, I know not what to say, neither how to behave my self in this election, concerning the fitting of my contentment, or pleasing thee in thy importunate perswasion. But seeing thy liberality is so great, as it surmounteth all reason or shame in me, I will yeeld obedience to thy more than noble nature. Yet let this remain for thine assurance, that I do not receive this grace of thine, as a man not sufficiently understanding, how I enjoy from thee, not only her whom most of all I do affect, but also do hold my very life of thee. Grant then you greatest gods (if you be the Patrons of this mine unexpected felicity) that with honour and due respect, I may hereafter make apparently known; how highly I acknowledge this thy wonderfull favour, in being more mercifull to me, than I could be to my self.

For abridging of all further circumstances, answered *Gisippus*, and for easier bringing this matter to full effect, I hold this to be our only way. It is not unknown to thee, how after much discourse had between my kindred, and those belonging to *Sophronia*, the matri-

monial

moniall conjunction was fully agreed on, and therefore if now I shall flie off, and say, I will not accept her as my wife: great scandall would arise thereby, and make much trouble among our friends, which could not be greatly displeasing to me, if that were the way to make her thine. But I rather stand in fear, that if I forsake her in such peremptory sort, her kindred and friends will bestow her upon some other, and so she is utterly lost, without all possible means of recovery. For prevention therefore of all sinister accidents, I think it best, (if thy opinion jump with mine) that I still pursue the business, as already I have begun, having thee alwayes in my company, as my dearest friend, and only associate. The nuptials being performed with our friends, in secret manner at night (as we can cunningly enough contrive it) thou shalt have her maiden honour in bed, even as if she were thine own wife. Afterward, in apt time and place, we will publiquely make known what is done; if they take it well, we will be as jocond as they: if they frown and wax offended, the deed is done, over late to be recalled, and so perforce they must rest contented.

You may well imagine, this advice was not a little pelasing to *Titus*, whereupon *Gisippus*, received home *Sophronia* into his house, with publique intention to make her his wife, according as was the custome then observed; and *Titus* being perfectly recovered, was present at the Feast very ceremonially observed. When night was come, the Ladies and Gentlewomen conducted *Sophronia* to the Bride Chamber, where they left her in her Husbands bed, and then departed all away: The Chamber wherein *Titus* used to lodge, joyned close to that of *Gisippus*, for their easier accesse each to the other, at all times whensoever they pleased; and *Gisippus* being alone in the Bride Chamber, preparing as if he were coming to bed: extinguishing the light, he went softly to *Titus*, willing him to go to bed to his Wife. Which *Titus* hearing, overcome with shame and fear, became repentant, and denyed to go. But *Gisippus* being a true entire friend indeed, and confirming his words with actions, after a little lingering dispute, sent him to the Bride, and as soon as he was in the bed with her, taking *Sophronia* gently by the hand softly he moved the usuall question to her, if she were willing to be his wife.

She believing verily that he was *Gisippus*, modestly replyed. Sir, I have chosen you to be my Husband, reason requires then, that I should be willing to be your wife.

wife. At which words a coſtly Ring, which *Giſippus* uſed daily to wear, he put upon her finger, ſaying, With this Ring, I confeſſe my ſelf to be your Husband, and bind you for ever my Spouſe and Wife; no other kind of marriage was obſerved in thoſe dayes, and ſo he continued all the night with her, ſhe never ſuſpecting him to be any other than *Giſippus*: and thus was the marriage conſummated between *Titus* and *Sophronia*, albeit the friends (on either ſide) thought otherwiſe.

By this time *Publius* the Father of *Titus*, was departed out of this mortall life, and letters came to *Athens*, that with all ſpeed he ſhould return to *Rome*, to take order for occaſions there concerning him; wherefore he concluded with *Giſippus* about his departure, and taking *Sophronia* thither with him, which was no eaſie matter to be done, untill it were firſt known, how occaſions had been carried among them. Whereupon, calling her one day into her Chamber, they told her entirely, how all had paſt; which *Titus* confirmed ſubſtantially, by ſuch direct paſſages between themſelves, as exceeded all poſſibility of denyall, and moved in her much admiration; looking each on other very diſcontentedly, ſhe heavily weeping and lamenting, and greatly complaining of *Giſippus*, for wronging her ſo unkindly.

But before any further noiſe was made in the houſe, ſhe went to her Father, to whom, as alſo to her Mother, ſhe declared the whole treachery, how much both they, and their other friends, were wronged by *Giſippus*, in vouching her ſelf to be the wife of *Titus*, and not of *Giſippus*, as they ſuppoſed. Theſe newes were highly diſpleaſing to the Father of *Sophronia*, who with her Kindred, as alſo thoſe of *Giſippus*, made great complaints to the Senate, very dangerous troubles and commotions ariſing dayly between them, drawing both *Giſippus* and *Sophronia* into harſh reports; he being generally reputed, not only worthy of all bitter reproof, but alſo the ſeereſt puniſhment. Nevertheleſs, he maintained publiquely what he had done, avouching it for an act both of honour and honeſty, wherewith *Sophronia*'s friends had no reaſon to be offended, but rather to take it in very thankfull part, having married a man of farre greater worth and reſpect, than himſelf was, or could be.

On the other ſide, *Titus* hearing theſe uncivil exclamations, became much moved and provoked at them, but knowing it was a cuſtome obſerved among the *Greeks*, to be ſo much the more hurried away with rumours and threatnings, as leſſe they find them to be

anſwe-

answered, and when they find them, shew themselves not humble enough, but rather as base men, and of no courage; he resolved with himself, that their braveries were no longer to be endured, without some bold and manly answer. And having a *Roman* heart, as also an *Athenian* understanding, by politick perswasions, he caused the Kindred of *Gisippus* and *Sophronia*, to be assembled in a Temple, and himself coming thither, accompanyed with none but *Gisippus* only, he began to deliver his mind before them all, in this manner following.

The Oration uttered by Titus Quintus Fulvius, *in the hearing of the* Athenians, *being the Kindred and Friends to* Gisippus, *and* Sophronia.

MAny Philosophers do hold opinion, that the actions performed by mortall men, do proceed from the disposing and ordination of the immortall gods. Whereupon some do maintain, that things which be done, or never are to be done, proceed of necessity: albeit some other do hold, that this necessity is only referred to things done. Both which opinions (if they be considered with mature judgement) do most manifestly approve, that they who reprehend any thing which is irrevocable, do nothing else but shew themselves, as if they were wiser than the gods, who we are to beleeve, that with perpetuall reason, and void of any error do dispose and govern both us and all our actions; In which respect, how foolish and beast-like a thing it is presumptuously to check or controul their operations, you may very easily consider; and likewise, how justly they deserve condign punishment, who suffer themselves to be transported in so temerarious a manner.

In which notorious transgression I understand you all to be guilty, if common fame speak truly concerning the marriage of my self and *Sophronia*, whom you imagined, as given to *Gisippus*; for you never remember, that it was so ordained from eternity, she to be mine, and no wife for *Gisippus*, as at this instant is made manifest by full effect. But because the kind of speaking, concerning divine providence, and intention of the gods, may seem a difficult matter to many, and somewhat hard to be understood: I am content to presuppose, that they meddle not here with any thing of ours, and will only stay my self on humane reasons, and in this nature of speech I shall be enforced to do two things quite contrary to my naturall disposition. The one is, to speak somewhat in praise and commendation of my self: and the other, justly to blame and condemn

demn other mens seeming estimation. But because both in the one and the other, I do not intend to swerve a jot from the Truth, and the necessity of the present case in question, doth not only require, but also command it, you must pardon what I am to say.

Your complaints do proceed, rather from fury than reason, and with (continuall murmurings or rather seditious) slander, backbite and condemn *Gisippus*, because (of his own free will and noble disposition) he gave her to be my wife, whom (by your election) was made his; wherein I account him most highly praiseworthy: and the reasons inducing me thereunto, are these. The first, because he hath performed no more than what a friend ought to do: and the second, in regard he hath dealt more wisely than you did. I have no intention to display (at this present) what the secret law of amity requireth, to be acted by one friend towards another, it shall suffice me only to inform you, that the league of friendship (farre stronger than the bond of bloud and kindred) confirmed us in our election of either at the first, to be true, loyall, and perpetual friends; whereas that of kindred, cometh only by fortune or chance. And therefore if *Gisippus* affected more my life, than your benevolence, I being ordained for his friend, as I do now confesse my self to be; none of you ought to wonder thereat, in regard it is no matter of marvell.

But let us come now to our second reason, wherein, with farre greater instance I will shew you, that he hath (in this occasion) shewn himself to be much more wise, than you did, or have done: because it plainly appeareth, that you have no feeling of the divine providence, and much lesse knowledge in the effects of friendship. I say, that your foresight, counsell and deliberation, gave *Sophronia* to *Gisippus*, a young Gentleman, and a Philosopher: *Gisippus* likewise hath given her to a young Gentleman, and a Philosopher, as himself is. Your discretion gave her to an *Athenian*; the gift of *Gisippus*, is to a *Roman*. Yours to a noble and honest man; that of *Gisippus*, to one more noble by race, and no lesse honest than himself. Your judgement hath bestowed her on a rich young man: *Gisippus* hath given her to one farre richer. Your wisdom gave her to one who not only loved her not, but also one that desired not to know her: *Gisippus* gave her unto him, who above all felicity else, yea, more than his own life, both entirely loved and desired her.

Now, for proof of that which I have said, to be most true and infallible, and that his deed deserveth to be much

much more commended than yours, let it be duely considered on, point by point. That I am a young man and a Philosopher, as *Gisippus* is; my years, face, and studies, without seeking after further proof, doth sufficiently testifie: One self same age is both his and mine, in like quantity of course have we lived, and studied together. True it is, that he is an *Athenian*, and I am a *Roman*. But if the glory of these two Cities should be disputed on; then let me tell you, that I am of a City that is frank and free, and he is of a Tributary City. I say, that I am of a City which is chief Lady and Mistresse of the whole world, and he is of a City subject to mine. I say, that I am of a City, that is strong in Arms, Empire, and Study also: whereas his can commend it self but for Studies only. And although you seem here to be a Scholar, in appearance mean enough, yet I am not descended of the simplest stock in *Rome*.

My houses and publique places are filled with the ancient Statues of my Predecessors, and the Annals record the infinite triumphs of the *Quintii*, brought home by them into the *Roman* Capitole, and years cannot eat out the glory of our name, but it will live and flourish to all posterity.

Modest shame makes me silent in my wealth and possessions, my mind truely telling me, that honest contented poverty, is the most ancient and richest inheritance, of our best and noblest *Romans*; which opinion, if it be condemned by the understanding of the ignorant multitude, and herein we shall give way to them by preferring riches and worldly treasures, then I can say, that I am abundantly provided, not as ambitious, nor greedily covetous, but sufficiently stored with the goods of Fortune.

I know well enough, that you held it as a desired benefit, *Gisippus* being a Native of your City, should also be linked to you by alliance: but I know no reason, why I should not be as neer and deer to you at *Rome*, as if I lived with you here. Considering, when I am there, you have a ready and well willing friend, to stead you in all beneficiall and serviceable offices, as carefull and provident for your support, yea, a Protector of you, and your affairs, as well publique as particular. Who is it then, not transported with partiall affection, that can (in reason) more approve your act, than that which my friend *Gisippus* hath done? Questionlesse not any one, as I think. *Sophronia* is married to *Titus Quintus Fulvius*, a noble Gentleman by antiquity, a rich Citizen of *Rome*, and (which is above all) the

the friend of *Gisippus*: therefore, such a one that thinks it strange, is sorry for it, or would not have it be; knoweth not what he doth.

Perhaps there may be some, who will say, they do not so much complain, that *Sophronia* is the wife to *Titus*: but of the manner whereby it was done, as being made his wife secretly, and by theft, not any of her friends called thereto, no, not so much as advertised thereof. Why Gentlemen this is no miraculous thing, but heretofore hath oftentimes happened, and therefore no novelty.

I cannot count unto you, how many there have been, who (against the will of their Father) have made choice of their husbands; nor of them that have fled away with their Lovers into strange Countreys, being first friends, before they were wives: nor of them who have sooner made testimony of marriage by their bellies, than those ceremonies due to matrimony, or publication thereof by the tongue; so that meer necessity and constraint, hath forced the Parents to yeeld consent: which hath not so hapned to *Sophronia*, for she was given to me by *Gisippus* discreetly, honestly, and orderly.

Others also may say, that she is marryed to him, to whom it belonged not to marry her. These complaints are fooliſh, and womaniſh, proceeding from very little or no consideration at all. In these dayes of ours, Fortune makes no use of novel or inconsiderate means, whereby to bring matters to their determined effect. Why should it offend me, if a Cobler, rather than a Scholar, hath ended a business of mine, either in private or in publike, if the end be well made? Well, I may take order, if the Cobler be indiscreet, that he meddle no more with any matters of mine, yet I ought in courtesie, to thank him for that which he did.

In like manner, if *Gisippus* hath married *Sophronia* well, it is fooliſh and superfluous, to find fault with the manner he used in her marriage. If you mislike his course in the case, beware of him hereafter, yet thank him because it is no worse.

Nevertheleſſe, you are to understand, that I sought not by fraud or deceit, (but only by wit) any opportunity, whereby any way to sully the honesty and clear Nobility of your blood, in the person of *Sophronia*: for although in secret I made her my wife, yet I came not as an enemy, to take her perforce, nor (like a Raviſher) wronged her Virginity, to blemiſh your noble titles, or despiſing you alliance. But fervently enflamed by her bright beauty, and incited also by her unparallel'd vertues, I shaped my course; knowing well enough, that if

I took the ordinary way of wiving, by moving the question to you, I should never winne your consent, as fearing, lest I would take her with me to *Rome*, and so convey out of your sight a Jewel by you so much esteemed, as she is.

For this and no other reason, did I presume to use the secret cunning which now is openly made known unto you: and *Gisippus* disposed himself thereunto, which otherwise he never determined to have done, in contracting the marriage for me, and she consenting to me in his name.

Moreover, albeit most earnestly I affected her, I sought to procure your union, not like a lover, but as a true husband, nor would I immodestly touch her, till first (as her self can testifie) with the words becoming wedlock, and the Ring also I espoused her, demanding of her, if she would accept me as her Husband, and she answered me, with her full consent. Wherein, if it may seem that she was deceived, I am not any way to be blamed, but she, for not demanding, what, and who I was.

This then is the great evil, the great offence, and the great injury committed by my friend *Gisippus*, and by me as a Lover: that *Sophronia* is secretly become the wife of *Titus Quintus Fulvius*. And for this cause, like Spies you watch him, threaten him daily, as if you intended to tear him in pieces. What could you do more, if he had given her to a man of the very vilest condition? to a villain, to a slave? What prisons, what fetters, or what torments are sufficient for this fact? But leaving those frivolous matters, let us come to discourse of more moment, and better beseeming your attention.

The time is come that I may no longer continue here, because *Publius* my Father is dead, and I must needs return to *Rome*, wherefore being minded to take *Sophronia* thither with me, I was the more willing to acquaint you therewith, as also what else I have said, which otherwise had been concealed from you. Nor can you but take it in good part, if you be wise, and rest well contented with what is done: considering if I had any intention either to deceive, or otherwise wrong you; I could have basely left her, and made a scorn both of her and you, you not having any power to stay me here. But the gods will never permit that any courteous *Roman*, should ever conceive so vile and and degenerate a thought.

Sophronia, by ordination of the gods, by force of humane lawes, and by the laudable consent of my friend

Gi-

Giſippus, as alſo the powerfull command of Love is mine. But you perchance, imagining your ſelves to be wiſer than the gods, or any other men whatſoever; may think ill of it, and more brutiſhly than beaſts, condemn their working in two kinds, which would be offenſive to me. The one is, the detaining of *Sophronia* from me, of whom you have no power, but what pleaſeth me. The other is your bitter threatnings againſt *Giſippus* my dear friend, to whom you are in duty obliged. In both which caſes, how unreaſonably ſoever you carry your ſelves, I intend not at this time to preſſe any further. But rather let me counſell you like a friend, to ceaſe your hatred and diſdain, and ſuffer *Sophronia* to be delivered me, that I may depart contentedly from you as a Kinſman, and (being abſent) remain your friend: aſſuring you, that whether what is done, ſhall pleaſe or elſe diſpleaſe you, if you purpoſe to proceed any otherwiſe; I will take *Giſippus* along with me, and when I come to *Rome*, take ſuch ſure order to fetch her hence, who in juſtice is mine, even in meer deſpight of you all; and then you ſhall feel by ſound experience, how powerfull is the juſt indignation of the wronged *Romans*.

When *Titus* had thus concluded his Oration, he roſe up with a ſtern and diſcontented countenance, and took *Giſippus* by the hand, plainly declaring that he made ſmall account of all the reſt that were in the Temple; and ſhaking his head at them, rather menaced than any otherwiſe ſeemed to care, or ſtand in fear of them.

They which tarried when they were gone, conſidering partly of the reaſons alleadged by *Titus*, and partly terrified by his lateſt ſpeeches; became induced, to like well of his alliance and amity, as (with common conſent) they concluded: that it was much better to accept *Titus* as their Kinſman (ſeeing *Giſippus* had made manifeſt refuſall thereof) than to loſe the kindred of the one, and procure the hatred of the other. Wherefore they went to ſeek *Titus*, and ſaid unto him, they were very well contented that *Sophronia* ſhould be his Wife, be their dear and loving Kinſman, and *Giſippus* to remain their much reſpected friend. And embracing one another, making a ſolemn feaſt, ſuch as in the like caſes is neceſſarily required, they departed from him, preſently ſending *Sophronia* to him, who making a vertue of neceſſity, converted her love (in ſhort time after) to *Titus*, in as effectuall manner, as formerly ſhe had done to *Giſippus*, and ſo was ſent away with him to *Rome*, where ſhe was received and welcomed with very great honour.

Giſip-

Gisippus remaining still at *Athens*, in small regard of either theirs, or his own friends, not long after, by means of sundry troublesome Citizens; and partialities happening among the common people, was banished from *Athens*, and he, as also all his family, condemned to perpetuall exile: during which tempestuous time, *Gisippus* was become not only wretchedly poor, but wandred abroad as as a common Beggar; in which miserable condition he travelled to *Rome*, to trie if *Titus* would take any acknowledgement of him. Understanding that he was living, and one most respected among the *Romans*, as being a great Commander, and a Senator: he enquired for the place where he dwelt, and going to be near about his house, stayed there so long, till *Titus* came home, yet not daring to manifest himself, or speak a word to him, in regard of his poor and miserable estate, but strove to have him see him, to the end, that he might acknowledge and call him by his name; notwithstanding, *Titus* passed by him without either speech or looking on him. Which when *Gisippus* perceived, and making full account, that (at the least) he would remember him, in regard of former courtesies, done to him: confounded with grief, and desperate thoughts he departed thence, never meaning to see him any more.

Now, in regard it was night, he having eaten nothing all that day, nor provided of one penny to buy him any food, wandred he knew not whither, desiring rather to die than live; he came at last to an old ruinous part of the City, over-spread with briers and bushes, and seldome resorted unto by any: where finding a hollow Cave or Vault, he entred into it, meaning there to wear away the comfortlesse night, and laying him down on the hard ground, almost stark naked, and without any warm garments, over-wearyed with weeping, at last he fell into an sleep.

It fortuned that two men, who had been abroad the same night, committing thefts and robberies together; somewhat very early in the morning, came to the same Cave, intending there to share and divide their booties, and differences, happening between them about it, he that was the stronger person, slew there the other, and then went away with the whole purchase.

Gisippus having heard and seen the manner of this accident, was not a little joyfull, because he had now found a way to death, without laying any violent hand on himself; for life being very loathsome to him, it was his only desire to die. Wherefore he would not budge from

from the place, but tarried there so long, till the Sergeants and Officers of Justice (by the information of him that did the deed) came thither well attended, and furiously led *Gisippus* thence to prison. Being examined concerning this bloudy fact, he plainly confessed, that he himself had committed the murther, and afterward would not depart from the Cave, but purposely stayed for apprehension, as being truly toucht with compunction for so foul an offence: upon which peremptory confession, *Marcus Varro* being then Prætor, gave sentence that he should be crucified on a Crosse, as it was the usuall manner of death in those dayes. *Titus* chancing to come at the same time into the *Prætorium*, all-sudedly beholding the face of the condemned man (as he sate upon the Bench) knew him to be *Gisippus*, not a little wondring at this strange accident, the poverty of his estate, and what occasion should bring him thither, especially in the questioning for his life, and before the Tribunall of Justice.

His soul earnestly thirsting by all possible means to help and defend him, and no other course could now be taken for safety of his life, but by accusing himself, to excuse and clear the other of the crime: he stept from off the judgement Bench and crouding through the throng to the Barre, called out to the Prætor in this manner. *Marcus Varro*, recall thy sentence given on the condemned man sent away, because he is truly guiltlesse and innocent: With one bloody blow have I offended the gods, by killing that wretched man, whom the Sergeants found this morning slain, wherefore noble Prætor, let no innocent mans bloud be shed for it, but only mine, that have offended.

Marcus Varro stood like a man confounded with admiration, being very sorry for that which the whole assistants had both seen and heard, and yet he could not (with honour) desist from what must needs be done, but would perform the Lawes severe injunction. And finding for condemned *Gisippus* back again, in the presence of *Titus*, thus he spake to him. How becamest thou so madly incensed, as (without any torment inflicted on thee) to confesse an offence by thee never committed? Art thou weary of thy life? Thou chargest thy self falsely, to be the person who this last night murdered the man in the Cave, and there is another that voluntarily also doth confesse his guiltinesse.

Gisippus lifting up his eyes, and perceiving it was *Titus*, conceived immediately, that he had done this only for his deliverance, as one that remembred him sufficiently, and would not be ungratefull for former kind-

neſſes received. Wherefore the tears flowing abundantly down his cheeks, he ſaid to Judge *Varro*, it was none but I that murdered the man; wherefore, I commiſerate the caſe of this noble Gentleman *Titus*, who ſpeaks now too late for the ſafety of my life. *Titus* on the other ſide, ſaid. Noble Prætor, this man (as thou ſeeſt) is a ſtranger here, and was found without any weapon, faſt aſleep by the dead body: thou mayeſt then eaſily perceive, that meerly the miſerable condition wherein he is, hath made him deſperate, and he would make mine offence the occaſion of his death. Abſolve him, and ſend me to the croſſe, for none but I only have deſerved to die for this notorious fact.

Varro was amazed, to obſerve with what earneſt inſtance each of them ſtrove to excuſe the other, which half perſwaded him in his ſoul, that they were both guiltleſſe. And as he was ſtarting up, with full intent to acquite them: a young man, who had ſtood there all this while, and obſerved the hard pleading on either ſide; he crowded in to the Barre, being named *Publius Ambuſtus*, a fellow of lewd life, and utterly out of hopes, as being debauched in all his fortunes, and known amongſt the *Romans* to be a notorious Theef, who verily had committed the murder. Well knew his conſcience, that none of them were guilty of the crime, wherewith each ſo wilfully charged himſelf: being therefore truely toucht with remorſe, he ſtept before *Marcus Varro* ſaying.

Honourable Prætor, mine own horrid and abominable actions, have induced me thus to intrude my ſelf, for clearing the ſtrict contention between theſe two perſons. And queſtion eſſe, ſome god or greater power, hath tormented my wretched ſoul, and ſo compunctually ſolicited me, as I cannot chuſe but make open confeſſion of my ſinne. Here therefore, I do apparently publiſh, that neither of theſe men is guilty of the offence, wherewith ſo wilfully each chargeth himſelf. I am the Villain, who this morning murdered the man in the Cave, one of no greater honeſty than my ſelf, and ſeeing this poor man lie there ſleeping, while we were diviſing the ſtolne booties between us; I ſlew my Companion, becauſe I would be the ſole poſſeſſor. As for noble Lord *Titus*, he had no reaſon thus to accuſe himſelf, becauſe he is a man of no ſuch baſe quality: let them both be delivered, and inflict the ſentence of death on me.

Octavius Ceſar, to whom tidings were brought of this rare accident, commanding them all three to be brought before him; would needs underſtand the whole Hiſtory in

in every particular as all had happened, which was substantially related to him; whereupon, *Octavius* quitted them all three: the two noble friends because they were innocent, and the third, for openly revealing the very truth.

Titus took home with him his friend *Gisippus*, and after he had sharply reproved him for his distrust and cold credence of his friendship: he brought him to *Sophronia*, who welcomed him as lovingly, as if he had been her naturall born brother, bemoaning his hard and disastrous fortune, and taking especiall care, to convert all passed distresses, into a happy and a comfortable change, fitting him with Garments and attendants, beseeming his degree in Nobility and vertue. *Titus*, out of his honourable bounty, imparted half his Lands and rich possessions to him, and afterward gave him in marriage, his own Sister, a most beautifull Lady, named *Fulvia*, saying to him beside. My dear friend *Gisippus*, it remaineth now in thine own election, whether thou wilt live here still with me, or return back to *Athens*, with all the wealth which I have bestowed on thee. But *Gisippus* being one way constrayned, by the sentence of banishment from his Native City, and then again, in regard of the constant love which he bare to so true and thankfull a friend as *Titus* was: concluded to live there as a loyall *Roman*, where he with his *Fulvia*, and *Titus* with his fair *Sophronia*, lived long after together in one and the same house, augmenting daily, (if possible it might be) their amity beyond all other equalizing.

A most sacred thing therefore is cordiall amity, worthy not only of singular reverence, but also to be honoured with eternall commendation, as being the only wise Mother of all magnificence and honesty, the Sister of Charity and Gratitude, the enemy to hatred and avarice, and which is alwayes ready (without attending to be requested) to extend all vertuous actions to others, which she would have done to her self. Her rare and divine effects, in these contrary times of ours, are not to be found between two such persons, which is a mighty fault, and greatly checketh the miserable covetousness of men, who respecting nothing but only their particular benefit, have banished true amity, to the utmost confines of the whole earth, and sent her into perpetuall exile.

What love, what wealth or affinity of kindred, could have made *Gisippus* feel (even in the intirest part of his soul) the fervent compassion, the tears, the sighs of *Titus*, and with such efficacy as plainly appeared: to

make him consent, that his fair elected Spouse, by him so dearly esteemed, should become the wife of his companion, but only the precious league of Amity? What lawes, what threatnings, what fears could cause the young arms of *Gisippus* to abstain embraces, betaking himself to solitary walks, and obscure places, when in his own bed he might have enjoyed so matchlesse a beauty, (who perhaps desired it so much as himself) but only the title of Amity? What greatnesse, what merits or precedence, could cause *Gisippus* not to care, for the losse of his kindred, those of *Sophronia*, yea, of *Sophronia* her self, not respecting the dishonest murmurings of base minded people, their vile and contemptible language, scorns and mockeries, and all to content and satisfie a friend, but only divine Amity?

Come now likewise to the other side. What occasions could compell noble *Titus*, so promptly and deliberately, to procure his own death, to rescue his friend from the Crosse, and inflict the pain and shame upon himself, pretending not to see or know *Gisippus* at all, had it not been wrought by powerfull Amity? What cause else could make *Titus* so liberall, in dividing (with such willingnesse) the larger part of his patrimony to *Gisippus*, when Fortune had dispossest him of his own, but only heaven-born Amity? What else could have procured *Titus*, without any further dilation, fear or suspicion, to give his Sister *Fulvia* in marriage to *Gisippus*, when he saw him reduced to such extreme poverty, disgrace and misery, but only infinite Amity? To what end do men care then, to covet and procure great multitudes of kindred, store of brethren, numbers of children, and to encrease (with their own moneyes) plenty of servants; when by the least losse and damage happening, they forget all duty to Father, Brother, or Master? Amity and true friendship is of a quite contrary nature, satisfying (in that sacred bond) the obligation due to all degrees, both of Parentage, and all Alliances else.

Saladine the great Soldan of Babylon, in the habit of a Merchant, was honourably received, and welcomed into the house of Signior Thorello d' Istria. Who travelling to the Holy Land, prefixed a certain time to his Wife, for the return back to her again, wherein if he failed, it was lawfull for her to take another Husband. By clouding himself in the disguise of a Faulkner, the Soldan took notice of him, and did him many great honours. Afterward Thorello falling sick by Magicall Art, he was conveighed in one night to Pavia, when his wife was to be married on the morrow; where making himself known to her, all was disappointed, and she went home with him to his own house. The-

The ninth Novell.

Declaring what an honourable vertue Courteſie is, in them that truely know how to uſe it.

MAdam *Philomena* having concluded her diſcourſe, and the rare acknowledgement, which *Titus* made of his eſteemed friend *Giſippus*, extolled juſtly as it deſerved by all that company: the King reſerving the laſt office to *Dioneus* (as it was at the firſt granted him) began to ſpeak thus. Without all queſtion to the contrary (worthy Ladies) nothing can be more truely ſaid, than what Madam *Philomena* hath delivered, concerning Amity; and her complaint in the concluſion of her Novell, is not without great reaſon, to ſee it ſo ſlenderly reverenced and reſpected (now adayes) among all men. But if we had met her in duty only for correcting the abuſes of iniquity, and the malevolent courſes of this prepoſterous age; I could proceed further in this juſt cauſe of complaint. But becauſe our eud aimeth at matters of other nature, it cometh to my memory to tell you of a Hiſtory, which (perhaps) may ſeem ſomewhat long, but altogether pleaſant, concerning a magnificent act of great *Saladine*: to the end, that by obſerving thoſe things which you ſhall hear in my Novell if we cannot (by reaſon of our manifold imperfections) intirely compaſſe the amity of any one; yet (at leaſt) we may take delight in ſtretching our kindneſſe (in good deeds) ſo farre as we are able, in hope one day after, ſome worthy reward will enſue thereon, as thereto juſtly appertaining.

Let me tell you then, that (as it is affirmed by many) in the time of the Emperour *Frederick*, firſt of that name, the Chriſtians, for the better recovery of the holy Land, reſolved to make a generall voyge over the Seas. Which being underſtood by *Saladine*, a very worthy Prince, and then Soldan of *Babylon*: he concluded with himſelf, that he would (in perſon) go ſee, what preparation the Chriſtian Potentates made for the Warre, that he might the better provide for himſelf. Having ſetled all things orderly in *Ægypt* for the buſineſſe, and making an outward appearance, as if he purpoſed a Pilgrimage to *Mecha*: he ſet onwards on his journey, habited like a Merchant, attended only with two of his moſt noble and wiſeſt Baſchaes, and three waiting ſervants.

When he had viſited many Chriſtian Provinces, and was riding through *Lombardy*, to paſſe the mountains; it fortuned, in his journeying from *Millain* to *Pavia*, and the day being very farre ſpent, ſo that night haſtened ſpeedily on him: he met with a Gentleman, named

med Signior *Thorello d' Ifforia*, but dwelling at *Pavia* who with his Men, Hawks, and Hounds, went to a house of his, seated in a singular place, and on the River of *Ticinum*: Signior *Thorello* seeing such men making towards him, presently imagined that they were some Gentle-strangers, and such he desired to respect with honour.

Wherefore *Saladine* demanding of one of *Thorellos* men, how farre (as then) it was to *Pavia*, and whether they might reach thither by such an hour, as would admit their entrance into the City: *Thorello* would not suffer his servant to return the answer: but replyed thus himself. Sir (quoth he) you cannot reach *Pavia*, but night will abridge you of any entrance there. I beseech you then Sir, answered *Saladine*, favour us so much (because we are all strangers in these parts) as to tell us where we may be well lodged. That shall I Sir, said *Thorello*, and very gladly too.

Even at the instant Sir, as we met with you, I had determined in my mind, to send one of my servants somewhat neer to *Pavia*, about a businesse concerning my self: he shall go along with you, and conduct you to a place, where you will be very well entertained. So stepping to him, who was of best discretion amongst his men, he gave order to him what should be done, and sent him with them. Himself making haste by a farre neerer way, caused Supper to be prepared in worthy manner, and the Tables to be covered in his Garden; and all things being in good readinesse, he sate down at his door to attend the coming of his guests. The Servingman, discoursing with the Gentleman on divers occasions, guided them by such unusuall passages, as (before they could discern it) he brought him to his Masters house; where so soon as *Thorello* saw them arrived, he went forth to meet them, assuring them all of most hearty welcome.

Saladine, who was a man of acute understanding, did well perceive that this Knight *Thorello* misdoubted his going with him, if (when he met him) he should have invited him; and therefore, because he would not be denyed of entertaining him into his house, he made choise of this kind and honourable course, which caused him to return this answer. Gentle Sir, if courtesie in one man to another, do deserve condemning, then may we justly complain of you, who meeting us upon the way, which you have shortned by your kindnesse, and which we are no way able to deserve, we are constrained to accept, taking you to be the mirrour of courtesie. *Thorello* being a Knight of ingenious apprehension, and well languaged, replyed thus. Gen-

Gentlemen, this courtesie (seeing you term it so) which you receive of me, in regard of that justly belonging to you, as your faces do sufficiently inform me, is matter of very slender account: but assuredly out of *Pavia*, you could not have any lodging, deserving to be termed good. And therefore let it not be displeasing to you, if you have a little gone forth of the common rode way, to have your entertainment somewhat better, as many Travailers are easily induced to do.

Having thus spoken, all the people of the house shewed themselves in serviceable manner to the Gentlemen, taking their Horses as they dismounted, and *Thorello* himself conducted the three Gentlemen, into three severall fair Chambers, which in costly manner were prepared for them, where their Boots were pluckt off, fair Napkins with Manchets lay ready, and delicate Wines to refresh their wearied spirits, much pretty conference being entercourst, till supper time invited them thence.

Saladine, and they that were with him, spake the *Latine* Tongue very readily, by which means they were the better understood; and *Thorello* seemed (in their judgement) to be the most gracious, compleat, and best spoken Gentleman, as ever they met with in all their journey. It appeared also (on the other side) to Signior *Thorello*, that the Guests were men of great merit, and worthy of much more esteem, than there he could use towards them: wherefore it did highly distast him, that he had no more friends there this night to keep them company, or himself better provided for their entertainment, which he intended (on the morrow) to recompense with larger amends at dinner.

Hereupon, having instructed one of his men with what he intended, he sent him to *Pavia*, which was not farre off, (and where he kept no door shut) to his wife, named Madam *Adialetta* a woman singularly wise, and of a noble spirit, needing little or no direction, especially when she knew her husbands mind. As they were walking in the Garden, *Thorello* desired to understand, of whence, and what they were? Whereto *Saladine* thus answered. Sir, we are *Cyprian* Merchants, coming now from *Cyprus*, and are travelling to *Pavia*, about affairs of importance. Now trust me Sir, replyed *Thorello*, I could heartily wish, that this Country of ours would yeeld such Gentlemen, as your *Cyprus* affordeth Merchants. So, falling from one discourse unto another, Supper was served in; and look how best themselves pleased, so they sate at the Table, where (we need make no doubt) they were respected in honourable

So soon as the Tables were withdrawn, *Thorello* knowing they might be weary, brought them again to their Chambers, where committing them to their good rest, himself went to bed soon after. The servant sent to *Pavia*, delivered the message to his Lady, who, not like a woman of ordinary disposition, but rather truely Royall, sent *Thorelloes* servants into the City, to make preparation for a Feast indeed, and with lighted Torches (because it was somewhat late) they invited the very greatest and noblest persons of the City, all the rooms being hanged with the richest Arras, Clothes of gold Work, Velvet, Silks, and all other rich adornments, in such manner as her husband had commanded, and answerable to her own worthy mind, being no way to learn, in what manner to entertain Strangers.

On the morrow morning, the Gentlemen arose, and mounting on horseback with Signior *Thorello*, he called for his Hawks and Hounds, brought them to the River, where he shewed two or three fair flights: but *Saladine* desiring to know, which was the fairest Hostery in all *Pavia*. *Thorello* answered, Gentlemen, I will shew you that my self, in regard that I have occasion to ride thither. Which they beleeving, were the better contented, and rode on directly unto *Pavia*; arriving there about nine of the clock, and thinking he guided them to the best Inne, he brought them to his own house; where fifty of the worthiest Citizens, stood ready to welcome the Gentlemen, embracing them as they lighted from their horses. Which *Saladine*, and his associates perceiving,, they guessed as it was indeed, and *Saladine* said. Beleeve me worthy *Thorello*, this is not answerable to my demand; you did too much yesternight, and much more than we could desire or deserve: Wherefore, you might well be the sooner discharged of us, and let us travell on our journey.

Noble Gentlemen, replyed *Thorello* (for in mine eye you seem no lesse) that courtesie which you met with yester-night, I am to thank Fortune for, more than you, because you were then straitned by such necessity, as urged your acceptance of my poor Countrey house. But now this morning, I shall account my self much beholding to you (as the like wil all these worthy Gentlemen here about you) if you do but answer kindnesse with kindnesse, and not to refuse to take a homely dinner with them.

Saladine and his friends, being conquered with such potent perswasions, and already dismounted from their horses, saw that all denyall was meerly in vain: and therefore thankfully condescending (after some few ceremonious

nious complements were overpaſt) the Gentlemen conducted them to their Chambers, which were moſt ſumptuouſly prepared for them, and having laid aſide their riding garments, being a little refreſhed with Cakes and Wines; they (after a while) deſcended into the dining Hall, the pomp whereof I am not able to report.

When they had waſhed, and were ſeated at the Tables, dinner was ſerved in moſt magnificent ſort; ſo that if the Emperour himſelf had been there, he could not have been more ſumptuouſly ſerved. And although *Saladine* and his Baſchaes were noble Lords, and wonted to ſee matters of admiration: yet could they do no leſſe now, but rather exceed in marvell, conſidering the quality of the Knight, whom they knew to be a Citizen, and no Prince or great Lord. Dinner being ended, and divers familiar conferences paſſing among them: becauſe, it was exceeding hot; the Gentlemen of *Pavia* (as it pleaſed *Thorello* to appoint) went to repoſe themſelves awhile, and he keeping company with his three gueſts, brought them into a goodly Chamber, where, becauſe he would not fail in the leaſt ſcruple of courteſie, or conceal from them the richeſt Jewel which he had; he ſent for his Lady and Wife, becauſe as yet they had not ſeen her.

She was a Lady of extraordinary beauty, tall ſtature, very ſumptuouſly attired, and having two ſweet Sonnes, (reſembling Angels) ſhe came with them waiting before her, and graciouſly ſaluted her gueſts. At her coming, they aroſe, and having received her with great reverence, they ſeated her in the midſt, kindly cheriſhing the two children. After ſome gracious Language paſt on either ſide, ſhe demanded of whence, and what they were, which they anſwered in the ſame kind as they had done before to her husband. Afterward, with a modeſt ſmiling countenance, ſhe ſaid. Worthy Gentlemen, let not my weak Womaniſh diſcretion appear diſtaſteable, in deſiring to crave one eſpeciall favour from you, namely, not to refuſe or diſdain a ſmall gift, wherewith I purpoſe to preſent you. But conſidering firſt, that women (according to their ſimple faculty) are able to beſtow but ſilly gifts: ſo you would be pleaſed, to reſpect more the perſon that is the giver, than the quality or quantity of the gift.

Then cauſing to be brought (for each of them) two goodly Gowns or Robes (made after the *Perſian* manner) the one lined through with cloth of Gold and the other with the coſtlieſt Fur; not after ſuch faſhion as Citizens and Merchants uſe to wear, but rather beſeeming Lords of greateſt account, and three light un-

der-wearing Caſſocks or Mandilions, of Carnatian Sattin, richly embroidered with Gold and Pearls, and lined through with white Taffata, preſenting theſe gifts to them, ſhe ſaid, I deſire you Gentlemen to receive theſe mean trifles, ſuch as my husband wears the like, and theſe other beſide, conſidering you are ſo far from your wives, having travelled a long way already, and many miles more yet to overtake; alſo Merchants (being excellent men) affect to be comely and handſome in their habits; although theſe are of ſlender value, yet (in neceſſity) they may do you ſervice.

Now was *Saladine* and his Baſchaes half aſtonyed with admiration, at the magnificent mind of Signior *Thorello*, who would not forget the leaſt part of courteſie towards them, and greatly doubted (ſeeing the beauty and riches of the Garments) leſt they were diſcovered by *Thorello*. Nevertheleſſe, one of them thus anſwered the Lady. Beleeve me Madam, theſe are rich gifts, not lightly either to be given, or received: but in regard of your ſtrict impoſition, we are not able to deny them. This being done, with moſt gracious and courteous demeanour, ſhe departed from them, leaving her Husband to keep them ſtill company; who furniſhed their Servants alſo, with divers worthy neceſſaries fitting for their journey.

Afterward, *Thorello* (by very much importunity) won them to ſtay with him all the reſt of the day; wherefore, when they had reſted themſelves a while, being attyred in their newly given Robes; they rode on horſeback through the City. When Supper time came, they ſupt in moſt honourable and worthy company, being afterwards lodged in moſt fair and ſumptuous Chambers; and being riſen in the morning, in exchange of their horſes (over-wearied with travel) they found three other very richly furniſhed, and their men alſo in like manner provided. Which when *Saladine* had perceived, he took his Baſchaes aſide, and ſpake in this manner.

By our greateſt gods, I never met with any man, more compleat in all noble perfections, more courteous and kind than *Thorello is*. If all the Chriſtian Kings, in the true and Heroicall nature of Kings, do deal ſo honourably as I ſee this Knight doth, the Soldane of *Babylon* is not able to endure the coming of one of them, much leſſe ſo many, as we ſee preparing to make head againſt us. But beholding, that both refuſall and acceptation, was all one in the mind of *Thorello*: after much kind Language had been intercourſed between them, *Saladine* (with his attendants) mounted on horſeback.

Signior *Thorello*, with a number of his honourable friends

friends (to the number of an hundred horſe) accompanyed them a great diſtance from the City, and although it grieved *Saladine* exceedingly, to leave the company of *Thorello*, ſo dearly was he affected to him: but neceſſity (which controlleth the power of all lawes whatſoever) muſt needs divide them: yet requeſting his return again that way, if poſſibly it might be granted; which *Saladine* promiſed, but did not perform. Well Gentlemen (quoth *Thorello* at parting) I know not what you are, neither againſt your will do I deſire it: but whether you be Merchants or no, remember me in your kindneſſe, and ſo to the Heavenly powers I commend you. *Saladine* having taken his leave of all them that were with *Thorello*, returned him this anſwer. Sir, it may one day hereafter ſo happen, as we ſhall let you ſee ſome of our Merchandiſes, for the better confirmation of your beleef, and our profeſſion.

Thus parted Signior *Thorello* and his friends, from *Saladine* and his company, who verily determined in the height of his mind, if he ſhould be ſpared with life, and the warre (which he expected) concluded: to requite *Thorello* with no leſſe courteſie, than he had already declared to him; conferring a long while after with his Baſchaes, both of him and his beauteous Lady, not forgetting any of their courteous actions, but gracing them all with deſerved commendation. But after they had (with very laborious pains) ſurveyed moſt of the Weſtern parts, they all took ſhipping, and returned into *Alexandria*: ſufficiently enformed, what preparation was to be made for their own defence. And Signior *Thorello* being come back again to *Pavia*, conſulted with his private thoughts (many times after) what theſe three Travellers ſhould be, but came farre ſhort of knowing the truth, till (by experience) he became better informed.

When the time was come, that the Chriſtians were to make their paſſage, and wonderfull great preparations, in all places performed: Signior *Thorello*, notwithſtanding the teares and intreaties of his wife, determined to be one in ſo worthy and honourable a voyage: and having made his proviſion ready, nothing wanting but mounting on horſeback, to go where he ſhould take ſhipping; to his wife whom (he moſt intirely affected) thus he ſpake. Madam, I go as thou ſeeſt in this famous Voyage, as well for mine Honour, as alſo the benefit of my ſoul; all our goods and poſſeſſions I commit to thy vertuous care. And becauſe I am not certain of my return back again, in regard of a thouſand accidents which may happen, in ſuch a Country as I go

unto: I desire only but one favour of thee; whatsoever danger shall befall me: Namely, when any certain tidings shall be brought thee of my death; to stay no longer before thy second marriage, but one year, one moneth, and one day; to begin on this day of my departing from thee. The Lady, who wept exceedingly, presently thus answered. Alas Sir! I know not how to carry my self, in such extremity of grief, as now you leave me; but if my life surmount the fortitude of sorrow, and whatsoever shall happen to you for certainty, either life or death: I will live and die the Wife of *Thorello*, and make my obsequies in his memory only.

Not so Madam (replyed her husband) not so; be not over rash in promising any thing, albeit I am well assured, that so much as consisteth in thy strength, I make no question of thy performance: But consider withall (dear heart) thou art a young woman, beautifull, of great Parentage, and no way thereto inferiour in the blessings of Fortune.

Thy vertues are many, and universally both divulged and known: in which respect, I make no doubt, but divers and sundry great Lords and Gentlemen (if but the least rumor of my death be noised) will make suit for thee to thy Parents and Brethren, from whose violent solicitings, wouldst thou never so resolutely make resistance, yet thou canst not be able to defend thy self; but whether thou wilt or no, thou must yeeld to please them; and this is the only reason, why I would tie thee to this limited time, and not one day or minute longer.

Adalietta sweetly hugging him in her arms, and melting her self in kisses, sighs, and tears on her face, said. Well Sir, I will do so much as I am able, in this your most kind and loving imposition: and when I shall be compelled to the contrary, yet rest thus constantly assured, that I will not break this your charge, so much as in thought. Praying ever heartily to the heavenly powers, that they will direct your course home again to me, before your prefixed date, or else I shall live in continuall languishing. In the knitting up of this wofull parting, embracing and kissing either infinite times; the Lady took a Ring from off her finger, and giving it to her husband, said. If I chance to die before I see you again, remember me when you look on this. He receiving the Ring, and bidding all the rest of his Friends farewell, mounted on horseback, and rode away well attended.

Being come to *Geneway*, he and his company boarded a Galley, and (in few dayes after) arrived at *Acres*, where

there they joyned themselves with the Christian Army, wherein there happened a very dangerous mortality: During which time of so sharp visitation (the cause unknown whence it proceeded) whether through the industry, or rather the good Fortune of *Saladine*, well-neer all the rest of the Christians (which escaped death) were surprized his prisoners (without a blow stricken) and sundred and imprisoned in divers Towns and Cities. Amongst the which number of prisoners, it was Signior *Thorellos* chance to be one, and walked in bonds to *Alexandria*, where being unknown, and fearing lest he should be discovered, (constrained thereto meerly by necessity) he shewed himself in the condition of a Faulconer; wherein he was very excellently experienced, and by which means his profession was made known to *Saladine*, he delivered out of Prison, and created the Soldans Faulconer.

Thorello (whom the Soldan called by no other name, then the Christian, neither of them knowing the other) lastly now remembred his departure from *Pavia*, devising and practising many times, how he might escape thence, he could not compasse it by any possible means. Wherefore, certain Ambassadours being sent by the *Genewayes*, to redeem divers Citizens of theirs, there detained as Prisoners, and being ready to return home again: he purposed to write to his wife, that he was living, and would repair to her so soon as he could, desiring the still continued remembrance of her limited time. By close and cunning means he wrote the Letter, earnestly entreating one of the Ambassadors (who knew him perfectly, but made no outward appearance thereof) to deal in such sort for him, that the Letter might be delivered to the hands of the Abbot *Di San Pietro* in *Ciel d'Oro*, who was (indeed) his Unkle.

While *Thorello* remained in this his Faulconers condition, it fortuned upon a day, that *Saladine* conversing with him about his Hawks; *Thorello* chanced to smile, and used such a kind of gesture or motion with his lippes which *Saladine* (when he was in his house at *Pavia*) had heedfully observed, and by this note, instantly he remembred Signior *Thorello*, and began to eye him very respectively, perswading himself that he was the same man. And therefore falling from the former kind of discoursing: Tell me Christian (quoth *Saladine*) what Country-man art thou of the West? Sir, answered Signior *Thorello*, I am by Countrey a *Lombard*, born in a City called *Pavia*, a poor man, and of as poor condition.

So soon as *Saladine* had heard these words; becom-

ming

ming assured in that which (but now) he doubted, he said within himself: Now the gods have given me time, wherein I may make known to this man, how thankfully I accepted his kind courtesie, and cannot easily forget it. Then, without saying any thing else, causing his Guard robe to be set open, he took him with him thither, and said, Christian, observe well all these Garments, and quicken thy remembrance, in telling me truely, whether thou hast seen any of them before now, or no. Signior *Thorello* looked on them all advisedly, and espied these two especiall Garments, which his wife had given one of the strange merchants; yet he durst not credit it, or that possibly it could be the same, nevertheless he said. Sir, I do not know any of them, but true it is, that these two do resemble two such Robes as I was wont to wear my self, or the like were given to three Merchants, that happened to visit my poor house.

Now could *Saladine* contain no longer, but embracing him joyfully in his arms, he said. Signior *Thorello d' Istria*, and I am one of those three Merchants, to whom your wife gave these Robes, and now the time is come to give you credible intelligence of my Merchandise, as I promised at my departing from you, for such a time (I told you) would come at length. *Thorello* was both glad, and bashfull together: glad, that he had entertained such a Guest, and bashfully ashamed, that his welcome had not exceeded in more bountifull manner. *Thorello*, replyed *Saladine*, seeing the gods have sent you so happily to me; account you your self to be holy Lord here, for I am now no more than a private man.

I am not able to expresse their counterchange of courtesie, *Saladine* commanding him to be cloathed in Royall Garments, and brought in presence of his very greatest Lords, where having spoken liberally in his due commendation, he commanded them to honour him as himself, if they expected any grace and favour from him, which every one did immediately, but (above all the rest) those two Baschaes, which accompanyed *Saladine* at his house. The greatnesse of this pomp and glory, so suddenly thrown on Signior *Thorello*, made him half forget all matters of *Lombardy*; and so much the rather, because he had no doubt at all, but that his letters were safely come to the hands of his Uncle.

Here I am to tell you, that in the Camp or Army of the Christians, on the day when *Saladine* made his surprizall, there was a provinciall Gentleman dead and buried, who was Signior *Thorello de Digues*, a man of very

very honourable and great esteem, in which respect (Signior *Thorello d' Istria*, known throughout the Army, by his Nobility and valour) whosoever heard that Signior *Thorello* was dead: beleeved it to be *Thorello d' Istria*, and not he of *Vignes*, so that *Thorello d' Istrias* unknown surprizall and thraldome, made it also to passe for an assured truth.

Beside, many *Italians* returning home, and carrying this report for credible; some were so audaciously presumptuous, as they avouched upon their oaths, that not only they saw him dead, but were present at his buriall likewise. Which rumor coming to the ear of his wife, and likewise to his kindred and hers: procured a great and grievous mourning among them, and all that happened to hear thereof.

Over tedious time it would require, to relate at large the publique grief and sorrow with the continuall lamentations of his wife, who (within some few moneths after) became tormented with new marriage solicitings, before she had half sighed for the first: the very greatest persons of *Lombardy* making the motion, being daily followed and furthered by her own brothers and friends. Still (drowned in tears) she returned denyall, till in the end, when no contradiction could prevail, to satisfie her parents, and the importunate pursuers, she was constrained to reveal the charge imposed on her by her Husband, which she had vowed infallibly to keep, and till that very time, she would in no wise consent.

While woing for a second wedding with *Adalietta*, proceeded in this manner at *Pavia*, it chanced on a day, that Signior *Thorello* had espied a man in *Alexandria*, whom he saw with the *Geneway* Ambassadors, when they set thence towards *Geneway* with their Gallies. And causing him to be sent for, he demanded of him, the successe of the voyage, and when the Gallies arrived at *Geneway*; whereto he returned him this answer. My Lord, our Gallies made a very fatall voyage, as it is (already) too well known in *Crete*, where my dwelling is. For when we drew neer *Sicily*, there suddenly arose a very dangerous North-west wind, which drove us on the quick sands of *Barbary*, where not any man escaped with life, only my self excepted, but (in the wrack) two of my brethren perished.

Signior *Thorello*, giving credit to the mans words, because they were most true indeed, and remembring also that the time limited to his wife, drew neer expiring within very few dayes, and no newes now possibl to be sent thither of his life, his wife would question-lesse be marryed again: he fell into such a deep conceited

cited melancholy, as food and sleep forsook him, whereupon, he kept his bed, setting down his peremptory resolution for death. When *Saladine* (who deerly loved him) heard thereof, he came in all haste to see him, and having (by many earnest perswasions and entreaties) understood the cause of his melancholy and sickness he very severely reproved him, because he would no sooner acquaint him therewith. Many kind and comfortable speeches he gave him, with constant assurance, that (if he were so minded) he would so order the businesse for him, as he should be at *Pavia* by the same time as he had appointed to his wife, and revealed to him also the manner how.

Thorello verily beleeved the Soldanes promise, because he had often heard the possibility of performance, and others had effected as much, divers times else-where: whereupon he began to comfort himself, soliciting the Soldan earnestly that it might be accomplished. *Saladine* sent for one of his Sorcerers (of whose skill he had formerly made experience) to take a direct course, how Signior *Thorello* should be carried (in one night) to *Pavia*, and being in his bed. The Magician undertook to do it, but, for the Gentlemans more ease, he must first be possessed with an entranced dead sleep. *Saladine* being thus assured of the deeds full effecting, he came again to *Thorello*, and finding him to be setled for *Pavia* (if possibly it might be accomplished by the determined time, or else no other expectation but death) he said unto him as followeth.

Signior *Thorello*, if with true affection you love your wife, and misdoubt her marriage to some other man: I protest unto you, by the supream powers, that you deserve no reprehension in any manner whatsoever For, of all the Ladies that ever I have seen, she is the only woman, whose carriage, vertues, and civill speaking, (setting aside beauty, which is but a fading flower) deserveth most graciously to be respected, much more to be affected in the highest degree. It were to me no mean favour of our gods, (seeing Fortune directed your course so happily hither) that for the short or long time we have to live, we might reign equally together in these Kingdomes under my subjection. But if such grace may not be granted me, yet, seeing it stands mainly upon the perill of your life, to be at *Pavia* again by your own limited time, it is my chiefest comfort, that I am therewith acquainted, because I intended to have you conveighed thither, yea, even into your own house, in such honourable order as your vertues do justly merit, which in regard it cannot be so conveniently

niently performed, but as I have informed you, and as the neceſſity of the caſe urgently commandeth; accept it as it may be beſt accompliſhed.

Great *Saladine*, (anſwered *Thorello*) effects (without words) have already ſufficiently warranted your gracious diſpoſition towards me, farre beyond any requitall remaining in me; your word only being enough for my comfort in this caſe, either dying or living. But in regard you have taken ſuch order for my departure hence, I deſire to have it done with all poſſible expedition, becauſe to morrow is the very laſt day that I am to be abſent. *Saladine* proteſted that it ſhould be done, and the ſame evening in the great Hall of his royall Palace, commanded a rich and coſtly bed to be ſet up, the Mattras formed after the *Alexandrian* manner, of Velvet and cloth of Gold, the Quilts, counterpoints and coverings, ſumptuouſly embroidered with Orient Pearls and Precious Stones, ſuppoſed to be of ineſtimable value, and two rarely wrought Pillowes, ſuch as beſt beſeemed ſo ſtately a bed, the Curtains and Vallans every way equall to the other pomp.

Which being done, he commanded that *Thorello* (who was indifferently recovered) ſhould be attired in one of his own ſumptuous *Saracine* Robes, the very faireſt and richeſt that ever was ſeen, and on his head a Majeſticall Turbant, after the manner of his own wearing, and the hour appearing to be ſomewhat late, he with many of his beſt Baſchaes, went to the Chamber where *Thorello* was, and ſitting down a while by him, in tears thus he ſpake. Signior *Thorello*, the hour for ſundring you and me, is now very neer, and becauſe I cannot bear you company, in regard of the buſineſſe you go about, and which by no means will admit it: I am to take my leave of you in this Chamber, and therefore I am come to do it. But before I bid you farewell, let me intreat you by the love and friendſhip confirmed between us, to be mindfull of me, and to take ſuch order (your affairs being fully finiſhed in *Lombardy*) that I may once more enjoy the ſight of you here, for a mutuall ſolace and ſatisfaction of our minds, which are now divided by this urgent haſte. Till which may be granted, let me want no viſitation of your kind Letters, commanding thereby of me, whatſoever here can poſſibly be done for you: aſſuring your ſelf, no man living can command me as you do. Signior *Thorello* could not forbear weeping, but being much hindred thereby, anſwered in few words. That he could not poſſibly forget his gracious favours and extraordinary benefits uſed towards him, but would accompliſh whatſoever

ever he commanded, according as Heaven did enable him. Hereupon, *Saladine* embracing him, and kissing his forehead, said, All my Gods go with you, and guard you from any perill, departing so out of the Chamber weeping, and his Baschaes (having likewise taken their leave of *Thorello*) followed *Saladine* into the Hall, whereas the bed stood readily prepared. Because it waxed very late, and the *Magician* also there attending for his dispatch: the Physitian went with the potion to *Thorello*, and perswading him, in the way of friendship, that it was only to strengthen him after his great weaknesse: he drank it off, being thereby immediately entranced, and so presently sleeping, was (by *Saladines* command) laid on the sumptuous and costly bed, whereon stood an Imperiall Crown of infinite value, appearing (by a description engraven on it) that *Saladine* sent it to *Madam Adalietta*, the wife of *Thorello*. On his finger he put a Ring, wherein was enchased an admirable Carbunkle, which seemed like a flaming Torch, the value thereof not to be estimated. By him likewise he laid a rich Sword, with the Girdle, Hangers, and other furniture, such as seldome can be seen the like. Then he laid a Jewel on the Pillow by him, so sumptuously embellished with Pearls and precious Stones, as might have beseemed the greatest *Monarch* in the world to wear. Last of all, on either side of them, he set two great Basons of pure Gold, full of double Ducates, many cords of Orient Pearls, Rings, Girdles, and other costly Jewels (over-tedious to be recounted) and kissing him once more as he lay in his bed, commanded the *Magician* to dispatch and be gone.

Instantly, the bed and *Thorello* in it, in the presence of *Saladine*, was invisibly carryed thence, and while he sate conferring with his Baschaes, the Bed, Signior *Thorello*, and all the rich Jewels about him, was transported, and set in the Church of *San Piestro in Ciel d' Oro* in *Pavia*, according to his own request, and soundly sleeping, being placed directly before the high Altar. Afterward, when the Bells rung to Mattines, the Sexton entring the Church with a light in his hand (where he beheld a light of greater splendor) and suddenly espyed the sumptuous bed there standing: not only was he smitten into admiration, but he ran away also very fearfully. When the Abbot and the Monks met him thus running into the Cloyster, they became amazed, and demanded the reason why he ranne in such haste, which the Sexten told them. How? quoth the Abbot, thou art no child, or a new-come hither, to be so easily affrighted in our holy Church, where Spirits can have

no

no power to walk. God and Saint *Peter* (we hope) are stronger for us than so: wherefore turn back with us, and let us see the cause of thy fear.

Having lighted many Torches, the Abbot and his Monks entred with the Sexton into the Church, where they beheld the wonderfull rich Bed, and the Knight lying fast asleep in it. While they stood all in amazement, not daring to approach neer the bed, whereon lay such costly Jewels: it chanced that Signior *Thorello* awaked, and breathed forth a most vehement sigh. The Monks and the Abbot seeing him to stirre, ranne all away in fear, crying out aloud, God and Saint *Peter* defend us.

By this time *Thorello* had opened his eyes and looking round about him, perceived that he was in the place of *Saladines* promise, whereof he was not a little joyfull. Wherefore, sitting up in the bed, and particularly observing all the things about him, albeit he knew sufficiently the magnificence of *Saladine*, yet now it appeared farre greater to him, and imagined more largely thereof, than he could do before. But yet, without any other ceremony, seeing the flight of the Monks, hearing their crie, and perceiving the reason; he called the Abbot by his name, desiring him not to be afraid, for he was his Nephew *Thorello*, and no other.

When the Abbot heard this, he was ten times more worse affrighted than before, because (by publique fame) he had been so many moneths dead and buryed; but receiving (by true arguments) better assurance of him, and hearing him still call him by his name; blessing himself with the sign of the Crosse, he went somewhat neerer to the bed, when *Thorello* said. My loving Unkle, and Religious holy Father, whereof are you afraid? I am your Nephew, newly returned from beyond the Seas. The Abbot, seeing his beard to be grown long, and his habit after the *Arabian* fashion, did yet collect some resemblance of his former countenance; and being better perswaded of him, took him by the hand, saying.

Sonne, thou art happily returned, yet there is not any in our City, but doth verily beleeve thee to be dead, and therefore do not much wonder at our fear. Moreover, I dare assure thee, that thy wife *Adalietta*, being conquered by the controlling command, and threatnings of her kindred (but much against her own mind) is this very morning to be marryed to a new husband, and the marriage feast is solemnly prepared, in honour of this second Nuptials.

Thorello arising out of the bed, gave gracious salutati-

ons

ons to the Abbot and his Monks, entreating earnestly of them all, that no word might be spoken of his return, untill he had compleated an important businesse. Afterward, having safely secured the bed, and all the rich Jewels, he fully acquainted the Abbot with all his passed fortunes, whereof he was immeasurably joyfull; and having satisfied him concerning the new elected Husband, *Thorello* said unto the Abbot. Unkle, before any rumor of my return, I would gladly see my wives behaviour at this new briding feast, and although men of religion are seldome seen at such joviall meetings: yet (for my sake) do you so order the matter, that I (as an *Arabian* stranger) may be a guest under your protection; whereto the Abbot very gladly and joyfull condescended.

In the morning, he sent to the Bridegroom, and advertised him, that he (with a stranger newly arrived) intended to dine with him, which the Gentleman accepted in thankfull manner. And when dinner time came, *Thorello* in his strange disguise went with the Abbot to the Bridegrooms house, where he was lookt on with admiration of all the guests, but not known or suspected by any one; because the Abbot reported him to be a *Saracine*, and sent by the Soldane (in Ambassage) to the King of *France*. *Thorello* was seated at a by table, but directly opposite to the new Bride, whom he much delighted to look on, and easily collected by her sad countenance, that she was scarcely well pleased with this new Nuptialls. She likewise beheld him very often, not in regard of any knowledge she took of him; for the bushinesse of his beard, strangenesse of habit, (but most of all) firm belief of his death, was the main prevention.

At such time as *Thorello* thought it convenient, to approve how far he was fallen out of her remembrance; he took the Ring which she gave him at his departure, and calling a young Page that waited on none but the Bride, said to him in *Italian*: Fair youth, go to the Bride, and saluting her from me, tell her it is a custome in my Countrey, that when any stranger (as I am here) sitteth before a new married Bride, as now she is, in sign that he is welcome to her feast, she sendeth the same Cup (wherein she drinketh her self) full of the best Wine, and when the stranger hath drunk so much as him pleaseth, the Bride then pledgeth him with all the rest. The Page delivered the message to the Bride, who being a woman of honourable disposition, and reputing him to be a noble Gentleman, to testifie that his presence there was very acceptable to her, she commanded a

fair

Cup of Gold (which ſtood directly before her) to neatly waſhed, and when it was filled with excellent ne, cauſed it to be carried to the ſtranger, and ſo it as done preſently according as ſhe commanded.

Thorello having drunk a hearty draught to the Bride, nveyed the Ring into the Cup, before that any per- n could perceive it, and having left but ſmall ſtore wine in it, covered the Cup and ſent it again to the ride, who received it very graciouſly, and to honour e Stranger in the Countreys cuſtome, drank up the eſt of the Wine, and eſpying the Ring, ſhe took it rth undeſcryed by any: Knowing it to be the ſame ing, which ſhe gave Signior *Thorello* at his parting om her; ſhe fixed her eyes often upon it, and as often n him, whom ſhe thought to be a ſtranger, the cheer- ll bloud mounting up into her cheeks, and returning gain with remembrance to her heart, that (howſoever us diſguiſed) he only was her husband.

Like one of *Bacchus* Froes, up furiouſly ſhe ſtarted, nd throwing down the Table before her, cryed out aloud, This is my Lord and Husband: this truely is y Lord *Thorello*. So running to the Table where he ate, without regard of all the riches thereon, down ſhe hrew it likewiſe, and claſping her arms about his eck, hung ſo mainly on him (weeping, ſobbing, nd kiſſing him) as ſhe could not be taken off by any of he company, nor ſhewed any moderation in this exceſs of paſſion, till *Thorello* ſpake, and entreated her to be nore patient, becauſe this extremity was over dange- rous for her. Thus was the ſolemnity much troubled, but every one there very glad and joyfull for the reco- very of ſuch a famous and worthy Knight, who intreat- ed them all to vouchſafe him ſilence and ſo related all his fortunes to them, from the time of his departure, to the inſtant hour. Concluding withall, that he was no way offended with the new Bride-groom, who upon the ſo conſtant report of his death, deſerved no blame in making election of his wife.

The Bride-groom, albeit his countenance was ſome- what cloudy, to ſee his hope thus diſappointed: yet granted freely, that *Adalrista* was *Thorello*'s wife in e- quity, and he could not lay any claim to her. She alſo reſigned the Crown and Ring which ſhe had ſo lately received of her new Spouſe; and put that on her fin- ger which ſhe found in the Cup, and that Crown was ſet upon her head, in honour ſent her from great *Sala- dine*. In which triumphant manner ſhe alett the new Bridegrooms abiding, and repaired home to *Thorello*'s houſe, with ſuch pomp and magnificence as never had

had the like been seen in *Pavia* before, as the Citizens esteeming it as a miracle, that they had so happily recovered Signior *Thorello* again.

Some part of the Jewels he gave to him, who had been at cost with the marriage feasting, and some to his Unkle the Abbot, beside a bounty bestowed on the Monks. Then he sent a messenger to *Saladine*, with Letters of the whole successe, and confessing himself (for ever) his obliged servant: living many years (after) with his wife *Adalietta*, and using greater courtesies to strangers, than ever before he had done.

In this manner ended the troubles of Signior *Thorello*, and the afflictions of his dearly affected Lady, with due recompence to their honest and ready courtesies. Many strive (in outward shew) to do the like, who although they are sufficiently able, do perform it so basely, as it rather redoundeth to their shame, than honour. And therefore if no merit ensue thereon, but only such disgrace as justly should follow; let them lay the blame upon themselves.

The Marquesse of Saluzzo, named Gualtiero, being constrained by the importunate soliciting of his Lords, and other inferior people, to joyn himself in marriage; took a woman according to his own liking, called Grizelda, she being the daughter of a poor Countreyman, named Janicolo, by whom he had two Children which he pretended to be secretly murdered. Afterward, they being grown to years of more stature, and making shew of taking in marriage another wife, more worthy of his high degree and calling: made a seaming publique asking of his own Daughter, expulsing his wife Grizelda poorly from him. But finding her incomparable patience, more dearly (than before) he received her into favour again, brought her home to his own Palace, where (with her Children) he caused her and them to be respectively honoured in despight of all her adverse enemies.

The tenth Novell.

Set down as an example or warning to all wealthy men, how to have care of marrying themselves. And likewise to poor and mean women, to be patient in their fortunes, and obedient to their Husbands.

QUestionlesse, the Kings Novell did not so much exceed the rest in length, but it proved as pleasing to the whole assembly, and past with their generall approbation, till *Dioneus* (in a merry jesting humour) said, The plain, honest, simple man, that stood holding the Candle, to see the setting on of his *M*ules tail; deserved two penny worth of more praise, than all our applauding

plauding of Signior *Torello*: And knowing himself to be left for the last speaker, thus he began.

Mild and modest Ladies, for ought I can perceive to the contrary, this day was dedicated to none but Kings, Soldanes, and great Potentates, not in favour of any inferiour or meaner persons. And therefore, because I would be loth to dis-rank my self from the rest, I purpose to speak of a Lord *Marquesse*, not any matter of great magnificence, but rather in a more humble nature, and forced to an honest end: which yet I will not advise any to imitate, because (perhaps) they cannnot so well digest it, as they did whom my Novell concerneth; thus then I begin.

It is a great while since, when among those that were Lord *Marquesses* of *Saluzzo*, the very greatest and worthiest man of them all, was a young noble Lord, named *Gualtiero*, who having neither wife nor childe, spent his time in nothing else but hawking and hunting: nor had he any mind of marriage, or to enjoy the benefit of children, wherein many did repute him the wiser. But this being distastfull to his subjects, they very often earnestly solicited him, to match himself with a wife, to the end that he might not decease without an Heir, nor they be left destitute of a succeeding Lord; offering themselves to provide him of such a one so well descended by Father and *Mother*, as not only should confirm their hope, but also yeeld him high contentment; whereto the *Marquesse* thus answered,

Worthy friends, you would constrain me to the thing wherewith *I* never had any intent to meddle, considering, how difficult a case it is to meet with such a woman, who can agree with a man in all his conditions, and how great the number is of them, who daily happen on the contrary: but most (and worst of all the rest) how wretched and miserable proves the life of that man, who is bound to live with a wife not fit for him. And in saying, you can learn to understand the custome and qualities of children, by behaviour of the fathers and mothers, and so to provide me of a wife, it is a meer argument of folly: for neither shall I comprehend, or you either, the secret inclinations of Parents, I mean of the Father, and much lesse the complexion of the mother. But admit it were within compasse of power to know them; yet it is a frequent sight, and observed every day; that daughters do resemble neither father nor mother, but that they are naturally governed by their own instinct.

But because you are so desirous to have me fettered in the chains of wedlock, I am contented to grant what you

you requeſt. And becauſe I would have no complaint made of any but my ſelf, if matters ſhould not happen anſwerable to expectation, I will make mine own eyes my electors, and not ſee by any others ſight. Giving you this aſſurance before, that if ſhe whom I ſhall make choiſe of, be not of you honoured and reſpected as your Lady and Miſtreſſe; it will enſue to your detriment, how much you have diſpleaſed me, to take a wife at your requeſt, and againſt mine own will.

The noble men anſwered, that they were well ſatisfied, provided that he took a wife.

Some indifferent ſpace of time before, the beauty, manners, and well-ſeeming vertues of a poor Countrey-mans daughter, dwelling in no farre diſtant Village, had appeared very pleaſing to the Lord *Marqueſs*, and gave him full perſwaſion, that with her he ſhould lead a comfortable life. And therefore without any further ſearch or inquiſition, he abſolutely reſolved to marry her; and having conferred with her Father, agreed, that his daughter ſhould be his wife. Whereupon, the *Marqueſſe* made a generall Convocation of all his Lords, Barons, and other of his eſpeciall friends, from all parts of his Dominion; and when they were aſſembled together, he then ſpake unto them in manner as followeth.

Honourable friends, it appeared pleaſing to you all, and yet (I think) you are of the ſame mind, that I ſhould diſpoſe my ſelf to take a wife: and I thereto condeſcended, more to yeeld you contentment, than for any particular deſire in my ſelf. Let me now remember you of your ſolemn made promiſe, with full conſent to honour and obey her (whoſoever) as your ſoveraign Lady and *Miſtreſs*, that I ſhall elect to make my wife: and now the time is come, for my exacting the performance of that promiſe, and which I look you muſt conſtantly keep. I have made choiſe of a young Virgin, anſwerable to mine own heart and liking, dwelling not farre off hence, whom I intend to make my wife, and (within few dayes) to have her brought home to my Palace. Let your care and diligence then extend ſo farre, as to ſee that the feaſt may be ſumptuous, and her entertainment to be moſt honourable: to the end that I may receive as much contentment in your promiſe performed, as you ſhal perceive I do in my choiſe.

The Lords, and all the reſt, were wonderfully joyfull to hear him ſo well inclined, expreſſing no leſſe by their ſhouts and jocund ſuffrages: proteſting cordially, that ſhe ſhould be welcomed with pomp and *Majeſty*, and honoured of them all, as their Liege, Lady, and

and Soveraign. Afterward, they made preparation for a Princely and magnificent feast, as the Marquesse did the like, for a marriage of extraordinary state and quality, inviting all his kindred, friends and acquaintance in all parts and Provinces, about him. He made also ready most rich and costly garments, shaped by the body of a comely young Gentlewoman, whom he knew to be equall in proportion and stature, to her of whom he had made his election.

When the appointed Nuptiall day was come, the Lord Marquesse, about nine of the clock in the morning, mounted on horseback, as all the rest did, who came to attend him honourably, and having all things in due readinesse with them, he said: Lords, it is time for us to fetch the Bride. So on he rode with his train, to the same poor Village whereas she dwelt, and when he was come to her fathers house, he saw the maiden returning very hastily from a Well, where she had been to fetch a paile of Water, which she set down, and stood (accompanyed with other maidens) to see the passage of the Lord Marquesse and his train. *Gualtiero* called her by her name, which was *Griselda*, and asked her, where her Father was: who bashfully answered him, and with an humble courtesie, saying. My gracious Lord he is in the house.

Then the Marquesse dismounted from his horse, commanding every one to attend him, then all alone he entred into the poor Cottage, where he found the maids Father, being named *Janiculo*, and said unto him. God speed good Father, I am come to espouse thy daughter *Griselda*: but first I have a few demands to make, which I will utter to her in thy presence. Then he turned to the Maid, and said.

Fair *Griselda*, if I make you my wife, will you do your best endeavour to please me in all things which I shall do or say? Will you also be gentle, humble, and patient? with divers other the like questions: whereto she still answered, that she would, so ner as heaven (with grace) should enable her.

Presently he took her by the hand, so led her forth of the poor mans homely house, and in the presence of all his company, with his own hands, he took off her mean wearing garments, smock and all, and cloathed her with those Robes of State which he had purposely brought thither for her, and plaiting her hair over her shoulders, he placed a Crown of Gold on her head. Whereat every one standing as amazed, and wondring not a little, he said: *Griselda*, wilt thou have me to thy husband. Modestly blushing, and kneeling on the ground, she answered. Yes my gracious Lord, if you will accept so

poor a maiden to be your wife. Yes *Griſelda*, quoth he, with this holy kiſſe, I confirme thee for my wife; and ſo eſpouſed her before them all. Then mounting her on a milk-white Palfray, brought thither for her, ſhe was thus honourably conducted to her Palace.

Now concerning the marriage feaſts and triumphs, they were performed with no leſſe pomp, than if ſhe had been daughter to the King of *France*. And the young Bride apparently declared, that (with her garments) her mind and behaviour were quite changed. For indeed ſhe was (as it were ſhame to ſpeak otherwiſe) a rare creature, both of perſon and perfections, and not only was ſhe abſolute for beauty, and ſo ſweetly amiable, gracious and goodly; as if ſhe were not the daughter of poor *Janicula*, and a Countrey Shepheardeſſe, but rather of ſome noble Lord; whereat every one wondred that formerly had known her. Beſide all this, ſhe was ſo obedient to her husband, ſo fervent in all dutifull offices and patient, without the very leaſt provoking: as he held himſelf much more than contented, and the only happy man that lived in the world.

In like mauner, towards the ſubjects of her Lord and Husband, ſhe ſhewed her ſelf alwayes ſo benigne and gracious; as there was not any one, but the more they lookt on her, the better they loved her, honouring her voluntarily, and praying to the heavens for her health, dignity and wel fares long continuance: Speaking now (quite contrary to their former opinion of the Marqueſſe) honourably and worthily, that he had ſhown himſelf a ſingular wiſe man, in the election of his wife, which few elſe (but he) in the world would ever have done: becauſe their judgement might fall far ſhort, of diſcerning theſe great and precious vertues, veiled under a homely habit, and obſcured in a poor Countrey Cottage. To be brief, in very ſhort time, not only the Marquiſate it ſelf, but all neighbouring Provinces round about, had no other common talk, but of her rare courſe of life, devotion, charity, and all good actions elſe whatſoever; quite quailing all ſiniſter conſtructions of her Husband, before he had received her in matrimony.

About four or five years after the birth of her daughter, ſhe conceived with child again, and (at the limited hour of deliverance) had a goodly Sonne, to the no little liking of the Marqueſſe. Afterward, a ſtrange humor entred into his brain, namely, that by a long continued experience, and courſe of an intolerable quality; he would needs make proof of his fair wives patience. Firſt he began to provoke her by injurious ſpeeches, ſhewing fierce and frowning looks to her,

her, intimating; that his people grew displeased with him, in regard of his Wives base birth and education, and so much the rather, because she was likely to bring children, who (by her blood) were no better than beggers, and murmured at the daughter already born. Which words when *Griselda* heard, without any alteration of countenance, or the least distemperature in any appearing action, she said.

My honourable and gracious Lord, dispose of me, as you think best, for your own dignity and contentment, for I shall therewith be well pleased: as she that knowes her self, farre inferiour to the meaneſt of your people, much lesse worthy of the honour, whereto you liked to advance me.

This answer was very welcome to the Marquesse, as apparently perceiving hereby, that the dignity whereto he had exalted her, or any particular favours beside, could not infect her with any pride, coyneſſe, or disdain. Not long after, having told her in plain and open speeches that his Subjects could not endure her so late born daughter: he called a trusty servant of his, and having instructed him what he should do, sent him to *Griselda*, and he being alone with her, looking very sad, and much perplexed in mind, he said. Madam, except I intend to lose mine own life, I must accomplish what my Lord hath strictly enjoyned me, which is, to take this your young daughter, and then I must: So breaking off abruptly, the Lady hearing these words, and noting his frowning looks, remembring also what the Marquesse himself had formerly said; she presently imagined, that he had commanded his servant to kill the child. Suddenly therefore, she took it out of the Cradle, and having sweetly kissed, and bestowed her blessing on it (albeit her heart throbbed with the inward affection of a Mother) without any alteration of countenance, she tenderly laid it in the servants arms, and said. Here friend, take it, and do with it as thy Lord and mine hath commanded thee: but leave it in no rude place, where birds or savage beasts may devour it, except it be his will to have it so.

The servant departing from her with the child, and reporting to the Marquesse what his Lady had said; he wondred at her incomparable constancy. Then he sent it by the same servant to *Bologna*, to an honourable Lady his kinswoman, requesting her (without revealing whose child it was) to see it both nobly and carefully educated.

At time convenient afterward, being with child again, and delivered of a Princely Sonne (than which nothing could be more joyfull to the Marquesse) yet all

this was nor sufficient for him; but with farre ruder language than before, and looks expressing harsh intentions, he said unto her. *Griselda*, though thou pleasest me wonderfully by the birth of this Princely Boy, yet my subjects are not therewith contented, but blunder abroad malitiously; that the Grand-child of *Janiculo*, a poor Countrey Peazant, when I am dead and gone, must be their Soveraign Lord and Master. Which makes me stand in fear of their expulsion, and to prevent that, I must be rid of this childe, as well as the other, and then send thee away from hence, that I may take another wife, more pleasing to them.

Griselda, with a patient sufferent soul, hearing what he had said, returned no other answer but this. Most Gracious and Honourable Lord, satisfie and please your own Royall mind, and never use any respect of me: for nothing is precious or pleasing to me, but what may agree with your good liking. Within a while after, the noble Marquesse in the like manner as he did before for his Daughter, so he sent the same servant for his Sonne, and seeming as if he had sent it to have been slain, conveighed it to be nurled at *Bologna*, in company of his sweet Sister. Whereat the Lady shewed no other discontentment in any kind, than formerly she had done for her Daughter, to the no mean marvell of the *Marquesse*, who protested in his soul, that the like woman was not in all the world beside. And were it not for his heedfull observation, how loving and carefull she was of her children, prizing them as dearly as her own life: rash opinion might have perswaded him, that she had no more in her than a carnall affection, not caring how many she had, so she might thus easily be rid of them; but he knew her to be a truly vertuous mother, and wisely liable to endure his severest impositions.

His Subjects beleeving that he had caused the children to be slain, blamed him greatly, thought him to be a most cruel man, and did highly compassionate the Ladies case: who when she came in company of other Gentlewomen, which mourned for their deceased children, would answer nothing else, but that they could not be more pleasing to her, than they were to the father that begot them.

Within certain years after the birth of these children, the *Marquesse* purposed with himself, to make his last and finall proof of fair *Griseldaes* patience, and said to some neer about him; that he could no longer endure to keep *Griselda* as his Wife, confessing, he had done foolishly, and according to a young giddy brain, when he was so rash in the marriage of her. Wherefore he would send to the Pope, and purchase a dispensation from

from him, to repudiate *Griſelda*, and take another wife. Wherein although they greatly reproved him, yet he told them plainly, that it muſt needs be ſo.

The Lady hearing theſe newes, and thinking ſhe muſt return again to her poor fathers houſe, and eſtate, and (perhaps) to her old occupation of keeping of ſheep, as in her younger dayes ſhe had done; underſtanding withall, that another woman muſt enjoy him, whom ſhe dearly loved and honoured; you may well think (worthy Ladies) that her patience was now put to the main proof indeed. Nevertheleſſe, as with an invincible true vertuous courage, ſhe had overſtood all the other injuries of Fortune; ſo did ſhe conſtantly ſettle her ſoul to bear this with an undaunted countenance and behaviour.

At ſuch time as was prefixed for the purpoſe, counterfeit Letters came to the *Marqueſſe* (as ſent from *Rome*) which he cauſed to be publikely read in the hearing of his ſubjects: that the Pope had diſpenſed with him, to leave *Griſelda*, and marry with another wife; wherefore, ſending for her immediately, in preſence, and before them all, thus he ſpake to her. Woman, by conceſſion ſent me from the Pope, he hath diſpenſed with me to make choiſe of another wife, and to free my ſelf from thee. And becauſe my Predeceſſors have been Noblemen, and great Lords in this Countrey, thou being the Daughter of a poor Countrey Clown, and their bloud and mine notoriouſly imbaſed, by my marriage with thee: I intend to have thee no longer my wife, but will return thee home to thy Fathers houſe, with all the rich Dowry thou broughteſt me; and then I will take another wife, with whom I am already contracted, better beſeeming my birth, and farre more contenting and pleaſing to my people.

The Lady hearing theſe words (not without much pain and difficulty) reſtrained her tears, quite contrary to the naturall inclination of women, and thus anſwered Great *Marqueſs*, I never was ſo empty of diſcretion, but did alwayes acknowledge, that my baſe and humble condition, could not in any manner ſuit with your high bloud and Nobility, and my being with you, I ever acknowledged to proceed from heaven and you, not any merit of mine, but only as a favour lent me, which you being now pleaſed to recall back again, I ought to be pleaſed (and ſo am) that it be reſtored. Here is the Ring, wherewith you eſpouſed me; here (in all humility) I deliver it to you. You command me, to carry home the marriage Dowry which I brought with me: there is no need of a Treaſurer to repay it me, neither any new purſe to carry it in, much leſſe any

Sumptner to be laden with it. For (Noble Lord) it was never out of my memory, that you took me ſtark naked, and if it ſhall ſeem ſlightly to you, that this body that hath born two children, and begotten by you, muſt again be ſeen naked, willingly muſt I depart hence naked. But I humbly beg of your Excellency, in recompence of my Virginity, which I brought you blameleſs, ſo much as in thought, that I might have but one of my Wedding Smocks, only to conceal the ſhame of nakedneſſe, and then I depart rich enough.

The *Marqueſſe* whoſe heart wept bloudy tears, as his eyes would likewiſe gladly have yeelded their naturall tribute; covered all with a diſſembling angry countenance, and ſtarting up, ſaid. Go, give her a Smock only, and ſo ſend her gadding. All there preſent then, entreated him to let her have a Petticoat, becauſe it might not be ſaid, that ſhe who had been his wife 13 years and more, was ſent away ſo poorly in her Smock; but all their perſwaſions prevailed not with him. Naked in her Smock, without hoſe or ſhoos, bareheaded, and not ſo much as a cloth or rag about her neck, ro the great grief and mourning of all that ſaw her, ſhe went home to her own fathers houſe.

And he (good man) never beleeving, that the *Marqueſſe* would long keep his daughter as his Wife, but rather expected daily what now had happened: ſafely laid up the garments, whereof the *Marqueſſe* deſpoyled her, the ſame morning when he eſpouſed her. Wherefore, he delivered them to her, and ſhe fell to her Fathers houſhold buſineſſe, according as formerly ſhe had done; ſuſtaining with a great and unconquerable ſpirit, all the cruel aſſaults of her enemy Fortune.

About ſuch time alſo, as ſuted with his own diſpoſition, the *Marqueſſe* made publiquely known to his ſubjects, that he meant to joyn in marriage again with the daughter to one of the Counts of *Panago*, and cauſing preparation to be made for a ſumptuous wedding, he ſent for *Griſelda*, and ſhe being come, thus he ſpake to her. The Wife that I have made new election of, is to arrive here within very few dayes, and at her firſt coming, I would have her to be moſt honorably entertained. Thou knoweſt I have no woman in my houſe, that can deck up the Chambers, and ſet all requiſite things in due order, befitting for ſo ſolemn a Feaſt: and therefore I ſent for thee, who knowing (better than any other) all the parts, proviſion, and goods in the houſe, ſet every thing in ſuch order, as thou ſhalt think neceſſary.

Invite ſuch Ladies and Gentlewomen as thou wilt, and give them welcome, even as if thou were the Lady

of the house: and when the marriage is ended, return then home to thy Father again.

Although these words pierced like wounding daggers, the heart of poor (but noble patient) *Grizelda*, as being unable to forget the unequal'd love she bare the *Marquesse*, though the dignity of her former fortune, more easily slipt out of her remembrance; yet nevertheless, thus she answered.

My Gracious Lord, I am glad that I can do you any service, wherein you shall find me both willing and ready. In the same poor garments, as she came from her fathers house (although she was turned out in her Smock) she began to sweep and make clean the Chambers, rubbe the stools and benches in the Hall, and ordered every thing in the Kitchin, as if she were the worst maid in all the house, never ceasing or giving over, till all things were in due and decent order, as best beseemed in such a case. After all which was done, the *Marquesse* having invited all the Ladies of the Countrey, to be present at so great a Feast, when the marriage day came, *Grizelda*, in her gown of Countrey gray, gave them welcome, in honourable manner, and graced them all with very cheerfull countenance.

Gualtiero the *Marquesse*, who had caused his two children to be nobly flourished at *Bologna*, with a neer Kinswoman of his, who had married with one of the Counts of *Panago*, his Daughter being now aged twelve years old, and some-what more, as also the Son about six or seven; He sent a Gentleman expresly to his kindred, to have them come and visit him at *Saluzza*, bringing his Daughter and Son with them, attended in very honourable manner, and publishing every where as they came along, that the young Virgin (known to none but himself and them) should be the wife to the *Marquesse*, and that only was the cause of her coming. The Gentleman was not slack, in the execution of the trust reposed in him: but having made convenient preparation; with the kindred, Son, Daughter, and a worthy company attending on them, arrived at *Saluzza* about dinner time, where wanted no resort, from all neighbouring parts round about, to see the coming of the Lord *Marquesses* new Spouse.

By the Lords and Ladies she was joyfully entertained, and coming into the great Hall, where the Tables were readily covered, *Grizelda*, in her homely Countrey habit, humbled her self before her, saying, Gracious welcome to the new elected Spouse of the Lord *Marquesse*.

All the Ladies there present, who had very earnestly importuned *Gualtiero* (but in vain) that *Grizelda* might

better be shut up in some Chamber, or else to lend her the wearing of any other garments, which formerly had been her own, because she should not be so poorly seen among strangers: being seated at the Tables, she waited on them very serviceably. The young Virgin was observed by every one, who spared not to say, that the *Marquesse* had made an excellent change: but above them all, *Grizelda* did most commend her, and so did her brother likewise, as young as he was, yet not knowing her to be his Sister.

Now was the *Marques* sufficiently satisfied in his soul, that he had seen so much as he desired, concerning the patience of his Wife, who in so many heart-grieving trials, was never noted so much as to alter her countenance. And being absolutely perswaded that this proceeded not from any want of understanding in her, because he knew her to be singularly wise: he thought it high time now, to free her from these afflicting oppressions, and give her such assurance as she ought to have. Wherefore, commanding her into his presence, openly before all his assembled friends, smiling on her, he said. What thinkest thou *Grizelda* of our new chosen Spouse? My Lord (quoth she) I like her exceeding well, and if she be so wise, as she is fair (which verily I think she is) I make no doubt but you shall live with her, as the only happy man of the world. But I humbly entreat your Honour (if I have any power in me to prevail by) that you would not give her such cutting and unkind language, as you did to your other Wife: for I cannot think her armed with such patience, as should (indeed) support them: as well in regard she is much younger, as also her more delicate breeding and education, whereas she whom you had before, was brought up in continuall toil and travel.

When the Marquess perceived that *Grizelda* believed verily, this young daughter of hers should be his Wife, and answered him in so honest and modest manner: he commanded her to sit down by him, and said. *Grizelda* it is now more than fit time, that thou shouldest taste the fruit of thy long admired patience, and that they who have thought me cruel, harsh and uncivil natured, should at length observe that I have done nothing at all basely, or undiscretly. For this was a work premeditated before, for instructing thee, what it is to be a married wife, and to let them know (whosoever they be) how to take and keep a wife. Which hath begotten to me perpetuall joy and happinesse, so long as I have a day to live with thee: a matter whereof I stood before greatly in fear, and which (in marriage) I thought would never happen to me.

It is not unknown to thee, in how many kinds (for my first proof) I gave thee harsh and unpleasant speeches, which drawing no discontentment from thee, either in looks, words, or behaviour, but rather such comfort as my soul desired, and so in my other succeedings afterward. In one minute now, I purpose to give thee that consolation, which I bereft thee of in many tempestuous storms, and make a sweet restauration for all thy former sowre sufferings. My fair and dearly affected *Grizelda*, she whom thou supposest for my new elected Spouse, with a glad and cheerfull heart embrace for thine own daughter, and this also her brother, being both of them thy children and mine, in common opinion of the whole vulgar multitude, imagined to be (by my command) long since slain. I am thy honourable Lord and Husband, who doth and will love thee farre above all women else in the world; giving thee justly this deserved praise and commendation, That no man living hath the like wife as I have.

So, sweetly kissing her infinitely, and hugging her joyfully in his arms (the tears now streaming like new-let-loose Rivers, down her fair face) which no disaster before could force from her) he brought her and seated her by her daughter, who was not a little amazed at so rare an alteration. She having (in zeal of affection) kissed and embraced them both; all else present, being clearly resolved from the former doubt, which too long deluded them; the Ladies arose jocondly from the Tables, and attending on *Grizelda* to her Chamber, in sign of a more successefull augury to follow, took off her poor contemptible rags, and put on such costly Robes, which (as Lady Marchioness) she used to wear before.

Afterward, they waited on her into the Hall again, being their soveraign Lady and Mistresse, as she was no less in her poorest Garments; where all rejoycing for the new restored Mother, and happy recovery of so noble a son and daughter, the Festivall continued many moneths after. Now every one thought the Marquesse to be a noble and a wise Prince, though somewhat sharp and unsufferable, in the severe experience made of his Wife: but (above all) they reputed *Grizelda*, to be a most wise, patient, and vertuous Lady. The Count of *Panago*, within few dayes after, returned back to *Bologna*; and the Lord *Marquesse* fetching home old *Janiculo* from his Countrey drudgery, to live with him (as his Father in law) in his Princely Palace, gave him honourable maintenance, wherein he long continued, and ended his dayes. Afterward he matched his daughter in a noble marriage; he and *Grizelda* living long time toge-

together, in the highest honour that possibly could be.

What can now be said to the contrary, but that poor Countrey Cottages, may yeeld as divine and excellent spirits, as the most stately and Royall mansions, which breed and bring up some, (more worthy to be Hogstubbers, than hold any soveraignty over men? Where is any other (beside *Griselda*) who not only without a wee eye, but emboldened by a valiant and invincible courage, that can suffer the sharp rigors, (and never the like heard of proofs) made by the *Marquesse*? Perhaps he might have met with another, who would have quitted him in a contrary kind, and for thrusting her forth of doors in her smock, could have found better succour somewhere else, rather than walk so nakedly in the cold streets.

Dioneus having thus ended his Novell, and the Ladies delivering their severall judgements, according to their own fancies, some holding one opinion, others leaning to the contrary; one blaming this thing, and another commending that; the King lifting up his eyes to heaven, and seeing the Sun began to fall low, by rising of the Evening Starre; without arising from his seat, spake as followeth. Discreet Ladies, I am perswaded you know sufficiently, that the sense and understanding of us mortals, consisteth not only (as I think) by preserving in memory things past, or knowledge of them present; but such as both by the one and other, know how to foresee future occasions, are worthily thought wise, and of no common capacity.

It will be (to morrow) fifteen dayes since we departed from the City of *Florence*, to come hither for our pastime and comfort, the conservation of our lives, and support of our health, by avoiding those melancholies, griefs and anguishes, which we beheld daily in our City, since the pestilenciall visitation began there, wherein (by my judgement) we have done well and honestly. Albeit some light Novels, perhaps attractive to a little wantonnesse, as some say, and Joviall feasting with good cheer, singing and dancing, may seem matters inciting to incivility, especially in weak and shallow understandings. But I have neither seen, heard, or known any act, word, or whatsoever else, either on your part or ours, justly deserving to be blamed: but all has been honest, as in a sweet and harmonious concord, such as might well beseem the community of Brethren and Sisters; which assuredly, as well in regard of you, as us, hath much contented me.

And therefore, lest by over long consuetude, something should take life, which might be converted to a

bad

bad construction, and by a bad construction, and by our Countrey demurrance for so many dayes, some captious conceit may wrest out an ill imagination; I am of opinion (if yours be the like) seeing each of us hath had the honour, which now remaineth still on me: that it is very fitting for us, to return thither from whence we came. And so much the rather, because this sociable meeting of ours, which already hath wonne the knowledge of many dwellers here about us, should now grow to such an increase, as might make our purposed pastime offensive to us. In which respect (if you allow of my advise) I will keep the Crown till our departing hence, the which I intend shall be to morrow: but if you determin otherwise, I am the man ready to make my resignation.

Many imaginations passed amongst the Ladies, and likewise the men, but yet in the end, they reputed the Kings counsell to be the best and wisest, concluding to do as he thought convenient. Whereupon, he called the Master of the Houshold, and conferred with him, of the businesse belonging to the next morning, and then gave the company leave to rise. The Ladies and the rest, when they were risen, fell some to one kind of recreation, and others as their fancies served them, even as (before) they had done. And when Supper time came, they dispatcht it in very loving manner. Then they began to play on instruments, sing and dance, and Madam *Lauretta* leading the dance, she commanded Madam *Fiammetta* to sing a Song, which pleasantly she began in this manner.

The Song.

The *Chorus* sung by all the rest of the Company.

If love were free from jealousie,
No Lady living,
Had lesse heart-grieving,
Or liv'd so happily as I.

IF gallant youth
In a fair friend, a woman could content,
If vertues prize, valour and hardiment,
Wit, carriage, purest eloquence,
Could free a woman from impatience;
Then I am she can vaunt (if I were wise)
All these in one fair flower,
Are in my power,
And yet I boast no more but truth,
If love were free from jealousie, &c.

But I behold
That other women are as wise as I,

Which kills me quite,
Fearing false sirquedry.
For when my fire begins to flame,
Others desires misguide my aime,
And so bereaves me of secure delight,
Only through fond mistrust, he is unjust:
Thus are my comforts hourly hot and cold.
If love were free, &c.

If in my friend,
I found like faith, as manly mind I know;
Mistrust were slain.
But my fresh griefs still grow.
By sight of such as do allure;
So I can think none true, none sure,
But all would rob me of my golden gain.
Lo thus I die, in jealousie,
For losse of him on whom I mind,
If love were free, &c.

Let me advise
Such Ladies as in Love are bravely bold,
Not to wrong me, I scorn to be controld,
If any one I chance to find,
By winks, words, smiles; in crafty kind,
Seeking for that, which only mine should be;
Then I protest, to do my best,
And make them know that they are scarcely wise.
If love were free from jealousie, &c.

So soon as *Madam Fiammetta* had ended her Song *Dioneus*, who sate by her, smiling said. Truely *Madam* you may do us a great courtesie, to expresse your self more plainly to us all, lest (through ignorance) the passion may be imposed on your self, and so you remain the more offended. After the Song was past, divers others were sung beside, and it now drawing well neer midnight, by the Kings command, they all went to bed. And when new day appeared, and all the world awaked out of sleep, the *Master* of the household having sent away the carriages; they returned (under the conduct of their discreet King) to *Florence*, where the three Gentlemen left the seven Ladies at the Church of *Santa Maria Novella*, from whence they went with them at the first. And having parted with kind salutations the Gentlemen went whither themselves best pleased and the Ladies repaired home to their houses.

The end of the Tenth and last Day.

FINIS.